HISTORY OF ESSEX COUNTY MASSACHUSETTS.



FIRST GOVERNOR OF MASSACHUSETTS



Your Servt truely to serve
Jo: Endecott

STANDARD HISTORY

OF

ESSEX COUNTY,

MASSACHUSETTS,

EMBRACING

A HISTORY OF THE COUNTY FROM ITS FIRST SETTLEMENT TO THE PRESENT TIME, WITH A HISTORY AND DESCRIPTION OF ITS TOWNS AND CITIES.



THE MOST HISTORIC COUNTY OF AMERICA.

BOSTON:
C. F. JEWETT & COMPANY.
1878.

Rm. 1c30
E
7+
E7
+7
+

ALBERT J. WRIGHT,
PRINTER,
No. 79 Milk Street (corner of Federal), Boston.

THE COLONIAL SEAL.

The Colonial Seal granted by Charles I., March 4, 1629 (new style), to the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England, made provision for the use of a common seal by the Company. One was accordingly prepared in silver, and sent over to Gov. Endicott with the duplicate charter in 1629. It was used by our Colonial authorities till 1686. resumed 1689. and suspended from 1692 till 1780; at which time it was partly revived with the Indian much more civilized in appearance, and with the adjuncts of an English-American arm brandishing a sword, — which arm was also a part of the seal from 1775 to 1780; — and, as revived, it has continued to be used to the present day, — the seal of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts being of substantially the same design, with different inscriptions. A representation of the Colonial Seal, as sent to Gov. Endicott in 1629, appears on the title-page.

PREFACE.

The History of Essex County is herewith presented to the public, with the confidence that it will make a valuable and important addition to the local histories of the State. The County History has been prepared with care ; and the different city and town histories, to which much could have been added had space allowed, are as full and complete as it is possible to make them in the limits of a single volume. The reader will notice a different method of treatment, and a different style, in the various histories, — due to the fact that they are the work of different hands. This variation is not without its advantages; although a greater symmetry might have been given to the work, and a more accurate apportionment of the space given to the historical importance of each town, had it been possible to have secured a single person under whose supervision the whole history could have been written.

The histories are believed to be accurate presentations of the facts connected with the settlement and development of each of the towns and cities ; and have in all cases, where the writer was not of the town, been carefully read by some local antiquarian or historian, and received his indorsement

The Publishers are under great obligations to Dr. Henry Wheatland, of Salem, the President of the Essex Institute, for his general supervision of the chapters of the County History ; and the authors of the sketch of Salem desire to express their indebtedness to him for his invaluable assistance in the preparation of their work.

Among those to whom the Publishers and the Authors (whose names appear in the table of contents) are indebted for their kind advice and assistance, in the preparation of the Histories of their respective towns and cities, acknowledgment is especially due to Joseph Merrill, Esq., of Amesbury ; the Rev. John L. Taylor, of Andover ; Hon. John I. Baker, of Beverly ; the Rev. Charles B. Rice, of Danvers ; Hon. George L. Davis, of North Andover ; Mr. John D. Parsons, Jr., of Newburyport ; Mr. C. F. W. Archer, of Salem ; and Wellington Pool, Esq., of Wenham ; and, in the preparation of the County History, to William P. Upham, Esq., and Prof. John Robinson, of Salem.

The Publishers offer the History to their patrons, assured that it cannot fail to meet their expectations as a work of historical accuracy and merit.

BOSTON, DECEMBER, 1878.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

HISTORY OF ESSEX COUNTY, MASS., written under the supervision of Henry Wheatland, M. D., President of the Essex Institute, by Cyrus M. Tracy, William E. Graves, and Henry M. Batchelder.

		PAGES.
Chapter I.	Sketch of the History of the Massachusetts Bay Colony, 1620 to 1692,	9
Chapter II.	Sketch of the Principal Indian Nations of New England — The Tribes of Essex County — Early Indian Land Grants — The last of the Sagamores,	19
Chapter III.	Organization of the County — Settlement of Salem, Lynn, Andover, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester, and Wenham,	21
Chapter IV.	Peculiarities of Early Settlers — Freemen — Residents — Titles and Distinctions — Dwelling-Houses — Lights, &c.,	24
Chapter V.	Salem Witchcraft — Brief History of the Delusion, with an account of the Trials, Executions, &c.,	25
Chapter VI.	The Early and Later Means of Communication and Transportation in and through Essex County,	30
Chapter VII.	Historical Notice of some of the more Important Public Institutions of Essex County,	40

TOWN HISTORIES.

CITIES AND TOWNS.	AUTHORS.	PAGES.
Amesbury,	Cyrus M. Tracy,	46
Andover,	Bradford Kingman,	53
Beverly,	Elias Nason,	68
Boxford,	Sidney Perley,	79
Bradford,	Edwin P. Hill,	86
Danvers,	Charles F. W. Archer,	96
Essex,	Elias Nason,	115
Georgetown,	Edwin P. Hill,	121
Gloucester,	John J. Babson,	130
Groveland,	Edwin P. Hill,	155
Hamilton,	Elias Nason,	161
Haverhill,	Edwin P. Hill,	164
Ipswich,	Elias Nason,	199
Lawrence,	Robert H. Tewksbury,	210
Lynn,	Cyrus M. Tracy,	239
Lynnfield,	Cyrus M. Tracy,	262
Marblehead,	Jonathan H. Orne,	264
Manchester,	Elias Nason,	287
Merrimac,	W. H. B. Currier,	292
Methuen,	Edwin P. Hill,	294
Middleton,	Sidney Perley,	301
Nahant,	Cyrus M. Tracy,	305
Newbury,	George J. L. Colby,	308
Newburyport,	George J. L. Colby,	322
North Andover,	Bradford Kingman,	340
Peabody,	Charles F. W. Archer,	346
Rockport,	John J. Babson,	351
Rowley,	Elias Nason,	355
Salem,	Charles S. Osgood and Henry M. Batchelder,	360
Saugus,	Cyrus M. Tracy,	398
Salisbury,	W. H. B. Currier,	401
Swampscott,	Cyrus M. Tracy,	410
Topsfield,	Sidney Perley,	411
Wenham,	Charles F. W. Archer,	416
West Newbury,	George J. L. Colby,	419

MAP OF
ESSEX COUNTY,
MASS.

Scale. 3⅞o. Miles to the Inch.

AMESBURY
SALISBURY
MERRIMAC
WEST NEWBURY
NEWBURY
NEWBURYPORT
HAVERHILL
BRADFORD
GEORGETOWN
ROWLEY
METHUEN
LAWRENCE
ANDOVER
NORTH ANDOVER
IPSWICH
HAMILTON
WENHAM
MIDDLETON
DANVERS
BEVERLY
MANCHESTER
ESSEX
GLOUCESTER
PEABODY
SALEM
MARBLEHEAD
SWAMPSCOTT
LYNN
NAHANT

ATLANTIC OCEAN

MASSACHUSETTS BAY

HISTORY OF ESSEX COUNTY, MASS.

CHAPTER I.

MASSACHUSETTS BAY COLONY.

A BRIEF SKETCH OF THE HISTORY OF THE MASSACHUSETTS BAY COLONY — 1620 TO 1692.

Introductory.

A good many plans for the construction of the history of Essex County have presented themselves, and we trust that, in our discrimination, we have selected one that will meet with general approval. In regard to the arrangement of the subjects treated, a method has been adopted, that best conforms to the logical and chronological requirements of the work. Some deliberation arose as to what extent this volume should include a record of those events which, while they may have direct connection with the history of Essex County, are, nevertheless, more essentially a part of a history of Massachusetts, and the course finally decided upon, will lead us to consider matters and events pertaining to the Commonwealth at large, only in so far as will be necessary to write a comprehensive history of the county proper.

The materials before us, — while they are abundant, — are scattered and fragmentary, presenting but few traces of previous compilers. But while this condition renders our task many times greater than we had expected, it inspires the belief that what we shall do, if well done, will be the more valuable.

The arrangement adopted, embraces a general history of Essex County, and a history of each of the towns separately. Preceding these, we have given a brief sketch of Massachusetts Bay Colony. Such a plan has necessarily left us the alternative of using great discrimination in the classification of subjects, or falling into the imperfection of needless repetitions. It has been impossible to render the following pages wholly free from the latter, partly because the important events recorded as peculiar to any of the towns, are, for the most part, the same which, in a general fund, constitute the county history; but mainly from the reason that the work, as a whole, is the consolidated product of many writers, over whom it was impossible to exercise the control of a managing editorship, that was in some cases desirable.

In cases where one town is the common ancestor of several adjoining settlements, as, for instance, in the same sense in which Ipswich is the historical parent of Essex, we have not always been successful in dividing the honors of early historical records with just that degree of nicety that would conform to our judgment, and meet the ambition of local historians. In this dilemma, we have chosen, as the most expedient course, an occasional repetition of incident; but, where this occurs, the incident repeated has a garmenting of new associations, so that what might otherwise be considered objectionable, has been, in the present case, so manipulated as to result in a decided gain.

The same conflict which has existed between the county history, as a separate department, and the several town histories, has occasionally manifested itself, from our sketch of Massachusetts Bay Colony, towards the early records of the county history, but, happily, with similar results. For any further comments in respect to this volume, the reader is referred to the preface on a preceding page.

Massachusetts Bay Colony.

A settlement — the first in New England — had already been made at Plymouth, when, three years later, in 1623, the Dorchester Company, which was dissolved in 1626, established a colony at Cape Ann, near what is now Gloucester. Roger Conant, who superintended the affairs of the Company in New England, soon became dissatisfied with the location and removed to Naumkeag, now Salem, "secretly conceiving in his mind that in following times it might prove a receptacle for such as, upon the account of religion, would be willing to begin a foreign plantation in this part of the world, of which he gave an intimation to his friends in England."* Conant was a fine man, well qualified for the task before him, but the colony over which he presided did not number over fifty souls. But however small their number, a wonderful interest attaches to this little company, when we think of them as the pioneers of the Massachusetts Bay Colony.

The Dorchester Company was organized by the Rev. John White, of Dorchester, England, who prevailed upon certain gentlemen of means residing in that place to contribute three thousand pounds. Conant, upon his removal to Naumkeag, at once informed the Rev. Mr. White of the act, and his reasons therefor, and set forth the advantages of the new project. The divine replied, that if Mr. Conant, John Woodbury, John Balch, and Peter Palfrey would remain at Naumkeag, he would, as soon as possible, obtain a royal patent, and forward more men and the necessary supplies.

When the letter arrived a consultation took place between Conant and his three selected companions, in which they debated the whole subject with great care. The latter were in favor of removing to Virginia, and for some time refused to enter into the engagement; but Conant persuaded them to remain, and in this success he secured to them, in common with himself, the distinction of being called, in the language of Bancroft, "the sentinels of Puritanism on the Bay of Massachusetts."

But if Conant succeeded in prevailing upon his comrades to remain with the colony, so did the Rev. Mr. White in executing his promise. In 1628, he obtained a patent, conveying to six persons — Sir Henry Rosewell, Sir John Young, John Humphrey, Thomas Southcate, John Endicott, and Simon Whitcomb — a tract of country described as "that part of New England lying between three miles north of the Merrimac, and three miles to the south of the Charles River, and of every part thereof, in the Massachusetts Bay; and in length between the described breadth from the Atlantic to the South Sea."

* Hubbard's Hist., 102-107.

Nor did Mr. White cease his efforts with this result, but labored earnestly to promote the enterprise by endeavoring to interest others. In this he met with only moderate success. At length, Rosewell, Young, and Southcate retired, and the others formed a copartnership with certain London merchants, purchased the interests of the three gentlemen who retired, and organized the Massachusetts Company. Of this company John Endicott was made chief representative, and commissioned "to carry on the plantation of the Dorchester agents, and to make way for the settling of another colony in Massachusetts."

In 1628, John Endicott, with a small company of emigrants who had left England in June, arrived safely at Naumkeag. He at once entered upon the duties of his office as magistrate and governor; and at the close of the year, according to the records, the colony numbered about one hundred persons, mostly from Dorchester, and some places adjoining. The rapid increase in the Colony led to plans for establishing some kind of local government, subordinate to the Company in England, to consist of thirteen members, to be styled "The Governor and Council of London's Plantation in the Massachusetts Bay, in New England."

John Endicott was first appointed governor, and twelve representative men of the Colony constituted the council. The local government could inflict punishment for minor offences, but aggravated crimes could be finally adjudicated upon only in England. Land was distributed judiciously among the colonists, and the policy of kindness was adopted in regard to the Indians. Morality was inculcated, profanity forbidden, idleness discouraged, and drunkenness severely punished. In the following year, the Rev. Francis Higginson reached Naumkeag with a company of English emigrants. Certain of these men, with others in the settlement, hearing favorable reports of a place called "Mishawum," now Charlestown, commenced laying out a town around an elevation in that vicinity, and within a year the Puritan colony numbered nearly five hundred souls, of whom one-fifth were living at Charlestown.

A church was soon organized at Salem, disregarding the service of the Episcopal church. This gave offence to certain parties, who were forthwith sent back to the mother country by Gov. Endicott, with the comment that "New England was no place for them," — a course of proceeding for which the governor has since been censured. Troubles next arose between the Company in England, under Gov. Cradock, and the Massachusetts Colony, over which Gov. Endicott presided, in regard to a transfer of the charter from English to American residents. A consolidation of the Company and the Colony would involve the election of a new chief magistrate. At this period John Winthrop proved to be the master spirit, born for the occasion, — refined, intelligent, learned in the law as well as in theology, in the full maturity and vigor of forty years, eminent for liberality, and distinguished for his hospitality. In the words of another, he "enjoyed the distinguished honor of being the first governor chosen by the freemen of the Colony, within its limits, under the charter after its transfer, and the first who was head both of the Company and the Colony established by that instrument."

His associates were gentlemen of influence, professional and otherwise, — a few prominent merchants, and some well-to-do farmers, — all possessing an unconquerable love for freedom, in both church and State, for themselves and for their posterity. Two vessels, containing colonists, had already sailed from England, one reaching Salem in May, 1630, the other arriving at Nantasket; and, finally, the fleet, under Gov. Winthrop, comprising eleven vessels, sailed for the New World. After a stormy passage of sixty-one days, the admiral of the fleet, the "Arbella," came in sight of Cape Ann, and, on the following day, was near Naumkeag. Early in July, all the vessels were at anchor in Salem Harbor, Gov. Winthrop himself arriving just before the 17th of June. On that day, as he himself says, he "sailed up the Mystic," in company with others, and there found "a good place." A second party followed the first; and, as the country around suited them better than the vicinity of Salem, about the 10th of July, 1630, most of the emigrants landed at Charlestown, and set up tents about the town hill. But the length and hardships of the passage, with the want of provisions, brought on sickness and famine. At this time, occurred the death of the lamented Lady Arbella, wife of Isaac Johnson, Esq., who had come "from a paradise of plenty, into a wilderness of wants," leaving her husband, a "holy man and wise," who died a month later, "overwhelmed in a flood of tears and grief."

Within a year, two hundred had gone to the grave. More than a hundred persons became disheartened, and returned to England. Winter came on, and spring followed; but the "wolf of famine" faced the feeble remnant of the people at the door. The colonists began to scatter to Watertown, Roxbury, Newton, Lynn, and other places. A number of persons, by invitation of Mr. Blackstone, removed to Shawmut, where was an excellent spring of water. Gov. Winthrop, Mr. Wilson, and others followed, and thus laid the foundation of Boston. Winter set in with great severity. A day of fasting and prayer was appointed; but the very day before, while the last loaf was in the oven, a vessel landed at Nantasket, laden with provisions, and with twenty-six passengers on board, and the "fast was changed into a thanksgiving, which was celebrated throughout all the Colony with ardent rejoicing." *

The principal new comers to the Colony, in 1631, were the Rev. John Eliot, afterwards the apostle to the Indians, and the wife and family of Gov. Winthrop. At a later day, Thomas Leverett, John Cotton, Thomas Hooker, and Samuel Stone were added to their number; thus, in the words of Mather, supplying three great necessities: Cotton, for their clothing; Hooker, for their fishing; and Stone, for their building. All this occurred in 1633; and before the end of 1636, the Massachusetts Colony could boast of nine churches. Before 1650, there were twenty-nine, over which were settled "Godly ministers," all of them "burning and shining lights," and all zealous in propagating the "orthodox faith."

In 1634, Gov. Winthrop retired from his office. A new election was held, and Thomas Dudley was chosen governor, holding the office, owing to a want of popularity, but a single year. He was succeeded by John Haynes as governor, with Richard Bellingham as deputy-governor; and, during their administration, more than three thousand emigrants left England and came to the Colony. Among these were Richard Mather, and the accomplished Sir Harry Vane, the heir of a powerful privy counsellor of England. Brilliant and talented, he had left the splendors of the court and the palace, to become almost an exile in the obscure wilderness of Massachusetts. The freemen of the Colony, flattered that so distinguished a personage should have joined their ranks, and forgetting, moreover, his youth and want of experience, in a period of intense excitement unwisely chose him governor. He knew little of the people, less of their colonial prejudices, and was embarrassed at every step. It was a period of intense excitement, filled with faction and intrigue. Various disputes and dissensions followed, the red cross in the English flag being viewed as a "relic of Popery, insufferable in a Puritan community."

Close upon these things came the troubles with Anne Hutchinson, wife of William Hutchinson, of Lincolnshire, who had come over to America in the emigration of 1634. The part taken in this controversy by Vane, gave quite as much dissatisfaction as his previous conduct, and the result was that, in the annual election of the following year, John Winthrop was again chosen governor. Once more in the chair, Winthrop continued in office, with the exception of four years, until his death in 1649. His administration of affairs brought great prosperity to the Colony. Emigrants were

* Barry's History, i, 196.

continually arriving, and the progress of settlement was proportionally rapid. Hingham was settled in 1634; Newbury, Dedham, and Concord were incorporated in the following year, and from this date to 1643, the towns of Salisbury, Lynn, North Chelsea, Rowley, Sudbury, Braintree, Woburn, Gloucester, Haverhill, Wenham, and Hull were incorporated. The town of Springfield followed in 1636, and in 1643 four counties were created, — Suffolk, Essex, Middlesex, and old Norfolk, each of the first three containing eight towns, while Norfolk had only six, comprising a total of precisely thirty towns. In 1635, according to good authorities, the people began to be straightened for want of room. These complaints were heard particularly from Dorchester and Newton, and the result was the settlement of Connecticut. Troubles followed with the Pequots and the Narragansetts. A rumor was spread abroad that these two tribes were about to unite in exterminating the English, — the Pequots having previously murdered Capt. Stone, and his companion, Capt. Norton.

The colonists besought Roger Williams, who alone had influence with the Narragansetts, to dissuade them. He had previously been persecuted, tried for sedition, and sentenced to depart from the jurisdiction of his judges and accusers; but, in the winter of 1635, he left Salem, turned his steps to Narragansett Bay, moved to the other side of the water, and, with five others, laid the foundation of Providence. Putting his life in his hands, he embarked in a frail canoe, and hastened to the house of the sachem of the Narragansetts. The result was, that Miantinomoh, and two son of Canonicus, repaired to Boston, and there signed a treaty of peace and alliance. Foiled in their efforts, the exasperated Pequots thirsted for vengeance. They seized, burned at the stake, mutilated and flayed alive those whom they took captives, and a succession of tragedies spread alarm throughout the Colonies. A bloody Indian war followed, and, as the result of a single onslaught, nearly six hundred Indians, — men, women, and children, — perished. The remaining Pequots were driven into a swamp, their wigwams were burned, and Sassacus, their sachem, was murdered. About two hundred who survived, surrendered to the English, and were distributed by them to other tribes. Thus ended the first Indian war in New England.

It has been said that the five points of a well-founded government are an hereditary monarchy, an established church, an order of nobility, a standing army, and a military police. The rigid Puritans, however, placed more faith in the five points of Calvinism. They made the Government subordinate to the Church, securing its very life and welfare by increasing Puritan principles in the basis of all their legislation. By their charter, the lands they held were their own; and, to build up an exclusively Puritan community, they forbade any person to plant within their limits without permission from the governor and council. Later, it was forbidden to harbor persons whose religious views were considered "dangerous." This last statute was opposed by Sir Harry Vane, but rather favored by Gov. Winthrop, who deemed it "lawful and good that the Colony receives no one into its fellowship who would be likely to disturb the same." As the colonists held the key to their asylum in their own hands, another law was passed in 1631, in substance, that no man should be admitted to the freedom of their body politic who was not "a member of the church;" *i. e.*, of some one of the churches! It was a bad policy, condemned by the Episcopalians of that day, as well as by Roger Williams; yet it was copied by the New Haven Colony, by that at Rhode Island for a time, and continued subsequently in force in Massachusetts until 1692, being repealed, in appearance only, after the restoration of Charles II. Possibly it was as much a *political* regulation as a *sectarian* scruple; not intended to bestow privileges on *piety*, but to guard *liberty*, — to prevent encroachments upon their infant Commonwealth of chosen people in covenant with God, in which the humblest freeholder, if sound in faith, possessed a power as great, in the election of magistrates and the enactment of laws, as a peer of the realm, or the proudest lord spiritual, in the land of their birth.

Still another order was passed in 1634, whereby every male resident, twenty years old and upwards, not a freeman, was compelled under oath to acknowledge subjection to the Colonial Government, and to promise abidance to the same. The object of all these laws was to secure the allegiance of all not entitled to the immunities of citizenship. It was not a retaliatory, but a defensive policy which they adopted; and as the colony grew in strength and wisdom, these laws, necessarily temporary, were in due time changed or abrogated, as their own circumstances, or those of the English Church, gave them opportunity.

The terms of the colonial charter required the principal government officers to be chosen directly by the freemen. At first, in 1630, the freemen chose the assistants, and the assistants, from among themselves, the governor and deputy-governor. This kind of elective aristocracy, with no limit to the tenure of office, was *too* anti-Republican for the masses; and the next spring, May, 1631, an order was passed making it lawful for the "commons" to propose — or, as we say in modern times, to nominate, — such persons as they wished to be chosen. Later in the same month, to limit the tenure of office, it was agreed that the governor, his deputy, and the assistants (officials probably similar to the governor, lieutenant-governor, and council of the present day) should all be chosen anew every year, by the whole court, "the Great General Court," or House of Representatives, which comprised twenty-four delegates. The arrangement made a few years later, that a portion of the magistrates should be chosen for life, awakened jealousy, and was soon abandoned. Moreover, in some of the earlier disputes concerning the relative powers of the officers and the delegates, the people of Newtown became disaffected, requested permission to remove to Connecticut, were refused, and a political controversy ensued, lasting many years. It was finally settled by a compromise which "divided the Court into two branches, and gave to each (like our modern House and Senate) a negative upon the other." This conflict of historical opinion is worthy of note as a remarkable feature in the history of New England, that, from the outset of its career, the two necessary elements of a proper government have ever been prominent.

Previous to 1635, the Colony had no regularly framed body of laws. The population was increasing, and the want was felt of positive statutes. In that year, four magistrates were deputed to frame a code of laws, bearing some "resemblance to a Magna Charta." This "Body of Liberties," as it was called, comprising one hundred laws, compiled mostly by the Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, was adopted in December, 1641, and subsequently revised at different periods. These laws were collected and published in 1648, 1660, 1672, and at other times. Bancroft says of their author, "he is the most remarkable among all the early legislators of Massachusetts; he had been formerly a student and practiser in the courts of common law in England, but became a Nonconformist minister, so that he was competent to combine the humane doctrines of the common law, with the principles of natural right and equality, as deducted from the Bible." The colonists have received much ridicule, however, for adopting those laws, and some have described them as a "literal transcript of the laws of Moses." Admitting this, it is well known that their predilection for the Mosaic policy was neither confined to Massachusetts, nor was it peculiar to the Puritans. The Presbyterians of Scotland asserted the obligations of the judicial laws of the Pentateuch, at least in criminal cases, and deduced therefrom the duty of executing idolaters, adulterers, witches, and Sabbath-breakers. Our Puritan fathers were undoubtedly familiar with Magna Charta, and, taken as a whole, it is a question whether the Body of Liberties which they promulgated, may not fearlessly challenge comparison with the cotemporary legislation of England, or any

other land. And well might they say, in 1646, in repelling the charge of arbitrary government, illimited oaths, unjust taxes, illegal commitments, and others of a like nature: "Let them produce any Colony or Commonwealth in the world, where more hath been done in sixteen years. Let them show where hath been more care and strife to prevent all arbitrariness, and to bring all judgments to a *certain rule* so far as may be." Comparing their laws with those of England, we find, in the "judicials" of Mr. Cotton, nineteen offences are capital; in the "Body of Liberties," twelve; while in England, at the same time, one hundred and fifty offences were punishable with death.

In the Puritan code, slavery was prohibited, except in the case of "lawful captives taken in just war, and such strangers as willingly sell themselves, or are sold to us." Wife-whipping was forbidden, and "inhuman, cruel, or barbarous" punishments were not allowed. "No true gentleman, nor any man equal to a gentleman, was to be punished with whipping, unless his crime was very shameful, and his course of life vicious and profligate. It is true, cropping the ears, slitting the nose, branding the cheek, and whipping at the cart's tail were permitted, though, if contemporary history is to be credited, such inflictions were less frequent here than in England. The rights of the widow were respected, and the shield of the law was thrown around orphans. Profane swearing, drunkenness, and beggars were rare. In fact, the inspectors, in their official report to Charles II., in 1673, stated, "there are no beggars, and not three persons are put to death annually for theft." And Vincent, in closing his account of the Pequot war, says: "The air of New England, and the diet, equal, if not excel, that of Old England; besides, their honor of marriage, and careful preventing and punishing of furtive congression, giveth them and us no small hope of their future puissance and multitude of subjects. Herein, saith the wise man, consisteth the strength of a king, and likewise of a nation or kingdom."

It would be hardly fair, says Barry, to contrast with this picture the contemporary condition of down-trodden Ireland, which James I. considered as a "masterpiece." But, at the risk of being considered a little invidious, one extract may be furnished from the journal of the faithful Evelyn, relating to England itself. "Aug. 2, 1664. Went to Uppingham, the shire town of Rutland; pretty and well-built, of stone, which is a rarity in that part of England, where most of the rural villages are built of mud, and the people living as wretchedly as the most impoverished parts of France, which they much resemble, being idle and sluttish. The country (especially Leicestershire) much in common: the gentry free drinkers."

Meanwhile trouble was brewing. Charles was at first inclined to treat the colonists and their infant commonwealth with benevolent platitude. But the stern discipline of their leaders in expelling some, and punishing by whipping others, set a thousand eyes over them to "pick a hole in their coats." Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Capt. John Mason, who had spent many thousand pounds in fruitless attempts at colonization, grew jealous of the Massachusetts Colony, and, envious of its success, they complained to the lords of the Privy Council of "disorders and distractions in the Colony," demanding a recall of its charter. They alleged that the colonists were opposed to Episcopacy and the Anglican Church; but Charles had discretion enough to see where the truth lay. To be sure, offenders had been punished, not because they were Episcopalians, but because they were insubordinate to the Colonial government. So certain able defenders of New England in the mother country, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Mathew Cradock, and others, were assured by the council that "his majesty did not intend to impose the ceremonies of the Church of England" upon the colonists, as it was considered that it was "the freedom from such things that made people come over to the Colony." The news reaching Boston, in May, 1633, a day of thanksgiving was ordered, in which Plymouth was requested to join. An answer to the objectionable memorial was prepared, signed by the governor, and sent to England by Capt. Graves, with a certificate from the "old planters," certifying the loyalty of the colonists. After this, emigrations increased to an alarming extent, "many of the best, both ministers and Christians," leaving England for America. The dignitaries, both of church and state, became alarmed, and a warrant was issued, in 1634, to stay several vessels then in the Thames ready to sail for New England. Further, by royal decree, the archbishops of York and Canterbury, with ten others, or any five of them, were empowered to govern the plantations of New England, temporally and spiritually; and three days later, on the first of May, a governor was selected, and vessels provided to convey him to the Colony. The intelligence of this royal edict received by the colonists caused great excitement. The sum of six hundred pounds was appropriated for the erection of a fort at Boston, and another at Castle Island, with entrenchments at Dorchester and Charlestown; and in the fall of 1634, Mr. Edward Winslow, of Plymouth, was sent to England in behalf of the Colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts, to obtain a commission to withstand the "intrusions of the French and the Dutch." He pointed out a way by which this might be effected without charge to the Crown. His petition was favorably received by the lords, but Archbishop Laud was not so easily baffled. Mr. Winslow was accused of exercising the functions of the ministry, by marrying people as a justice of the peace, without being episcopally ordained. He frankly confessed that "about marriage, it was a civil thing, and he nowhere found in the word of God that it was tied to a minister," and the result was Mr. Winslow's commitment to the fleet, where he was confined four months before he was liberated.

Notwithstanding the vigorous policy of the Crown, emigrants continued to flock by hundreds to America. Efforts were made to stop "promiscuous and disorderly departing out of the realm." In 1636 a warrant was issued against the Massachusetts Bay Company, its "liberties, privileges, and franchises," were "taken and seized into the king's hands," though its charter was by no means revoked; but in May, 1637, an order of council directed the attorney-general to call for the Massachusetts patent. No result, however, followed; and the subsequent appointment, in July, of Sir Ferdinando Gorges, as governor-general of the country, was "passed over in silence." At this period troubles in Scotland so completely engrossed King Charles's time and the attention of his council, that he had "neither heart nor leisure to look much after New England's affairs." In the following year, 1638, orders were issued to stay eight ships then in the Thames which, certain parties said and believed, had on board Hampden, Cromwell, and others afterwards conspicuous in the annals of the Long Parliament. All these troubles terminated at last in the death of Charles, and the storm that would have compelled the colonists to bend or break was thus averted.

The confederacy of 1643, among the New England Colonies, is justly claimed as an important event in its history. The idea of such a union had been conceived in 1637, soon after the Pequot war. During the following year, 1638, the General Court at Newtown had declined to accept articles of confederation; but, in May, 1639, Gov. Haynes, of the Hartford Colony, visited Boston to renew the treaty, and, about this time, the people of New Hampshire, vexed by proprietary claims, were anxious also to come under the government of Massachusetts. Already, four distinct governments, including one at Kittery, were formed in 1640, near the Piscataqua. In 1641, the "lords and gentlemen," at Dover and Strawberry Bank, who held patents, resigned their jurisdiction to Massachusetts, for the sake of safety, and in the following year, 1642, Exeter followed their example. Troubles ensued at this period with certain French immigrants, including some Jesuit priests sent over by Cardinal Richelieu. They had settlements near Cape Sable; and their governor, La Tour, claimed all the land from Cape Sable to Cape Cod, under authority given him by the king of France. When asked for his patent, he said "his sword was his commission." Now the people of Massachu-

setts had, as early as 1632, entertained the idea of establishing a plantation at Ipswich, and it is not surprising that they regarded the French as "ill neighbors."

A glance at the condition of the Colonies at this period may prove to be of interest. The Puritans, like the Pilgrims, when they came over to America, knew that success meant hard work, patience, and economy. Poverty stared them in the face, and for several months they lived on Indian corn. Fish, to be sure, were plentiful, and seeds were sown for future harvests. Before the beginning of 1643, fifteen thousand acres were cultivated for grain purposes, and there were not less than a thousand acres of gardens and orchards. They had, moreover, twelve thousand neat cattle, and three thousand sheep. Hundreds of laborers, who "had not enough to bring them over," were now worth scores and hundreds of pounds invested in lands and stock. Citizens began erecting buildings of brick in Boston, markets were established, wharves constructed, and vessels sent to the West Indies and to the Madeira Islands, returning with sugar, cotton, and tobacco; and these, with the furs and the products of the fisheries at the Cape and at the Banks, including moose teeth and oil, procured in trips further to the north, were sent to England to pay for the manufactured goods needed for their wants. The resources of the country were rapidly developed. Forests were converted into masts, planks, boards, staves, shingles, and hoops, all of which were of value in commercial exchange. Before 1650 glass works were commenced, and iron foundries established at Lynn and Braintree in the Massachusetts Colony, and at Raynham in Plymouth. Mills were erected, and shipyards established; and, as wool, flax, and hemp were plenty, manufacturing commenced. But changes in England checked the flow of emigration from the Old World to the New, causing an immediate reduction in the market value of cattle; and as manufactures assumed an increased importance, they were prosecuted with more vigor.

It is well known that many early settlers of the Massachusetts Colony, particularly the clergy, were graduates of English universities. As a matter of course they felt an interest in the cause of education; and, when a sufficient degree of prosperity had been reached, it became a law that children and apprentices should be taught "so much learning as might enable them perfectly to read the English tongue." Every township of fifty householders was required to appoint one to teach all children to read and write; and every town of one hundred families was ordered to establish a grammar school, with a master able to fit them for college. In 1636, six years after the settlement of Boston, the General Court voted the sum of four hundred pounds — equal to a year's rate of the whole Colony — towards the erection of a "public school or college." The next year, 1637, the college was "ordered to be at Newtown;" and the following spring, in 1638, it was further ordered that "Newtown shall henceforward be called Cambridge," in honor of the English *alma mater* of many of the emigrants. Before the end of the year, John Harvard, a minister settled at Charlestown, and a lover of learning, who died of consumption after a year's residence in the country, bequeathed one-half his whole property and his entire library to the college. This benefaction was so timely, and the sum so generous, that the college owns him as its earliest founder, and continues to wear his name. During the same year, 1638, a regular course of academical instruction was commenced; and, in 1642, there were nine graduates, all of whom received degrees. Gov. Winthrop commended the young men for their proficiency: and this was the first commencement in the history of Harvard College. At this date, a charter for the college had been granted, and a board of overseers established. The seminary was under the charge of President Dunster, a man of eminent talents and singular worth, who continued at its head, discharging with fidelity the duties of his office for a period of nearly fourteen years; and, before the grant of the province charter in 1692, the office of president had been held by a succession of distinguished men. That the college moulded the character of the country, there can be little doubt. Its influence alarmed the commissioners of Charles II., and the Marquis of Wellesley is reported to have said to an American, many years later, "Establishing a seminary in New England at so early a period of time, hastened your revolution half a century."

In 1639, the first printing-press in New England was set up at Cambridge. Both the press and the pressmen were brought over from England by the Rev. Joseph Glover. "The first thing printed," says Winthrop, in his journal, was "The Freeman's Oath." The press afterwards became the property of Samuel Green, who followed the printer's trade in Cambridge for more than forty years. He published "The Cambridge Platform" in 1649; "The Laws of the Colony" in 1660; the "Psalter" in 1685, together with Baxter's "Call," and the Bible in the Indian language — publications now rarely met with. The literary attainments of the time were not extensive, but the period was pleasing for its patriarchal simplicity and freshness, and by some this was termed the golden age of the Colony.

"For them each evening had its shining star,
And every Sabbath day its golden sun."

At this time, about 1643, the population of New England was not far from twenty-five thousand; while that of Massachusetts was about eighteen thousand. And now the people talked, and the General Court discussed the subject, of a confederacy of the Colonies. No one doubted that such a union was necessary, even for common safety; and, May 19, 1643, the first step was taken. Commissioners from four of the Colonies met at Boston, and agreed upon the terms. These were signed by the delegates from Massachusetts, Connecticut, and New Haven; but the Plymouth commissioners, having no authority to sign, reported to the General Court, which submitted the matter to the several towns, and on the 7th of September, in the same year, after complete ratification by the people, was formed the confederation of "The United Colonies of New England," justly termed the prototype of the North American Confederacy of 1774. The articles of confederation were twelve in number, containing every proper provision for the welfare and security of the league. It was simple, but strong in its purpose, and was virtually an assumption of the sovereignty of the people.

But the fortunes of the Colonies were influenced in no small degree by the revolution in England which dethroned and sent Charles I. to the scaffold. There were always difficulties within the Colonies; and at this particular period, those who were hostile to the government of Massachusetts sought redress for their grievances in England. Cromwell had always manifested great love for the Colonists; and, after his successes in Ireland, he tried to introduce Puritanism there, by inviting thither people of Massachusetts, who persistently declined the offer, preferring their own land as the "happiest and wisest this day in the world." In the words of Bancroft, "English history must judge of Cromwell by his influence on the institutions of England; the American Colonies remember the years of his power as the period when British sovereignty was for them free from rapacity, intolerance, and oppression. He may be called the benefactor of the English in America; for he left them to enjoy, unshackled, the liberal benevolence of Providence, the freedom of industry, of commerce, of religion, and of government." During these years the Puritans and the Pilgrims worked harmoniously together to build up a mighty Commonwealth; and, as evil is always found following the footsteps of good, we come now, with regret, to another display of the persecuting spirit which pervaded the people of Massachusetts.

In 1656, the first Quakers arrived in Massachusetts, and their doctrines were deemed "another assault of Satan upon God's poor people here." The poor immigrants were subjected to all manner of atrocities. They were banished, whipped, transported; and a fine of one hundred pounds was imposed on every shipmaster who brought Quakers within the jurisdiction. Other severe laws prohibited any

person from harboring "the pernicious sect." Plymouth and Connecticut shared the sentiments of Massachusetts; while Rhode Island alone, under the wise guidance of Roger Williams, looked with favor upon those persecuted people. For a season, men, women, and children were either scourged or fined, while some were imprisoned, others banished, and four were sent to the scaffold. Tidings of this inhumanity reached England, and came to the ears of Charles II., then on the throne of his father. The king finally put a stop to these persecutions in a summary way, and, on the part of the Quakers, the matter was finally compromised. From this hour the rigor of the Colonial laws abated, and the principles of toleration began to surmount the evils of bigotry. Says a writer: "Let us not censure too harshly the conduct of men to whom we are so largely indebted for the blessings we enjoy. Candid minds will not be indisposed to cast over their errors the mantle of charity. We have no disposition to conceal those errors; neither would we magnify them to an undue extent. Future ages, perhaps, in considering the laws of the middle of the nineteenth century, will look back with wonder to our days, and may find it as difficult to conceive how we should have strayed so far from the spirit of the gospel as then understood, as we find it difficult to conceive how our ancestors should have strayed so far from that spirit as we understand it. Let each age be judged by its own light, and let due credit be given for all that was good in the past."

In December, 1660, news reached Massachusetts that Charles II. had mounted the throne of his ancestors, — a piece of intelligence not wholly unexpected in New England. The General Court of Massachusetts met, prepared addresses to the king and parliament, soliciting their favor towards the Colonies, and urging Mr. Leverett, their agent, to use his utmost endeavors "for the renewing that ordinance that freed us from customs, 10th March, 1642." The king's reply, received in the following May, 1661, was gracious, but not enough so to quiet the fears of the colonists. At a special meeting of the Court in June, "a declaration of natural and chartered rights" was issued, affirming their rights to choose their own governor, deputy-governor, and representatives; to set up all sort of officers, superior or inferior, and determine their powers and places; to exercise, by their annually elected magistrates and deputies, all power and authority, legislative, executive and judicial; to defend themselves by force of arms against every aggression; and to reject as an infringement of their rights any parliamentary or royal imposition prejudicial to the country. It was a year before the restoration of Charles II. was publicly recognized in Boston. While Old England had welcomed his return with riotous festivity, and even Plymouth had readily acknowledged his authority, Massachusetts delayed as long as was prudent. Hitherto New England forbade even the drinking of his health; but now a few formalities were observed in Massachusetts. The troops were paraded; and, on the whole, the people behaved with decorum and discretion. A letter had been received from the Court of St. James forbidding further persecution of the Quakers, and ordering those who disobeyed to be sent over to England; and, soon after, orders were received for commissioners to be sent to answer accusations against the Colony. Finally, Feb. 10, 1662, after much agitation and opposition, and arrangements for their departure which required twelve meetings at the "Anchor Taverne" to perfect, the Rev. John Norton and Simon Bradstreet sailed, with an address commending them to the king, and another soliciting the favor of the Earl of Clarendon. Friends in England had prepared the way for them, and they were courteously received by King Charles; and finally, June 28, 1662, the commissioners obtained a confirmation of their charter, and an amnesty for all past offences. A day of thanksgiving was appointed for the safe return of the messengers, and for a time matters wore a pleasing aspect. But some were dissatisfied. The king had rebuked the colonists for the irregularities which had been complained of. He had ordered a repeal of all laws derogatory to his authority; the oath of allegiance was to be taken by all; persons of honest life, except Quakers, were to be admitted to the sacrament of the Lord's supper, and their children to baptism; and liberty of conscience was to be allowed those persons who desired to use the book of common prayer, and perform their devotion in the manner established in England. These directions of his majesty were not carried into immediate effect. The people met, discussed the subject, and finally referred the whole matter to the next General Court. In vain did Mr. Norton protest that if the demands of the monarch were not literally complied with, the blood that should be spilt would lie at their door. They told him his mission had been a failure, and so worried him, that he became despondent and melancholy; and, being naturally of a sensitive temperament, died soon after.

Rumors now reached England that Goffe and Whalley, the regicides, who had escaped in vessels to Massachusetts, were at the head of an army, and that the union of the Colonies in 1643 was a war combination got up expressly to throw off their dependence on the mother country. There was no truth whatever in the rumor concerning the fugitive regicides. King Charles II. had previously issued an order for their apprehension, with a mandate to search for them; but, it seems, they had fled to Connecticut, after appearing publicly everywhere in Massachusetts — attending meetings on the Sabbath, and on other occasions, — and, on reaching the former Colony, were so effectually secreted by their friends, that their place of retreat was never discovered. After living in several places, they finally died in peace in the land of their exile.

The situation of the colonists was now critical. Rumors and reports, both false and true, had tended to incense the court of St. James; and it was even said that royal commissioners were to come over and regulate matters in New England. The colonists accordingly selected four persons — Bellingham, Leverett, Clark, and Johnson — as a commission, instructing them to retain the patent, and a duplicate of the same, and to keep it safe and secret for the benefit of the country. Capt. Davenport, who commanded at the Castle, was ordered to report the arrival of any portion of his majesty's fleet, and the people were enjoined to strictly obey the laws. A day of fasting and prayer was appointed, — as usual on all important occasions, — and none but the sick were exempt from public worship. Even "the mother took with her the nursling whom she could not leave" at home. About an hour before sunset, on the 23d of July, 1664, the principal vessel, the Guinea, of thirty-six guns, followed by three other ships of the line, arrived in Boston harbor. This fleet bore the commissioners, with the king's warrant, and a request to the colonists for aid in reducing the Dutch settlements on the Hudson, for which the vessels were equipped; and, soon after, the fleet sailed for the New Netherlands. The king's letter was read; and the subject debated in the General Court, which sent an able and eloquent reply, sketching the early history of the Colony under the charter from Charles I., and the sufferings and privations endured by the emigrants; reciting the encouragements which Charles II. himself had given them, and his assurances of protection; and stating what had been done to satisfy him of their loyalty, by complying with his requests so far as was consistent with their charter. It then alluded to the conduct of those who had for years sought their overthrow, and had set themselves against them by "misinformations, complaints, and solicitations;" deprecates the commission appointed to interfere, as was apprehended, with their rights, by subjecting them to the arbitrary power of strangers, proceeding not by any established law, but by their own discretion; and though the course of the commissioners is not specially censured, yet, say they, "we have had enough to confirm us in our fears."

The reply made to the king by the General Court also appealed to his majesty "to put a stop to these proceedings," and added, in this language: "For if they go on your subjects here will either be forced to seek new dwellings, or sink and faint under intolerable burdens. If the aime should be to gratify some gentlemen by livings and

revenues, that will also fail from the poverty of the people. If all the charges of the whole government by the year were put together, and then doubled or trebled, it would not be counted for one of those gentlemen a considerable accommodation. To a coalition in this course the people will never come; and it will be hard to find another people that will stand under any considerable burden in this country, seeing it is not a country where men can subsist without hard labor and great frugality. God knows our greatest ambition is to live a quiet life in a corner of the world. We came not into this wildernesse to seek great things to ourselves; and if any come after us to seeke them heere, they will be disappointed. We keep ourselves within our line, a just dependence upon, and subjection to, your majestie, according to our charter, it is far from our hearts to disacknowledge. We would gladly do anything within our power to purchase the continuance of your favorable aspect. But it is a great unhappiness to have no testimony of our loyalty offered but this, to yield up our liberties which are far dearer to us than our lives, and which we have willingly ventured our lives, and passed through many deaths to obtain. It was Job's excellency when he sat as king among his people, that he was a father to the poor. A poor people, destitute of outward favor, wealth, and power, now cry unto their lord the king. May your majestie regard their cause, and maintain their right; it will stand among the marks of lasting honor to after generations; and we and ours shall have hearty cause to rejoice that we have been numbered among your majesty's most humble servants and suppliants."

With this reply, address letters were sent to the Earls of Clarendon and Manchester, two of the most influential noblemen of the realm, but were not favorably received, the king being "displeased with their petition," while Clarendon expressed amazement that a recall of the commission should be demanded, when the commissioners had committed no crime, nor exceeded the duties of their office. Three of the commissioners returned to Boston in February, 1665, but their reception was far from cordial. Even the magistrates defied their authority; and, after a fruitless attempt to revise the laws of the Colony, the commissioners retired, and for a season the contest with the Crown ceased. In the meantime, Gov. Bellingham was chosen to succeed Gov. Endicott, whose death occurred a short time previous. King Charles was too much engrossed with his private affairs to pay much attention to matters of state, and the Colonies flourished in comparative peace.

When forsaking their native land to settle in a wilderness, one declared purpose of theirs was, to propagate the gospel among the ignorant whom they might meet. Allusion was made to this subject in their charter, and the matter was often alluded to in the earlier letters of the company. Several years passed before much was accomplished. The severity of their trials, with the struggles of the emigrants for subsistence, and the difficulties met with in their attempts to acquire a new language, were serious obstacles in their path. Yet something had been done towards converting the Indians. Roger Williams had labored by day and by night, from one end of the country to the other, learning a little here and there, of the language of the red men; striving, almost against hope, for their conversion. Mayhew, the "young New England scholar," preached the gospel to the savages in his wild home on the lonely island of Nantucket, which his father had selected for his abode. To be sure, the scene of his labors was limited to a narrow region; yet in five years, thirty-nine men, beside women, had joined his meetings; the next year, the number was increased to one hundred and ninety-nine men, women, and children; and, in the following year, two hundred and eighty-three persons, exclusive of children, had renounced their false gods; a school was established, which was attended by thirty children; a town projected, to "carry on things in a civil and religious way;" and a covenant of faith had been drawn up and adopted. Mr. Mayhew continued his labors, under the auspices of the society formed in England in 1649, for Propagating the Gospel, "sparing not his body by night nor day; lodging in their houses, and solving their scruples and objections;" but business at length calling him to cross the Atlantic, the vessel in which he sailed was lost, and he "ended his days, and finished his work."

John Eliot, of Roxbury, better known as the "Apostle to the Indians," began his work, assisted by his pious and constant companion, Gookin, with a firm belief that the Indians must be *civilized* before they could be *christianized;* and all his earlier efforts were directed to this end. He preached his first sermon in October, 1646, on an elevated piece of land near Newton Corner, afterwards called by the Indian name "Nonantum," or "the place of rejoicing." His labors were afterwards continued at Concord, Neponset, and in many other Colonial towns; and the people of Dedham were induced by Mr. Eliot to grant a township of nearly six thousand acres, where the Praying Indians, as they were called, were gathered. This, founded in 1650, was afterwards called Natick, or "the place of hills." In the meantime, Mr. Winslow, agent of the Colony in England, had succeeded in obtaining funds from pious people in that country, and soon a sum, yielding six hundred pounds a year was raised, and the proceeds regularly forwarded to purchase clothing, educate children, publish books, and maintain teachers for the mission; and by these means was the gospel propagated by the labors of the society before alluded to. The Indians began to forsake their former habits, and to dress like the English; to engage in agricultural pursuits; to build better houses; to catechise their children, and open schools for their instruction; to pray in their families morning and evening, and give thanks at their meals; to sanctify the Sabbath, and imitate the English generally. Much difficulty was experienced in instilling fixed habits of sobriety and industry, the seeds of indolence seeming to be too deeply rooted to be wholly eradicated.

But the labors of Eliot did not end here. He prepared a grammar, catechisms, a primer, a psalter, and finally completed the herculean task of translating the Bible into the dialect of the Indians; all of which works, — now extremely rare, — were highly esteemed by our Puritan fathers, and were printed at the expense of the Society for Propagating the Gospel. Even in old age, he abated not his labors. In 1661, an Indian college, with accommodations for twenty scholars, was erected at Cambridge, and before long, fourteen praying towns, so called, were settled; two Indian churches were established, connected with which were eleven hundred persons, "yielding obedience to the gospel." The war with Philip, which occurred soon after, proved a serious interruption to the work. There were, of course, not wanting those who doubted the success of the enterprise, while others openly condemned it. Says an able writer on this subject: "If the value of an enterprise is to be measured by its success, the conversion of the Indians must be regarded as a failure. The race itself has dwindled away, leaving behind few tokens of its presence in the country; and nearly all that remains to remind us of the genius and exertions of Eliot, are the few scattered books which have descended to us from the past, as unintelligible as the inscriptions upon the obelisk of Luxor; yet, like that, they are memorials of the labors of man, and impressive and instructive are the lessons they teach." Yet the Natick church continued many years to maintain its existence; the town was settled principally by Indians; a son of Waban, in whose wigwam Mr. Eliot first preached, held the office of "town clerk"; and a succession of pastors conducted services in the rude church of Eliot's day, and those afterwards erected on its site, until the English became most numerous, and an English settlement was incorporated; but a house of worship still marks the spot where the rude Indian temple stood.

In the Plymouth Colony, success seems also to have attended the missionary labors of Thomas Tupper and Richard Borne, of Sandwich, and of Mr. Cotton, of Plymouth, who was an assistant in the work. There were twenty places where meetings were held within

the Colony, and, although but one church was gathered, having twenty-seven communicants, and but ninety persons had been baptized, there were nearly five hundred attendants on public worship; and eleven years later, this number had increased to about fifteen hundred. The record of all these missionary efforts, still remains as a worthy memorial of the piety of our ancestors. The founders of new sects, are not unfrequently characterized by a zeal highly disproportioned to the wisdom necessary to control the same. But it is with sects, as with individuals, — age cools the impetuosity of youthful passions, and the wildest seldom fail to be sobered by its experience, and instructed by its warnings. In a word, the history of enthusiasm is in all ages the same. No wonder that the Quakers, — to whose persecution we have already alluded, — who are now a quiet and peaceable order of Christians, should have been denounced as "fanatics." Of their history, prior to their appearance in New England, it is not necessary to speak at length. The founder of the sect, George Fox, was a native of Drayton, in Leicestershire, and was the son of Christopher Fox, a weaver by profession, and a man of such integrity, that he was called by his neighbors "righteous Christer." From his earliest years, George, the son, was marked by a gravity of deportment unusual in children. At the age of eleven, he "knew pureness and righteousness," and, during his apprenticeship, such was his honesty, that he "never wronged man or woman in all that time, and it was a common saying among people, if George says *verily*, there is no altering him." There is an apparent vanity in such statements, coming from the subject himself, and a lack of attention to the scripture command, "Let another's mouth praise thee, and not thine own." But whatever of egotism his journal may display, it is cheerfully admitted that his morals were exemplary, that his piety was fervent, and that he labored sincerely and zealously for what he regarded as the true doctrines of godliness. Yet his own morals, however pure, did not prevent him from approving acts of his followers of questionable propriety, if not of positive indecency; nor did the fervency of his piety, however vital, preserve him from the insidious, because imperceptible, delusions to which imaginative and melancholy minds are so often subject. Quakerism, without doubt, had a mission to perform in the world, or it would never have appeared; and the very sufferings which the persecuted sect endured, afford sufficient evidence of Puritan intolerance, and of nameless cruelties practised by those whose minds were now fast becoming poisoned with suspicions of the fidelity of the savages.

Previous to 1675, four powerful tribes of Indians owned land in New England; and, next to the Pequots, the Narragansetts were the most warlike. Most of the tribes had resisted all efforts to convert them to Christianity. But the Wampanoags had hitherto continued friendly with the colonists, and had kept their treaty of 1621 inviolable, not only with Massasoit, but with his son and successor Alexander, and also with their new sachem, the brother of Alexander, generally known, from his place of residence, as Philip of Mount Hope. He was an able and a great man. From the moment when the white man landed, he saw that the doom of the Indian was sealed. He had exchanged the rude bow and arrow for the English musket, in the skilful use of which he flattered himself he could drive his foes before him as the wind whirls the leaves of the autumnal forests. Philip of Mount Hope knew that unless the pale-face was expelled, the Indian would be exterminated; and he was the first to propose an alliance to prevent it. It was about 1670–71 that suspicions of the intentions of Philip began to be excited. Eight years previous he had promised, at Plymouth, to continue in friendship with the English, and to remain faithful to the king and the Colony: but now it was rumored that he was about to violate his pledge. This he promptly denied: and perhaps deceived those who had so often, in trade, dealt unjustly with the aged chief. Several years of quiet followed, during which Philip matured all his plans; and, in 1675, the war commenced. The proximate cause of it was the murder of one Sausaman, of the Massachusetts tribe, who had been converted to Christianity, and employed as a teacher at Natick, but who afterwards apostatized, joined Philip, and became his principal counsellor and secretary. By the exertions of Mr. Eliot he was reclaimed, but was soon after assassinated by three of Philip's men, who were afterwards seized, tried by a jury, part of whom were Indians, condemned and executed. Hostilities began at once, and butcheries followed, in which the savages "exercised more than brutish barbarities, — beheading, dismembering and mangling" murdered bodies, and exposing them in the most inhuman manner. Details of the various attacks and repulses would scarcely come within the scope of the present work. It may therefore be found sufficient to state that in all their dealings with the Indians, the colonists experienced many difficulties with Philip. There was a continuous series of meetings for adjustment, followed by fresh rumors of threatened attacks, retreats, and sorties, in which Capt. Benjamin Church, the most famous partisan warrior, perhaps, that Massachusetts produced, took a prominent part. Another outbreak of hostilities occurred at the time Swanzey was attacked, when, anticipating all the horrors of war, Maj. Gookin, of Cambridge, received orders to enlist a band of Praying Indians, of whom fifty-two were mustered in, and marched to the relief of that beleagured town, while the country around was scoured unsuccessfully by Massachusetts troops in search of Philip. Under command of Capt Savage, they immediately marched to the Narragansett country, and, being joined by commissioners from Connecticut, a treaty was concluded at the point of the sword, signed by four persons as attorneys for the six principal sachems, and hostages were delivered as a pledge of fidelity. Near Brookfield, in the Old Colony, where a high hill arose almost perpendicularly from the road, — the opposite side being skirted by a swamp, — two or three hundred savages, concealed on the heights, attacked the command of Capt. Hutchinson, wounding him severely, and killing eight men. The town itself was fired in several places, and nearly all the dwellings were consumed. One principal building, to which the inhabitants and the soldiers had fled for safety, was besieged; and for two days the Indians poured in upon its seventy occupants an incessant volley of musketry. Twice, a large heap of combustibles was placed against it; but the flames were extinguished by extraordinary efforts. Pieces of cloth, dipped in sulphur, were fastened to arrow-heads, and shot at the roof to set it on fire. Foiled in these attempts, a cart, filled with burning flax, hay, and other materials, was pushed up to the walls; but this too was quenched by a shower of rain. The scene was terrific. Within were the English, a comparative handful, with women and children hanging around them; but their courage never quailed. No quarter was offered; no quarter was asked. At this critical juncture, when escape seemed hopeless, aid came from Boston, under the command of Maj. Willard, of Marlborough, and Capt. Parker, of Groton; an engagement followed, continuing all night, and, near morning, the Indians, having burned their shelters, retreated to a swamp a few miles distant, where they were joined by Philip and a remnant of his tribe.

Driven to the forests bordering upon the Connecticut River, Philip attacked Hadley, while all the people were at church, and set the town on fire. This occurred on a Fast day, September 1, 1665, and the place was in danger of being destroyed; but, in the midst of the contest, while the war-whoop was ringing, and just as the Indians were about to triumph, a venerable figure, of commanding aspect, clad in the fashion of a former generation, with his hair white from age, suddenly appeared, it is stated, and with sword in hand rallied the disordered troops, infused into them fresh courage, and, placing himself at their head, the savages were speedily compelled to retire. At the close of the struggle the visitor vanished as mysteriously as he came. The belief was long cherished that an angel-hand relieved the town; and years elapsed before it was known that Col. Goffe, who had been a commander in the army of Cromwell's Invincibles, and

who was then concealed in Hadley, was the one to whom they were indebted for so timely a deliverance. Deerfield was attacked and nearly destroyed by the Indians, on the same day; and before the middle of that week, Northfield shared a similar fate. In a second attack on Deerfield, a fortnight later, occurred the dreadful scene at Bloody Brook, wherein scarcely a white man escaped. On the 4th of the following month, the savages attacked Springfield, burning upwards of sixty houses. During these four months of war, the colonists had acted mainly on the defensive. Now they proposed to push the fighting, and one thousand troops were ordered to be raised without delay, of which Massachusetts furnished the greater part. A winter campaign was proposed, war was declared, and the Massachusetts troops, under Maj. Appleton, joined by the Plymouth forces, under Maj. Bradford, and later by the Connecticut troops under Maj. Treat, set out for the country of the Narragansetts. Marching all night through the untrodden snow, the army of nearly twelve hundred, of whom one hundred and fifty were friendly Indians, reached the edge of the swamp near the Narragansett fort. A bloody struggle followed. At length, gaining a shelter in the lower part of the fort, the opposing parties fought desperately, hand to hand. The wigwams were soon set ablaze, and the shouts of battle mingled with the screams of women and children roasting in the flames. The slaughter ceased only at nightfall, when the wretched remnant of Narragansett warriors crept into a neighboring swamp, and the troops returned to headquarters, with a loss of eighty killed, including some of their best officers, and one hundred and fifty wounded, some of whom were afterwards found frozen stiff, and nearly one-third of the little army were reported unfit for duty.

On the 10th of February, 1676, the Narragansetts and others united with the remnant of Philip's tribe, and attacked the town of Lancaster, setting fire to the houses and capturing or killing those who attempted to escape. Nearly all of the forty-two persons, who sought refuge in the house of Mr. Rowlandson, their pastor, were either wounded or killed. Before the dwelling had burned to the ground, Mrs. Rowlandson was taken prisoner, but treated kindly. She was afterwards exchanged, and wrote an interesting narrative of her captivity. Ten days later, February 21st, the Indians burned half of the houses, and killed twenty of the inhabitants, of Medfield. Weymouth had a similar experience on the 24th; and, on the 2d of March, Groton was nearly destroyed. In the attack on Northampton the Indians were defeated; but the saddest calamity which the Plymouth Colony suffered during the war, occurred on the 26th of the same month. Capt. Pierce, of Scituate, with about seventy men, was crossing the river near Pawtucket Falls, not far from a pass since known as Attleborough Gore. Here a few Indians made their appearance, limping, and running away, as if lame, to deceive the English. The stratagem succeeded in drawing the colonists into the fatal snare, where, fighting like heroes, they were rapidly mowed down between two fires. A hundred Indians were killed, but not one of the Plymouth troops escaped. The burning of Seekonk and of Providence followed, and the Indians seemed masters of the situation. A council of war was immediately called, fresh troops were raised, and on the 21st of April occurred the Sudbury fight, one of the most memorable in the annals of the Massachusetts Colony, wherein fifteen hundred Indian warriors attacked a comparatively small force of English, killing the brave Capt. Wadsworth, of Milton, with most of his men. The success of the Indians, however, was short-lived. Starvation and disease rapidly wasted their miserable ranks, saving many a town from attack, and leading at last to Philip's ruin. Multitudes of his men deserted him, and a "great and notable slaughter was made," while the savages were sunk in slumber in an Indian encampment near the upper falls of the Connecticut. On the 18th of May, in the same year, Capts. Turner and Holyoke, with one hundred and fifty men, surprised the sleeping camp, took deliberate aim, and cut down all who fled. Some were drowned in the river, while others leaped into their canoes and were carried over the falls. On returning, the English were attacked by a large body under Philip, losing thirty-eight of their number, among whom was Capt. Turner, "whose name is perpetuated in that of the beautiful falls near which his corpse was afterwards found."

In the month of July vast numbers of starving Indians surrendered themselves to the colonists; while others continued to subsist on roots and ground-nuts, by devouring loathsome animals, — such as toads and frogs, — and by chewing the soft inner bark of trees. Hunted through the woods like a wild beast, Philip fled to Mount Hope. The sachem's wife and child having been captured during the pursuit, were ordered by Capt. Church to be sent to Bridgewater, and from thence to Plymouth, where he himself soon after retired, worn out by fatigue and exposure. Urged by the government, Church soon prepared for another expedition. Recruiting his own men, as was his custom, and followed by large numbers of volunteers, he found Philip in a swamp near Pocasset. Carne describes it, in his life of Eliot, as "a place well suited to awaken all the terrors of the imagination. It was a fit retreat for a despairing man, being one of those waste and dismal places to which few ever wandered, covered with rank and dense vegetation; to any eye but that of the savage, it was like the 'valley of the shadow of death'; the cypress and oak trees hung heavy and still over the accursed soil; the faint gleam of the pools and sluggish lakes on every side, in the starlight, and the howl of the wolf, fitfully, as if it warned that the hour was nigh." On the 12th of August Church arranged his men to surround Philip and prevent his escape. A single shot was heard in the distance, and a ball whistled through the air. Then came an entire volley, and the battle began. Completely surprised, Philip seized his gun and fled. Running directly towards two of Church's men concealed in ambush, the first levelled his gun, which missed fire; while a ball from the second pierced the sachem's heart. Thus fell King Philip! None braver ever "drew the bow"; but he had often been merciless, and, as Capt. Church remarked, had "caused many an Englishman's body to rot above ground," — so he ordered that "not one of his bones should be buried." Tradition says, his head was cut off and his body quartered; and many modern writers continue to assert of King Philip's war, that the advance of New England was retarded by it fifty years.

The English commission sent out by Charles II., in 1664, to reduce the Colonies to obedience, having failed in its efforts, the court voted, in 1672, to send new agents to America; but they never came. Massachusetts, the most perverse of all the Colonies, had prospered in commerce and in wealth; while New Hampshire and Maine, with a portion of the Province of Acadia, were yet within her jurisdiction. Four years later, in 1676, the king sent Edward Randolph to Boston, with full powers to carry out the will of his sovereign. Gov. Leverett, without paying much attention to his credentials, or his proposals, gave him to understand that his majesty ought not to retrench their liberties which he had agreed to confirm, but leave them to enjoy the same, inasmuch, as without any contribution from the Crown, they had "made so large a plantation in the wilderness." So Randolph returned to England the following year without accomplishing the object of his mission. Pending disputes as to the right of jurisdiction over Maine and New Hampshire, — during which, John Usher, a Boston merchant, purchased the interest of Gorges' heirs, and assigned it to the governor and company of Massachusetts, — the court had determined to send over a royal governor, "wholly supported by his majesty," and also a collector for the port of Boston. This office was conferred upon Randolph, who, in December, 1678, again came to Boston, where he was made the object of abuse, and returned to England "soured by disappointment." He told the king that the "Bostoneers" were usurpers; that they were "forming themselves into a commonwealth, neglecting the oath of allegiance, protecting regicides," and so forth; and Charles sent him back to Boston, in 1681, with a royal letter solemnly declaring, that, if all the irregular pro-

ceedings of the Colonies in New England were not forthwith attended to by duly authorized agents, "we are fully resolved, in Trinity term next ensuing, to direct our attorney-general to bring a *quo warranto* in our Court of King's Bench, whereby our charter granted unto you, with all the powers thereof, may be legally evicted and made void."

This kingly summons was sufficiently powerful to meet with a response. Besides, the royalist party in Boston was every day growing stronger. William Stoughton was first appointed one of the new agents to be sent to England, but refused to go; and Joseph Dudley, with John Richards, finally departed, pledged "not to do or consent to anything that should violate or infringe the liberties and privileges" granted by the charter. When the agents arrived in England, they were graciously, but by no means heartily received by his majesty, and were told at the hearing that their powers were entirely insufficient. It was a sad day for Massachusetts; where the farmers talked it over, people pondered it, the merchants discussed it on the exchange, and the clergy made it the burden of their prayers. But, as the first race of emigrants had nearly all departed, and a new generation had come upon the stage, and among the people there were many who were wearied with these incessant struggles, which ended, only to be renewed; and as the population had largely increased, and there were many besides Episcopalians opposed to the ecclesiastical constitution of the Colony, the power of the clergy had become measurably weakened by the infusion of new elements into the religious controversies of the day; dissensions had arisen even in the churches of Boston; the party in favor of rigidly adhering to the long established policy of the rulers, at the head of whom were Danforth and Gookin, was daily losing ground; and those who were inclined to yield to the demands of the king, of whom Bradstreet was the leader, were increasing in strength. It was plainly evident that the king was desirous, not to regulate, but to recall the charter; that Massachusetts must be humbled; and that matters were to be pushed to the utmost extremity. When Randolph, who reached England in May, brought before the committee of plantations his articles of "high crimes and misdemeanors" against the Massachusetts Colony, the fate of her charter was sealed. Unwilling, with their limited powers, to undertake the defence or management of so important a case, the agents returned home and reported the result of their mission. Randolph followed the same week with his *quo warranto*, and two hundred copies of the proceedings in England against the Massachusetts charter, for general distribution. The governor, and a portion of the council were inclined to submit, and accordingly voted "not to contend with his majesty in a course of law." This vote, to which the deputy-governor and other of the assistants objected, was referred to the deputies, who, after a fortnight's consideration and protracted debate, refused consent, and adhered "to their former bills." The people of Boston sustained the deputies; and, at a town meeting, Increase Mather, then president of the college, nurtured in the ancient faith of the Puritans, full of zeal, with a mind "richly furnished by study and reflection," — a man who for twenty years exerted a greater influence upon the fortunes of Massachusetts, than any other in the same length of time, — delivered a speech against the surrender of the charter which was both powerful and effective. "God forbid," said he, "that we should give away the inheritance of our fathers! I hope there is not one freeman in Boston that can be guilty of it." The effect of this was irresistible. Many of the people were in tears. And when the question was put to vote, it was unanimously rejected. "It is better," was their conclusion, "if we must die, to die by the hands of others than by our own." Entreaties and remonstrances were of no avail, and the forbearance of the king was in vain solicited. Randolph being "commanded to prosecute the Boston charter," a writ of *scire facias* was issued in England, April 16, 1684, and before action could be taken upon it by the colonists, the day of grace had passed, and the charter which Winthrop had brought over to America, was adjudged to be conditionally forfeited. This was the last effective act of Charles II. relative to Massachusetts. His death and that of the charter were nearly contemporary.

The accession of James II. to the English throne took place in February, 1685. As dutiful subjects, his majesty was proclaimed, though "with sorrowful pomp," at the town house in Boston, in the presence of the eight military companies; and "three volleys of cannon" were discharged on the occasion. But when the Rose frigate arrived in Boston, May 14, 1686, and a commission from King James was presented and read to the General Court, then in session, whereby Joseph Dudley was appointed president of the Colony, the members at once adjourned; and it is said "the deputies returned in sadness to their homes." Mr. Dudley did not consider himself a permanent president, but only as appointed to prevent confusion, until the king's pleasure should be known. He was generally regarded with suspicion, and was never popular with the people, some of whom took sides with him, however, on account of their great dislike to Randolph, who was shunned by many of the colonists as a sort of "evil genius" of New England. One thing for which Randolph was disliked, was his proposition to tax the Plymouth Colony for the support of Episcopal worship in Boston; and further, that one of its three meeting-houses should be "set apart for the exercise of the religion according to the Church of England"; and that twenty shillings weekly should be paid out of the contributions of each society to defray the expenses of an Episcopal church. Such a church was gathered, in the same year, with nearly four hundred communicants; but it is said there is no proof that Randolph's proposition prevailed. For some reason a coolness had grown up between Dudley and Randolph; and while outsiders were watching the controversy, his majesty's frigate, "Kingfisher," arrived on the coast, and Sir Edmund Andros, glittering in scarlet and lace, landed at Boston, December 20, 1686, as "captain-general and governor-in-chief" of all New England, with companies of soldiers brought from Europe to support his claims. Forthwith he marched to the town house and made a "short speech." At a meeting of the council the next day, "all members of the late government were summoned to meet at Boston on the 30th inst." A surrender of the charters of Rhode Island and Connecticut was demanded. The new government was organized on the day appointed, and proclamation was made that "all officers, both civil and military, should be continued in their places of trust, and that the laws not repugnant to the laws of England, should be continued and observed during his excellency's pleasure." One of his first acts was to levy a tax of twenty pence on each poll, and one penny in the pound upon "all the late Colonies and Provinces, towards defraying the public charges of the government." This act caused great excitement, and was deemed oppressive. It was the beginning of trouble. Excise laws were afterwards passed, and enforced by fines and imprisonment; freedom of the press was limited; no one was allowed to leave the country without permission, lest complaints should reach England, and redress of public grievance be sought. In August, 1687, writs as "many as a cart could hold," were ordered to be issued, whereby, wrote Randolph, "all the inhabitants of Boston will be forced to take new grants and confirmations of their lands, which will bring in vast profits" to the Crown. Much caution was needed to manage this; for "what people," it was asked, "that had the spirits of Englishmen could endure this?" Indian deeds that were sometimes produced as original titles, were pronounced "worth no more than a bear's paw." Even the records of Lynn were declared "not worth a rush." At this stage, the Rev. Increase Mather was sent to England to enlist the king's sympathy; but his mission proved a failure. Soon after occurred the downfall of the Stuarts; and William of Holland, in right of his wife, was proclaimed sovereign. News of the revolution in England reached Boston early in 1689, and Andros was soon after imprisoned. He was subsequently released and recalled home to England, where he was summoned before the council, April 17, 1690. On account of some informality, he was soon discharged from cus-

tody, and afterwards became governor of Virginia. Randolph was sent to the West Indies, and Dudley, at a later day, sat upon the bench as chief justice of New York.

That King William and his ministers were determined to erect a new government in Massachusetts, to be known as the Province of Massachusetts Bay, became evident. Massachusetts, Plymouth, and Maine were to be united under one jurisdiction, whose officers were to comprise a governor, deputy-governor, and secretary, appointed by the king, and twenty-eight councillors chosen by the people. Each town was authorized to choose two deputies to represent them in the General Court; rights of citizenship were established, and liberty of conscience secured to all but Papists. This Province charter of 1692 differed quite materially from the Colonial charter of 1629. It completely revolutionized the country, and secured the dependence of the Colonies upon the Crown; and on Saturday, May 14, Sir William Phips, the new governor, arrived in Boston. Some of the people submitted reluctantly, but a majority accepted the new government, and a day of thanksgiving was appointed on that account.

We must, at this point, leave the history of Massachusetts as such, and turn our attention more directly to Essex County; but, in concluding this part of the work, we will annex the following list of governors, embracing a period from the earliest settlement of the country to the Revolution.

GOVERNORS OF PLYMOUTH COLONY.

1620 John Carver.
1621 William Bradford.
1633 Edward Winslow.
1634 Thomas Prence.
1635 William Bradford.
1636 Edward Winslow.
1637 William Bradford.
1638 Thomas Prence.
1639 William Bradford.
1644 Edward Winslow.
1645 William Bradford.
1657 Thomas Prence.
1673 Josias Winslow.
1681 Thomas Hinckley, who held his place, except during the interruption by Andros, till the union with Massachusetts in 1692.

GOVERNORS OF MASSACHUSETTS BAY UNDER THE FIRST CHARTER.

1629 John Endicott.
1629 John Winthrop.
1634 Thomas Dudley.
1635 John Haynes.
1636 Henry Vane.
1637 John Winthrop.
1640 Thomas Dudley.
1641 Richard Bellingham.
1642 John Winthrop.
1644 John Endicott.
1645 Thomas Dudley.
1646 John Winthrop.
1649 John Endicott.
1650 Thomas Dudley.
1651 John Endicott.
1654 Richard Bellingham.
1655 John Endicott.
1665 Richard Bellingham.
1673 John Leverett.
1679 Simon Bradstreet, who, with the exception of the administration of Sir Edmund Andros, continued in office till 1692.

GOVERNORS OF MASSACHUSETTS APPOINTED BY THE KING UNDER THE SECOND CHARTER.

1692 May, Sir William Phips.
1694 Nov., Wm. Stoughton, Acting Gov.
1697 May, Earl of Bellomont.
1700 July, William Stoughton, A.G.
1701 July, The Council.
1702 June, Joseph Dudley.
1714-15 Feb., The Council.
1714-15 March, Joseph Dudley.
1715 Nov., William Tailer, A.G.
1716 Oct., Samuel Shute.
1722-23 Jan., William Dummer, A.G.
1728 July, William Burnet.
1728 Sept., William Dummer, A.G.
1730 June, William Tailer, A.G.
1730 Aug., Jonathan Belcher.
1741 Aug., William Shirley.
1749 Sept., Spencer Phips, A.G.
1753 Aug., William Shirley.
1756 Sept., Spencer Phips, A.G.
1757 April, The Council.
1757 Aug., Thomas Pownal.
1760 June, Thomas Hutchinson, A.G.
1760 Aug., Francis Bernard.
1769 Aug., Thomas Hutchinson, A.G.
1771 March, Thomas Hutchinson.
1774 May, Thomas Gage.

CHAPTER II.

INDIANS OF NEW ENGLAND.

BRIEF SKETCH OF THE PRINCIPAL INDIAN NATIONS OF NEW ENGLAND — THE TRIBES OF ESSEX COUNTY — EARLY INDIAN LAND GRANTS — THE LAST OF THE SAGAMORES.

It was our intention to present a somewhat complete narrative of the affairs of the Indians of New England, and more particularly those of Essex County during the last days of activity; but the materials necessary do not exist in accessible form, and we are compelled to satisfy this ambition with a few remarks, such as may be sufficient to give the reader a general knowledge of the extent and character of the latest tribes. The Indian towns, at the time the county began to be settled, were located principally at Haverhill, Newbury, Andover, Ipswich, Lynn, Marblehead, and Salem. But, first of all, let us glance at the nations at large, as they were situated in New England a short time previous to this date. In the early part of the seventeenth century, the territory was divided among several tribes or nations, but all speaking the Algonquin tongue, and all forming a part of that once mighty Indian nation which at one time extended their dominions along the coast from Quebec to the Hudson. It was a fragment of the same people who welcomed Cartier on the banks of the St. Lawrence in 1535, — a part of the same people who induced Champlain, the founder of Quebec, to join them in a war against the Five Nations, — an error from which his Colony suffered for more than half a century after his death. The scattering bands of these Indians situated in New England at the date mentioned, are thus described in the unique language of Capt. John Smith, who was among the first Europeans to visit these parts. He says: "The principal inhabitants I saw at Northward was penobscot, who are in warres with the Terentines, their next northerly neighbors, Southerly, up the rivers, and along the coast, we found Mecadacut, Segocket, Pemmaquid, Nasconcus, Sagadahock, Satquin, Aumugheawgen, and Kennabeca; to those belong the countries and people Setogato, Pauhuntanuck, Pocopassum, Taughtanakagent, Wabigganns, Nassaque, Mauherosqueck, Warigwick, Moshoquen, Waccogo, Pasharanock, &c. To those are allied in confederacy the countries of Aneociseo, Accominticus, Passataquak, Augawoam, and Naemeck; all those, for anything I could perceive, differ little in language or anything, though most of them be Sagamos and Lords of themselves, yet they hold the Bashabes of Pennobscot the chiefe and greatest amongst them. The next is Mattahomt, Totant, Massachuset, Paconekick, then Cape Cod, by which is Pawmet, the Iles Nawset and Capawuck, neere which are the shoules of Rocks and sands that stretch themselves into the maine Sea twenty leagues, and very dangerous betwixt the degrees of 40 and 41."

Nearly all of these tribes occupied about the same position for a considerable time after the country was permanently settled by the English, and the writer is of the belief that he or she who shall give to the world, a connected, complete, and reliable narrative of their decline and final extinguishment, will render an imperishable service. The materials for such are rapidly decaying, and the near future will find such a task to be one of the impossibilities.

The foregoing paragraph quoted from Capt. Smith, although some of his Indian names differ orthographically from the modern construction, will indicate the location of the tribes named. To the west of Cape Cod the powerful Narragansetts and Pequots were scattered in well organized bands; while in the interior, upon the rivers, and on the borders of the lakes, were other strong settlements: the Nipmucks, in the interior of Massachusetts, and New Hampshire, and occupying the valley of the Merrimack, were a thrifty people; the Norridgewocks, seated upon the branches of the Kennebec and the lakes, in the northern part of Maine, prospered equally with their neighbors. The

latter were called Abenaquis by the French, and they are remarkable in history for the active services which they rendered the French in their long and finally unsuccessful war with the English.

East of the Penobscot were the Scootucks or Passamaquoddies, inhabiting the Scootuck or St. Croix River, and the shores of the Passamaquoddy Bay. In 1614, the Penobscots were one of the most powerful tribes in New England. Their chief held jurisdiction over the tribes in Maine as far as the Saco. They were then led iuto a war with the Tarratines by this chief. The contest lasted for some time, during which the Penobscot leader had many signal triumphs. At last his crafty enemies conducted an expedition into his country with so much secrecy that they were crowned with abundant success. The chief of the Penobscots and his family were put to death. Divisions now arose as to the vacant chieftainship, of which the cunning Tarratines took timely advantage and prosecuted a war of extermination along the coast of Massachusetts. Hand in hand with this dreadful war came that more dreadful pestilence of which poets have sung and historians written much, but of which we have no authentic records; but we have the most ample evidences of its existence, for, in 1620, the vast Indian populations from the St. Croix to Cape Cod had become so greatly reduced in numbers that many of the settlements existed only in remembrance.

Capt. Smith informs us that the Indians suffered from a most destructive plague for three successive years, which extended for about two hundred miles along the sea-coast. The results were so terrible that in many places there remained scarcely five out of the hundred of the inhabitants. We are left in total ignorance, or wholly to conjecture, as to the nature of this disease, except in respect of its power for evil; but there are sufficient indications to show that its fearful march did not extend south beyond Cape Cod, aud that it was limited, in its more fatal results, to the tribes of the interior, so that the Pilgrims, in 1620, and for many years thereafter, had but little to fear from the once warlike tribes of the seashore north of Cape Cod.

It was at this period that we find the prosperous settlements in the valley of the Merrimack, around the fruitful falls and rich meadows of that ever-pleasant river. The Merrimack of the day of which we are writing, was a succession of bays from Lake Winnepesaukee to the ocean, a portion of which still remaius at Sanboruton and Meredith. "These intervales," says Mr. Potter, "were of very great fertility aud of such ready productiveness as to afford an abundant harvest to the scanty husbandry of the Indian." More than two centuries of culture have hardly decreased their fertility. But the Merrimack had many attractions to draw the native inhabitants along its borders. "Risiug in the White Mountains, at an altitude of six thousand feet above the level of the ocean, its waters find their way to the Atlantic, through the distance of two hundred and fifty miles: of course there are rapids and falls through most of its entire length. These afforded the most ample fishing-grounds to the natives, whereat to spear, and take with dip-net and seine, the myriads of alewives, shad, and salmon, that literally crowded the Merrimack during certain seasous of the year. Then the woods upon its banks were filled with moose, deer, and bears, whilst the ponds and lakes, the sources of its tributaries, were teeming with water-fowl." Along the borders of this river, at points most convenient to Indian wants, the early European explorers found happy Indian settlements. Some one has fitly called this river the very paradise of Indian imagination.

These tribes upon this noble river were the Agawaun, Wamesit or Pawtucket, Nashua, Souhegan, Namaoskeag, Peunacook, and Winnepesaukee. The Agawams occupied the eastern portion of Essex Couuty, extending from "tide-water on the Merrimack, round to Cape Ann." Their whole territory was called Wormesquamsauke, which means the Pleasant Water Place. This long word, under the pressure of early American genius, soon fell to Squamsauke, then to Asquam, and finally to Squam. Several localities iu Essex Couuty have derived their names from this Indian word, such as Squam, the name of a pleasant harbor, north of Cape Ann, and Swampscott, the pleasant town just east of Lynn.

The Wamesits lived at the forks of the Merrimack and Concord rivers, and upon both banks of the latter. Here all the Indians, for miles in every direction, were in the habit of gathering at certain seasons of the year, especially in the spring and summer, where, at the Pawtucket Falls, near by, was one of the most noted Indiau fishing-stations in New England. They caught and dried their year's stock of shad and salmon, engaged in their usual dances and merry-makings, and then dispersed to their more permanent settlements. Wamesit was co-extensive with the present limits of the city of Lowell. The Indians in this neighborhood were called Pawtuckets frequently, probably from the falls in the river of that name. The word, however, seems, as used by the English, rather to have included all the Indians north of the Merrimack, than only that particular tribe.

The Nashuas resided ûpon the Nashua, and the valley of the Merrimack, opposite and below the mouth of that river. The Souhegans scattered their tents upon the bauks of the river of that name, occupying the lowlands of the Merrimack, above and below the mouth of their own river. These Indians were often called Natacooks, or Nacooks. The Namaoskeags were established at the falls in the Merrimack, presently called Amoskeag. The Pennacooks occupied the fertile bottom lands at Pennacook, now included within the limits of Bow, Concord, and Boscawen. The Winnepesaukees occupied the borders of the lake of that name, one of their noted fishiug-places beiug at the outlet of the lake, now known as the Weirs.

Of these tribes, the Pennacooks were the most powerful, and the Winnepesaukee, Amoskeag, Souhegan, and Nashua tribes were tributary to them. On the other haud, the Wamesits were so intermarried with them, as to be mainly uuder their control, acknowledged submission to their chief, Passaconaway, and finally, as the population decreased, with the other tribes upon the Merrimack, became incorporated with the Pennacooks, ceasing to be distinct tribes. The Agawams of Essex were merged into this tribe also, and at such an early date that but little can be recorded of them as a separate tribe.

The whole of these Indians in the interior were knowu and called by the name of Nipmucks, or Fresh Water Iudians. But the Iudians in the Merriuack valley, although properly Nipmucks, and living in distant bands or tribes, were nearly always called Pennacooks by the English. This was due to the fact that the Penuacook was the most powerful tribe in the valley, and, as well to the other fact, that its chief, Passaconaway, was the most powerful sagamore in that region. The standing aud prowess of this tribe and chief, brought them promiuently before the English on all occasions of importance, such as treaties and negotiations; and hence the English, meeting but few Iudians of importance from the Merrimac valley, who were not Pennacooks, applied their names generally to the inhabitants of the upper Merrimack valley. But this was due to the foresight of the English, for, by the year 1685, the Pennacooks were the ouly tribe iu, and had undisputed possession of the whole valley.

The Naumkeags occupied the land where Salem now stands, and, in the years of their strength, they were a prosperous, numerous, and powerful tribe; but when our fathers entered upon their soil, they were so dwindled away by fatal disease, that they were not reckoned as of any importauce in tiues of war with more powerful bands. The Rev. John Higginson thus speaks of such of these Iudians as survived when he came to Saleu: "To the best of my remembrance when I came over with my father to this place, beiug then about thirteen years old, there was in these parts a widow woman, called the Squaw Sachem, who had three sons, Sagaunore John, kept at Mistick, Sagamore James, at Saugust, and Sagamore George here at Naumkeke. Whether he was actual sachem here, I

cannot say, for he was young then about my age, and I think there was an elder man that was at least his guardian. But the Indian towne of Wigwams was on the north side of the north river not farre from Simondes and then both the north and south side of the river was called Naumkeke." The squaw here named, was probably the companion of Nanepashemet, the chief who was killed about 1619, and left five children; of these was the sagamore named by Higginson. It is reasonable to suppose that Naumkeag was one of his principal residences. A party from Plymouth, in 1621, came upon two of his forts, one of which was, no doubt, the "old Indian fort" at Marblehead Neck. Nanepashemet's jurisdiction was quite extensive. The three sons, who succeeded him, claimed all the lands in and around Salem, Marblehead, Lynn, and as far as "Mystick."

Mr. Felt informs us that for a second husband, the squaw sachem married Wappacomet, a priest. Jointly with him she granted lands, between 1639–40, bordering on Mistick Pond, reserved by her from Charlestown and Cambridge, to Jotham Gibbons, son of Edward Gibbons of Boston. The land so granted was to be possessed by Gibbons at her death. In the deed of this conveyance she styles herself "squaw sachem of Mystick." In 1644 she, with several sagamores, submitted to the government of the Colony, and consented to have the children of her subjects taught the truths of the Bible. It is thought by some, though it is not definitely known, that she was the squaw, who, being blind, died in consequence of ill treatment from a party of Narragansetts, who came as enemies in 1667 and robbed their fort.

Sagamore James, one of the squaw sachem's sons, was named Montowompatt, and was sagamore of Lynn and Marblehead. Mr. Dudley, in his letter of 1631, informs us that "near to Salem dwelleth two or three families subject to the sagamore of Agawam. This sagamore hath but few subjects, and they and himself tributary to Sagamore James, having been, before the last year, in James's minority, tributary to Shicka Talbott." When Mr. Dudley wrote, it appeared that James had but recently assumed his jurisdiction, and held authority over the Indians of Salem and Ipswich, as tributaries. Thus this chief came into possession of a part of his father's territory, formerly under the sagamoreship of Naumkeag. But the jurisdiction was destined to cease. James and most of his subjects were carried off by small-pox, in 1633.

His elder brother, John, or Wonohaquaham, met the same fate. He and most of his people died of the same disease, near the same date. Mr. Maverick buried above thirty of them in one day. The Charlestown records inform us that John cheerfully permitted the emigrants from Salem to settle that place, and speak of him as "of gentle and good disposition." When the fatal disease overtook him, he desired to be committed to the care of the English, and promised, if he recovered, to live with the English and to serve the Englishman's God. He left one son, whom he committed to the care of the Rev. Mr. Wilson, pastor at Boston. He left certain gifts for the governor and his English friends, and provided for the payment of his own debts and those of his subjects. Finally, he died in the faith of the true God, leaving his land at Powder Horn Hill to his son, and, in case of his death, to his brother George.

Thus it was that George was left the sole survivor and successor. It was probably this George to whom Mr. Eliot referred, in his letter of 1649, when he said: "Lynn Indians are all naught, save one, who sometimes cometh to heare the word and telleth me that hee prayeth to God, and the reason why they are bad is partly and principally because their sachem is naught, and careth not to pray unto God." This, and subsequent events, establish pretty clearly that George did not embrace, in any beneficial degree, the Christian faith. The son of John had died, when, in May, 1651, his uncle George petitioned the General Court that he might be recognized as the rightful heir to the land of the deceased. The residents of Chelsea, then Rumney Marsh, disputed his claim, and submitted that if it was allowed, it would result in disturbing most of the land titles in Chelsea and Lynn. George had now, undoubtedly, succeeded to the rule of all the Indians, from Naumkeag River to Mystic River, thereby rising, in a measure, to the dignity of his father as to his territorial boundaries, but by no means in respect of the number of his subjects. George's Indian name was Winnapurkitt. He was sometimes called George Rumney Marsh, and No Nose. He lived to survive the desperate war between Philip and New England, and appears to have allied himself with the hostile Indians. He was convicted of participation in the war, and transported, among other Indians, to a foreign port and sold as a slave. On returning home, he lived the remnant of his days, and finally died, at the house of his relative, James Rumney Marsh, of Natick. The latter had rendered valuable service to the English during the Indian rebellion. George married Joane, or Ahawaycetsquaine, the daughter of Poquannum, or Dark Skin, who lived at Nahant. He left two daughters, Cicely Petaghunecksy and Sarah Wuttaquatinmisk, and three grand-children, David Nonnupandhow and Sam Wattoanoh, both children of his son Nonnumpannumhow, and John Toutohqunne, the son of Cicely. In 1686, these descendants of the last sagamore of Naumkeag lived at Chelmsford. Other connections of the chief resided at Natick, and elsewhere.

At George's death, he nominally transferred his possessions to his kinsman, James Rumney Marsh. The condition was imposed that the heir should use exertions to have his fee in the lands fully acknowledged, and an adequate consideration paid for it. Nor were these conditions without a basis in equity. The very year in which he died, Marblehead paid off this additional claim; and, two years later, Salem did likewise. George died in 1684.

Thus terminated the last reigning house of the natives at Naumkeag. Thus passed forever from the red men the last trace of their inherited title to the soil of that region. Still it continued to be trodden with the feet of wandering natives. It is related that as late as 1725, a company of them paid annual visits to Gallows Hill — a fact, which, if correct, sufficiently proves them to have been descendants of the Naumkeags.

Some further remarks on the early Indian land grants will be found in the town histories on succeeding pages, as also additional notes on the last Indian villages of the county.

CHAPTER III.

THE FIRST SETTLEMENTS.

ORGANIZATION OF THE COUNTY — SETTLEMENT OF SALEM, LYNN, ANDOVER, IPSWICH, ROWLEY, NEWBURY, GLOUCESTER, AND WENHAM.

The county of Essex, Mass., was incorporated in 1643. It then consisted of the following towns; viz., Salem, Lynn, Enon, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester, and Coehichewic. At the same session of the General Court in which the county was incorporated, the name of Enon was changed to Wenham. Cochichewic was the name applied to the territory now embraced within the limits of Andover. The history of the county previous to this date is, of course, identical with the history of the eight towns named above, and will be found, in detail, in another part of this volume. However, to accommodate the purposes of the present sketch, and for the better understanding of the reader, we may, even at the risk of being repeated in the following town histories, take a hurried glance at the rise and early progress of these eight settlements.

First, then, as to Salem; and we have already seen, in the foregoing account of Massachusetts Bay Colony, how this old town received its first instalments of civilization. Its first settlement was consequent upon a failure to plant a fishing-station at Cape Ann,

which came to pass in this way. Numerous fishing voyages had been made by the English to the American coast; many of the principal bays and harbors on the New England coast had been explored, and a few brave, heroic men had founded the Plymouth Colony. Through these means the English received such intelligence of the state of the country, and of the abundance of fish in its waters, as to induce the belief among such as were inclined to venture their means in fishing enterprises, that a profitable fishing colony might be planted in New England, which, through the means of agriculture, and the products of the fisheries, would result in gains to the projectors. Certain merchants and other gentlemen of Dorchester, England, made the first move in this direction. They were prompted and encouraged by the Rev. John White, an able divine of that place. Nothing appears among the various records of this enterprise to indicate that either Mr. White or his copartners had fixed upon any certain place for their colony. Their ship arrived at the usual fishing-ground, and being rather late in the season, found it necessary to put into Massachusetts Bay before the cargo could be completed. This done, the vessel proceeded on her return, leaving fourteen men with the necessary provisions, "in the country of Cape Ann." These persons, no doubt, began the work of a plantation, and however much interest may attach to these pioneers, it is doomed to utter disappointment, as history refuses to inform us concerning their privations, or even to let us have their names. There were at that time in New England, besides the settlers of the Plymouth Colony, a few men at Nantasket; the remaining few of George's plantation at Weymouth; the settlers at Piscataqua River and Saco, who began in the same year. There was also a company at Monhegan, and, it may be, one or two other residents in Maine. "The imagination," says Mr. Babson, "may find a pleasure in dwelling for a moment with the little company at Cape Ann: in looking upon its members, as they were attracted abroad by day to find sources of wonder and delight in new aspects of nature, and as they were occupied during the long hours of the winter evening with recollections of home and stories of exploits and adventures along the shores and in the wilderness of the New World."

But while this gallant fourteen were surveying Cape Ann, under the auspices of the Dorchester Company, others, it may be with a knowledge of their occupation of the territory, turned their attention to the same place. In the fall of 1623, the same year that these men were left at Cape Ann, Edward Winslow, of New Plymouth, sailed on a mission of importance to England. While there, he must have obtained information of the doings of the Dorchester Company at Cape Ann, and of their partial success in the fisheries; at all events, Winslow made preparations for the commencement of fishing by his own Colony. He and Robert Cushman procured from Lord Sheffield, a member of the Council for New England, a patent conveying to them and their associates a tract of ground in New England, "in a known place there commonly called Cape Ann." The Plymouth colonists did not seem to make any use of this patent, except for fishing purposes; and as the Dorchester Company had already taken possession of the place at the date on which the patent was granted Winslow and Cushman, an arrangement was effected by the Dorchester Company with the patentees for participating in the benefits secured by the patent. This fact is confirmed by Capt. John Smith, who, writing in 1624, says, "At Cape Anne there is a settlement beginning by the Dorchester men, which they hold of those of New Plymouth."

The fourteen men who were left at Cape Ann in 1623, to commence the work of a plantation, were gladdened, early in the following spring, by the appearance of their ship returning, under the command of the same master, with the needed supplies. Additional colonists were left, so that the number now reached thirty-two, two of whom, John Tylly and Thomas Gardner, were appointed overseers of the business of the plantation, — the first of the fishing, and the other of the planting. The fishing business, however, proved a losing speculation to the Dorchester merchants; and, although a thorough effort was made in 1625 to demonstrate the practicability of the scheme, its failure became inevitable. "The best results, however, for the prosperity of the Colony, so far, at least, as the proceedings at the plantation could contribute to it, were to be expected from the appointment of a very superior man already in the country, to be its superintendent or governor."

It is well known that the merchant adventurers, who, in England, aided the Pilgrim colonists, were divided into two parties on the subject of religion: one party, adhering to the established church, succeeded in sending to the Colony a minister of their own church. It is needless to say that such a course was repugnant to the colonists. The Rev. John Lyford, the minister referred to, on arriving in the Colony, found a few holding views in accord with him; but these held themselves aloof from any hostility, except in the case of John Oldham. The conduct of these men secured their expulsion from the Colony, and they settled, for the time being, at Nantasket, where, soon after, they were joined by Roger Conant and a few others, who disliked the rigid separation of the Pilgrims.

This is the first mention of Mr. Conant in New England history; but he was well known in his native land, and, in 1625, he was appointed by the Dorchester Company, acting under the advice of the Rev. John White, to be governor of their plantations at Cape Ann. Lyford and Oldham were invited to join the Colony; and while the latter declined, the former accepted and became their minister. It is believed that Conant received his appointment as governor of the plantation, in 1625, and that he removed to Cape Ann in the same year. There is evidence that he was performing his duties at that place early in the spring of that year. About one year after, the Dorchester Company abandoned the enterprise, having expended nearly all the capital invested, without any gains. Their operations for the Colony now ceased; and most of their men, being sent for, returned to England. Roger Conant, and a few of the most honest and industrious, resolved to stay and take charge of the little property at the plantation. But, as the advantages of Cape Ann consisted only in its adaptability to fishing enterprise, they removed, some time in the next year, 1626, to Naumkeag, now Salem, a place much better adapted to the wants of an infant colony.

Such were the means employed, resulting in the first permanent settlement in Essex County, at Salem, in 1626. It was evidently Mr. Conant's ambition to be instrumental in founding a permanent colony, such as would be a suitable place for those who desired to escape religious intolerance in England. No sooner had he removed, with his few followers, to Salem, than he communicated with the Rev. John White, of Dorchester, England, concerning his plans, which were approved. The events which followed, embracing the arrival of Governors Endicott and Winthrop, together with the general affairs of interest connected with the establishment of civil government, have already been fully recorded in a previous chapter on the Massachusetts Bay Colony. The history of Salem, from its first settlement to the organization of Essex County, in 1643, and subsequently to the present day, will be found further on in this volume, in its proper place among the town histories.

Lynn was also one of the eight towns in existence in Essex County at the date of its incorporation. It was first settled in 1629, by Edmund and Francis Ingalls, from Lincolnshire, England. Edmund Ingalls settled as a farmer in the eastern part of the town, near to a small pond, on the margin of which he had a malt-house. Later, in 1638, when the lands were divided, Edmund and Francis Ingalls were apportioned one hundred and twenty acres of "upland and meadow." These pioneers found the topography of the town quite diversified. The southern portion consisted of a long, narrow prairie, bounded on the north, by a high, rocky range of hills, beyond which was a heavy range of woodland. The town originally included the territory of Saugus, Swampscott, Nahant, and Lynnfield. These towns were afterwards settled by themselves. The towns of

Reading and South Reading were also originally included within the extensive boundaries of Lynn. The Indian name of the place was Saugus, and by that name it was known for eight years.

Francis Ingalls, one of the first settlers at Lynn, was a tanner, and lived at Swampscott. He erected a tannery at Humphrey's Brook, which was the first in New England, and the first step in the great shoemaking industry which has subsequently grown up in that quarter. The Messrs. Ingalls were followed by others; and in a short time the settlement contained five men, with their families, comprising in all about twenty persons. "They did not settle at Sagamore Hill," says Newhall, "because the Indians were there; nor on the common, because that was a forest; but, coming from Salem, they selected a 'faire playne,' somewhat less than half a mile in extent, where they built their rude cottages, 'and had peaceful possession.' There the soil of Lynn was first stirred by the white men; there, surrounded by Indians, they laid the foundation of a town." These are a few of the circumstances connected with the first settlement of Lynn. As will be seen, it was a sort of outpost of Salem; for it will be remembered, that when Salem was first laid out, it included within its limits, Beverly, Manchester, Marblehead, Danvers, a part of Lynn, Topsfield, and Wenham.

Wenham was the first to be set off as a distinct township. The first notice we have of this place is in an account of the murder of John Hoddy, which took place near the "Great Pond." John Williams, the murderer, was seized, sentenced to be hung, and executed at Boston. This murder excited great attention, as it was the first which occurred among the European population of the Colony. The earliest settlers in Wenham probably located on the borders of the lake. On the 5th of November, 1639, the General Court enacted that "Whereas the inhabitants of Salem have agreed to plant a village near the river which runeth to Ipswich, it is ordered that all the lands near their bounds, between Salem and said river, not belonging to any other town or person, by any former grant shall belong to said village." The first settlers called their village Enon; but in 1643, when the town was incorporated, as already mentioned, the name was changed to Wenham.

The town of Ipswich had been settled ten years previous to the incorporation of the county. The country for many miles around had long been known by the Indian name of Agawam, but in the early spring of 1633, its permanent settlement by the whites was inaugurated by John Winthrop, son of Gov. Winthrop, and twelve others, among whom were William Clark, Robert Coles, Thomas Howlet, John Briggs, John Gage, Thomas Hardy, William Perkins, William Thorndike and William Sargent. In 1634, the name of Ipswich was substituted in the place of Agawam, and the town was incorporated by the General Court. For a long time Ipswich was one of the great central points of the county.

Rowley was settled in 1639, and the circumstances connected with its settlement are interesting. About twenty ships a year were now arriving from England, with passengers, seeking a home in this land of liberty. The number of inhabitants were so increased by these arrivals that they were obliged to look out for new plantations each year. Thus it became that within a few years all the most desirable places for a settlement were taken up. Therefore, on the arrival of Ezekiel Rogers, with about twenty families, in the fall of 1638, no favorable place for a settlement seemed to be accessible, and in consequence he and his party spent the winter at Salem. An effort was made in the following spring to induce the whole party to settle in New Haven, but this failed; and, after some delay, Mr. Rogers and his associates settled at Rowley, so called from Rowley in Yorkshire, Eng., where he and some of his people had lived. In September, 1639, the town thus founded by Mr. Rogers, was incorporated by the General Court under the name of Rowley. The place was at first called "Mr. Rogers' Plantation." Although Mr. Rogers brought over with him but about twenty families, before reaching Rowley he had increased his company to about sixty families. For some time these settlers labored together in common.

Newbury was settled in the spring of 1635, and derived its name from Newbury, a town in Berkshire, Eng. Before its incorporation, which occurred in the spring of 1635, when it was first settled, it was called by the Indian name of Quascacunquen. The first settlers of Newbury probably reached that place by water from Ipswich. This company was not large, and included Henry Sewall and servants, William Moody, his wife and four sons, Anthony Short, Henry Short and wife, John Spencer, Nicholas Easton, his wife and son John, Richard Kent, senior, and Stephen Kent, with their wives, Richard Kent, Jr., and James Kent, Thomas Parker, John Woodbridge, James Noyes, his wife and brother Nicholas Noyes, Thomas Brown, Richard Brown, James Browne and wife, Thomas Coleman, Francis Plummer and wife, with his two sons Joseph and Samuel, and others whose names are not certainly known.

For some time the business of the town was transacted by a committee of the whole, "but," says Mr. Coffin, "the population increasing rapidly, — fifteen ships with passengers, having arrived in June, one in August, one in November, and one in December, bringing with them many families, who immediately settled in Newbury, — the plantation soon received a sufficient company to make a competent town, according to the order of the General Court."

Many attempts were made to found a permanent settlement at Cape Ann, but none succeeded until in 1642, when the town was incorporated under the name of Gloucester, "the first ordering, settling and disposing of lots, was made by Mr. Endicott and Mr. Downing." It is not known exactly how many settlers were then at that place, but at this time it first assumed the condition of a permanent settlement and the organic form of a town. The arrival of the Rev. Richard Blynman, with several families from Plymouth Colony, in the same year, also gave importance to the place.

Andover, first called Cochichewick, was not incorporated until 1646, three years after the incorporation of the county of Essex, yet a settlement existed there previous to 1643. It is recorded that in 1634, an order was issued by the General Court respecting the land at Andover, "that it shall be reserved for an inland plantation, and whosoever shall go to inhabit there shall have three years' immunity from all taxes, levies, public charges and services whatever, military discipline only excepted." A committee was appointed, consisting of John Winthrop, Richard Bellingham, and William Coddington, to license any that might desire to settle on these lands. The land was purchased from the Indians by Mr. Woodbridge, for £6 and a coat, in behalf of the inhabitants of the town. This purchase was confirmed by the General Court in 1646. The name Andover was given to the town with reference to some of the planters, who came from Andover in Hampshire, Eng.

In May, 1643, the settlements of the Massachusetts Bay Colony had reached the number of thirty-one, as follows: "Salem, Linn, Enon, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, Gloucester, Cochichewick, Salsberry, Hampton, Haverhill, Exceter, Dover, Strawberry Banck, Charlestowne, Cambridge, Watertowne, Sudburry, Concord, Wooborne, Meadford, Linn Village, Reding, Boston, Roxbury, Dorchester, Dedham, Braintree, Waymoth, Hingham, Nantasket." The whole Colony was divided into four counties; viz., Essex, Norfolk, Middlesex, and Suffolk. Essex County embraced the eight towns first named above, Salem being made the shire town.

CHAPTER IV.

PECULIARITIES OF EARLY SETTLERS.

FREEMEN — RESIDENTS — TITLES AND DISTINCTIONS — DWELLING-HOUSES — LIGHTS, &C.

The county organization was not burdened with very extensive legislative or judicial functions. It is to be believed that the General Court was too jealous of its powers to delegate any great degree of them to subordinate courts. However, when the county received an organic existence, certain duties and powers were given to the county courts, which, as a rule, met quarterly at the shire towns, and despatched certain local business, such as was at that time considered burdensome to the supreme legislative power in the Colony. But, as the Colony increased in population, and the business interests of the towns developed, the legislative and judicial labor of the counties increased, and with it came also an enlargement of their powers. From the very earliest settlement of the county, certain distinctions were recognized among the inhabitants. There was a wide difference between a freeman and a resident. To become a freeman, each person was legally required to be a respectable member of some Congregational church. Persons were generally made freemen by the General Court; but as the business of that body increased, this duty was transferred to the quarterly courts of the counties. It was an important consideration that none but freemen could vote at elections, or hold office. However, in 1664, this regulation was so far altered, by royal decree, as to permit persons who could not obtain certificates of their being correct in the required doctrines to become freemen.

For a considerable period, it was the custom for all the freemen of the Colony to meet at Boston to elect magistrates, governor, and lieutenant-governor; but, as the settlements extended, this practice became inconvenient, and the freemen of the more distant towns were permitted to send proxies; and finally, these assemblies were abandoned altogether. The freeman's oath, as fixed by the General Court in 1634, was as follows: "I, A. B., being by God's providence an inhabitant and freeman within the jurisdiction of this Commonwealth, do freely acknowledge myself to be subject to the government thereof, and therefore do here swear by the great and dreadful God, that I will be true and faithful to the same, and will accordingly yield assistance and support thereunto, with my person and estate, as in equity I am bound; and I will also truly endeavor to maintain and preserve all the liberties and privileges thereof, submitting myself to the wholesome laws and orders, made and established by the same; and further, that I will not plot nor practise any evil against it, nor consent to any that shall so do, but will truly discover and reveal the same to lawful authority now here established, for the speedy preventing thereof. Moreover, I do solemnly bind myself in the sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice, touching any such matter of this state, wherein freemen are to deal, I will give my vote and suffrage, as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce and tend to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons, or favor of any man, so help me God, in the Lord Jesus Christ."

The "residents" were a stratum below the freemen, at least, in civil and political rights. They were persons who were either not allowed, or declined to become freemen. However, it was provided as early as 1635, that all such residents over sixteen years of age should take an oath of fidelity; and although their political rights were meagre, they were not by any means thereupon excused from contributing of their means for the spread of the gospel and support of the government. But light was slowly dawning for these half-fledged residents. In 1649 it was ordered that such of them as were twenty-four years of age, who had taken the oath of fidelity, might be chosen on juries by the freemen, and be allowed to vote for selectmen; and finally, in 1664, when the conditions of freemanship became less rigid, the disabilities of residents disappeared entirely.

The oath which these residents were obliged to take, was in this language: "I do here swear and call God to witness, that being now an inhabitant within the limits of this jurisdiction of Massachusetts I do acknowledge myself lawfully subject to the authority and government here established; and do accordingly submit my person, family, and estate to be protected, ordered, and governed by the laws and constitutions thereof; and do faithfully promise to be from time to time obedient and conformable thereto, and to the authority of the governor and all other magistrates and their successors, and to all such laws, orders, sentences, and decrees as now are or hereafter shall be lawfully made, decreed and published by them or their successors, and I will always endeavor (as in duty I am bound) to advance the peace and welfare of this body politic, and I will to my best power and means seek to divert and prevent whatsoever may tend to the ruin or damage thereof, or of the governor, deputy-governor, or assistants, or any of their successors; and I will give speedy notice to them, or some of them, of any seditions, violent treachery, or other hurt or evil, which I shall know, hear, or vehemently suspect to be plotted or intended against them or any of them, or against the said Commonwealth or government established, so help me God."

The title of *Mr.* was applied to captains, and frequently to mates of vessels; to military captains; to eminent merchants; to schoolmasters, doctors, magistrates, and clergymen; to persons who had received a second degree at college, and who had been made freemen. The wives and daughters of these persons were honored with the title of *Mrs.* To be deprived of this address required a legal action, and was considered a great degradation. In September, 1631, Josiah Plaistow, of Boston, for a misdemeanor, was sentenced by the court of assistants, "hereafter to be called by the name of Josias, and not *Mr.* as formerly used to be."

The usual address of adults who were not *Mr. or Mrs.*, was *goodman* and *goodwife*, placed before their names. The terms soon fell into partial disuse, and were often misapplied; but distinctions similar to these continued in the Colony until it become a Province, when the custom of making freemen by the General Court seems to have been discontinued.

The early dwelling-houses of Essex County were, upon the whole, pleasantly built. They were, for the most part, very similar to each other, differing only in size and appointments, according to the means of their occupants. The better class of these houses were two stories high, with the upper story jutting out a foot or so over the lower. The roofs being either "hipped or gambrel," were high and steep. Some of the most pretentious dwellings had peaks on each side of the roof, so as to form small chambers. The frames were mostly of white oak, and the timbers were very much larger than those used even in larger buildings at the present day. In the best finished rooms the beams were either in sight, or poorly disguised.

"The windows of such houses," says Mr. Felt, "were from two and a half to three feet long, one and a half to two wide, with squares like the figure of a diamond, set in lead lines, and from three to four inches long. These windows were sometimes entire and sometimes in halves, and opened outwardly on hinges. They were fashionable till after 1734. . . The doors of the best houses had diagrams marked out on them, as large as the squares of glass, set in lead lines, and had brass nails driven in at the points of the angles."

The walls of the houses were generally daubed with clay, mixed with straw, or roughly plastered with a sort of lime made principally from clam-shells. On the inside, whitewash was used instead of paper, which was substituted at a later period. A few of the best buildings were shingled on the top, while a majority had only thatched roofs till after 1691. Very few houses, previous to 1700, had more than one chimney. This was generally located in the middle of the

house, and was of large dimensions; and, besides other fireplaces, had a mammoth one for the kitchen, where the whole family could sit on two benches, and enjoy the old-fashioned evening fire. There was but little or no paint used, inside or out, previous to 1734.

Although the early settlers of Essex County could not produce tallow for candles, they were not doomed to sit in darkness; for, by the abundance of fish, oil was afforded in great abundance for lamps. But, if this oil ever gave out, there was another source of light. The pine-trees, that were most plentiful of all wood, "do allow us plenty of candles, which are useful in a house; and they are such candles as the Indians commonly use, having no other; and they are nothing else but the wood of the pine-tree, cloven in two little slices, something slim, which are so full of the moisture of turpentine and pitch, that they burn as clear as a torch."

The oil consumed by the early settlers was mostly obtained from fish livers, and continued to be used in the county until within half a century. The lamp in which this oil was used was large, made of tin, had a great wick, and was usually hung on one side of the fireplace.

To the first settlers, the rivers were the principal highways of communication; but, with the increase of the appliances of civilization, roads were constructed, and although, owing to the scarcity of horses, walking was common, yet, when such animals became plenty, two persons would ride one of them, fitted out with a saddle and a pillion. It was also common for females to ride with side-saddles. These customs continued until the introduction of small wagons and chaises. "About 1770, it began to be the practice to trot horses. Previously, these animals had paced. It had been common to pay individuals to teach them to go in this manner. The way in which a horse was taught to pace, was by fastening his two right and two left feet together with leather straps, so that the two former might step together, and then the two latter."

It must now engage our attention to notice the rise of churches and other institutions within the county, and to speak of the general prosperity of the settlements; but, before entering upon this, let us examine the witchcraft delusion, which stands out so prominently in the early history of Essex County, and which must forever vex and perplex the historian. This may carry us past the dates of other important events, to which we shall be careful to return.

CHAPTER V.

WITCHCRAFT — BRIEF HISTORY OF THE DELUSION, WITH AN ACCOUNT OF THE TRIALS, EXECUTIONS, &C.

The witchcraft delusion of 1692 has attracted the eyes of the world to the county of Essex; for, although there are records of "communings with the Devil" as early as the thirteenth century, it was not till the delusion popularly known as "the Salem witchcraft," that anything like universal attention was directed to this sin. This most memorable instance of 1692, in "Salem Village," was a crisis, and since those days witchcraft has become a matter of history only. Forty years before the terrible excitement that resulted in the execution of nineteen persons for the crime of witchcraft, scattering cases of accusations occurred, but no general outbreak till 1692. In September, 1652, the grand jury presented John Bradstreet, of Rowley, "for suspicion of having familiarity with the Devil." On the 28th of that month he was convicted in court, at Ipswich, of lying; and this being a second offence, he was fined to pay twenty shillings, or else be whipped. In 1658, John Godfrey, of Andover, was accused of causing losses in the estates of several people, and "some affliction in their bodies also." No sentence was ever imposed on Godfrey, though the case was several times in court; and about 1659, he sued his accusers for defamation. He is reputed to have challenged, and even courted, the imputation of witchcraft. In November, 1669, "Goody Burt," a widow, was prosecuted, a physician testifying that "no natural cause" could have led to such effects as were wrought by her. Her operations were mainly in Lynn, Marblehead, and Salem. Philip Reed, the physician, preferred similar charges against Margaret Gifford, "a witch," in 1680; but no record of action against her appears. In 1679, Caleb Powell was arrested for bewitching, or, as the warrant specified, "for suspicion of working with the Devil to the molesting of William Morse and his family." This man was not found guilty, but "so much suspicion" was proved, that he was ordered to pay the costs of court. The arrest of Mr. Morse's mother was next demanded, on charge of causing the trouble; and as Essex County courts could not be relied on for convictions in these cases, she was tried in Boston before the highest court in the Colony. She was found guilty, and the death sentence was imposed on her; but she was twice reprieved; a new trial granted by the House of Deputies, but refused by the magistrates; and, finally, she was released. The "witchery" in this case was all caused by the mischievous son of Mr. Morse. Margaret Jones and Ann Hibbins were also sentenced as witches. These, and similar instances, wrought up the public mind to that pitch of anxiety, that the people were in condition to succumb to the far greater excitement of 1692, a year that has become memorable in American history.

Briefly traced, the history of the Salem witchcraft is here narrated. During the winter of 1691–92, a company of young girls were in the habit of assembling at the residence of the Rev. Samuel Parris, the clergyman of Salem Village, then including what is now Danvers Centre, Danversport, Tapleyville, Putnamville, and a part of Danvers Plains. At the social parties held at the minister's house, the arts of fortune-telling, palmistry, necromancy and magic were practised, till considerable skill in this direction was attained. After a little time, these people began to ascribe their peculiar actions to supernatural agencies, and the whole neighborhood became intensely interested, then alarmed, and an examination by the village physician, resulting in pronouncing them "bewitched," capped the whole, and the witchcraft delusion had taken root, to grow apace, and to lead to the terrible tragedies that the page of history records. The persons who were of the party that met at the house of Mr. Parris, and who acted the opening scenes, are thus named and described by the late Hon. Charles W. Upham of Salem, in his valuable and exhaustive volumes entitled, "Salem Witchcraft": Elizabeth, daughter of Mr. Parris, was nine years of age; she performed a leading part in the first stages of the affair. Abigail Williams, a neice of Mr. Parris, was eleven years old; she acted conspicuously from the inception to the end of the excitement. Ann Putnam, a daughter of the parish clerk, was twelve years old; this girl was in many respects the leading agent in the mischief that followed. Mary Walcot, seventeen years of age, was a daughter of Jonathan Walcot. Mercy Lewis was also seventeen; she lived as a servant in the house of Thomas Putnam; she was responsible for much of the crime and horror connected with the affair. Elizabeth Hubbard, aged seventeen, was a neice of Mrs. Dr. Griggs, and lived in her family. Elizabeth Booth and Susannah Sheldon, each eighteen years old, belonged to families in the neighborhood. Mary Warren, twenty years of age, and Sarah Churchill, of the same age, were servants in the families of John Procter and George Jacobs, Sr. These last two acted prominently in the tragedy, actuated, it is reputed, by malicious feelings towards their employers. Mrs. Ann Putnam, mother of the girl mentioned above, Mrs. Pope, and Mrs. Bibber, living in Wenham, acted with the "afflicted" children.

Matters went from bad to worse. The bewitched at first had exhibited their afflictions, by such strange actions as creeping under benches and chairs, making wild gestures, and uttering strange exclamations. They would be seized with spasms, and apparently suffer

dreadful tortures. The next feature was the extension of these actions to the time of the church services. The minister would be interrupted in his services; and Ann Putnam is mentioned as having such severe attacks, that she had to be held to prevent her breaking up the meeting. Mr. Parris invited neighboring ministers to assemble at his house, and unite in a day of praying, invoking the aid of God for rescue from the terrible visitation. The same feats were performed in their presence, and the clergy corroborated the opinion of the doctor, that the Evil One had taken possession of the spirits of these people. This expression was the last straw. Public opinion all turned in one direction now, and the belief that these people were bewitched, became almost universal. It was demanded of the "afflicted ones" who it was that bewitched them, for it was the accepted doctrine in those days, that the Devil acted, not directly, but through some human agent, or witch. Tituba, an Indian servant of Mr. Parris, Sarah Osburn, who was bedridden, and Sarah Good, a woman of ill-repute, were accused, and on the 29th of February, 1692, warrants were issued for their arrest, the complainants being Joseph Hutchinson, Edward Putnam, Thomas Putnam, and Thomas Preston. On March 1st, an examination of the accused was held before John Hathorne, and Jonathan Corwin, the two leading magistrates in the vicinity. These magistrates "entered the village in imposing array, escorted by the marshal, constables and their aids, with all the trappings of their offices," and a great crowd gathered to hear the testimony taken. The examination was held in the meeting-house, Sarah Good being arraigned first. Her bad name in the community made the people all the more ready to receive the charge against her. She stoutly denied all the charges preferred, as did also Sarah Osburn; but Tituba, the Indian, admitted that she had pinched, and otherwise hurt the children, and declared that she was inspired to do it by the Devil, who had bid her serve him. She also accused Sarah Good and Sarah Osburn of participation in the bewitching of the afflicted ones. This woman was perfectly familiar with the whole affair; and evidently she had been used as an instrument to give effect to the delusion; perhaps, says Mr. Upham, being frightened into confessing what she never did, and accusing the others of what she was instructed to; or, perhaps, being promised immunity from punishment if she acknowledged her own guilt, and fixed a greater responsibility on the other women. Under date of March 7, the court records show that all three were sent to the jail in Boston, the magistrates having held them for trial. All that is known of them after this is very indefinite. The jailer's bill seems to indicate that Sarah Osburn died May 10. Tituba is recorded as being "sold for her fees" about a year later.

Martha or "Goody" Corey, the third wife of Giles Corey, was the next person accused. She was examined March 21st, and the records appear in the handwriting of Mr. Parris. She was committed to Salem jail. Rebecca Nurse was arrested on the 24th, and was examined, and she, too, was cast into jail. Martha Corey was a church-member, and was evidently a person perfectly free from the terrible delusion. Rebecca Nurse was a person of acknowledged worth. She was of infirm health and advanced in years. Each of these two women declared and protested their entire innocence, but the result of any examination was a foregone conclusion, and each new person accused was fully committed for trial, the flimsiest evidence being admitted as conclusive. Dorcas, a little daughter of Sarah Good, between four and five years old, was arraigned and committed with her mother to Boston jail. Says Mr. Upham, in his work on this dark delusion:— "There was no longer any doubt in the mass of the community that the devil had effected a lodgment at Salem Village. Church-members, persons of all social positions, of the highest repute and profession of piety, eminent for visible manifestations of devotion, and of every age, had joined his standard, and become his active allies and confederates." "The public mind was worked to red heat, and now was the moment to strike the blow that would fix an impression deep and irremovable upon it." Deodat Lawson preached a sermon that afternoon that "re-enforced the powers that had begun their work. It justified and commended everything that had been done, and everything that remained to be done." It was printed and endorsed by several of the most eminent divines in the country. One week passed before any further action was taken; but on April 8th, complaints against Sarah Cloyse and Elizabeth Procter, "for high suspicion of sundry acts of witchcraft," having been preferred, warrants for their arrest were procured. Their examination was before a representation of the government of the Colony, headed by the deputy-governor, Thomas Danforth, and took place in the meeting-house of the First Parish. A number of witnesses were examined, and all testified that the accused had "hurt" them,—choked and pinched them, and "tormented" them. Mr. Upham, after a careful examination of all the records and papers relating to those terrible days of evil doing, concludes that nothing was worse than this examination before the deputy-governor and members of the council. As a result of the examination, Sarah Cloyse, John Procter and his wife Elizabeth Procter, were held for trial, and were confined in the jail at Boston, with Rebecca Nurse, Martha Corey, and Dorcas Good. On April 18th, warrants were issued against Giles Corey and Mary Warren, of Salem, Abigail Hobbs, of Topsfield, and Bridget Bishop, of Salem, the second mentioned being one of those who had before been an accuser. She was cast into prison, and was several times examined by the judges, till she appeared to the magistrates and the people to have been delivered from the devil's clutches, and was then released. Mr. Upham expresses the opinion that she played an important part as one of the party of conspirators to develop and carry on a deep-laid plot — for such he considers the whole phenomena. After her discharge from jail, she appeared as a witness in ten prosecutions. Giles Corey was examined in the village meeting-house April 19th. Abigail Hobbs "confessed," and secured immunity from heavy punishment, though she was imprisoned, as was the custom to do with those who confessed, that they might be held in subjection. Bridget Bishop was examined at the same session of court before which Mary Warren was arraigned, and all of the four mentioned were incarcerated in jail. On the 22d of April, William Hobbs, his wife Deliverance, Nehemiah Abbot, Jr., Mary Easty, and Sarah Wilds, all of Topsfield or Ipswich, Edward Bishop, Sarah his wife, Mary Black, a negro, and Mary English, wife of Philip English, all of Salem, were arraigned at the house of Lieutenant Nathaniel Ingersoll. The first-named of these was committed, but was bailed out and the bail forfeited, the parties not deeming it expedient to have him come into court. At the May term the next spring, the fine was remitted, and he was discharged by proclamation. Abbot was dismissed, — the only one reported to have been after an examination, — and it is not quite certain that he was not re-arrested, for a man by the name of Abbot is recorded to have been, though the Christian name is not given in the records. The other seven were all committed, as was the rule. Records of their trials exist only in the cases of Edward Bishop and his wife. The judges — Hathorne and Corwin — showed signs of relaxing their stern methods of conducting the trials, and Thomas Putnam wrote a letter to them immediately, in which he urged them to be a terror to evil-doers, and assured them that, though the people would never be able to make them recompense, a full reward would be given them of the Lord God of Israel, whose cause and interest they had espoused.

On April 30th, warrants were granted against Philip English, of Salem, Sarah Morrel and Dorcas Hoar, of Beverly. Marshal Herrick, the officer entrusted with the serving of the warrants, returned that for English with the indorsement, "Mr. Philip English not to be found. G. H." The others were duly taken into custody. On the 6th of May, English was arrested in Boston, examined, and committed to jail, from which he and his wife escaped, and fled to New York. After the delusion had run its race, they returned to Salem, and con-

tinued to reside there. He was one of the leading men of the town, a merchant, owning twenty-one vessels, beside much real estate. Just what became of Sarah Morrel is not known. She did not suffer the death penalty, and was probably one of those long imprisoned, but finally discharged. Dorcas Hoar was a widow, and among other accusations brought against her in court was the killing of her husband. She protested her innocence of all charges, and reproached her accusers by crying out in court, "Oh, you are liars, and God will stop the mouths of liars." She suffered the common fate of imprisonment. Susanna Martin, of Amesbury, was arrested on a warrant bearing date of April 30, and was examined on May 2d, and she too was added to the list of the imprisoned. In the letter, previously referred to, written by Sergeant Thomas Putnam to Judges Corwin and Hathorne, reference was made to "high and dreadful" things to be disclosed that would make "ears tingle." This proved to be the arrest, probably planned long before it was made, of the Rev. George Burroughs, who was settled in Salem in the fall of 1680, but who was at this time preaching in the frontier settlements of Maine. He was a graduate of Harvard College in the class of 1670, and is known to have been a man of great ability and of sterling worth. The plans looking to his arrest go to show what a deep and firm hold the superstition had taken among the people, else the arrest of a former pastor would not have been tolerated. The order for his arrest was issued in Boston by Elisha Hutchinson, a magistrate in that place, and was addressed to John Partridge, of Portsmouth, field-marshal of the provinces of New Hampshire and Maine. It bore date April 30, 1692, and commanded his arrest on suspicion of "confederacy with the devil." The "afflicted children" became as if influenced by him, and various charges of bewitching were brought against him. One deposition, that of Ann Putnam, taken by her father, and sworn to, is as follows: — "*The Deposition of Ann Putnam*, who testifieth and saith, on the 20th day of April, 1692, at evening, she saw the apparition of a minister, at which she was grievously affrighted, and cried out, 'Oh, dreadful, dreadful! here is a minister come! What! are ministers witches too? Whence came you, and what is your name? for I will complain of you, though you be a minister, if you be a wizard.' Immediately I was tortured by him, being racked, and almost choked by him. And he tempted me to write in his book, which I refused with loud outcries, and said I would not write in his book though he tore me all to pieces, but told him that it was a dreadful thing, that he, which was a minister that should teach children to fear God, should come to persuade poor creatures to give their souls to the devil. 'Oh, dreadful, dreadful! tell me your name that I may know who you are.' Then again he tortured me, and urged me to write in his book, which I refused. And then, presently, he told me that his name was George Burroughs, and that he had had three wives, and that he had bewitched the two first of them to death; and that he killed Mrs. Lawson because she was so unwilling to go from the village, and also killed Mr. Lawson's child because he went to the eastward with Sir Edmon and preached so to the soldiers; and that he had bewitched a great many soldiers to death at the eastward when Sir Edmon was there; and that he had made Abigail Hobbs a witch, and several witches more. And he has continued ever since, by times, tempting me to write in his book, and grievously torturing me by beating, pinching, and almost choking me several times a day. He also told me that he was above a witch. He was a conjurer.

[Signed] ANN PUTNAM."

Burroughs was brought to Salem, May 4. On the 9th, his examination was held before a special sitting of the magistrates, Judges William Stoughton, of Dorchester, Samuel Sewall, of Boston, and Hathorne and Corwin, of Salem, being on the bench, the former acting as chief justice. A private examination was first held before the magistrates and ministers alone, and then he was taken into the public court; and, as he entered, "many, if not all the bewitched, were grievously tortured," according to the records. As a matter of course, he was committed. George Jacobs, Sr., and his grand-daughter, Margaret Jacobs, were the next victims, and were arrested May 10. They were examined at the house of Thomas Beadle. On the same day of their examination, a warrant was issued for John Willard; but he had fled from the town, and was subsequently arrested in Groton. About the same time, Alice Parker and Ann Pudeator, of Salem, were taken into custody. They were examined July 2, the same sort of evidence — in fact, no evidence at all — being offered. On May 14, the following parties were subjects of warrants: Daniel Andrew, George Jacobs, Jr., his wife Rebecca Jacobs, Sarah Buckley, and Mary Whittredge, of Salem; Elizabeth Hart and Thomas Farrar, Sr., of Lynn; Elizabeth Colson, of Reading, and Bethiah Carter, of Woburn. Andrew, with Jacobs, Jr., heard of warrants for their arrest, and fled from the country. Sarah Buckley and her daughter, Mary Whittredge, were not tried till January, 1693, when they were acquitted. Mary Easty, who had been arrested April 22, and discharged May 18, was again arrested May 20, as one Mercy Lewis asserted that she was "afflicted," and could not be delivered from her tortures till Mary Easty was again in irons. Testimony was given that Mercy Lewis's afflictions ceased the same afternoon that her "witch" was incarcerated. The following parties were next "charged" and arrested: On May 21, the wife of William Basset, of Lynn, Susanna Roots, of Beverly, Sarah Procter, of Salem. A few days later, Benjamin Procter and Mary Derich, of Lynn, and wife of Robert Pease, of Salem. On the 28th, Martha Carrier, of Andover, Elizabeth Fosdick, of Malden, Wilmot Read, of Marblehead, Sarah Rice, of Reading, Elizabeth How, of Topsfield, Captain John Alden, of Boston, William Procter, of Salem, Capt. John Flood, of Rumney Marsh (now Chelsea), Mrs. Toothaker and her daughter, of Billerica, and ——— Abbot, of Topsfield or Wenham. On the 30th, Elizabeth Paine, of Charlestown. On June 4, Mary Ireson, of Lynn. Many others were complained of, and warrants for them issued; among them Mary Bradbury, of Salisbury, Lydia and Sarah Dustin, of Reading, Ann Sears, of Woburn, Job Tookey, of Beverly, Abigail Somes, of Gloucester, Elizabeth Carey, of Charlestown, and Candy, a negro woman.

In commenting on the trials, Mr. Upham calls special attention to the fact that "every idle rumor; everything that the gossip of the credulous, or the fertile imaginations of the malignant could produce; everything gleaned from the memory or the fancy that could have an unfavorable bearing upon an accused person, however foreign or irrelevant it might be to the charge, was allowed to be brought in evidence before the magistrates, and received at the trials." That "children were not only permitted but induced to become witnesses against their parents, and parents against their children. Husbands and wives were made to criminate each other as witnesses in court." The Rev. Cotton Mather, a clergyman of Boston; a man who, according to his own declaration, believed that "no place has got such a spell upon it as will always keep the devil out," gave an account of the proceedings of the courts. In the conclusion of his report of the trial of Martha Carrier, he wrote as follows: "This rampant hag was the person of whom the confessions of the witches, and of her own children among the rest, agreed that the devil had promised her that she should be queen of hell." John Alden, mentioned above, was a son of John Alden, of Plymouth, one of the founders of the Colony there. He made his escape from jail in September of the eventful year, and fled to Duxbury, telling his relatives there that he was fleeing from the devil.

An Andover woman, who was sick with a fever, became the cause of a terrible outbreak in that town. Her husband was informed by the "afflicted girls" at Salem, that she was suffering from witchery, and, once alarmed, Andover became the scene of another act in the sad tragedy. More than fifty people were imprisoned, and several of them were hanged. Dudley Bradstreet, the local magistrate, committed forty or thereabouts, and then refused to act further, which so exasperated the people that they threatened the judge and his family

with punishment for his refusal to assist in banishing the evil ones, and they were obliged to flee from the vicinity. The prisons at Salem, Ipswich, Boston, and Cambridge were full of parties awaiting trial for the crime of witchcraft. About this time Sir William Phips became governor under the royal charter, and a special court of oyer and terminer was created for witchcraft trials. William Stoughton, of Dorchester, was chief justice, and Nathaniel Saltonstall, of Haverhill, Maj. John Richards, of Boston, Maj. Bartholomew Gedney, of Salem, Wait Winthrop, Capt. Samuel Sewall, and Peter Sargent, of Boston, his associates on the bench. Saltonstall resigned, and Jonathan Corwin, of Salem, succeeded him. Before this court the final trials and convictions occurred, though a doubt has been raised as to the legality of the court, as it is referred to as a question whether the governor and council under the charter had power to create it without the concurrence of the General Court. The new government did away with the office of marshal, held by George Herrick, and created that of sheriff, to which George Corwin, of Salem, was appointed. The jail at Salem, where many of the victims were lodged, was located on "Prison Lane," now St. Peter Street, and the court-house, where the trials took place, was on "Town-house Lane," now Washington Street. The meeting-house, where examinations had been held, was at what is now the south-east corner of Essex and Washington streets, the present site of the "First Church." The "old witch-house," which every stranger to Salem asks to see, appears not to have played so prominent a part in the scenes of the day as many have supposed, being only used for conferences or sessions of the grand jurors, being the residence of Judge Corwin. It is still standing at the corner of Essex and North streets. The trials opened in June, 1692. The attorney-general, Thomas Newton, had located at Salem to conduct the trials in behalf of the government. He addressed a letter to the secretary of the Province, in which he expressed the idea that progress would probably be slow, "as the afflicted cannot readily give their testimonies, being struck dumb and senseless for a season at the name of the accused." No complete records of the doings of this special court are in existence, but several depositions are on file in the county records. At the first session of the court, Bridget Bishop was the only "witch" tried. She was dragged before the assembled crowds through Prison Lane, up Essex Street, into Town-house Lane, to the court-house. Cotton Mather relates that "there was one strange thing with which the court was newly entertained. As this woman was, under a guard, passing by the great and spacious meeting-house, she gave a look towards the house, and immediately a demon invisibly entering the meeting-house, tore down a part of it, so that though there was no person to be seen there, yet the people, at the noise, running in, found a board which was strongly fastened with several nails, transported into another quarter of the house." Owing to the lack of records of the testimony in this and other cases tried before this special court, no exact account of the trial can be given. By diligent research on the subject, our best authority, Mr. Upham, collected many interesting facts from various documents of the day now preserved in the archives of Essex County. The Rev. John Hale, of Beverly, appeared in court, and testified that he had examined the body of the woman whose death was attributed to the influenced acts of Bridget Bishop, and that, in his judgment, it was "impossible for her, with so short a pair of scissors, to mangle herself so without some extraordinary work of the devil, or witchcraft." The "bewitched" woman was evidently a victim of suicide. She was known to have been an insane person. Samuel Shattuck and his wife swore to a deposition, which asserted the belief that a child of theirs was bewitched through this woman. They testified that the child, a young boy, had been afflicted with fits; had acted strangely, as if controlled by an evil spirit, and had lost power over himself, so that he fell into fire or water, or laid as if dead. These things occurred and strengthened as the Bishop woman "came oftener to the house," according to the testimony offered. A son of Mr. John Cook, who lived on the same street with Shattuck, testified, that "about five or six years ago, one morning, before sun-rising, as I was in bed, before I rose, I saw goodwife Bishop, *alias* Oliver, stand in the chamber, by the window; and she looked on me and grinned on me, and presently struck me on the side of the head, which did very much hurt me; and then I saw her go out under the end window at a little crevice, about so big as I could thrust my hand into. I saw her again the same day, — which was the Sabbath day, — about noon, walk across the room; and having at the time an apple in my hand, it flew out of my hand into my mother's lap, who sat six or eight foot distance from me, and then she disappeared. And though my mother and several others were in the same room, yet they affirmed they saw her not."

John Bly, who had purchased a hog of Bridget Bishop, testified to strange actions of that animal, and to his belief "that said Bishop had bewitched the sow." William Stacy swore that on his way to mill, "being gone about six rods from her, the said Bishop, with a small load in his cart, suddenly the off-wheel slumped, or sunk down into a hole upon plain ground; that this deponent was forced to get one to help him to get the wheel out. Afterwards, this deponent went back to look for said hole, where his wheel sunk in, but could not find any hole." He also testified that on another occasion, "after he had passed by her, this deponent's horse stood still with a small load going up the hill; so that the horse striving to draw, all his gears and tacklings flew to pieces, and the cart fell down." John Louder, who lived with John Gedney, Sr., as a servant, gave lengthy testimony, including the following absurd declarations: "I, going to bed about the dead of the night, felt a great weight upon my breast, and, awakening, looked, and, it being bright moonlight, did clearly see Bridget Bishop, or her likeness, sitting upon my stomach, and, putting my arms off of the bed to free myself from the great oppression, she presently laid hold of my throat, and almost choked me, and I had no strength or power in my hands to resist or help myself; and in this condition she held me to almost day. Some time after that, I, being not very well, stayed at home on a Lord's Day; and on the afternoon of said day, the doors being shut, I did see a black pig in the room coming towards me; so I went towards it to kick it, and it vanished away." He also claimed that a "black thing" appeared to him, and assured him that if he would "be ruled by him he should want for nothing in this world." He brings Bridget Bishop into connection with this apparition, by affirming that just after its appearance to him he saw her, and, "seeing her, had no power to set one foot forward." John Bly, Sr., and William Bly, a lad of fifteen, testified that in working in the removal of a cellar-wall of the house where Bridget Bishop lived, that they found "several puppets made up of rags and hogs' bristles, with headless pins in them, with the points outward."

Such is a fair sample of the loose and utterly unconvincing testimony on which this poor woman was convicted and executed in those dark days of 1692. It is but natural in these later days, to condemn *en masse*, at first thought, the actors in those terrible tragedies, but more deliberate reflection, after a careful examination of the history of the affair as it comes down to us, tends to more charitable thoughts. We of to-day can form no definite idea of the feelings of the people who lived amidst those scenes. They were of Puritan stock, with the deepest reverence for their Maker, and a holy horror of neglecting to do all they were able to drive out any emissaries of the dark power that might oppose the right. Let us have only pity for those who were drawn into the whirlpool of public sentiment and public action of the day, and charitable thoughts and free forgiveness for those who, evidently from some unexplained reason, sought to establish and perpetuate such horrible delusions.

Bridget Bishop was executed the week after her trial, and her death-warrant is the only one preserved. The original document is framed, and hangs in the office of the clerk of the courts, at Salem. The court re-assembled June 29, and tried and sentenced Sarah Good, Sarah Wildes, Elizabeth How, Susanna Martin, and Rebecca Nurse,

and these were hanged July 19. Quite a general opposition occurred to the execution of the last named. Nathaniel Putnam, Sr., at the solicitation of Francis Nurse, husband of the condemned, wrote a defence of her character, and a similar document was drawn up for public approval. This was signed by thirty-nine of the towns-people.

It was customary, under order of the court, to cause an examination to be made of the entire bodies of the accused, that any "witch mark" on them might be found. Marshal Herrick, after examining George Jacobs, reported that he found a "witch teat" about a quarter of an inch long or better, with a sharp point drooping downwards, so that I took a pin, and run it through the said teat, but there was neither water, blood or corruption, nor any other matter. This was regarded as the "devil's mark," but it may readily be supposed that some infirmity of the flesh would be found on a man advanced in years as Jacobs was. These declarations were received in court as evidence. On August 5, George Burroughs, John Procter, Elizabeth Procter his wife, George Jacobs, Sr., John Willard, and Martha Carrier were tried and condemned. With the exception of Elizabeth Procter, they were executed August 19. Thirty-two inhabitants of Ipswich addressed a petition to the Court of Assistants, at Boston, in behalf of John Procter. This petition was headed by the Rev. John Wise, and the list of signers contained many of the best people of that town. Another document in his favor was presented, and in court evidence was offered to prove that one of the witnesses against him had sworn contrary to what she had stated outside. These facts furnish evidence that the persecutions did not receive universal sanction and approval. A tradition exists to the effect that the body of George Jacobs was buried on his own farm, about a mile from the present city of Salem. Remains, undoubtedly his, were exhumed in 1864, and were re-interred in the same place.

The court sat again, the last time, on the 9th of September. On that day *Martha Corey, *Mary Easty, *Alice Parker, *Ann Pudeator, Dorcas Hoar, and Mary Bradbury were condemned and sentenced; and on the 17th *Margaret Scott, *Wilmot Reed, *Samuel Wardwell, *Mary Parker, Abigail Faulkner, Rebecca Eames, Mary Lacy, Ann Foster, and Abigail Hobbs were also sentenced. [Those whose names are indicated by a star were executed on the 22d.] By order of the governor, Sir William Phips, Abigail Faulkner, daughter of the Rev. Francis Dane, of Andover, was pardoned, having laid in jail under sentence of death for thirteen weeks. The reason assigned for the pardon (the only one granted during the proceedings) was "insufficient evidence." The nineteen, who have been chronicled in the above brief narrative as suffering the death penalty, were the only ones who were executed; for, though it was some time before the excitement died away, there was an abatement in its violence that saved the other condemned persons suffering the sad fate of their neighbors and fellows. Without a single exception the executed protested their innocence to the very last, most of them making dying declarations on the scaffold. The hangings took place on a slight eminence, just removed from the town, and now known as Gallows Hill, from the sad tragedies whose final acts were enacted there. One of the most remarkable cases on record, of heroic perseverance and unbroken persistence, is that of Giles Corey, husband of one of the executed, himself in jail at Ipswich, charged with witchcraft. He determined that his lips should remain sealed when arraigned in court, and that he would not answer to the inquiry, "guilty or not guilty." There are no records of the proceedings taken by the court when the prisoner failed to answer, but tradition has it that he was *crushed to death*. In a field somewhere between Howard Street Cemetery and Brown Street, Salem, is the locality designated by Mr. Upham. It is related that Corey urged that the weight might be increased, for his death was the only way to end the matter, as he should not answer; and he did not. Not a word bordering on an acknowledgment of guilt, or an attestation of innocence, escaped his lips. He knew that death was the penalty, if he pleaded not guilty, and he would not confess to what he was innocent of. This man was eighty-one years old; and the barbarous death penalty inflicted on him by the officers of the law, tended to awaken the people to a realization of the terrible responsibility resting on them as a Christian community. Doubts began to be felt in the public mind as to the justice of the prosecutions, and the inevitable sentence and execution. But the delusion had not reached its end. The leaders in the prosecutions did not delay a new method of attempting to sustain the popular opinion in the course it had been running. The day after the death of Giles Corey, Thomas Putnam addressed a letter to Judge Sewall, reading as follows: "Last night, my daughter Ann was grievously tormented by witches, threatening that she should be pressed to death before Giles Corey; but through the goodness of a gracious God she has had, at last, a little respite. Whereupon there appeared unto her (she said) a man in a winding-sheet, who told her that Giles Corey had murdered him by pressing him to death with his feet; but that the devil there appeared unto him, and covenanted with him, and promised him that he should not be hanged. The apparition said God hardened his heart, that he should not hearken to the advice of the court, and so die an easy death; because, as it said, it must be done to him as he has done to me. The apparition also said that Giles Corey was carried to the court for this, and that the jury had found the murder; and that her father knew the man, and the thing was done before she was born."

"This revelation" had some effect; but the tide had turned, and the delusion was destined to die away as suddenly as it had appeared. The court adjourned the latter part of September, never to meet again. Though public opinion cannot be proved to have been the direct agent in causing the cessation of the prosecutions, yet it doubtless exerted a telling influence. Mr. Upham says that the sudden quieting down has been generally attributed to the fact that the "afflicted children" became over-confident of their power, and struck too high. Even the excited community could not tolerate hints against the Rev. Samuel Willard, the wife of the governor, and Mrs. Hale, the wife of the pastor of the Beverly flock. The latter's husband had heretofore acted with the accusers, but when the girls cried out against his wife, he took a noble stand in her behalf. The universal belief in the community soon was that the girls at Dr. Parris's had perjured themselves, and as soon as this feeling became fixed in the public mind, the storm subsided. It is a wonder, perhaps, that the reaction did not lead to the prosecution, or at least to the moral arraignment of the "afflicted children," but it did not, no doubt fortunately, for the reign of blood had been full terrible enough. Sir William Phips, by his executive authority, divested the court of its power, and that legal (?) tribunal was stricken from the list of courts in the Colony. It was superseded by a new court known as the Superior Court of Judicature. Its judges were William Stoughton, chief justice, Thomas Danforth, John Richards, Wait Winthrop, and Samuel Sewall, associates. This court sat at Salem in January of 1693, and acquitted Rebecca Jacobs, Margaret Jacobs, Sarah Buckley, Job Tookey, Hannah Tyler, Candy, a negro woman, Mary Marston, Elizabeth Johnson, Abigail Barker, Mary Tyler, Sarah Hawkes, Mary Wardwell, Mary Bridges, Hannah Post, Sarah Bridges, Mary Osgood, Mary Lacy, Jr., and condemned Sarah Wardwell, Elizabeth Johnson, Jr., and Mary Post. These three were not executed, however, being discharged by order of the governor in the following May. After this many others were tried, but all were acquitted, and the number released in May, 1693, was about one hundred and fifty. Two, Ann Foster and Sarah Osburn, had died in jail; others may have, and probably did, and the fact not been handed down. Several had escaped from prison, and the whole number arrested and committed must have been several hundred, according to Mr. Upham's estimate. Those acquitted, or released by the governor, were obliged to pay all charges.

Such, briefly told, is "the history of the Salem witchcraft,"—a sad, sad tale; one not likely to be repeated in any nation. It has not been without its moral lessons. Let us hope that the memory of those

who suffered death as condemned "witches," may remain green in history, as it deserves to do so. The courage that faces the scaffold or the press, rather than confess to an uncommitted sin, is worthy of an epitaph engraved on the hearts of all who follow in the Christian world.

CHAPTER VI.

THE EARLY AND LATER MEANS OF COMMUNICATION AND TRANSPORTATION IN AND THROUGH ESSEX COUNTY.

Little less interesting than the actual work itself, is the attempt to re-examine the course of operations, by which any infant colony, setting themselves down in the midst of the wilderness, have sought to subdue obstacles, conquer difficulties, and overcome whatever about their situation might stand between them and their comfort. Such warfare against odds unreckoned, may often be with human antagonists; but more often with the forces of nature, which man in such a position finds, if never before, are not already arranged for his best accommodation and assistance, when he sets himself to civilize the waste.

One of the very earliest forms in which this opposition of nature is met, is in obstructions to free travel and transportation. Our progenitors did not, indeed, as in the tropics, find the exuberance of vegetation so enormous that their roads and ways must be cleared afresh every week, as sometimes there happens; they did not find their habitable situation reduced to a series of detached valleys, between which irreducible mountains and rocky crags might forever discourage the constructions of the engineer; they did not even find their chosen territory subordinated to the condition of heavy streams, whose swollen waters might spread their banks with annual desolation, nor cast among islands where the only communication was burdened with the dangers of every storm.

But they did find many hindrances of other descriptions; and, if they were not absolutely insuperable and disheartening, they certainly had in them little of encouragement. Before them lay the sea, ill-tempered and turbulent, bounded by off-shore winds, and battering ever at a coast-wall, before which every ship was like matchwood. Behind them was a forest, whose further border no man had seen; and, turn as they would, its thickets met them, inextricable with growth confused, its swamps interrupted them, deep with unmeasured mire; or its ledges frowned down at them, defying all instruments of attack that they could then employ upon them. Under such circumstances, it was not strange that they gave first attention, not to the making of roads at all, but to any and all the other arts that more particularly, and more immediately, had to do with the maintenance of life, and the security of property.

Still, as communication of some kind must be had, they availed themselves of the most ready and natural form; to wit, that by water. From their seaside locations, where, at first, they had planted themselves, within reach, as it were, of their old English homes, with only a voyage between, — from these they gradually permitted the attractions of better soil or other special advantages, to draw them inland. Yet everything depended on the canoe and its powers for carriage; and here again nature had met them more than half way. The smooth water of the rivers and the deeper inlets was even better travelling-ground for such small craft than the open sea. There was here less of danger, more of uniformity. And thus the settlements grew and spread inland along the river-margins. More perfectly natural highways could not be imagined, than these rivers furnished across the whole territory of the county; even now, almost the whole system of towns and villages is seen to have been originally fixed and decided by the accommodations they afforded.

The original settlement at Salem found thus an easy extension in three directions: northward, along Bass River to Beverly and its upper farms; north-west, by the Essex branch to Danvers Port, and thence to the Plains and Centre; and westward, by the North River to the "North Fields," and to Peabody. The second settlement, at Lynn, moved slowly up the Saugus River, and established, not only the iron-works, but the several villages that yet maintain the old name of Saugus. Later adventurers, seeking more genial aspects of position than the bluffs of Cape Ann or the Plum Island sands could furnish, saw what they wanted in the islands of the Ipswich River, whose innumerable, well-filled channels were to them as ready highways as the canals of Venice. And even the same slow stream, smooth and unobstructed, invited them inland as far as Topsfield, where, among the hills and meadows that never saw the sea, they might safely moor the canoes that should give them good passage thither in a day. In the same temper, others, paddling up the Parker and Rowley rivers, found virgin fields and homes of happy prospect at Rowley Town, in one case, and at Byfield Parish in the other. And, more than all, and above all, did those who first occupied the green hills of Newbury and the slant embankments of its Port, see before them in the majestic Merrimac a grand highway, like another sea engrafted on the first; and over this they penetrated inland, founding their villages here and there, and bringing their culture and their art deeper and deeper amid the homes of the red men, till they had not only dotted the principal shores all up and down, but driven, beside, their small craft up the Powow to Salisbury, up the Spicket to Methuen, and up the still more fascinating Shawsheen to Andover with its score of villages.

Only the canoe has been mentioned as the common vehicle on these watery ways; and by this, in all the southern parts of New England, is generally understood, not the "birch," but the "dug-out," formed of the hollowed stem of a single pine. These answered well for the Indian, who, nomadic as he might be, had yet not much of weight or bulk to be carried at once; but the English settler soon needed a higher style and rate of tonnage. And now, as it has been said of the average Greek sailor, that "he can build a whole boat at any time from her keel to her topmast," so the Englishman, who put himself to the settling of this region, knew generally enough to do the same thing, at least up to the fashion of the time. At this late period it may not be easy to decide what special type of boat was most popular with the early people; but from the universal prevalence of the "dory," on both sides of Cape Ann at this day, and the probability of its holding this place largely by tradition, it seems not unlikely that this flat-bottomed craft, which an ingenious workman, with good boards, can put in fair going order in twenty-four hours, was that which first opened communication round these shores, and penetrated the unexplored intervales of the Ipswich and Merrimac valleys. Nothing slighter, nor much clumsier, could have answered for the removal of all the Colony effects, in 1626, from Gloucester to Salem; while, by the easy process of lashing two or three together, a deck-load of considerable dimensions could be successfully removed, as was actually done with the timber of the planter's house on that occasion.

But the object of the colonists was not so much to rule the waters, as to subdue and put to service the land. Everything could not be done on the river-banks, and a share of land travel became necessary. The little path leading to the distant cornfield, became the prototype of vaster things in the more distant future. From a single track, just passable for a horse and his rider, it spread out in no great while to a double one, over which the oxen might easily travel, with the capacious cart that was piled to groaning with manures in spring, with hay in summer, with the crops of autumn, and the icy logs that made the winter's heap of fuel. From merely connecting the fields, the path presently joined to its like, and ran to the farm of some remote neighbor. It was become a bridle road. One after another the little farmsteads among the nooks of the forest opened their grassy lanes upon it, and soon it was a narrow country way, that led from village

to village. Yet on it there was little seen of variety. Only the heavy, two-wheeled ox-cart, the universal and approved vehicle of the farmer, or, rarely, the same extended to a four-wheeled wagon, greater in carrying power, but cumbersome to manage, and difficult of repairs, — only these were met going over such roads as these, where all travel else was on foot, or mounted on that inseparable companion of man, whether civilized or savage, the horse.

For all strictly passenger travel for years, even among the rich, was by horseback. Every one could ride; and either sex alike. The light ploughing of the mellower fields was turned over to the horse; and both here, and where the same useful creature took the lead of the heavy oxen in the breakage of the stiffer sward, did the Yankee boy, "riding horse to plough," learn full familiarity with equestrian attitudes, and become a fearless horseman, whether graceful or otherwise. And not less, in that early day, did the girl find her education, in part, by the same spirited model. She had a seat at option, the prerogative of queenship and favor; and, both in the saddle guiding her horse as a lady at hawking, and more carelessly perched on her pillion, behind her more stalwart companion, she, in a large part, acquired that spirit of freedom, that quickness of judgment, and contempt of danger, that were made such a blessing to the land for two centuries afterward.

For such travel as these methods furnished, the bridle-path was every way sufficient. But little clearing was necessary; and, unless in rare cases, no grading at all. A small stump, or a slightly projecting rock, could be easily surmounted by the heavy wheel, and the horse cared nothing for it. But before long, the sound of coach-wheels began to be heard. The richer among the colonists remembered that the man of wealth at home, always kept his carriage. They would do the same. It might be, at first, only the governor, or some wealthy justice of the quarterly sessions, that appeared behind the glasses, or pulled them down when he went out for an airing; but even for him and his few fellows in good fortune, there must be better roads provided. The old highway, probably never better than a cartway of the woods, ran from Boston to Salem, by way of Saugus and Lynn, fording Saugus River at the iron-works; and over this, an early governor of the Colony set out one morning from "Shawmut," and pushed forward with his horseback train, till, drawing bridle at evening, he sent forward a courier by night, to "Naumkeag," to inform his expectant host "that, by the good blessing of God, he had then arrived as far as Master Armitage's, in Saugus, and, by the like favor he should hope to be at Naumkeag by the next day at the same time."

Horseback travel was not, generally speaking, a mode of much rapidity, or expedition. As wheeled vehicles came more and more into general use, a better, or at least, a quicker transit was attained; and this, if nothing else, made a necessity for graded road-beds and hard foundations. Thus the highway, gradually improved in structure and condition, was widened and straightened from time to time. By the time of the Revolution, good carriage roads ran in direct communication between most of the towns in the county; and after the humiliation at the North Bridge in Salem, the soldiers from the garrison at Marblehead, found a smooth, hard way over which to march homeward, from Salem to Boston, by the way of Boston Street.

But now the streams, from having been the only medium that permitted any communication, became the worst of obstacles to the newer method. Neither had the amount of travel so increased as to demand the building of bridges, nor the constructive skill of the people risen quite to the point of attempting them, so the natural resort for crossing the rivers, where fording was impracticable, was found in the same boats that aforetime had done exclusive service. In this way ferries started into being, and were soon found, here and there, all over the county. The passage of Saugus River, prior to 1639 at any rate, and probably to a large extent afterward, was made by ferriage between Ballard's and Needham's Landings, as they are now called. Originally, as has been intimated, it was forded above tide-water, a thing always easy to do; and it has been asserted, not without show of probability, that the same was done at the landings above mentioned; but it is nearly certain, that by 1639, the water, probably deepening annually, had become too wide for such a passage. That year, one Spenser (who is called Garrett Spenser by Judge Newhall, but who signed himself "Jarrard," and was, more likely, named Gerard, or possibly, Jared), was granted the ferry at Lynn for the space of two years, and the fare was fixed at one or two pence per head for passengers, according to circumstances. Very little more can be known about this ferry; the bridge probably absorbed most of the travel; and, as it cost no tolls, and after a time was made substantial, the ferry fell into disuse, and was discontinued. Mention has been made of a ferry in Lynn kept by Bray Wilkins, but it was probably in Neponset instead.

Three ferries existed at Salem for a considerable period. The most important of them had been in operation from December 21, 1636, running between North Point in Salem, and Cape Ann, or Bass River Side, in Beverly. It used to be leased for the benefit of the grammar-school masters of Salem. Before 1639, it carried passengers only; but by that time, certainly, it was fitted with a horse-boat, and had regulations for the transporting of live-stock and beasts of all descriptions. This ferry subsisted about one hundred and fifty years, or until September 24, 1788, and was then superseded, after great contest between the interest of Salem and Beverly, by the finely built bridge that yet stands in its place. This ferry was granted, in 1639, to one John Dixey, for three years; but whether this was the same with William Dixey, who was one of the first settlers of Lynn, and afterward returned to Salem, or whether William took another ferry, further up the North River, does not seem well determined.

This secondary crossing, perhaps not much below the site of the present North Bridge, is, on the whole, likely to have been a regular ferry at some time; but not being in any principal highway, and being of private ownership on both sides, little or no record remains in regard to it. Indeed, it can hardly have been in operation later than 1770, for the North Bridge was built as soon as then, and the ferry to Beverly was then in full activity.

Another ferry long existed between Salem shore, not far from Phillips Wharf, and the Marblehead side, near what is called Naugus Head. At that time, the highway from Salem to Marblehead left the former place near the present entrance of the Boston Turnpike, and threading its way along the edge of the Great Pasture, it rounded all the creeks and headings of the Mill-pond, gained the line of the present road not far from the Loring farm, and made a large curve again round the waters of "Forest River." This very circuitous way left an excellent opportunity for a ferry like the above-described, to do good business; but before long, the nearer route through the "South Fields" was opened, the tendency of Marblehead settlement to the eastern side of the peninsula was decided, and the utility of that ferry being plainly gone, its practice was given up accordingly.

The breadth and quietness of the Merrimac River, and the number of villages scattered along its banks, made early inducements for the establishing of numerous ferries between its shores. Two of these were located a little above the Powow River, within the limits of Amesbury. The first was authorized by the General Court, April 29, 1668, the same day of the incorporation of the town. Its location may be fixed, perhaps, by tradition; but the act did not locate it any further than to place it "about Mr. Goodwin's house," on the Amesbury side. Where it touched on the other, does not appear. This ferry continued in operation, certainly, up to 1729; for, on the 22d of September, in that year, the town voted to prosecute Capt. Humphrey Hook for possession. It hardly seems that they succeeded against him; as, after a time, March 10, 1734–5, John Badger and others, petitioned for the establishing of a new ferry, at or near "Savage's Rock."

The passage of the river at points above this, was even earlier attempted, than those mentioned. In 1647, a ferry near Haverhill was authorized, to be kept by Thomas Hale; but the place is not stated. The crossing at "Swett's Ferry" has been stated as established in 1711, but there was certainly an antecedent date; for the town of Newbury granted, March 26, 1694, "that John Kelly, Sr., should have permission to keep a ferry over the Merrimac, at Holt's Rocks, in the place where he now resides." The Swetts, father and son, must have succeeded to this same privilege.

It is said, that by 1745, there were four more lines of ferriage in regular service above Holt's Rocks; viz., Cottle's, at the month of East Meadow River; Pattee's, near a place formerly of David Nichols; Milliken's, known as the "Chain Ferry"; and Griffin's, near the centre of Haverhill town. It may be this last that has survived since 1738, not even destroyed by the building of the new bridge almost on the same spot, but carrying passengers statedly, for more than a hundred years regularly, and occasionally, up to 1872. Still above all these, we find Gage's Ferry, plying between the shores of Bradford and Methuen. It is a little remarkable, as giving a passage over the Merrimac by a line due east and west, which could hardly be elsewhere done. The historical data of this ferry are not now at hand, but it appears to have been in operation up to 1856, though since then it has been discontinued.

But as the country about the mouth of the Merrimac was sooner settled than that above, so there was at least one ferry there of prior antiquity. This was at Carr's Island, about midway between the two existing bridges. In 1644, a grant was made to Tristram Coffin to keep this ferry on the Newbury side, and the patent was renewed to him as Tristram Coffin, Sr., December 26, 1647. The Salisbury side of this ferry was kept by George Carr; and the whole travel was here monopolized till October 25, 1687, when Andros granted a new patent to Capt. John Marsh, for a new ferry further down the river. The exact location of Capt. Marsh's ferry may not now be known; but it may very likely have been at some point near the present railroad bridge, where it would certainly best accommodate the increasing travel and population.

Most of these ferries were of the simplest kind, carrying little beside foot passengers, or occasionally an equestrian and his beast, and propelled with nothing more than the oar or paddle. This was but an inadequate method, however, as time brought increased necessities; and ferry-boats were soon constructed, to be propelled by horses. Thus, the Beverly Ferry was, by the regulations of 1639, obliged "to keepe an horse-boate." Whether any of the Merrimac ferries employed such, does not appear, but is not unlikely. The one known as Milliken's was also called the "Chain Ferry;" and this may point to the use of a mode of propulsion specially applied in such cases. A light, strong chain was stretched loosely across the stream, sinking below the draft of ordinary vessels. This ran over a wheel on board the boat, which being turned by the horses, worked the boat backward or forward with great power and facility. There does not appear to have been any ferry in Essex County using the chain method, except the one mentioned; and we have no certain information as to this case, but only notice its probability.

By a natural, though slightly indirect progress, where ferries were practicable, and by a most immediate step, where they were not, the growing population came to demand the building of bridges over all unfordable streams. And here, copying, doubtless, from the institutions of the mother country, the right of the government to authorize and regulate these structures was early recognized. Yet it seems rather to have been for the adjustment and apportioning of expenses, or for the establishing and regulation of tolls, that the legislative power was invoked; for where the bridge was small, or the ownership beyond question, as must happen in scores of cases, no attempt at chartering was apparently thought of.

Perhaps one of the oldest chartered bridges in the county is that over Saugus River, on the old highway to Boston. It was first built in 1639. The General Court ordered, June 6, "that those of Lynn shall have 50*l* from the country toward the building of a cart bridge over the river there; when the bridge is finished to be allowed them." On petition of the town, October 27, 1648, the Court further ordered, "that there shall from henceforth be allowed thirty shillings per annum out of the treasury of the county toward the maintenance of the said bridge, for which the inhabitants of Lynn are forever to repair it." This action was probably incited by the heirs of Edmund Ingalls, one of the first settlers of Lynn, who, when the old man was unfortunately drowned by falling through the decayed structure, applied and recovered of the State 100*l* for a life-forfeit. The accident happened in March; and the Court also allowed, on the 23d of that month, 20*l* more for immediate repairs.

But the General Court seems to have determined that the State should pay no more on that account, and the people of Lynn were not slow to urge their own inability in the case, so that, May 23, 1655, the Court ordered that a committee should rebuild the bridge, and the county court should apportion the expense among the towns in the county, "according to the law made this present session." It was thus made a county charge, and has so remained, save that the joint committee of Lynn and Saugus, settling the mutual affairs on the incorporation of the latter town, agreed that the two towns "shall support said bridge equally, in conjunction with the county." It is matter of curious reminiscence, that this, though certainly not much more than fifty feet long, went for years and years by the name of "Saugus Great Bridge."

Another bridge, probably of even greater antiquity, and surely of greater historic note, is the famous North Bridge in Salem. Unlike the other, it is not a communication between town and town, and hence is wanting in those traits of legislative history that would help us to a knowledge of its very old story; but it is, and has always been, a cherished object of the people of Salem and vicinity, from the fortunate opportunity it presented Feb. 26, 1775, for the checking of Col. Leslie and his soldiers, when they marched for the destruction of the provincial supplies in "North Fields." It is, no doubt, the earliest instance in the country, or very nearly so, of a bridge built with a draw for the passage of masted vessels.

The South Bridge in Salem is very much later in origin, having been built not far from 1810. It was an essential part of the enterprise of the great Salem merchant, E. Hersey Derby, who laid out Lafayette Street, and brought it into the city proper by a straight course, filling up and almost obliterating Peel's Dock, in so doing.

A far more important bridge, both in history and utility, is that connecting Salem and Beverly. The people of the latter town, after some years of experience with the ancient ferry already described, concluded its management to be almost wholly in the interest of Salem, and set themselves to rectify the evil by the substitution of a permanent bridge. This was in 1787. The corporators were partly from each town, and met and organized at the Sun Tavern in Salem, December 13th of the above year. The bridge was at once begun, but was not opened for travel till September 24, 1788. Then every one wondered to see that such a thing could have been done. The whole influence of Salem had been given against the enterprise, even to a definite and emphatic vote of the town; for it was claimed that there could be no more navigation of North River, and forty vessels, then plying in that water, could enter it no longer. Then, when it was found useless to oppose the bridge any longer, it was threatened to build a parallel one for ruinous competition with it; and this was so far carried into effect as to produce the erection of what was then and ever since called "Spite Bridge," between Danversport and Beverly, by which a shorter and easier route from the western part of Beverly to Salem was indeed secured.

Beverly Bridge was at once a thing of celebrity, and took rank as a great advance in the methods and appliances of swift and easy

travel. Washington, travelling in New England the next year, made a personal inspection of its arrangements. The story is also told, that a foreign engineer was sent here for the like purpose. At all events, it was found a piece of remarkably good and satisfactory building, and the convenience of its draw was such that the only hindrance to navigation was that of the few minutes required to open and close it. The charter was drawn to run for seventy years, with a complete reversion of the franchise, property, and rights to the public at the expiration of that period. This, therefore, happened in 1858, when the whole was freed of tolls and thrown open to the people. The Hon. Robert Rantoul, of Beverly, then eighty years old, walked over it on the day of its freedom, as he had done seventy years before, when, a lad of ten, he had passed over it at its first opening.

Few other bridges in the county can compare in interest with those spanning the Merrimac. Originally, and for a seemingly long time, they were but few in number, — only one or two; but since then they have multiplied, till the river is almost as much covered with them as the Thames at London.

The earliest of these structures appears to have been that at Deer Island, generally called the "Chain Bridge." It was incorporated in 1792, by the name of the "Essex Merrimac Bridge," and was finished and opened to public travel in November of that year. From some cause it was wholly or partially destroyed after this, but was rebuilt in 1810. There was then provided in it a commodious draw, operated by chain gear; while from the fact that the southern part of the bridge is a true suspension structure, the popular name of the whole seems to be derived. It is stated that this was the first chain draw in New England; but from what we have already observed as to the age of Beverly Bridge, and the probable similarity of the two structures, it is difficult to understand how this could be. This bridge, still useful, is in two parts, with the considerable tract of Deer Island between them; the northern portion, joining Salisbury, being a substantial structure of strongly framed wood, comprising one broad arch, a draw, and platform beyond, with stone piers. The southern, or Newburyport section, is an open suspension, with span of say 250 feet, from heavy link chains, hanging from substantial towers of stone. This bridge was kept and managed for forty years by Ebenezer Pearson, prominently known in the memorable mock robbery of Goodrich; but in latter time, the tavern house that he occupied on Deer Island, where the tolls were paid, has passed into the possession of the Hon. Richard S. Spofford, who, with his talented literary lady, the well known Mrs. Harriet Prescott Spofford, finds here a delightful summer residence. As in the case of nearly every other large bridge, this was hailed with all praise at its completion, as a remarkable mechanical achievment; and without doubt it really was a structure of great elegance and success.

The next bridge in point of antiquity seems to be that at Haverhill, connecting with the present town of Bradford. This was incorporated as the "Proprietors of Haverhill Bridge," in 1794, the structure being finished in the autumn of that year. The construction here, too, has been greatly praised, and it was, no doubt, a work of great strength and excellence. But it seems never to have met all the wants of the people, since, as already observed, the ancient ferry at the same point has never been wholly displaced by it.

Next we find a bridge, built in 1795, at the "Rocks Village," between Haverhill and West Newbury. This is supposed to be the same situation as that of the old ferry at "Holt's Rocks." The bridge was the longest of all upon the river; but the amount of travel realized was discouragingly small. Other routes brought a ruinous competition against it, and, after a time, the proprietors gave up making further repairs. In 1818, occurred a great freshet on the river, and the accumulated ice took off what remained of the old structure. After this it remained in ruins for about ten years; but in 1828 a fresh interest in it became excited, and the bridge was at length rebuilt. It yet remains in service, and forms the chief means of communication between West Newbury and the villages on the northerly shore of the river.

No other connections seem to have been placed over the stream till 1826, when the growing population and business importance of Newburyport came to demand a more direct and commodious opening with the north and east than could be realized by means of the old "Chain Bridge" at Deer Island. Efforts were therefore made, resulting in the chartering of the "Newburyport Bridge," in 1826. It was immediately built, and like all the rest, was first ready in autumn, having been opened for travel September 1, 1827. It was an undertaking of no small magnitude, being considerably longer than any other bridge on the river, built in relatively deeper water, and more exposed to the injurious action of the tidal and other currents. It was, however, completed with entire success, making direct connection from the Salisbury side, with the foot of Summer Street, Newburyport. The original cost was stated at $70,000.

In 1870, the inhabitants of Groveland, favored by the peculiar curvature of the river at their town, pressed anew their claim for a bridge from thence to the Haverhill shore. The point contemplated was the site of Milliken's old "Chain Ferry," which had always been well patronized; and so good a case did they succeed in making, that an Act was at length obtained for the erection of a new bridge at that situation. It was forthwith erected, under the direction of the county commissioners, and now stands as one of the finest constructions of the kind in New England. The work was begun March 29, 1871, under charge of Col. Coffin, of Newburyport. The stone piers, five in number, designed by C. A. Putnam, of Salem, were built by Blaisdell & Parker, of Rockport. The superstructure is an iron tubular work, with 126 feet in each of the six spans, and a draw of 68 feet, 804 feet of floor, and 25 feet clear width. This part of the work was executed by the King Iron Bridge Company, of Cleveland, O., from designs by C. G. Force, their own engineer. The testing and formal inauguration were had on Wednesday, April 10, 1872, when the deflection of one of the spans, under a weight of thirty tons, centrally placed, was found to be but thirteen-sixteenths of an inch. The warranty is 3,000 pounds to the lineal foot.

The total cost of this fine bridge was $84,962.70; which being divided into sixty parts, the county of Essex paid twenty-seven, the city of Haverhill nineteen, the town of Groveland nine, and the town of West Newbury six. The accommodation to the people of the region is considered remarkably great; and the day of inauguration was warmly observed with dinners, speeches and jubilation by those of the vicinity. Efforts to the same end had been made in 1834, '35, and '36; but the local influence of Haverhill, and specially of the proprietors of Haverhill Bridge, prevented all success. In fact, it probably could not have been done when it was, but that the Legislature, by Stat. 1867, chap. 296, extinguished all bridge corporations and made all such structures public highways. This action has rendered practicable many things that private interests would always have obstructed, no matter how much needed for the public good.

Mention is also due to the Andover Bridge, now lying wholly within the city of Lawrence. Had we treated these cases in strict order of time, this should have been found near the head of the list, being the second of the Merrimac bridges in point of age. It had its incorporation in March, 1793, and appears to have been erected at once; but it met with destruction in about seven years, from causes not stated, but of which ice is the most probable. After an interval of disuse, the proprietors decided to rebuild, and did so in 1806–7, since which the bridge has had as large a share of business, perhaps, as almost any other in the country. It is entitled to peculiar notice from its rather unusual connection with the turnpike enterprises of later date.

The Essex Company, of Lawrence, owning large tracts of land on both sides of the river, long desired to establish communication between the sections, more convenient than was afforded by the old

Andover bridge above them. For this purpose it was finally decided to erect a new bridge over the river near the lower part of the city. It was accordingly built at a point immediately east of the Duck Mills, with a street running almost due south, to intersect both branches of the old Andover turnpike. This bridge is a rather light and graceful structure of wood, and of the common construction; that is, a platform bridge upon piers. It offers large accommodation for the residents of South Lawrence, and indeed for all approaching the city from that side; but being wholly within the city, has not been made a public or county charge.

A remark may be here made as to the Newburyport Bridge, since its aspect is now so unlike what it was. After the passage of the Eastern Railroad, which raised its own bridge on the piers of the old, and above the carriage-way, it long continued in this double form. But in 1868 the railroad was transferred to a new bridge somewhat to the west, and afterwards the old structure, being nearly ruined by ice on the Salisbury side, was rebuilt and now appears as an elegant open platform, very pleasant and graceful indeed.

After this outline description of the bridges, and river passages of the county, we pass naturally to a further view of its highways themselves. In the century from 1700 to 1800, they had improved from mere bridle-paths, in many cases, up to the grade of excellent public thoroughfares, mostly wide and convenient, and built of materials, and with a degree of care and skill that made them the admiration of all who knew them. Especially was this true, as it still is, of the roads in the southern section of the county. Northward, the extensive terrace-lands bordering the Merrimac on both sides, consist of sandy or gravelly material, usually re-arranged, and having but little of cohesive property remaining. Ways constructed of this, though soft and easy for foot passage, or for beasts, prove too yielding for the pressure of heavy wheels, and extensive and frequent repairs are necessary, even where macadamizing is resorted to. For in the region of the river a broad formation of slaty rock occurs, which, while it is too soft for a substantial track is yet, in most cases, the only rock within practicable reach. But in the southern townships the rock has a very different constitution. The south-west affords a hard, angular porphyry, or felsite, breaking down almost spontaneously, into a material known as "blue gravel," whose binding or cohesive power is perhaps greater than that of any other stone. Roads of this substance, laid on a firm foundation of large, coarse stones, well bedded, are able to resist almost any of our severest frosts; and at most seasons of the year offer a surface for driving nearly as hard as a pavement, and as smooth as a plank floor. Such ways are common in Saugus, Lynn, Swampscott, and Marblehead. Eastward from this the rocks are found to range through the wide series of diorites and metamorphic granitoid types, which break easily for the purposes of road-making, and settle to a firm condition with nearly as much of durability and evenness as the preceding. These styles appear in Nahant, Salem, Beverly, and eastward to Cape Ann, also northwardly, near the coast, as far as Newbury.

The middle section of the county rests much upon rocks of hornblendic character; which, though working to a good form, and binding well in a roadway, are yet somewhat too soft for a very durable surface. Yet the roads thereabout are mostly excellent, being kept up by constant and intelligent attention. Lynnfield, Middleton, and Boxford are here included. There is still another small belt of territory, lying between the last and the Merrimac terraces, and particularly including Andover and North Andover, which has for a foundation a strong, well-characterized gneiss, as well suited to this purpose as the best of granite. Its influence on the style and condition of the highways is immediately seen on arriving upon it. A large share of this material seems to be employed in and about Lawrence, as the rock itself is for building; and hence the streets, though really lying on the Merrimac gravel, have a solidity not otherwise obtainable.

From these facts of natural provision, joined to the well-proved disposition of her citizens for the thorough and substantial execution of all work related to the public interest, it has come about that the roads of Essex County have always enjoyed an enviable fame for directness, hard and even surface, and easy grades. It is true that there are no mountains, and but few large hills to interrupt the best progress of the engineer, and the traveller after him; that there are few spring floods felt here, and sudden torrents do not, at any time, make serious aggressions on the lines of communication; yet the constructor has an antagonist that if silent and slow, is yet not less able, at times, to put him to his last resort for defence against him. The heavy and uncontrollable frosts of this region, penetrating, not rarely, seven or eight feet below the surface in the winter time, are often able to shake and shiver the firmest bedding that a road can have, moving stone upon stone, and leaving the best-rolled gravels, at the break-up of spring, only a mass of uncertain consistence, loose as a honey-comb, and disappointing to all the hopes of an engineer, almost as the progress of subterranean fires.

Yet all the natural hindrances existing in the case, whether as climatic or geological, did not answer to deter the people of New England from attempting, about the beginning of this century, the construction of a still higher style of roads than had yet been enjoyed, or from putting thereon a more rapid, commodious, and improved form of transportation than any before in use. The energetic and celebrated merchant of Salem, William Gray, with the almost as celebrated Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, and the eminent Nathan Dane, with two or three more, determined on a better mode of communication from Boston to Salem. Turnpikes were then not unknown in Europe; but they had not been thoroughly perfected, even there; and in America the instances of any such construction must have been rare indeed. Neither Macadam nor Telford were in the field, nor yet for some years afterward; but the merchants of Salem determined to see what could be done toward a better-built and more direct road than any one else seems to have imagined. They therefore obtained an incorporation, March 6, 1802, as the "Salem Turnpike and Chelsea Bridge Corporation," and began their work at Salem, near "Pickering's Pen," June 7, 1802. The whole route was worked in about sixteen months; and the material and tools, left over, and sold at auction after completion, October 27, 1803, realized $3,200. The road was fairly opened for travel, September 22, 1803, when, for the first time, a man could drive his carriage from the head of Essex Street, Salem, to Charlestown Square, by a line almost mathematically straight, over a distance of 12 miles and 256 rods. The whole work had cost $189,000.

Not a great deal of deep cutting was done on this route, but the filling was heavy in some parts of the Great Pasture, requiring embankments with stone facings, many yards in height and many rods in extension. Yet the difficulty that caused most anxiety was the crossing of the marshes of Lynn and Saugus, where few believed a firm road-bed could ever be made and preserved. But it seems as if, in the absence of fresher counsel nearer home, the projectors turned to the example of the Hollanders, and adopted the same foundation for their road as the others for their long-enduring dikes. At least a similar method was employed, and cords upon cords of brushwood were laid down upon the soft and yielding marsh soil, for a basis for the ponderous embankment that was afterward piled upon them. No material amount of sinkage was ever observed, though the marsh was known to be little more than a sponge, and one witness swore to having thrust a pole into it twenty-five feet perpendicularly. For this construction, gigantic for that day, the hills of Chelsea furnished abundance of gravel; and the cutting through these is about all to be found on the route.

Three tolls were collected between the extremes of this road; gate No. 1 being in the Great Pasture, some two miles from Salem; No. 2 at the "Halfway House" on Breed's Island, in Saugus; and the third on the long bridge over Mystic River, at Chelsea. Not many,

probably, of the ordinary travellers, had occasion to pass all these barriers; but many from Lynn and its numerous villages found themselves obliged to make two offerings before reaching Boston. It was such an unexpected demand that fell, one raw November afternoon, on the ears of Samuel Mulliken and Jeremiah Bulfinch, who had ridden from Lynn on business, mutually sharing expenses. It was but for six cents, yet neither would pay it, nor half of it, either; and after long contention they turned and rode home, chilled through, but each glorying in having had his own way.

The charter of the Salem Turnpike provided that the road should be free when the receipts amounted to a certain sum, and the bridge at Chelsea at the expiration of seventy years. Before the expiration of the full time, however, the belief obtained that not only this but all the roads and bridges in the county ought to be made free of charge to the people, and the feeling culminated in the passage of the statute of 1868, chapter 309, which declared them thus free, and provided for an adjustment of expenses among the county and towns. The whole business under the Act was completed in a few months, and then — 6th of November, 1869 — the gates were finally swung open, and the lantern at the Halfway House that for sixty-six years had been an unfailing beacon to every night-wanderer over the marshes, swinging in storm or shine, so surely to cast its yellow ray all night long over the tedious miles of level roadway, the true old lantern itself failed and shone no more and no longer. But to temper the poetic sadness of the thought came the far grander consciousness that even in this loss was the greater gain of free travel to every soul throughout the county, the more beneficent abolition of the toll-rates and charges over every road and bridge in the domain of the fathers of Essex. For these tolls had amounted to no trifling sum. During the year 1805, there were received at Gate No. 1, near Salem, tolls to the comfortable figure of $5,300.

The Salem Turnpike was only one of a vast number of similar enterprises, whose predominating popularity gave character to their particular day and time. Such, more or less similar, were to be found at that time all over New England, and, doubtless, all over the United States. Two more such splendid roads were chartered the next spring. One of these was part of a still larger operation, intended to connect all the eastern country with Boston by the best turnpike facilities. A great road of this kind was laid out from New Hampshire, through Methuen, to Andover Bridge, thence through Andover and Reading to Boston. At the bridge, however, a large branch was divided, which ran south-easterly through North Andover and Middleton to Danvers, and thus entered Salem, bringing a collateral share of all its benefits to the lap of the ancient settlement. This road is yet in excellent condition, and seems to have been remarkably well constructed; but the facts of interest in its history seem few, and not now readily obtainable.

Another turnpike, more remarkable in some respects than either, was chartered nearly at the same time with the last. It was remarkable for its daring projection, for its persevering execution, and its almost total want of usefulness afterward. Perhaps it was meant as a sort of offset to the Andover Turnpike; for being chartered to come from State Street, Newburyport, to Malden Bridge, "by as nearly a straight line as practicable," it might have hoped to bring more of the eastern trade and patronage to Boston than the other could divert from it. But no such hope was ever realized, whether entertained or not. Great expectations had been raised to induce subscribers to take up the stock; but after the road had been once finished, all faith in it seemed to expire, and the only sale of shares ever made afterward, it is said, occurred when the president, very indignant at the discouraging remarks of a stockholder, pompously offered to take his investment off his hands, and was quickly taken at his word. The road is yet in being, and it is said that the section nearest Newburyport did indeed pay tolerable earnings; but the rest, neglected and disused, now looks a "modern ruin" for miles and miles, suggesting some greatness, certainly, but so vaguely, that one can hardly guess what the greatness may have ever been.

This road, some thirty miles in length, was truly made as "straight as practicable." This seemed the ruling idea. With the projectors, a straight route was a near route; and thus, though they found good even grades in Saugus and Lynnfield, they forced their way over the steep hills of Topsfield, resolutely surmounting grades that were really frightful. Four great ridges were there passed over in close succession, besides many others of less note, in utter forgetfulness that the distance over a hemisphere is just equal to that round one side of its base, and many times harder for any species of travel. It is singular to observe, at this day, what splendid plans were included under the working of this road. A large hotel was built at South Lynnfield, the road was there, for about a mile, laid out of double width, to serve for a trotting-ground, and ample sailing facilities on Suntaug Lake were added to the attractions. Similar works were projected at other points, but not, perhaps, ever fully brought forth; for the basis of all success was to be the stage travel, and this fell flat at the very outset. A single winter's experience was enough to warn any driver to beware of the dangers of those enormous grades; and even in the best days of summer, a stumbling horse or a broken axle, while descending one of those declivities, was not to be thought of without a shudder. Several accidents did happen, and at length it proved impossible to engage drivers who would attempt to go over the whole route. And now the stranger passes along its track for miles, wondering why so good a road was ever made where there were no more people; what patronage there ever could have been for those great hotels, and what could have ever paid for the beautiful stone arch that spans the Ipswich River, or the equally substantial structure that brings it across the Parker. The grass, in many places, springs between its ruts; the bushes are every season encroaching on its margins; and thus it lies, right through the centre of the county, a long line of admonition and counsel, teaching all to beware of ill-considered enterprises, and not to risk the fruits of honest industry for the dazzle of a fancied scheme, or the glitter of a happy possibility.

The only other turnpike in the county, to which notice need be given, is the short one by which access was secured for the public from Newburyport to Plum Island. It is only a few miles in length, terminating at the hotel on the island, but includes in that distance a bridge of considerable length and importance, spanning Plum Island River, not far from its opening into the Merrimac. This road was first opened to the public in July, 1805, and was really a work of enterprise and credit.

Before leaving the subject of turnpike roads, it is necessary that something should be said of the peculiar style of travel they were devised to accommodate and promote. The stage-coach was, in its day, as great an advance, perhaps, upon the prevailing modes of transit as the railroad-car was, in later time, upon the stage; at all events, it thoroughly revolutionized all extended travel, and gave an aspect, never before observed, to all the world of out-door civilization. The first stage-coach in the county, drawn by four horses, was established in 1774. It was set up by Ezra Lunt, and connected Newburyport with Boston, *via* Salem. It made three round trips per week, leaving its termini on alternate days. There was a smaller coach, drawn by two horses, that had then been running two or three years between Boston and Portsmouth, N. H., but the proprietor's name is not remembered. But, according to Rantoul, "systematic staging began here about 1796, and in this business Benjamin Hale, of Newburyport, seems to have been a pioneer." Judge Henry Elkins, of Wenham, Dr. Nehemiah Cleveland, of Topsfield, and others less known, are named as early promoters of this great and growing industry. In 1818, an incorporation was obtained as the "Eastern Stage Company," and this from the State of New Hampshire, though the business was really to extend under the wings of two States beside. They had a capital of four hundred and twenty-five shares, of $100 each. They

ran the coaches on the old plan of alternate days, leaving Portsmouth for Boston at nine, A. M., reaching Topsfield by dinner-time, and Boston by night. Next day they returned by the same route, which ran in part over the famous Newburyport Turnpike, and otherwise through Danversport and Salem. Again, we hear of driving through Rowley and Ipswich, and probably both lines were used, according to some plan not now recollected. Topsfield thus became a place of importance, either that or Wenham being the "halfway" from Newburyport to Boston. Large meetings were often held in this heart of the county, and John Adams writes of a great Topsfield caucus, in 1808, that opposed the embargo.

The Eastern Stage Company were an acknowledged power for a long time. Once they said to the Newburyport Turnpike that they might accept $700 per annum for tolls, or they would send their coaches by the Old Town Bridge. With them, we may almost say, originated the notorious phrase and doctrine, "All baggage at the risk of the owners," for they announced it by vote in April, 1819, and again in 1826 and 1829. But, after a while, they found that law could not sustain them without something like personal service in every case, and as the best thing they could think of, they posted their notice in every tavern, and actually served it on every bank president in the region.

The company met with all success. They had no accidents, and committed few blunders. Their property, both real and movable, largely and rapidly increased, and the year 1833 saw them free from debt, and with a business that needed and employed five hundred horses. In October, 1834, the stock was worth $202.13; par value, $100. The next year they were paying eight to nine thousand dollars yearly tolls, adding constantly to their landed property, and feeling secure against all competition. At that time, the present centres of travel and intelligence were, perhaps, not heard of, or were lying, like latent buds, waiting for the coming influence to awaken them; while another class, the eminent positions of that day, were swelling in their conscious importance, and not staying to think or fear that anything could ever arise to change or set aside their title to the best of local greatness.

And yet it was even then coming. While the stage company, with its confederated brethren from other sections, were rejoicing in full prosperity; while they were junketing at their business meetings, and looking over the grand roads they occupied, and grand hotels they patronized, "Gilman's and the Wolfe at Newburyport, the Sun Tavern and the Lafayette Coffee House at Salem, the Ann Street Stage House, and the City Tavern in Boston," and Breed's well-noted hostelry in Lynn, where twenty-three stages stopped per day, going to Boston, and, perhaps, as many returning, and where faithful old True Moody, the sable hostler, gathered a competency and purchased a home with the ninepences stored in his mouth while changing horses; while all this was going on, the air was beginning to tremble, in the shadowy and unknown distance, with the roar and screech of the railroad train and its unearthly whistle, — sounds of doom, indeed, for all that pertained to the glory of that ancient régime; sounds of judgment that, when uttered, should reverse the currents of public transit, should create new cities in the forest, and feed them with the life-blood of every old metropolis. The iron-horse soon came riding into Essex, as those old-fashioned stage-worthies must have thought, like a very fiend in armor, and all their glory began to wane, and their prosperity to melt away before their eyes. The Eastern Stage Company faced the invasion bravely, and tried every expedient to prevent being thrown from their feet; tried to sell horses, to sell real estate, to reduce wages, — everything, but without effect; and finally, in February, 1838, broke up the corporation, and sold their remaining assets for the most they could get for them. The official existence ended June 26, 1838. Yet they had not done so very ill. "During twenty years," reports the president, Col. Henry Whipple, "the holders of stock received eight and one-third per cent. in dividends annually, and after paying all debts, between $66 and $67 on each share. It does not appear that a passenger was ever killed or injured." The number of coaches despatched was often prodigious. June 1, 1813, when the unfortunate action of the "Chesapeake" and "Shannon" occurred, one hundred and twenty stages, crowded full, went up from Salem to Boston.

But we have at length traced this investigation down to the point where the impatient spirit of a growing people refused longer to be satisfied with any arrangement that could be made for their transportation by animal muscle. The demand was for speedier movement, especially for the longer routes; and hardly less for a broader accommodation, by which a greater number could find carriage at a given hour. Had the question been only one of short distances, the chance for the new mode would have been much less flattering; but so it was, that the short distances were worth little more to the stages than to the railroads. It would have been easy for the stages to scatter their routes among rural towns, where their antagonist would never pursue them, and thus keep themselves in modified activity; but this would never support the enterprise. Only the "through lines" were of much use to anybody; and on these the quickest time and the largest accommodation were sure to command and control the track, and so the event proved.

Yet, curiously enough, the railroad did not, at first, invade any stage route of importance. The Eastern Stage Company, in its latter despairs, had offered to make joint effort with others, and sell five miles of the Newburyport Turnpike for a railroad bed; but all without success. Indeed, it seemed not so easy for the new system to make immediate entry over the track of the coaches in the more important lines; but the Boston and Lowell Railroad, that had at last found a foothold in Middlesex County, first pierced the flank of Essex by a branch track, that ran up through Wilmington and entered Andover. This was March 15, 1833; by April 7, 1835, it had crept on toward its inevitable destiny as far as Haverhill; April 5, 1837, it had crossed the town to the New Hampshire line, and obtained the name of the Andover and Haverhill Railroad Corporation. Meanwhile, the stroke of fate was even more plainly felt in New Hampshire, whose Legislature, June 27, 1835, had incorporated the "Boston and Maine Railroad," and given it such a location as enabled a ready junction with the advancing line in Massachusetts. And this was really effected, February 22, 1841, when the latter, which had been re-christened as the "Boston and Portland Railroad Corporation," April 3, 1839, was definitely united with its eastern co-workers, and thus fully accomplished the fact of an active and influential existence.

But the advocates of railroad improvement in southern Essex were not going to be left behind by their fellows at the north. At length, April 14, 1836, they obtained a charter for the "Eastern Railroad," from Boston to Salem. The choice of routes was not easy. They could go by the line, nearly, of old Boston Street; passing Lynn by the Strawberry Brook valley, and entering Salem from the west. They could easily secure the Boston end of the Salem Turnpike, and either diverge at Lynn, or go through Great Pasture by a series of elevated grades. Either of these would have entered Boston without water-carriage; but they were not so firm in the saddle as not to prize a valuable ally, and the good-will of the East Boston Land Company was very much of this kind. It was thus decided to occupy a route still nearer the shore; and after deep-cutting the troublesome hills of Chelsea, to risk the long and tedious exposure of an embankment across the marshes of Saugus and Lynn to a solid, though uninviting, position at Breed's Wharf, near Axey's Point in the latter town. From this, eastward, the advantages of this route were no doubt real enough, both as to the passage of the "Great Pasture," and the entrance of the city of Salem itself; but the marsh section was long, much in danger, and wholly incapable of productiveness, while the terminus at East Boston compelled an entrance into the metropolis by a ferry-boat, which, even at that day, had not become the safe and well-managed

thing afforded by the present day. And, indeed, the doubt may well arise whether the eligibility of the approach to Salem on the south was not more than neutralized, when the road came to be extended, by the peculiar difficulty of leaving it on the north. It finally, as is well-known, had to be effected by a long and costly tunnel, laid through one of the most busy streets and under another, and inevitably interfering with and narrowing the comfortable use of the thoroughfare through which it passed. Nor indeed, were the hopes well realized, that by the near-shore line the amount of land-damage would be peculiarly small; for it happened that the route selected cast them upon lands owned or controlled by parties in the interest of the turnpike and the stage company, and these were not in haste to forget that it gave them an opportunity against their destroyer they never might have again.

But it was carried through, and opened for travel August 27, 1838. A new era of travel dawned at once on the wondering eyes of the shore-people of Essex. A stage could only carry twelve, or possibly fifteen; but here were half a dozen such stages, or cars, holding as many, coupled together, with a single machine, scarcely bigger than a good-sized horse, taking them along at a pace that Peter Ray, with his annual load of Harvard graduates, had never thought of attaining. The hundred and twenty coaches of the sad Chesapeake day had carried, probably, not far from eighteen hundred persons, and the day's work was monstrous. But the cars took eleven hundred the first day, with no fatigue to anybody, kept it up day after day, and in about a month ran it up to sixteen hundred, while crowds of curious spectators gathered near the depot at each arrival and departure. The daily average for the first three months was three hundred and forty-eight persons. And these were taken into Boston, even across the ferry, in not more than forty minutes, with the confident hope of bringing the time down to thirty-two minutes; which, however, has hardly been realized.

So began the Eastern Railroad, "that giant," as Henry F. Durant once expressed it, "that has stretched forth its arm, and laid, literally, a hand of iron upon the bosom of Essex County." The cars were at first short and small, for the present long car was not yet invented. But when, as it soon happened, twelve or fifteen cars had to be put into one train, it quickly appeared that room could be economized, and with it wheel-gear saved and comfort amplified. So the cars were made longer, with platforms and steps, and doors in the ends; and by another year the trains looked singularly unlike what, at first, they had been. And then began the day of extension. Marblehead was a place of importance; she had wealth to put in the scale; she must be secured. A branch road to Marblehead, by way of the Forest River Mills, put in operation December 10, 1839, made the trip to the home of stout old Mugford and Gerry, almost as quick and short as it had ever been over the ferry at Naugus Head. Previously a communication had been held by a stage running from a small station in Swampscott, near the Stetson farm. Eight days after, December 18, 1839, the cars ran through the Salem Tunnel and to Ipswich. There they halted awhile; for the strongest powers of Essex South were all propitiated. But the road was growing, like the gourd of the prophet. By the next summer, June 19, 1840, it had its cars running to Newburyport; and the same season, November 9, 1840, it had overleaped the Merrimac, bridging the stream on the piers of the old structure, over the heads of the few, slow-rolling stages that yet crept in, dispiritedly, from the north, had run across the plains of Salisbury, and made its entry into New Hampshire in triumph, fifty-four miles from the Massachusetts capital.

For something like six years no particular developments in railroad matters were made in the county. While the Eastern was pushing its way with rapidity, over the marshes and sands, to gain an entrance to the yet distant communities of Maine, the antecedent line, derived from the Boston and Lowell, and now provided with the more significant title of the Boston and Maine, had been definitely united with the other sections of the same road in New Hampshire and Maine, by Act of the three Legislatures, March 24, 1843. They had graded from Andover to Haverhill; and since August, 1836, had been steadily running as far as Wilmington. But a new idea seemed to arise, simultaneously with the perfecting of the old. They had intended, of course, to reach Boston for themselves; and, in 1844, they succeeded in getting a charter so enabling them. The next year, 1845, they had this section finished, and ran into Haymarket Square. Then it was seen that a feasible route lay from Andover Bridge northward; and having obtained an Act for the purpose, September 8, 1847, they changed the position of the tracks, and ran up from Andover directly to the bridge. No good arrangements seem to have been practicable with the proprietors for crossing on this structure, and a new bridge was therefore built, just below. Over this the road was vigorously carried, and thus triumphantly entered the new town of Lawrence, July 3, 1848, about fifteen months after the incorporation of the busy colony. The Act enabling the road to cross the Merrimac had also authorized its extension to the State line, by passing through Methuen; and this project was immediately realized in connection with similar movements in the adjoining State. This, therefore, began what was soon completed and brought into full activity, the Manchester and Lawrence Railroad.

But not even by this time were the limitations and conditions of railroad travel fully comprehended. It had not come into full view, that short routes and small communities could not as well contribute to the support of a line, as would larger populations at greater distance. And therefore, as the margins of the county were all now reached, the interior towns were not inclined to bear neglect. They wished for accommodation as well. Then it occurred to the mind of the Hon. Stephen C. Phillips, of Salem, that a line from the old seaport to Lawrence, with the coal trade of the two, and the way travel between, could be made to pay its way, and something better. His plans were put into execution, resulting in the incorporation of the "Essex Railroad," March 7, 1846. By January, 1847, the road was opened from Salem (where it connected at the station of the Eastern) to Peabody Square.* It did not develop very powerfully; it was more than a year, or till July 1, 1848, before it had progressed to Danvers, though it only needed till September 5, 1848, to carry it the rest of the way to Lawrence, connecting various points in Middleton and North Andover; and to make a freight branch, to connect and terminate at Phillips's Wharf in Salem, only required till July 2, 1849. But the last section showed considerable difficulty; the track of the Eastern had to be crossed at grade, a long distance of pile-bridge built, and the Bridge Street embankment cut through and also bridged, the difference of grades being nearly twenty feet. This road was therefore ready to test the problem of interior transit, but unfortunately, the pleasant hopes that had nourished the scheme were not sustained. The road continued to live in a doubtful state for some years, and finally passed into the possession of the Eastern Railroad, where it has since been operated under the name of the Lawrence Branch.

Another interior road was projected, and incorporated in 1848, called the Salem and Lowell Railroad. It was arranged to start from the old terminus of the Wilmington Branch, or near it, through Reading, Middleton, and Peabody, to Salem. It was fast becoming apparent, that the old home of Endicott aspired to become a railroad centre of the modern day. The new road was not open for travel till August 1, 1850, when it established its terminal station on the North River side in Salem, and went into operation under a lease to the Boston and Lowell corporation. By them it is continued; yet, like the other interior line, it has never had the reputation of being a very successful or well-paying enterprise.

The multiplication of railroads had now become a passion of the

* Then South Danvers.

people. The capitalists of Newburyport were not so well engrossed by the growing consequence of the Eastern, but that they were willing to consult with the people of Georgetown, to whom, as yet, no such favors had fallen, and devise a short road to reach their part of the country. A charter was therefore obtained in the course of the year 1848, and ground was broken January 15, 1849. It hardly seems that very rapid progress was made; for it was not until May 23, 1850, that passenger trains began to run over it, from Newburyport to Georgetown. Not far from the same time, a branch road was located through the denser parts of Bradford and Groveland, which connecting at the west end with the Boston and Maine, at their bridge in Haverhill, ran south-easterly about six miles, and joined the Newburyport Railroad at its terminus in Georgetown.

But the old and important town of Danvers had not yet its interests well satisfied. The Essex Railroad gave it only a communication with Salem; every other line passed it at a distance. Again, the heart of the county, stage-famous Topsfield, had as yet only leave to hear afar, but not to see, the trains that were bringing help to all her shoreland sisters. Something must be done for Topsfield and Danvers, and Boxford stood opportunely to turn the scale as to what and how. The Danvers and Georgetown Railroad came into existence May 7, 1851, and as the branches to Newburyport and Bradford had naturally fallen into the hands of the Boston and Maine, so this as naturally followed the same lead, and fell in as part of the same system; especially when, not long after, March 15, 1852, by the inducement of the company themselves, it may be, the concluding section of the road was authorized and built through Lynnfield and Peabody, tapping the Boston and Maine at Wakefield, and giving the people of the old stage-towns almost as easy access to the capital as could be furnished by the Eastern.

The interior wants of the county were now fully satisfied: perhaps further than was profitable. But a single form of industry appears to have compelled the adding of one more road to the list. The large ice-harvests from Pentucket Pond and its fellows in Georgetown had found a profitable outlet by the new road in the three directions of Newburyport, Lawrence, and Boston. So, also, the equal or greater cutting on Suntaug Lake in South Lynnfield had already demanded as much opportunity to reach a market. The first effort was toward Boston; but so good a chance for a "through line" could scarcely be neglected, and the result, finally, was the incorporation of the South Reading Branch Railroad, April 26, 1848, with one end in Peabody, and the other in Wakefield. And a very curious road it proved to be. Perhaps in no other instance in New England have there ever been such singular features of railroad policy exhibited; for, not very long after, arose a long and bitter controversy between the two great lines, and competition and rivalry for a great while were the animating principles of both Eastern and Maine railroads. For some unexplained reason, the South Reading Branch became a bone to be picked between them; and so sharp was their practice upon it, that before long each owned nearly one-half the stock. Thus each was, in respect of any plans to be realized, completely checkmated by the other. This continued for a period not now definable; and the bystanders observed, with no little amusement, that while, under such an armed neutrality, the two were willing to run the road together, yet neither would allow an employee to ride free over it, and both the presidents, in such cases, had to pay fare like common mortals.

In fact, neither road could afford to quarrel over this little accommodation line, which probably never did much more than pay its bonds, and sometimes, very likely, not that. The Eastern soon afterwards purchased the majority of the stock, and thereby obtained control of the management of the road, which is now operated as the South Reading Branch. A very important branch had been brought up, first from Gloucester, but afterwards, by extension, from Rockport, and running through Manchester, had obtained connection with the main line at Beverly. Another, by no means inconsiderable, demanded attention in Salisbury, branching off westward to bring the local trade of Amesbury Mills. And more, and perhaps more troublesome than all, was the famous branch that, with vigorous movement, set out to divide the patronage of Lynn, and enter Boston from thence independently, or with slight privilege from the Boston and Maine.

This was the remarkable Saugus Branch Railroad. It originated in the feeling of the people of Saugus, Everett, and Malden, that their local accommodations by rail were disproportionately small. A line was therefore devised, to start from a point near the famous old stage-house, Breed's Hotel, in Lynn, to run to East Saugus, the Centre Village, Sweetser's Corners (then first named Cliftondale), and the Franklin Park Trotting Ground; then entering and passing through Malden, and tapping the Boston and Maine road at the Edgeworth Factories, and running into Boston over their track. The best efforts of such men as Benjamin F. Newhall, of Saugus, Joshua Webster, of Melrose, and Charles Porter, of Malden, were given to it, and it was finally built. The cars began to run to Boston, February 1, 1853, Andrews Breed, of Lynn, being superintendent. After a short period of activity, the company found themselves involved in several expensive suits for land damage, while a serious accident at the Cottage-Street crossing, by which Dr. Abram Gould was nearly killed, plunged them yet more in costly litigation. This gave opportunity to the Eastern to absorb the declining shares, and after a time, through the alleged defection of Edward Crane, to obtain such a quantity of the stock as gave them control of the road. It was, not long after, formally turned over to the Eastern, which built two short sections from its termini to their own track, adding a station at Everett. Since then, a portion of the trains of the Eastern road have been regularly run over the Saugus Branch, which has thus acquired all the consequence and usefulness it could have procured for itself otherwise. Its long and crooked route has gained it the popular name of "Round the Horn," and its fifteen way stations between Lynn and Boston give great accommodation to the country, but marked annoyance to every "through" passenger who happens to get this trip incorporated into his journey.

Two other branches of considerable importance have been welded to the main line of the Eastern at periods later than the above. One of these is known as the Swampscott Branch. The strong influence of the summer residents on the Swampscott and Marblehead shore was secured, and the road was built, and opened for public use Oct. 21, 1873. The other, diverging from the main line at the Wenham Station, passes eastward, and carries its blessings to the before unvisited town of Essex. It was not generally welcomed there; as one of the citizens remarked to a stranger, "Yes, the road has got here; we've fought it off for thirty years, butit has come after all, and I suppose it will stay."

Some years after the absorption of the Saugus Branch, the Boston Land Company undertook the marketing of extensive and vacant tracts in East Boston, Winthrop, and Revere. For their full facility of working, a ferry was necessary to reach the Boston side; and this once settled, a communication with towns to the east was seen to be a most obvious and natural auxiliary. After much deliberation, therefore, and much probing of Lynn to find what assistance could be there secured, a "narrow-gauge road" was determined on, and was rapidly built along a line nearer the shore than it had been supposed possible to construct one. A tunnel was necessary at East Boston, and a trestle-bridge over Saugus River; but these were built with the greatest energy, and the cars of the "little wiggler," as some sneeringly called it, began to run between Lynn and Boston July 29, 1875. Great enthusiasm was felt in Lynn. When the building of the road commenced, a large body of old and venerable men assembled, led by Perry Newhall and Darius Barry, and under command of Col. John Nichols, and marched with music to the marshes, where they worked half an hour on the road-bed. The route ran from

East Boston through Revere, and directly over the extensive and attractive beach in the latter town. This had long been a famous pleasure resort, but was difficult of access, and the new road proved a great convenience to the people.

It is unnecessary to pursue further the movements and fortunes of the steam railroads of Essex County. All the different lines, found in operation at the Centennial year, have been described, and this fully advances to the condition of the present day our history of the means and manners of travel and transportation.

But there was yet one more thing to be done in the line of passenger conveyance. The stage-travel of sixty years before had not yielded wholly in one direction. That portion of it that lay, as it were, inside of the denser communities, had been bequeathed in succession to the cab, the omnibus, the hack, and the barge; and these, with greater or less accommodation, and a rate of speed about in inverse proportion to their resemblance to their honored ancestry of the turnpike. But a forecasting spirit easily perceived, that if to a light style of carriage the advantage of the railway could be conjoined, an amount of travel could be served, with a given expenditure of force, greater than had yet been seen.

Considerations like these led to the contriving of the horse, or street railroads of the most modern day. They had their origin, practically, about 1855, which cannot be far from the date of the first lines opened in Boston. And as a large and influential class in Lynn were all the time kept on the alert by their opposition to the Eastern Railroad, so they were not long in seeing that a horse railroad could be brought from the capital, through Chelsea and Revere, and prove no small or weak regulator of the freaks and follies of the great steam corporation. Efforts were immediately begun to obtain a charter, but very stout opposition was met, more, probably, than any one had looked for. Yet it was at last secured; and then the opposition shifted its ground, and contested the path by the inch. For the charters of these roads had included a provision not before employed: that the road should not proceed in or through any town till its location had been approved by the municipal authorities. And in the present case it happened that a line, perhaps intended as a rival, had also been prayed for through Malden and Saugus, and some attempt at a mutual understanding had been had during the pendency of the bills, both of which were finally passed, that of the Lynn road dating April 6, 1859. But these attempts seemed to end in poor success; for no sooner were the two in the field, than the managers of the Cliftondale road used such influence in Saugus, that the selectmen there refused a location to the Lynn and Boston road over that part of the turnpike within their limits. The others retaliated by a similar effort with the town of Revere, by which the Cliftondale line, which desired to cross a small corner of the town, was driven to locate round it, being thus compelled to build a costly track through an extensive swamp, and steer yet wider of all chance of paying neighborhoods. Meanwhile, the Lynn road was built close up to the lines of Saugus, though with constant opposition from that town; and from that time till a conciliation was at last effected, a set of omnibuses stopped the gap, and carried the passengers from one waiting car to the other. The track was located over the old Salem Turnpike, from a point in Chelsea to Lynn Hotel, from thence over the Common to Park Square, and so through Market, Broad, and Lewis streets, to a terminus at the foot of Ocean Street. The turnpike had to be somewhat widened for the purpose; and altogether offered so many unpleasant features to the case, that it was claimed, and almost admitted, that only the portion inside the city of Lynn would ever pay; yet this proved to be an illusion. The passage to Boston was of a kind quite welcome to a large class; and patronage to the whole road was found to take very encouraging proportions. The first regular cars ran on June 1, 1861; Isaac Stebbins, Esq., of Chelsea, being president of the road, which had been built under the care of Charles Porter, of Malden. The Cliftondale road, its natural and inborn antagonist, struggled with adverse fortune for a few years; but nothing seemed to be in its favor, and at length it ceased its trips altogether. After a time, the Lynn road was made sensible of many and urgent applications from the north-eastern sections of the city for a branch accommodation, to cover the lines of communication so well occupied by coaches of all descriptions. The company did not show itself over-anxious to respond to such calls; yet after a time, a branch was indeed located and built through Union and Chestnut streets from Central Square, and a one-horse car set to run upon it. This, though well so far, was only such a concession as stimulated the feelings of the Woodend people still further; and before long, the formation of a new company was announced, under a charter dated April 19, 1873, and granted to M. V. B. Mower and others. They proceeded to locate and build from the branch terminus, at the old "Wood Corner," through Essex, Chatham, and Maple streets, to the church at Gravesend. Arrangements were also made for the use of the branch track in Union Street, and the main one in Market Street; and the Lynn and Boston cars were withdrawn, and the "Lynn City Street Railway" began operations with commendable vigor. They soon carried an additional track to the boundary line of Swampscott, and continued to prosecute their business with good fortune and success.

We have dwelt somewhat at length upon the circumstances attending the commencement of this horse railroad, partly for the sake of exhibiting a good example of the general fortune of these enterprises, and partly because this was the special case of their first introduction into Essex County. For the other corporations of like sort, successively established in other sections, a less detailed account must be held sufficient. In 1862, an Act of incorporation was obtained, and a horse railroad built from Salem to South Danvers, now Peabody, and the first car to the latter town was run July 8, of the following year. Immediately the road was extended to Beverly, and was opened October 28, 1863. A branch was built to South Salem (Ward V. of the city), in the following year, and was opened May 10; a branch to North Salem (Ward VI.), in 1869, and opened June 4 of that year. An extension to Salem Neck and "the Willows," a pleasure resort, about a mile and a half from the heart of the city, was opened for travel June 10, 1877. The entire road is now operated by the Naumkeag Street Railway Company, which was incorporated in 1875, and assumed the lease of the Salem Street Railway, March 1, of that year. The capital stock of the Naumkeag is $70,000, and of the Salem $150,000. A. C. Goodell is president, and Dr. William Mack, treasurer of the leasing corporation.

The "Merrimac Valley Horse Railroad" was chartered in 1863, with a renewal obtained in 1866. The company organized with William A. Russell, president, and James H. Eaton, treasurer, and these have never been displaced. The road was first built from Lawrence to Methuen, and opened for travel in 1867. Then an extension in the other direction became necessary, and the road was carried through to North Andover in 1868. During the next eight years, the steady growth of population and business on the south side of the river came at last to the making of an urgent call for an extension in that direction. This was finally made in 1876. The road has since been running all these routes, mostly with half-hour trips; and though subject to much cost in their construction, has paid all indebtedness, and at length become able to divide profits with the shareholders.

Three other roads exist on the Merrimac, of which, however, we can only give brief descriptions. The "Newburyport and Amesbury Horse Railroad Company" obtained a charter February 29, 1864, issued to Col. Eben. F. Stone, of Newburyport, and others. Authority was given for locations in Newburyport, Salisbury, and Amesbury, according to local permission; this has thus far only been applied to a route crossing the river from the first-named place, and thus reaching the villages of Salisbury Point and Amesbury Mills. The line of this road can hardly be surpassed for beauty and general

charm of scenery, running as it does a part of the distance by the Newburyport ship-yards, and along the banks of the Merrimac, and then crossing it over the Chain Bridge into the little manufacturing towns on the north side of the river.

Next we have the "Merrimac Street Railway Company," incorporated June 3, 1870. The corporators in this case were Franklin Brickett and others, having leave to build, as might be located, in Haverhill, Groveland, and Bradford. This road, which really passes through portions of all these towns, has also a remarkably choice and lovely surrounding, as, indeed, almost any route must have, near the fine old river of Essex County.

The last is the "Kenoza Street Railway Company," incorporated April 24, 1873. This gave Alfred Kittredge and others, corporators, leave to build from the Boston and Maine Railroad Station, in Haverhill, to the Soldiers' Monument, thence to Kenoza Lake, and to any other point in the city, and not beyond the State line.

We do not need to note carefully the many scattered and only partly successful efforts for the establishment of new and additional lines. An important extension has been long debated in the city of Lynn, and will probably be realized before long. So of others in all the denser municipalities. We have discussed, with some care and much sincere research, the progress and development of travel and transportation in the county. We have shown how, from the ancient settler, paddling his canoe on the Ipswich or Merrimac river, to carry his wife, or bring home his corn or pumpkins, to the horse-car, shooting along with its load of fifty, or the steam-train, with its load of three hundred — how in this wonderful change there is shown the mental and social development of a great, broad, and advancing people, and in a clearer and more convincing light than perhaps in any other phase of their civilization. For so we must regard it; and if one shall ask if yet there may not be further advance, — as great as this, that condenses Endicott's two days' travel into less than an hour, — we will only answer, that as Endicott foresaw nothing of the kind in his day, so now, no more can we.

CHAPTER VII.

HISTORICAL NOTICE OF SOME OF THE MORE IMPORTANT PUBLIC INSTITUTIONS OF THE COUNTY OF ESSEX.

Our historical sketch of Essex County will not have full or symmetrical perfection, without some remark being devoted to the growth and welfare of those public institutions here located, that have a breadth of purpose and a scope of working beyond the limit of any single township or community.

The first of these broad, public organizations, is seen in the

Essex Agricultural Society,—an institution which, as says its eloquent historiographer, Dr. George B. Loring, in his address of 1868, has been "identified with almost every active movement for the advancement of Essex County for the last fifty years."

The origin of the Essex Agricultural Society was, primarily, in the mind of that truly great man, Timothy Pickering. He had been deeply engaged in all the proceedings that led, through the Revolution, to the establishment of American liberty. He came to the day of his country's deliverance, with a keen sense of her need in all things belonging to the development of her resources, and the utilization of her products; and he wisely judged that no stronger agency could be appealed to for an improving influence in these directions, than that of association, and of joint exertion in each locality for itself. He would, therefore, see the first class of all, the farmers, and those of his own county, combined together in one solidified effort for the best advancement, improvement, and elevation of American agriculture.

Filled with this idea, the spirit of Pickering moved upon the hearts of those within his counsel, and the result of his advice and his admonition was, that on a day, namely, Feb. 16, 1818, there came together at the tavern of Cyrus Cummings, in Topsfield, the old central town, then in the glory of her stage-coach celebrity, "a meeting of farmers and others, inhabitants of the county of Essex," intent on forming a society for the promotion of such objects as those above indicated. Ichabod Tucker and David Cummings, both of Salem, were made moderator and secretary, and in the permanent organization that immediately succeeded, Col. Timothy Pickering became president, and thus the visible, as he already was the potential, head of the new institution, and the man who, of all others, would, for the love of it, give himself to the labor and the care that all its interests demanded. Several vice-presidents were set in his company: William Bartlett, of Newburyport, Thomas Kittredge, of Andover, John Heard, of Ipswich, and Ichabod Tucker, of Salem. Leverett Saltonstall, of Salem, was made corresponding secretary, and David Cummings remained in charge of the records, while Nehemiah Cleveland, of Topsfield, became the first treasurer.

Launched in this style on the sea of exertion and of usefulness, the society immediately received from all parts of the county the most encouraging evidences of good feeling and assistance. Public exhibitions were not at once projected; for it seemed as if the members desired first to know themselves fully, before attempting any official acquaintance with the public. Thus, the president gave an address before them, May 5, 1818; and again, Feb. 21, 1820, he spoke before them, according to a vote of the trustees. But the next autumn, Oct. 5, 1820, they undertook a veritable "Cattle Show," and carried it out with so good and well considered a plan, that it has never been found necessary to alter or amend it. This show was held (as where else should it have been) in the same old, time-honored town of Topsfield. A prudent affair it was, too; offering no premiums outside the line of strict agriculture, nor making these so large as to excite cupidity or stimulate corrupt effort. The whole amount offered in premiums was only $182, divided among four classes of competitors: 1. Working oxen and neat live-stock. 2. Fat oxen and swine. 3. Indian corn and potatoes. 4. Manures. But we shall be glad to notice that while the entries were no doubt somewhat numerous, and widely distributed, prizes were actually taken in Newburyport, Ipswich, Salem, Middleton, Saugus, Newbury, Danvers, Marblehead, Beverly, and Byfield Parish. The address on this occasion was delivered by Dr. Andrew Nichols, of Danvers.

This was the model marked out then and only very slightly varied from since. The list of classes has, indeed, been materially enlarged; but the principles on which the awards have been made, and the avowed relation of the institution to the public and its interests, have never changed at all. The dairy and forest trees were first put into the competition in 1821; domestic manufactures in 1822, thus enlisting the sympathy and co-operation of the women of the community; while horses were not thought best to be admitted till 1832. Three prizes were set before them that year, of $20, $15, and $10; and the first one taken was by an "iron-gray colt, three years old, of John O. W. Brown, of Newbury."

The influence of this society and its proceedings on the farming industries of the county, from that time to this, cannot but have been powerful and beneficent. The talent of almost the best brain in the county — as good as any, certainly — has been constantly engaged in its active forces, and in commending and demonstrating the worth of those forces to the people. Among its presidents we find, constantly, such men as Leverett Saltonstall, James H. Duncan, John W. Proctor, Allen W. Dodge, Joseph How, and William Sutton; among its secretaries and other officers, such as Daniel P. King, Daniel A. White, Benjamin Merrill, Andrew Nichols, Joseph Story, Henry Colman, George B. Loring, and Francis Peabody. The greatest and best of the county have never stood aloof, but seem always to have felt

that if this field contained any duty suitable for them to do, it was nothing short of an honor to them to be allowed to do it.

Certain peculiarities have always appeared in the policy and management of this society. Unlike almost every other of its kind, it has never admitted, at its exhibitions, any trial or show of the speed of horses. No trotting or racing has ever been considered at all, nor at all allowed. Horses have been shown for breed, and for beauty, but never for speed. This has not been adhered to without some contests, for the lovers of the race have felt no little regret at being debarred in Essex, from what they enjoyed so freely in other counties. But the wisdom of the course thus far insisted on, has appeared in several good results: notably in this, that the funds of the society have been enabled to accumulate to a comfortable capital, under which they need not fear to attack any high and worthy enterprise proposed for the good of agriculture; while it is quite as sure, that of the other societies that have gone into the business of the turf as part of their policy, not one can be found that is not now heavily involved, to say nothing of having no margin for useful operations.

The singular fidelity of this society to its county and its general advancement is also seen in the circumstance, that out of the fifty-nine successive orators who have stood before the members on exhibition day, to instruct or to encourage them, not one has been called from any point outside the county. Every one has resided in Essex, and the greater part have been native to her soil. And to-day not a boy in any of her high schools but may feel that whatever other fortune may betide him in the future, he may at least hold this as his birthright, that by even chance it may come to his turn finally, to sit with the farmers of Essex, at their harvest festival, and stand before them as the orator of truth, of hope, and of a pure and lofty ambition.

To some extent, this society has to face the danger of a possible separation into northern and southern portions. Many, no doubt, would favor such a division to-day; but good reasons have thus far been found, sufficient to influence the majority to keep the venerable framework unbroken in its excellence. It is unquestionably true, that even in our dense community, the movement of a large agricultural material across the breadth of the country, is often troublesome; but it may always be prudently inquired whether, in case of division, a worthy exhibit would be seen on either side, and whether the real usefulness of the institution would not be practically gone.

With these thoughts we leave this excellent foundation of the fathers, on which the sons so well are building. Through a long day of usefulness and honor, it has indeed been guided to the present; and no good citizen can fail to trust, that, through a day yet longer and more blessed, — a day far reaching under the skies of the future, — it may continue to be borne forward, full of symmetrical beauty, full of the praise that comes by noble and worthy effort, full of the high esteem and affection of all who stand by the way, and are witnesses of its goings.

By a chance not often to be enjoyed, we are able, legitimately, to grasp at once quite a number of the institutions of the county in a single history, and present a satisfactory showing of their own origin and progress, while we proceed to sketch that of the

Essex Institute.—After the death of the Rev. William Bentley, D. D., of Salem, in December, 1819, it was found that he had, for forty years, continued to collect and store up documents and material of historical information relating to this part of New England. Mr. George A. Ward, of Salem, with some others, conceived the idea of saving this material by the means of an association; and Dr. Bentley's executor appearing to favor such a plan, a society was formed April 21, 1821, which took the name of the Essex Historical Society, with Dr. E. A. Holyoke, of Salem, as its first president. Measures were soon taken to procure incorporation. Twenty-six prominent citizens of Salem signed the petition, with the venerable Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke at the head; and an Act was passed in response, approved June 11, 1821, incorporating Dr. Holyoke and his associates under the above society name. On the definite organization under this charter, Dr. Holyoke became president, and the annual meeting was fixed on the date of Endicott's first landing at Salem. The application for the charge of the Bentley papers having now been made, met with disappointment; for the executor, under some influence not favorable to the new organization, listened rather to different voices, and the papers were distributed elsewhere. But the society was not dismayed, but began to develop as a thing of much energy. They went on collecting documents, manuscripts, and data of all kinds bearing on local history, having first their storehouse in Essex Place, then in the Salem Bank Building, and again in Lawrence Place. Meanwhile they signalized their being and their objects by an occasion of very rare interest. In September, 1828, occurred the two hundredth anniversary of the landing of Endicott. Arrangements were extensively made, and on the 18th of that month the day was grandly celebrated by the society, with a procession with military escort, ceremonies at the North Church, and a banquet at Hamilton Hall. The Hon. Joseph Story pronounced an oration on the occasion, and the attendance was noticed of many strangers, and some of the first distinction in the land.

At a date a few years later than the above, there arose in Salem a strong feeling in favor of the more definite and organized study of natural history. This, at length, culminated on Saturday, December 14, 1833, when, at a meeting of those favorably inclined, there was first formed the

Essex County Natural History Society.—Dr. Andrew Nichols, of Danvers, was made president, and Mr. John M. Ives, of Salem, secretary, a constitution adopted, and a circular, appealing to public sympathy, ordered for circulation. The next spring, April 16, 1834, they met in Topsfield, to complete the working organization, when an interesting occasion was had, specimens being freely exhibited, with apparatus, &c. Dr. Andrew Nichols, Mr. William Oakes, of Ipswich, the Rev. John L. Russell, of Salem, and many others contributed to the interest of the day. Before long, the advantages of incorporation were seen, and an Act for this purpose was procured, being approved Feb. 12, 1836. It provided for a capital of $10,000 real, and $20,000 personal, property. The activity of the society was good, and the collections speedily increased; being first kept in Essex Place, then in Franklin Building, then in Chase's Building, and afterward in Pickman Place. And here, as to a closely correlated branch of study, the attention of the society became drawn to the delights of horticulture; and this led, very soon, to the arrangement of a public exhibition of fruits and flowers, which was held July 11, 1834, and these exhibitions were continued weekly during the summer seasons, for many years afterwards. The first general exhibition, which continued for several days, occurred on Tuesday and Wednesday, September 14 and 15, 1841.

Soon after this, the society began the editing and printing of some of its more extended essays and discourses, making the "Journal of the Essex County Natural History Society." One volume only was issued, in three numbers, dating in 1836, 1838, and 1841. These contain valuable matter from John L. Russell, Henry Wheatland, William Prescott, Andrew Nichols, and Thaddeus W. Harris; and lectures and other allied efforts were continually made. It had frequently been suggested that the Essex Historical Society, which had a collection of books, portraits, and other relics, could as well perform its legitimate work, united with the Natural History Society. The thought pleased both sides. It was studied carefully through 1847, a joint committee appointed, and their report concurrently accepted, Jan. 14, 1848. A new incorporation, approved Feb. 11, 1848, was accepted as a basis, March 1, 1848, and the constitution being prepared and adopted March 8, 1848, the result was the definite formation of the society first named, the Essex Institute.

We have not space for a history of the various activities and proceedings of this organization during the thirty years since the above

commencement. They are sufficient to fill a volume. It must here suffice to say, that, under the existing constitution, the society has its operations in four departments; viz., those of history, natural history, horticulture, and fine arts. The president is one; but a special vice-president is assigned to each department, and there are under each of these as many curators as the department is found to require for its good and successful conduct. The method of the whole is exhibited: 1. In a Museum, comprising all collections of history or science. 2. In a Library, embracing not only books, but manuscript documents and newspapers. 3. In Meetings, which are either regular meetings, on one or two fixed evenings per month, or "field meetings," held in the summer, at times and places appointed. 4. In Lectures, which are arranged from time to time, by courses or otherwise. 5. In Publications, of which there are a large list, priced and for sale, touching almost every topic of science or history, and by some of the best authors of the region.

The library has grown to proportions of magnificence. At the formation of the Institute it contained about 1,500 volumes; but, by the statement of the society in 1872, it had then gone up to more than 27,000 bound volumes, and 100,000 pamphlets, not reckoning duplicates. The museum has many antiquities, coins, medals, paintings and engravings, all assigned to history and art. The scientific collections were, in May, 1867, deposited with the Peabody Academy of Science, and then contained over 125,000 specimens.

A wealthy lady of Salem, Miss Caroline Plummer, having lost a beloved brother, bequeathed, at her death, $30,000 to the Salem Athenæum, to erect a memorial building to his honor, to be used for meetings of literature and science, and the deposit of works of art and productions of nature. The Essex Institute secured accommodations, under this arrangement, in the very fine building which was dedicated Oct. 6, 1857, and bears the title of Plummer Hall. Here is arranged its library and various collections, except those of natural history, which are deposited with the trustees of the Peabody Academy of Science, in the East India Marine Hall; and here are carried on all the other operations of the Institute. The membership is large, numbering about five hundred, both resident and corresponding, only the first of whom pay dues, and those but three dollars per year. These are privileged to read all books in the library, and to consult freely, on the premises, all those in the library of the Athenæum.

By a single feature, however, the institute has distinguished itself from all other scientific societies, and proved the great liberality and democracy of its system. This feature is what we have already alluded to as the field meeting. This is the special channel through which the society itself approaches the general people. It is, moreover, the readiest of all vehicles by which it brings the truths and charms of science to popular notice and common comprehension. And to pass at once to a clearer statement, a field meeting is an occasion managed on this wise. A locality is pitched upon, almost always within the county, rarely beyond, near which are known or supposed to be more or less objects of scientific or historical interest. Proximity of railroad carriage is always desired. Public notice is given, and the people, without distinction, are informed that whoever uses the railroad to attend the meeting, can return over the same route free. Sometimes a ticket with a coupon is sold at the usual price, the coupon being used to return with. Often large companies of people thus assemble, bringing whatever of apparatus they please, as well as their baskets of satisfactory provision. Arriving, exploring and excursion parties are made up, guides being generally in attendance, and the forenoon is spent in rambling in all directions in search of facts and specimens. Rendezvous is ordered to be at about 1.30, P. M.; and when all come in, the baskets are put into common stock, a picnic table spread, and a choice entertainment usually succeeds. This may be in some large room, or in a shady bit of woods, or wherever else seems fit. After this, in a larger hall, or in the village church or vestry, or possibly in the same cool grove, a formal meeting is called to order, the president of the day, after a brief introductory, calls up such speakers as may be in attendance, whether townsmen of the place, members of the institute, strangers from a distance, or whoever they may be, so as to secure the greatest amount of instructive and agreeable entertainment. The afternoon is thus spent, and every one reaches home in good season.

In this delightful way, nearly, if not every town in Essex County, has been visited and examined, and many of them again and again. The company is always of the best and most intelligent; both sexes attend, young and old. Professors and teachers are glad to lend a day and a five-minute discourse; clergymen open their churches, selectmen their halls, well pleased to do it many times. Railroad companies grant extra trains cheerfully; for they say the cars never come back dirty. And thus science and history have been, for thirty years, with small interruption, carried here and there, in popular style, to every village and town, giving the old and feeble, the school-children and the farm-hands, opportunities to hear and learn the principles and truths of science, in manner and degree as was never done before, or elsewhere.

This must answer for an outline of the history and character of the Essex Institute. A more peculiar institution it would be hard to find; to discover one more free from faults and better calculated for popular usefulness, might be impossible. Bright names are recorded on its calendar: Daniel A. White, Asahel Huntington, Francis Peabody, and Henry Wheatland as presidents; and, in other capacities, John G. King, John Lewis Russell, John Fisk Allen, John C. Lee, Alpheus Crosby, John M. Ives, Benjamin F. Mudge, Allen W. Dodge, Jacob Batchelder, Robert Manning. The world knows these names. And these, and other such, have thus labored together for almost half a century to bring sound instruction to the people, and have had the satisfaction of seeing the people awaken responsively, and give pleasing heed to what they chose to say. And such is the Essex Institute, and such its usefulness and its honors.

In the *Peabody Academy of Science*, located at Salem, Essex County has a substantial remembrance of the wise liberality of the late George Peabody, the famed London banker and philanthropist. Under date of February 26, 1867, Mr. Peabody addressed to Francis Peabody, Esq., of Salem, Prof. Asa Gray, of Cambridge, the Hon. William C. Endicott and George Peabody Russell, Esq., of Salem, Prof. Othniel C. Marsh, of New Haven, Conn., Dr. Henry Wheatland and Abner C. Goodell, Jr., Esq., of Salem, Dr. James R. Nichols, of Haverhill, and Dr. Henry C. Perkins, of Newburyport, a letter, inclosing an instrument of trust, naming them as trustees of a fund of $140,000, "for the promotion of science and useful knowledge in the county of Essex." After naming the trustees and the amount given, the letter read as follows: "Of this, my native county, I have always been justly proud, in common with all her sons, remembering her ancient reputation, her many illustrious statesmen, jurists, and men of science, her distinguished record from the earliest days of our country's history, and the distinction so long retained by her as eminent in the education and morality of her citizens. I am desirous of assisting to perpetuate her good name through future generations, and of aiding, through her means, in the diffusion of science and knowledge; and after consultation with some of her most eminent and worthy citizens, and encouraged by the success which has already attended the efforts and researches of the distinguished scientific association of which your chairman is president,* and with which most of you are connected, I am led to hope that this gift may be instrumental in attaining the desired end. I therefore transmit to you the enclosed instrument, and a check for the amount therein named, one hundred and forty thousand dollars, with the hope that this trust, as administered by you and your successors, may tend to advancement in intelligence and virtue, not only in our good old county of Essex, but in our Commonwealth and in our

* Essex Institute.

common country." According to the instrument of trust, $40,000 was applied to the purchase of the East India Marine Hall in Salem, containing the extensive and valuable museum of that society, and of land under and adjoining that building. The $100,000 forms a permanent fund. Arrangements were soon made for the transfer of the collections of the East India Marine Society, and the natural history collection of the Essex Institute, to the charge of the trustees of the Peabody Academy of Science; and these two valuable museums were combined in one, and re-arranged in the hall of the East India Marine Society, which had been refitted for the purpose. An Act of incorporation was granted to the Peabody Academy by the State Legislature, April 13, 1868. Prof. F. W. Putnam was elected director of the museum; and associated with him in the great work of re-arranging and properly classifying the collections, Dr. A. S. Packard, Jr., Prof. Alpheus Hyatt, Prof. Edward S. Morse, and Mr. Caleb Cooke, all curators in the natural history department of the Essex Institute.

From the organization of the academy, its work has been steadily progressive. From 1868 to 1876, the "American Naturalist," a monthly magazine, devoted to science and natural history, was published under the auspices of the Peabody Academy. It has since been transferred to a Philadelphia publishing house. The museum has been open free to the public six days in each week, thousands visiting it each year. No better general collection exists in the county; and in some departments, it is unrivalled. During the last two seasons, a "Summer School of Biology," under the direction of Dr. A. S. Packard, Jr., and assisted by a corps of scientific gentlemen, including Mr. James H. Emerton, Mr. John Robinson, the Rev. E. C. Bolles, and Mr. Caleb Cooke, has furnished to students in natural history valuable facilities for the conduct of their studies.

Essex County Teachers' Association. — In latter years, the profession of the public teacher has come to be a thing much more pronounced and distinct than formerly; and out of this has gradually arisen the desire for self-improvement and self-protection among such, as a class. Such feelings induced a meeting of about three hundred teachers and friends of education, at Topsfield (where every liberal and intelligent effort of similar kind in the county is almost sure to have begun), June 23, 1830; which meeting discussed the subject, and raised a committee to further consider and report at a future assembly.

The meeting re-assembled at the same place, December 3, 1830, and made a complete organization, besides listening to several interesting lectures. Since then, semi-annual meetings have been regularly held, from place to place, though for the first eight years the society did not remove from Topsfield. Persons of high esteem in the county gave sympathy and assistance to this effort, as well as some of the most prominent and celebrated of the instructors. Of the former, may be mentioned the Rev. Gardner B. Perry, of Groveland, David Choate, Esq., of Essex, and Dr. Nehemiah Cleveland, of Newbury; among the latter, Benjamin Greenleaf and Oliver Carlton, and, in a later day, Alpheus Crosby and Timothy G. Senter.

The primary object of these associations (for they have been copied into all the counties) is understood to be the improvement of the art of teaching by the consideration of all new helps applicable thereto, and the mental improvement of the members themselves, as the greatest of all contributions to this same end. This association, like most of the others, enjoys the patronage of the State, granted under the statute of 1848; which provides that any county teachers' association, formed for the improvement of common schools, which shall hold semi-annual meetings of at least two days each, may receive fifty dollars per year from the State. For the importance of such associations, and their good effect on the general welfare, seem admitted by all the community; and among them all, it seems that the association of Essex holds an honored place.

Several religions associations exist in the county, devoted to the interests of different denominations. That connected with the Orthodox Congregational faith is operated in two memberships, called the *Essex North* and *Essex South societies*. We have not space to elaborate their special histories, which would, after all, rather interest the denominational than the general reader. We are, however, permitted to say that the Rev. S. J. Spaulding, of Newburyport, and the Rev. E. S. Atwood, of Salem, are respectively possessed of full information touching these organizations, and may properly be addressed in regard to them.

The *Essex County Unitarian Conference* fulfils a similar service for the churches of that denomination through the county. It is of considerably later origin than the preceding.

The Essex Congregational Club, embracing in its membership prominent ministers and laymen, in the Trinitarian Congregational churches of Essex County, had its origin in the meeting of the "American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions," which was held in Salem in 1871. The arrangements for that meeting were in the hands of a committee from various towns and cities in the county. After the session of the "Board," the committee assembled for a social evening; and at that meeting a committee was chosen to take measures for the formation of an Essex County Congregational Club, in order, in the words of the resolution, "to perpetuate the pleasant intimacies formed, and to promote better acquaintance among the churches of the vicinity." For various reasons no further steps were taken until Nov. 12, 1872, when a meeting of representative Congregationalists was held in the South Chapel, Salem, all preliminaries arranged, and a constitution drafted. The first regular meeting was held in the Grand Army Hall, in Central Street, Salem, Jan. 6, 1873. The constitution adopted, was, with two or three slight alterations, the same as that of the "Boston Congregational Club," which was organized in 1869, and was the pioneer association of the kind in the United States. The exercises of the club are a supper, a brief social meeting, and a formal session, at which carefully prepared essays on practical topics are read, and the reading is followed by a general discussion. Although the club is organized on a denominational basis, it is widely catholic in its spirit, and from time to time the presence and utterances of men of all varieties of religious faith have been welcomed. The representatives of the local and metropolitan journals are uniformly present; and the public press has given wide currency to papers that were considered of special importance. Its growth in strength and usefulness, and its extended reputation, entitle it to be ranked as one of the institutions of Essex County, and an institution that exerts no small influence for good over the religious communions that are represented in it. It holds six meetings a year, usually on the second Monday of alternate months.

The Salem Baptist Association was formed in 1826, and was then composed of nineteen churches, made up of 2,178 members. Its first session was held at Lynn in 1828. It now includes twenty-four churches, composed of about 4,500 members. In the year ending October, 1877, the sum of $67,257 was collected.

The Salem Pastoral Union is an organization of thirty-five years' standing, and is intimately connected with the Salem Baptist Association, its members consisting of pastors of the churches composing that association.

The Essex North District Medical Society was organized Nov. 3d, 1841. At a preliminary meeting held September first, at the Merrimac Academy, Bradford, Dr. Dean Robinson, of West Newbury, presiding, it was resolved that application be made to the counsellors of the Massachusetts Medical Society, to form the fellows of that society residing in the following towns, viz., Andover, Amesbury, Bradford, Boxford, Georgetown, Haverhill, Lawrence, Methuen, Newburyport, Newbury, West Newbury, Rowley, and Salisbury, into an association, to be entitled the Essex North District Medical Society. The request having been granted, the society was organized at a subsequent meeting, as above stated. Dr. Jonathan G. Johnson, of Newburyport, was chosen its first president; Dr. Rufus Longley, of Haverhill, vice-president; Dr. F. V. Noyes, of Newburyport, secre-

tary; Dr. Isaac Boyd, of West Newbury, treasurer; and Dr. J. Spofford, Groveland, librarian.

Among the earlier presidents of the society, after Dr. Johnson, were Drs. Longley, George Cogswell, Bradford; H. C. Perkins and Enoch Cross, Newburyport; and J. Spofford, Groveland. Dr. Isaac Braman, Georgetown, succeeded Dr. Noyes as secretary, serving until July 11, 1843, when he removed from the district. Dr. Martin Root, Byfield, was chosen his successor, and continued to hold the office by annual re-election, until his declination, May, 1874. His service extended over a period of thirty-one years.

Eight counsellors are annually chosen, who, in connection with those appointed by the other district societies in the State, constitute the board of counsellors which conducts the affairs of the Massachusetts Medical Society.

Five censors are also elected annually, whose duty it is to examine all applicants for admission, as to credentials, character, and professional qualifications. This examination must be satisfactory to at least three of the censors.

Stated meetings are held quarterly. The annual meeting at Haverhill on the first Wednesday in May, and other meetings in August, November, and February, at such places as may be determined. The society numbers, at present, about sixty members.

The officers for the current year, are president, Dr. W. H. Kimball, Andover; vice-president, Dr. J. Crowell, Haverhill; secretary and treasurer, Dr. G. W. Snow, Newburyport; librarian, Dr. S. Drinkwater, Haverhill.

Essex South District Medical Society. — Of the seventeen district societies that form the venerable Massachusetts Medical Society, this is one of the oldest. It was organized on the 4th of November, 1805, by ten physicians who met in the Sun Tavern, Salem. Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, of Salem, who died in 1829, in his hundred and first year, was elected president, and Dr. John D. Treadwell, of Salem, secretary.

This society was formed for the benefit of medical men living in Beverly, Danvers, Gloucester, Hamilton, Ipswich, Lynn, Lynnfield, Manchester, Marblehead, Salem, Topsfield, and Wenham. The later incorporated towns of Essex, Middleton, Peabody, Rockport, and Swampscott have been added to the above list. Originally, meetings were held quarterly, for many years, in the Sun Tavern, and afterwards in the room hired for the library; but recently they have been called every six weeks, at Plummer Hall, Salem, and City Hall, Lynn, alternately.

At these meetings papers are read, clinical cases of interest are reported, and questions of medical science and ethics are discussed. At present, there are seventy-one members, not all of whom are in the active practice of their profession.

At the first meeting of the society, it was voted to establish a library, and the collecting of books was immediately begun. By liberal donations of money and books from past and living members, there is now in the society's room at Plummer Hall, the largest medical library in the State, outside of Boston, — with one exception.

It embraces over two thousand four hundred bound volumes, and seven hundred magazines and monographs. Several of these works are of great value, it being no longer possible to procure them. None but fellows of this district society are entitled to the privileges of the library.

Officers for 1878: — Dr. Amos H. Johnson, of Salem, *President;* Dr. Reuben F. Dearborn, of Lynn, *Secretary.*

The Essex County Homœopathic Medical Society was organized in June, 1872, and has since been in successful continuance. It is formed of physicians in regular standing, of the homœopathic school, and now has a membership of fifty-one. Its meetings are held monthly, the members being guests of some one of the society. Discussions are held on topics of interest to the profession, an effort being made to keep the newest and most important developments and discoveries before these sessions. This society has attracted considerable notice outside its own borders, and is quite as flourishing as any similar organization in the Commonwealth.

The Merrimac Valley Dental Association is not an Essex County organization, though its roll of membership includes the names of several surgeon-dentists of Newburyport, Haverhill, Lawrence, and other places on the borders of the Merrimac River. Its members are mostly New Hampshire dentists. Occasionally, sessions of this association, and also of the Massachusetts Dental Society, are held in this county. In the latter, Essex County practitioners have always taken a prominent part, and have held high offices.

The Veteran Odd Fellows' Association of Essex County was organized April 10, 1876, and is composed of members of the order, who have been such for twenty-five years or over. Its objects are the promotion of the principles of Odd Fellowship, and the perpetuation of fraternal regard and respect. Its membership is about seventy. At the date of organization Thomas Barr, initiated in March, 1828, was the oldest member.

Essex County Courts. — From a very early period indeed there was a court held in Essex County, mostly or wholly at Salem, called the Court of Quarter Sessions. It was an institution of great importance, including within itself many functions besides the trials of cases, and such as are now distributed to other offices. Much later there was erected on the foundation of this the court that gained more, perhaps, of the affection of the people than any other before or since, the Essex Court of Common Pleas. It met at Salem, afterwards at Ipswich also, finally at Newburyport and Lawrence as well. At its bar were seen engaged the best legal talent that ever pleaded in New England; while its bench was competent to revise the opinions of many more pretentious tribunals. It was at length set aside, like its fellow courts, by the new statute that substituted the Superior Court in its place. Sessions of this court are held at Newburyport, Salem, and Lawrence.

The Probate Court of the county is also an ancient and well-worthy institution, through whose records there lies spread along much of the best history of the region. Its records were formerly kept entirely at Ipswich; but when the centering of all travel fell upon Salem as its focus, the Probate Court was carried thither also. The learned and venerable Daniel A. White presided over it for years, and did a great deal to make it an institution holden very near the popular heart. This character is well maintained by his successor, Judge George F. Choate. This court has circuit sessions at Lawrence, Haverhill, Newburyport, and Gloucester.

The Essex County Bar has numbered among its members some of the foremost jurists and lawyers of the country. The names of Story and Choate, and of many other distinguished men in the profession, have been enrolled in its lists, men whose brilliant talents and profound learning gave them a reputation far beyond the limits of the county, and made the Essex bar famous in the annals of the profession. In the histories of the cities and towns which follow these opening chapters, will be found a notice of some of the most prominent among its members.

Botany. — A few words in regard to the Botany of Essex County will give fitting termination to this chapter.

To the botanist, Essex County offers an excellent field for study. In a comparatively small area are found the plants peculiar to the vicinity of salt water, as well as those of more inland regions, while it also seems to be the meeting ground for many northern and southern species; added to these, the waters of the bays contain a large number of seaweeds, many of which are quite rare and very beautiful.

From data furnished by the Peabody Academy of Science, the number of species of plants in the county appears as follows: Flowering plants, including the Sedges and Grasses, 1,200; Ferns and Lycopods, 50; Mosses and Liverworts, 230; Lichens, 200; Algæ (the seaweeds only), 150. Total, 1,830. If the 1,100 Fungi, which may probably

be found, are added, this list will be increased to 2,930 species. Of the 1,830 species of plants usually collected, the academy has 1,300 already in the herbarium, and it is intended to publish, before long, a full list of county plants, with many valuable notes upon the introduced species and rarer forms. Along the cold northern and eastern shores of Cape Ann may be found the Pearlwort (*Sagina nodosa*), the White Mountain Potentilla (*P. tridentata*), so abundant near the summit of Mount Washington and the higher peaks of New England, besides other northern plants. In the belt of land extending from the Essex and Manchester woods to Georgetown and Andover, are many localities very similar to the region at the base of the White Mountains, near the Glen House, or Crawford Notch.

On the southern side of Cape Ann is the famous locality of the Magnolia Glauca, which is not found elsewhere north of New York City. Among the lower forms of plants, the Red-snow (*Protococcus nivalis*), so frequently mentioned by Arctic travellers, has been detected at Nahant.

The early settlement and rapid growth of the county have led to the introduction of many plants, which have become so thoroughly established that they appear to the eye of the casual observer as native species. The Woad-waxen (*Genista tinctoria*), at first thought a valuable plant for the dyer, has now sole possession of hundreds of acres of land in the region of Danvers, Lynn, and Salem. The White-weed (*Leucanthemum vulgare*) has become in its adopted soil vastly more prolific than in its native European habitat; and the Barberry (*B. vulgaris*), is so very much at home along the roadsides and in rocky pastures, that few persons realize it to be a plant introduced from Europe. These serve as illustrations only of the two hundred, or perhaps more, adventitious plants, which have made their appearance since the first settlement. Whence they came, and for what purposes many of them were intentionally introduced, would furnish material for some years study and research, the publication of which would form a volume of no little interest.

In 1629, Higginson, noticing certain plants in the vicinity of Salem, mentions the Flowering Raspberry and Cherril. The localities referred to were carefully investigated some fifty years since by Dr. Charles Pickering, and the plants still found to exist, and in 1877 the Raspberry still flourished in the same place. Thus we are enabled to identify the locality of a certain species for about 250 years, quite as long a period as such plants are traced back in Europe.

In 1795, the Rev. Manasseh Cutler, of Hamilton, published in the Proceedings of the American Academy some account of the plants of New England, which may be considered as the first Essex County botanical work.

About the year 1823, Charles Pickering and William Oakes, then young and enthusiastic botanists, were searching the county for rare plants. The memoranda then made by the former serve to perpetuate the flora of localities in many cases now covered by buildings, or under cultivation, while the beautifully prepared specimens collected by the latter formed the nucleus of the present Essex County Herbarium.

Mr. William Oakes was born in Danvers, 1799, afterwards living in Ipswich. He died in 1848, and deserves to be remembered as Essex County's most eminent botanist.

Dr. Charles Pickering was born in Pennsylvania in 1805, and died in Boston, March, 1878. Being educated at Harvard, he passed much time at the residence of his grandfather, Col. Timothy Pickering, in Wenham. He was naturalist of the Wilkes' U. S. Exploring Expedition, and has written many works of great value, prominent among which are "The Races of Man," and "The Distribution of Animals and Plants." Although not a native of the county, yet much of his early work was accomplished here, and attachments formed which lasted throughout his life, and it is but fair to claim a share of the honor due this distinguished botanist.

The only attempt at an enumeration of the county plants was made by Mr. Cyrus M. Tracy, of Lynn, in his "Essex Flora." The small number of species there given (546) is accounted for, as no attempt was made to include the lower orders of plants, or to perfect the list much beyond the towns in the neighborhood of Lynn.

So closely do the paths of the botanist and horticulturist follow each other, it is not surprising that a region so well known to botanists should be famous for its horticultural products.

It is impossible to estimate the effect of the introduction of even the "Endicott Pear-Tree," yet it must have called attention to horticulture almost as soon as the county was settled; and judging by the accounts of early writers, the native fruits of the land were among the first things to which attention was given.

Particularly in the older towns, the gardens have been noted for their flowers and fruit, and although now no longer able to compete with the gardens around Boston, where new land has been placed under cultivation, and where the large establishments of the professional gardeners centre, as being nearer to a market, yet it can be pointed out with pride, that in the pomological garden of the late Robert Manning, were once growing two thousand varieties of fruit-trees, and that an Essex County man — the late J. Fiske Allen — cultivated successfully the great Water-Lily of the Oronoco (*Victoria regia*), producing the first specimens seen in New England.

Even if the county can no longer claim pre-eminence in horticulture, the many local exhibitions, now so common in almost every town, prove that there is no falling off in the quality of the fruits displayed, and is suggestive of a healthy change, as indicated by the fact that a large number of cultivators are each raising small quantities of fruit and flowers, instead of large amounts being produced by a few persons.

AMESBURY.

This town is one of those resulting from the limitations of the patent granted by Plymouth Council to Rosewell, March 19, 1628, which originated the Province of Massachusetts Bay. The northern line of that patent was located three miles north of Merrimac River, and this has always been, constructively, adhered to, though the general trend of the river, ascending from the beaches, is nearer south west than otherwise, and the effort to follow the stream with some fidelity has broken the line into innumerable zigzags. In anywise, the line could thus be carried only as far west as Tyngsborough, where the change of the river to an almost meridian course put an end to that arrangement. The strip of Massachusetts territory thus indicated, was later divided between the counties of Essex and Middlesex, and the portion assigned to the former has been distributed into five towns, of which the second from the coast forms the present subject.

The original boundaries of Amesbury are very simple indeed. Easterly the line is that of Powow River, which, crossing the whole width from New Hampshire, separates it from Salisbury; northerly it follows the old patent line, now the boundary of the State, till it reaches the summit of Brandy-brow Hill; thence, by a straight line, running south-easterly, and dividing it from Haverhill, to a point established on the Merrimac River; thence, by that river, to the mouth of Powow River at Salisbury Point. This gives a territory differing little from fifteen square miles in area, with an extreme length east and west, from Brandy-brow Hill to Salisbury Point, of about six and a half miles. From this extent the new town of Merrimac takes very nearly one-half, leaving the old name hereafter to be borne by only the eastern section.

The formation of this territory, geologically speaking (at least, of the eastern part, with which this sketch is more especially concerned), is similar to that usually met with in the neighborhood of large rivers. An underlying basis of rock, indeed, exists, of that group in the mica-slate known as the Merrimac schists, but it quite seldom reaches the surface. Its form is often highly contorted, with fine, separable laminæ, strongly suggesting some of the chloritic series. But from the eastern boundary to the middle of the township, embracing the large area known, formerly at least, as the "Pond Plain," outcrops of any kind are rare; and the ground, though largely diversified with strong elevations, is yet almost wholly diluvial, ranging from firm, bedded clays to coarse gravel, nearly always re-arranged, and hills of finer sand, abundantly marked with traces of alluvial action. The evidences of a lower continental level at some ancient age are here everywhere around, as in most such districts in New England, pointing in this case to the movements of a broad estuary, reaching far inland, of which the Merrimac of to-day is probably only the diminished representative. This heavy overlay of gravel makes it impossible to investigate the sub-formation to any extent, or to say much as to the minerals that may accompany it; but it seems that few species, indeed, have ever been detected in the town.

The water-system of the township is distinguishable into three divisions. First, the Merrimac River. This noble stream makes the entire southerly boundary, along which it flows for about five miles for the old town, or two and three-fourths for the present one. Its width slightly varies, of course, yet is, on the whole, pretty uniform at about one-fourth of a mile. It is freely navigable to this point for light-draught vessels, schooners and the like, and steamboats ply regularly from its mouth to stations considerably higher. Acceptable wharfage is had at the several villages along the shore, and the commerce thus encouraged has always been a prominent form of industry. Secondly, the Powow River. This stream, as has been stated, enters from the north, first crossing the line of New Hampshire from the town of Southampton. After making a considerable detour by south-east and north-east, it again enters the other State, from which it re-emerges a half-mile further east, still in Southampton, and takes a tolerably straight line to the Merrimac on a mean course of say south 35° east, which it follows for about three miles, having Salisbury on its east bank, and finally enters the Merrimac at Salisbury Point, very nearly six miles from the ocean. The flow of this stream is, of course, different at successive points; but at the Mills Village, which is about midway, it may be fairly estimated at 180,000,000 gallons per day. Here, also, are found its principal falls, consisting of a series of irregular descents, by which, in a distance of some fifty rods, a change of level of about seventy feet is obtained. Much of the stream at this spot, however, is covered and concealed by bridges and otherwise, and one may pass through without suspecting it; yet it affords very important water-power to several large factories. Most of these are on the Salisbury side. In other parts of its course the river traverses a series of romantic valleys, flanked by bold and picturesque hills, which, from the loose and unstable formation of the rock, are green to the tops, and beautifully covered with foliage. Thirdly, we reckon Kimball's Pond. This sheet of water lies almost in the centre of the original township, and both the old line of parish division, and that now separating the town of Merrimac, pass across a part of its surface, leaving, however, at least three-fourths of the area in Amesbury. It gathers from quite an extensive water-shed on all sides, and on the north-west is supplied by Back River, which is large enough to afford good mill-power, and which arrives from Newton, N. H., by a south-easterly course of about two miles. Kimball's Pond must stand for the second body of water in Essex County in point of magnitude, only inferior to the Great Pond in North Andover. That has an area stated at 450 acres, while the Amesbury lake reckons 408 acres, or more than five-eighths of a square mile. Its outlet is northerly, by a long arm or channel, at the end of which it pours its waters into Powow River, which at that place approaches within a singularly short distance. The proximity of the two has suggested the opening of an artificial communication, especially since the establishing of a dam at Tuxbury's Mills, by which the flow of the upper part of the river was restrained. By the new channel a larger draught is made on the pond to equalize the supply below. This pond, like many others inland, has a considerable altitude, which is stated at ninety feet above the sea level. A variety of highways pass near it, and farms and homesteads are visible all around.

The management of the stream at the Mills Village is somewhat peculiar, there being neither pond, dam, nor canal at any of the eleven factories so closely set together. The fall of the river being so rapid, just admits of the introduction of a series of locks, that distribute the water right and left to the wheels it is to move, and the excess passes over in manner of an ordinary canal. Within a few years, indeed, there has been a large and massive dam thrown across the stream one or two miles above the village, by which the waters are detained and stored in great quantity, flowing back nearly to the State line, and covering, by estimation, more than three hundred acres. This has overflowed at least one ancient manufacturing site, familiarly known as "Joppa," and perhaps one or two of lesser importance.

In one part of the outlet of Kimball's Pond was formerly an artificial work, consisting of an arched tunnel, built with common bowlders, through which the water found its way outward. It was a very singular work, and no tradition has ever been found running back to its origin, or pretending to explain its existence. Some have ascribed it to the Indians, but this is very improbable. A better conjecture would assign a still older race as its builders.

The civil and political history of Amesbury has but little of complication about it. It is a town of the second rank as to antiquity; that is, one derived from an original settlement by the first immigrants. In 1638, Dennison, Bradstreet, and others, procured a grant from the Massachusetts Court of all the territory north of the Merrimac, from the sea to the present limit of Haverhill. On this they established their plantation, which, called "Colchester" at first, was incorporated October 7, 1640, as "Salisbury." Very soon it became evident that further colonization must be had, to properly improve the territory whose settlement had been undertaken. Finally, November 11, 1642, a meeting held in Salisbury voted that thirty families should remove to the west side of Powow River before March 1, 1645. They were to have all the common lands on that side laid out to them, and after a decided settlement were to remain barred of all further rights upon the other, or in the original town. Removals undoubtedly commenced at once; yet we find no further notice taken of the matter in a public way till January 14, 1654, when a formal agreement, comprising articles of separation and adjudication, was drawn up and executed. It was signed, on the part of the new colony, by Thomas Bradbury, Thomas Macy, and others, to the number of twenty-nine in all.

The agency of old Salisbury was not wholly set aside at once, however, for she had to take concern in the question of boundary for some time. It would hardly seem to have been difficult or troublesome; yet not before another year did they fairly get at it. December 2, 1657, George Brown and Theophilus Shatwell were deputed from Haverhill to join with Salisbury in defining the line between the two; and however well their work was done, it seems not to have reduced the matter to entire quiet, for almost ten years later, May 15, 1667, the General Court heard and determined the case, and gave it final settlement.

"Salisbury New Town" was not yet, however, a town by itself, or anything more than a colony. Yet they managed their internal affairs as if their constitution were perfect, and we find that they chose their first selectmen January 15, 1666, being Thomas Barnard, Lieut. Challis, John Weed, Robert Jones, and John Hoyt. This anticipation was not excessive, nor, probably, imprudent; for May 23, 1666, the General Court advanced them to an incorporation, so far at least as granting them "the liberty of a township," which might be supposed to have seated their freemen in the Court with others, but does not seem to have done so. Next, we pass two years, when, April 29, 1668, another grant was made, by which they received the name of Amesbury. It has been said that this name was adopted from a town near the English one of Salisbury. This is probable enough, not only because the practice certainly prevailed of naming towns in this manner, but yet more, because the name of Ames is not prominent among the early families here, and, indeed, can hardly be found at all, so that the title can hardly have been derived from any such. A curious circumstance in this connection is, that for many years the name was in an uncertain form, and may be found on the record as Amesbury, Amisbury, Almisbury, and especially, Almsbury, which prevails over all others for a considerable period.

Representatives had been sent to the General Court ever since 1634; but there seems to have been none chosen by Amesbury till June 3, 1689. Then Samuel Colby was chosen, being the first on the record. It is not impossible that up to this time they had acted on the plan occasionally adopted elsewhere, and "voted not to send," but such votes, even, are certainly unrecorded. This is not strange, for the records are not by any means complete, and many things are constantly omitted that cannot be supposed to have been undone. Thus, it is not till March 12, 1704–5, that a record appears that "Thomas Currier was chosen Town Clerk," notwithstanding the existence of records for years before; yet the election of Joseph Pregett as clerk of the market on the nineteenth of the same month, may point to a newly-created office.

Very little more appears to have been done of a public nature till some time in 1725, when the feeling, so common in the other settlements, fully appeared in this, that this township was too large for all the inhabitants to attend either one church or one school. The division into districts was of course inevitable; and as two appeared to answer all need, a line was run from the Merrimac River to the south side of Kimball's Pond, and thence obliquely to the State line, thus making a western and an eastern district. It will be noticed that this line is almost or exactly identical with that by which the new town of Merrimac was at length set off.

The town was thus in a condition of general prosperity. Many internal improvements had been successfully undertaken, an almshouse had been in operation since May 18, 1763, and the town was spending not far from £150 per annum for public purposes. Then the dark cloud of the Revolution spread over and shut down on the whole country; and these quiet farmers of Amesbury found themselves involved in one common trouble with their brethren, north, south, and west. The first action of the town was July 21, 1774, when they voted £2 8*s.* 7*d.* to be paid to the Committee of Correspondence. We have no doubt that the patriotic feeling rose as high and sincerely here as in other towns, but the farmers were more men of deeds than words, and took but little time for writing on the record books beyond what was necessary, whence the literature of the period is indeed pretty scanty. Nothing more is heard till January 24, 1775, when Isaac Merrill, Esq., was chosen a representative to a Continental Congress to be held at Cambridge.

There are some reasons, in fact, for suspecting that the Tories were here as well as in towns further north. Very soon came the call for minute-men, and the town met, March 13, 1775, to consider it. But those whose way it is to "vote early" at least, appear to have rallied, and on the first presentation of the question, met it with the squarest of negatives, refusing to raise any minute-men at all. Unquestionably, if we could go back to those old days of stormy partisan feeling, we might hear again the angry discussion that prevailed everywhere through the following week; but it had its result, for another meeting was called, March 20, 1775, when the vote of the week before was triumphantly reconsidered, and the town voted to raise fifty men. Nor were they satisfied with being in the field only, but bravely kept their place in the forum also. When the Provincial Congress was called at Watertown, Capt. Caleb Pillsbury was sent, May 25, 1775, to take his place as a representative among them. And the patriotic current did not stop here, either; but as the men of Newburyport had undertaken to put obstructions in the mouth of the Merrimac, the Amesbury farmers were prompt to respond to their call for assistance, and voted them £20 in logs and timber, to help to stop the way against the possible incursions of British cruisers. The same spirit held the reins through the year apparently; for Aug. 15, 1775, the town voted to buy sixty-nine coats, and other proper equipments, to furnish the soldiers. But in the next spring the Royalists may have gained a little ascendancy; since April 30, 1776, when the Newburyport people undertook to fortify Plum Island, they again applied to the upper towns for assistance; but Amesbury distinctly refused to lend any hand to the enterprise. But this is about the last time we find any manifestation of unpatriotic feeling, save in the votes subsequently had, where the strong minorities still reveal the existence of much Tory sentiment. But when, July 1, 1776, instructions were voted to their representatives in the Continental Congress, they assured them "that the town would" abide by and defend the members of the Continental Con-

gress with their lives and fortunes, if they think it expedient to declare the Colonies independent of Great Britain."

The next year the town followed up these brave words with steady and appropriate action. Their quota was fixed at fifteen battalions, and they voted to fill it up promptly. Doubtless, it was done, for after this, which was May 19, 1777, we notice many and frequent votes for procuring men and paying bounties, such as indicate an active state of feeling existing in the little, quiet community. By the next year the success of the Colonies became somewhat well assured, and early in the spring a convention was ordered for the forming of a State Constitution. To this body the town elected Caleb Pillsbury, Esq., Feb. 3, 1778, and gave him some instructions as to their views in the premises. A somewhat similar vote appears next year, May 17, 1779, as if some interruption or delay might have occurred in the matter; and again still, the next year, when a vote was taken, partly divisionary, upon the Bill of Rights and the form of government, May 29, 1780. Here, again, we catch a glimpse of the minority sentiment that must have watched and waited in the town, for though the rest of the Bill of Rights had eight votes for, to two against it, the third article called out thirteen yeas, to which fourteen nays responded. The form of government did not fare much better, being barely accepted by twenty-one yeas to nineteen nays, and they distinctly voted besides to send no more delegates to the convention. About this time (Dec. 14, 1778), the town was raising £3,000 for current annual expenses. The first State election took place, Sept. 4, 1780; but the vote was very slender. By the preceding figures there seem to have been about forty voters in town; but Hancock only could call out fifteen, to five for Bowdoin and one for Cushing. But in some things they took a far deeper interest; for the temper of the Amesbury farmers appears to have been quick and sharp enough when the practical matters of life came within range. When they gave instructions to their representative, Jan. 17, 1782, they bade him, *positively*, to use all influence to have the right of the United States to the fisheries made an indispensable article of the treaty with England. Beyond doubt, they thought that question might be settled in a much shorter period than the whole of the matters comprehended under the negotiations, and would have been disgusted if assured that it would be one of the very last things to become quiet, not ceasing to trouble the people for more than a hundred years. And it surely did not cease to trouble the men of Amesbury, even for a time; for, in 1796, they sent a memorial to Congress, praying for the strict performance of all the treaty provisions in regard to this absorbing subject.

We do not find them flagging long in their attention to national matters; for in 1798, pleased with the attitude of President Adams in reference to French affairs, they charged their selectmen to forward to him an address of approbation, expressive of their gratification with his course in that behalf. Ten years after, they were not in so comfortable a frame, for Jefferson's embargo was cramping all New England, and the coasters and fishermen of the Merrimac desired to see the end of all such unnatural restraint. In 1808, they held a meeting and voted to petition the president to suspend at least the operation of the Embargo Act, on account of its great unpopularity with the people of the neighboring region.

But the national cauldron, instead of cooling, grew rather to boil. The war of 1812 was the culmination of an evil influence that had been a long time arising and increasing. The declaration of war did not please the rather strongly Federal feelings of the Amesbury people; and though they entered actively into the preparations for the conflict, it was hardly with much of heartiness. They drilled constantly, and there was much excitement; many soldiers enlisted, and there was a good deal of drafting, which last fact did nothing to quiet popular feeling. But the end of the war came at last, and this did very much more. We find no sign of anything disturbing the general peace and prosperity for many years. In 1817, President Monroe passed through the town, and expressed a pleasant interest in its industries; but it did not create a very enthusiastic admiration for him, since we find, when he stood again as a candidate in 1820, the Amesbury people cared so little for his election as to cast sixteen votes. They felt their spirit kindle far more when the friend of America, Lafayette, arrived in their vicinity. For though he came no nearer than Newburyport, yet they would not lose the joyful opportunity, but flocked thither by hundreds to greet the patriot of two worlds.

The clouds of war had now all rolled away, and the people, even of New England, first began to feel that they no longer were dependent on, or had connection with, any foreign power. Their attention, therefore, turned still more to interior matters; and here we find, in 1826, a proposition coming before the town for them to join in the formation of a new county within the old one of Essex. No doubt this was an early outflow of the same feeling, since observed so often, putting uneasiness, and perhaps distrust, between the northern and southern towns; but be this as it may, the Amesbury people took little interest in the scheme, and gave it no sympathy at the meeting.

The next occasion of public anxiety in this town was of a very different character; yet the alarm was, perhaps, even greater than had ever been caused by the British. The mortal fear of Asiatic cholera, in 1832, reached, and deeply affected even this little inland town. We do not hear of a single case occurring, — indeed, it could hardly be possible; but the foe was new, and not well understood, and, therefore, feared all the more unreasonably. Town meetings were held. Health officers were chosen and charged to take all possible precaution, and the health committee were impowered to establish a hospital if needed. The general faith pointed to thorough cleanliness as the best of all protections, and a complete purification of houses and premises, both public and private, was the result of such a conviction. Preventive measures like these could not be criticised; yet in the light of present understanding on the subject, it becomes doubtful whether there was any real danger at all to a community situated as was that of this town.

The town, next year, 1833, are seen betraying their feelings, on religious questions, by a single vote; for the constitutional amendment abolishing compulsory support of preaching being on the question of acceptance, they voted for it, 135 to 2. Evidently, there was no disposition here to encourage ecclesiastical rulership. The population was now increasing rapidly, owing to fresh efforts in manufactures.

In 1837 came the curious problem to Amesbury, as to all other towns, — what to do with their share of the surplus revenue. Parties naturally arose on it, and the contest lasted all the year, with great bitterness on both sides. Meeting after meeting was held, but the year ran out with no solution of the difficulty, and it was not till 1838 that they finally decided "to deposit the money with the inhabitants."

Then came the memorable season of 1840, with the excitement of the presidential canvass overriding business, religion, education, everything almost, in the wild tumult over "log-cabins," and "hard cider." The largest vote ever cast in the town was brought out. The anti-slavery feeling had begun to spread, and here its advocates succeeded in bringing to the polls eleven votes.

A large share of public attention, in a town of this sort, must always be absorbed by the roads and highways. A new road had been laid out in 1831, and came to be known as the "Middle Road." Now, ten years after, in 1841, large improvements were made in the road to Haverhill, and a new section was opened by which one of the "Pond Hills" was avoided, to the increased comfort of travellers. The next year, 1842, the Poor Farm was condemned as unfit for public service, and accordingly sold. This had been the refuge of the poor since 1825, when the primitive plan of boarding out the paupers was first abandoned. At that time, this farm was bought and put in condition for their reception, but had declined ever since. Indeed, the people

seem to have risen to the perception of several important public wants; among others, that of a town house, which they finally built at "Pond Hills" in 1843. The situation was, indeed, central, according to territory, but it fell in a very thinly-settled and unattractive region. This year was also signalized by the annexation to Amesbury of a small portion of the older town, called "Little Salisbury," and also by the rebuilding of the bridge at the ferry, over the Powow River. The new structure was made of stone, and was very substantial.

The strong local feeling that is so common in country places, appears to have been active here from almost the first, causing jealousies and oppositions between the East and West Parishes. In 1847 it rose so high as to produce a definite effort to divide the town; but the day for such a project had not arrived, and a large majority defeated the undertaking. Next year, in 1848, we find the meeting engaged in regulating police, restraining dogs, and memorializing Congress against the freeing of United States stocks from taxes. Then affairs go on quietly again for a couple of years; and, by 1850, they are ready to buy another and better farm for the poor, at what is called the "Lion's Mouth," and to spend $2,000 for four fire-engines, one of which finds a location in each of the villages.

The conservative character of the town was shown soon after this, in 1851, by the strong vote they gave against calling the constitutional convention of that year. But this rather seems in contrast with their course in 1852, when, during a great strike of the operatives in the Salisbury and Amesbury mills, they not only voted the strikers the public sympathy, but actually appropriated the sum of $2,000 to relieve and sustain them. Again, on the presentation of the new Constitution to the towns for acceptance, in 1855, they gave it 25 yeas to 5 nays, although they had discouraged it so much beforehand.

The "Know Nothing" wave of popular excitement, went over the town like a sweeping flood. The campaign of 1856 was as bitter and hot as any ever known there, and the presidential electors received the largest vote ever cast in that town. Gov. Gardner's vote was 428, while all others had only 153.

Nothing further demands special attention, until we reach the ever-memorable year 1861, — the year of the great outbreak of rebellion, and the greater uprising of patriotic and loyal enthusiasm. Then the town met, April 27, 1861, took measures to raise volunteers, and appropriated $5,000 toward the expenses arising. Among the resolutions passed on this occasion, was the following: —

"*Resolved*, By the citizens of the town of Amesbury, in legal town-meeting assembled:

"That we pledge our united aid and assistance to our beloved Commonwealth, and to His Excellency the Governor, to the utmost extent of our ability, both with men and money, to enable him to respond promptly and efficiently to the present or any future requisition of the Government of the United States, to put down rebellion against its authority, and to enforce the laws of the land."

The whole policy and practice of the people agreed with such professions as the above. Additional pay was given, and every inducement that could be offered to recruits was freely put forth. One company had already organized, and were marched to this town-meeting in good style. They were commanded by Capt. Joseph W. Sargent. They continued drilling till July 5th, and were then mustered in and attached to the 14th Massachusetts Regiment, which did duty near Washington for a long time. Next year, 1862, the effort to raise men continued, and not the less for the difficulties and checks that were encountered here, as almost everywhere. The amount of bounty offered was finally run up to $300 for three years men, and $150 for nine months men. This seemed to meet the purpose well; but by 1863 came another call, and the bounties had to be advanced before the men could be persuaded to enlist. The quota was at length filled. Another year came, and it was still harder, in 1864, to raise men than ever before. A draft was ordered, with the inevitable result. The whole town was alarmed; and, at a meeting held in May of that year, they made a new appropriation of $10,000, to help in securing the number of men wanted: this seemed to prove sufficient.

One more year, and in 1865, the soldiers "came marching home," while every one cried out for joy. Lee had surrendered, and no one regretted the exertion that had brought about so happy a result. On reviewing the war history of the town, it was found to stand somewhat thus: —

Whole number in service, including men drafted who paid fee or found substitute,		406
Whole number drafted,	27	
Paid fee, $300,	11	
Found substitute,	16	
	— 27	

Of the town's entire force, 20 died of sickness, 7 were killed, 13 were wounded, and 6 were more or less time in prison at Andersonville. One man was in twenty battles, besides being a considerable space in the prisons of the rebels. The town furnished one colonel, one major, four captains, seven lieutenants, and one sergeant-major. It is scarcely possible that a perfect reckoning can ever be obtained, as many foreigners were enlisted as substitutes and otherwise, who never rendered any account of themselves. But the town had done its best to sustain the nation in its struggle for liberty, and also to encourage and assist those who were willing to peril their lives in sharing the great effort.

The great and terrible strain of the war being over, the town fell back to its accustomed quiet industry and prosperity. A few streets were laid out; the bridges on the Merrimac were, in 1868, made free and supportable by the towns; and, in 1869, a railroad was projected, from the Mills Village to West Amesbury; but the charter having a proviso that the town might take stock therein, and the town decidedly refusing, the enterprise was abandoned. The roads, in fact, were always a subject of great care on the part of the town; in 1872 they tried the experiment of a board of commissioners to manage them, but their labors were not satisfactory, and after a year they were set aside.

Next year, the claims of the Amesbury Railroad were again urged upon the town, and this time with rather more success, for the friends of the road did procure a vote of assistance to the amount of $50,000. But this was not all that was wanted, apparently, for the road failed to be constructed. And now, almost for the first time, something like a calamity fell on the place, for, Nov. 3, 1873, being the night before election, the town house took fire, and was burnt to the ground. The election was held, however, without interruption, the ballot being at the house of the town clerk, Joseph Merrill, only a short distance away.

The year 1874 is only to be noted as by the decision of the town to erect a monument to the memory of the fallen soldiers. The work was placed in the cemetery, and an appropriation of $500 was made for its cost. And here it may be observed, that, in 1868, the East Parish Cemetery had been enlarged by the action of the county commissioners, a peculiar proceeding, of which the examples appear to be very few.

And now, on the centennial year, the town of Amesbury reached the first considerable crisis in its existence of two hundred and ten years. The people of the West Parish had long been more or less disaffected, and no doubt wished for many things which the townsmen of the East Parish were not disposed to grant. Several efforts of a radical character had been made, to some of which allusion has been had, looking to a re-arrangement of municipal affairs; among others a consolidation of Amesbury and Salisbury was authorized (Stat. chap. 154), April 2, 1870, with some attendant provisions that were hoped to be effectual. But this had no success. Now, the case was directly urged for a new town to be made of the West Parish; and, at last,

an Act setting it off was passed, and signed by the governor, April 11. 1876. The new town received the name of MERRIMAC, and, under this title, will be found described in future pages.

The separation took from the parent town not far from twenty-five hundred inhabitants, or about two-fifths of the whole, and almost the same proportion of the valuation.

But the parent town had enjoyed much prosperity. Wealth had accumulated in the place, the highways were commodious and easy, the public buildings numerous and creditable, the private dwellings patterns of comfort and domestic enjoyment. Communication with the greater lines of travel, and with the sea-board, had been greatly facilitated by the Amesbury Branch of the Eastern Railroad, giving passage from the Mills Village to Newburyport by quick trains several times per day; and also by the Newburyport and Amesbury Horse Railroad, which, crossing the Merrimac by the Chain Bridge, and passing through Salisbury Point Village, reached the west side of the Powow by the stone bridge, and ran up on that side to the Mills Village. This had been in operation since its charter, February 29, 1864, and proved a delightful form of travel between the towns. The broad bosom of the river had always been a magnificent highway to the sea, on which the men of Amesbury had claimed their full share of place and patronage. A steamer had begun to ply on its waters in 1829, and from year to year this kind of transportation had more and more increased. And though the division of their territory had reduced the capital stock of their municipality, the town was still prosperous and thriving, with every prospect of a worthy and honorable future.

A little space must now be given to a consideration of the industries and business methods of this town. Apparently, the first settlers were not mechanics to any considerable extent, but farmers, who, as a collateral occupation, engaged pretty largely in lumbering. Thus, almost at the first outset of town life, we find a contract made with Thomas Macy and Richard Currier to saw all the timber that should be brought them. The work was to be done "at the halves," and £6 per year, payable in boards, was to be given the town for the privilege. This was January 19, 1656; but the location of the saw-mills is not assignable to-day, though several eligible spots may be supposed. There are reasons for understanding the lumber business to have soon occupied more than one establishment; for the uses of sawed timber for ordinary building did not long remain the only one. A certain Capt. Harvey had leave from the town, February 10, 1709, to build vessels at "Jamaco," which was the early name of the present "River Village," and from that time forward the building of small vessels, and even some of large tonnage, was prosecuted with much energy and success. Richard Currier, perhaps the same with the owner of the saw-mill, obtained leave, March 14, 1719–20, to build vessels at the mouth of the Powow; and March 8, 1724–5, Capt. Currier (the same again?), Jacob Rowell, and Samuel Lowell had leave "to build a wharf on Powow River," no doubt somewhere near its confluence with the Merrimac.

By 1803, the Ferry District, as that about the mouth of the Powow was called, had so prospered in its ship-building as to be the most populous part of the town. This was not, indeed, the exclusive business of the people there, since many were engaged, very naturally, in the kindred callings of coasting and fishing; but it had the lead, and probably was as profitable as any. In 1810, ship-building was extremely good all along the river. The whole account is said to be 21 ships, 13 brigs, 1 schooner, and 7 smaller craft built that year on the river. Not all, indeed, were the product of Amesbury; but a considerable share were so, there being at that time six or seven ship-yards in full operation in the town. The business continued in successful condition for many years after; and in 1817, President Monroe expressed much interest in it, as he passed through the town. But the next year, March 4, 1818, occurred a great freshet on the river, which did great damage, and undoubtedly to the ship-yards among other places. There was nothing fatal in it, however; for when, in 1827, the Newburyport Bridge Company undertook to lower their bridge, the Amesbury town-meeting remonstrated, since their extensive boating and other similar business would be interfered with and damaged. But from this date we hear little or nothing of any more ship-building in the town; and, certainly, as there were no returns of any such business in the census of 1875, it may be inferred that the ancient calling has as good as disappeared.

There were other craftsmen quite as busy, however. As early as March 13, 1709–10, a proposition was made to the town by John March, John Barnard, Joseph Brown, and Jarvis Ring, that they would build and carry on certain iron-works at "Powow Falls." The record does not, indeed, declare, though it is natural enough to suppose, that they desired some public encouragement for their enterprise. At all events, they so received it, for the town not only permitted the erection of the works, but voted they should be "tax free." How long this important exemption was to last, is not indicated, and it may be that the laxity of the grant caused embarrassment thereafter, as in so many other like cases; but the works were certainly built and kept in operation for a great while. The location was within the present "Mills Village," but somewhat above the factories. Soon after 1800, a nail factory was added in connection, and there was a large grist-mill there also. Indeed, the saw-mills and grist-mills were common in many parts of the town. But in 1805 there happened a great fire at the Mills, by which the nail factory was destroyed, as also the grist-mill, and some three hundred cords of wood. The machinery was built by the celebrated Jacob Perkins, of Newburyport, and was very valuable; and the whole loss was reckoned at $80,000. After this, the iron-works appear not to be heard from, or at least, not as a concern of much activity.

At what time the manufacture of boots and shoes was first introduced into town there are no means of deciding; but the business was advanced to a great prosperity by 1836, and was an important branch of industry. The product was then spoken of as "immense," the work being carried on almost all over town; but by 1865, it was probably very much increased, and certainly stood higher than it has since; namely, at a value of $52,607. The following decade only showed, in 1875, $12,000 as the value of this industry. Yet this is not small in proportion to many other kinds of business.

The calling that has probably given more celebrity to Amesbury than any other, is that of carriage-making. It is also the oldest industry in town, save ship-building and farming. We first hear of it in 1800, when it was begun at West Amesbury in a rather moderate way. It made itself a good footing there, and has steadily advanced in importance from that day. It was first started at the Mills Village in 1855, by Mr. J. R. Huntington, "a young man of great energy." Its success was immediate, and it has much increased there, both in the number of factories, and the value of the work done. Of this we will only make a single statement, from the census of 1875, which shows the value of carriages manufactured to have been, in that year, $393,200. The Amesbury work is very celebrated, being known in every part of the country, almost, and always noted for elegance and durability.

Wool hats have, in latter years, become a manufacture of very much consequence in Amesbury, as likewise in nearly all the other Merrimac towns. The value reported in 1875 was $141,500

But, very naturally, the importance of the woollen manufactures, reckoned as cloths, is greater than that of any other, or almost all other branches together. This industry is also of high rank in town, as regards priority of establishment. It commenced at the Mills Village, in 1812, when the first factory was built there by a small company, consisting of Ezra Worthen and others. The next year, 1813, Ensign Jonathan Morrill put up a second factory there; and by 1820, the business had very largely increased. There were then two substantial companies engaged, one represented by Joshua Aubin,

and the other by James Horton; and several new mills had been erected, so that the way seemed open to great prosperity. A wholly separate mill of the same kind was built about 1863, at a place known as "Patten's Hollow," where a small stream, peculiarly situated, furnished a light water-power. It seems in some respects to have been more fortunate than its more costly fellows, as it is still running, under management of Robert Bleakie & Co., while the mills on the Powow have been entirely out of use for a long period. Of course, it will not be forgotten that a large share of the mills last mentioned are located on the Salisbury side of the stream; yet with this precaution in reckoning, we still find the value of woollen goods manufactured in 1865 to have been no less than $1,413,922; and in 1875 this had gone up to $1,432,542. We are not well prepared to describe the particular styles of goods made at the various establishments; it will be enough to say that the investment is large and liberal, and the style of construction is throughout suited to an ample and worthy description of product.

After this rather cursory view of the industrial history and character of Amesbury, we conclude our notice by a brief retrospect of religious and educational matters in the town.

The town had been ten years settled, when, Jan. 4, 1664, the first action of the people in a public way, as to religious affairs, appears in a vote, that "a Meeting House should be built by next midsummer;" and Thomas Barnard, John Hoyt, and Richard Currier, were chosen a committee to carry out the object. Then, afterward, April 3, 1665, Lieut. Challis and John Hoyt were "to treat with Capt. Pike, and obtain his help in the ministry." There soon appeared quite a material reason for such action, for when the General Court, May 23, 1666, incorporated the township, it also freed them from parish taxes in Salisbury as soon as they had a minister of their own. But this was not, at first, an easy thing to accomplish. There are some reasons for thinking that a certain Mr. Brakenbury was preaching here under some kind of arrangement, about 1667; but we hear no more from him. A more definite record appears of Mr. Hubbard, of Kittery, who was certainly called Dec. 5, 1668. The probability is at least good, that he officiated here, in one way or another, till March 12, 1678, when, with no indication beforehand, we find Mr. Thomas Wells in the same position. He is usually spoken of as the first minister, and he certainly was the first to stay any considerable time. He was also the town schoolmaster, earliest of all, even at March 13, 1681–2. But no definite action seems to have been had as to any salary for the minister for a considerable period; indeed, not until Dec. 8, 1690, when it was voted that he should have fifty pounds per annum. This was certainly not exorbitant, especially when we observe, as about 1708, that the interest in schools had remarkably increased, and probably the minister had both callings to attend to. As soon as April 12, 1714, the time had come for sectional interests to be heard making demands; and it was then that "Jamaco Village," desired a church by themselves. At first, it was ordered to be built there; but other counsels afterwards prevailed, and the new church was ordered to be upon some of the "Parsonage land, near Ed. Hunt's." This decision was not reached, however, till the 24th of the next January.

But these matters were not very quietly settled in the town for a long time. Mr. Wells had many misunderstandings with the town, and both church and school appear to have languished. July 13, 1778, the town had been presented at the Court of Sessions for having no grammar school, and Isaac Merrill, Esq., and Capt. William Bayley were sent to Salem to make the town's defence.

It hardly seems as if the town were inclined, in these days, to great liberality in matters of knowledge, either secular or spiritual. As witness the following vote, that has all the appearance of having been passed with earnestness and determination:

"7 June, 1784. Being informed that David Tuxbury, Thos. Boardman, Jos. Adams and others are about to erect a house for public worship in this town, and as the meeting houses are sufficient to accommodate all the inhabitants for public worship—Therefore, Voted; that the Selectmen remonstrate with the said David Tuxbury and others against their erecting said house for public worship, as illegal, and tending to disturb the peace and good order of the regular and legal religious society in this town, and as we apprehend, contrary to the peace of the Commonwealth."

This, we suppose, may have been a Presbyterian society, that so threatened the "peace of the Commonwealth." At any rate, in a short time, Jan. 23, 1786, the town appears remonstrating vigorously against the incorporation of a Presbyterian society, and it is reasonable to think that it may have been the same. Nor had they unbroken peace at home, for among the ministers they dealt with was the Rev. Thomas Hibbert, and with him there was a good deal of tedious and embarrassing difficulty. It may be suspected that this was really the same with "Mr. Hubbard, of Kittery," who had once preached for them; if so, there may have been unsettled accounts of some kind between them. Meanwhile, "David Tuxbury and others" died hard, for in 1796 they come again into view, petitioning the Legislature for incorporation as a religious society; but true to their instincts and decisions, "the town strongly opposed it." We hear no more of this religious contest; and it is possible that Tuxbury and his friends gave it up, or retired to some more congenial region.

By this time, the town had been in some way districted for school purposes, and there were several school-houses in different parts. In 1796, however, that at the "Ferry District" had become dilapidated, and was replaced with a new one, costing £200. Next year, 1797, the districts were all revised.

At this time, or for some time previous, the First Church had been under charge of the Rev. Ebenezer Cleveland; but in 1799 he was dismissed, and the Rev. Stephen Hull became his successor. Yet, though Mr. Hull is said to have been "settled" at the above date, he was not "ordained" till 1802, when the East Parish meeting-house had been "thoroughly repaired" in the year previous, and things probably looked more encouraging. The West Parish experienced a change of pastors about the same time; the Rev. David Smith having been dismissed by a council in 1800, and the Rev. Samuel Mead installed in his place, in June, 1804.

Education now received a stimulus of a new and gratifying kind. Certain parties in town, conceiving a desire for a higher grade of instruction than that of the common schools, formed themselves into an Academy Company, and built an edifice for school purposes in 1805. It continued to be a successful enterprise, operating well for many years, for we do not hear that the town ever opposed its movements, though they could hardly have been in very close accordance with those of the common schools.

But there was no more repose for ministers and their churches in this town than in most others. Mr. Hull had worn his attachments so threadbare at the First Church by 1812, as to be dismissed that year; but it was four years longer, or not till 1816, that a successor was found for him, and the church succeeded in installing the Rev. Benjamin Sawyer in his place. And, as was very natural, restlessness in one point led to the like in another; and, in 1819, the Rev. Moses Welch was ordained over the Second or West Parish, taking the place of the Rev. Samuel Mead, who went we know not where.

Up to 1820, no record appears of any appropriation for support of schools, or, at least, not for a long time previous. But, that year, there was a definite appropriation of $800, which, considering the probable number of schools at that time, gave but slender gains to such as undertook to instruct the coming generation. If the ministers were no better supported, it is small wonder that, by 1826, Mr. Welch's service of seven years was over at the West Parish, and they had ordained the Rev. Peter S. Eaton as his successor, on the 20th of September. And now there was another religious incoming, against which the town does not seem to have remonstrated, though it was of

a kind more foreign to the old faith than Presbyterianism could be, and a vast deal more dangerous and subversive of it. This was the then rapidly spreading Unitarian sentiment, which had gained favor enough among the people to form an independent society, and to build a church. Over this new mission the Rev. David Damon was installed as pastor, June 25, 1828. In the same year, the inhabitants of the Mills Village had become numerous and influential enough to decide that the old First Church, which stood at the place called "Sandy Hill," was out of the way and inconvenient; therefore, they formed a new society in that village, and left the old one to its fate. They did not, however, get fully at work for some six years longer; but finally, March 5, 1834, they obtained an organization from a regular council, and installed their first pastor, the Rev. J. H. Towne.

School matters had now begun to improve a little. The appropriation crept up, in 1830, to $1,000; and, in 1831, the school committee were considered to render annual service worth six dollars, which was voted to each member. 1836 saw the school appropriation carried up to $1,500, and 1837 witnessed a vigorous effort on the part of the friends of education, to get possession of the "surplus revenue," for the creation of a permanent school fund. They did not finally succeed, and, doubtless, the final result was much better than if they had; for experience shows clearly that such funds only tend to remove the interests of good education from the care and affection of the people themselves.

The town was now in a growing and expanding condition in almost all respects. Another church was called for in 1835; this time at Salisbury Point Village. That is, they proposed to locate on that side of the river, and, indeed, did so; but a large part of the congregation dwelt on the Amesbury bank, and the enterprise belonged essentially to the development of this town. They succeeded in settling a pastor at once, being the Rev. John Gunnison; but he only stayed something like two years. And now, Mr. Sawyer, who had served at the First, or Sandy Hill Church, since 1816, ended his ministry there, and left the old church, but not to a successor. He was the last one who ever officiated in the old pulpit. By a little while after this, it was time for another change in the Second Parish, and Nov. 1, 1837, the Rev. Lucius W. Clark was settled there, the Rev. P. S. Eaton having been dismissed May 10 preceding. The new minister at the Salisbury Point Church, the Rev. James B. Hadley, arrived a little earlier, and was settled in Mr. Gunnison's place, September 20, in the same year.

No further services were held in the old Sandy Hill Church after Mr. Sawyer's retirement; and, at length, in 1848, the house, that had witnessed the varied fortunes of eighty-seven years, was sold and demolished. Scarcely now will the place that knew it remember it more, after the lapse of thirty years since its disappearance. So pass away the landmarks of the ancient day and people, and the children forget where they were, and even doubt the voice of antiquity, when it seeks to call them again to recollection.

Improvement now seemed the order of the day, and that in earnest. In 1851, the old school-house in the Ferry District was taken down, and a new and better one erected. In 1854, the appropriation for schools went up to $2,500, having thus more than trebled itself in the thirty-four years since 1820. Then arose the most important school question proposed for a long time; such as had not, indeed, been heard of since the founding of the academy. For, in 1859, the problem of a high school, so troublesome at first to every municipality, was thrust, whether they would or no, before the eyes of the voters of Amesbury. Of all the debates that went to occupy the whole of that year, making the subject to be like a shuttlecock between the contending parties, we know nothing now. It is not needed that we should; for, by another year, a decision was arrived at, and, in 1860, having increased the school appropriation to $3,100, they yielded to the march of improvement, and declared the high school established.

Then the perilous days of the Rebellion came, and little could be done or thought of save to be ready at every call for the country's service. But when these had passed by, in 1866, a method was adopted in regard to schools, that arouses a suspicion that *one* high school was not quite a satisfactory thing to every one. For we find them ordering, that the four grammer schools in the several villages should be made equal to high schools, and that teachers should be employed capable of teaching all branches required in a high school of the first class. It is difficult to see how anything better could have been done for any village than this, especially if the subordinate schools were brought to the same standard. And yet it was not long satisfactory, or, rather, additional measures were very soon required. The school fund went up, in 1867, to $5,000, and, in 1869, to $6,000. Then the old districts were abolished, and a new system of accommodation entered on with great vigor. West Amesbury brought the first plea for relief, alleging that her house was poor, and her space but narrow. A special town-meeting was called to consider the case, which ended the matter by appropriating $8,000 to erect a high-school building in the petitioning neighborhood. The house was an easy thing to obtain when once the money was given, and it was built and put in occupation during the same season.

A second claimant now stood ready in the person of the "Ferry District." These urged their condition, in 1870, in a way that could not be resisted, though the fund, by that time, had mounted to the figure of $6,600. The Ferry people carried their vote for a new high-school house in their neighborhood also, though, by favor or necessity, they were fain to be satisfied with one costing only $7,000. With this sum they built an elegant structure, said to be an ornament to the village.

Time now ran on till 1873, when, with the school fund at $8,600, the case of the Mills Village was put in, showing that the increase of scholars there was very rapid, and larger accommodations must immediately be had. And, as before, the applicants were well considered by the town, and a new school-house directly rewarded their exertions, at a cost, this time, of only $5,000. We are left to suppose that the fourth district, or village, was the one first blessed with a house of this description, and had thus no special need of further application.

"And now," says the worthy annalist of the town, "since the four high schools were established in 1866, we have had most excellent schools indeed. A system of gradation has been introduced, a course of study adopted, and diplomas awarded to all who completed the course. We now have several excellent teachers in town, from among our own citizens."

Here we conclude our rather rapid notice of the pleasant country town of Amesbury. None of our facts or figures will give the impression that it is a large community, or that it pretends to be. By the census of 1875, it only reckoned 3,816 for its population, and these dispersed over a somewhat expanded territory. Yet, like many other of the lesser municipalities in New England, its enterprise and its thrift have been constant and substantial, and Amesbury has, to-day, an honorable and encouraging place among her seniors as well as her juniors, in the worthy old family of the towns of Essex.

ANDOVER.

This town is a beautiful specimen of a truly New England town. It is situated on the westerly border of Essex County, and formerly included within its limits so much of the city of Lawrence as lies south of the Merrimac River, also the present town of North Andover, and was nearly the largest town in the county. It contained, in 1830, 37,738 acres of land. The boundaries at that time were as follows; viz., Bounded on the north north-west, ten miles, 307 rods, on the Merrimack River, the dividing line between Dracut and Methuen; north-east, 146 rods, by the town of Bradford, — seven miles and 241 rods by Boxford; south-east, three miles and 66 rods by the town of Middleton; south, four miles by Reading (now North Reading), — two miles, 285 rods by Wilmington; south-west, six miles, 197 rods by Tewksbury.

Its original bounds were the Merrimac River, Rowley, Salem, Woburn, and Cambridge, which included Billerica and Tewksbury.

When the early colonists were searching for places in which to locate, Merrimac River was thoroughly explored, and found attractive to the explorers. The earliest record we find concerning the locality known as Andover, was in the following order of the Court, dated Sept. 24, 1634, only four years after the settlement of Boston and Charlestown. "Those of Newtown complained of straitness for want of land, and desired leave of the Court to look out either for enlargement or removal, which was granted; Whereupon they Sent, men to Agawam and Merrimac, and gave out they would remove" &c.

During the same year, we find a record as follows; viz., "It is ordered, that the land about Cochicewick shall be reserved for an inland plantacon, and whosever will goe to inhabite there shall have three yeares imunity from all taxes, levyes, publique charges, & services whatsoever (military dissipline onely excepted) John Winthrop, Rich: Bellingham, & Will^m Coddington, Esq are chosen a committee to licence any that they thinke meete to inhabite there, & that it shall be lawfull for noe pson to goe thither without their consent, or the major pte of them."

At what precise date the people of Newtown took up their abode there and commenced a settlement, does not appear. The following names of the first settlers are found upon the town records, and nearly in the order of settlement: Mr. Bradstreet, John Osgood, Joseph Parker, Richard Barker, John Stevens, Nicholas Holt, Benjamin Woodbridge, John Frye, Edmond Faulkner, Robert Barnard, Daniel Poor, Nathan Parker, Henry Jaques, John Aslett, Richard Blake, William Ballard, John Lovejoy, Thomas Poor, George Abbott, John Russ, Andrew Allen, Andrew Foster, Thomas Chandler. Some of these men had families, and others had no wives.

They first settled near the "Cochicewick," a name given by the natives to a brook leading from Great Pond northerly to the Merrimac, and hence the locality was known as "Cochicewick."

The order of Court reserving the land at this place, was very general in its character, like those which had passed previously, as in case of "Tri-Mountain" should be called "Boston"; "Mattapan" to be called "Dorchester"; and the town on "Charles River," "Watertown," &c. These grants or reservations made by the "Company of Massachusetts Bay," sometimes termed "India-Rubber Grants," were simply little more than a right to purchase of the natives, and then the Court confirmed the bargain. For, while the company under their charter had exclusive jurisdiction over, and general property, in the soil, yet the colonists recognized the prior claims of the occupants of the lands, and usually purchased of the leading chief of the tribes the lands, by bill of sale or deed of release of the property. It seems the land at Cochicewick, forming the present towns of Andover and North Andover, and that part of Lawrence south of the Merrimac River, were purchased in the usual manner, by John Woodbridge, in behalf of the inhabitants, as appears in the following record of the Court.

"*At a Gen'all co'te, at Boston, the 6th, 3th m.*, 1646. 'Cutshamache sagomore of ye Massachusets, came into ye Co'te, & acknowledged yt for ye sume of £6 and a coate, W.ch he had already received, hee had sould to Mr John Woodbridge, in behalfe of ye inhabitants of Cochichawick, now called Andover, all his right, interest, & priviledge in ye land 6 miles southward from ye tonne, two miles eastward to Rowley bounds, be ye same more or lesse, northward to Merrimac Ryver, pvided yt ye Indian called Roger & his company may have lib'ty to take alewifes in Cochicawick River, for their onne eating; but if they eithr spoyle or steale, any corne or other fruite, to any considrable value, of ye inhabitantes there, this libtry of taking fish shall forever cease; & ye said Roger is still to enjoy foure acres of ground where now he plants. This purchase ye Corte alowes of, & have granted ye said land to belong to ye said plantation for e,vr, to be ordred & disposed of by them, reserving liberty to ye Corte to lay two miles square of their southerly bounds to any tonne or village yt hereafter may be erected thereabouts, if so they See cause.'

"Cutshamache acknowledged this before ye magistrates & so ye Corte appveth thereof, & of the rest in this bill to be recorded, so as to pindice no former grant."

We next find the following statements concerning the town, only two years after the foregoing grant: —

"This year 1648, John Winthrope Esquire was chosen Governor and Thomas Dudley Esquire Deputy Governor and John Endicott Esquire Major General all three as they were the former year, the number of freeman added were about 94. About this time there was a Town founded about one or two miles distant from the place where the goodly river of Merrimac receives her braneches into her own body hard upon the river of Shawshin which is one of her three chief heads; the honored Mr Simon Bradstreet taking up his last setting there, hath been a great means to further the work, it being a place well fitted for the husbandmans hand, were it not that the remoteness of the place from Towns of trade, bringeth some inconveniences upon the planters, who are inforced to carry their corn far to market; This Town is called Andover, and hath good store of land well improved for the bigness of it, they soon gathered into a church, having the reverend Mr Woodbridge to instruct them in the wayes of Christ, till he returned to England, and since have called to office the reverend Mr Deynes, for further encouragement, the promises of the Lord for protecting, providing, increasing & continuing even the very least of his Churches going on, according to his precepts, are abundantly manifested in his Word

"Thou Sister young, Christ is to thee a wall
Of flaming fire, to hurt thee none may come
In slippery paths, and dark wayes shall they fall,
His Angels might shall chase their countless sum,
Thy Shepheard with full cups and table spread,
Before thy foes in Wilderness thee feeds,
Increasing thy young lambs in bosom bred
Of Churches by his wonder-working deeds:
To countless number must Christ Churches reach,
The days at hand, both Jew & Gentile shall
Come crowding in his Churches. Christ to preach,
And last aye, none can cause them to fall."

The colonial government occupied a twofold position in its dealing with the settlers upon the unoccupied lands, one by which a title to these lands was granted, and the other in the powers which they conferred, and in the duties imposed upon them as bodies politic.

Grants of land were often made in anticipation of an early settlement, and, when formed, certain corporate powers were conferred upon them, in very brief acts; acts of incorporation to specified localities were granted conditionally, and certain obligations were imposed upon them, such as the support of the gospel, maintenance of highways, support of free schools, &c.

Whenever a person moved into town and became a resident, the town sold him land by vote, and he became a "commoner" or pro-

prictor. The land was divided among the first settlers in proportion to the taxes paid by each, and their divisions recorded in the town records. Thus matters were arranged till 1715, when the proprietors, considering themselves distinct from the town, they began to keep their records as "Proprietors." The first divisions of land were small, very few exceeding ten acres. Ploughlands were granted at a distance in small lots on the plains, and were easy of tillage; swamp or meadow for hay; and woodland at a distance, which rendered the farms very inconvenient.

The first proprietors raised their town rates on their lots until 1681. Then they agreed among themselves, and all that were then house-holders, to raise all town charges by heads and their ratable estates; and every man was to possess all town privileges, and also to have an interest in the common lands, according to what tax he paid. On the eighth day of March, 1702, a committee was appointed by the proprietors, in general town meeting, for settling and revising the agreement of the proprietors, and making a correct list of the names of the proprietors, as these were not placed on the records in 1681. The following persons constituted the committee: Capt. Christopher Osgood, Lieut. John Osgood, Lieut. John Barker, Mr. Dudley Bradstreet, and Ensign John Aslebe. Here follows their report, which was accepted and passed at the town meeting.

"*Whereas*, There was formerly a vote of the town upon the alteration of the way of collecting our town rates, that all such as were then house-holders shall upon the consideration of the proportion they bear to said charges, be privileged in all regards as free commoners in the Town of Andover, and to enjoy all the privileges upon all divisions of land or other occasions according to the burthen of their particular taxes; and whereas the vote not being duly entered in the records of our town, it has been since irrecoverably lost; It is now voted and passed that those whose names are underwritten be every way advantaged and privileged according to what is above expressed as the substance of said former vote.

"*A List of the Names of the Proprietors, according to the Town Vote:* Mr. Simon Bradstreet, Capt. John Osgood, Mr. Francis Dane, Nicholas Holt, Sr., Joseph Parker, Richard Barker, Sr., John Stephens, Sr., John Frye, Sr., Thomas Chandler, John Aslebe, Henry Ingalls, Daniel Poor, Nathan Parker, Solomon Martin, Thomas Farnum. William Ballard, Andrew Allen, Andrew Foster, Sr., John Lovejoy, Sr., William Chandler, Sr., Robert Barnard, Mr. Edmond Faulkner, John Russ, Sr., George Abbott, Sr., George Abbott, Jr., Thomas Poor, Thomas Johnson, Ralph Farnum, John Frye, Jr., Samuel Blanchard, Mark Graves, Thomas Rowell, John Johnson, Robert Russell, John Stevens, Jr., Timothy Stevens, Andrew Foster, Jr., Stephen Johnson, Nathan Stevens, Job Tyler, John Bridges, Joseph Parker, Christopher Osgood, Ephraim Foster, William Barker, Alexander Sessions, Lawrence Lacy, Joseph Robinson, John Faulkner, Samuel Ingalls, Ebenezer Barker, John Maston, Jr., Henry Ingalls, Jr., Edward Whittingham, alias William Abbott, Nicholas Nichols, John Preston, John Abbott, George Abbott, William Blunt, Zachariah Ayer, alias Robert Russell, Joseph Wilson, Lieut. John Barker, John Parker, John Maston, Sr., Lieut. John Osgood, John Farnum, Sr., Timothy Johnson, Stephen Barnard, Nathaniel Dane, Thomas Abbott, Ephraim Stevens, Joseph Stevens, Stephen Parker, John Granger, Benjamin Frye, Samuel Frye, James Frye, Walter Wright, Hugh Stone, Joseph Ballard, Samuel Holt, Henry Holt, John Russ, Jr., Samuel Marble, Joseph Marble, Samuel Preston, Daniel Bixby, James Holt, John Chandler, Nicholas Holt, Jr., Samuel Phelps, William Johnson, William Lovejoy, William Ballard, Jr., Robert Gray, Hope Tyler, alias Joseph Parker, Samuel Hutchinson, John Lovejoy, Jr., and Moses Haggett."

We again find an additional list of names to the above proprietors, as follows: "At a legal Town Meeting, ordered by a warrant from one of her majesty's Justices of the Peace, in order to the voting in of more proprietors in the town, which was on the 28th day of January, in the year 1713–14 —

"*Whereas*. The original purchase of the land of this town was made by Mr. John Woodbridge in behalf of the inhabitants of said town, and confirmed to us by the General Court in the year 1646: and whereas the said town at all times since their first settlement laid out and divided at their several meetings, managed regulated, settled, and disposed of the land as they saw meet, as may be seen by the votes and records of the said town, and more especially as there was just cause and reason, enlarged and added to the number of proprietors or the inhabitants to be invested in the common land of the said town, as may be seen by a record of the said town voted in the month of March, 1702. The said town now taking into their consideration, that there are a considerable number of inhabitants and freeholders of the said town, that were not at the meeting aforesaid admitted or voted proprietors who on many accounts deserve claims and are justly entitled thereunto; The said town do therefore now see cause to vote in and add to their former list of proprietors the persons whose names are in the list underwritten,—These were voted to be privileged in all regards together with those that were voted in March the 8th 1702. William Foster, Samuel Osgood, William Chandler, Ebenezer Frye, Timothy Osgood, Zebadiah Chandler, James Bridges, Nathaniel Abbott, William Lovejoy, Jr., Samuel Peters, Benjamin Abbot, Jonathan Abbot, Joseph Chandler, Francis Dane, Joseph Chandler, Jr., Henry Chandler, Richard Barker, Joseph Osgood, Josiah Chandler, Stephen Barnard, Benjamin Russell, Nathaniel Abbott, Jr., James Barnard, Henry Holt, Jr., Joseph Preston, Robert Barnard, Paul Holt, Daniel Kimball, Samuel Preston, Jr., Nathaniel Frye, John Carleton, Jr., Joseph Parker, Ralph Farnum, Henry Farnum, Thomas Holt, Edward Gray, Simon Stone, Braviter Gray, John Russell, Samuel Phelps, Joseph Phelps, Hezikiah Ballard, Josiah Ingalls, Richard Barker, Jr., Thomas Chandler, Robert Gray, Jacob Maston, Thomas Carrier, Sr., Thomas Carrier, Jr., Thomas Abbott, Jr., John Holt, John Poor, Daniel Poor, Thomas Russell, Daniel Faulkner, Samuel Austin, Hamborough Blunt, William Wardwell, Samuel Barker, Joseph Ballard, John Abbott, Jr., John Osgood, Jr., Joseph Emery, Joseph Wright, John Barnard, Uriah Ballard, Oliver Holt, Moses Holt, John Ingalls, John Farnum, Jr., James Stevens, Nathan Stevens, Jr., Abiel Stevens, Benjamin Stevens, Jr., David Stevens, Daniel Robinson, Samuel Stevens, Ebenezer Osgood, Jeremiah Osgood, Joseph Maston, George Abbott, Jr., Joseph Osgood, Mephibosheth Bixby, John Barker, Jr., Nehemiah Abbott, Jonathan Farnum, John Abbott, Jr., Daniel Abbott, William Barker, Jr., Hannaniah Barker, John Barker, Sr., Samuel Barker, Jr., Nicholas Holt, Jr., Jacob Preston, Timothy Moar, James Holt, Ebenezer Russell, Josiah Holt, Samuel Blunt, John Carlton, Sr., George Holt, John Foster, Ebenezer Lovejoy, Joseph Lovejoy, Jonathan Blanchard, Samuel Farnum, David Abbott, Ephraim Foster, Jr., Samuel Smith, Ephraim Abbott, Henry Lovejoy, John Chandler, Jr., Thomas Chandler, Jr., Thomas Johnson, Jr., Ezekiel Osgood, Timothy Abbott, James Farnum, Joseph Abbott, Joseph Foster, Phileman Chandler, and Christopher Lovejoy."

Thus we find the town, in 1714, with nearly two hundred proprietors; and a careful examination will reveal the fact that many of the names in this list have descendants residing in the town, many whom are scattered throughout the country.

Indian History.

"There was a time when red men climbed these hills,
And wandered by these plains and rills:
Or rowed the light canoe along yon river,
Or rushed to conflict armed with bow and quiver,
Or, 'neath the forest leaves that o'er them hung,
They council held, or loud their war-notes sung."

When the little band of settlers removed from Newtown to Cochichewick, the territory was occupied by the red men of the forest. It was a very favorable resort for their mode of living. The land on the banks of the rivers furnished corn and beans, while the Merrimac and

its tributaries furnished them with fish, and the forest the game. No better location could have been provided by nature than the spot where Roger and his company pitched their tents. They were free, roamed the land at pleasure, ate its fruits as spontaneously produced, spending but little time in cultivating maize and roots, their chief living coming from their hunting and fishing.

The new-comers gave an equitable consideration for whatever they obtained of the natives, and dealt with them kindly, with justice and humanity, so that they suffered but little from the Indians for upwards of thirty years. The inhabitants quietly pursued their business of clearing the forests, erecting their new homes, and tilling the land, till the breaking out of Philip's war in 1675, when it became necessary to erect garrison-houses for their protection. These were usually made by filling bricks between the studding, or making them of thick timber, and sometimes they were surrounded by a stockade, a watch being kept during the nights. In the time of war, there was a garrison-house in every neighborhood in the town, one of which is said to be standing at the present time on the west shore of Haggett's Pond.

The first violence or damage occurred to the inhabitants on the nineteenth day of April, 1676, just one hundred years before the battle of Lexington.

Mr. Ephraim Stevens discovered the enemy about a mile this side of Bodwell's Ferry, but escaped upon his horse, and alarmed the inhabitants. The Indians pursued and passed along the main road without doing any mischief, till they came to the south part of the town, where they killed Joseph Abbott, and took Timothy Abbott. These were the sons of George Abbott, Sr. Joseph was stout and resolute, and probably made resistance; and there is a tradition that he killed one or more of them before he was slain. He was in his twenty-fourth year. Timothy was in his thirteenth year, and was kept several months, and was brought back by a squaw who knew the family, and was friendly. He had been treated by the Indians as well as circumstances would admit; but, as Hubbard says, "was greatly pined with hunger."

At the same time Mr. Faulkner's house was burned, Roger Marks was wounded, and his horse killed; they killed some cattle, but "had time only to cut out their tongues, being fired upon by the people in the garrison." A few months after, a small party of the enemy surprised and captured Mr. Haggett, and two of his sons.

In 1688, the Indians commenced another war with the English. Andover suffered more in this than in the preceding war. In August, 1689, John Peters and Andrew Peters were killed by the Indians; and in the same year, Lieut. John Stevens, Benjamin Lovejoy, Eleazer Streaton, and Robert Russell died in the war at the eastward. In August, 1696, John Hoit and William Peters were slain.

But the most severe and distressing shock which Andover ever suffered from the Indians, was on the 5th of March, 1698, — "When between thirty and forty Indians surprised the town, killed five persons, burnt two houses and two barns with the cattle in them — set another dwelling house and the meeting house on fire; but the fires were happily extinguished before they had done much damage." The persons killed were Simon Wade, Nathaniel Brown, Penelope Johnson, aged nineteen, daughter of Timothy Johnson, Capt. Pascoe Chubb, and Hannah his wife, daughter of Edmond Faulkner. Capt. Chubb had been a captain at Pemaquid Fort two years previous, when he had treacherously murdered two chiefs of the Indians, and had greatly irritated them; and his death afforded them as much joy as the taking of a whole town, because they had taken, though by accident, their revenge on him for his barbarity and perfidy to their countrymen.

They took Col. Dudley Bradstreet and family, and carried them about fifty rods from his house, when they halted and dismissed their prisoners without offering them the least injury, a singular instance of mercy in a people who had always shown themselves to be cruel, and to have no mercy. The tradition is that one Waternummon, an Indian who lived at Newbury, and is supposed to have had a particular regard for Col. Bradstreet, undertook to conduct the Indians to his house upon these conditions, that they should "neither kill nor captivate any of his family." They took Abiel Stevens, a lad, who feigned himself lame and kept behind: the Indians hastened, expecting to be pursued, he turned, ran, and made his escape, though fired upon by the Indian who took him.

No assault was made by the Indians upon Andover after this time, although other towns in the vicinity had suffered severely. The inhabitants were obliged to use caution, and often to repair to garrisons for safety. Block-houses became necessary near the Merrimack, to secure the fields and laborers. In the spring of 1704, four block-houses were built at the expense of the Province, for £8 8*s*. 10*d*., by Christopher Osgood and John Barker. It was very necessary to have a block-house in Shawshine fields, as there was no garrison or dwelling-house near, and many of the inhabitants raised corn and rye in these fields.

In September, 1722, the town voted "that there be a new block-house builded against Henry Bodwell's, and the other three block-houses in said town shall be repaired, all at the town's expense." In 1735, the block-house in Shawshine fields was sold for 20*s*. to John Johnson.

This was a time that tried men's souls. The inhabitants lived in constant fear, their labors being interrupted by the cowardly attacks, from behind some tree, or, when least expecting trouble, a group of the armed foe would suddenly spring upon the settlement, and destroy houses, barns, cattle, and pillage their fields. They had to carry fire-arms into the fields when at work, and also to and from their house of worship, and while at church, keep a sharp lookout. In short, they had ever to be on the alert for any emergency, night and day.

"Alas for them! their days are o'er;
Their fires are out on hill and shore."

Revolutionary War.

The history of the Revolution is always read with interest, and as the town of Andover was active and zealous in protecting the interests of the Colony, and opposing every form of oppression by the mother country, it is proper to give a short statement of the part she took in the war. In 1765, the famous Stamp Act was one that awakened a general indignation throughout the country, and called forth from her citizens the strongest kind of resolutions, in view of the threatened injuries and abuses, from riotous assemblies, &c. The selectmen, militia officers, and magistrates of the town were directed to use their utmost endeavors to suppress all such, and the representative to General Court, Samuel Phillips, Esq., was instructed "not to do any act that would signify any willingness to submit to any internal taxes, that are under any color imposed by any other than the General Court of the Province"; also, he was instructed to join in any remonstrance to the king and parliament, to have the Stamp Act repealed.

In 1768, the new Act, imposing a duty on tea, papers, painter's colors, and glass, caused still greater dissatisfaction than the Stamp Act, and it was, "Resolved, that it was the duty of every friend of liberty, and to the British constitution to prevent, if possible, the execution of said Act." The town also voted that they do all in their power to support and encourage the non-importation of foreign goods, and encourage frugality, industry, and the manufactures of our own country, and that "we will not make use of any foreign tea, or suffer it to be used in our families (except in case of sickness) until the act imposing a duty shall be repealed and a general importation take place." Also, resolved, that any person who should under any pretence whatever, be engaged in vending tea, should incur the displeasure of the town. It was also, "Resolved, — That it is the duty of this town to conform and firmly adhere to the Association of the grand American

Continental Congress, and to the resolve of the Provincial Congress of Dec. 5, thereto relating," and a committee was appointed to see these resolves are strictly observed.

In December, 1774, it was resolved, "that one quarter part of all the training soldiers of the town enlist themselves; and for their encouragement they are promised pay for every half day they shall exercise in the art military."

Accordingly, two companies were raised in February, 1775, under the command of Capt. Benjamin Farnum and Capt. Benjamin Ames, which, with others, were regimented under Col. James Frye, and called minute-men. On the Lexington alarm, April 19, 1775, these companies were ordered to Cambridge. From thence they were detached for duty to take possession of Charlestown Heights on the 16th day of June, and the next day were in the Battle of Bunker Hill. There were fifty-eight men in Capt. Ames's company, more than fifty of whom were from the South Parish (Andover), in the battle. Three were killed and seven wounded. Capt. Farnum was wounded, and some of his company. Two of Capt. Charles Furbush's volunteer company were killed, Lieut. Samuel Bailey and a private named Corey.

In 1777, there were four militia companies in the town, which, with the alarm-list, consisted of 670 men. There were 187 men under command of Capt. Samuel Johnson; Capt. Nathaniel Lovejoy, 161 men; Capt. John Abbott, 158 men; and Capt. Joshua Holt, 164 men.

The service rendered by Capt. Nathaniel Lovejoy's company amounted to 2,127 months, or 175 years and 7 months; and a total of the four companies in Andover, 737 years, — equal to 98 men in constant service during seven and a half years that the war continued. This does not include the officers. The amount of money expended in the service amounted to $10,671 in specie, and $14,960 in paper, somewhat depreciated. Besides the wages paid the soldiers, and the extra bounty paid by the town, the mothers and sisters were busy at home making stockings, shirts, blankets, &c., for their comfort, and the families of absent soldiers were supplied with necessary provisions, which was no small expense. The officers who were in in actual service, during the war, were Col. James Frye, Capts. James Benjamin Ames, Benjamin Farnum, Samuel Johnson, Charles Furbush, John Abbott, and Stephen Abbott.

Twenty soldiers died during the war, from the South Parish.

Thus was Andover true to liberty and independence, and fulfilled all that was demanded of her, and more, during a long and tedious war.

Besides the above list of persons in the Revolutionary War, we find recorded seventeen men who died at Louisburg, Nov. 9, 1745; also seven men who died in the expedition to Lake George, in 1758. Seven men died in the war, at the West. In 1760, two died, besides others from Andover.

Rebellion.

The active participation of Andover in the War of the Rebellion began on the 18th of April, 1861, six days after the bombardment of Fort Sumter, and three days after the Proclamation of President Lincoln for 75,000 men. This first meeting was held in a hall at Frye Village, in response to a call of only seven hours' notice. John Dove was chosen chairman. After remarks by several persons, it was decided to await the action of the citizens on Saturday, the 20th inst. At that meeting earnest and patriotic speeches were made, and a series of resolutions were offered by Hon. Marcus Morton, which were received with great applause and adopted. The meeting then adjourned to Monday, April 22, at which time a committee of twenty-five were chosen to carry into effect such measures as they deem expedient for the support and defence of our National Government during the present Rebellion.

This committee consisted of Francis Cogswell, Peter Smith, John Dove, William Chickering, Amos Abbott, Joseph Holt, William P. Foster, Nathan Frye, Jedediah Burtt, Stephen D. Abbott, Willard Pike, Isaac O. Blunt, James Shaw, George Foster, William Jenkins, Calvin E. Stowe, Moses Foster, Jr., Benjamin F. Wardwell, John Aiken, Benjamin Boynton, William Abbott, Nathan Shattuck, John Abbott, James Bailey, and Warren F. Draper, who were called a "Committee of Twenty-Five."

At a legal meeting of the town, held May 6, to make arrangements for enlistments, the following resolutions were passed: —

"*Resolved*, That we will respond to the call of the President of the United States for the means to suppress this Rebellion, by encouraging volunteers in this town to enlist in the service of the Government, and by providing for their comfort, and the comfort of their families in their absence, and by such other means as we, as good and loyal citizens, shall have the wisdom and the ability to devise and execute; and, adopting the language of one of the resolutions passed by this town in 1787, —

"*Resolved*, That the inhabitants of the town, of every description, but heads of families in particular, are hereby solicited — as they would falsify the predictions and disappoint the hopes of those who are inimical to our independence and happiness; as they would gratify the anxious wishes of our best friends, and the friends of freedom in general; as they regard the political well-being of themselves and posterity; as they hold precious the memory of the heroes and patriots, and of our own kindred who have sacrificed their lives that we may enjoy the fruits of virtuous freedom — to unite in these resolutions, and to exert their utmost influence in every proper way to promote the important design of them."

A military company was immediately organized, and the officers chosen April 30, — Horace Holt, captain, George W. W. Dove, Charles H. Poor, Moses W. Clement, Orrin L. Farnham, lieutenants, with seventy-nine privates, who were drilled daily, till June 24, when they went to Fort Warren to await orders, and were afterwards mustered into the United States service July 5, 1861, and designated Co. H, 14th Massachusetts Volunteer Infantry. They left Boston, Aug. 7, for Washington, D. C. This was the first company sent to the war from Andover. Other levies followed in rapid succession. The town furnished for the army during the war, 549 men; for the navy, 50 men, over the various calls; total, 599, and a surplus of 116 men. The number killed or deceased from this town was 52, which are placed in the roll of honor in Memorial Hall.

Of the nearly six hundred men, twenty were commissioned officers. A glance at the tablet in the hall reveals the names of many who suffered and died of starvation in the prisons at Danville, Andersonville, or Salisbury. The amount of money expended by the town, exclusive of State aid, was $30,650, to say nothing of the contributions of the "Ladies' Aid Society," "Old South Society," who were constantly furnishing hospital and sanitary stores, clothing, and money, to the value of twenty-five hundred dollars, besides their time and labor.

To the Memory of our Patriotic Dead.

James H. Bailey,
Died of disease at Washington, D. C., Sept. 14, 1861.

Enoch O. Frye,
Accidentally killed at Fort Albany, Va., Oct. 29, 1861.

Charles H. Callahan,
Died of disease at Chelsea, Mass., May 29, 1862.

Amos Whittaker,
Killed at Gaines' Mills, Va., June 27, 1862.

George M. Smart,
Died of disease at Fort Albany, Va., July 25, 1862.

William Greeley,
Died of disease at Carrollton, La., Aug. 22, 1862.

Bernard Kavanaugh,
Died of disease at Philadelphia, Pa., Aug. 24, 1862.

Edward C. Merrill,
Died of disease at Carrollton, La., Aug. 27, 1862.

William H. Luke,
Died of wounds at Manassas, Va., Sept 13, 1862.

Jefferson N. Raymond,
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Sept. 13, 1862.

Granville K. Cutler,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

James H. Eastes,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

Edward Farmer,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

Jonathan A. Holt,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

James H. Rothwell,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

Enoch M. Hatch,
Killed near Petersburg, Va., June 16, 1864.

Bernard McGurk,
Killed at Cold Harbor, Va., June 3, 1864.

Orrin L. Farnham,
Died of wounds at Bryant's Farm, Va., June 17, 1864.

Epaphrus K. Bryant,
Died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 3, 1864.

William Russell,
Died of wounds at Washington, D. C., July 11, 1864.

JAMES RUSSELL,
Died of disease at Fort Albany, Va., Oct 19, 1862.

JAMES JAQUITH,
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Dec. 1, 1862.

HENRY G. KIMBALL,
Died of disease at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 1, 1863.

JAMES W. MERRILL,
Died of disease at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 20, 1863.

JOSEPH CHANDLER, JR.,
Died of disease at New Orleans, La., Mar. 10, 1863.

NEWTON G. FRYE,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Mar. 28, 1863.

JOSIAH MASON,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass. Apr. 7, 1863.

JAMES LOGUE,
Died of disease at Baton Rouge, La., May 11, 1863.

NEWTON LOVEJOY,
Died of disease at Vicksburg, Miss., July 9, 1863.

WILLIAM H. WARDWELL,
Accidentally killed at Maryland Heights, Md., Aug. 1, 1863.

CHARLES A. CLEMENT,
Died of wounds at Gettysburg, Pa., Sept. 30, 1863.

WILLARD G. BODWELL,
Died of disease at Fort Strong, Va., Mar. 24, 1864.

THOMAS F. PORTER,
Died of wounds at Hampton, Va., April 15, 1864.

JAMES WARD,
Killed at the Wilderness, Va., May 5, 1864.

SAMUEL AIKEN,
Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

ISRAEL A. BERRY,
Died of wounds at City Point, Va., April 22, 1865.

THOMAS A. BAGLEY,
Died a prisoner at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 28, 1864.

JAMES B. BLACK,
Died of disease at Fortress Monroe, Va., Aug. 30, 1864.

GEORGE W. GRANT,
Died of disease in Second Corps Hospital, Va., Sept. 7, 1864.

GEORGE A. BAILEY,
Killed at Winchester, Va., Sept. 19, 1864.

FRANKLIN HARDY,
Killed at Poplar Grove Church, Va., Oct. 2, 1864.

EDWARD O'HARA,
Killed at Hatcher's Run, Va., Oct. 27, 1864.

CHARLES P. BARNARD,
Died of disease at Annapolis, Md., Dec. 2, 1864.

JAMES MCCUSKER,
Died a prisoner at Salisbury, N. C., Dec. 2, 1864.

THOMAS WARDMAN,
Died a prisoner at Danville, Va., Dec. 20, 1864.

JOHN MCCULLOUGH,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Dec. 24, 1864.

WALTER L. RAYMOND,
Died a prisoner at Salisbury, N. C., Dec. 25, 1864.

GEORGE E. HAYWARD,
Died of wounds at Andover, Mass., July 24, 1865.

LEONARD W. RYLEY,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Aug. 30, 1865.

LEWIS G. HATCH,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Jan. 4, 1866.

SAMUEL P. FARNHAM,
Died of disease at Andover, Mass., Jan. 12, 1866.

ANDREW K. PATRICK,
Died of wounds at Fredericksburg, Va.

EARLY CHURCH HISTORY.

In nearly all the older towns of New England, the history of the church and town were nearly the same; every town, in fact, formed a parish, though it managed its parochial affairs by means of its municipal organization, and as soon as a church was formed, agreeably to the custom of the early churches, the town was prepared to settle a minister, whenever their circumstances would allow him the necessary support. We find provision was made for stated and regular church worship at Andover at an early date. Hubbard says: "Sept. 19, 1645. Two churches were appointed to be gathered, one at Haverhill, the other at Andover, both on Merrimack River. They had given notice thereof to the magistrates and ministers of the neighboring churches, as is the manner with them in New England. The meeting of the Assembly was to be at that time at Rowley; the forementioned plantations, being but newly erected, were not capable to entertain them that were likely to be gathered together on that occasion. But when they were assembled, most of those who were to join together in church fellowship, at that time, refused to make confession of their faith and repentance, because as was said, they declared it openly before in other churches, upon their admission into them. Whereupon the messengers of the churches not being satisfied, the assembly brake up, before they had accomplished what they intended."

"On the 24th of October 1645, messengers of churches met together again, when such satisfaction was given, that Mr John Ward was ordained pastor of the church in Haverhill, on the north side of the Merrimack, and Mr John Woodbridge was ordained pastor of the church of Andover, on the South Side of the same."

These were the twenty-third and twenty-fourth churches organized in Massachusetts. The church of Andover consisted of ten male members, including the pastor; viz., Mr. John Woodbridge, *teacher*, John Osgood, Robert Barnard, John Frye, Nicholas Holt, Richard Barker, Joseph Parker, Nathan Parker, Richard Blake, Edmond Faulkner. A number of others were added soon after.

Mr. Woodbridge remained with them but a short time, having resigned in 1647, and returned to England. Mr. Francis Dane succeeded Mr. Woodbridge, and had a long and successful pastorate of forty-eight years. He died Feb. 17, 1697, aged eighty-two years. It appears that during his ministry, harmony prevailed among his people, and the worship and ordinances of religion were well attended.

Jan. 13, 1682, the town voted "to give Rev Thomas Barnard a call to settle here in Andover for the carrying on of the work of the ministry amongst us," with a salary of eighty pounds per annum. In 1683, "voted to give Mr Barnard five pounds of his salary, in silver during his abode in the ministry." Mr. Barnard was a colleague pastor with Mr. Dane fifteen years, with the most friendly relations existing between them. His ministry was satisfactory and successful during twenty-eight years that he served the town.

The first meeting-house in the town, of which we have any account, was built near the old burial-ground, in the North Parish, near where the first settlement was made. It had two galleries, one above the other, and a bell. This house stood till 1711, when a new one was erected, near the same spot. Up to this date, the people from every section of the town repaired to this house for worship, and this was the only one for many years in the town.

About the year 1707, the parsonage belonging to the town was destroyed by fire; and the town provided a new one, and fortified it against the Indians.

About this time the subject of a new meeting-house agitated the minds of the people, and several town-meetings were held to consider the matter of location. After much and protracted discussion, and no agreement being made among the citizens, the town immediately petitioned the General Court for a committee to fix a location. The committee, after a thorough inquiry into the subject, judged the town able to support two ministers, and on the second day of November, 1708, that body, —

"Ordered, That the town be divided into two distinct precincts, and that Col [Francis] Wainwright, Major [Stephen] Sewall, and Major [Henry] Somersby, and Nehemiah Jewett, Esq. be a comittee to perform that division and make it equal for North and South precincts, within the space of two months, next coming, unless in the interim the town agree thereon and make it themselves, and that thereupon the North Division take the present meeting-house, and repair and add to it as they please.

"*That* there be forthwith laid out for the minister of the South precinct fourteen acres of land for a house lot, and forty acres at a further distance, part of it lowland, to make meadow, of the common land in said precinct, which will make them equal to the other division, to be for the use of the ministry forever.

"*That*, the inhabitants and proprietors of the South Division build a convenient meeting-house for their own use, and a ministry house."

"Upon all which Mr. Barnard, the present minister, shall declare his choice of which congregation he will officiate in, and that precinct, North or South, shall fully and wholly perform the past contract of the town with him, and the other precinct or division of the town shall call and settle another minister for themselves.

"And the inhabitants of the respective precincts and divisions are hereby impowered to make choice of some discreet persons among themselves, as committees, to manage and govern their affairs with respect to building a meeting-house and ministry house, the making assessments to defray the charge thereof, and for the support of the ministry, and to appoint collectors to gather the same; — and are advised and directed to proceed in these several articles with that peace and friendship, one towards another, that they may honor religion, the government, and themselves."

The committee appointed for the purpose of establishing the boundary lines between the parishes, fixed upon the following, as reported to the General Court, April 12, 1709; viz., "Begining at a great pitch pine tree, near Merrimack River, marked with stones about it, and the west corner of Richard Barker's land, and is said to be the bounds between his land and John Gutterson's land, so called, from said pine tree on a straight line to a stake and heap of stones about it at the corner bounds between Walter Wright and Hooker Osgood, and from thence on a straight line to a white oak tree marked A and R, being a bound tree between said town of Andover and

Reading, with stones about it, standing on a hill known as Osgood's Hill."

The town having neglected to lay out the land and lot, for the use of the ministry, the General Court appointed the same committee, Feb. 16, 1710, to perform that duty; and on the seventh day of November of the same year, the precinct petitioned that Mr. Barnard be directed to choose which precinct he would select. He remained in the north precinct. The town having been divided into the two parishes as above, all parochial affairs were conducted separately. The boundary line was nearly the present town line separating the towns of Andover and North Andover, and runs north-west and south-east, in very near a straight course. That portion of territory east of the line was known as the North Parish, now North Andover, that on the west, the South Parish, now Andover.

South Parish. — Immediately after the incorporation of this parish, they began to build a meeting-house, which they occupied in January, 1710. It was built "At y^e^ Rock on the west side of Roger brook," and near the site of the present centre school-house at the junction of School and Central streets. No definite account of the building is given, although we find "young men and maids had liberty to build seats round in the galleries on their own charge," and in "seating the meeting-house," the committee appointed for the purpose were to "act according to their best and soundest judgment, having respect to money and age."

At a meeting held Dec. 12, 1710, "Voted unanimously, that Mr Samuel Phillips be our settled minister," and "that the precinct would pay Mr Phillips £60 in money a year while he carries on the work of the ministry among us in an unmarried state; and when he shall see reason to marry, then to add to his salary £10 a year, so long as he shall continue in the work of the ministry among us;" and would build a parsonage; and that, if "it should please God to take away Mr. Phillips by death, and he leave a widow or children, that then the precinct would give to his widow or children £50 and the use of the parsonage house one year."

Oct. 17, 1711, Mr. Samuel Phillips was ordained their pastor by the Rev. Thomas Barnard, of the North Parish, Mr. Edward Payson, of Rowley, Mr. Joseph Green, of Salem Village, and Mr. Thomas Symmes, of Bradford. Mr. Phillips entered upon his work immediately, and labored successfully with this people for sixty years, and died June 5, 1771, aged 82 years.

On the sixth day of June, 1732, it was "voted and passed, that the precinct will build a new meeting house upon the school-house hill, known and commonly called Roger's Hill." The building was fifty-six feet long, forty-four feet wide, and thirty feet between plate and sill. Mr. Phillips preached the first sermon in this house, May 19, 1734, from 1 Chron. xxix. 13, 14. The last sermon was preached by Mr. Phillips in the old house, May 12, 1734, from John xiv. 31, "Arise, let us go hence." The following is a description of the old building, as given in the recollection of one* who was familiar with the old church, and will serve to illustrate early days in Andover: —

"It was surrounded by horse-blocks innumerable, with a disproportionate number of sheds; — for the pillion was the ladies' travelling delight, and alone or in pairs, with their husbands or fathers, they seldom failed to come trooping to their devotions. The church itself was a shingled mass, lofty, and, I should think containing twice the area of its successor. This, however, may be the exaggeration of my boyish fancy, but it had three lofty stories, with three galleries, in the interior, always densely filled with apparently pious zeal, and earnest listeners. In the left hand gallery sat the ladies, in the right the gentlemen; in the midst of them and in front sat the tything man, with his white pole, three or four cubits in length, the emblem of his dignity and power, and in his right hand a short hazel rod, which, ever and anon, in the midst of the sermon, to the awakening and alarm of the whole congregation, he would, with the whole force of his arm, bring down with a ringing slap on the front of the gallery, shaking it at the same time, with a terrific menace, at two or three urchins who were whispering or playing in a corner. In a square box in front of the pulpit sat the deacons, one of whom had pen, ink, and paper, and was carefully taking the heads of the preachers discourse, preparing documentary evidence, either that the sermon was old or its doctrines new, or consonant with the orthodox platform. In the front gallery sat the precenter, with a pitch-pipe, the token of his authority, with which, as soon as the first line of the Psalm was read, he gave the note to the choir of both sexes, — twenty or thirty of each, — following the Deacon, reading line by line in an ecstasy of harmony which none but the lovers of music realize. 'How pleased and blessed was I,' &c. The windows of this vast building were of diamond-shaped glass panes, of Rhomboid form, in length about three or four inches, in breadth, perhaps two or three. Opening like doors outward, these windows were loose and shackly. In the winter, when the north wind shook the vast building with unmistakable power, their rattling was often a match, and sometimes an overmatch, for the voice of the clergyman; while the pious females in the pews, sitting, for the most part, on hard benches, with small muffs, and their feet only comforted with small stoves, or stockings over shoes, or heated bricks, had much ado through their suffering to keep their attention fixed, or the text in memory, and register the infinitesimal heads into which it was divided."

In 1781, "The scholars in Phillips Academy were allowed the three back seats in the lower front gallery."

The last meeting in this second meeting-house was held April 20, 1788. The last sermon was from Haggai i. 7, 8. As early as September, 1771, the subject of building a new meeting-house was agitated; and proposals for the division of the parish, on account of the "length of travel to the public worship," was thoroughly discussed for several years, and, after twelve years had passed, it was decided to build "within six or eight rods, of where the meeting house now stands." The dimensions of the new house were seventy feet long, fifty-four feet in width, "with a porch at each end and one in front of the house." It was built after the model of the one in the North Parish. The house was raised May 26 and 27, and the first meeting for worship held Dec. 7, 1788. The Rev. Jonathan French preached the sermon from John x. 22, 23.

In June, 1792, Samuel Abbot, Esq., presented the bell for the church, weighing eleven hundred pounds; and on the 5th of March, 1812, the same person presented the clock in the tower.

The first stoves used in the church were in 1821. Previous to this time a building had been erected near by, in which people were accustomed to warm themselves at noon before an open fire.

An organ was purchased by the parish in 1836. In 1832, Mrs. Mary Ballard presented them a clock for the interior of the church. A vestry was built by individuals in 1815, at the suggestion of Rev. Mr. Edwards, the church paying $300 towards finishing; this was afterwards relinquished to the parish.

This old meeting-house served the purpose for which it was intended till 1833, when extensive alterations, amounting to $3,000, were made, the entire building remodelled, the old square pews giving way to the more modern long pews, the pulpit changed from the front to the south end, the galleries changed to correspond, and the front porch removed; thus things remained till, in 1860, preparations were made for a new church edifice. A new building, 109 feet long, 71 feet wide, with a spire 164 feet high, was erected in that year, which was dedicated Jan. 2. 1861. In this new edifice there is a basement, divided into rooms, for library, committee, and Sabbath-school rooms, conveniently arranged. It has an audience-room, containing 132 circular pews, capable of seating 700 persons, besides a gallery on three sides, seating 200 persons. The speaker's desk stands on an elevated platform, four feet above the principal floor, and is very neat and tasty. It is lighted by brackets extending from the walls, and

* Hon. Josiah Quincy.

heated by furnaces placed in the basement. The same bell and clock from the old church is in the new tower. The pews are uniformly upholstered, and the house carpeted throughout. The house is of the Romanesque style of architecture, and cost about $20,000.

The following is a brief account of the pastors in Andover, in the order of settlement, and referred to above, before and after the division of the town.

The Rev. John Woodbridge was born in Stanton, Eng., in 1613. Came to New England in 1634, and took up land in Newbury. He married a daughter of Hon. Thomas Dudley, and was one of the first settlers of Andover, and purchased the land of the Indians. He first came with the settlers as teacher; ordained as pastor in October, 1645. It has been said he was the first ordained minister in the county, and the second in New England. He died in March, 1695, aged 82 years.

The Rev. Francis Dane was successor of Mr. Woodbridge. He was born in England, and completed his education in this country; but of his coming to Andover, or of his ordination, but little is known. He was ordained about 1648. His wife was Elizabeth ———, who died June, 1676. At an advanced age, he married the widow of George Abbott, Sr., who died June, 1711, aged 83. He died Feb. 17, 1697, aged 82 years, having had official connection with the church for forty-eight years.

The Rev. Thomas Barnard was settled as colleague with Mr. Dane for fifteen years, in 1682. He was a graduate of Harvard College, 1679. He was son of Francis Barnard, of Hadley. He died Oct. 13, 1718, aged 62 years, and in the thirty-seventh year of his ministry.

The Rev. Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of the South Parish, was son of Samuel Phillips, of Salem; born Feb. 17, 1690. Graduate of Harvard College, 1708. Commenced preaching in this parish April 30, 1710, and was ordained Oct. 17, 1711. After graduating he taught school one year at Chebacco (now Essex), and then devoted himself to preparation for the ministry. He was considered a "worthy, learned, and pious minister," and his people were remarkably united in him. He was endowed with good powers of mind, and was a diligent, faithful, and useful minister." He was noted for his habits of order, industry, and economy in the management of all his affairs. He devoted a tenth of his income to pious and charitable purposes, and although his salary was small, yet he educated his family liberally and accumulated a large estate. During his pastorate, he maintained constant intimacy and friendship with the ministers of the North Parish, and was highly respected by all the ministerial brethren, and was frequently invited to preach on public occasions. His publications are numerous, a large number of which were composed for his own people. At his death he left £100 as an abiding fund for the relief of indigent persons in the South Parish; also £100 for the pious and charitable use of propagating Christian knowledge among the Indians of North America. But among the most important of all was his legacy to the parish and the world, in the lives of his children, whose names are as familiar to the people of Andover as household words. He died after a pastorate of fifty-nine years, June 5, 1771, aged 81 years.

The next pastor of the South Parish was the Rev. Jonathan French, son of Moses French, born in Braintree, Jan. 30, 1740. He worked on his father's farm till seventeen years of age, and then enlisted as private in the army in March, 1757, and repaired immediately to Fort Edward. Soon after this he was disabled by sickness and returned home in October. He was next on duty at Castle William, in Boston Harbor, and there resolved upon a collegiate education. In this he was aided and encouraged by the chaplains, and at once began the study of the classics, and often while being rowed back and forth from Boston to the fort, he was earnestly engaged in his studies. Soon after this, he resigned the sword, and entered Harvard College, from whence he graduated in 1771, and was in the class with Samuel Phillips, Jr., and David Osgood. Installed pastor of South Church, Sept. 23, 1772, and died July 28, 1809, aged 69 years, at the close of a successful ministry of thirty-six years. As a preacher he was highly respectable and popular. His discourses were plain, practical, and unadorned; his voice pleasant, strong, and piercing. He was an active and useful trustee of Phillips Academy. He assisted large numbers in their preparation for the ministry; so that his home was really a Divinity school.

The Rev. Justin Edwards succeeded Mr. French in the pastorate of this parish. He was born in Westhampton, April 25, 1787. Entered Williams College Oct. 8, 1807, and graduated in 1810. He was ordained pastor Dec. 2, 1812, and remained in Andover till Oct. 1, 1827. An agency for the American Temperance Society next engaged his labors, till his installation as pastor of the Salem Street Church, Boston, Jan. 1, 1828. His health failing, he resigned, and was dismissed Aug. 20, 1829. From that time he was engaged in his former labors as corresponding secretary of the society, forming societies, delivering addresses, and using his endeavors in private counsels to promote the cause of temperance as well as religion. On the seventh day of September, 1836, he was inaugurated president of the theological seminary at Andover, which position he held for six years, his connection with the seminary ceasing April 19, 1842. Again, he engaged in the cause of temperance for one year, and then became secretary of the American and Foreign Sabbath Union. From 1849 to his death, July 24, 1853, he was employed by the American Tract Society, in preparing a brief commentary of the Bible for popular use. The honorary degree of doctor of divinity was conferred upon him from Yale College, 1827. His publications are numerous and valuable. It is said that the "American Tract Society has circulated more pages from his pen than from the pen of any writer, living or dead."

"It was during the last six years of his ministry in Andover, which was the culminating period of his ability. He had then become a recognized force; a living power felt by all the men, women, and children throughout the extended Parish."

The Rev. Milton Badger was the next pastor, who was ordained Jan. 3, 1828; born in Coventry, Conn., May 6, 1800. Graduate of Yale College, 1823. Student at Andover Theological Seminary, 1824–5. Tutor at Yale College, 1826–7. Ordained pastor, Jan. 3, 1828. Dismissed, Oct. 4, 1835. During the seven and one-half years of his ministry, it was a continuous revival, 330 persons having joined the church, most of whom were on profession.

The Rev. Lorenzo L. Langstroth, born in Philadelphia, Pa., Dec. 25, 1810, became the next pastor. Ordained May 11, 1836. Graduated at Yale College, 1831. Tutor in Yale College, 1834–35. Dismissed, March 30, 1839. Was principal of Abbot Female Academy one year. Removed to Greenfield, Mass., and taught high school for young ladies, and preached as stated supply for the Second Church in that town two or three of these years; afterwards installed pastor, Dec. 20, 1843. Dismissed, Feb. 15, 1848. Next established a young ladies' school in Philadelphia; taught four years; and, after being a stated supply at Coleraine, Mass., two years, removed to Oxford, Ohio, and became connected with a school for young ladies.

The sixth pastor was the Rev. John L. Taylor, D.D. Born in Warren, Conn , May 20, 1811, graduated at Yale College, 1835. Was a teacher in the high school at Ellington, Conn., in 1835–1837. Tutor and student of divinity in Yale College, 1837–1839. Ordained pastor of Old South Church, Andover, July 18, 1839. Having been elected Treasurer of the Trustees of Phillips Academy, June 1, 1852, he requested his dismission. "In yielding to his wishes, the church deemed it but just to record their conviction that he had performed the duties of his high office with great ability, fidelity, and discretion; and to assure him that he carried with him their confidence, respect, warm personal attachment, and Christian sympathy." He was dismissed after a successful pastorate of thirteen years.

In 1868, Middlebury College conferred the degree of Doctor of Divinity upon him.

After serving sixteen years as Treasurer, he was called to fill the

chair of "Smith Professor of Theology and Homiletics, and Lecturer on Pastoral Theology," in Andover Theological Seminary, which position he now holds.

Among his published works are: A New Year's Discourse, Jan. 5, 1851; An excellent Memoir of the Hon. Samuel Phillips, LL.D., 391 pages, in 1856; Inaugural Address as Smith Professor in the Special Course of the Seminary, Aug. 5, 1868; Commemorative Discourse on the Death of Rev. Amos Blanchard, D.D., at Lowell, Jan. 23, 1870; Memorial Discourse on the Last Sabbath of Service in Bartlett Chapel, Oct. 1, 1876. In 1858, Mr. Taylor was entrusted with the care and compilation of the Addresses and Doings of the Semi-Centennial celebration of the Theological Seminary, at Andover, in 1858, besides the Memoirs of John Aiken, and the Hon. William Phillips, in the "Congregational Quarterly," &c.

The Rev. Charles Smith succeeded Dr. Taylor. He was born in Hatfield, Mass., Aug. 9, 1818; graduated at Amherst College in 1842; Andover Theological Seminary, 1845. First settled and ordained at Warren, Oct. 12, 1847; dismissed, April 13, 1852. Installed over the Old South Church, Oct. 28, 1852; dismissed, Nov. 28, 1853. Ordained pastor of the Shawmut Church, Boston, Dec. 8, 1853; dismissed, Nov. 8, 1858.

The church were without a pastor for nearly two years, till June 4, 1855, when the Rev. George Mooar, of the West Parish, Andover, was invited to become their pastor, and was ordained Oct. 10, 1855. He was born May 27, 1830; fitted for college at Phillips Academy, graduated at Williams College, 1851. Taught school one year; pursued his theological studies at Andover, and graduated 1855. Dismissed, and removed to Oakland, Cal., in 1861; and also Professor in Pacific Theological Seminary.

The next pastor was the Rev. Charles Smith, before mentioned, who was recalled, and settled in December, 1861, and continued about fifteen years. Dismissed, and now resides in Andover.

The Rev. James H. Laird is the present pastor. Ordained in 1877.

West Parish. — This parish had its origin in the Old South Church of Andover, in consequence of the Old South Society being too large for the labors of one pastor. The South Parish "voted, Feb. 6, 1826, to build a house of worship on the west side of the Shawsheen River."

On the 12th of March following, they reconsidered the vote, and "Voted, that should the people on the west side of the Shawsheen River erect a meeting house *at their own expense*, they have the cordial approbation of the Parish." The meeting-house was then built by private enterprise, in shares. The corner-stone was laid June 15, 1826, and it was dedicated Dec. 26, 1826. The dedicatory address was preached by the Rev. Dr. Edwards, of the Old South Church. The house was built of stone from the quarries near by, and was sixty-four feet long, fifty-two feet wide, and twenty-five feet high, costing nearly six thousand dollars; and contained ninety-eight pews, and a seating capacity for more than six hundred people. The first Sabbath service was held Dec. 31, 1826.

On the twenty-eighth day of November, 1826, fifty-six members, principally from the Old South Church, received dismission, and were organized into a new church under the name of "West Church of Andover." The services on that occasion were held in the old church, where a sermon was preached by the Rev. Samuel Stearns, of Bedford, and the church was founded upon a purely evangelical faith.

When the new meeting-house was completed, application was made to the General Court, to divide the parish, and define its limits. The Legislature of 1827 incorporated them within the following bounds: "Beginning near the Tewksbury line, it runs near Mr. Aaron Frost's, thence northerly to the hop-kiln, near Lieut. Peter French's; thence north-eastwardly, to a white-oak tree, standing on land of David Baker, near the road leading from Holt's Bridge, so called, to Capt. Solomon Holt's; thence north-eastwardly, to the corner of the road leading from Mr. E. L. Herriek's to the paper-mill; thence by said road, to the bridge crossing the Shawsheen River at the paper-mill; thence by said river to the North Parish Bounds."

The parish includes the following school districts; viz., Bailey, Osgood, Abbot, West Centre, Frye, and North Districts.

At the time of its organization, this parish contained a population of 870 persons, divided into 158 families.

There has always been the most perfect union between the "Old South Church" and this West Church.

A portion of the ministerial fund has been paid yearly to the new church since its organization.

Pastors in the West Parish. — The Rev. Samuel Cram Jackson, D.D., the first pastor of the West Church, was born March 13, 1802, in Dorset, Vt. Fitted for college with his father, the Rev. William Jackson, D.D., one of the founders of the American Educational Society. Graduated at Middlebury College, 1821. Studied law with Hon. Richard Skinner, at Manchester, N. H., 1821–1822; Yale College Law School, 1822–1823. Entered Andover Theological Seminary in 1823, graduating in 1826. Received a call to settle as pastor of the West Church, Apr. 3, 1827, and was ordained June 6, 1827, the Rev. Moses Stuart preaching the ordination sermon, from 2 Tim. ii. 15, where he remained a successful, devoted pastor, till 1849, when he was appointed Assistant Secretary of the Massachusetts Board of Education, and Assistant Librarian of the State Library. He continued in that position till 1876, when ill-health compelled him to resign. He was succeeded by the Hon. Oliver Warner. Dr. Jackson was the first person who held that position, and his acquaintance was extensive throughout the country. On the seventh day of January, 1843, he preached the famous annual election sermon before the governor, and both branches of the Massachusetts Legislature, which caused considerable discussion as to its meaning. It was, however, an able sermon, entitled, "Religious Principle a Source of Prosperity." In 1849, his alma mater conferred the degree of Doctor of Divinity upon him. He was, at his death, one of the Trustees of the Andover Theological Seminary, and Phillips Academy, having been chosen in 1847. He was also, for many years, a director of the "American Education Society."

For several years previous to his death, he was in feeble health, and had travelled South, during his pastorate of twenty-two years, and since.

He died highly respected by all who knew him, and, during his settlement as a pastor, his relations with the ministerial brethren in the vicinity of his labors were of the most cordial and friendly character. He died July 26, 1878, of paralysis.

Among his published sermons are, his annual sermon, Dec. 30, 1827, on "The Blessings of the Year;" a temperance sermon, entitled, "License Law Vindicated," delivered Nov. 28, 1839; Funeral Sermon on the Death of the Rev. Sylvester G. Pierce, of Methuen, Mass., May, 1839.

The Rev. Charles Henry Peirce, the second pastor, was born in Peru, Mass., Nov. 29, 1822. Graduated at Oberlin College, Ohio, in 1845. Taught two years, and then pursued his theological studies at Andover Seminary, graduating in 1850. He was installed as pastor, Oct. 9, 1850, the Rev. Mr. Towne, of Lowell, preaching the sermon. After preaching here about five years, he removed to Illinois, in July, 1855. Settled in Kewanee, Henry County, where he engaged in organizing a church, and building a house of worship, where he remained three years, preaching a short time at Neponset, Bureau County; and, March 1, 1860, removed to Knoxville, remaining eighteen months. Installed over the Second Congregational Church, in Millbury, Mass., Oct. 22, 1862, where he died, Oct. 5, 1865, greatly beloved by a large circle of friends, and esteemed by all for his manly and kind qualities and liberality of spirit, and his ability as a preacher.

The Rev. James H. Merrill was the third pastor. Graduated at Dartmouth College, 1834; Andover Theological Seminary, 1839. Teacher in academy at Fryeburgh, Me., 1835–1837. Ordained Nov.

26, 1839. Settled at Montague, Mass., 1839–1855. Installed over the West Church, Andover, April 30, 1856; is now their pastor.

Seminary Church. — Previous to 1816, the people connected with Phillips Academy and the Theological Seminary had worshipped with the "Old South Church." On the twenty-second day of August of that year, a new church was organized in the seminary, and was under the direction and control of the trustees. That mode of conducting the affairs of the church, was changed on the first day of November, 1865, when a properly Congregational church was duly organized by a council, and contained seventy members.

Soon after the First Seminary Church was formed, in 1816, William Bartlett, Esq., of Newburyport, the generous donor, erected a large and "elegant" building of brick, ninety-four feet long and forty feet wide, containing a *chapel*, library, and three lecture-rooms, which was completed and presented to the seminary, and was publicly dedicated Sept. 22, 1818. The pulpit of this church was supplied by professors of the seminary, including such men as Dr. Woods, Dr. Porter, Prof. Stuart, Prof. Emerson, Dr. Skinner, Dr. Justin Edwards, and Dr. B. B. Edwards, and others.

This church has recently erected a beautiful gothic chapel, 120 feet long, 53 feet wide, with seating for 528 persons. It is built of rubble masonry, and has a tower at the north-west corner, rising to the height of 128 feet. The inside finish is of ash, the windows of stained glass, with a wall of elegant soft tints. The building is situated in the corner of the seminary grounds, and faces west. The stone is from West Andover, trimmed with light Ohio stone, and Connecticut red sandstone.

The services of dedication were held Oct. 2, 1876, Prof. Egbert C. Smyth preaching the sermon.

A Methodist church was established in this town in 1830, with preaching in the "Bank Hall"; a meeting-house was built soon after, and, at times, the society seemed to flourish; but, in 1840, it began to give out, and the building passed into other hands.

In the latter part of 1832, a Baptist church was recognized, the public services of recognition being held in the Old South Church, by invitation, Oct. 3, 1832. Their meeting-house was dedicated Aug. 28, 1834.

The Rev. James Huckins, installed Aug. 28, 1834; resigned, Oct. 25, 1835.

The Rev. George J. Carlton, installed June 15, 1836; resigned, Oct. 5, 1838.

The Rev. Nathaniel Hervey, invited Aug. 11, 1839; left, ——, 1841.

The Rev. Benjamin S. Cobbett, ordained Feb. 8, 1842; resigned, Oct. 5, 1847.

The Rev. Silas B. Randall, came Oct. 1, 1848; left, Oct. —, 1849.

The church dissolved itself Dec. 8, 1857; many of its members uniting with the church at Lawrence. July 28, 1858, a new Baptist church was recognized. The Rev. William S. McKenzie as pastor, —— Litchfield. The present pastor is the Rev. Henry R. Wilbur.

Protestant Episcopal services were performed in Andover for the first time in 1835, the Rt. Rev. B. B. Smith, of Kentucky, officiating, in Bank Hall. The first meeting in reference to the formation of a society, was held July 28th of the same year. The first parish meeting was held Aug. 6, 1835. The first communion was April 3, 1836. During the years 1837 and 1838, fourteen members from the Old South were dismissed, and became communicants with this new church, which had taken the name of "Christ Church." Their new church edifice was consecrated Oct. 31, 1837.

Rectors. — The Rev. James H. Tyng, 1836; the Rev. Joseph H. Clinch, 1837; the Rev. Samuel Fuller, D.D., Oct. 1, 1837, to June 26, 1843; the Rev. George Packard, 1843–1845; the Rev. Henry Waterman, December, 1845 — June 5, 1849; the Rev. Samuel Fuller, D.D., Oct. 1, 1849 — Oct. 1, 1859; the Rev. B. B. Babbitt; James Thompson. The present pastor is the Rev. Malcomb Douglas.

A Universalist church was founded in 1837, and a meeting-house built in 1838. Public services have been very irregularly sustained, and for several years entirely suspended, and the building is now used for school purposes, on Main Street.

"The Free Christian Church," of Andover, was organized in 1846, with forty-four original members, fourteen of whom were from the Old South Church. It was organized by a council of churches, May 7, 1846, although services were held by them several Sabbaths earlier. For several years services were held in the Universalist church; but, in 1849, the Methodist church was purchased, removed, and remodelled for their use. The pastors have been the Rev. Elijah C. Winchester, February, 1846 — September, 1848; the Rev. Sherlock Bristol, October, 1848 — October, 1849; the Rev. William B. Brown, August, 1850 — April, 1855; the Rev. Caleb E. Fisher, June, 1855 — May, 1859; the Rev. S. C. Leonard, September, 1859; the Rev. E. S. Williams; the Rev. George F. Wright is the present pastor.

Religious services were first commenced at Ballardvale in 1847. First, a Sabbath school; and then evening meetings were conducted by persons from neighboring churches and the seminary. Episcopal services were held in Depot Hall till August, 1849. Worship in that form not receiving sufficient support, a Union Society was formed, and a preacher employed for six months. At the end of that time, he joined the New England Conference, and gathered a Methodist church about the early part of 1850. The Methodist Society erected a meeting-house in 1851. Services have been held somewhat irregularly, they not having been able to support a resident preacher.

The Union Society repaired to Union Hall, where they maintained public worship till the erection of their new meeting-house, which was dedicated to public worship Sept. 3, 1866. The Rev. Henry Solomon Green has been their pastor since its formation, in 1854. He was installed by a council of Congregational churches, April 1, 1855. Their new house has a seating capacity for three hundred persons.

Phillips Academy is the oldest incorporated academy in the State; was founded April 21, 1778; incorporated Oct. 4, 1780. It had its origin in the liberality of Hon. Samuel Phillips, of Andover, Mass., and his brother, Hon. John Phillips, of Exeter, N. H., sons of the Rev. Samuel Phillips, the first pastor of "Old South Church," Andover. The original design of the founders was rather a private establishment, to be under the personal supervision of the donors, than a public high school. The first object of this institution is declared to be the promotion of virtue and true piety; the second, instruction in the English, Latin, and Greek languages, together with writing, arithmetic, music, and the art of speaking; the third, practical geometry, logic, and geography; and the fourth, such other of the liberal arts and sciences, or languages, as opportunity and ability may hereafter admit, and the trustees shall direct.

Although these two Phillips brothers furnished the means for establishing this institution, there is still another that deserves more than a passing notice, — one who was the "real projector and chief patron of Phillips Academy." It was the Hon. Samuel Phillips, Jr., a grandson of the Rev. Samuel Phillips. "It was the favorite work of his life"; and although overwhelmed with the cares and duties incident to public life and office throughout the exciting days of our struggles with the mother country, yet he found time to plan and to carry out his original ideas of a classical school in his native town of Andover. He succeeded in diverting funds of his father and his uncle, of which he was the legal and presumptive heir, and inducing them to endow this school as joint founders. They entered heartily into his plans, and intrusted him with the labor of executing the same. The first thing to be decided upon was the location of the school. Efforts, earnest and repeated, were made to obtain a location near his own and his father's residence, in the North Parish, and many attempts were made to purchase the present site of Dr. Thomas Kittridge's house, with the grounds adjoining. Failing in this, they began to look elsewhere, and during the month of January, 1777, made their first purchase of

land of Solomon Wardwell, situated on the present southerly corner of Main and Phillips streets, and extending along the old road as far as the old well, on the common, south-east of the first printing-house, containing twenty-two acres, or thereabouts, besides another lot of seventeen acres on the opposite side of Main Street, in the westerly part of the present seminary grounds. On the first of March, the same year, another purchase was made, of twelve acres, on the north side of Phillips Street, along the line of Main and School streets, northerly, extending nearly to the English dormitories, and to the west a short distance beyond the old "Abbot House"; also, twenty-eight acres lying west of the first parcel in the first purchase, on the south of Phillips Street; with another lot of thirty acres, over the hill as far south as the old cross-roads, also thirty-two acres. — making in all one hundred and forty-one acres, which, with the buildings, and two hundred acres in Jaffrey, N. H., and $5,380 in money, were given for the support of a "Free School or Academy in the South Parish in Andover."

On the first lot of land, first mentioned, stood an old carpenters shop, which was immediately removed to the northerly corner of Main and Phillips streets, upon the south side of the late Samuel Farrar's door-yard, and fitted for a school-room for the new institution. The building was thirty-five by twenty feet, and finished in the plainest possible manner, with accommodations for about thirty scholars. Soon after the purchase of these lots of land, Judge Phillips removed from the North Parish to the old "Abbot House," which is now standing on Phillips Street, and which has become invested with much historic interest. In the meantime a constitution had been prepared, and a board of trustees — consisting of Hon. Samuel Phillips, A. M., Hon. John Phillips, LL. D., Hon. William Phillips, Hon. Oliver Wendell, A. M., Hon. John Lowell, LL. D., the Rev. Josiah Stearns, A. M., the Rev. Elias Smith, M. A., the Rev. William Symmes, D. D., the Rev. Jonathan French, M. A., His Honor Samuel Phillips, LL. D., the Rev. Eliphalet Pearson, LL. D., Mr. Nehemiah Abbot — had been formed. The first meeting of the board of trustees was held in the west room of that house.

Here this institution may be said to have had its birthplace. In this house Judge Phillips resided for a time, and afterwards it became the residence of the successive preceptors of the school, — Eliphalet Pearson, Ebenezer Pemberton, and Mark Newman. When the theological seminary was founded, Dr. Leonard Woods occupied the house, and here he gave his first course of lectures on divinity. At that time, on all the territory known as "Andover Hill," were but two houses, besides the new academy building, — one near the site of the "Abbot" Professor's House, the other a few rods south of the old printing-house.

This first school exceeded the expectations of the founders, and as the numbers increased, it was deemed advisable to apply to the General Court for an Act of incorporation, which was granted in October, 1780, and the original name of "Phillips School" changed to "Phillips Academy." The Rev. Eliphalet Pearson was appointed by the trustees as the first principal, and Joseph Mottey as assistant in the new institution, which has grown from one of the earliest to one of the most prosperous of any in the country, one that has been as useful in promoting the object of its founders, viz., "piety and virtue," as any to be found.

This school had been in existence but two years before it was found to be too small for the purposes intended, and as early as 1780 the subject of a new school building was agitated. The plan and location were finally determined upon in 1784, and in 1785 a building was completed. On the thirtieth day of January, 1786, the school removed into its new quarters. This building was a two-story edifice built of wood, with library, recitation-rooms, and study-room on the lower floor, arranged for one hundred pupils, and a spacious hall on the second floor, for exhibitions and other public uses. The old school-house remained on the original site several years, and was used as a singing-room, and afterwards for storage, till it was sold and removed in 1803, and remodelled for a dwelling-house, which was torn down several years since. The new building was built at the joint expense of the two original founders, and Hon. William Phillips, of Boston, at a cost of $13,166.66, and stood on an open lawn, near the south-west corner of the present seminary lawn, and just west of the new library building, corner of Main and Salem streets, till destroyed by fire in January, 1818.

During the following year a new building was erected, of brick, eighty feet in length, and forty feet in breadth, two stories high, with a cupola, which was used for school purposes, till the erection of the larger building on School Street, in 1865. This building served the purposes for which it was erected upwards of fifty years, and is now used as a gymnasium, and stands a little distance south of the seminary buildings. In the meantime a stone building was erected for the increasing patronage, and was known as the English Academy, or "Old Stone Academy," which was destroyed by fire in 1864.

The present academy building, situated on the south side of School Street, is an elegant brick structure, with slate roof, fifty feet wide by ninety feet long, with two high and lofty stories above a light and airy basement. The upper room is used as an exhibition hall of the full size of the building, which is well lighted from the roof, and has a seating capacity for twelve hundred persons. The spire from the top of the building is about one hundred feet from the ground.

The first and second stories are used for recitation, instrument, library, and coat rooms, &c. In these rooms are distributed photographs of large size and value, representing scenes in Rome, Pompeii, and other ancient cities of the Old World. The cost of the building was $45,000.

As the relation this institution has sustained to the literary life of the nation, not only through its educational instrumentality, but in an even more direct manner, is of the most intimate description, it makes it a proper object of notice at this time.

The number of educators whose training for useful service in various colleges was begun at Phillips Academy, Andover, is very large. Among the pupils of its very first year were two, who became respectively a Tutor and a President of Harvard College, were John Abbot and Josiah Quincy. Mr. Quincy was a son of the patriot known in history as Josiah Quincy, Jr., and after having spent six years at the academy, graduated at Harvard, in 1790, and was subsequently its President for sixteen years, from 1829 to 1845. Mr. Abbot, who both was born and died in Andover, graduated at Harvard in 1784, was for five years a Tutor in the college, and in 1801 was elected Professor of Languages at Bowdoin College, being one of the first two officers of that new institution. He was afterwards its Librarian and Treasurer. The academy also fitted for college [1784–1786] Benjamin Abbot, who graduated at Harvard in 1788, and became the first Principal of Phillips Academy, Exeter, which position he filled for fifty years; [1784–1786] John T. Kirkland, a graduate of Harvard in 1789, and President thereof from 1810 to 1828; [1784–1786] Micah Stone, Harvard 1790, for several years Tutor at Harvard; [1787–1789] Joseph McKean, Harvard 1794, afterward Professor of Rhetoric and Oratory in Harvard; [1789–1790] Timothy Alden, Harvard 1794, President of Alleghany College; [1794–1795] Samuel Willard, Harvard 1803, Tutor in Bowdoin College; [1796–1797] Thomas A. Merrill, Harvard 1801, Tutor and Treasurer of Middlebury College; [1796] Levi Frisbie, Harvard 1802, Tutor and Professor of Latin, Natural Theology, Moral Philosophy, and Political Economy, at Harvard; [1797–1801] John White, Harvard 1805, and afterward Tutor at Harvard; [1798–1799] John Farrar, Harvard 1803, Tutor and Professor of Natural Philosophy at Harvard; [1798–1801] Benjamin Burge, Harvard 1805, Tutor at Bowdoin; [1805] Samuel P. Newman, Bowdoin 1816, and first Professor of Rhetoric and Oratory at Bowdoin, from 1824 to 1839; [1805] Daniel Poor, Dartmouth 1811, President of Batticotta College, Ceylon; [1810–

1814] Charles D. Cleveland, Dartmouth 1827, Professor of Latin and Greek in Dickinson College, and of Latin in the University of New York; [1811–1813] Asa Cummings, Harvard 1817, Tutor at Bowdoin; [1814–1815] Samuel Williston, founder of Williston Seminary at Easthampton, Mass.; [1815–1823] Leonard Woods, Jr., Union College 1827, and President of Bowdoin from 1839 to 1866; [1816–1818] Luther Wright, Yale 1827, First Principal of Williston Seminary; [1816–1819] Jonas Burnham, Bowdoin 1823, Principal of Farmington Academy, and otherwise prominently connected with educational work in Maine; [1822] John Kendrick, Professor in Kenyon and Marietta Colleges; [1820–1823] William A. Stearns, President of Amherst College from 1854 to 1876; [1831] Abner J. Phipps, Dartmouth 1838, for many years Agent of the Massachusetts State Board of Education; and [1853–1854] William T. Harris, now Superintendent of Schools, St. Louis, Mo. Other educators, graduates of later years, space would fail us to mention. A cursory examination of the catalogue shows that fifteen of the students of the academy have become presidents of colleges, and sixty, at least, professors in colleges and professional schools. Other teachers would form a legion.

Of strictly literary labor, many of the individuals named above have performed not a little. President Quincy was the author of a delightful memoir of his father, Josiah Quincy, Jr., which was re-edited by his daughter, Miss Eliza Susan Quincy; of a history of Harvard College, in two volumes; of a municipal history of Boston "during two centuries"; of a life of John Quincy Adams, and of other works. President Kirkland published a number of commemorative discourses and historical papers, and wrote a life of Fisher Ames, which is, perhaps, the most important of his printed works. Prof. McKean wrote much on historical topics, — a life of John Eliot being one of his publications. Prof. Farrar published largely through the instrumentality of the American Academy, of which he was secretary, and prepared a series of text-books in science for his college classes. Prof. Newman published treatises on rhetoric and political economy. Prof. Cleveland was, perhaps, better known even as an author than as an instructor; the list of his published works,—chiefly text-books,— comprising nine or more titles. Among them are compendiums of English and American literature, and an edition of Milton's Poetical Works. Prof. Cummings was formerly the editor the "Christian Mirror"; and President Woods, besides having at one time edited the "Literary and Theological Review," has published a translation of Knapp's Theology; of the Hakluyt Manuscript, edited by him, a full account was given in the "Literary World" for May, 1877.

From 1787 to 1792, Phillips Academy had for a pupil Charles Pinckney Sumner, the father of Charles Sumner; and from 1792 until 1794, by a curious coincidence, Stephen Longfellow, Harvard 1798, and Charles Lowell, Harvard 1800, afterwards respectively the fathers of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow and James Russell Lowell, were schoolmates in the institution.

But in more direct ways than any we have yet mentioned, has Phillips Academy, Andover, contributed to our literary history. Octavius Pickering, the famous law reporter and editor, and the author of a "Life of Timothy Pickering," his father, studied here in 1803–1806; Joseph E. Worcester, the lexicographer, in 1805; Rev. Dr. Leonard Withington, the Newburyport divine and commentator, in 1809–1811; Eleazer Lord, editor of "Lempriere's Biographical Dictionary," and author of a number of works on financial, religious, and scientific themes, in 1810; George P. Marsh, the author of the well-known treatises on the English language and on "Man and Nature," in 1816; the late lamented Edmund Quincy, journalist, historian, and novelist, in 1817–1823; Nathaniel P. Willis, in 1821–1823; the Rev. Dr. Hubbard Winslow, author of a number of widely read theological and religious works, in 1818–1820; the late N. S. Dodge, magazinist and journalist, in 1823–1825; the late Prof. Henry B. Hackett, D. D., foremost among American Biblical scholars and writers, in 1823–1826; the Rev. Dr. Ray Palmer, the hymn writer, in whose "My faith looks up to Thee," Christians of every sect are glad to join, in 1823–1826; Charles K. Whipple, journalist, in 1824–1827; in 1824–1825, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, and his brother, John, in 1825–1826; and in 1826–1828, the late Rev. Dr. James M. Macdonald, of Princeton, author of the "Life and Writings of St. John." Of journalists, there were also Sidney E. Morse, in 1802–1805, and his brother, Richard Carey Morse, in 1803–1805; of librarians, Timothy Farrar, of the Dartmouth College Library, in 1801–1802; Henry A. Homes, of the New York State Library at Albany, in 1823–1826; and Isaac P. Langworthy, of the Congregational Library, Boston, in 1833–1835; and of the servants of art and science, if we glance at them, Samuel Finley Breese Morse, the painter and telegraph inventor, in 1802–1805; and Horatio Greenough, the sculptor, in 1814–1815. Ministers, of course, it is not our purpose to mention, though the list includes such names as Joseph Tuckerman, 1792; John Codman, 1793–1794; and William Goodell, 1811–1813; nor can we include the great company of public-spirited citizens who, by other than literary lives, have contributed to the intellectual advancement of their race; for example, William Wheelwright, 1814, who made such signal improvement, to this end, of his residence in South America. Indeed, if we were to confine this enumeration strictly to literary workmen, and should undertake to continue it down to the latest date, and follow out what the great mass of living graduates of Phillips Academy are at present doing in the world, with the pen, we should speedily lose our way in a wilderness. We will only, therefore, add that, of the successive instructors in the school, Dr. S. H. Taylor, Prof. C. A. Aiken, John J. Owen, Drs. Lyman Coleman, Alonzo Gray, S. R. Hall, W. H. Wells, Charles A. Young, and Mr. James S. Eaton, are all known by their printed works as well as by their proper educational careers.

Theological Seminary. — The Theological Seminary of Andover had its origin in Phillips Academy. In the year 1789, Hon. John Phillips, a donor to that institution, in furtherance of an early desire for the religious education of the people, donated the generous sum of $20,000, "for the *virtuous* and *pious* education of the youth of genius and serious disposition" in this academy. In his last will he left one-third part of all the estate of which he died possessed, "for the benefit more especially of charity scholars, such as may be of excelling genius and of good moral character, preferring the hopefully pious; and such of those who are designed to be employed in the great and good work of the gospel ministry, having acquired the most useful human literature in either of these Academies, or other seminaries, may be assisted in the Study of Divinity (if a Theological Professor is not employed in either of the two forementioned Academies) under the direction of some eminent Calvinistic minister of the Gospel, until such time as an able, pious, and Orthodox Instructor, shall at least in part, be supported in one or both these Academies, as a Professor of Divinity; by whom they may be taught the important principles and distinguishing tenets of our holy Christian religion."

To this fund Hon. William Phillips, of Boston, bequeathed the sum of $4,000 in aid of the same design.

In June, 1807, the trustees of the institution, expecting other donations to the theological fund, applied to the General Court for power to hold real estate for educational purposes, and obtained the following Act of incorporation: —

"*Commonwealth of Massachusetts.*

"*Whereas*, the Trustees of Phillips Academy have petitioned this Court for liberty to receive and hold donations of charitably disposed persons, for the purpose of Theological Institution, and in furtherance of the designs of the pious Founders & Benefactors of said Academy, and, whereas it is reasonable that the prayer should be granted;

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives in Gen-

eral Court, assembled and by authority of the same, that the said Trustees of Phillips Academy be, and they are hereby impowered to receive, purchase, and hold, for the purposes aforesaid, real and personal estate, the annual income whereof shall not exceed $5,000, in addition to what they are now allowed by law to hold; provided the income of the said real and personal estate be always applied to said objects, agreeably to the will of the Donors, if consistent with the original design of the Founders of the said Academy."

"This institution having been duly incorporated with power to hold property in trust, Mrs. Phebe, widow of the then recently deceased Lieut. Gov., Samuel Phillips, of Andover and Hon. John Phillips her Son, obligated themselves to build with all convenient despatch two buildings, one for the accommodation of the Students, the other for the Stewards family and various public uses."

At the same time, and by the same instrument, Samuel Abbot, Esq., of Andover, set over to the abovenamed trustees $20,000 in trust as a fund for the purpose of maintaining a Professor of Christian Theology and for the encouragement and support of students in divinity. Both of the abovenamed buildings and the interest or annual income of the said sum of money were to be forever appropriated and applied by the trustees aforesaid for the use and endowment of a public theological institution in Phillips Academy, such as described by the donors, and to be regulated by their statutes.

In the meantime, preparatory measures had been made by others to found a similar institution, of which West Newbury was to be the location. It was, however, agreed upon that two institutions of this kind were not needed, and so near together; and after much consultation, the parties agreed to unite.

Accordingly, on the twenty-first day of March, 1808, Moses Brown, Esq., and Hon. William Bartlett, both of Newburyport, and the Hon. John Norris, of Salem, united with the former donors and founders, and set over to the trustees of Phillips Academy and to their successors in office, a donation in trust, — Mr. Brown giving $10,000, Mr. Bartlett, $30,000, and Mr. Norris, $10,000, as a capital fund, "the interest or annual income to be applied to the maintenance of two professors in the Theological Institution, which had then been lately founded."

For the purpose of seeing that everything is conducted agreeably to the wishes of the donors, a board of three visitors were appointed by the original and associate founders, with power to elect their successors, and to fill vacancies. It is expressly stipulated that the funds above mentioned should be kept separate from each other and the whole from Phillips Academy funds.

Every professor in the seminary should be a master of arts of the Protestant reformed religion, in communion with some Christian church of the Congregational or Presbyterian denomination, and sustain the character of a discreet, honest, learned, and pious man; that he should moreover be a man of sound words and orthodox principles in divinity, according to that form of sound words or system of evangelical doctrines, drawn from the Scriptures, and denominated the Westminster Assembly's Shorter Catechism, and more particularly expressed in the creed prepared by the founders.

"Every person therefore appointed or elected a professor in this seminary, was required, on the day of his inauguration into office, and in the presence of the *Trustees*, publicly to make and subscribe a solemn declaration of his faith in divine revelation and, in the fundamental and distinguishing doctrines of the gospel of Christ, as above referred to; and he was farthermore solemnly to promise, that he would open and explain the scriptures to his Pupils with integrity and faithfulness; that he would maintain and inculcate the Christian faith as above expressed together with all the other doctrines and duties of our holy religion, so far as might appertain to his office, according to the best light God should give him; and in opposition, not only to Atheists and Infidels, but to Jews, Papists, Mahometans, Arians, Pelagians, Antinomians, Arminians, Socinians, Sabellians, Unitarians and Universalists, and to all heresies and errors, ancient or modern, which might be opposed to the gospel of Christ or hazardous to the Souls of men; — that by his instruction, counsel, and example, he would endeavor to promote true piety and godliness; that he would consult the good of this Institution and the peace of the churches of our Lord Jesus Christ on all occasions, and that he would religiously observe the Statutes of this Institution, relative to his official duties and deportment and all such other Statutes and Laws, as might be constitutionally made by the Trustees of Phillips Academy, not repugnant thereto."

It was also ordained, "That, the preceding declaration should be repeated by every Professor in this seminary, in the presence of the Trustees at the expiration of every successive period of five years; and that no man should be continued a Professor in the Institution, who should not continue to approve himself, to the satisfaction of the said Trustees, a man of SOUND and ORTHODOX principles in Divinity, agreeably to the system of evangelical doctrines, contained in the aforesaid Catechism and Creed. It was further provided that the visitors should subscribe the same creed, and in the same manner with the professors."

Thus the institution originated, and was opened for students in October, 1808, under the instruction and government of the Rev. Eliphalet Pearson, LL. D., and the Rev. Leonard Woods, D. D., assisted during the first year by the Rev. Moses Stuart, A. M. The first year they received thirty-six students.

From that day to the present it has undergone several internal changes, and several generous donations have been received from various sources. It is open to Protestants of all denominations. From this institution ministers are laboring all over this country, and in many foreign countries.

The following is a general summary of the students of the seminary, as appears by the last triennial catalogue: —

Graduates in the Full Course,	1,618
Persons not completing the Full Course,	851
Graduates in the Special Course,	5
Members of Remaining Classes,	48
Resident Students,	26
Resident Licentiates,	148
Total,	2,696

There have been 844 deceased out of the above number.

Abbot Female Academy was incorporated January 29, 1829, and opened May 6, 1829. This is the first incorporated academy for girls only in the State, if not in New England. Mrs. Sarah Abbot, of Andover, was its first benefactor. She contributed one thousand dollars towards the erection of the academy building; and, beside subsequent gifts, finally made the trustees the residuary legatees of her estate, the whole amount being over ten thousand dollars. Among other benefactors have been Hon. George L. Davis, of North Andover, whose gifts amount to over seven thousand dollars. Mr. John Smith and his brother, Peter Smith, of Andover, have given about thirty-five hundred dollars each.

The grounds, which originally consisted of one acre of land, the gift of Dea. Mark Newman, in 1829, now embrace upwards of twenty acres, affording gardens, pleasure-grounds, and a grove. There are four buildings on these grounds, — the academy, a two-story brick structure, with an observatory for the telescope, and three boarding halls. The present value of the real estate is about $40,000. The are several cabinets and school apparatus, art collections, library, &c. The recent collection of three thousand shells, made by the Rev. Frank A. Wood, is very valuable, as is the equatorial telescope, built by Alvin Clark, of Cambridge. The telescope and philosophical apparatus were gifts from past scholars, and other friends of the institution.

The following is a list of the principals since the organization.

The first principal was Charles Goddard, a graduate of Yale College in 1826. He planned and superintended the erection of the academy. The first teacher of modern languages was the now venerable Dr. William G. Schauffer, missionary at Constantinople. Mr. Goddard remained but two years. He was succeeded by Samuel Lawson (Bowdoin College, 1828). Left, Oct. 7, 1834.

Samuel Brown (Dartmouth College, 1831), now president of Hamilton College. Entered on his office in the spring of 1835; left in 1838.

The Rev. Lorenzo L. Langstroth (Yale College, 1831). Remained only six months, from June 22, 1838, to February, 1839.

The Rev. T. D. P. Stone (Amherst College, 1834). Dec. 3, 1840, to Oct. 15, 1842. A teacher of elocution in Boston.

The Rev. Asa Farwell (Middlebury College, 1838). Fall of 1838 to Nov., 1852. Now pastor of a church in Ashland, Neb.

Miss Nancy Judson Hasseltine. July 21, 1853, to Jan. 29, 1856.

Miss Maria J. B. Brown. March 24, 1856, to May 5, 1857.

Miss Emma L. Taylor. June 12, 1857, to June 19, 1859.

Miss Philena McKeen, July 1, 1859, is the present principal, and the institution is in a flourishing condition.

"*Punchard Free School.*"—Benjamin Hanover Punchard, the founder of the "Punchard Free School," was born in Salem, Mass., Dec, 16, 1799, and died in Andover, April 4, 1850, in the fifty-first year of his age. By his last will and testament he bequeathed the munificent sum of seventy thousand dollars to the town of Andover for the purpose of founding the school which now bears his name. The school at present has for its support a permanent fund of sixty thousand dollars; the remainder of the bequest, by the terms of the will, to be used for a building, &c. In the words of the generous donor, "Said school shall be under the direction of Eight Trustees of whom the Rector of Christ Church is to be one; also, the ministers of the South Parish and West Parish Congregational Societies to be members; Also, the remaining five to be chosen by the inhabitants of Andover in town meeting, to serve for three years; two of whom to be taken from Christ Church Society, two from the South Parish Society, and one from the West Parish Society. Said School to be free to all youths resident in Andover, under the restrictions of the trustees, as to age and qualifications. No Sectarian influence to be used in the School; the Bible to be in daily use; and the Lord's Prayer; in which the pupils shall join audibly with the teacher in the morning, at the opening, the said trustees to have the Sole direction; and power, also to determine and decide whether the School shall be for males only, or for the benefit of both sexes. Said School to be located in the South Parish of Andover, but free for all the Parishes equally."

The school edifice was commenced in June, 1855, and completed Sept. 1, 1856. The Rev. Samuel Fuller, D. D., delivered the address at the dedication, Sept. 2, 1856. On the following day the school was opened. The building was totally destroyed by fire on Tuesday morning, Dec. 15, 1868. The structure was seventy-five feet long, forty-five feet wide, and two stories high. It was of pressed brick, with rustic corners of freestone, and slated roof. The town has erected a high-school building, which is now occupied by this school.

The first principal was Peter Smith Byers, A. M., of Andover, of Harvard College, assistant teacher in Phillips Academy, and principal of the high school, Providence, R. I. He was elected March 13, 1854. Resigned on account of ill health April 7, 1855, and died March 19, 1856.

The second principal was Nathan M. Belden, A. M., of Wilton, Conn., of Trinity College, Hartford. He was elected principal Jan. 1, 1855, and resigned Feb. 27, 1857.

The third principal was the Rev. Charles H. Seymour, of Haverhill, elected Feb. 27, 1857, and resigned October, 1858.

The present principal is William Gleason Goldsmith, A. M., of Harvard College. He was elected Nov. 1, 1858, and resigned April 11, 1870. The school was discontinued one year, from September, 1870, to September, 1871, when the school was re-opened, and Mr. Goldsmith was re-elected, and is now the principal. Mr. Goldsmith was at one time "Peabody Instructor of the Natural Sciences in Phillips Academy."

The present town of Andover is a delightfully located town, bounded on the north by Dracut and Lawrence, on the north-east by North Andover, on the south by North Reading and Wilmington, on the south-west by Tewksbury, and contains about 10,000 acres of land. It is situated in latitude 42° 38′ 26″, longitude 71° 6′ 4″. It is twenty-two miles north of Boston by railroad; fifteen miles north-west from Salem; ten miles east from Lowell. The surface of the soil is gently undulating, with here and there considerable elevations, the most prominent of which is "Holt's Hill," otherwise known as "Prospect" Hill, situated about one mile south-east of the seminary. This hill is 423 feet above the level of the sea, and from its summit the most lovely views may be had on any fine, clear day. Upwards of thirty church spires may be counted from here. This place was selected by Prof. A. D. Bache, of the United States Coast Survey, several years since, as the most eligible site from which to obtain the best outline of the coast.

A farm-house, erected on this hill, has stood over 160 years, and has been in the "Holt" family through eight generations, and is now in possession of Ballard Holt.

The other hills of the town are: Pine Hill, a short distance east of the seminary; Carmel Hill, north of the centre village; Pole Hill, at Ballardvale; Wood's Hill, west of Haggett's Pond; besides the Seminary Hill, at the centre village. A modern writer thus describes the view from this hill in the centre of the town. "The surrounding amphitheatre of hills, which lie in pleasing elevations along the horizon; the rich and fertile spots upon their sides, covered with exuberant vegetation and smiling upon the distant beholder; the intervening valleys, through one of which meanders the placid Shawshine on its way to its labor-saving task in turning the ponderous wheels and giving motion to the complicated and nimble machinery of the adjacent factories; the happy intermingling on every side of field and woodland; and the gorgeous, golden sunsets at the soft and balmy hour of evening, — render it one of the most enchanting places for summer residence in all New England."

Another writer gives the following description of a view from the "Old Stone Cabin," near the seminary grounds: "To the north-west of this beautiful spot, take a bird's-eye view of the tall mountains of New Hampshire, beautifully defined on the horizon, and seen with their snow-white caps; or directly north, only three miles distant, may be seen Lawrence, with its mammoth factories, stretched along the shores of the beautiful Merrimac; or, perchance it be evening, we see thousands of lights glaring in the distance, like so many stars in the firmament, giving light to a world of spindles; and, still nearer, the centre village of Andover, some fifty feet below the sills of the "old stone cabin," with its church steeples, rising far above the surrounding buildings, as if their shadows were a protecting shield; they are apt mentors to a busy and thrifty people, and of which happily throughout New England they have been peculiarly an evidence."

Rivers and Ponds. — The town is well watered by the Merrimac on its north-westerly boundary. The Shawshine, which enters the town at the south-west, and whose northerly course through the centre of the town divides it in twain and passes on to the Merrimac, at Lawrence. There are several smaller streams, as Roger's Brook, Musquito, Fish, Boston, River Meadow, and Frye's brooks, that serve to water the farms and supply water for household purposes.

The ponds in town are Haggett's Pond, containing 220 acres, the waters of which flow through Fish Brook, to the Merrimac, at the westerly end of the town. Foster's Pond, in the south part of the town, contains fifty acres, whose waters empty into the Shawshine near Ballardvale. Pomp's Pond, formerly "Ballard's," containing thirty-

seven and one-half acres, empties into the same, below Ballardvale. There are also two small ponds in the south-east part of the town, — the Beaver-Dam Pond, of three and three-fourths acres; Aslebes Pond, containing two acres. Formerly shad and salmon were taken in large quantities from the Merrimac and Shawshine, and alewives from the smaller streams leading into the Merrimac.

Soil. — The land on both sides of the Shawshine is good, and the meadow-land abundant. The land in the south part of the town is mostly light, gravelly, and plain, to a considerable extent. In the south-west the land is also in plains. In the north-west it is somewhat stony and hilly, and hard of culture. The wood on the plains is mostly pine, often succeeded by oak, which is the principal growth of the town. Formerly considerable walnut, maple, pine wood, and timber, were rafted down the river to Newburyport. The east part of the town is undulating and somewhat rocky, moist, hard of culture, but fertile, and as a whole it is one of the best farming towns in the county.

In several places beds of clay have been found and large quantities of bricks made on the town farm. As many as 300,000 have been sold yearly.

Peat meadows have been discovered, and fuel has been taken from some of them, and used to a limited extent. The geological formation is calcareous gneiss, with an intervening bed of granite, and steatite, or soapstone.

Roads. — The roads of the town, like many other old towns, are crooked, having been accidentally located, following the trails of the Indians, or made to accommodate individuals, the usual custom in early times being to build a house and then lay out a road to it. Whereas now roads and streets are laid out in advance of immediate necessities.

The first settlers of Andover had rough and bad roads to contend with. At first, the people were engaged in clearing the lands and providing themselves with food, and had little use for wide and good roads. Many of them were mere footpaths or bridle-ways. Oxen, at first were used, and the training of horses to a draught was at a later period. The saddle only was used, and horses were trained to carry double, and women rode on a pillion, with their fathers, brothers, or perchance a lover. It is said that Jeremiah Abbott rode from Andover to Wilton, forty-five miles, in one day, with his mother behind him on a pillion. Carriages were very little used for pleasure, or for conveying persons. The pillion went out of use about the close of the last century. Since that time, carriages have been used, and the roads greatly improved. If we will bear in mind that the highways were mere cart-paths through the woods, with stumps still standing, hills ungraded and rivers unbridged, we have some idea of the hardships of that day. When the town was first settled, it was covered with almost impenetrable forests, except in the lowlands or meadows. There were no pleasant fields, nor grassy lawns, nor gardens. The Indians sometimes burned the woods, in order to facilitate taking deer and wild game; and in some places there was but little large wood remaining. Some of the meadows had long, coarse grass, thick and high, which obstructed their progress in fishing and gunning, and hence they usually set it on fire in the autumn months, and fresh grass would come early in the spring following. The woods were filled with the various kinds of birds peculiar to New England, and some wild animals, the worst of which, and the greatest pest to the infant settlement, was the wolf. These were so bold that it troubled the farmers to keep sheep without shepherds to watch them by day, and place them in the folds at night. They had become so annoying that the town offered rewards for every one caught, as appears by the town records: "Voted, that twenty shillings be given for every wolf caught, and carried to the constables."

Andover Turnpike. — Subscriptions for stock for this road were opened in 1804, and an Act of incorporation obtained June 15, 1805, by Jonathan Porter, Joseph Hurd, Nathan Parker, Oliver Holden, and Fitch Hall. The bounds were defined in the Act. It was to run as follows: "From the house of John Russell, in Andover, in an easterly direction, to the east of Martin's Pond, nearly in a straight line to the house of J. Nichols, in Reading; thence to Stoneham, by the west side of Spot Pond, to the Market Place in Medford." This speculation not proving a profitable investment to the stockholders, they surrendered their charter, and the different towns accepted the road as free several years since.

Railroads. — The town is well accommodated by two lines of railroad, — the Boston and Maine following the valley of the Shawshine River, passing through the centre of the town, and furnishing eleven trains daily each way. It has a station at Ballardvale and Andover Village. The Lowell and Lawrence road passes through the north-west part of the town, having one station in the West Parish.

Villages. — As we approach the town from the south, we first enter the neat and picturesque manufacturing village of Ballardvale. The principal business of this village is the manufacture of flannel and woollen cloth. Here is said to have been the first mill in the country that attempted to manufacture mousseline delaines. J. P. Bradlee is the owner and manager of these mills. Near by the railroad station are the extensive works of the late Whipple File and Steel Company, which have ceased operations, and the entire property has been sold. There are two churches here, a post-office, and the usual country variety stores.

Passing from this to the north, curving a short distance to the right, the spires of the centre churches of Andover are in full view. It is situated but a short distance to the east of the Shawshine River,—the principal business street being along the line of the old turnpike, or Main Street, extending south past the seminary and academy buildings. This is well known as the seat of learning, having, besides the usual town schools, four incorporated schools of the highest order. Here we find an elegant Soldiers' Memorial Hall, built of brick, at an expense of about $40,000, erected by subscriptions, —the liberal sum of $25,000 having been given by the originator of the project, John Smith, of the firm of Smith, Dove & Co., — five churches, two hotels, a town house, a masonic lodge, one national bank, one savings bank, one fire insurance company, together with such stores as are needed to supply the wants of the immediate vicinity. The town has a large brick building, with land, used for a "Poor Farm," in which her poor are well provided for. Farming is the leading industry of the town, although there are artisans of every kind usually found in towns of its size.

Abbot Village. — Crossing the river before mentioned to the west, within a mile, is Abbot Village, a small cluster of houses, the occupants of which are engaged in the thread and twine factory of Messrs. Smith, Dove & Co., who manufacture every variety of shoe-threads, twine, and carpet warp, &c., the proprietors of which have generously bestowed gifts to the Seminary Library and Memorial Hall.

Manufactures. — Of the early manufactures, Andover has an interesting history. Among the prominent manufactures of early time, and the most interesting, is the manufacture of gunpowder. Hon. Samuel Phillips, Jr., afterwards Lieut. Governor, erected the first mill in this vicinity, if not in the Colony, for making powder. It was erected by Mr. Phillips, under the patronage of the Colony, and by a resolve of the General Court of January 8, 1776, the preamble of which is as follows: —

"*Whereas.* Samuel Phillips Jr has proposed to build a mill with all expedition, at Andover for manufacturing of Gun Powder, and this court is willing to give all reasonable encouragement to so important and necessary an undertaking. It is therefore

"*Resolved* — That Mr Phillips was to build the mill, and for one year after it was erected, and fitted, the Colony was to supply him with so much salt petre from time to time, as to keep the mill constantly employed, providing the powder could be manufactured as reasonably as it could be purchased. They were also to supply him with salt petre

at cost sufficient for manufacturing, Mr Phillips agreing on his part to find eharcoal and all other materials and also engaging to keep a guard about the mill at all times, to prevent any wicked or designing persons from destroying the same, He was also required to give bonds for the faithful performance of the contract, and further he was to cause to be published all discoveries he might make relative to the construction of the mill and the manufacturing of powder. As compensation he was to receive eight pence per pound for the powder, he manufactured from the Saltpetre furnished by the Colony, when delivered to the Commissary."

Resolve passed, January 9, 1776.

Mr. Phillips entered into this work with his usual zeal. The works were immediately put into operation, as appears by the following account: From April 17 to August 30, 1776, there was received from the Colony, 33,200 pounds of saltpetre; and during the same time, 29,900 pounds of powder were delivered to several towns of the Colony, in quantities varying from 10 to 3,000 pounds, — the largest quantity being to Watertown.

On the first day of June, 1778, the powder-house was blown up, and three persons were killed. Again, on the nineteenth day of October, 1796, two persons were killed by the explosion of the powder-mill; since which time the business has been discontinued.

In 1788, a paper-mill was built by Hon. Samuel Phillips, and conducted by Phillips & Houghton. This mill was burnt in 1811, and rebuilt in 1812; value of paper made yearly was about $10,000, and gave employment for about sixteen to twenty persons.

Marland Village.—A short distance down the river, and adjoining Abbot Village, is another compact settlement, built up through the enterprise and efforts of the proprietors of the Marland Manufacturing Company, woollen-cloth manufacturers.

The manufacture of wool was commenced in this town, at an early date, by Abraham Marland, a native of Ashton Parish, Lancashire, Eng., born Feb. 22, 1772. He first came to Andover in May, 1807, and commenced in a small way, by hand-loom, in a small shed. His work soon attracted attention, and a company of gentlemen erected a mill for his use, which was at Abbot Village. He soon commenced to manufacture woollen goods, such as blankets, flannels, &c. At first he spun the yarn by hand, and let it out to the women in the vicinity to weave. Visiting Boston once a week to sell his goods and purchase stock, he frequently made his trips on foot. After the death of Hon. John Phillips, the property at Marland Village passed into the hands of Peter C. Brooks, Esq., who made additions to it and rented it to Mr. Marland, till Sept. 1, 1828, when he purchased the entire property, on both sides of the river, for $22,000. An Act of incorporation was obtained in February, 1834, by the name of "Marland Manufacturing Company," Mr. Marland becoming the president,—which office he held till his death, Feb. 20, 1849. He was one of the most successful woollen manufacturers in Essex County, and accumulated a large property, of which he contributed largely toward founding and supporting the Episcopal church in Andover, donating the parsonage and burial-ground connected therewith.

Frye Village.—The next village is Frye Village, the principal business of which is the manufacture of twine, thread, &c.; owned and conducted by Messrs. Smith, Dove & Co., before mentioned. This is but a short distance east from Marland Village.

Printing. — The first printing done in Andover was in 1798. Messrs. Ames & Parker set up a press in the South Parish, did a small business, and for only a short time.

In 1813, Timothy Flagg and Abram J. Gould commenced printing, not only English printing, but in Greek and Hebrew languages. Their office was fitted for several of the oriental languages. The successors of this firm were Flagg, Gould & Newman, till 1843; then next was Allen, Morrill & Wardwell, from 1843 to 1849; then Flagg & Wardwell, who were succeeded by Warren F. Draper, in 1854

In 1831, The "Biblical Repository" was established at Andover by Prof. Edward Robinson. In 1835, the "American Quarterly Observer," which was established in Boston in 1833, by Prof. B. B. Edwards, was united with it, with Prof. Edwards as sole editor of the combined periodicals. The two combined continued at Andover till 1837, when it was removed to New York, under the care of Absalom Peters, D. D. From October, 1840, to April, 1842, the Rev. S. B. Treat was associated with Dr. Peters. In 1842, J. H. Agnew succeeded Mr. Treat. In July, 1842, Dr. Agnew became sole proprietor. In 1845, he transferred the same to the Rev. W. H. Bidwell, who conducted it three years, when the Rev. J. M. Sherwood took the work, and in 1851 united it with the "Bibliotheca Sacra." The latter work was commenced under the title of "Bibliotheca Sacra, or Tracts and Essays connected with Biblical Literature and Theology," first published in New York. During the next year it was removed to Andover, its plan enlarged and modified. It then came under the care of Prof. B. B. Edwards and Prof. E. A. Park, assisted by Dr. Robinson and others. Its title then changed to "Bibliotheca Sacra and Theological Review." In January, 1851, the "Repository" and the "Bibliotheca Sacra" were united, and have continued as such to this time, published by Warren F. Draper, bookseller and publisher. To publish a list of all the works that have originated from Andover would be an interesting record, but we must leave that to others, for want of space.

Population of Andover, at various dates.—In 1790, 2,863; 1800, 2,941; 1810, 3,164; 1820, 3,889; 1830, 4,530; 1840, 5,207; 1850, 6,945; 1855, 4,810; 1860, 4,765; 1865, 5,314; 1870, 4,873; 1875, 5,097. In the foregoing table it will be understood that previous to 1855, Andover included the present town of North Andover.

Many of the people of Andover have emigrated to help organize other towns, contributing largely of her population, settling Hampton, Pomfret, Tolland, Windsor, Conn.; Lexington, Bedford, Billerica, Brookfield, Chelmsford, Dracut, and Bradford, in Mass.; Concord, Pembroke, Amherst, Hollis, Wilton, Greenfield, and Conway, in N. H. Others found their way to Fryeburgh, Brownfield, Bluehill, Andover, Bethel, Bridgton, Norway, Albany, and other towns in Maine.

Witchcraft.—The people of Andover suffered, in common with several other places, on account of the delusion of 1692. It is said that over fifty person were complained of for afflicting their neighbors and others. Dudley Bradstreet, Esq., granted thirty or forty warrants for committal to prison, and at length refused to issue any more. He and his wife were accused of being among the number who gave encouragement to the delusion, if not actually engaged in the same, personally. During this delusion Martha Carryer, Samuel Wardwell, and Mary Parker were hung.

BEVERLY.

In the southerly part of the county is an ancient agricultural, industrial, and commercial town, noted for its pleasant prospects, and for the sobriety, integrity, and intelligence of its inhabitants. It is seventeen miles north-east of Boston, by the Eastern Railroad, and two miles north of Salem, with which it is connected by a free drawbridge, about 1,500 feet in length. By the Gloucester Branch Railroad, which here connects with the Eastern Railroad, it has communication with the towns of Cape Ann. Its boundaries are: Wenham on the north, and, for some distance, on the north-east; Manchester, from which it is partly separated by Chubb's Creek, on the east; Beverly Harbor on the south, and Danvers on the south-west and west. Its postal centres are: Beverly, North Beverly, and Beverly Farms in the easterly section. The latitude of the white-spired church is 42° 34′ 38.92″ north; and the longtitude, 70° 54′ 05.20″ west. The average length of the town is 5⅔ miles; the average breadth, 2⅔ miles. The surface of the town is somewhat hilly, with an inclination towards the south; and the scenery is picturesque and varied.

The most noted elevations are: Cherry Hill on the north-west; Brimble Hill on the north; and Bald Hill on the north-east, on which latter Samuel Corning had formerly a wind-mill. From all these the scenic views are very grand, not only of the town of Beverly, with its villages, lakes, and streams, its fields and forests, but also of much of the surrounding towns, and of the city of Salem, and Massachusetts Bay; while, from Mount Pleasant, by Wenham Lake, Green's and other hills at Ryall's Side; Joshua's Mountain, by the harbor, Prospect, Almshouse, Cemetery, and Watcher's Hill, in the centre; Snake Hill, Standley's Grove, Reservoir Hill, Turtle Hill, and the hills near Beaver Pond, Gravelly Brook and the Commons, Pride's Mountain and Foster's Great Rock, in the interior, — are most delightful prospects, both of sea and land. But most attractive of all, are the highlands along the shore, many of which are already occupied by elegant mansions, as is also much of the less elevated shoreland; and all these add greatly to the beauty and attractiveness of the town.

The geological structure consists of sienite, which crops out here and there in naked ledges, in some of which are found specimens of green felspar, polymignite, columbite, and tin ore. Bowlders of every form and size are common, and clay for bricks and pottery is found in several localities, and was worked here for both those purposes at a very early day, and is still continued. Black sand for drying ink appears upon some of the beaches. The only mineral springs are near Snake Hill, and these have been used somewhat for medicinal purposes. Considerable quantities of iron were formerly discovered near these springs, and carried to the early iron-works at Rowley and at Lynn, and worked there; and some of it was carried as far as Bridgewater, where David Perkins, a smith, had removed from here, and set up iron-works there.

The soil is a clayey, gravelly, or sandy loam. It is well adapted to the growth of fruit and forest trees, English hay, esculent roots, oats, barley, rye, and Indian corn. The meadows abound in peat, which, with the sea-weed, furnishes liberal means of fertilization. The native trees are principally oak, birch, pine, maple, hemlock, walnut, and cedar. Among the shrubs indigenous to the place, the most beautiful is the mountain laurel (*Kalmia latifolia*), whose pink and white flowers appear in June, and in rich profusion. The cardinal flower decorates the margin of the streams, and the water-lily the surface of the lakes.

Excellent natural facilities for drainage exist all through the town, and add to its healthiness, comfort, and means of improvement. Its elevation above the level of the sea and ponds gives ready opportunity for surface drainage; while, for the lower drainage, are the following outlets: Alewive Brook, the outlet of Beaver Pond, and of its extensive water-shed, runs into Miles River, the outlet of Wenham Lake, and a tributary of Ipswich River; and on this brook, where it crosses Dodge Street, Conant's grist-mill formerly stood. Bass River Brook rises near the westerly side of Wenham Pond, flows along by Cherry Hill, and under Horse Bridge, to the head of the mill pond, near the old dam, where was the first mill of John Friend, who was succeeded by Lawrence and John Leach, John Dodge & Son, and other Dodges and several Woodburys, being in the meanwhile removed down stream to its present site, where Mr. Aaron Dodge and his son, Israel W., still keep the name and the mill good, and, with vastly improved facilities, do here a very large grain and mill business, theirs being the only grist-mill in town. From this mill pond, the arm of the sea, known as Bass River, extends to the harbor, dividing from the more populous part of the town, the village of Ryall Side, which, however, is connected by two excellent roads and bridges. And this village is drained by Bass River, and Porter's or Danvers River, at "Aunt Betty's Cove," and otherwise. Into the mill pond comes the drainage from Round Pond and its surrounding hills and lands, running in part through the Francis brick-yard brook, and also through the brook which formerly divided the lands of Roger Conant and Henry Herrick, and where some of the latter's family carried on the business of currying and other leather manufacture. This brook thence runs under Cabot Street, and the Eastern Railroad, to the mill pond, receiving on its way the drainage, in part, from Wood's Pasture neighborhood. Cat's Swamp, and its surrounding territory near Burnt Hills, also drains into Bass River by a brook running alongside of Colon Street, and under the Gloucester Branch Railroad, and Cabot and Elliot streets, into Garford's, Corning's or Roundy's Cove, a considerable portion of what was formerly that cove being now upland; and this brook also receives the drainage from Hither Pasture neighborhood. Tuck's Pond, hardly now a pond at all, also drains into Bass River. Gally's Brook runs from beyond the cemetery to the sea, near Lothrop Street, and drains a large water-shed. The bridge at Hale Street, under which this brook runs, was formerly known as Gallows Bridge, and the superstitious, in the years gone by, used to dread to pass it in the night. But that dread has long since passed away, and this is now a very attractive thoroughfare. The original owner of a large part of the cemetery lands was John Gally, who here had his home, and hence the true name of the brook and bridge. Cedar Stand, or Sallows Brook, runs from Snake Hill and beyond to the sea, near Gallop's Hill, and on this brook was formerly a grist-mill. Thorndike Brook, from Cove School-house, and beyond, empties into Bardwell's Fish-pond, near Hospital Point, and thence to the sea. Pickman's Brook runs mostly through his land from near Foster's Hill, &c., to Patch's Beach. Patch, or Thissel Brook, is supplied from Turtle Pond and other sources on its march to the sea, and runs its long and circuitous route to the dam at Thissel's Creek, near Patch's Beach; and on this brook Nicholas Woodbury early had a grist-mill, and was succeeded therein by the Biles, Patch, and Thissel families. Witch-lane Woods drain, in part, southerly across the Park, and through the Dexter and the King estates to the sea; in part through the Brimmer estate to Mingoe's Beach, and in part through Loring's Brook, by a circuitous route, through their estates to Plum Cove Beach. From this brook the Loring estates formerly took their water-supply by means of a

water-ram; but the Wenham water-pipes have superseded such use. Sampson's and the Commons region also drain partly that way. Pride's Mountain region drains by a brook crossing the railroad and Hale Street, near Pride's Crossing, and thence through the Paine place to the sea. The old salt pond, mostly on Mr. Franklin Haven's estate, and now mostly improved land, drains itself and its large water-shed by a skilfully-built underground drain into the sea. And this also takes the drainage, in part, of the territory east of Pride's Mountain, through the ancient Haskell estate. Saw-mill Brook, from Wenham to West Beach, has a large, continuous drainage, with several side supplies of other brooks from Raccoon Swamp and other territory, and on this was formerly a saw-mill; while Chubb's Creek absorbs the most easterly drainage of the town, and here a grist-mill was used for many years. And the only water-shed of any size apparently undrained is Bartlett's Swamp, of about twenty acres, and separated from the harbor by a high ridge of land some 500 feet in width. But the water in this swamp even is said to be affected by the rise and fall of the tide; and if so, there is a possible underground drainage here. This was formerly known as Root's Swamp.

About one-third of the 320 acres of the celebrated "great pond," or Wenham Lake, lies in Beverly. Its surface is 34 feet above tide-water, and its water is of singular purity. It annually supplies large quantities of the best of ice, and from it the inhabitants of Salem and Beverly obtain their water supply through the reservoir built by Salem on Chipman's Hill, into which the water is pumped through a mile of pipe, and carried thence by a main supply-pipe down through Beverly, and across the harbor to Salem; and Beverly, by connecting its pipes with this main pipe, gets its water supply, and annually pays Salem therefor.

Beaver Pond, of 20 acres, lying between Bald and Brimble hills, by its outlet helps supply Norwood Lake; a private property of 40 acres of water, with a large water-shed of its own, and formerly the mill-pond of the old Conant Mill, having a good head of water, and, like Beaver Pond, well adapted for fish-culture, and already partially supplied; and these together can be made to add a large water supply to Wenham Lake, if ever wanted. And Turtle Pond, of about two acres, near Beaver Pond, could also easily be made to add its water supply, and that of its water-shed, to the above.

Round Pond, at North Beverly, easterly of Dodge Street, of less than an acre in extent, is a contraction of a much larger pond, now mostly swamp land, and much of it well wooded, while some of it is quite productive in garden and field land. It is reputed very deep, with its waters so dense that no fish can live there.

By the State census of 1875, Beverly had a population of 7,271; of whom 3,478 were males, and 3,793 females. It had one person aged ninety-four years. The number of colored persons was 20; of dwelling-houses, 1,399; of families, 1,790; of voters, 1,748. The town valuation was $8,005,125. The number of farms was 102, embracing 3,487 acres; of horses, 500; of cows, 501. The amount of capital invested in manufactures was $314,700, and the value of goods annually made, $1,654,657. Of these, the value of boots and shoes was $1,539,800. This is the leading business of the people. The value of earthen-ware annually made was $10,000; of bricks, $6,600; of machinery, $5,000; of wagons, $8,000, and of boxes, $9,000. The whole number of persons employed in manufacturing was 1,314. Twenty-four vessels, with a tonnage of 1,848, were engaged in the fisheries, and the value of cod taken was $131,000; of mackerel, $6,000.

Beverly has nine school-houses, substantially new, including an elegant brick house for the High and Briscoe schools. They are all well filled with pupils, who are well classified, disciplined, and taught. Preparation for college can be had in the high school. A school committee of nine supervise all the schools.

The town has a good public library; and nine Sabbath schools have libraries. The "Beverly Citizen," a valuable journal, established in 1859, is published weekly. There are twelve churches, of the following denominations: 3 Congregationalist, 2 Baptist, 1 Unitarian, 1 Universalist, 1 Methodist, 1 Advent-Methodist, 1 Independent, 1 Episcopal, 1 Roman Catholic. The church edifices are generally handsome and commodious, mostly supplied with organs, and other church furniture. They are all supplied with settled pastors, except at North Beverly and Centreville, and the relations are harmonious.

The town has a commodious public hall, with dining-hall overhead, and town offices on the lower floor. The Beverly National Bank and Beverly Savings Bank are located in the Masonic Block, where is also the Post-office, and the Masonic Lodge and Chapter. A Post of the Grand Army occupy Bell's Hall, and there are Farmers' Clubs at Centreville and North Beverly.

The territory of Beverly originally belonged to the Sagamore John, or Masconomo, of Agawam, who welcomed the English to Naumkeag, and to them granted an extensive tract of land. To his grandchildren, however, Samuel and Joseph English, and Jeremiah Wauches, the town paid, in 1700, the sum of £6 6*s.* 8*d.*, and took of them a deed of the place. A few Indian ovens, or flat stones laid in a circle, on which fires had been made, have been discovered in Beverly, and would seem to indicate that the Indians might once have had a settlement here; but the local history of the red men of this place is extremely meagre.

The English commenced a settlement here about 1630, and named the place Bass River. It then belonged to Salem. There was sufficient population here in 1636 to induce John Stone to set up a ferry between Beverly and Salem, near where the bridge now is. Among the earliest settlers were John Balch, Richard Brackenbury, Roger Conant, William Dixey, Ralph Ellingwood, Capt. Thomas Lothrop, John Woodbury, and William Woodbury. They were hardy yeomen, who by the toils and persecutions they had experienced in the mother country, were well prepared to endure the privations and to meet the perils of the wilderness which they chose for their new home. An early grant of land from Salem, to some of those early inhabitants, is still preserved.

"4th of the 11th month (Jan^{y} 4th), 1635. That Capt (William) Traske, John Woodberry, Mr. Conant, Peter Palfrey (afterwards of Reading) and John Balch, are to have 5 farmes, viz: each 200 acres apeise, to form in all a thousand acres of land together, lying & being at the head of Bass river, 124 poles in breadth, and soe runin northerly to the river by the great pond side, and soe in breadth, making up the full quantity of a thousand acres, these being laid out & surveyed by vs.

JOHN WOODBERRY.
JOHN BALCH."

Roger Conant, born in Budleigh, Eng., 1591, came to Plymouth in 1623, removed to Nantasket in 1625, and in the following year to Salem, where he was made a freeman in 1630. He was of signal service to the early Naumkeag settlers, and to the new settlement of Bass River, and died Nov. 19, 1679, in his 89th year. Cotton Mather spoke of him as "a most religious, prudent, and worthy gentleman." It is said that the first house erected at Bass River was called "the garrison house;" but it does not appear that the early settlers here were ever greatly molested by the Indians.

John Winthrop, Jr., had liberty from his father, Jan. 22, 1638, "to set up salt works at Rialside, and to have wood enough for carrying on the works, and pasture for two cows." It is said that the first child born in the place bore the name of Dixey; if so, it was probably of the family of William Dixey, who was admitted freeman in 1634, and died in 1690, having owned much of the southern part of the town.

Mackerel Cove was the early name of the settlement all along our sea-shore, and Oct. 27, 1647, its inhabitants were released from keeping watch in Salem, except on extraordinary occasions. The name of Bass River was often applied to the settlement at the head of that river, but both these were sometimes included in the latter name, and often in that of Cape Ann side. In 1649, the settlers requested of the

church in Salem that "some course be taken for the means of grace amongst themselves, because of the tediousness and difficulties over the water, and other inconveniencies," and on the 2d of Feb., 1650, the Salem church granted liberty to the people on the Bass River side, to employ "an able & approved teacher"; yet they were still to remain connected with the Salem church. They then employed for some time as their spiritual guides, the Rev. Josiah Hobart, the Rev. Jeremiah Hobart, and the Rev. John Hale. In 1656, they built a meeting-house, which stood at the north-west corner of the old cemetery.

On the 20th of September, 1667, a church was organized, and the Rev. John Hale was the same day ordained as its pastor. The names of the original members of this first church are as follows: John Hale, Richard Dodge, Sen., William Woodberry, Sen., Richard Brackenbury, John Stone, Sen., John Dodge, Sen., Roger Conant, William Dodge, Sen., Humphrey Woodberry, Sen., Hugh Woodberry, Nicholas Patch, John Hill, Thomas Lothrop, Samuel Corning, Robert Morgan, John Black, Sen., Lot Conant, Ralph Ellingwood, William Dixey, Henry Herrick, Sen., Peter Woolfe, Josiah Rootes, Sen., Exercise Conant, Edward Bishop, Elizabeth Dodge, Mary Lovett, Elizabeth Haskell, Mary Woodberry, Sarah Leech, Freegrace Black, Elizabeth Corning, Elizabeth Woodberry, Ellen Brackenbury, Hannah Woodberry, Elizabeth Patch, Hannah Sallows, Bethiah Lothrop, Anna Dixey, Anna Woodberry, Sen., Elizabeth Woodberry, Martha Woolfe, Hannah Baker, Mary Herrick, Bridget Luff, Mary Dodge, Sen., Anna Woodberry, Jun., Ede Herrick, Mary Dodge, Jun., Abigail Hill, Lydia Herrick.

The salary of Mr. Hale was £70 per annum, in addition to which he was to have thirty cords of firewood yearly; the use of a dwelling-house, of two acres of land, of as much meadow as would produce about four loads of hay, and the privilege of pasturing his cattle on lands of the parish.

Two days subsequent to the formation of the church, Mrs. Rebeckah Hale was received into it by a letter from the church at Salisbury; and on the 23d of October, Humphrey Woodberry and his wife Sarah, John Clark, Jr., Humphrey Woodberry, Jr., Remember Stone, and Sarah Conant were admitted to full communion on profession of faith and repentance.

The sacrament of the Lord's Supper was for the first time observed by the church on the 29th of September, and on the 13th of October following, Abigail, daughter of John and Hannah Sallows, was baptized, — this being the first instance of infant baptism after the organization of the church.

In 1655, the settlers were allowed liberty to provide for their poor, and to lay out their highways, and on the 6th of November, 1667, it was agreed "to lay out the ways from the meeting house to the mill," and on the 10th of December of the same year, the church held its first fast for "the trouble of God's people in England," and for "tokens of God's displeasure in this land."

The town was incorporated Oct. 14, 1668, and probably received its name from Beverley, a town of about 9,000 inhabitants in the East Riding of Yorkshire, England. The following is the act of incorporation: "The court on perusal of this return judge it meet to grant that Bass River be henceforth a township of themselves, referring it to Salem to accommodate them with lands & bounds suitable for them and that it be called Beverly."

The first town-meeting occurred November 23d of the same year, when Capt. Thomas Lothrop, William Dixey, William Dodge, Sr., John West, and Paul Thorndike were chosen "townsmen," or selectmen.

A fast was observed Aug. 4, 1669, "because of immoderate rains, blasting mildew, cold & storms, to find out the cause and desire the removal of God's frown." Another followed, August 16, "for great sins abounding and breaking forth scandalously in this country, & for deaths of five ministers in about half a year." On November 17, a public thanksgiving was held "for the harvest the Lord hath given."

As some of the people were dissatisfied with the name of the town, which in derision was now and then pronounced *Beggarly*, Roger Conant, then over eighty years old, with thirty-four others, petitioned the General Court, May 28, 1671, to change its name to Budleigh. As the paper is not only curious in itself, but of some historical interest, we insert it here in its original form:

"To the honored General Court, consisting of Magistrates and Deputees, (the 28th of the 3d month 1671). The humble petition of Roger Conant of Bass river, alias Beverly, who hath bin a planter in New England fortie yeers and upwards, being one of the first that resolved and made good my settlement under in matter of plantation with my family in this collony of Massachusetts Bay, and have bin instrumental, both for the founding and carriing on of the same; and when in the infancy thereof it was in great hazard of being deserted, I was a means, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere with me, and that by my utter deniall to goe away with them who would have gon either for England, or mostly for Virginia, but thereupon stayed to the hassard of their lives.

"Now my umble suite and request is unto this honorable Court, onlie that the name of our towne, or plantation may be altered or changed from Beverly and be called Budleigh. I have two reasons that have moved me unto this request. The first is the great dislike and discontent of many of our people for this name of Beverly, because (we being but a small place) it hath caused on us a constant nickname of *Beggarly*, being in the mouths of many, and no order was given, or consent by the people to their agent for any name, until we were shure of being a town granted in the first place.

"Secondly. I being the first that had house in Salem, (and neither had any hand in naming either that or any other town,) and myself with those that were then with me, being all from the western part of England, desire this western name of Budleigh, a market towne in Devonshire, and neere unto the sea, as wee are heere in this place, and where myself was borne. Now in regard of our firstnesse and antiquity in this soe famous a collony, wee should umblie request this small preveledg with your favors and consent, to give this name above said, unto our town. I never yet made sute or request unto the Generall Court for the least matter, tho' I thinke I might as well have done, as many others have, who have obtained much without hazard of life, or preferring the publick good before their own interest, which, I praise God, I have done.

"If this my sute may find acceptation with your worships, I shall rest umbly thankfull, and my praises shall not cease unto the throne of grace, for Gods guidance and his blessing to be on all your waightie proceedings, and that iustice and righteousness may be everie where taught and practiced throughout this wilderness, to all posterity, which God grant. Amen.

"Your worships umble petitioner and servant, ROGER CONANT."

The Court replied, June 1, 1671, that "the magistrates having perused and considered this request, see no cause to alter the name of the place as desired; their brethren, the deputies, hereto consenting," and so the beautiful name of Beverly, signifying Beaverley, or Beaverfield, was continued. The Court this year granted Mr. Conant 200 acres of land.

It appears that the interior of the meeting-house was finished by degrees, just as the seats were needed, since liberty was granted in 1671 to certain women to build three of them at their own expense. Richard Brackenbury and Samuel Corning, Sr., "had leave to make a seat at the north end of the pulpit," and Mrs. Hale, wife of the minister, "to make a seat where she now sitteth." In 1672, Mrs. Lothrop was permitted "to make a seat convenient by the chief pillar."

The town, ever alive to the interests of education, contributed, Feb. 14, 1672, £13 to Harvard College. On the 18th of March the bounds were fixed between Beverly and Manchester. John Stone

was this year allowed to keep an ordinary, or tavern, and one barrel of powder was granted to the town by the General Court. The population of the town at this time is supposed to have been about six hundred.

On the 5th of October, 1674, it was voted to build a school-house near the meeting-house, twenty feet long, and sixteen feet wide. It was to serve also as a watch-house. Owing to the Indian disturbances, this project seems to have been delayed for several years, and the meeting-house continued to be used for educational purposes. Samuel Hardie was, so far as the records show, the earliest school-teacher. As late as 1667, he used the meeting-house as a school-room, and his salary was £20 per annum. He also practised physic.

In the early part of 1675, the whole Colony were thrown into consternation by the assaults of the Indians, under Philip of Pokanoket, on the frontier settlements. Four garrison-houses were erected in Beverly, one at the meeting-house, one at Bass River, another at Mackerel Cove, in the easterly part of the town, and another "near the house of John Dodge, Senior," near Wenham line.

Soldiers from this town enlisted patriotically, for the common defence. The following were engaged, in 1675, under Capt. Joseph Gardner, of Salem, at Fort Narragansett; viz., William Balch, William Bonner, Lot Conant, Christopher Read (wounded), William Ferryman, Christopher Browne, Moses Morgan, John Traske, William Allen, John Clarke, Richard Hussband, Thomas Rayment, Ralph Ellingwood, Henry Bayley, Thomas Blashfield, John Ellingwood, Joseph Morgan, William Dodge, Jonathan Biles, William Rayment, Elias Picket, Samuel Harris, and John Dodge. John Ellingwood (wounded), Thomas Parlor, and Samuel Collins, served this year at Wells, Me.

Capt. Thomas Lothrop, then about sixty-five years of age, was appointed to the command of a company raised in this town and vicinity, and styled "The Flower of Essex," which was ordered to the western frontier. He was one of the early settlers, and had served in 1654 as a captain, at the capture of Port Royal. Lieut. Thomas Whittredge, Lieut. Edward Rayment, William Woodberry, Humphrey Woodberry, and Peter Wooden, of Beverly, were with him in that expedition; and from the "new Friary," at Port Royal, he secured a bell for the Beverly meeting-house.

In September, 1675, the headquarters of the English were at Hadley, and on arriving at this place, Capt. Lothrop was despatched with his company to Deerfield, for the purpose of transporting some grain, which had not been destroyed in the conflagration of that town by the Indians, to the encampment at Hadley. While returning with his loaded teams, and, it is said, delaying by the way to gather grapes, he was suddenly attacked by a body of about seven hundred of the enemy, who had been lying in ambuscade, and, after a desperate struggle, he himself, and all but seven or eight of his brave followers, fell. Of those killed, Capt. Lothrop, Josiah Dodge, Peter Woodberry, and John Balch, belonged to Beverly. The scene of this sanguinary engagement was at Muddy Brook, near Sugar-loaf Mountain, in the southerly part of Deerfield. In 1835, it being the 160th anniversary of the battle, an address was given by Edward Everett, and in 1838, a marble monument was erected over the remains of the slain. It bears the following inscription: —

"On this ground Capt. Thomas Lothrop and eighty four men under his command, including eighteen teamsters from Deerfield, conveying stores from that town to Hadley, were ambuscaded by about 700 Indians, and the Captain & seventy six men slain, Sept. 18th, 1675 (old style)." The soldiers who fell, were described by a contemporary historian, as "a choice company of young men, the very flower of the County of Essex, none of whom were ashamed to speak with the enemy in the gate."

> "And *Sanguinetto* tells you where the dead
> Made the earth wet, and turned the unwilling waters red."

"This monument erected August 1838." The estate of Capt. Lothrop was at Mackerel Cove, a part of the now beautiful estate of Mr. Benj. F. Burgess, and a street, in 1837, was named "Lothrop," in perpetuation of his memory. His sister Ellen inherited his property, and became the second wife of the celebrated Ezekiel Cheever, the most noted schoolmaster in the Colony.

In 1690, the town was visited by the small-pox, and it afforded relief to Lawrence Dennis and family, afflicted with that disease. It also borrowed this year £48 10*s*. "to buy great guns & ammunition," and also to erect a fort. Andrew Elliott was elected this year as the first town clerk, and his salary was fixed at thirty shillings per annum. He died March 1, 1703–4, and was succeeded by Robert Woodberry, "who discharged his duties with great fidelity."

In the unfortunate expedition against Quebec, this year, Beverly was represented by a company under Capt. William Rayment. It suffered greatly, and was subsequently remunerated for its services by the grant of a township of land. The Rev. Mr. Hale served as one of the chaplains in this campaign. Soon after his return, he found the church and state distracted with the witchcraft delusion, which commenced in the family of his friend, the Rev. Samuel Parris, of Salem Village, early in 1692, and spread as wild-fire through the towns of Essex County.

Dorcas Hoar, Sarah Morell, Susanna Rootes, and Job Tuckey, of Beverly, were accused of being in confederation with the devil, tried, condemned and imprisoned; but finally restored to liberty. It was charged against the latter that he could "as freely discourse with the devil" as with his accuser, John Landers, that he had "afflicted" Mary Warren, Mary Walcot, Betsey Hews, and that he caused the death of Andrew Woodberry. Mr. Hale, in common with the notable men at that period, countenanced the delusion; but in October, of this dark year, his own wife was accused of witchcraft. His opinion in respect to it then suddenly changed, and he subsequently wrote a treatise against the delusion. In it he says: "I have had a deep sense of the sad consequences of mistakes in matters capital, and their impossibility of recovering when completed; and what grief of heart it brings to a tender conscience to have been unwittingly encouraging of the sufferings of the innocent." He is said to have been the first to resist the tide of fanaticism in respect to diabolical possession.

In 1696, Beverly had four soldiers, viz., John Burt, Benj. Carrill, John Pickworth, and Israel Wood, in the service at Fort St. Mary, near Saco, Me.; but it does not appear that any of them were lost.

The town had at this time become somewhat noted for ship-building, and many of its people were engaged in the fisheries.

On the 2d of May, 1700, many cattle were lost in a great rain and hail storm, which continued three days; and on the 15th of the same month, the town was called to deplore the death of Mr. Hale, its beloved minister. He was born in Charlestown, June 3, 1636; graduated at Harvard College, in 1657; married for his first wife Rebeccah Byles, for his second, March 3, 1684, Mrs. Sarah Noyes, of Newbury, and for his third, Aug. 8, 1698, Mrs. Elizabeth Somerby. Mr. Hale was a man of good abilities, generous and patriotic. The inscription on his gravestone is: "Here lies the body of the Reverend Mr. John Hale, a pious & faithful minister of the gospel, and pastor of the First Church of Christ in this town of Beverly, who rested from his labors on the 15th day of May, anno domini, 1700, in the 64th year of his age."

A grammar school was established in 1700, and Mr. Robert Hale was appointed master. He was succeeded the next year by Mr. Daniel Dodge, the ancestor of the Hon. William E. Dodge, of New York. James Hale and Pyam Blowers, sons of the first two ministers, subsequently taught the school, which continued in operation, with but slight interruptions, for 124 years.

The town chose, December 5, 1676, two constables, "by reason of the difficulties of the times, on account of the Indian war."

But the war soon closed, by the death of Philip, and prosperity again prevailed. The town, at this period, and still later, was much

infested with wolves; and for killing three of them, in 1678, John Edwards was allowed three pounds from the public treasury. In the year following, March 29, John West gave a flagon to the church, "as a token of his love."

In 1680, Wenham claimed 600 acres of land, as promised by Salem, before Beverly was set off, and, after controversy, had that quantity added to her territory from Beverly, thus changing the boundary line from Miles River to substantially the present line.

In 1682, a new meeting-house was erected, fifty feet in length, by forty feet in width, at a cost of £370 in silver. The tower from which the bell-rope depended, rose from the centre of the building; and an hour-glass, for measuring the length of the sermon, stood upon the pulpit.

On the 22d of September, 1700, Miss Emma Leach, fifty-two years old, and only twenty-five inches high, visited Salem, and awakened great curiosity.

The Rev. Thomas Blowers, born in Cambridge, Aug. 1, 1677 (Harvard College, 1695), succeeded Mr. Hale, and was ordained pastor of the church, Oct. 29, 1701, his salary being £80 per annum, and £100 being allowed him for a "settlement."

The population of the town, in 1708, had arisen to 1,680, and nothing for some time occurred to agitate the public mind.

In 1711, Mihil Sallows and Joseph Gray were slain by the Indians at Winter Harbor; and three or four years later, Benjamin Dike lost his life the same way, at Cape Sable.

In 1713, the town granted land on which to erect a school-house at the Farms, and in October of the same year, the Second, or North Parish, was incorporated, and a plain meeting-house, fifty feet long and forty feet wide, was erected. A church was organized December 28, 1715; and on the same day, the Rev. John Chipman, born in Barnstable, and a graduate of Harvard College in 1711, was ordained as pastor. The original members of the church were, John Chipman, Edward Dodge, Jonathan Rayment, Joseph Dodge, Jonathan Dodge, Josiah Woodberry, Elisha Dodge, Nehemiah Wood, John Dodge, Senior, John Leach, Joseph Herrick, John Crecy, Jacob Griggs, John Brown, and Moses Fluant.

The people were seated in the meeting-house by persons appointed for this purpose, who were "to show respect to ye aged people amongst vs, as allso to have a speciall regard unto persons that have don service for ye benefit of ye precinct, and have contributed high in building of ye hous for ye publick worship of God, and purchasing land for ye use of ye people of sd. precinct, and are Likely to pay considerable in ye Charge of ye ministry amongst us; as allso not to seat above two thirds so many persons in any seat, as ye seats will comfortably hold." It was voted, March 29, 1715, that the front seat in the east gallery "be parted in ye middle," for the accommodation of the young unmarried women.

Robin Mingo, a negro slave, owned by Thomas Woodberry, was admitted to the First Church, July 15, 1722. He married Deborah Taylor, an Indian, and died in 1773. His name is perpetuated in "Mingo's Beach."

On the 29th of October, 1727, a great earthquake occurred, which so alarmed the people, that many here, as in the neighboring towns, made a profession of religion, and united with the church.

On the last day of this year, Mr. Chipman wrote, in respect to this event: —

"Soli Deo Laus qui et terram violenter exagitavit et super populum suum spiritum suum effudit."

"Praise be to God only, who hath shaken violently the earth, and also poured out his Spirit on his people."

As many as twenty-five were added to Mr. Chipman's church during the year.

The physician of the town at this period, was Dr. Robert Hale, Jr., born Feb. 12, 1702–3 (Harvard College, 1721), and, after holding many offices, civil and political, died in 1767. He represented the town thirteen years in the General Court, and was, in 1740, appointed manager of the scheme for the relief of the Colony, known as the Land Bank. In the expedition against Louisburg, under Gen. William Pepperell, 1745, he commanded a regiment, and was subsequently a sheriff for Essex County.

The Rev. Mr. Blowers, of the First Church, died, much lamented, June 17, 1729, and fifty pounds were appropriated to defray the expenses of his funeral. A monument of granite was erected over his remains, in 1818, with this inscription: "In memory of Rev. Thomas Blowers, obt. June 17, 1729, in the 28th year of his ministry." His successor was the Rev. Joseph Champney, whose ordination occurred Dec. 10, 1729, and whose salary was £140, in province bills of credit, his "settlement" being £200 of the same currency. He continued in the pastorate until his decease, which took place Feb. 23, 1773, when the Rev. Joseph Willard, who had been settled as a colleague the preceding year, became the sole minister of the church and parish.

In 1730, a disagreement arose in the Second Parish, in respect to singing in church, some persons being desirous of continuing the practice of "lining out" the hymns, and singing by rote, while others preferred to sing by note. A compromise was made, and Mr. Joseph Cresey was desired to set the tune whenever they sang by note. It was voted, moreover, that no psalm-tune, not in common use with them, should "be speedily introduced, set, or sung in this congregation, excepting the tune called St. Maries, or Hackney, and the tune called Commandment tune." On the 28th of October, of the year following, it was however, voted "that they would for the future time, sing at all times of singing in public worship, the psalm tunes by rule, according to the notes pricked in our psalm books." The Bay Psalm Book was then in use, and a few engraved tunes were appended to this version of the Psalms as early as 1696.

In 1752, when Danvers was made a town, all that territory between Bass River and Bass River brook on the east, and Frost Fish brook on the west, was annexed to Beverly, most of the families there already belonging to the Second Parish here. And in 1857, the village that had grown up on that territory, near Danversport, comprising some 330 inhabitants and 1,500 acres of land, including the memorable Brown's Folly Hill, was annexed to Danvers.

In 1753, the population was 2,023. This year, Robert Hooper, Jr., of Marblehead, presented a bell to the Second Parish, which, in token of its gratitude, granted a pew to the donor, and also voted, "to lath and plaster over-head, over the above said pew upon the parish's cost." In 1754, the whole number of slaves here was twenty-eight.

In 1757, the town hired a part of a house for the use of two families of the Acadians, over whom it had supervision, and whom it was ordered by the government to support. These unfortunate people were industrious, and supported themselves in part by making wooden-ware, brooms, and baskets,

In 1765, the population was 2,163. This year, Widow Priscilla Trask was appointed pound-keeper; and, two years later, a powder-house was erected, on the south side of the common. Anterior to this, the stock of ammunition had been kept in a room in the meeting-house of the First Parish, which was taken down June 27, 1770, for the erection of a new edifice. This was erected at a cost of about £1,300. The Psalms and Hymns of Dr. Watts were introduced, against strong opposition, into the Second Church, in 1770. So strong was the feeling, that one man, rising one day in the midst of the service, declared that, had Solomon seen what was going on that day, he never would have written, "There is nothing new under the sun."

The sentiment of the town, as that of Manchester, was equally set against inoculation for the small-pox.

On the 1st of May, 1771, Mr. Enos Hitchcock, born in Springfield, and graduated at Harvard College in 1767, was ordained as colleague of Mr. Chipman, then in declining health, at a salary of £60 per annum. Mr. Chipman died March 23, 1775, at the age of eighty-five years, and after a pastorate of nearly sixty years, and Mr.

Hitchcock, then with an increase of salary, became the sole pastor of the Second Church.

In the great struggle for American independence, Beverly bore a conspicuous and patriotic part.

In its instructions, May 22, 1769, to Henry Herrick, representative, it says: "We apprehend that no power on earth can justly deprive us of our essential rights, & that no man can be safe, either as to his life, liberty or property, if a contrary doctrine should prevail; therefore, we recommend to you a firm, but prudent opposition to all unconstitutional measures." A committee of correspondence was appointed at the close of 1773, consisting of John Leach, Benjamin Jones, Henry Herrick, Samuel Goodridge, and Josiah Batchelder, Jr. The latter gentleman was chosen representative to the General Court, Sept. 26, 1774. As the times darkened, and a resort to arms appeared inevitable, the militia companies were called to frequent drills, the arms and ammunition put in order, watchmen were appointed, and four watch-houses built.

On the reception of the news of the battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775, Capt. Joseph Rea, and Capt. Caleb Dodge, repaired, with most of the male population capable of bearing arms, to the scene of the conflict, and assisted in driving the British troops back to Boston. In the skirmishes, Reuben Kennison was killed, and Nathaniel Cleaves, Wilson Dodge, and Samuel Woodbury were wounded. The fort on Woodberry's Head was put in order and manned by forty soldiers. The women of Beverly exhibited a patriotism not inferior to that which moved their husbands and their brothers to take up arms against the enemy. They cheerfully prepared garments for the soldiers, and lent in every possible way their aid for carrying on the war.

There were several fortifications erected in town during the Revolution, and, in accordance with the habits of those days, forty-seven gallons of rum were used while building the breastwork at Woodberry's Head.

In the autumn of 1775, a little scene occurred in the harbor, not without dramatic interest. The British ship of war, "Nautilus," twenty guns, discovered and chased a privateer of Beverly up towards the town, until it grounded on the flats. As the tide was too low for the "Nautilus" to secure its prize, it began to fire upon the town. One shot struck the shed of Thomas Stephens, and destroyed his chaise. Seizing his gun, he ran to the beach and returned the fire. Col. Henry Herrick, in his military costume, followed him. Others hurried to the landing, opening a fire upon the "Nautilus," which, by reason of the ebbing of the tide, careened so as to be unable to use its guns. The cannon from Hospital Point, in Salem, now opening a fire on the unlucky vessel, it received shots, fore and aft, until, the tide arising, it was enabled to make sail for Boston. For its defence, the town raised a second breastwork on Paul's Head; and in January, 1776, hired twenty-four men as a night-watch on West's Beach, and also near the dwelling-house of Benjamin Smith. Col. Glover's regiment was stationed at the fort. The town, June 13 of this year, pledged "their lives & fortunes to support" the Continental Congress, in the event of its declaring the Colonies independent of Great Britain; and, in its subsequent action, it redeemed its pledge. In almost every battle of the Revolution, Beverly was bravely represented.

The Rev. Enos Hitchcock served as a chaplain of Col. Ebenezer Francis's regiment in 1777, and subsequently of Gen. Patterson's brigade. Of the clothing of the army at Valley Forge he wrote, May 15, 1778: "Numbers of our brigade are destitute even of a shirt, and have nothing but the ragged remains of some loose garments as a partial covering."

Col. Ebenezer Francis, of Beverly as early as 1764, took an active part in the prosecution of the war. He was colonel, in 1776, of a regiment stationed at Dorchester Heights. Col. Francis fell at the head of his regiment at the battle of Hubbardton, near Whitehall, N. Y., July 7, 1777, being shot through the right breast. His brother, John Francis, served as adjutant in the same regiment, and subsequently held the same office in the regiment of Col. Benjamin Tupper. He also held many civil offices, and died July 30, 1822, aged 69 years. Their brothers, Aaron Francis and Thomas Francis, also were in the Revolutionary Army.

The town appropriated £300 in 1777 to supply the families of its soldiers then in the army, and in 1778 the three captains of the militia companies were directed to obtain the quota of soldiers for the army in Rhode Island, "giving the preference to town inhabitants." The next year a fine of £5,400 was imposed upon the town for its failure to supply its full quota of soldiers, to which it truly said, in a petition to have the fine remitted, "that as a town they had furnished more men, & been at greater expense in carrying on the war than almost any other town, in proportion to their abilities."

During the whole period of the Revolution, Beverly was extensively engaged in privateering. In 1775, Capt. Hugh Hill captured and brought into Beverly Harbor the schooner "Industry," where her cargo was sold, and the vessel delivered over to the public service. Capt. Hill, who was a native of Ireland and own cousin to President Andrew Jackson, also captured several other British vessels, mostly near his native coast, and brought them into Beverly, which was then the headquarters of the infant navy of the country, William Bartlett, of Bartlett Street, being the first navy agent, and into his charge were given many of the vessels and cargoes captured by the vessels owned or employed by the Government.

Capt. Eleazer Giles, in 1776, captured three British vessels laden with stores, and brought them safely into port. Capt. Elias Smith, commander of the "Mohawk," twenty guns, captured a Guineaman of sixteen guns, off the West Indies, and sent it into Beverly. Capt. Benjamin Lovett and Capt. John Tittle were also among the successful commanders of armed vessels in that service.

The Rev. Enos Hitchcock was dismissed from the pastorate of the Second Church, April 6, 1780, and installed over a church in Providence, R. I., Oct. 1, 1783, where he continued until his death, which occurred Feb. 27, 1803. He was an eloquent preacher, and noted for his benevolence. He published a work of fiction, entitled, "Charles Worthy; or, Memoirs of the Bloomsgrove Family," 2 vols., 12mo, 1790, and several discourses. He was succeeded in the pastorate of the Second Church in Beverly, by the Rev. Daniel Oliver, who was ordained Oct. 3, 1787, and continued in the ministry here until 1797, when he was dismissed by a mutual council. He was followed by the Rev. Moses Dow, whose ordination took place March 18, 1800, the Rev. Stephen Peabody, of Atkinson, N. H., preaching the sermon. Mr. Dow graduated at Dartmouth College in 1796, and died at Plaistow, N. H., in 1837, at the age of 66 years. He was an able and a faithful minister.

On the 30th of Dec., 1781, the Rev. Joseph Willard took his leave of the First Church, in order to assume the office of President of Harvard College, and was succeeded in the pastorate by the Rev. Joseph McKean, who was ordained May 11, 1785. His salary was £200, and his "settlement" £300. In 1802 he became the first President of Bowdoin College, in which office he continued until his death, July 15, 1807. "He was," said Dr. William Jenks, "a humble pupil of the Redeemer, and his life will rank among the most consistent, simple, and impressive examples of the efficacy of his faith." He was followed in the pastorate by the Rev. Abiel Abbot, born in Andover, Aug. 17, 1770, Harvard College 1792, and installed here Dec. 13, 1803. He died, greatly respected and lamented by his people, June 7, 1828. Under his pastorate the church became mainly Unitarian in sentiment, and so continues to the present day. In the year following his decease, his "Letters from Cuba" were published in Boston; and a volume of his sermons, edited by S. Everett, subsequently appeared.

The declaration of peace in 1783 was hailed with demonstrations of

the liveliest joy, and the town soon rose from the depression caused by the war, and increased in wealth and population.

The first cotton-mill erected in America, was built here in 1788, and in the following year was visited by Washington.

In 1785, "Four shillings and half a pint of rum were allowed for a day's labor on the highways." The selectmen in 1787 fixed the price of bread at three cents and seven mills per pound, and this year firewards were first chosen. They were, Moses Brown, Andrew Cabot, George Cabot, Joseph Lee, and Joseph Wood. In the year following, the Essex Bridge, 1,484 feet long, and 32 wide, connecting the town with Salem, was constructed, at a cost of about $16,000. The right to take toll for seventy years was granted to the proprietors. Anterior to this, the communication with Salem was by ferry, and the first ferryman was John Stone, 1636, whose fee was, for a stranger, 2*d.*; and for a citizen of Salem, 1*d.* The number of fishing vessels belonging to the town this year (1788) was 32, employing 271 men. The population of the town in 1790 had arisen to 3,290, and the town was then divided into six school districts.

Of early Baptists here, Josiah Batchelder, Esq., wrote that his mother's mother, Ruth, the wife of Capt. William Rayment was "the daughter of a Baptist minister, and that some of her descendants are tinctured with her whims to this day. She was otherwise a very worthy woman," and probably the daughter of the Rev. Isaac Hull, minister of the First Baptist Church of Boston.

Before 1790, there were several persons from Beverly connected with the Baptist church at New Rowley, now Georgetown, and after that with the Baptist church at Danversport, who occasionally held meetings in a chapel where is now the Rose House, in Wallis Street. March 25, 1801, they organized the First Baptist Church in Beverly, and united with the society (formed Sept. 30, 1800) in settling the Rev. Joshua Young, from Maine, as their pastor, at a salary of £95; and built a meeting-house on Cabot Street, nearly opposite Elliot Street. Mr. Young left in December, 1802, and removed to Vermont, and has descendants there and at the West; his wife being of the Daniel Wallis family. He was succeeded March 11, 1803, by the Rev. Elisha S. Williams, a Yale graduate, who, when quite young, had served with General Washington on Long Island. He resigned in October, 1812, and afterward resided in and near Boston, doing much ministerial work, and late in life returned to Beverly, where he died Feb. 2, 1845, aged 88, at the home of his daughter, Mrs. Samuel S. Ober. His first wife, and the mother of his children, was a Livermore, and a sister of the mother of ex-Vice-President Hannibal Hamlin. The next pastoral call was given June 11, 1814, to the Rev. Hervey Jenks, of Hudson, N. Y., a young man of great promise; but disease suddenly terminated his earthly life, just four weeks from the day of his call.

July 2, 1817. The First Church admonished brother Francis Lamson, and sisters Martha Lamson, Molly Gray, Sally G. Ashton, Jane Greele, and Mary Trask, who had connected themselves with the Baptist church without dismission, for "uniting with a close communion church," thereby "renouncing us as a church," and "we exhort them to return to the bosom of their native church."

The next pastor was the Rev. Nathaniel W. Williams, from Salem, ordained Aug. 14, 1817, after more than a year's previous service as acting pastor. He resigned Nov. 7, 1824, and removed to Windsor, Vt., and Aug. 20, 1836, he accepted a call to return to his old pastorate here, and remained till April 17, 1840, when he resigned, but continued in the work of the ministry in various localities until near his death, which occurred in Boston, May 27, 1853, at the age of 69. He was one of the delegates from Beverly, to the State Constitutional Convention of 1820. His son, the Rev. N. Marshman Williams, D. D., is one of the prominent ministers of the Baptist faith. Nov. 30, 1825, the Rev. Francis G. Macomber, a pastor and preacher of rare gifts and graces, was ordained, but died quite suddenly July 1, 1827, very widely lamented. The Rev. Richmond Taggart, supplied in 1829; and the Rev. Jonathan Aldrich was settled June 30, 1830, and resigned May 24, 1833. During his ministry the meeting-house was enlarged, 160 new members were added to the church, and twenty-six were dismissed to form the Baptist church at Wenham. The Rev. John Jennings was ordained Sept. 10, 1834, and resigned June 20, 1836. Then followed the second pastorate of Mr. Williams, during which the meeting-house was taken down, and used in building a larger house, seventy-four by forty-eight feet, farther down Cabot Street, where is now the Roman Catholic church. Nov. 11, 1840, the Rev. Charles W. Flanders was settled, and continued to Sept. 12, 1850, when he resigned, and after that was settled at Concord, N. H., Westborough, Mass., and Kennebunkport, Me.; and finally returned and built a home for himself and family on Thorndike Street, in Beverly, where he passed the remainder of his days amid a community in which he had a large circle of friends, besides those of his former pastorate. Here he did much ministerial work, including the charge of the Second Baptist Church at Beverly Farms for a year or more. He died Aug. 2, 1875, aged 68½ years, and widely lamented. February 5, 1852, the Rev. Edwin B. Eddy was ordained, and resigned Nov. 16, 1855, after quite a prosperous pastorate. During his ministry the meeting-house was enlarged, by adding twenty feet to its length. The Rev. Joseph C. Foster was settled here, Aug. 7, 1856, after fourteen years successful service at Brattleborough, Vt., and continued till December, 1872, when he accepted a call to his present pastorate at Randolph. During his long ministry, the beautiful new chapel, now the military armory, was built, and after that the elegant and spacious church at the corner of Cabot and Abbott streets, including vestry and other conveniences, and both the church and society had prospered. The old church was first sold to the Crispins, and afterwards to the Roman Catholics.

The Rev. E. B. Andrews, now President of Denison University, at Granville, Ohio, succeeded Mr. Foster for one year; and he was succeeded by the Rev. D. P. Morgan, the present pastor. Both of these last two pastors served in the Union army in the Rebellion War, and each has delivered anniversary addresses on Memorial Day, on invitation of the Post of the Grand Army here.

Nov. 9, 1802, the Third Congregational Church was organized, in connection with the society, whose name was changed in 1837 to that of "The Dane Street Society of Beverly." Their meeting-house was finished in December, 1803, and the Rev. Samuel Worcester, D. D., preached the dedicatory sermon. The Rev. Joseph Emerson, its first minister, born in Hollis, N. H., Oct. 13, 1777, graduated at Harvard College in 1798, and was ordained here Sept. 21, 1803, the Rev. Dr. N. Emmons preaching the sermon. He was quite a successful pastor, but his health was not fully equal to continue that work; he resigned Sept. 21, 1816, and afterward engaged in educational work, in which he always took an especial interest. He was an ardent lover of the Bible, and his lectures and expositions thereon exhibited much research, and were of great interest. He wrote the "Memoir of Miss Fanny Woodbury" (a Beverly missionary to the heathen), and also several other works, and died at Wethersfield, Conn., May 13, 1833. One or more of his sons have been successful ministers of the gospel. The Rev. David Oliphant succeeded here Feb. 18, 1818, and continued till 1833, taking a very prominent part in temperance work and other good causes. During his ministry the old church edifice was burned down, and the present one erected upon its site; and this has since been greatly beautified and enlarged, and provided with all modern conveniences. Oct. 13, 1834, the Rev. Joseph Abbot was ordained, Prof. Ralph Emerson preaching the sermon. Mr Abbot resigned active work in March, 1865, but preached occasionally until April 11, 1867, when suddenly summoned by death to give account of a life of able and useful service in his Master's work. He was succeeded by the Rev. E. H. Titus for the year 1866; and he by the present pastor, the Rev. O. T. Lanphear, D. D., who was installed Oct. 23, 1867.

This church was organized originally by members from the First

Church, who thought that the latter was not quite Orthodox or Calvinistic enough for their views; and this became more or less a matter of controversy for many years afterwards.

In 1812 Miss Nancy Ingersoll requested dismission from the First to the Third church, for the reason that the pastor "seldom or never touched upon the peculiar doctrines of the gospel," meaning "the sacred Trinity; the Deity of Jesus Christ; the total depravity of the human heart; the election and perseverance of the saints; and the eternal decrees of God." This request was referred to John Dyson, Thomas Davis, John Ashton, Samuel Ober, and Robert Rantoul, who reported that their "Reverend and beloved pastor does preach the essential doctrines of the gospel of Christ, with zeal and affection, and we have reason to bless God that his preaching has, as we fully believe, been the means under God of convincing and converting sinners, of comforting saints and of building up the church of Christ in this place." This report was accepted, and after some mutual explanations the request was granted, and Miss Ingersoll united with the Third Church. In 1814 the First Church adopted a rule granting to its members, "as an indulgence, liberty to attend worship with another congregation, and recommendation to occasional communion with another church," but refusing dismission to any church in town, except for "very special reasons." And in 1820 Miss Tamma Kilham asked such dismission for her "better edification." But this was refused, as was also a mutual council to determine the matter. Upon this she called an *ex parte* council, who decided in her favor, and she accordingly joined with the Third Church, but not without a protest from the First Church, which, with the other documents in the case, was published in the Boston "Recorder," and created quite a discussion. In 1823, on the settlement of the Rev. Ebenezer Poor at the Second Church, the objections to allow the Rev. Dr. Abbot, of the First Church, to participate in the exercises on account of his liberal opinions, also became the subject of a very able and elaborate controversy in the Salem "Gazette" and other newspapers. The death of the Rev. Dr. Abbot, in 1828, brought these differences of opinion into collision within the First Church and Society, and resulted finally in the settlement of the Rev. Christopher T. Thayer, Jan. 27, 1830, as a Unitarian, by a vote of seventy-six to thirty-eight; the Rev. Dr. Thayer, of Lancaster, his father, preaching the ordination sermon. The result of this settlement was that the more Orthodox portion withdrew and joined the Dane Street Church and Society, and later, most of them withdrawing from there, with others, and organizing the Washington Street Church and Society. Mr. Thayer continued in a long and peaceful pastorate till 1859, when he retired from the ministry and removed to Boston, where he now resides. He is a descendant of Andrew Elliot, the first Beverly town clerk, and has always taken much interest in the affairs of the town. His address at the bi-centennial anniversary of the First Church gives marked evidence of such interest, and is a valuable historical work. Mr. Thayer was followed by the Rev. John C. Kimball, for a period of nine years, who has since then been settled in Oregon, at Newport, R. I., and now at Hartford, Conn. The present pastor is the Rev. Ellery Channing Butler, who was settled in 1872. This parish has a ministerial fund of about $13,000, besides which it has $5,000 given by Dea. Charles Davis as a fund to its Sabbath school. The present house of worship was built in 1770; enlarged, 1795; remodelled, 1835; again remodelled some thirty years later, adding alike neatness, comfort, and convenience. It stands very nearly on the same spot where stood its two predecessors. Dec. 19, 1820, a new chapel, built by private subscription and furnished by the ladies, was dedicated. It was then located on Federal Street, but later removed to its present location in the old cemetery.

A late event of the eighteenth century worthy of note, in respect to this town, was the capture of the schooner "Alert," Capt. Jacob Oliver, Jan. 18, 1799, by three French privateers, as it was entering the harbor of Santander. Capt. Oliver had but two guns, yet with these he made a heroic defence, beating off one vessel and engaging with another until the arrival of the third, with ten guns, when he was obliged to strike. The population, in 1800, had come up to 3,381. The cod-fishery was carried on at this period with great profit.

In 1802 the Beverly Bank was incorporated, with a capital of $160,000. The Hon. Israel Thorndike was the first president. A social library was established on the 20th of January of this year, the sum raised for it being $660. The books were selected by Dr. Joshua Fisher, Nathan Dane, Thomas Davis, and the Rev. Dr. McKean.

On the 1st of March, 1807, the Beverly Charitable Society, since changed to the Fisher Charitable Society, was incorporated. Its design is to relieve any citizens of the town who, by sickness or misfortune, may stand in need of aid. To this society Dr. Joshua Fisher (1749–1833) gave $200, and left a legacy of $1,000. Dr. Elisha Whitney, who had practised here successfully since 1792, died here Feb. 22d of this year, much lamented.

A Sabbath school, one of the earliest in the State, was opened in 1810, by Miss Joanna Prince and Miss Hannah Hill, holding its sessions mostly in the First Parish meeting-house, but participated in for several years by members of all the churches, until separate schools were set up in each congregation.

Mr. Israel Trask commenced the manufacture of britannia-ware here in 1812. It was the first made in America.

The Rev. Humphrey C. Perley was settled over the Second Church on the 2d of December, 1818; was dismissed, June 13, 1823, and was followed by the Rev. Ebenezer Poor, who was ordained Oct. 29th of the same year, and continued in the pastorate until March, 1829.

On the 18th of April, 1823, the Hon. George Cabot, an eminent merchant, born in Salem, 1751, and long a resident of Beverly, died. He was president of the famous Hartford Convention in 1814, and was a personal friend of George Washington and Alexander Hamilton. Two of his brothers, Andrew and John Cabot, and a brother-in-law, Joseph Lee, also resided in Beverly, and were prominent merchants.

On the 9th of June, 1824, Liberty Lodge of Freemasons was established here, the first Master being Col. Jesse Sheldon, and the first secretary, Stephens Baker. A handsome brick building for the accommodation of the lodge, costing about $20,000, and situated upon the corner of Washington and Cabot streets, was erected in 1867, and parts of it are now used for the post-office, bank, and other purposes. After the completion of the building, the Amity Chapter of Royal Arch Masons was chartered, which occupies the hall for their meetings.

The town was honored, Aug. 31, 1824, by a visit from Lafayette, whose arrival was announced by a salute of thirteen guns from Ellingwood's Point. Upon a beautiful arch, thrown over Essex Bridge, was written: "Welcome, Lafayette, the man whom we delight to honor." An address of welcome was delivered by the Hon. Robert Rantoul, to which the General made a brief reply and then departed.

The town lost, in the death of Dr. Abner Howe, May 15, 1826, a skilful physician and a valued citizen. He was born in Jaffrey, N. H., 1781, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1801.

A church was organized at Beverly Farms in 1829, and, Sept. 23d, of that year, the Rev. Benjamin Knight was ordained pastor. A meeting-house of brick was dedicated in January of the year following. This church soon changed from the Christian to the Calvinistic form of the Baptist belief, and among its pastors have been the Revs. Mr. Gilbert, P. P. Sanderson, Sumner Hale, J. W. Lothrop. The present minister is the Rev. C. W. Redding.

The Rev. Ebenezer Robinson, succeeded Mr. Poor as pastor of the Second Church, October, 1830, and labored here until his dismission, which occurred Jan. 27, 1833. He was succeeded by the Rev. Edwin

M. Stone, who published a history of Beverly in 1843, and whose pastorate covered the space of thirteen years. His successor was the Rev. T. D. P. Stone. After him the Rev. Alexander J. Sessions was installed acting pastor in 1872, and the Rev. F. K. De Bos in 1876.

The subject of temperance attracted attention in Beverly, as early as the war of 1812, when the effort was for the suppression of intemperance, and this interest continued until the practice of total abstinence became very general in this community, and its influence was combined in all the various forms of organizations which here aided in the good work.

The Hon. Robert Rantoul delivered before the lyceum in Beverly, in 1830, 1831, and 1832, some very valuable lectures on the history of this town, which have formed the basis of most of what has been written of that history.

The Hon. Nathan Dane, born in Ipswich, Dec. 27, 1752, but long a resident of Beverly, died here Feb. 15, 1835. He framed the celebrated ordinance of 1787, which saved the vast north-western territory from slavery, and wrote "A General Abridgment and Digest of American Law," a work of great labor, in nine volumes, and published in 1829. He also founded the Dane Professorship of Harvard University, and also the Law Hall of that institution.

The Fourth Congregational Church was organized Sept, 1, 1834, and the meeting-house dedicated, Dec. 29, 1836. The Rev. John Foote was this year installed as pastor. This was afterwards merged in the Second Church, and its meeting-house sold and removed down Cabot Street to opposite Baker's Tavern Corner, and altered into Mystic Hall, with business rooms on the lower floor.

On the 10th of December, 1834, Robert Thorndike, a native of this town, died at Camden, Me., at the remarkable age of 100 years and 5 months. The Beverly Anti-Slavery Society was formed February 21st of this year.

The Washington Street Society was organized in 1836, the church was formed Feb. 8, 1837, and the meeting-house, seventy-seven feet by fifty-two, and costing, with the bell, $9,387.33, was dedicated on the 29th of March ensuing. The Rev. William Bushnell was installed pastor Jan. 3, 1838. He was dismissed May 9, 1842, and his successor, the Rev. George T. Dole, was ordained October 6th of the same year.

He was succeeded by the Rev. A. B. Rich, he by the Rev. Benson M. Frink, he by the Rev. C. Van Norden, and he by the Rev. W. H. Davis, the present pastor.

The first Universalist record in Beverly is on Jan. 31, 1810, when Joseph Woodbury and wife were recommended by the Second Church to the First Church, where they were objected to on account of "his reputed faith in the doctrine of universal salvation," and the case was referred to John Dyson, Samuel Ober, Benjamin Lamson, and Robert Rantoul, who reported that "they had waited upon said Woodbury and find that he freely professes his firm belief of the final salvation of all mankind: that he disseminates that doctrine among his neighbors as opportunity offers, and that his wife embraces the same sentiments; and believing the said doctrine to be dangerous and unscriptural, and that the admission of persons holding to and openly professing such sentiments, would give offence to many of the church, they report in their opinion, that said Woodbury and his wife ought not to be admitted into this church. They also recommend that the Pastor be requested to write an affectionate letter in behalf of the first Church to the Second Church expressive of their desire to cultivate Christian fellowship with them, and of their hope, that, on understanding the ground of proceeding in the case, the brethren will not for a moment harbor the thought that there is any diminution of their love towards them." And this report was unanimously accepted. Mr. Woodbury was a housewright who removed from North Beverly, and built and lived in the house on Cabot Street, now that of Major Israel W. Wallis.

A Universalist Society was organized February 17th of this year, the following persons being chosen as the standing committee: — Daniel Hildreth, Stephen Homans, Jeremiah Wallis, Benjamin D. Grant, and William A. Foster. Among the early preachers employed were the Revs. John Prince, Henry Bacon, Sylvanus Cobb, and William Hooper. The Rev. C. H. Webster was settled as the first pastor in 1843, on a salary of $350 per annum. His successor was the Rev. W. G. Cambridge. A meeting-house was erected in 1846, and that year the Rev. John L. Stephens, afterwards editor of the "Kennebec Journal," now minister abroad, was installed pastor. He was succeeded by the Rev. Ira Washburn [1847–1851], the Rev. Stillman Barden, two years; the Rev. E. W. Coffin [1853–1855], the Rev. John Nichols [1856–1866], the Rev. G. W. Whitney [1867–1872], and the present pastor, the Rev. J. N. Emery, installed in November, 1872. The meeting-house was enlarged and beautified in 1863, at a cost of $4,000, and subsequently an organ costing $1,500 was introduced. The number of families now connected with this church is about 135, and the church membership is about ninety. The superintendent of the Sabbath school, which contains about 225 pupils, is Samuel Porter, and the deacons are John T. Cushing, and Ephraim Hathaway, Sr. Miss Abby H. Wallis is the clerk of the church.

A town hall and school-house, combined, was built in 1804, which in 1840 was made wholly a school-house, when the town bought the mansion of the late Israel Thorndike, formerly Andrew Cabot's, and made a town hall of that; and this was enlarged to more than twice its original size in 1874, and well fitted for public use.

Beverly had, in 1845, forty-six vessels employed in the cod and mackerel fisheries, and the value of fares for the year ending April 1, 1845, was $67,533. It had then eight forges, manufacturing anchors, cables, and other articles. It also manufactured cordage, hats, caps, cars, soap, tin-ware, leather, boots and shoes, bricks, pumps, blocks, and boats. It cut 2,364 tons of hay, and raised fruit to the value of $2,250.

The Bass River Lodge of the Independent Order of Odd Fellows, now numbering 435 members, and dispensing annually about $2,000, was instituted by M. W. G. Master Usher, at Bell's Hall, Feb. 21, 1851, and during the first twenty-five years of its existence, the receipts were $35,986, benefits paid, $22,427.50, and charities, $18,000. It erected a hall for its meetings in 1857, which was destroyed by fire, Feb. 11, 1873. During the years 1874 and 1875, a large and commodious building was erected at a cost of about $65,000, on Cabot Street, for the use of the Order. It is of brick, 80 feet by 80, with granite trimmings, and surmounted by a cupola. The first story is used for stores, the second for offices, and the principal hall, furnished at a cost of $5,000, is one of the finest of its kind in the State. The lodge, as such, owns $10,000 of the stock of the Building Association. Friendship Lodge of the Daughters of Rebecca, auxiliary to the Bass River Lodge, and containing about 160 members, was instituted Jan. 10, 1870; and the Summit Encampment, of about 135 members, was organized Sept. 20th of the same year.

The Beverly Insurance Company was incorporated, with a paid-up capital of $50,000, in 1853. Its business is confined to marine risks principally. F. W. Choate is president, and Samuel J. Foster, secretary.

The "Beverly Citizen," a weekly journal, devoted to general intelligence, was established in 1859, and is a well-conducted paper.

The Beverly National Bank was incorporated in March, 1865, with a capital of $200,000. John Pickett is the president, and Robert G. Bennett, cashier.

The Beverly Savings Bank, chartered 1867, has $500,000 deposits. William Endicott, president; Robert G. Bennett, treasurer.

Methodist services was held in the town hall here at intervals in former years, but no church was organized until April, 1867, when the Rev. Allen J. Hall became its pastor, conducting public services in the town hall; and he was succeeded by the Rev. J. M. Bailey, under whose ministry a church and parsonage were built on Railroad Avenue. The Rev. C. S. Rogers became pastor in 1870; the Rev.

S. C. Jackson, in 1872; the Rev. M. E. Wright, in 1874; the Rev. A. P. Adams, in 1877; and in 1878, differing with the church authorities in some statement of doctrine, a separation was had, and the Rev. Daniel Waite became pastor of the Methodist Avenue Episcopal Church; Mr. Adams, with a part of that church and congregation, retiring and organizing an Independent Methodist Church, and continuing worship in Odd Fellows' North Hall.

Episcopal church services were held in the town hall for one or more seasons, by the Rev. Dr. Packard, nearly thirty years ago, but it was not till July, 1863, that any permanent, regular services of that church were established, when a mission service was begun at Union Hall, under the care of the Rev. Wm. R. Pickman, the rector of St. Peter's Church, of Salem. In 1864 the Rev. S. H. Hilliard had charge of the mission, and continued till Whitsunday, 1865, when St. Peter's Church and Parish of Beverly, having been organized, and its new and neat church, at the corner of Cabot and Bow streets, just completed, the Rev. Mr. Pickman became its rector, and continued about one year, when he removed to Michigan. The Rev. F. M. Cookson succeeded him till the fall of 1870, when he removed to Fort Edward, N. Y. The Rev. George Denham was then rector till Easter, 1872, and during the summer of that year services were continued mainly by Mr. Louis L. Osborne, acting as lay-reader. May 13, 1873, the Rev. William G. Wells became rector and continued to 1878, when he removed to Lawrence, and the Rev. J. C. Welwood, the present rector, succeeded him here.

The Roman Catholic church was organized here in 1869. They bought the former Baptist church, fronting on Cabot and Essex streets, and enlarged and remodelled it; and they also afterwards bought the old tavern estate adjoining, where Nathaniel Hawthorne's grandmother was born, and took down that and another small house thereby, and have there built a neat parsonage house. The Rev. Father Shahan was the first pastor, and after him Father Kiely, who was succeeded by the Rev. Father William J. J. Denvir, the present pastor. The Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society, mostly or all members of this congregation, is a valued instrumentality for good.

At Centreville, the old school-house is held by trustees for religious and educational purposes, and has been very neatly fitted up. Regular religious services are held there, somewhat independent in their character, but principally of the Freewill or Free Baptist order.

The military history of the men of Beverly began with the early settlement of Naumkeag, and has had a continuous honorable and patriotic record. Of Capt. Lothrop and some early military service, we have already told. But, besides these, we have Capt. William Dixey, Lieut. Paul Thorndike, Ensign Samuel Corning, Cornet Lot Conant, Sergt. Thomas West, and Corp. Thomas Whittredge, all afterward farther advanced. And in 1744, Capt. Benjamin Ives, Jr., was captain of a Beverly company at Louisburg; and in 1756, there were several Beverly men in Capt. Andrew Fuller's company at Crown Point, and many men in other expeditions before the Revolution. In the Revolutionary War, Capt. Moses Brown commanded a company of Beverly men, and there were several other companies organized here; and besides these, Beverly furnished many soldiers for Col. Glover's regiment, and for other commands; while her sailors liberally supplied the armed vessels of the country. In the war of 1812, the town was liberally represented both in the army and navy, and was also faithfully represented therein in the Mexican war; while in the War of the Rebellion, 988 men were furnished for the Union service (a handsome excess over the required quota), and of these, about 100 lost their lives in the service. In 1801, the old Beverly Light Infantry Company was formed, and continued till 1812; and in 1815, the present Beverly Light Infantry was organized.

Most of the early settlers of Beverly had large posterity, and have been well represented both here and in the emigrant homes of many of them in various towns in Massachusetts, in the British Provinces, and in all the New England States, and later in New York, and in Ohio and the far West; while Boston and the other cities have numbered some of them among their honored citizens. Of these settlers, were Farmer William Dodge, commended as a skilful husbandman, fitted to have charge of a "team of horses," who was also a farrier of noted skill. He bought and lived on the early grant to Peter Palfrey, near where Lyman Mason, Sr., now resides. His son, Capt. William Dodge, according to Hubbard, saved the life of a friend from an Indian attack, and had otherwise a valiant record. He had a son Dea. William, and a son Capt. John Dodge. Richard Dodge, brother of Farmer William, had his settlement, probably, at Dodge's Row, where his descendant, Richard Dodge, now resides, and he had several children, of whom Lieut. John was a leading citizen of Beverly, as was Richard in Wenham, and Samuel in Hamilton. William Dodge, a nephew of Richard and William, and supposed son of Michael, of England, married Elizabeth, daughter of Roger Haskell, and resided here. John Thorndike came here from Ipswich with his son Paul, who married Mary, the daughter of James Patch, and settled at the Cove, owning Paul's Head, now Hospital and Lighthouse Point. Anthony Wood came from Ipswich, and settled near the northerly junction of Cabot and Rantoul streets. John West also came from Ipswich with his son Thomas, and bought the large farm of Mr. Blackleach, extending from the Paine place into Manchester. Robert Woodbury, a long time town clerk, married a daughter of Thomas West, and thereby obtained a large farm, where is now the house of Dr. Hall J. Curtis; and Joseph Woodbury, also marrying a daughter, obtaining a farm in Manchester. William Haskell likewise married a daughter, and had a farm at Beverly Farms, where is now the old Haskell house on Hale Street, the property of F. G. Dexter.

Jonathan Byles, George Stanley, Richard Brackenbury, Nicholas Patch, Robert Morgan, Richard Ober, and Jeffry Thissel (the latter two from Abbotsbury, Eng.), all had estates between Bald Hill and Pride's Crossing, where the first Peter Pride had his house-lot, on condition that he direct all travellers in the right way. William Woodbury, Sr., probably settled at Woodbury's Point, and owned down far enough to include the Paine place; he was succeeded by his son Nicholas, who was succeeded by his son Benjamin, whose only child Anna, inherited the Paine place, and married the Rev. John Barnard, of Marblehead. Humphrey Woodbury, son of John, settled between Snake Hill and the sea-shore, his son Thomas owning also in that vicinity, as did other Woodburys. Joshua Bison, who came from the Isle of Jersey about 1680, married the daughter of John Black, and grand-daughter of Peter Woolfe, and by purchase became the owner of much of their land, and of the land of John Sallows's estate, at the Cove, near Sallows Brook, and settled near there. Cornelius Baker, blacksmith, married Abigail Sallows, and also settled in that neighborhood. The Cove Fosters came from Joseph Foster, from North Salem, who married Rebecca, the widow of John Groves, and daughter of John Wallis, formerly of Falmouth, Me. His early settlement was toward Mingoe's Beach, and afterward near the Cove school-house. The Rev. John Hale owned from Watch Hill to the sea-shore, and the Bancroft heirs, his descendants, still own his homestead. The Morgans owned next westerly of him, and sold to Samuel Lovett, afterward of Norwich, Conn., where is now the old Lovett house and Ocean Street. John Lovett, the father of Samuel, owned next to the Morgans, including the old cemetery, which he sold to the town. His homestead was on Cabot Street, near Washington Street. His son John, Jr., married the daughter of Josiah and Susanna Rootes (of witchcraft memory), and by purchase and gift obtained a large tract of land of that family, lying north and west of Bartlett's Swamp. Another son, named Joseph, settled near where is now the farm of Larkin Foster. Samuel Corning was a large landholder in the village, near the meeting-house, extending to Bass River at Corning's Cove, and including what was formerly Corning's Pond. He also owned near Bald Hill, where some of his descendants settled. He left a numerous family, descendants of which

still reside in Beverly and elsewhere, including the Hon. Erastus Corning, of Albany, N. Y., and others of the race in Connecticut and New York states and beyond. The Wallis lands by Wallis Street came from him by his daughter Remember, wife of Nehemiah Stone, whose daughter married the first Caleb Wallis, son of Nathaniel Wallis, from Cornwall, Eng. John Stone, the first ferryman, also kept an ordinary or inn, near the southerly junction of Cabot and Front streets, where there was a tavern for many years; and William Dixey owned a large tract of land, from near the corner of Bartlett and Lovett streets, extending to the sea-shore, and including nearly all the present wharf frontage by Water Street. Thomas Tuck and his son John, owned estates at Tuck's Point, as did the Coxes, Elliots, &c., — and Ralph Ellingwood owned all the land by the harbor and Bass River, westerly of the railroad, and nearly to the depot, including ten acres formerly Robert Moulton's, and extending some easterly of the railroad. Richard Stackhouse and Roger Haskins each owned easterly of Ellingwood, and Haskins owned by Stephens Hill and by the meeting-house.

Robert Briscoe, from the west of England, about 1680, was brother-in-law of Samuel Stone, and owned a wharf, and other property near it, and afterwards bought the estate at the corner of Cabot and Hale streets. He died at Exeter, N. H., and gave £20 to the poor of Beverly. This corner estate then, upon the payment of certain legacies, came to his friend, John Stephens, who came from England in 1700, and married Abigail Stone.

Roger Conant, John Woodberry, and John Balch, of the old planters, all settled on their respective grants near Balch Street, and Thomas Scruggs, by exchange, owned the grant of Capt. Trask, and his daughter Rachel, who married John Rayment, succeeded, with her husband, to that grant, upon a portion of which Col. John W. Raymond now lives. Capt. William Rayment, of the Canada expedition of 1690, a brother of John, settled farther to the east, some of his estate extending toward Brimble Hill. One worthy name of this race is Capt. Josiah Raymond, who bequeathed $3,000 to the public schools, conditioned that no distinction be made therein in regard to color. Osman Trask and his nephew, John Trask, each settled here. Henry Herrick and his wife Edith, daughter of Hugh Laskin, had their home where is now the home of Mark B. Avery, and they welcomed thereto "excommunicated persons," in spite of the threatened penalties of church and state. Roger Haskell bought of Hugh Laskin a large tract of land extending from Bass River toward Hither Street. Andrew Eliot owned at or near where is now the home of Israel Eliot. He was the ancestor of the Rev. Dr. Andrew Eliot, of Boston; of Hon. Samuel A. Eliot, ex-Mayor and M. C., of Boston; and of Charles W. Eliot, the present president of Harvard University. Hasadiah Smith became a large landholder near Colon Street and elsewhere. Nicholas LeGrove was the ancestor of the Groves. The Stones, besides what they owned near the ferry, also owned from the common across to Bass River.

Of college graduates have been, the Rev. William Balch, 1724; pastor of Bradford Church; preached election sermon, 1746. John Chipman, 1738; lawyer; Falmouth, Me.; died suddenly in court. His brother, Ward Chipman, settled in Halifax, N. S., and was Justice of the Supreme Court, of which afterward his son, Ward Chipman, Jr., was chief justice; while another descendant of the Rev. John Chipman, Hon. Horace Gray, is now Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Massachusetts. The Rev. John Hale had three sons, and many other descendants, graduated at Harvard; while Sampson Salter Blowers, a grandson of the Rev. Thomas Blowers, and the oldest surviving graduate, died at Halifax in October, 1842, aged 100 years. Hon. William Thorndike, President of the Senate, and afterward President of the National Insurance Company in Boston, was also a Harvard graduate; as was also Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr., whose father, Hon. Robert Rantoul, Sr., was for half a century or more a public officer and leader here. Robert Rantoul, Jr., graduate in 1826; practised law at South Reading, Gloucester, and Boston; was a leading representative in the General Court; collector of the port of Boston, and also United States district attorney. In 1851, he succeeded Daniel Webster as United States Senator; was then elected to the House of Representatives at Washington, where in the midst of a career of brilliant promise he died suddenly, Aug. 7, 1852, aged 47 years. The Rev. William B. Tappan, author of that beautiful hymn, "There is an hour of peaceful rest," and of other favorites, was born in Beverly, and labored most of his life in Sabbath-school work. He died suddenly at West Needham in 1849, aged 54 years, and the Sabbath-school children erected a monument to his memory in Forest Hills Cemetery. The Rev. George Trask, also a native, was settled at Framingham, at Warren, Me., and at Fitchburg, but spent the last twenty-five years of his life in a vigorous crusade against tobacco, in preaching, publishing, and personal exhortation until he died, Jan. 25, 1875, aged 77 years. Thomas Poynton Ives, born here April 9, 1769, removed to Providence, R. I., and became one of the leading firm of Brown & Ives, and was otherwise prominent and influential. Israel Thorndike secured the foundation of a large fortune in successful foreign commerce here, and then removed his extensive business to Boston, and there largely increased it, and became one of the merchant princes of that city. William Burley, of Ipswich nativity, and of Revolutionary service, became a leading citizen here, and bequeathed fifty dollars a year to the public schools of Beverly. Moses Brown, from Watertown, was one of the Revolutionary leaders, and a prominent merchant. Town Clerk and Dea. Joseph Foster was of Ipswich stock.

The sea-shore of Beverly, with its surroundings, is its most attractive feature, and constantly attracts settlers from Boston and other places, who have already about eighty valuable houses built there, and they yearly increase, and quite a number make here their yearly homes. The harbor is commodious, and admits vessels of heavy burdens, and is well supplied with good wharf facilities for the fishing and coasting business done here, and includes two large lumber wharves, and coal wharves, with ample room and means for a large business. A modern lighthouse directs the way into the harbor. There are about thirty shoe manufactories in town, and some of them very large, and fully equipped for the extensive business which they do. There are also morocco manufactories, carriage factories, a box-mill, a planing and turning mill, a pottery, which turns out rare work of both antique and modern device, several brick-yards and other industries; farming and market gardening being extensively prosecuted. Its number of taxable polls for 1878 was 1,910; its valuation of personal estate $2,372,300; of real estate $5,386,600; its rate of taxation $14.80 per thousand; number of dwelling-houses 1,281; of horses 587; of cows 553; of sheep 4; number of acres taxed 7,870. It has nearly fifty miles of water-pipes, distributing the pure water of Wenham Lake all through the town, and has most excellent roads, beautiful shade-trees, and attractive drives; it also has a well-equipped fire department, and other public works of great value. Besides the excellent steam-railroad facilities, there is a horse railroad running its cars constantly to Salem and Peabody, and there are excellent livery stables here.

In looking over this fair town, and observing the marks of improvement in its streets and buildings, its water-supply, its advantages for education, its productive industries, its social, civic, and religious institutions, its railroad facilities, its pleasant prospects by the sea, together with the good order, intelligence, public spirit, and sobriety of its inhabitants, we are led to the conclusion that few towns in this Commonwealth present greater attractions as a place of residence, or stronger assurance of continued increase and prosperity. It has both sea and land at its command; and happy are the people whose homes are fixed in such a beautiful, thriving, peaceable, and progressive town.

BOXFORD.

Comprising a wide extent of land in the centre of the county of old Essex, over which are scattered numerous farm-houses, and here and there a hamlet, where the trades-people abide together, away from the din and excitement of the city, Boxford commends itself to every one that loves a calm retreat, where pure fresh air is plenty, where birds sweetly sing in their leafy bowers, and flowers of every hue fill the air with sweetest perfume, making the place a very paradise. Secluded from the more busy haunts of the populace, Boxford is little known beyond the circle of a few miles. Content to live on in the old way their fathers lived for more than two centuries, the inhabitants have seldom sought to make any outside show, or become acquainted with the great advance that so many of our towns have made during the last twenty-five years. Inheriting from their remotest ancestry the love of a pastoral career, it has proven to be the very idiopathy of their present retired condition.

Boxford was first included in that tract of land purchased by the "Rev. Ezekiel Rogers' Company" of the towns of Ipswich and Newbury, and which was granted an "act of incorporation," Sept. 4, 1639, bearing the name of Rowley.* The company of emigrants settled where the present village of Rowley is situated. No advances were made to settle that tract of land now included in Boxford, until about 1650. Robert Andrews, the emigrant ancestor of Gov. Andrew, was nearly, if not the first settler upon our soil. Of his lineal descendants, Samuel, Daniel, Isaac W., and Charles Andrews now reside in the town,—the two first mentioned on the old ancestral homestead, which has always remained in the possession of the family, generation after generation. Joseph Bixby, an emigrant, was also among the early settlers. From him have sprung the American Bixbys. Deacon Samuel, Daniel, and Stephen Bixby, inhabitants of this town, are descendants. Daniel Black, a Scotchman, originated a numerous posterity. George Blake (Black?) removed from Gloucester to Boxford about 1672. Edmund Bridges (an emigrant) and his son Josiah, Nathaniel Brown, Samuel Boswell, After Cary, John Chadwick, and John Cummings are also among the early settlers. Zaccheus Curtis probably settled near by the present residence of his descendant (?), Mr. Francis Curtis. Timothy Dorman, ancestor of the Esquire Dormans, settled on the old Dorman place. Robert Ames (anciently spelled *Eames*), lived on the road that leads from the East to the West parish. William Foster came to Boxford from Ipswich, in 1661. Richard K. and the late Jonathan Edwards Foster are lineal descendants. John Kimball was another early settler. Three brothers, John, Joseph, and William Peabody (sons of Lieut. Francis Peabody), have many descendants, resident in Boxford, some of them on the old homesteads. John and Thomas Perley (sons of Allan Perley) settled here very early. Thomas has descendants, Moody, William E., George, Samuel, Charles, and Henry Perley, now living in the town. Matthew Perry, John Ramsdell, Abraham Redington (the American progenitor of the Redington family), and Robert Smith were also among the early settlers. Robert Stiles originated an extensive posterity, one of whom, Elijah Stiles, now resides in the town. Samuel Symonds, Moses Tyler, John Vinton, and Robert Willis early settled on our soil. Daniel Wood was the ancestor of an extensive and distinguished posterity. Three of his descendants, Daniel (aged eighty-five), Capt. Enoch (aged eighty-one), and John Tyler Wood, are respected residents of the town. These are most of the early settlers before 1685.

* See Rowley.

Boxford now bore the name of *Rowley Village*, although it was a part, and subject to the authority of, Rowley. Most of the early settlers were extensive land-owners; but the largest tracts were owned by Joseph Jewett, of Rowley, and Zaccheus Gould, of Topsfield, who together had more than six thousand acres. The "Village Lands," as the undivided land in the village was called, were laid out to the several families in the town and village, in 1666 or 1667. At this time the domains of Rowley Village were much more extensive than are those of Boxford at the present time, it then taking in about one-half of the present town of Georgetown, and a part of Groveland and Middleton.

Boxford was originally a part of the domains of the old Sagamore *Musehonomet*, from whose grandsons, Samuel and Joseph English and John Umpee, Boxford obtained a deed of the land contained in the township for nine pounds, in October, 1701. Numbers of the subjects of this chief, as well as of others of antedate, resided on our hills, in the valleys, and on the borders of the ponds, living by the products of the chase and piscatorial industry, and having the fruit of the soil as a luxury, if the squaws were willing to cultivate the same. About 1830, several Indian bodies, and great numbers of arrow-heads, together with a stone mortar and pestle, were dug up. Arrow-heads, made of some flinty stone, are frequently found.

The first white settlement was made in the East Parish, the West Parish not being settled until about 1670. In 1673, there were sixteen families in the village; in 1680, twenty-five; therefore making an increase of nine families in the intervening seven years. During the next five years they increased to forty families, when, thinking, as they had so large a population, that they could support a minister, and carry on a town government, they petitioned the General Court to be granted a township privilege, which was acceded to by the session commencing Aug. 12, 1685. The name was changed from Rowley Village to Boxford, and the people immediately instituted the government of the town of Boxford. The town probably received its name from Boxford, England, where the Rev. Samuel Phillips (the pastor in Rowley at that time) was born.

In continuing this sketch, we have thought proper, to render it more perspicuous, to divide it into the several departments of local history; viz., religious, military, educational, &c. We will first speak of its

Religious History.

As the settlers came and made Boxford their home, they attended divine worship at Topsfield, and many of them were admitted to the church there, and helped to bear its expenses. This they continued to do, with little interruption, until in the early part of the last decade of the seventeenth century, when "contentious feelings" arose among the brethren, which ended in the Boxford people's withdrawing themselves from the church. However, as early as 1692, the Boxford people had thoughts of building themselves a house of worship, which might, perhaps, have caused the unhappy state of feeling.

In 1699, a meeting-house was begun to be built by the Boxford people, which was finished and presented to the town, Jan. 9, 1701. It was "thirty-four feet long, thirty feet wide, and eighteen feet stud between joints." The roof was elevated, from the four sides of the building, to a peak in the centre, which was surmounted by a turret. This ancient edifice stood in the northerly corner of the cemetery, located near the present First Church.

Their first minister was the Rev. Thomas Symmes, son of the Rev.

Zachariah Symmes, the first minister of Bradford, where Thomas was born Feb. 1, 1678, and graduated at Harvard College, 1698. He preached his first sermon in Boxford, on Sunday, April 27, 1701, which was also the first one that was ever preached in the town. Mr. Symmes was ordained Dec. 30, 1702, the church then consisting of only eleven male members, who had been dismissed from the Topsfield church. The following month, however, ten of the female members were dismissed from the Topsfield church and annexed to the Boxford church. In February and April following, twenty-two more, both male and female, were dismissed and annexed as above, thus building up the church to about fifty members.

Mr. Symmes meeting with difficulties too great for him to overcome, he felt himself obliged to resign his office, which he did, and thereupon was dismissed in April, 1708. After he left Boxford, his father having died, he received a call to take his place in the ministry at Bradford, which he accepted, and after a successful ministry, expired Oct. 6, 1725, at the age of forty-seven years. Mr. Symmes was a man of much learning, and very active with his pen; several of his productions, both scriptural and secular, were published, and among them is the most authentic account of "Capt. Lovewell's fight at Pigwacket," in 1725. Increase Mather spoke highly of him. Mr. Symmes' preaching was very fruitful wherever he went.

The second minister was the Rev. John Rogers, son of Jeremiah Rogers, of Salem, Mass., who was of the eighth generation from John Rogers, the Smithfield martyr. Mr. Rogers was born at Salem, and graduated at Harvard College, 1705. His ordination took place in 1709, and so commenced his labors, which endured for nearly half a century.

Nothing occurred out of the regular order of a pastor's duties during the thirty-odd years of his pastorate. In this time, however, great changes had been going on. The north-western part of Boxford had so increased in population that they nearly equalled or exceeded that of the old part. Many of them belonged to the church in Bradford. In 1735, they received affirmative answers to their petitions to the General Court to become two distinct parishes, which have ever since been known as the East and West parishes. We will continue the history of the

First Church.—The old church edifice was pulled down in 1745, and a new one erected, thirty-eight feet wide, forty-eight feet long, and twenty-four feet stud, with a "*fashionable*" roof. This edifice stood on the corner, directly in front of the present church. The cost was about £1,500.

Difficulties having arisen, the Rev. Mr. Rogers closed his ministerial relationship with the church in 1743, and removed to his son's in Leominster, where he died, in 1755. Mr. Rogers was a very blunt man in his speech, and also very forcible in his preaching. During his pastoral charge more persons were added to the church annually than during any other pastorship. Like his son, he was not afraid to declare the whole counsel of God.

Sixteen years now pass before another minister is settled over the church. During this long season the preaching had been very irregular, and therefore very perplexing.

The Rev. Elizur Holyoke, of Cambridge, was ordained Jan. 31, 1759, and, to the record of the ordination exercises, Mr. Holyoke adds with his own pen: "And thus to one who is less than the least of all saints is this grace given, that he should preach the unsearchable riches of Christ." Mr. Holyoke erected the "Old Holyoke House," which is an interesting relic, and in 1760, with his blushing bride, took possession of its spacious interior.

In Feb., 1793, Mr. Holyoke was prostrated by a paralytic shock, from the effects of which he died, March 31, 1806, at the age of seventy-four years and ten months. He was son of Samuel and Elizabeth (Brigham) Holyoke, and nephew of Pres. Edward Holyoke, of Harvard College, and was born in Boston, May 11, 1731. Graduated at Harvard College, 1750.

The chords of harmony between him and his people were ever perfect, even to reverence and love. His ministry, extending as it did through the period of forty-seven years, was very uncommon and unprecedented in the ecclesiastical history of New England. Always genial, happy, and loving, he was a favorite with all, and his death was deeply felt by the parish.

The fourth minister was the Rev. Isaac Briggs, of York, Me., who was ordained, Sept. 28, 1808. He occupied the pulpit for twenty-five years, leaving in 1833. "Parson Briggs," as he was called, was born in Halifax, N. S., about 1775; graduated at Brown University, 1795; first settled over the church in York, Me., where his stay was brief; resigned in 1807; and came to Boxford, as above. Mr. Briggs often visited the field wherein he had labored for a quarter of a century, always being welcomed by his old parishioners.

The Rev. John Whitney, the fifth minister, was ordained Oct. 15, 1834. His stay was brief, being dismissed (?) in 1837. He was a native of Harvard, and graduated at Amherst in 1831.

Before Mr. Whitney left, steps had been taken to build a new house of worship. The work was carried forward and the present house was erected and ready for occupancy in the spring of 1838.

The Rev. Mr. Coggin's (the sixth minister) ordination occurred at the same time as the dedication of the new church; viz., May 9, 1838. The Rev. William Symmes Coggin, son of the Rev. Jacob Coggin, of Tewksbury, was born Nov. 27, 1812. Graduated at Dartmouth College, 1834. After occupying the pulpit for thirty years, his health beginning to decline, he resigned his position, which the parish and church reluctantly agreed to. He was a servant faithful in the service of his Lord; one by whom many souls have been blessed and led unto that light which "shineth more and more unto the perfect day." Content to live with the people of his early charge, he still remains among them, sometimes officiating in the pulpit, and pursuing his pastoral visits,—though under the sanction of friendly calls,—the same as in the past. "May his last days be his best days, and may he finally be gathered with those who, having 'turned many to righteousness, shall shine as the stars forever.'"

The Rev. Sereno David Gammell, of Charlestown, the seventh and present pastor, was ordained Sept. 9, 1868. In the following spring, the new and substantial parsonage was built, by subscription, at a cost of $4,000. The church membership numbers one hundred and thirty; the Sabbath school has upwards of a hundred scholars; and the "Mary Ann Peabody S. S. Library" contains about three hundred volumes. They have a parish fund of about $8,000.

Second Church.—The people in the West Parish had preaching among themselves for some years before they were incorporated into a lawful body. After the General Court granted them a parish privilege (June 28, 1735), they completed their house of worship, and extended an invitation to the Rev. John Cushing, who was then preaching there, to become their settled pastor. He accepted their call, and was ordained Dec. 29, 1736. The church consisted of eleven members dismissed from the Bradford church, and seven (all males) from the First Church in Boxford. As soon as the church was embodied, seven members were dismissed from Bradford church, and eleven (all females) from the First Church in Boxford, thus numbering about forty members. Shortly after, several more were dismissed from the two churches. About 1740, several families, with their lands in Andover, were annexed to the second parish. The second parish, at the present time, takes in a part of Andover, the present parish clerk being an Andover man.

Mr. Cushing's health failing him, he was not able to preach regularly after the summer of 1763. May 19, 1766, he closed his services for the society, and, after lingering for five years, he died Jan. 25, 1772, in the sixty-third year of his age. He was a man of extensive learning, and a very popular preacher. He was a son of the Rev. Caleb Cushing, of Salisbury, where he was born April 10, 1709. His

mother was Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. John Cotton. He graduated at Harvard College, 1729.

In November, 1774, they finished their second church, which had been built "according to the same Plan by which the Meeting House in New Rowley (Georgetown) was built, excepting a Steeple, instead of which we are to have a Porch built as at the other end of the meeting house."

The Rev. Moses Hale, the second minister, was ordained Nov. 16, 1774; the meeting house was probably dedicated at the same time. He was a son of the Rev. Moses Hale, of Newbury, and was born Feb. 19, 1749, in Rowley. Graduated at Harvard College, 1771. Mr. Hale was early stricken down by disease in the thirty-eighth year of his age, dying May 25, 1786, in the twelfth year of his ministry, and leaving five motherless children to mourn his loss, — his wife having died April 24th of the preceding year.

The third pastor was the Rev. Dr. Peter Eaton, of Haverhill, who was ordained Oct. 7, 1789. In 1840, he was the oldest minister in the county then in office, having completed half a century of service. Shortly after, his health began to fail. After several requests to be dismissed, the parish reluctantly granted his request Aug. 21, 1845. He was *not* dismissed, however, but the Rev. Calvin E. Park was installed as Dr. Eaton's colleague, Oct. 14, 1846. Mr. Eaton quietly passed away April 14, 1848, at the mature age of eighty-three years. He was born in Haverhill, March 15, 1765, and graduated at Harvard College, 1787. He was noted as a powerful preacher, a loving pastor, and an endearing friend. His memory will be dear as long as time endures.

In 1843, the third and present church edifice was erected, and dedicated Nov. 22d of that year. Its cost was $4,917.62.

The Rev. Mr. Park occupied the pulpit till his resignation in April, 1859.

The fifth settled pastor was the Rev. Charles M. Pierce, of Andover, who was ordained Sept. 2, 1863. He asked for a dismission, and was granted it July 17, 1867. By this act they lost an "able and faithful pastor, one who cared much for his Master's glory, and who sought to be His faithful servant in the Christian's work."

The sixth settled pastor was the Rev. James McLean, of South Weymouth, who was ordained Feb. 20, 1877. He asked for a dismission, which was accordingly granted, and his labors ended July 1, 1878. The church is at present without a pastor.

John Tyler Barker, who died in 1872, bequeathed to the society $30,000, the income of which to be applied to the support of the preaching.

A handsome and substantial parsonage, in the gothic style, has been recently erected for the use of the minister.

The church membership now numbers about fifty; the Sabbath school has from seventy-five to one hundred scholars, who have a Sunday-school library of about two hundred and fifty volumes.

Both societies are the original Orthodox Congregational, there being no organization of any other religious denomination in the town.

Military History.

Those who are acquainted with Boxford's history, always speak of its being one of the most patriotic towns in times of peril and danger, when deeds alone will profit, that New England has ever had the honor of acknowledging to belong to her.

When King Philip and his allies were burning, plundering, and murdering the settlers in Swanzey and vicinity in the southern part of Massachusetts, in 1675, Joseph Bixby, and perhaps others from Boxford, went out with the neighboring soldiers, and fought against the savages.

In 1689, several of our men, with the soldiers from the neighboring towns, went down into Maine to help defend the settlements from the attacks of the savages, who had become very fierce.

Boxford played no mean hand in the several seasons of Indian hostility, which were constantly breaking out during the last decade of the seventeenth century.

Several of our young and fearless men went out with Capt. Lovewell, in 1725, to "quell the Indian pride." They helped to form his company, who marched in February, 1725, on snow-shoes, with their provisions on their backs, on an Indian trail which they had found following up the Merrimac River. We have not space to detail how they captured, roasted, and feasted on a bear; how they tracked the Indians, until they discovered their encampment on an island in Lake Winnipiseogee (N. H.); how they attacked them in their camp, and killed them all (10), and returned triumphant to their homes.*

In 1748 and 1749, several Boxford men were stationed at Scarborough, in the company of Capt. Joseph Frye, of Andover. Others were stationed at Gorhamtown and New Marblehead, in 1749 and 1750.

When the eastern frontiers were troubled in 1754, several more Boxford men went out for their defence in the company of Capt. Humphrey Hobbs, of Souhegan. Several more went out the following year in the company of Capt. Abiel Frye.

Several men from Boxford were in Col. Winslow's expedition to Nova Scotia. Of the *neutral French* which were distributed among the various towns in New England, Boxford had fifteen to provide for, until March, 1758, when six of them were removed to Middleton.

The long and tedious "French and Indian War" drew into service many of the inhabitants. Boxford raised "a company of foot" for the "invasion of Canada in 1758," which was placed under the command of Capt. Israel Herrick. This company, in addition to another, under the command of Capt. Francis Peabody, of Boxford, were in the service while the war lasted [1758–60]. Others served in the companies that were raised by the neighboring towns. The history of this war is but a recital of the sufferings and dangers that *our* townsmen had to pass through. Wading up to their waists in water, pulling their *batteaux* after them over the rapids; marching through the trackless forests; camping upon the wet, cold ground; their clothing worn out; food often scarce, and of poor quality; — who can tell these tales of suffering but those who knew them only by experience? When the Colonies were taxed so heavily by the mother country, just previous to the Revolution, in their correspondence with Boston, the committee of Boxford speak of the great amount of suffering, money, and anxiety the "French and Indian War" had cost them, and thought it extremely hard that England should tax them so heavily, unnecessarily, especially when they had lately suffered so much for the almost express sake of the Crown of England.

In their correspondence with Boston, the committee of Boxford write very resentingly of the acts of Great Britain, at a very early hour in the day of the uprising of the Colonies. And, as the birth of independence was drawing near, nothing seemed too bad to say about the mother country.

May 24, 1770, the town voted "that they will to their utmost, encourage the produce and manufacture of all such articles as have formerly been imported from Great Britain and used among them.

"Voted that they will not use any foreign tea, nor suffer it to be used in their families (cases of sickness excepted), until the duty upon it shall be wholly taken off, — the duty on which has so largely contributed towards the support of such a . . . †set of men.

"Voted, that they will not by any means whatever, knowingly, have any sort of trade or dealings with those detestable persons who have preferred their own little interests to the good of the country in contriving to import goods contrary to the non-importation agreement of the merchants and traders on the Continent; and that whosoever

* See "Book of the Indians," Book iii., Chap. ix.; also, "New England History, and General Register," Vol. v., p. 80.

† Hon. Aaron Wood, who was Town Clerk, when these resolves were passed, being a moral man, left this word out, and inserted a dash in its stead.

shall be found to trade with them knowingly *shall be deemed unworthy to hold any office or place of trust in the town forever hereafter.*"

Seventeen days before the Declaration of Independence was adopted, the inhabitants of Boxford "*voted unanimously that if the Honorable Continental Congress should for the safety of the colonies declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, they, the said inhabitants of Boxford, will solemnly engage with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure.*"

In a letter to Boston, dated Feb. 4, 1773, the committee of correspondence of Boxford write: "*We are desirous to exert our utmost abilities in all legal and constitutional methods to break, if possible, the iron band of oppression and prevent the welding of the last link in our chain of impending slavery.*"

On the twenty-seventh day of December following, they write: "*It is the resolution of this town to do all that's in their power, in a lawful way, to heave off this yoke of slavery, and to unite with their brethren of the town of Boston, and the other towns in the Province, to defend our rights and charter privileges, not only with our estates, but with our lives;* considering how dear those rights and privileges were purchased for us by our fore-fathers at the expense of their own blood and treasure."

But leaving these outbursts of pent-up patriotism and independence, we must move forward to the real scenes of bloodshed, the opening battles of the Revolutionary War.

A company of "Minute-men" had been formed, and had trained themselves for active service. On the morning of the 19th of April, 1775, the alarm gun at Andover awoke the slumbers of the inhabitants, and news soon came of the real condition of affairs. The "Minute-men" and the two militia companies of the town were quickly on their way to the scene of conflict, but they arrived too late to participate in the fight at either Lexington or Concord. The two militia companies (the east parish company was commanded by Jacob Gould, and consisted of fifty-seven men; the west parish company was commanded by John Cushing, and contained thirty-three men) returned to their homes. The "Minute-men" (commanded by William Perley, and numbering fifty-two men), followed in the rear of the British as they retreated back to Boston,

> ". . . And gave them ball for ball,
> From behind each fence and barn-yard wall."

The "Minute-men" camped in the vicinity of Boston, and on the evening of June 16, 1775, they formed part of that regiment, which, under command of Col. Prescott, following the glimmer of dark lanterns, crossed the Neck, and helped to rear that ominous defence, which so astonished the Britons when the sun shed its first rays of light over the sparkling water, on the morning of the 17th of June, 1775. They bravely fought, while their ammunition held out, when they were obliged to succumb to a retreat. Eight men out of this company were left dead upon the field or in the redoubt.

Twenty-five men went to the assistance of Cape Ann (Gloucester) this year (1775).

Saltpetre was manufactured here, this year, for the manufacture of gunpowder. The blacksmiths' forges were also utilized in melting lead and running it into bullets.

During the campaign of 1776, forty-nine men enlisted for eight months in the "Cambridge Campaign." Twenty-five more were stationed at Winter Hill and Roxbury. Twenty-six more enlisted in the "Continental and Northern Army." Six were stationed at Dorchester. Ten were stationed at New York, for two months. Nine were stationed as above, but at a different time. Ten were stationed for two months at Winter Hill. Thirty-four enlisted in the "Continental and Northern Army" at a different time from the others. Fourteen were in the "Remainder of the Continental Army." The whole number of men who were out this year, as per rolls, was two hundred and eleven.

In November of this year, the famous Sullivan expedition was formed, to ravage the Indian settlements on the western frontier. Several men from Boxford were in Capt. Lane's company, in Col. Alden's regiment, and passed through much of the ordeal which they were called to suffer. Two of the Boxford men died, and many others of the expedition were killed, or died natural deaths. The names of Schoharie, Cherry Valley, Unadilla, and others associated with them, will never be forgotten by the annalist of Indian history.

Capt. Richard Peabody was also stationed at Ticonderoga and Crown Point, this year (1776), with a company of volunteers, who took part in the fight at Ticonderoga.

Some of the men that took part in the disastrous journey of Arnold's to Quebec, in the fall of 1775, belonged to Boxford. More suffering was probably endured in this expedition, than in any other season during the Revolution, or at any time of war since.

One of Boxford's soldiers was one of the guard of Maj. André on the night before his execution.

In March, 1777, thinking they were not doing their share toward the cause of independence, they hire thirty-three men to enter the army, at a cost of £778. Most of them were from Boston.

The surrender of Gen. Burgoyne, on the 17th of October, 1777, was witnessed by several of the Boxford soldiers.

In 1780, Boxford raised more than £60,000 (the worthlessness of money must be taken into consideration), to purchase beef for the soldiers.

In 1781, Boxford voted to pay soldiers, who would enlist in the army for three years, one hundred and twenty silver dollars apiece.

Shay's rebellion, in 1787, called out several Boxford men.

Several drafts were made on the militia companies, as per act of Congress, April 10, 1812, for soldiers to assist in guarding the seaports along the Atlantic coast. The inhabitants of Boxford were against the doings of the National Government, in that they declared war with Great Britain, as they believed it would be detrimental to their prosperity, happiness, and the morals of the people. In 1814 more drafts were made.

Boxford acted a conspicuous part in the Rebellion of 1861–1865. Ninety-two of the young and middle-aged men of the town volunteered to go to the front and help sustain the union of the United States. Of these, two died while imprisoned at Andersonville. Two more were imprisoned in the Libby Prison, one of whom died there. Twenty of the brave young spirits succumbed to the deadly effects of rifle-balls and Southern diseases; the bodies of most of them now mouldering in the soil of the sunny regions of the South, in graves unknown and unhonored, with no memorial stone but the granite cenotaph at home, on which their names are engraved. Thirteen were wounded in battle, or contracted diseases of which they died soon after arriving home. In addition to these volunteers, thirty were drafted, five more entered the navy, and faithfully served their country until they died, or were discharged.

Entering the army, most of them, at the beginning of the strife, Bull Run, Cedar Mountain, and other battle-fields, witnessed the death-struggle of more than one Boxford boy. Others were wounded, some fatally, in the battles of Port Hudson, Blunt's Creek, Antietam, Spottsylvania, Mechaniesville, Bull Run, Gettysburg, Lookout Mountain, and other fierce conflicts of the Rebellion. Under the command of Gen. Joe Hooker, some were numbered with the Army of the Potomac. Death by starvation in the rebel prisons, on the battle-field, by fatal diseases; inconveniences, discomforts, all stared them in the face; but, with unwavering patriotism, they fought until their end was gained; until the Union was restored; then they laid down their muskets, to take them no more up, until another threatening storm of disunion should sweep over the land.

Adj. Gen. Schouler, in his "*History of Massachusetts in the Civil War*," says, "there were no commissioned officers from Boxford. Ninety-two men were in the service, a surplus of five over all demands."

The following are the names of those who died in the war; viz., Martin L. Ames (at Andersonville Prison), John Q. Batchelder, Samuel H. Brown, D. Butler, Charles W. Cole, John F. Cole, Oscar F. Curtis, Joshua G. Day, Murdock Frame (killed in battle of Cedar Mountain, at Culpepper, Va., Aug. 9, 1862), Albert A. Frye, Charles L. Foster, George A. Gage, William A. Gurley, Harrison Hale, Matthew Hale, George P. Hobson, Horace A. Killam, Thomas A. Masury, Herbert C. C. Morse (in the Libby Prison), Asa K. Perley, Thomas P. Perley, John Sawyer (in Andersonville Prison), Aaron Spofford (killed in last battle of Bull Run), and David M. Sullivan, in the army; and Benjamin S. Twisden, in the navy.

The whole amount of money appropriated by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was $10,756.35. State aid paid in 1861, $367.60; 1862, $1,170; 1863, $1,184; 1864, $1,097.71; and in 1865, $1,150.

The ladies of Boxford were active all through the war, in adding to the comfort of the soldiers at the front, and forwarded, through the Sanitary and Christian Commissions, on several occasions, underclothing, quilts, pillow-cases, dried-apples, jellies, newspapers, and other comforts for the sick and wounded.

Through the generosity of J. Tyler Barker, Esq., the West parish have been enabled to erect a substantial granite monument to the memory of those soldiers that participated in the Rebellion, and inscribed with the names of those who have gone before, and gathered around the camp-fire above. It was dedicated on Decoration Day, May 29, 1875, with appropriate ceremonies, the governor and staff being present.

The following is the inscription on the front face of the monument: —

IN MEMORY OF
OUR PATRIOT SOLDIERS.
WAR OF 1861.
ERECTED BY THE
MUNIFICENCE OF THE LATE
J. TYLER BARKER
OF NORTH ANDOVER.
1873.

Militia Companies.

When Boxford was first settled, the men trained with the Topsfield militia company. After the incorporation of the town, in 1685, they trained among themselves. When the parishes were incorporated, each parish contained a company. In 1832, the two companies united, and formed a part of the Third Regiment, Second Brigade, Second Division of the State militia. So they continued until 1840, when all the militia throughout the State was disbanded. A company, calling themselves the "Boxford Washington Guards," flourished here between 1836 and 1846.

Camp Stanton.—Boxford is noted for its being the camp of several regiments during the Rebellion. The annual muster of the Second Brigade has also been held on the old camp-ground several seasons. The same plain was used for the same purpose during the Revolution. Old Camp Stanton is a favorite name with many of the survivors of the Rebellion.

Schools, &c.

The town is at present divided into five school districts. Lady teachers are employed both summer and winter, the school committee thinking that they teach better than those of the masculine gender. Three terms are taught each year, — summer, fall, and winter. Whole number of scholars enrolled, 146; average daily attendance, ninety; number of scholars under five years of age, five; number of scholars over fifteen years of age, twenty-three. These figures are taken from the school report for 1877. The present school committee are: Sereno D. Gammell, Asa Kimball, Esq., and the Rev. David Bremner, a learned trio, certainly. $1,535.57 were spent for schooling in 1877. The town appropriates $1,000 annually for that purpose.

The first school-teacher of which any record has been found, was John Peabody. He was chosen for this purpose by the town at a town-meeting held Nov. 24, 1701. Aug. 25, 1713, the town agreed with Nathaniel Peabody to be schoolmaster for that year. Sept. 12, 1716, they agreed with Thomas Jewett "to teach Scool for writing reading & Arethemitick . . . to the 6 parts of y^e^ Town y^e^ Town is for give him forty shillings pur month for y^e^ six months & convenent diat & lodging." September, 1722, Thomas Redington was chosen to "learn persons to read, write and cypher."

The school was held for many years in private houses in different sections of the town, holding its sessions for a while in each place alternately. In 1738 or 1739, the town was divided into districts, and a school-house built in each district. About 1796, new houses were built in place of the old ones. New buildings were again built about 1830, which are in use to-day. An academy flourished here for a few years, very prosperously, about sixty years ago.

The Hon. Aaron Wood, who died 1791, bequeathed his farm to the town for the support of the schools. The farm was leased for a thousand years, and the money realized was placed at interest, which now amounts to $125 per annum. Several other bequests have been made for the same purpose. Ephraim Foster bequeathed $1,500 to the parish in 1835, for the support of the district schools. John Tyler Barker, who died in 1872, bequeathed to the West Parish $58,000, with which to establish a free high school, to be located as near the Thomas Hovey house as is convenient. The will being contested by the heirs, the court have given the parish $30,000, which they propose to place at interest until it reaches a suitable sum.

Business.

The principal occupation of the inhabitants is the pursuit of agriculture in all its branches. Some excellent farms can be seen there, showing carefulness of cultivation, pride in the neat appearance of their homes, and that the cultivators have not mistaken their calling.

A forge for smelting iron ore was established, about 1670, by the Leonard brothers, the noted iron-workers of the country at that time. They carried on the business for a time, and, by different companies, the business continued to prosper until after 1680, when it was abandoned for about a century. It was then changed to another site, and the business renewed by some of the inhabitants, who contrived to make it prosper until about 1800, when we hear no more of it.

In ye olden time, the East Parish contained a store, at which the post-office was located, —

> . . . . "Where, in the past,
> We could often hear the thrilling blast,
> Borne on the early morning air,
> Of Pinkham's stage horn."

But since the Boston and Maine Railroad has conveyed the passengers and mail-bags,

> . . . "No more is heard of Pinkham,
> Or his horn."

There are now two post-offices, one in each parish.

The most extensive business now carried on in the town, is that of the manufacture of friction-matches, at the match-factory of Messrs. Byam & Carleton, of Boston. They located their factory here in 1867, and have been constantly running it ever since. They have some $30,000 invested, and turn out about $40,000 worth of goods annually. A saw-mill is also in connection with it, and also machinery for manufacturing boxes for their own use and for sale. Some 1,800 tons of timber are consumed annually in the match manufacture.

Cotton-yarn, wicking, batting, wooden bowls, and other dishes, straw hats, gloves, shoe-pegs, and other articles have been manufactured here in days gone by.

Noted Natives, &c.—Boxford has, probably, given birth to more

enterprising, energetic persons than any other town of its size in the Commonwealth. They can be found in the busy business circles of large towns and cities, engaging in manufacturing, home trade, and commerce; institutions of learning, in distant parts of the country, have called them to their assistance; heathendom has called to them to bring the light of Christianity to its darkened lands; invention has cried, "We need you to show to the world some new appliance"; pulpits and offices of trust have been filled; the court-room has listened to their voice, and not a few have assisted, and are still assisting, in building up the distant West with towns and cities, and turning the rank, virgin soil of the prairies into grain-fields and fruit-farms. Thus it has been with the young men of Boxford. Leaving the old, dull home of their fathers, they enter the busy scenes, and soon become involved in the fortunes or misfortunes of a business life. But, thanks to the parents, and the morality of the place, most of them have succeeded in their career, and made themselves an honor to the dear old home of their boyhood. Most of the natives that have thus gone forth were business-men. But few, comparatively, have become professional men. We have thought fit to subjoin the following list of *some* of the distinguished natives:—

The Rev. Oliver Peabody (1698–1752), son of William and Hannah (Hale) Peabody. Graduate of Harvard College, 1721. First settled pastor of the Indian Church at Natick. He was also a missionary among the Mohegan Indians. Noted as a theologian, and a kind and useful pastor.

The Rev. Moses Hale (1701–1760), son of Joseph and Mary (Watson) Hale. Graduate of Harvard College, 1722. First minister in Chester, N. H.

The Rev. John Rogers (1712–1789), son of the Rev. John and Susanna (Marston) Rogers. Graduate of Harvard College, 1732. First minister in Leominster, Mass. He was a scholar, and a studious and learned divine.

The Hon. Aaron Wood (1719–1791), son of John and Ruth (Peabody) Wood. Senator and representative to the general court for sixteen years. A noted public man in his day.

Col. Thomas Knowlton (1740–1776), son of William and Martha (Pinder) Knowlton. A brave colonel in the Revolution. An intimate friend of Gen. Putnam, with whom he shared the perils and sufferings of the "French and Indian War." Slain in battle at Harlem Heights, Sept. 16, 1776. Washington said he "would be an honor to any country."

The Rev. Stephen Peabody (1741–1819), son of John and Sarah Peabody. Graduate of Harvard College, 1769. Chaplain in the Revolution. First minister in Atkinson, N. H.

The Rev. Humphrey Clark Perley (1761–1838), son of William and Sarah (Clark) Perley. Graduate of Dartmouth College, 1791. Minister in Methuen and Beverly.

Samuel Holyoke, A. M. (1762–1820), son of the Rev. Elizur and Hannah (Peabody) Holyoke. Graduate of Harvard University, 1789. Noted as a musical composer. Author of "The Columbian Repository of Sacred Music," and other works.

Nathaniel Perley, Esq. (1763–1824), son of Nathaniel and Mehitable (Perley) Perley. Lawyer in Hallowell, Me.

Dr. William Peabody (1768), son of Richard and Jemima (Spofford) Peabody. Physician in Frankfort, Me.

The Hon. Samuel Peabody (1775–1859), son of Richard and Jemima (Spofford) Peabody. Graduate of Dartmouth College, 1803. Attorney and counsellor-at-law in New Hampshire. He was father of Judge Charles Augustus Peabody, of New York and Louisiana.

Gen. Solomon Lowe (1782–1861), son of Nathan and Lucy (Lord) Lowe. Was general in the State Militia from 1820 to 1840. Representative from Boxford to the general court for several years.

The Rev. Peter Sydney Eaton (1798–1863), son of Rev. Peter and Sarah (Stone) Eaton. Graduate of Harvard University, 1818, and at the Theological Seminary at Andover, 1822. Settled over the Congregationalist Church in Merrimac (West Amesbury).

The Hon. Ira Perley, LL. D. (1799–1874), son of Samuel and Phebe (Dresser) Perley. Graduate of Dartmouth College, 1822. Read law with B. J. Gilbert. Practised the profession with great honor at Concord and Hanover, N. H. Was for many years judge of the Supreme Court, and vice-president of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society.

Dr. Daniel Perley (1804), son of Samuel and Phebe (Dresser) Perley. Graduate of Harvard College, 1828. Physician in Rowley and Lynn.

Rev. Albert Bradstreet Peabody (1828), son of Samuel and Mary (Bradstreet) Peabody. Pastor of the Orthodox Congregationalist Church, Stratham, N. H.

William A. Herrick, Esq. (1831), son of William H. and Lois (Killam) Herrick. Graduate of Dartmouth College, 1854. Lawyer in Boston.

Prof. Atherton. Graduate of Yale College and Phillips Academy. Member of Congress from the third district of New Jersey. Professor in Rutgers College.

Dr. Walter Henry Kimball (1820), son of Amos and Lucy (Foster) Kimball. Graduate of Dartmouth College, 1841. Physician in Andover, Mass.

The Flora, Geological Formation, &c. — The flora of Boxford is rich and varied, possessing most varieties native to this section of the country. The trailing arbutus is found in some localities, the air being fragrant with its sweet perfume. Two species of *Drosera* (Sundew), a curious plant, found by actual experiment to digest animal food, are found in her meadows. The *Cuscuta gronovii* (Dodder), is found growing on the borders of some of her ponds. The beautiful white *Azalea*, the Aster, and golden-rod are found. *Umbelliferæ* contributes quite largely from her stock of poisonous plants. The order *Compositæ* is, of course, largely represented.

The land is diversified by hill and valley, which promotes the beauty of the natural scenery. In the south-eastern part of the town is found the series of ridges that form a continuous chain throughout the county, and which has received so much attention by the Rev. George Wright, of Andover. The rock is calcareous gneiss and sienite, with considerable many bowlders and ledges in some localities. Quartz, containing indications of silver, lead, nickel, and other minerals, is found. A few years since, when the mining fever was at its height, several shafts were sunk, but without the success which had been anticipated. Several thousands of dollars were spent in this way.

Ponds. — Boxford is well supplied with ponds and small streams of water, which can be, and many of them are, improved as affording water-power for mills, &c. Mitchell's Pond, in the West Parish, containing thirty-six acres, which has recently been stocked with fish by an association formed for the purpose, has its outlet into Johnson's Pond, of one hundred and ninety-four acres, one-half of which is situated within the Boxford line, the rest being in Groveland. It has its outlet through a brook in Groveland, which runs into the Merrimac River, and from thence to the ocean. Fowler's Pond, containing about twelve acres, has its outlet through Hazzeltine Brook and Parker River into Plum Island River and the ocean. "Poor Farm" Pond, of fifty-four acres, has its outlet through Penn Brook into Parker River, &c. Stetson's, of twenty-two, Four Mile, of forty-two, and Stevens' Pond, of thirteen acres, have their outlet through Pye Brook and Ipswich River to the ocean. Stiles', of sixty, Cedar, of thirteen, and Crooked Pond, of twelve acres, have their outlet through Ipswich River by means of Fish Brook. Fish has generally been abundant, but the anglers from the city have greatly lessened their numbers.

Negroes. — The first mention made of the colored people on the records is about 1730. From this time to the year 1780, the names of about twenty-five people of color appear upon the records. "Candace" and "Scipio" are among their curious names.

Wild Animals. — In 1739, a committee was chosen to inspect the killing of deer. 1770, a bounty was offered for killing wildcats. Samuel Dorman killed one about this time. During the early settlement of the town, wolves and other animals of the like nature roved through the forests.

Witchcraft. — Rebecca Eames, wife of Robert Eames, one of the early settlers, aged, at this time, about 52 years, was placed in jail in Aug., 1692, had her trial for being a witch, was convicted, and condemned Sept. 17th. She remained in jail until the following March, when she was pardoned by Gov. Phips.

Almshouse. — Until 1847, the paupers in the towns were "boarded out" among the families. In the year above-mentioned the farm of Capt. Jacob Towne was purchased by the town for a "town farm," which it has continued to be to the present time.

Cemeteries. — There are five public cemeteries in the town, — three in the East and two in the West parish. The oldest yard is that across the street from the residence of Mr. Walter French. Only twelve headstones remain standing, the ground having not been used as a place of interment for half a century.

"*The Old Elm.*" — It would not do to leave out a notice of the grand old elm-tree in front of the residence of the late Mr. Isaac Hale. It was set out in 1767 (we believe), by Samuel Perley, who dug it up in the woods, brought it home on his back, and set it out where it now stands. Beneath its branches, Judge Ira Perley and his brother Daniel, the doctor, studied and lived their years of minority together; in their later years it became a kind of Mecca to them. It is the most magnificent and colossal tree that can be found in this section of the State. The trunk measures about twenty feet in circumference, as high up from the ground as a man can reach. Its wide-spreading branches cover an area of nearly an acre.

Public Library.—A public library was established here in 1874. It now contains about 600 volumes. Miss Mary E. Perley, librarian. Sustained by subscription. Located in East parish.

Senators, &c.—Boxford has furnished but two senators for the government of the State; viz., the Hon. Aaron Wood, in 1781, and Dea. Julius Aboyno Palmer, in 1869. Maj. Asa Perley was member of the Provincial Congress, 1775. The politics of the town at the present time are largely Republican, though in the last few years the Democrats have increased in numbers. At the first "fall" election, held Sept. 4, 1780, the Hon. John Hancock was chosen governor; the Hon. James Bowdoin, lieutenant-governor.

Boxford is bounded on the north and north-east by Bradford, Groveland, Georgetown, and Rowley; on the south-east by Ipswich and Topsfield; and on the south-west by Middleton and North Andover. Boxford contains about 13,000 acres of land, divided up as follows; viz., English mowing, about 1,400; meadow, 800; pasturage, 6,500; woodland, 1,300; unimproved, 2,300; and unimprovable land, 900 acres.

The Danvers and Newburyport branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad runs through the eastern part of the town. A stage runs through the north-western section, conveying the mail and passengers. Other railroad stations are handy, but outside the limits of the town.

Population, 1765, 851; 1776, 989; 1790, 925; 1800, 852; 1810, 880; 1820, 906; 1830, 935; 1840, 942; 1850, 982; 1860, 1,020; 1865, 868; and in 1875, 834 — 421 males and 413 females. Ratable polls, 253; native voters, 218; naturalized voters, 3; total voters, 221. Number unmarried, 427 — 219 males and 208 females. Number married, 358 — 184 males and 174 females; 31 widows and 18 widowers. 52 of the inhabitants (1875) were foreign born; 412 born in Boxford; 270 born in other towns in Massachusetts; 99 born in other States; and 1 unknown. Of the foreign born, 3 were born in England; 23 in Ireland; 3 in Scotland; 22 in Canada; and 1 in Sweden. Number of families, 212. Number of dwelling-houses, 186 — 177 occupied, and 9 unoccupied.

Valuation of Boxford, 1860, $649,331; in 1865, $631,942; in 1875, $604,230 — personal property, $85,790; real estate, $518,440. Town debt, $5,000, which is balanced by cash and notes held by the town, so that the debt is really nothing, — a situation of which few towns can boast.

The following are the town officers chosen at the annual town-meeting, March 4, 1878: Town Clerk, Benjamin S. Barnes; Selectmen, Ancil Dorman, George W. Chadwick, J. Henry Nason.

BRADFORD.

CHAPTER I.

TOPOGRAPHY OF THE TOWN — EARLY SETTLERS — PECULIARITIES OF ANCIENT CONTRACTS — DEVELOPMENT OF MECHANICAL INDUSTRIES — TOWN AFFAIRS.

Although the town of Bradford has a distinct and interesting history, the date of which commences sometime after its first settlement as a part of the ancient town of Rowley, its early and opening record is one of much interest, as being identified with the pioneers of civilization in this portion of Essex County. When Ezekiel Rogers, on the 4th of September, 1639, received a grant for a plantation, to be called Rowley, what is now known as Bradford was embraced within its limits, or was soon after added, and was then known as "Merrimack lands," from the fact that it bordered on the river bearing that name. It was not till ten years after, or in 1649, that active measures were taken for the settlement of these "lands," which was in the early days of the settlement of Haverhill, on the opposite shore.

In the spring of that year, the town of Rowley entered into an agreement with Robert Heseltine, John Heseltine, and William Wild, to commence the settlement, or to "sett down at Merrimack." The grant appears not to have been, at first, fully and clearly expressed by the town, which gave rise to many attempts at explanation, and much "town-meeting" talk. The specifications agreed upon were, that each should have "forty acres of upland, to be laid out to them as convenient as may be," with "commons for twenty head of cattle, which said commons they shall have liberty to fence in," but were restrained "from liberty to erect any more than three tenements upon any part of the said uplands or commons." In addition, "the towne hath granted to each of them twenty acres of meadow, to be laid out to them when they claim it, unless some providence of God shall hinder." They were also to have "liberty, each of them, to get a thousand pipe-staves yearly, for seven years" and to "cut fire wood for their families, and timber for fencing and building, but not within a quarter of a mile of the pasture fence." They were, in addition, "freed from town charges for the lands, houses, four oxen, and six cows, and four calves, for seven years." In return, they were "to sufficiently look to the herd of cattle which Rowley should put into the pasture for seven years, and provide convenient diet and lodging to any that the towne should send to keep any herds there."

Soon after the settlement of these men on these "lands," the town laid out to them four hundred and fifty acres of upland, and forty acres of meadow. The upland was on the river, extending from above the present site of the bridge, down, and the meadow was mostly in what is now Georgetown and Boxford.

The next "Merrimack lands" laid out, were two plantations, or farms, of three hundred acres respectively, to Rev. Ezekiel Rogers and Rev. Samuel Phillips. In addition, were twenty acres of meadow to Mr. Phillips, and twenty-five acres to Mr. Rogers, in Jeremie's meadow, so called. The town also voted that Joseph Swett should have nine hundred and sixty acres of land "in the neck, beyond the Heseltine's," and forty acres of meadow elsewhere, in exchange for three thousand acres about the Bald Hills. The farm of Mr. Phillips was east of Johnson's Creek, and bounded easterly by Mr. Rogers's farm, which was bounded by the river, and extended nearly down to the present site of the meeting-house. The Jewett plantation was "bounded by a runnell of water that falls into the Merrimack River on the east, and from said runnell of water to a white oak tree, and from thence to Merrimack River by Andover line." The Glover farm was soon laid out next adjoining this, and in 1671 the town of Rowley caused a succession of river-lots to be laid out, beginning at the Glover farm, and extending down river, containing from thirty-five acres to one hundred and two acres, and from eleven and a half rods to thirty-three and a half rods wide at the river, and are supposed to have embraced the territory between the Heseltine grant and Johnson's Creek. In this town is Chadwick's Pond.

In 1670, the land between Newbury line and Mr. Rogers's farm was laid out, beginning at the Newbury line. Philip Nelson had 483 acres, 67 rods wide at the river, and Deacon Ezekiel Jewett had 145 acres, 20 rods wide at the river. From Deacon Jewett's lot, the land for the burial-ground was given for the use of the town. The grants of land were then quite numerous, indicating a pretty rapid settlement. These river-lots, above Johnson's Creek, extended back to what is now Boxford line, and those below the creek extended to what is now the Rowley line. These lots were all long and narrow, that of Mr. Nelson being nearly three miles and a half long, and one hundred and forty rods in width.

These lots were difficult of access, in many instances, on account of their depth and narrowness. They were also divided by lines of marked trees, indicating bounds, which sometimes led to misunderstandings and a clashing of rights. There was the line of "marked trees" above the plough land, the "middle range," and the "upper range," which were the only designating bounds. No mention is made of early clearings of forests, from which it may be inferred that the pasture lands spoken of were natural openings, sufficiently free from trees or underbush to admit of the growth of grass, and formed the pasturage of that day.

In 1675, this tract of land was incorporated into the town of Bradford, embracing what is now known as that town, and what is embraced in the present town of Groveland. After the incorporation of the town, and at about 1681, the people felt the hardship of sustaining a distinct town government, and appealed to the town of Rowley for some aid, either by an additional grant of "meadow land," or in some other way. The old town sympathized with the new township, but rendered no further aid than to grant to the Rev. Mr. Symmes "six or seven loads of hay yearly," from the Rock-pond meadow. By this it may be inferred that one of the burdens was the support of the minister, which was then a town affair.

The claims of Bradford still continued to be urged for an additional grant, till 1701, when an appeal was made to the General Court to interfere in their behalf. The appeal was finally settled by reference to a committee consisting of Dea. Ezekiel Jewett, Capt. Joseph Boynton, and Lieut. John Dresser, of Rowley, who met the Bradford committee at the house of Samuel Hale, on the 14th of October, 1701, where they agreed upon a line running from the great rock by Samuel Holmes's house to Newbury line south of Crane Pond, instead of north of it, giving an addition of five hundred acres of land to the town of Bradford, which, in the light of present judgment, would be of little value, being chiefly meadow land, but then considered as quite desirable.

After the river lots were laid out, the town proceeded to lay out the remainder of the Merrimack lands, which was done by the joint consent of all the proprietors. In this division were ten small lots, in all, 186 acres, all bounded by Little Pond, southerly, and north-

erly by the "Ministry land," so called. These lots, beginning at the west, were laid out to Joseph Chaplin, Abraham Foster, Thomas Palmer, John Simmons, Hugh Smith, Jonathan Hopkinson, John Eastman, James Dickinson, Dea. Maximilian Jewett, and Jonathan Remington. The ministry lot contained forty acres, and "at all times forever hereafter, for the use of the ministrie in that town Merrimacke, and that it should never be the proper and peculiar right of any person or persons, any longer or further than while he or they were the orderly ministers of the aforesade towne of Merrimacke"

The average length of the town was seven miles, with a breadth of two and a half miles, containing over ten thousand acres, and of excellent soil, bounded by the Merrimac River on the northerly side, and lying opposite Haverhill. The first settlers were chiefly Rowley men, and though, for a period of twenty-five years, really a part of the town of Rowley, they do not appear to have been taxed by that town, but were allowed to manage their affairs in their own way, as a distinct community, holding town-meetings, in the name of the town of Merrimack, till at a meeting, Jan. 7, 1672–3, they voted to call the town Bradford, and by that name it was incorporated in 1675.

The records show that Robert Heseltine, and John Heseltine, his brother, were leading men in the town, and that in 1666 Robert was paid by the town of Rowley 1*s.* for services as juryman, and the same year 5*s.* for killing two foxes. In 1655 the same Robert Heseltine was ordered by the "Courte" to keep a ferry over Merrimac River, "charging 4*d.* for the ferriage of a stranger, if they pay presently; and 6*d.* if bookt, and to keep entertainment for horse and man for one yeare unless the General Courte take further orders."

The first recorded town-meeting of the Merrimack people was Feb. 20, 1668–9, while yet territorially a part of Rowley, at which the following officers were chosen: Constable, Thomas Kimball; Selectmen, Sergeant John Gage, Robert Heseltine, Joseph Pike, John Griffing, John Tenney; Clerk of Writs, Joseph Pike; Overseers, Samuel Worcester, Benjamin Gage, Benjamin Kimball, David Heseltine; Commissioners to lay out all Highways within the bounds of the town, Sergeant John Gage, Joseph Pike, John Griffing.

The same rules of enforcing attendance upon town-meetings, peculiar to all the colonial towns, existed here. Whoever did not attend a regularly warned town-meeting was fined 6*d.* per hour during his absence, and whoever should speak in town-meeting, without liberty from the Moderator, was fined 6*d.* for each offence. The legal places "for the publishing of any orders or other business of public concernment to the whole town, was by setting up a writing or writings at the houses of Thomas Kimball and Benjamin Gage, until we have a more convenient place."

The selectmen were given full power to "carry on, and finish the minister's house according to Mr. Symm's direction, and to raise the pay by rate, upon the estates of said inhabitants." By-laws were established containing a variety of wholesome and orderly provisions. All swine above half a year old were required to be substantially yoked, "the yokes being two feet one way and twenty inches the other, on penalty of 1*s.* per hog, for every defect, the which to be done by the first of August, and so be kept yoked till Indian corn be gathered." Horses and cattle were also required to be yoked or fettered. A legal fence was a five-railed fence, three feet ten inches high, or a hedge, pale or ditch, equivalent to such a fence in the judgment of the overseers The meeting-house was not forgotten in the provisions for order and comeliness; and Samuel Heseltine was employed to sweep it, receiving the compensation of "one peck of Indian corn per year from every man who hath a right to vote in town meetings, to be brought to his house." As early as 1671, the selectmen, by direction of the town, laid out the burying-ground in the First or West Parish. As late as March 27, 1669, they styled themselves "The inhabitants of Rowly Village by Merrimack," and not till the town was incorporated in the name of Bradford did the connection with the old township entirely cease.

It will be remembered that the Bradford of 1675 contained the whole of the territory now embraced in the town of Groveland, its eastern boundary being Newbury. It early became a post town, and is located thirty miles north of Boston, twenty north of Salem, and ten west of Newburyport. In 1810 its population was 1,369, and in 1820, 1,600. East Bradford, or the East Parish, was a thrifty and growing community, and in 1850 the two parishes separated, dividing as equally as possible the population and the valuation, creating the town of Groveland, which became its eastern boundary. Its southern boundary is Georgetown and Boxford, with North Andover on the south-west, and the Merrimac River on the north and north-west, dividing it from Haverhill and Methuen. After the division, in 1855, the population was 1,372. In 1875 its population was 2,347, containing 413 dwellings and 531 families. It had seven manufactories with a capital of $21,500 invested, yielding a product of $52,300, and an agricultural product of $43,635.

The surface of the soil is uneven, and in quality various, though generally excellent for cultivation. There are several elevations, the highest being Powder House Hill, or Head's Hill, commanding a delightful prospect of the Merrimac River, and the picturesque valley through which it flows, together with a commanding view of Haverhill, Lawrence, North Andover, as well as the outlying territory of all these thrifty communities, and an extensive view of the hill country of New Hampshire for many miles. It has long been connected with Haverhill by a bridge, the present iron one taking the place of the wooden structure of earlier days, and is one of the finest bridges in New England. The Boston and Maine Railroad passes through the town, crossing the river just above the populous portion, where is located the depot. The Newburyport Railroad also passes through the town, having its depot at Haverhill Bridge, which road gives direct communication with Newburyport and Salem, and furnishes another route to Boston *via* Georgetown and Danvers.

The location and character of the soil renders it a natural agricultural community, and in the early days of its history agriculture was its leading interest, though its water-power was utilized for mechanical purposes, which, at that period, became of considerable importance. When the shoe-manufacturing interest began to develop itself, it was quite extensively engaged in by the enterprising men located there; and while that industry was becoming established in Haverhill, a thrifty business in the same line sprang up in Bradford, or West Bradford, as it was then called. In 1837 the leading men engaged in that business there were, Josiah Brown, Leonard Johnson, Samuel Heath, William Day & Co., J. P. Montgomery & Co., Warren Ordway, George K. Montgomery, Humphrey Hoyt, Ordway & Webster, Guy Carleton, Jr., and Pressey & Fletcher; with Kimball Farrar in the leather business. No more energetic manufacturers were in business in this section than the men of this community. Gradually the business and the trade began to centre in Haverhill, and in a few years nearly all these manufacturers had their places of business there, but retained their homes in Bradford, which still continues to be the situation with those still living, and with most of their successors.

Much of the early history of its mechanical industries is connected with what was then East Bradford, Johnson's Creek furnishing water-power which caused a concentration in that quarter; and it became a centre for considerable trade. Moses Parker was a leading merchant there, and was widely known in the back country. For a century and a half this was a prominent and growing centre for trade and manufactures, at that time regarded as leading and important. Many of the early settlers of Rowley, who made up the sixty families gathered about Ezekiel Rogers in that early settlement, were mechanics, and they naturally sought the localities favorable to putting machinery in motion. The weavers, the spinners, and the fullers soon located themselves on the streams, though it was not for some years after the first settlement was made in this section, that much was done in the

mechanical line. It was not before 1750 that much manufacturing activity was shown. In 1760, Thomas Carleton established a fulling-mill on Johnson's Creek, and Aaron Parker had a mill there for dressing cloth. In this line Benjamin Morse and his sons had a wide reputation as superior manufacturers. At a later time Stephen Foster was a large manufacturer of pewter buckles and sleigh-bells, on the same stream, and Jesse Atwood had a chocolate manufactory there. The coopering business was early carried on to a considerable extent, but had its decline with the lapse of years. During the Revolutionary war Deacon Samuel Tenney was a manufacturer of saltpetre, but that business was not long sustained. As early as 1770, Moses Parker, who is said to have been a man of good mechanical powers, constructed machinery for manufacturing tobacco, when only thirteen years old, and never having had but one opportunity of observing the requisite machinery used in the business. This became quite an extensive business in his hands.

The manufacture of leather was quite extensively carried on in this town, and was first established by Shubael Walker in the Upper Parish, but was finally transferred to the East Parish where, in 1820, were in existence five tan-yards in active operation. In connection with this was introduced the manufacture of shoes of a coarse grade which were sent to the Southern and Middle States, and to the West Indies. In 1820, and prior to that time, one hundred and fifty men were constantly employed in that business, with a product of fifty thousand pairs of boots and shoes yearly; but it must be remembered that hand-work ruled in those days. Daniel Hardy, of Pelham, N. H., was one of the leading manufacturers at that time, and was followed by Thomas Savory and Nathaniel Mitchell, manufacturing extensively for the Southern trade and the West Indies. The business continued to increase in importance, and about the time of the French Revolution, Moses Savory and a Mr. Gage extended the business, so that it became the leading one in the town.

In 1798, William Tenney, Jr., established a chaise manufactory, which continued to flourish for thirty years or more. In 1800 the manufacture of straw bonnets was commenced, which became a very profitable business, continuing for many years, but it has finally entirely faded out, not a vestige of it now remaining.

The extent of the manufacturing carried on upon Johnson's Creek was enumerated by the Rev. Gardner B. Perry, in his historical discourse delivered in 1820. Up to that time there were, or had been, four saw-mills, five grist-mills, three fulling-mills, and two bark-mills. The first was a grist-mill set up by Edward Carleton, whose father was the first person born in Rowley; Deacon Phineas Carleton, and Mr. Aaron Parker built mills there. In connection with the latter enterprise, the venerable divine remarks that the sluice to that mill was "dug by the job for $70 by Cuff Dole, a person of color, of remarkable strength, steady habits, and who died in the comfortable hope of a blessed immortality." In 1740, Joseph Kimball and Eliphalet Hardy set up the lower mills, so called. In 1790, Retier Parker built a tan-yard near the lower mill, and "contrived to have the stone by which the bark is ground, moved by water instead of by horses, certainly a useful improvement."

As early as 1684, the town received proposals from Richard Thomas, of Rowley, and John Perle, of Marblehead, to set up a corn-mill on Johnson's Creek, which were cordially received and liberal subscriptions made to aid the enterprise, "upon conditions that the mill should be a good and sufficient one, and that *the people in this town should be served in turn in preference to those out of town;* and also that a sufficient passage should be left for fish, which conditions were agreed to, and the mill accordingly set up," although the terms were in subversion of the old grist-mill rule of "first come, first served."

The first saw-mill was owned by the Carleton family, but when built is not certainly known. It stood across the road above the first grist-mill, and the mud-sills were to be seen as late as 1820, though they had probably lain there more than one hundred and fifty years. In 1784, Mr. Francis Kimball built a saw-mill, and Mr. Benjamin Morse a fulling-mill, near the mouth of the creek. Besides these have existed five or six saw-mills, and one grist-mill upon temporary streams, one of which was on the farm of David How. These appendages to civilization now appear as insignificant in comparison with the improved mechanical facilities of the present day, but they were "institutions" in their time. The power on Johnson's Creek still remains, reference to which will properly appear in the history of Groveland.

CHAPTER II.

EDUCATIONAL INTERESTS — BRADFORD ACADEMY — ITS ESTABLISHMENT — ITS FOUNDERS AND PRECEPTORS AND PRECEPTRESSES — ITS CHANGES AND ITS PRESENT STANDING.

In every town the church and the instrumentalities of religious instruction were of the first consideration; and the establishment and maintenance of the gospel, not only as supplying the proper and practical rules of life, but furnishing a system of theological faith, was of the first importance with the people of the early times. This element of life was a part of the constituent elements of the civilization that was attempting to establish itself upon these virgin acres, and the threads of its life were incorporated into the whole texture of society. The ministrations of the altar and the teachings of the gospel, as they understood them, were to be waited on and supported by contributions to the common treasury, but the organization of the church did not always immediately follow the settlement of a town.

The first church was formed in Bradford, Dec. 27, 1682, and the Rev. Zachariah Symmes was ordained the same day. He had previously preached here fourteen years, and was the ordained pastor twenty-six years. He died in 1708, aged 71. His son was his successor, and was ordained in 1708, dying in 1725, aged 45. Both were graduates of Harvard, and men of learning and piety. The Rev. Joseph Parsons was the third minister. The fourth minister was the Rev. Samuel Williams, LL.D. He was dismissed in 1780 to become professor in Mathematics in Harvard College, subsequently removing to Rutland, Vt., of which State he wrote a valuable history. The Rev. Jonathan Allen was the fifth minister, and the Rev. Ira Ingraham the sixth. The Rev. Loami Ives Hadley was the seventh minister; the Rev. Moses Coleman Searle was the eighth minister. The Rev. Nathan Monroe was the ninth minister; the Rev. J. T. McCollum was the tenth minister; the eleventh, and present pastor of the society, is the Rev. J. D. Kingsbury.

The church is a flourishing one in point of numbers and zeal in religious work. The ordinary instrumentalities for instruction in religious knowledge, as the Bible-class and Sunday-school, exist, and are in a flourishing condition.

The East Parish was set off in May, 1726, and the Second Church in Bradford organized in 1727, at which time the Rev. William Balch was ordained as their pastor. The Rev. Ebenezer Dutch, the second minister, was ordained as colleague with Mr. Balch in 1799. The Rev. Gardner Braman Perry, the third minister, was ordained Sept. 28, 1814. A general history of the church from that time is to be found in the history of Groveland, which, though it did not exist as an incorporated town, was practically a separate community in all its religious interests, and to a great extent in its business affairs. Many years were spent in debating the question of being set off as a separate parish before the action was reached, and the question of the division of the town was sometime agitated before final action took place.

In 1831 a Methodist church was organized in Bradford, followed by the organization of a society and the erection of a meeting-house in 1833, in the East Parish, which flourished for several years, when it was finally sold to a society termed the Independent Congrega-

tional Society, rallying around the Rev. D. A. Wasson, who was first settled as a colleague pastor with the venerable Dr. Perry, but in consequence of his liberal religious opinions, did not long remain with the society. The associated incidents of this movement will be found in the history of Groveland.

An early organization of the religious sect then styling themselves "Separatists," but finally taking the name of Baptists, established worship in this town in the year 1769, and appears to have been largely an offshoot from the society in Haverhill which was organized under the ministry of the Rev. Hezekiah Smith. In that year they purchased the old meeting-house of the Second Parish in Rowley, which was taken down and rebuilt at the "Four Corners," near the house of Jonathan Hale, in Bradford, where public worship was sustained a part of each year for several successive years, though they had no settled minister. Mr. Eliphaz Chapman, a Congregationalist, who afterwards settled in Bethel, Me., preached for them more than any other. The supporters of this meeting were principally residents of the towns of Rowley, Bradford, and Newbury. The record appears to show that on the 4th of May, 1781, the people interested in this movement organized as a branch of the Baptist church in Haverhill, and by a petition, setting forth their desires, were received into that church agreeably to their request. Elder Samuel Harriman, a member of the Haverhill Baptist church since May 9, 1765, was appointed elder of this branch, and is supposed to have been the first person of Rowley who united with any Baptist church. This church had some immediate growth, thirteen females being soon added. In 1782 the meeting-house was again taken down and rebuilt in the Second Parish in Rowley, near where it formerly stood, and in 1785 this branch petitioned the Haverhill church to be set off and established as a distinct church, which was permitted, and at its organization the Rev. Hezekiah Smith preached the sermon.

The first meeting of the persons who afterwards constituted the Christian church of Haverhill, was held in Bradford, December, 1803, at the house of John Marble, the Rev. Elias Smith, of Portsmouth, N. H., preaching on the occasion. This movement was styled, by those engaged in it, "the reformation in Bradford and Haverhill." The record says, "A door was opened Dec. 22, 1803, by Bro. John Marble, where Elder Elias Smith preached the Gospel for the first time in Bradford. The word had some effect." "Sept. 26, 1804, Elder Smith preached again in Bradford. God blessed the word to the awakening of some souls, who soon after found peace in believing." In 1805 and 1806, forty-three persons were baptized in Bradford by Elders Smith and Jones, most of whom were between the ages of twelve and twenty-five years. The church was organized in Haverhill, and the meetings established there. Out of that early organization grew the present Christian church in Haverhill.

After the close of the War of the Rebellion, a community of colored people settled in Bradford, forming a society for religious worship, and built a small church, but after a brief existence there, its location was changed to Haverhill, and now constitutes the Calvary Baptist Church. The Congregationalist Church is now the only one in Bradford, and all who do not sympathize with the sentiments of Orthodox Congregational worship find their religious homes among the various organizations in Haverhill.

The first meeting-house in town was located near the old cemetery, the usage being to have the meeting-house and burying-ground near to each other. A second meeting-house was built in 1705, and twenty-five years later another house of worship was built near where the present one now stands. There was a small parish fund established in 1800, in support of the minister, by a donation of $1,000 from Jonathan Chadwick, which has been increased by the sale of land, from time to time, belonging to the parish, till it now yields about $400 annually.

In connection with religious instruction, and the maintenance of public worship, the educational interests of the town received a proper share of attention. The records supply but very little information upon this subject, and it is probable that the educational advantages for the first fifty years of the settlement of the town were very limited. Although not suffering so severely from invasions by the Indians, as did some other towns, a constant fear rested over the town for many years, which prevented much advance in educational interests.

The first vote of the town, bearing in the direction of providing for schools, which found its way to the records, appears in 1701, which authorized the selectmen to provide a school at their discretion, at the town's expense. This plan became modified the next year, and a tuition fee required of twopence per week for those learning to read, and fourpence for those learning to write, which was about all that was taught at that time, except the rudiments of arithmetic.

The first teacher known to have been employed was Ichabods. After him, in 1723, came Mr. White, at an annual salary of £24 10*s*. Succeeding him was Master Hobey and Master Merrill. School-houses were not plenty in those days, the first one being built on the "meeting-house land," at a cost of £25. The usage of the times was to teach in private houses in different parts of the town. As late as March 7, 1774, the records of the town inform us that "'Twas put to vote to see if the town would supply the schools with wood after September next, and so on for the future, and it passed in the negative." Without doubt the scholars, and all having any interest in the cause of education, regarded that as a very *cool* vote.

In 1780, the town voted "one month's schooling at the school-house near John Burbank's." A little later, and the record began to brighten, when a school committee was chosen, in addition to the minister and the selectmen, who were, *ex officio*, members of the board. This committee consisted of Capt. Nathaniel Thurston, Ens. James Kimball, Nathan Burbank, and Dea. Seth Jewett. They not only created a committee, but voted to raise £340 to defray all town charges, and voted to have two months' schooling in the new school-house near the Rev. Mr. Allen's, designating January and February as the months to be used for that purpose.

Following this improvement, a code of regulations was introduced for the more systematic management of the schools. From this advanced step, constant progress was made in the modes of education, and the common-school system became accepted here as elsewhere. The schools in this town now take rank among the best in the Commonwealth. A high school was established in 1866, though the requirements of the State law did not compel it, the number of families in town not reaching five hundred. The school has adopted a four years' course, and has already attained a high position. The districts have also been abolished, and a system of graded schools introduced. The statistics show that, in amount appropriated for sustaining the educational interests, in proportion to the number of scholars between the ages of five years and fifteen years, Bradford takes rank as the sixth town in the county, and the forty-ninth in the State.

Tracing the line of intellectual development in these communities, growing up in the midst of a combination of adverse conditions, a philosophical wonder and a metaphysical mystery constantly present themselves, while the astonishing fact of the superior power of the interior forces over all external and visible elements and conditions, is a source of constant surprise and amazement. While the rude and imperfect courses of education were in progress, thought was ever active, and aspirations for higher things were constantly pressing from within, outward, and demanding more perfect realizations. It was under these circumstances that an IDEA forced itself to the surface, and was simultaneously surrounded by the best minds in the town; which was that of founding an academy, which should give to the rising generation better educational opportunities, and it was the realization of that ideal which supplied the stimulus which at once greatly aided the general cause of education.

The advantages of the common school had become a realized fact,

and the thoughts by day, and the dreams by night, were for higher and better things. Following thinking and dreaming, the subject became the theme of discussion at the social evening gatherings, till a crystallization of plans began to appear. At one of these friendly meetings of leading men and women in Bradford, early in March, 1803, education became the principal topic, and the naked question, "Why should not Bradford have an academy of its own?" was squarely put, and as squarely answered. The record of the historian is, that "as these people in their sleighs glided homeward that night, over the wild snow-banks that overlooked the Merrimac, and their bells jerked out shrill music on the keen March air, the cozy riders, wrapped comfortably in homespun, had already practically founded Bradford Academy." There was no delay; no putting off till next year; for the record says, "At a meeting of a number of the inhabitants of the First Parish in Bradford, March 7, 1803, It was Mutually agreed upon that a Building should be erected for an Academy, and the persons there assembled became subscribers, to defray the Charges of building said House, in the sums affixed to their Respective names."

This agreement received about thirty signatures, and $1,218.80 was the amount of the subscriptions. To this, additions were promptly made, the site for the academy selected, and within three months from that "7th of March Resolution," the building was completed, a preceptor and preceptress engaged, the school formally opened, and the first term of twelve weeks completed, with fifty-one pupils. This was the quick and noble beginning of a literary institution which has since become known in every State in the whole Union, and has become the alma mater of thousands who have found spheres of labor and influence, and homes in all quarters of the world.

In 1804, the number of pupils was increased to eighty-seven, of whom sixty were females. It was in this year that the institution was incorporated, and took its place among the educational forces in the Commonwealth. Brilliant as this movement really was, it was not unattended by perplexities and discouragements, alike shared by the association sustaining it, and those called to exercise the functions of teachers. The first preceptor received but eighty dollars and board, for a term of twelve weeks; and the compensation of Miss Hannah Swan, the preceptress, was three dollars a week and her board. At a later time, the compensation of the principal was reduced to four and a half dollars per week.

To aid the school, an endowment was thought necessary, and the sum of $1,450 subscribed, though not actually paid in; but the interest was secured by a sure guarantee. At times, things moved heavily; some became cool in their support, and a discontinuation of the enterprise was here and there suggested. This was the situation in 1807, when the warm-hearted friends rallied again, and an outside annual income of $72 was secured to the academy for twenty years, but was needed and paid for only five years, at which time the school became fully established and independent, among the educational institutions of the country.

A great drawback to the success of the academy, was the frequent change of preceptors, of whom there were thirteen, whose aggregate administration extended from June, 1803, to December, 1814, a period of eleven years and six months. These men were worthy men, but not professional teachers, and only two of them became such. The compensation was not sufficiently attractive to invite to permanency of occupation, and they were attracted to other callings. Six of the number entered the ministry, and two became merchants. Change in preceptors was, of necessity, attended by change in policy and modes of instruction, which seriously interfered with settled plans; and successive ruptures of this nature tended to weakness.

The Rev. Samuel Walker, a native of Haverhill, was the first preceptor; his successor was Mr. Samuel Greele, a native of Wilton, N. H., who subsequently became a merchant. The Rev. Dr. James Flint, a native of Reading, was the preceptor in 1805, who was succeeded by the Rev. Abraham Burnham, D.D., a native of Dunbarton, N. H. He was a man of educational and religious mark. Following him, was Mr. Isaac Morrill, a native of Needham, who was followed by Samuel Peabody, Esq., a native of Boxford. His successor was the Rev. Daniel Hardy, a native of Bradford, who was followed by the Rev. Luther Bailey, of Canton; and he was succeeded by the Hon. Samuel Adams, of New Rowley, now Georgetown. Mr. Richard Kimball, of Bradford, was the next preceptor, and was the first and only one who had been educated in the academy. His successor was the Rev. Eben Peck Sperry, of New Haven, Conn., who vacated the position for the Hon. Nathaniel Dike, of Beverly. After him, came Daniel Noyes, Esq., who, in after years, was widely known as a druggist in Boston. He was a firm friend of the institution, and held position on the Board of Trustees twenty-four years, where his energy and prudent counsel accomplished much for the success of the institution. This chapter of changes brings the succession down to the fourteenth and last preceptor of the academy.

On the 12th of December, 1814, following in the footsteps of thirteen predecessors, whose united official relations had extended through eleven years and a half, Benjamin Greenleaf, of Haverhill, assumed the duties of preceptor, which he held till April 6, 1836, a period of about twenty-two years, when the institution ceased to be a mixed one, and has since been known as "The Bradford Female Academy." Mr. Greenleaf was afterwards principal of the Bradford Teachers' Seminary till 1848.

Benjamin Greenleaf was a man of mark, and of peculiar parts, who soon attained a high reputation as a successful teacher and pioneer in the cause of education, and at length attained the position of a *veteran* in the work. He was born Sept. 25, 1786, and was a descendant from Edmund Greenleaf, born in England in 1600, and emigrating to America in 1635, making his settlement in Newbury, now Newburyport. His father was a farmer, and was one of the patriots of Revolutionary days, whose attachment to the cause of American independence gave to it local strength and dignity.

His early opportunities for education were very limited, but he improved them to the best advantage; and although finally becoming a distinguished teacher in mathematics, he did not know the multiplication table at the age of fourteen. Though not a man excessively abounding in words, he possessed a peculiarity of expression which gave great force and point to what he said; and he was always famous for his laconic and quaint expressions.

In speaking of his early efforts to obtain an education, he once said, "If I ever offered up an earnest prayer, it was for rainy days, that I might betake myself to my books." Like Horace Greeley, instead of spending time in the sports usually attractive to youth, he was usually found on winter evenings in his study, the spacious chimney-corner of the farm-house, reading by firelight. His spare pennies were invested in books, in which was centred his pleasure; and in reference to the accomplishments of his youth, he was accustomed to say he "could neither sing, swim, skate, or dance."

In 1805, at the age of nineteen, he commenced preparation for college at Atkinson, N.H., spending portions of each year in teaching. At the graduation exercises at Atkinson, in 1810, he was the valedictory orator, and one of the managers of the ball in the evening; but it appears that this amusement was not particularly attractive to him, for, on a subsequent occasion, he entered in his diary, "Had an invitation to a ball; conclude it would be folly to attend." He entered Dartmouth College Sept. 29, 1810, and graduated in 1813. In college he excelled in mathematics, and there calculated and sketched the transit of Venus, being the first to work that problem in Dartmouth College.

After his graduation he became the teacher of a grammar school in Haverhill, and from there passed to the preceptorship of the Bradford Academy, in 1814. With the entrance of Mr. Greenleaf to that institution, in an educational sense, his life became the life of the academy, while in its religious tone and tendency, its career and

destiny was more particularly shaped by the female influences connected with it.

When Greenleaf stepped over its threshold it was to commence his labors with only ten pupils, so unfavorable to growth had the previous frequent changes in teachers been. The number increased to thirty in a few months, which was followed by constant growth, till in 1817 it had risen to one hundred and forty-seven. The time had then arrived for a catalogue, which is now a curiosity of past days, it being "a single sheet, poster form, dull yellow, and untrimmed, eleven inches by eighteen." Miss Hasseltine was then preceptress, and of the pupils, eighty-seven were females and sixty males.

As a teacher, Mr. Greenleaf had the elements which led to popularity and success, and during his career had under his care more than three thousand pupils, including among them a large number who became eminent men, filling and adorning the highest positions in life. One of these, the Hon. Ira Perley, Chief Justice of the State of New Hampshire, has very accurately presented the characteristics of his preceptor. Of him he says: "His manners were not much regulated by artificial rules of politeness; but he had, what is most important, great real kindness of heart, and habitual regard for the feelings of others. His loud voice and abrupt address were, perhaps, the more remarked from their contrast with the easy self-possession and calmer dignity of the excellent lady who presided so long over the other department of the school. . . . . He had drilled himself, as well as his pupils, very faithfully in Latin and Greek books which he taught, and his tastes did not lead him a great way beyond. He took greater pleasure in solving knotty problems in mathematics than in the perusal of Latin or Greek classics. . . . . Mr. Greenleaf was an uncommon genius, in the sense of having peculiarities entirely his own, in the structure of his mind, the contour of his head and face, the expression of his countenance, his utterance, his manners, his motions, all his ways."

He is invariably described by all who knew him as entirely devoted to the business of teaching, as a good disciplinarian, and a thoroughly honest man, wholly incapable of disguise or false pretences, with moral and religious principles firmly established and made the guide of his life. Dr. Crowell, of Haverhill, says of him: "His discipline was peculiar to himself, being an odd mixture of ridicule, sarcasm, and moral suasion, with a wholesome seasoning of corporal punishment. This was administered, not with the conventional rod, but with anything at hand; an old iron spoon, used for melting the soft metals, or a piece of iron or zinc. A smart rap over the knuckles with these formidable appliance would illustrate physics in a manner not taught in the books."

It has been truly said of Mr. Greenleaf that he was more than a local teacher; he was a public educator. He was an early and efficient advocate of the normal school system, and while a member of the State Legislature, in 1837, 1838, and 1839 was an earnest and enthusiastic advocate of legislative measures for the promotion of education, introducing orders there for a geological survey of the State, and also for a natural history survey.

He was also a pioneer educator in the natural sciences by illustrated public lectures. As an author, he was extensively and eminently known, publishing works on arithmetic, algebra, geometry, trigonometry, practical surveying, rules of syntax, and other valuable works. Millions of these works have been published, and have for long years been the text-books in the schools. His literary labors fully justify the statement already made, that in an educational point of view, the Bradford Academy was largely indebted to him for the ultimate triumphs it achieved. Mr. Greenleaf was a man full of purposes and plans, as an educator, and his vital energies endured to the last. With mind unimpaired, and without a struggle or groan, he passed over to the other shore on the twenty-ninth day of October, 1864, at the ripe age of 78 years.

The retirement of Mr. Greenleaf from the academy, in 1836, closed the institution forever after to the admission of male pupils, and Miss Abigail C. Hasseltine, who had already been preceptress there for twenty-one years, became the principal of Bradford Female Academy. Since 1828, there had been an entire separation between the two departments, with the direction of the female department substantially in the hands of Miss Hasseltine. A sister of Miss Hasseltine became the wife of Dr. Adoniram Judson, and gave her life to the missionary enterprise in India. Her education was accomplished at the Bradford Academy, and at that time the religious sympathy and interest connected with the school all pointed in the direction of fostering the missionary spirit. A powerful revival had moved the hearts of many young people there, and a religious enthusiasm had been awakened. Many of the associates of Miss Hasseltine had been converted, and among them Harriet Atwood, afterwards Harriet Newell, who became committed to the missionary interest. Subsequently the conversion of Miss Hasseltine placed her in full religious sympathy and interest with her associates, and the missionary spirit, of necessity, became the ruling religious thought which surrounded this literary institution.

The decided religious character of the school was favorable to its success, at that time, and it grew strong with the advance of years. The remarkable executive ability of Miss Hasseltine, united with excellent qualities as a teacher, commanded the confidence of the patrons of the school, and its success became fully established. The old academy had become unequal to the practical wants of the institution, and a new Academy Hall was erected and consecrated to the purposes of Christian education on the 15th of April, 1841. In 1853, the semi-centennial was celebrated, which drew together many of its friends from abroad to enjoy the jubilee, which concluded with a banquet, at which fifteen hundred were gathered. In 1848, Miss Hasseltine resigned her position as principal, and was succeeded by Miss Ellison, but returned again in 1849, on the resignation of Miss Ellison, being associated with Miss Crocker as assistant principal. In 1852, however, the principal retired again, and was succeeded by Miss Crocker, who soon resigned; and her place was filled by Miss Gilman, who held the position till 1858. The next principal was Miss Abby Hasseltine Johnson, having sole management, but associated with Miss Hasseltine as honorary principal, at liberty to come and go at pleasure. In 1866, a re-union of the friends of the academy took place, at which it became certain that a new academy would be built for the accommodation of the increasing number of pupils; and measures were at once taken to secure the necessary funds for its construction. The subscriptions were liberal, and the preparatory work was at once entered upon. In the meantime, the venerable and beloved principal began to show signs of sinking beneath the infirmities of age and the burden of years; and in June, 1866, she was thrown from a carriage, by which she sustained severe injury upon the head, from which she never fully recovered, though able to participate in the pleasures of the re-union. Infirmity and disease, however, had gained fast hold upon her, and on the thirteenth day of January, 1868, she passed to her repose, at the age of eighty years, after having been connected with the academy as preceptress and principal for full fifty years, exerting a measure of influence which can never be fully estimated. From an intimate acquaintance with her for many years, her physician, Dr. George Cogswell, said of her, "Without any hesitation, I place Miss A. C. Hasseltine among the remarkable women of the world."

In 1869, the new academy and dormitory was completed, and dedicated in May, 1870, the occasion being one of great rejoicing by its friends and patrons. Its location is near the centre of the town, upon an eligible swell of land, containing about twenty-five acres, twelve acres of which are covered by a thrifty growth of wood, forming a beautiful park; and the remaining portion being embraced in a magnificent esplanade, stretching its slope from the edifice to the verge of the street, where it reaches a solid granite face-wall, extending

along the whole front line. At the entrance to the grounds on either side, are massive granite posts, three feet square, composed of Cape Ann, Concord, and Nova Scotia granite; and fountains are distributed through the grounds.

The edifice is two hundred and sixteen feet in its front line, in shape cruciform, and four stories high. In its construction it is finely adapted for its intended use, and is supplied with all the appointments which belong to an establishment of this character. The grounds have already been extensively improved and adorned. From its site is a full view of the entire city of Haverhill, and of the Merrimac valley for many miles, presenting a picturesque and charming prospect.

Till 1875, Miss Abbie H. Johnson remained as the principal, when she resigned. Her successor and present principal, Miss Annie E. Johnson, is successfully conducting the institution. Dr. George Cogswell has for forty years or more been intimately connected with the management of its business affairs, and was chairman of the building committee for the erection of the hall in 1841, and for the dormitory in 1869.

The fame of this institution is wide-spread; and for many years it was the leading female academy in New England, and now stands in successful competition with the institutions of a similar character which have made their appearance in later years. Its influence upon the educational interests of the town has also been highly beneficial.

In 1821, Merrimac Academy was established in the East Parish, which has also had a successful career. The division of the town in 1850 transferred this to Groveland, which then become the new town. That and other interests whose history stretches back to the time when the two communities were one, will be noticed more at length in the sketch of that town. A post-office was established here in 1811.

CHAPTER III.

PERILS OF THE EARLY SETTLEMENT OF THE TOWN — FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR — THE REVOLUTION — THE TOWN IN THE REBELLION.

The early history of Bradford is invested with the peculiar interest surrounding nearly all colonial towns, though its record may not be so full of thrilling events as communities more exposed during the days of Indian invasion. The river was a protection, the skulking savage preferring to make his dashes where there was an opportunity to retreat, without exposure to the cover of the wilderness. Fear and solicitude, however, continually surrounded the people, and they occasionally suffered from their murderous invasion.

On the 3d of May, 1676, immediately after an attack upon Haverhill, the house of Thomas Kimball of this town was attacked, and Kimball killed. Mrs. Kimball and five children were taken captives. Their names were Joanna, Thomas, Joseph, Priscilla, and John. This house was situated on the Boxford road, and the site, with indications of the cellar, may yet be traced. Mrs. Kimball and her children were afterwards liberated, through the influence of Wannalancet, chief of the Pennacooks, who were friendly to the English, though Mrs. Kimball, with her nursing infant, was twice condemned by their captors to be burnt, and the fires lighted for their torture and death.

This outrage was committed by three converted Indians, *Symon*, *Andrew*, and *Peter*. The tradition is, that their intention was to kill somebody in Rowley, whom they claimed had injured them; but, the night being far spent, they abandoned their purpose, and, instead, perpetrated a slaughter in Bradford. Symon was the leader, being very bloodthirsty and revengeful. He openly threatened the life of Mrs. Kimball if she ever returned to her home, which led her to petition the Governor and Council for the protection that would ensure her safety.

This is the principal historic record of Indian brutality within the township of Bradford; but, in common with all the colonial settlements, the inhabitants shared in the fears and solicitude which were constant attendants upon frontier life, and there was an ever-ready co-operation in supplying men for common defence against the skulking and murderous invaders. The record by Winthrop, as contained in Gage's history of Rowley is, that "Sept. 1, 1642, by warrant to Ipswich, Rowley, and Newbury, to disarm Passaconamy, who lived near Merrimack River, they sent forth forty men, armed, the next day, it being Lord's day. But it rained all day, as it had done divers days before, and also after; so they could not go to *his* wigwam, but they came to his *son's*, and took him, which they had warrant for. They, fearing the son's escape, led him in a line; but *he*, taking an opportunity, slipped his line, and escaped from them. The warrant was issued because there was suspicion of a general conspiracy of Indians against the English. Each soldier received one shilling per day, (Lord's day included, on account of the extremety of the weather,) and the officers double. They were out three days."

Bradford then being embraced in the township of Rowley, was included in that call; and, doubtless, some of the inhabitants on the "Merrimac lands" participated in that scout, as they also did in other armed marches and conflicts for the common defence; but, the community escaping from any general massacre, and there is a leanness in the record of what was done, and of the participators in the service.

It was the policy with every town to purchase the land of the Indians, and take a deed therefor. That was done by Rowley, but the instrument was lost, and does not appear in any existing record. An Indian deed exists of the town of Bradford, bearing date January 30, 1700, and recorded April 13, 1702. This deed is very long and explicit, and is to be found entire in Gage's history of Rowley, duly signed by three Indians, Samuel English, Joseph English, and John Vmpee, and attested to by Nathaniel Saltonstall, Justice of the Peace of Haverhill, and Dudley Bradstreet, Justice of the Peace of Andover.

The action of the town, in reference to this purchase of the Indians, is as follows: "Att a Legall meeting of y^e^ proprietors of Bradford, in y^e^ 23 of November, 1700, Ensign John Tenney was first chosen Moderator: he appointed 3 men to treat w^th^ y^e^ Englishmen and Indians if they come, concerning y^e^ title of our land. Y^e^ 3 men were to voat singly, namely Insign Baly, Corporall Richard Kimball, and John Bointon, and they all passed on y^e^ affirmatives. Afterwards, at y^e^ same meeting added to y^e^ former Three, Insign Tenny and Phillip Atwood, y^e^ Proprietors gave them full power to act in behalf of y^e^ town, according to their best Judgm^t^, or any thereof of them. On the same day, y^e^ 23^d^ of Novemb^r^, 1700, there was a discourse how y^e^ charges should be defrayed y^t^ might arise as to purchasing of y^e^ heathen, if need were, and also y^e^ charges as to y^e^ committee for their expenses of his, was put to voat, if y^e^ charges should not be laid on every man's land according to his proportion of land as Wilderness land, and it passed on y^e^ affirmative, y^t^ so y^e^ Charges should arise.

"The Town Clerk being absent, y^e^ Proprietors then chose me to write w^t^ they did act.

"Exam^d^ pr Step. Sewall, Record^r^.

"Essex, ss. Registry of Deeds, Sept. 10, A. D. 1840.

"The foregoing is a true copy of record, Book 15, Leaf 136, &c.

"Att. R. H. French, Register, by D. Pulsifer 3^d^."

Immediately following the harassing times with the frontier settlers, by the invasion from small bands of Indians, came the more formidable hostilities, by the combined forces of French and Indians, to resist which every town was required to bear its share of the burden and peril, the effect of which was to continue the distress and anxiety which all shared. This state of things was succeeded by the French War, in which every town had a common interest. In 1755, a company was raised in Bradford, under command of Capt. William Kimball, which marched to Stillwater, N. Y., all of whom, after

performing all the service required of them, returned to their homes in safety.

Next following those days of conflict came the stirring ones of the Revolution, in which the patriotic people of this town bore prompt and honorable part. Early in the struggle, the people of this thinly populated town, numbering less than a thousand, and scattered over eight miles of territory, began to hold meetings for deliberation and conference. The first one on record was held in the West meeting-house, January 7, 1773, to see what instructions they could give to their representative in General Court, and to consider the correspondence from the committee of the town of Boston. Capt. Daniel Thurston was then the town representative, and he was instructed in the name of His Majesty to "use his influence to obtain redress of all grievances, and in particular to enquire whether the support of the Judges of the Superior Court had been adequate to their services, offices, and station; if not, to use your influence in obtaining suitable grants and establishments, as may be thought sufficient to remove all pretence that government is not supported among ourselves, — which was voted unanimously."

Their next vote was to constitute Dudley Carleton, William Greenough, Benjamin Gage, Jr., Thomas Webster, and Amos Mulliken a committee of correspondence with the Boston committee. There was no uncertain sound in what they said, and no hesitancy of action. Although still holding the attitude of loyal subjects, while asking for just government, there was no *Tory* spirit exhibited. They were jealous of their liberties, and were not backward in measures to maintain them. Events moved rapidly, and resort to arms was soon anticipated. To meet that emergency, on the 17th of May, 1773, they voted to build a powder-house, and provide "six barrels of powder, with bullets and flints proportionable." In 1774 more ammunition was provided, though none had yet been used, and the enlistment of minute-men commenced.

While these men were being drilled, the town provided them with equipments; and "bayonets which thought" were the ones in use about that time. Frequent town meetings were held, alternately at the East and West parishes, to hear reports of committees, vote supplies, and indulge in encouraging debate. The cry of distress from the poor of Boston, while under British siege, was heard by this people, and responded to by aid.

At length the crisis came, with the notes of battle sounding from Lexington and Concord, and they began to realize that the powder, which they had been "seasoning" for two years, would soon be called for. On the 23d of May, 1775, the first town meeting, after hostilities had commenced, was held, and the appeal to the town for aid considered. Supplies to the army were voted, and deserters from the Provincial army instructed to be reported to the county committee, unless they returned to duty.

Soon following Lexington was the battle of Bunker Hill, in which Capt. Nathaniel Gage, with a company of forty men from this town, took prominent part, and, though in a much exposed position, providentially escaped without the loss of a single life. This company was regarded as one of the best disciplined and most effective of any engaged in that memorable contest, having been disciplined and instructed in military tactics by an English deserter. The heart of their commander was also in the work, and he is said to have already given one-half of his property to aid the cause.

The impending events had completely fired the hearts of the inhabitants, and all their pulsations were in harmony with the cause of the patriots. The town-meetings were frequent and the minds of all were in singular harmony. Votes were frequent and free, for raising money for the support of the cause, for the supply of ammunition, and to encourage the enlistment of men. On the 4th of January, 1775, Capt. Daniel Thurston was chosen to represent the town in the Provincial Congress, at Cambridge, which was to be held on the first of February. At that meeting it was voted that the constable pay the province money to Henry Gardner, of Stow, instead of to His Majesty's treasurer at Boston, which was a practical separation from the parent government. Trade in articles subject to taxation was interdicted, and Benjamin Gage, Jr., Thomas Webster, Peter Russell, John Burbank, Dudley Carleton, Capt. Eliphalet Hardy, and Dea. Thomas Kimball were chosen a committee of inspection in relation to trade.

Particular attention was given to raising minute-men, and to encouraging them in the service. They were required to train one-half day in each week, and were voted one shilling each for a drill of three hours. They were to be provided with bayonets and cartouch boxes, at town cost, and each man paid one dollar for his billeting when called to march; and seven dollars a month when in actual service. At a later time the minute-men were instructed to drill two half days in each week, and belts and scabbards were added to their equipments.

On the 15th of March it was voted to pay Capt. Benjamin Gage for a *fire-raft* to take to Newburyport, which indicated their intention to operate on the water as well as the land. In addition to their votes providing men, ammunition, and money to aid the cause, there soon came declarations of principle which show that their thought and determination of spirit were in complete harmony with the men who were leading the Colonies up from the position of dependencies upon the Crown, to that of independence and nationality.

On the 20th of June, 1776, a town-meeting was held to consider the recent action of the House of Representatives, passed on the 10th, declaring these united Colonies independent States. A committee was appointed, consisting of Thomas Webster, John Burbank, Capt. Nathaniel Gage, Benj. Muzzy and John Savory, who made an able report, addressed to Dudley Carleton, Esq., representative of the town of Bradford in the General Assembly, reviewing the despotic plan of the king, ministry, and Parliament of Great Britain, to enslave the American Colonies, and concluding with the following: 'Therefore, utterly despairing of a happy reconciliation ever taking place between Great Britain and the Colonies, you are herby desired as our Representative, to use your utmost endeavors that our delegates in General Congress be instructed to shake off the tyranical yoke of Great Britain and declare these United Colonies independent of that venal, corrupt and avaricious Court, forever, provided no proposals for a happy reconciliation be offered which the Hon. Congress think proper to accept; and we hereby engage that we will, at the risk of our *lives* and *fortunes*, endeavor to support them therein."

At another meeting in October, 1776, the subject of a Constitution to govern the Province, which had already thrown off the British Government, was up for consideration. Jealous of their rights as a people who had just declared themselves free and independent, they objected to the adoption of an organic law they were not permitted to first consider and pass upon, and requested the "Council and House of Representatives, each acting in their respective capacities, to draft a form of government for this State, and present attested copies thereof to the several towns for their inspection and approbation before it is ratified and confirmed."

Not long after this the cause began to look gloomy and discouraging, but these patriots never lost their hearts. The few who had not heartily endorsed the cause of the resisting Colonies began to show signs of active opposition, and much was feared from the internal enemies of the colonial cause. A meeting was held on the 19th of May, 1777, and another on the 5th of June following, to adopt measures of protection against the "machinations of internal foes." An adjourned meeting was held on the 26th of June, at which decisive action was taken, by choosing Abraham Day, Jr., as a committee to procure evidence against all such as were acting and combining against the cause of independence. From this time the public sentiment became intense against those animated by a Tory spirit, and most of them left the country for homes in the British dominions.

Whatever may have been the feelings of discouragement or dispondency possessing the hearts of individuals in this town, during the long and severe struggle for American independence, it is certain that such feelings never found expression in any vote of the town at the numerous meetings held for deliberation and action. More than fifty of these meetings were held, nearly all of which were marked by important and harmonious deliberation. Sept. 23d, the town voted to expend £41 15*s.* 2*d.* for gun-locks, lead, flints, &c.; also to pay £14 for each soldier drafted from the militia. Oct. 11, 1779, voted £1,995 to hire ten men to join Gen. Washington's army in New York; June 12, 1780, voted to raise £12,527 to defray town charges in hiring twenty men for the Continental Army for six months; also nineteen men to serve in the militia for three months. Following this, Oct. 12, 1780, they voted to raise £43,844 12*s.* 6*d.* to defray town charges. Immediately following this was a call from the State for 10,750 pounds of beef for the army. In December following, Bradford was again called to furnish 20,642 pounds of beef for the use of the army. This call was responded to on Jan. 3, 1781, by a vote raising the sum of £61,926 with which to purchase the beef.

In less than six months, as shown by the recorded votes, the town voted to raise over £100,000 to defray the expenses of the war. Depreciation in the currency was then a calamity, as it has since proved to be under a state of war. For some reason not mentioned, the record shows that instead of supplying the beef the town voted to pay the money, which they did at the rate of $4.50 per pound, so low had the currency fallen in value at that time.

The close of the Revolutionary struggle found Bradford firm and true to the colonial cause, in her words, votes, and deeds. The feeling of contempt for those who left the country during the war, or who conspired against it, or in any way gave "aid and comfort" to the enemy, was intense, and by vote of the town the representative was instructed to use his best efforts to prevent all such from returning to again find homes in this Commonwealth. From worthy sires has descended a line in whose hearts the spirit of freedom has dwelt, and in whom a will to maintain the right has ever been supreme.

The next occasion for a manifestation of patriotic devotion to country, was in the war of 1812, upon which there was more of a pronounced division of opinion in the country, as to the necessity of the war, than existed before that date or has existed since. In that hour, when the temper and tone of the people were tested, there is nothing in the history of this town reflecting upon its integrity and patriotism, and if at times party strife may have been instrumental in producing an apparent division of feeling, purpose, and desire, it all ended in honorable position and action, and unflinching support of the government.

In the later and more important conflict of arms, when the North and the South became arrayed against each other in deadly conflict, the aim of those appearing in open revolt against the fairly expressed will of the majority, being clearly directed to destroy the government and the Union, there was not a single moment of halting or hesitation on the part of the people of this ancient town; but in every word and act a disposition was shown to "keep step to the music of the Union," and to vote men and money as both were called for. Referring to this, the orator on the centennial occasion, Harrison E. Chadwick, Esq., remarked: "There were some, indeed, who stood aloof, and some who openly opposed the measures taken to preserve the Union. But their opposition was weak amid the great outburst of popular feeling for the cause of the right and the freedom of the oppressed. This feeling was put into active operation by the enlistment of volunteers, and the furnishing of supplies immediately, on the first armed opposition to the government."

The first official act of the town, in preparation for the events of the war of the Rebellion, was to provide for the families of soldiers who might volunteer, or be called into the service. At a meeting of the town, April 26, 1861, the sum of one thousand dollars was voted to be used for the benefit of soldiers thus enlisting and serving. In the distribution of this money, E. F. Brigdon and George Johnson were chosen to act with the selectmen. It was also voted that no soldier receiving aid from the town shall, for that cause, be subject to any disability as a citizen.

The selectmen were fully authorized to borrow money necessary to furnish State aid to the families of volunteers, in conformity with the laws of the Commonwealth. On the 21st of July, 1862, the selectmen were directed to "raise money to pay each person now resident of Bradford, who shall enlist and be accepted within three weeks, the sum of one hundred and fifty dollars in addition to all other bounty and pay," payable when the volunteer is accepted and mustered in. They were also authorized to borrow money to aid the widows and children, living in the town, of volunteers who have died in the service of their country. August 19th, a bounty of two hundred dollars was authorized to each volunteer who shall enlist for nine months' service, and be mustered in, and credited to the quota of the town. December 16th, authority was given to fill the quota of the town by enlisting volunteers either for three years or nine months "not paying over two hundred dollars to each man."

In 1863 there was a succession of votes as the wants of the town called for, authorizing the raising of money, and the issue of town-bonds for the payment of aid to the families of deceased soldiers. In addition, the bounties for twenty men were raised by private subscription.

In 1864, all necessary sums were voted for war purposes and the payment of a bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars to enlisted men. The filling of the quotas, as they were called, was a matter of popular interest, and on the 20th of August a unanimous vote of thanks was passed to the selectmen "for their energy and success in filling the quota of the town." The matter of returning the bodies of soldiers, falling or dying in the service, paying transit charges and funeral expenses, was left to the discretion of the selectmen.

The history of Massachusetts in the civil war shows that this town had a surplus of men in the service "over and above all demands, of thirty-one at the end of the war," which indicates that 167 men were furnished. Four of the number were commissioned officers, and the graves of thirty-one fallen sons are annually decorated. The town appropriated and expended $22,149.42 on account of the war. In addition to this amount, $8,756.63 were raised by private subscription, making in all $30,906.05. Besides these amounts, $11,915.03 were paid out for State aid, to the families of volunteers, which was afterwards refunded by the Commonwealth. The war debt of the town was sometime ago extinguished.

In measures of relief, the ladies of the town were faithful and enthusiastic workers. Their large sewing-circle was in practical harmony with the Haverhill organization, and the two constituted the "Soldiers' Relief Society of Haverhill and Bradford." In supplying comfortable articles for the sick and wounded, their labors were unceasing so long as any demand for them existed.

The war selectmen were, in 1861, Richard Hazeltine, Samuel W. Hopkinson, Leverett Kimball; in 1862, Edmund Kimball, John Perley, Samuel W. Hopkinson; in 1863, Samuel Hopkinson, Walter Goodell, Nathaniel Carleton; in 1864 and 1865, Charles B. Emerson, John Perley, A. Judson Day. The town clerk, during the whole time, was Nathaniel Hatch. The town treasurer in 1861, and till August 19, 1862, was William Tenney, and from that time during the remainder of the war period, and still longer, Harvy M. Towle. Among the men who, by discreet counsel, encouraging words, and liberality of purse were constant in aid of the loyal cause, were Hon. George Cogswell, the Internal Revenue Collector for the Essex district, and Hon. Henry Carter, who was represented in the field by four sons. Such is the record made by this town in sustaining the government of the country through the most gigantic sanguinary conflict which is spread upon the history of modern times.

Upon the recurrence of the one hundredth anniversary of the "Declaration of Independence by the United States of America," liberal arrangements were made for its celebration by the town of Bradford in a manner becoming so important a national event. The demonstration was on a liberal and impressive scale, the principal exercises taking place in the newly laid-out park on the grounds of the Bradford Academy, the Hon. George Cogswell being the president of the day, and Harrison E. Chadwick, Esq., the orator of the ccasioo.

Within a few years increased interest has been shown in agriculture, and much improvement has been shown in modes of farming, resulting in an increase in the amount and value of products. Considerable attention has also been given to the improvement of stock. Many valuable cattle and blooded horses are owned there. In 1875 a Farmers' Club was organized, which has sustained public meetings for discussion and for lectures during the winter months, and annually brings the whole people together for a show of products and an autumn festival. The first president was Warren Ordway; Secretary, William Hilton; Treasurer, George W. Ladd. The present presiding officer is Albert Kimball, with the same secretary and treasurer.

The Washington hotel has been kept by its present landlord, D. C. Knowles, forty years, thirty-three years of which it has been conducted on strictly temperance principles. Within these pages are presented the leading features in the local history of Bradford, which have necessarily been much condensed. The historic material, recorded and traditional, is still abundant.

DANVERS.

CHAPTER I.

FIRST SETTLEMENT OF THE TOWN — ITS EARLY DAYS — TOWN AND EDUCATIONAL INTERESTS, ETC.

For a considerable period prior to the year 1752, there had been a growing feeling of discontent between the yeomanry and husbandmen of Salem Village and the wealthy merchants and traders of the First or Harbor Parish. The farmers of the Middle Parish, and what was known as the Village, objected to travelling the great distance between their abodes and the First Parish in Salem, which was required whenever it became necessary to hold a town-meeting, or other public discussion of public affairs. The dwellers in the First Parish were, for the most part, engaged in commerce, and undoubtedly enjoyed a greater share of this world's goods than fell to their brethren of the other or inland parishes, the most of whom were thrifty farmers and tillers of the soil. Their tastes were naturally not kindred, and there appears to have been a spirit of rivalry between the two, which engendered many disputes; for the one profession, with its vast sources of income and spirit of venturesome speculation, proved a quicker means of wealth than the other, with its hard and manly toil. But without detriment to the patriotism of the merchants of Salem, it may be said that from the latter class was recruited that sturdy democracy, from whence, subsequently, sprang the Republic.

These differences culminated, in 1752, in a division of the parishes. January 28th of that year, an Act establishing the district of Danvers was passed by the General Assembly, which was substantially as follows: —

"*Anno Regni, Regis Georgius Secundi.*

"Whereas the town of Salem is very large, and the inhabitants of the middle parishes so called live at a great distance from the First parish in Salem, where the publick affairs are transacted, and also from the grammar school in the First parish, and whereas the inhabitants of the First parish, are merchants, traders and mechanics, and those of the middle parishes chiefly husbandmen, from whence many disputes have arisen.

"Be it enacted. That that portion of the town of Salem, which now constitutes the Village and Middle parishes, be erected into a separate and distinct district by the name of Danvers."

It was further stipulated, that the said inhabitants of this district, thus set off, "shall do the dutys, that are required and enjoyned on other towns, and enjoy all the privileges, which they enjoy, except that of separately chusing and sending one or more Representatives at the General Assembly."

This Act was read several times and passed, to be enacted January 25, 1752, receiving the signature of T. Hubbard, Speaker. January 28, 1752, it was signed by J. Willard, Secretary of the Council, and on the same day received the signature and consent of Lieutenant-Governor Phips.

Under this Act, Daniel Eppes, a justice of the peace, and the village schoolmaster, was authorized to warn and summon certain of the freeholders to meet together for the purpose of fixing the time for calling the first town-meeting. Jonathan Kettle, Malachi Felton, Jasper Needham, Samuel King, David Putnam, Nathan Proctor, Joseph Osborne, Daniel Gardner, Jonathan Buxton, John Proctor, Thomas Flint, Cornelius Tarbell, James Putnam, Samuel Flint, and James Prince, being thus warned, held a meeting, and on the 18th of February, 1752, caused the first town warrant to be issued, under the hand and seal of Daniel Eppes. By this warrant, Nathan Proctor was notified, in His Majesty's name, to warn and give notice to ye freeholders and other inhabitants lawfully qualified to vote, that they meet and assemble at the First Parish meeting-house for the purpose of holding a town-meeting on the fourth day of March, 1752. The meeting, thus called, was held on the day appointed. Daniel Eppes, Esq., was chosen moderator; Daniel Eppes, Jr., Esq., town clerk; and James Prince, town treasurer. Seven selectmen were chosen: four from the First Parish, and three from the Second Parish. They were Daniel Eppes, Jr., Esq., Capt. Samuel Flint, Dea. Cornelius Tarbell, Mr. Stephen Putnam, Mr. Samuel King, Mr. Daniel Gardner, and Mr. Joseph Putnam. This body also constituted the board of assessors and overseers of the poor. There were also four constables chosen: David Goodale and Samuel White from the First Parish, and Roger Derby and Jonathan Twiss from the Second Parish. Besides these officers, there were elected five tithing-men, surveyors of highways, two clerks of ye "markett," four men to see to the preservation of alewives in the town brooks and streamlets, and a man to take care that "the laws relating to ye preservation of the deer be observed."

Danvers was then a charming rural hamlet of from five to seven hundred souls — a typical New England farming town, divided into hills and dales, with here and there a patch of sombre woodland, to add to the beauty of the landscape. It is not believed, however, that there was anything like a forest in that locality at that time, the town having been settled for more than a hundred years.

The selectmen were empowered to agree with the town of Salem as to the proportion of the poor belonging to the new district then in Salem almshouse, to settle the number and take care of them as they thought best, and to report at an adjourned meeting.

This meeting was adjourned until the eighteenth of the same month. On that day, the freeholders again assembled, and voted to raise £200 in lawful money to defray the charges of the district and county tax, exclusive of highways, and an additional sum of £150 for the cost of the latter. The selectmen were to settle with the town of Salem as to the amount of school money, and were also empowered to agree with some person to keep a grammar school in the district, thus showing the early importance attached to the necessity of education. There were, at this time, four schools in the district. It was voted to warn the freeholders of future meetings by posting notices on the meeting-house doors in both parishes.

This meeting, as stated, was held in the First Parish meeting-house, which was located on what had been known as "Watch-house Hill," at what is now Danvers Centre.

The hill took its name from the watch-house built upon its summit, — a log structure used as a place of observation, and also of refuge and defence during Indian attacks. This watch-house stood upon the northern brow of the hill, within what is now known as the Parsonage pasture, and about twenty-five rods from the meeting-house, which occupied the site of the present First Parish church, although facing to the north, upon the "Old Meeting-house Road." The building was erected in 1701, and was the second edifice occupied as a place of worship.

The territory comprised in what was at this time (1752) known as Salem Village, was originally set off and defined for parish purposes by conditional assent of the town of Salem, and authority from the

General Court or Assembly, Oct. 8, 1672. There were settlers upon it as early as 1632 or 1633, although it was not until 1635 that steps were taken to plant a formal settlement in the village. The original bounds of the village parish commenced at the "wooden bridge" at the head of Endicott or Cow-House River, afterwards called Waters River, near what is now known as Felton's Corner, and ran in a generally north-easterly direction across the head of Crane River, crossing Frost-fish Brook to the Horse Bridge, so called, on the Wenham line, a point just beyond Alford, now Cherry Hill, which was included in the territory. From thence it ran in a general north-westerly direction, with slight deviations, following the present boundary between Danvers and Wenham to the Topsfield line. Thence, turning south-west across Smith's Hill and Nichols Brook, to the Ipswich or Great River, the line traversed nearly the same boundary as now established, and passing in the same general direction across the river, it continued until it met the river again at a point near the north-western corner of Peabody, and from here it followed about the present course of the Peabody boundary on the Lynnfield border to a point, at that time known as the "Seven Men's Bound," near the present village of Brookdale. From here the line turned eastward, through the middle of the pond to Felton's Corner, at the wooden bridge, the point of beginning.

In the year 1710, the Second or South Parish was established for the maintenance of preaching, comprising in a large part the territory now included in the town of Peabody. This tract did not include what was then known as the New Mills, now Danversport, nor that portion of Royall Side, Beverly, now included in the present limits of Danvers. It included a large proportion of the present town of Middleton, then known as "Bellingham's Grant," which was added at the request of its owners, and more especially upon the petition of one Bray Wilkins, who desired it for public reasons, and because of his wish to be included in the Salem church, and within the limits of Salem. At the town-meeting, held March 4, 1753, a committee was chosen to set the line between the town of Salem and the district of Danvers, the line to commence on Trask's Plain, so called, and running from thence to Trask's Mills, taking in said mills, and thence running northerly, through the North Fields, to the Great Cove in Beverly.

On the 7th of May, 1753, "It was agreed between Ichabod Plaisted, Benjamin Pickering, Joseph Bowditch, Timothy Pickering, Thorndike Proctor, Jonathan Gardner, John Gardner and Abraham Watson, on behalf of the town of Salem, on the one part, and Daniel Eppes Jr, Thomas Flint, Samuel Holton, Samuel King, David Putnam, John Proctor, and Jasper Needham, on behalf of the district of Danvers on the other; that the fixed boundary line between the said town and the district from ye Great Cove, so called, in North Fields, to Trask's Plain, shall be and remain as follows: Beginning at a stake standing in the lower part of the thatch bank at ye northerly part or point of Peter's Neck, so called, owned or claimed by Joshua Orne of Marblehead, by the cove aforesaid, and running south a little westerly eighteen poles to a stake and stones five feet west of a Red Oak on Orne's land, and thence westerly ending a little to the eastward of Trask's grist mill, and from the end of that line running southerly to the eastermost elm tree on said plain, [probably the present great tree on Boston Street, Salem,] and by the northerly side of the highway, there called the Boston road, leaving the grist mills within said district. The several stakes and bound trees on this line shall be marked with a Marking iron."

The origin of the name Danvers, as applied to this territory, is a matter of conjecture, and will probably never be definitely determined. The word itself is D'Anvers, meaning in the French tongue, Antwerp, of Belgium. There was, too, at the time, a noble family of England by the name of Danvers, who were of considerable prominence; and there is a theory that the farmers of Salem Village came originally from the vicinity of their estates in the mother country. But the later and more probable theory is, that the name was given in honor of Sir Danvers Osborne, the governor of New York in 1753. With the establishment of the new bounds, the New Mills became a portion of the district, and its people united themselves with the First Parish. The acquisition was a valuable one, for extensive manufactures were carried on here, and also the business of ship-building.

The first tax was levied upon the inhabitants of the district, June 19, 1752. The surveyors of highways were ordered, in his majesty's name, to collect tax of ye several persons, his or her proportion, for the cost of the highways. Those who wished, were allowed to work out their proportion upon the roads, each man to be allowed two shillings and eightpence per day for his labor, the value of the labor by boys and teams "to be set by the surveyors." Should any person fail to pay his tax, either in money or labor, they were authorized to distrain his goods and chattels; and then if not paid, "ye distress, or distresses, were to be exposed openly at an outcry for payment," notice of such sale being duly posted. "For want of goods and chattels," the order ran, "you are to seize ye bodies of ye person or persons, and commit them to the common gaol, there to remain until the amounts of distress are satisfied, or until the Court of General Sessions shall order any part of the taxes abated."

At the commencement of the year 1755, a movement was set on foot looking to a general union of all the English governments and Colonies in America. This, perhaps, may have been the first germ of the desire among the colonists to erect an independent government, which subsequently found fulfilment in the great struggle of twenty years later. The "farmers" of Danvers, although imbued to a remarkable degree with the spirit of true independence, as evinced by all their acts from the time of their separation from Salem, down to the present, were not inclined to look with favor upon this early movement, and at a special town-meeting held in the North Parish meeting-house (as the First Parish was now called), February 3, 1755, Daniel Eppes, Jr., Esq., named in the records as the town's representative, was instructed to use his utmost endeavors to prevent the plans for such a union "from taking effect in the Great and General Court." He was also to oppose any other plans of union that he should think would be an infringement on ye liberty and privileges of the people of this district. At the same meeting, Mr. Eppes was empowered to prefer a petition to the General Court, that the District of Danvers be erected into a township. The Act of incorporation only gave it district rights as a district, but the final organization of the town, including the rights of representation in the General Court, which were denied in the Act of incorporation, was completed June 16, 1757. The bounds between Danvers and Wenham were renewed and fixed April 23, 1754. The line between Danvers and Beverly, from Frost-fish Brook to Salt River, and by its side to where it comes out opposite ye Great Cove, was fixed on the same date; and within the same month the Topsfield and Middleton bounds were definitely settled. The Lynn line, running by Otter-hole Brook, and through Humphrey's Pond, was established May 13, 1754.

The history of the ancient roads in Danvers, is of considerable local interest, many of them being the cause of many a bitter contest and protracted struggles. The oldest highway, is that known as the "Old Ipswich Road," which dates from 1630. It was not laid out, however, by the General Court, till 1643. The original road from Salem to Andover, crossed the brook at "Hadlock's Bridge," near the present carpet-factory in Tapleyville, and followed the line of Pine Street, turning upon Hobart Street at the residence of S. Walter Nourse; the latter highway is the "Old Meeting-house Road." From here it passed westerly to "Ingersoll's Corner," by the present First Parish meeting-house, and thence along the line of Centre Street, past the house of Joel Kimball, keeping what is now an untravelled way to the "Log Bridge" over Ipswich River, nearly half a mile west of the estate now occupied by Charles Peabody. From this point it passed across "Will's Hill" to Andover. The "Old Boston Path" to Read-

ing and Boston, by Medford Bridge, is the present little used road, turning from Centre Street, just beyond the present school-house, and leading southward near the house of Zephaniah Pope, to the place which is owned by the Goodell family, and from thence to Boston. This was a favorite route with many travellers, although the Ipswich road was the greater thoroughfare of the two. The present highway from the meeting-house to Tapleyville, by Centre and Holton streets, was opened about the year 1725, although it may have been a private way before that year.

Eastward from Hobart Street, at the corner of Forest Street, was the "Old Boxford Road." According to tradition, this followed an Indian trail toward the Merrimac Valley, at North Andover and Haverhill. Its general course was along what is now Forest and Nichols streets, crossing the Newburyport Turnpike by the house of Edward Wyatt; passing the house of Henry Verry, ascending the hill to the north-west by a way yet discernible, and leading thence to "Rowley Village" or Boxford, or turning a little more to the right to Topsfield. From the hill beyond Henry Verry's there is also a path westward to Middleton. At Beaver Brook, near the "Log Bridge," there was also a path leading in at the lane by Jacob E. Spring's place, and William A. Lander's, and crossing to Putnamville, entering upon the present Locust Street by the lane south of I. H. Putnam's house; and also passing by a branch to Wenham, north of the Great Pond. This way was used in common with the "Ipswich Road" by travellers to Wenham and the towns beyond. The line of the "Boxford Road" may also perhaps have been continued in some manner past the place once occupied by Joseph Hutchinson, and across the fields to the vicinity of "Hadlock's Bridge." A branch may also have led to the right, towards the house of Joseph Holton, at the place now owned by the family of the late Isaac Demsey, and thence south-westerly over the meadows.

Sylvan Street, from Ash Street, by the mills of Otis F. Putnam to the town house, was opened in 1842, and is simply a straightening of the "Ipswich Road."

The road along High and Water streets, from the Plain to Crane River, at Danversport, was opened in 1755, and relocated in 1802. Before the opening of this way, which was continued in 1761 to the North Bridge, in Salem, the "Ipswich Road" was the only highway leading toward Salem. The population at the "Port," or the "New Mills," was at that period very small.

April 14, 1760, Samuel Clark petitioned for a way through Capt. Samuel Endicott's land, and a bridge across Waters River. This was violently opposed by Israel Andrews and a strong faction, and was the subject of heated controversies at the town-meetings for several years subsequent to its construction.

Thus, November 5, 1764, it is recorded that the suit of Capt. Hutchinson, for amount expended in repairs upon the Waters River Bridge, was decided against the town. On the first of April, 1765, the bridge was torn to pieces by a violent storm, and the town refused to repair it. April 8, of the same year, a committee was chosen to examine the bridge and report its condition, and the committee was also empowered to see what could be done towards getting the town relieved of the burden of the bridge. May 14, 1766, a committee was chosen on the part of the town to attend a hearing at the Great and General Court, upon the petition of John Proctor and others, for a bridge over Waters River. The petition appears to have been granted, for it is recorded that Mr. Sawyer repaired the bridge. October 2, 1770, the bridge was again destroyed by a terrible storm, and occasioned another bitter controversy. May 20, 1771, a committee was chosen to examine into the repairs upon the Waters River Bridge, and to see what could be done towards throwing the expense of the same upon other towns. At the same time, it is recorded that Enoch Putnam and Aaron Putnam, who repaired the bridge, refused to hand in their accounts for the same; and in the following September, the town voted to choose agents to commence actions against the Putnams for the conversion of the town's timber to their own use in the repairs upon Waters River Bridge.

The committee was chosen, but the town lost its case; and Dec. 2, 1771, it was called upon to raise money to defray the costs of a judgment against it in favor of the Putnams, amounting to £258 14*s*. 2*d*. The following spring, we find the town calling its committee-men and representatives in this bridge case, to account for their inability to win its cause. The bitterness engendered was not wholly obliterated for many years. Liberty Street, with its bridge over Porter's River, was laid out in 1803. The bridge known as "Liberty," or otherwise as "Spite" Bridge, was built to draw travel from the famous Essex Bridge, constructed in 1788. The latter caused a great deal of bitterness in Danvers, and its proprietors were compelled to pay the town of Danvers the sum of ten pounds, annually, for fifty years. Liberty Bridge was built with the anticipation that it would prove of great public benefit, and would materially attract business from Beverly. Locust Street occupies mainly the route of the "Old Topsfield Road." It was relocated in 1807, the bounds beginning from near where the flagstaff now stands at the Plain and in front of the Post-Office. North Street, which runs north-west from Locust Street, passing to the south of the house of Samuel Wallis, crosses the turnpike, and leads off into Topsfield, is an old road, relocated in 1785.

The road from the old Judge Lindall place upon Locust Street to Beaver Brook, following in part the routes of Poplar and Maple streets, was opened in 1793. Previous to that period, the travelled way had been by Hobart and Pine streets, by the corner, at Mr. S. Walter Nourse's place. The continuation of Maple Street, from Beaver Brook, past the residence of Dea. William R. Putnam, to the intersection with Preston Street, by M. S. B. Swan's house, now the main line from the Plain to Middleton, was constructed in 1813.

It will be remembered, that one of the first acts of the inhabitants of Danvers, was to look after the proportion of poor belonging to the town, then in the almshouse at Salem, and to this end the selectmen, chosen at the first meeting, were to take care of such poor persons in that institution as rightfully belonged to the district to support. This matter of the care of paupers and the town poor, continued to be a prominent subject for discussion at the town-meetings from the very commencement of the town organization. The different means adopted for the maintenance of sundry poor persons, thrown upon the town's charity from time to time, present some quaintly humorous phases to us of the present day. Here is a copy of an agreement entered upon the records, and dated June 4, 1759, in which Jonathan Kettle agrees for an annual consideration of the sum of thirteen shillings and fourpence, paid by the town to himself, lawful attorney or his heirs, to take care of his mother-in-law, Mrs. Bridget Webb, and to supply her with all necessaries whatever, during the term of her natural life, and thereby save harmless the town of Danvers. But it is agreed, that it shall be so long as he shall live and no longer, and that upon the decease of ye said John Kettle, this agreement shall immediately become void and of none effect.

(Signed) JONA. KETTLE.

And again, June 7, 1762, Nathaniel Nurse, and Daniel Nurse, of Salem, agree for the sum of £7 16*s*., lawful money, in seasonable payments, to take care of their honored father, Mr. Benjamin Nurse, during the term of his natural life, and thereby "save the town of Danvers harmless of him." The remaining conditions being the same as in the case of Kettle. What a wealth of sarcasm in that word honored. In 1761, an attempt was made to cause a poor-house to be erected, but it was voted down. At the town-meeting of March 14, 1763, Benjamin Prescott, Joseph Southwick, and Archelaus Dale, were voted a committee upon a poor-house. There is no further mention made of the matter, but there are entries from time to time, of action taken by the town in reference to divers poor persons, who were thrown upon its hands. In the year 1808, a substantial poor-house was erected.

The cause of education was also early made one of the most important matters to be considered. One of the articles in the first warrant was to authorize the selectmen to obtain a schoolmaster, to keep a grammar school in the district as soon as may be. Danvers claims the honor of the first free school in this county, although Salem can fairly dispute the title, as it, at that time, included the territory. September, 1641, the selectmen of Salem ordered, that a notice be published on lecture day, that such as have children to be kept at schools would bring in their names, and what they will give for one whole year; and also that "if anie poor bodie hath children, or a childe, to be put to schoole, and is not able to pay for their schooling, that the towne will pay it by rate." Under this order, it is claimed that the school, which was established under the care of Endicott himself, as governor of the Colony and chairman of the selectmen of Salem, was held at the Orchard Farm at "Skelton's Neck," Danversport, on what is now Danvers soil. However that may be, the first notice in the parish record of a school, which was held within the limits of the present Danvers, occurs in 1701, when it was voted, that "Mr. Joseph Herrick and Mr. Joseph Putnam, and Mr. John Putnam, Jr., are chosen and empowered to agree with some suitable person to be a school-master amongst us, in some convenient time; and make return to the people." These men constituted the first school committee. It is probable that schools, or classes for instruction, had been held from early times, though without much regularity, at the houses of the farmers in different parts of the town.

No further allusion is made to the matter, and there is nothing to show that this committee accomplished their object. The next mention of the subject is not till 1712, when the records tell us that a committee appointed to receive the school money from the selectmen of Salem, were directed to pay to "ye widow Dealand five pounds, which is her due for keeping ye school in ye village formerly," and also "to invite her to come and keep school in ye Village again, and to engage her five pounds a year for two years of that money, that is granted to us by the Town for a school." Almost a year later, there is a receipt signed by "Katherin Daland," for this five pounds, due "for keeping school at Salem Villig at ye School House near Mr. Green's." In the year 1708, the diary of that gentleman, has this record: —

"March 11. My lectures; full assembly, few strangers. I spoke to several about building a school house, and determined to do it etc.

"18. I rode to ye neighbors about a school house, and found them willing to help. I went to Wenham P. M. Bad riding as ever was.

"22. Meeting of the Inhabitants. I spoke with several about building a school house. I went into ye Town Meeting and said to this effect; Neighburs, I am about building a school house for the good education of our children, and have spoken to several of the neighburs, who are willing to help it forward, so that I hope we shall quickly finish it; and I speak of it here that so every one that can have benefit, may have opportunity for so good a service. Some replyed that it was a new thing to them and they desired to know where it should stand, and what the design of it was. To them I answered that Deacon Ingersoll would give land for it to stand on, at the upper end of the training field, and that I designed to have a good school master to teach their children to read and write and cypher and everything that is good. Many commended the design, and none objected against it.

"25. Began to get timber for the school house."

Further on in his journal, the minister describes the work of raising and underpinning the building, and getting the "mantel tree." The pastor built the school-house, and the generous deacon, who had already given the training field to the parish, gave it also a spot for its school-house. Soon after this, however, it became the custom at town or parish meetings, to direct that the school should be kept a few weeks at a time, in rooms in private dwellings in different parts of the parish.

On the 7th of April, before the new school-house was wholly finished, Mr. Green hired "Mrs. Deland" for a teacher, and on the next day he hired a room of Mr. James Holton for school purposes, and his two boys, "Joseph and John, went to school." He paid "ye school dame" himself to 1709, inclusive. The salary due the lady in 1712 was not for this school. In 1714 "Captain Putnam and Lieutenant Putnam wher choasen to look after" a schoolmaster "and to get him as Cheap as they can for the benefit of the pepell." Samuel Andrew was engaged. His receipt for his first payment of his salary reads as follows: "Saillem Vileg November the 3 in the year 1714. These may Certifie hom it may Consarn thatt I have Resceived of Capt. Putnam and Lieutt. Putnam the sum of seaven pounds, and forty shillings of Sevarall persons for teaching ther children, the wich nine pounds I have Reseived in full for keeping scholl in Saillem Villeg I say Reseived By Me, Saml Andrew." This is a copy of the original receipt by David Judd, the clerk, who is probably responsible for the orthography. It continued to be the custom from this time on, to determine the number of schools, and where they were to be held, at the successive annual town-meetings. The first school-master at the New Mills was Caleb Clark, who kept a school in the house of farmer Porter.

It is stated that four schools had been erected in the middle parishes in 1736, and they were all, without doubt, in existence at the organization of the town.

March 8, 1757, Daniel Gardner, Daniel Purrington, Daniel Eppes, Jr., Nathaniel Felton, and Lieut. David Putnam were appointed a committee to investigate the grammar school. It appears that there was some cause for complaint, for on the 17th of the same month it was voted, "that the selectmen agree with and choose a suitable school master and determine where school shall be kept." March 12, 1759, Daniel Eppes, Jr., Esq., John Andrew, and Daniel Purrington, were chosen as a committee with full power to regulate the schools and to "draw money and pay the school master."

March 14, 1763, the school committee was increased to five men. May 22, 1765, by advice of the school committee, it was voted to keep the grammar school half the year in the North Parish, and half the year in the South Parish. In 1765 a school-house was erected in the middle parishes. In 1793 the district school system first came in vogue. In 1809 there were nine districts. In 1814 an order was adopted requiring a report of the condition of the schools to be made at each annual town meeting. In 1820 an order was adopted requiring an annual census of the children of the town between four and sixteen years of age, to be made by the prudential committees on the first of May, and recorded by the town clerk. This order was prior to the passage of the State law to the same effect. Danvers now has (1878) twenty schools, including the Holton High School and three grammar schools.

The attention of the town was largely taken up at its meetings with its highways, schools, the poor-house project, and general matters of minor importance, for some years succeeding its incorporation. The organization as a township in 1757, giving it the right of representation in the Great and General Court, Daniel Eppes was chosen in that year as the first representative. The town had probably been moving in this matter of securing its own representative for a year or two prior to this. And, as already stated, it sent its representative in 1755 to oppose the plans for a proposed union, but it is probable that this official was only sent to do the business in hand, and that when it was performed he returned home to his people, receiving his stipend for performing the mission.

From June to September, 1762, the town suffered severely from a terrible drouth. The wells dried up, and vegetation was scorched.

In 1755, November 18th, the town had been shaken by the great Lisbon earthquake. Slavery was in existence in Danvers at this time, though practically only in name. Most of the slaves were regarded in the light of valued, trusty servants. They could testify in the

courts, serve in the militia, hold property, and be members of the churches. None were ever born to be slaves in the eyes of the law. Their condition was thus very different from the former bondmen at the South. In 1755, there were nine male and sixteen female slaves in Danvers.

CHAPTER II.

ACTION OF THE TOWN IN THE ANTE-REVOLUTIONARY EXCITEMENT — THE WAR SPIRIT OF 1775 — NOTABLE OCCURRENCES.

The year 1765 brought the odious Stamp Act, and with it the first organized resistance to the tyrannical and unjust demands of the mother country. The Danvers farmers, as their history has shown, were possessed in a remarkable degree with a spirit of manly independence and of determined resistance to any acts encroaching in the slightest degree upon their rights as freemen. They were not so bound to the Crown as were many of the merchants of Salem, whose aristocratic tastes and business connections brought them into more intimate relations with the nobility of Great Britain, whose monarchical views a portion of them to some extent adopted. With the passage of the Stamp Act the clear-sighted farmers of Danvers, in common with those of other towns, saw at once the dangers which threatened their rights and privileges, and they acted with equal promptitude.

At a meeting held on the 21st of October, 1765, Thomas Porter, then the town's representative in the Great and General Court, was instructed in reference to this infamous measure of Parliament, that "ye freeholders of Danvers, while professing the greatest loyalty to their most gracious sovereign, and their sincere regard and reverence for the British Parliament as ye most powerful and respectable body of men on earth, yet being deeply sensible of the difficultys and distresses to which that august assembly's late exertions of their power would necessarily expose them; desired him to promote and readily joyn in such dutiful remonstrances and humble petitions to the King and Parliament and in such other decent measures as may have a tendency to obtain a repeal of ye Stamp Act or an alleviation of ye heavy burdens, thereby imposed on the British Colonies. Ye great tumult in ye Capital of ye Province was deprecated," and their representative was further instructed to do all in his power to prevent riotous assemblies and unlawful acts of violence upon ye persons or substances of any of his Majesty's subjects; and further that he should not give his assent to any internal tax or imply the willingness of his constituents to submit to its imposition, other than "by ye Great and General Court of ye Province according to ye constitution of ye Government." Again, "that he be careful not to give his consent to any extravagant grants out of ye publick treasury." At the same meeting, the town voted to dispose of its stock of powder, which seems to imply a desire for peace and harmony; but at a second meeting, December 23, 1765, at which Daniel Eppes, Jr., was moderator, Representative Porter received instructions of a still more decided character, containing the ring of true metal. While expressing love and respect for their sovereign and his ministry, still the inhabitants of the town of Danvers felt deeply affected and grieved by "ye great difficulties and distresses imposed on them by ye king and parliament," and their representative was again instructed "to promote and fall in with decent measures of remonstrance." He was not to give his vote for any acts that shall imply a willingness on ye part of his constituents to submit to any internal taxes not levied by ye General Court as authorized under the provincial charter. And finally they would instruct him to favor ye raising of men and money to defend his majesty's loyal subjects' rights and privileges, thus showing their determination to maintain their rights and liberties at whatever cost.

May 21, 1766, Daniel Eppes was chosen representative. May 21, 1768, a fine of forty shillings was imposed upon strangers, who had remained in the town for more than a year previous; an assessment equivalent in a measure to our modern poll-tax. At the same meeting a fine of £50 was imposed for failure to bring in lists of taxable property to the assessors. Samuel Holton, Jr., then a rising young physician, in his thirtieth year, was chosen to represent the town in the Great and General Court, at this meeting; and on the 20th of September, 1768, was deputed "to join ye Boston committee in a convention at Faneuil Hall, to be held September 22d." This was the Provincial Convention, called without authority of the royal government by a Boston town-meeting, which Dr. Wadsworth of the First Parish records as in session upon the landing of the British troops in Boston on the 28th of the same month. The convention is believed to have adjourned on the 27th, however. For this service, on December 19, 1768, Samuel Holton, Jr., is allowed £2 15*s*. 8*d*.

The next event of importance in the town's history was the "Tea" meeting of May 28, 1770. Dr. Amos Putnam was moderator of this meeting. Messrs. Samuel Holton, Jr., Archelaus Dale, Capt. William Shillaber, Dr. Amos Putnam, and Gideon Putnam were chosen "a committee upon ye public grievances as to ye duty on tea." After such due deliberation as the gravity of the case required, the committee submitted the following report:

"That this town highly approves of ye spirited conduct of ye Merchants of our Metropolis and ye other Maritime towns in ye province in an agreement of non-importation well calculated to restore our invaluable rights and liberties. Voted, that we will not ourselves (to our Knowledge) or by any person for or under us as directly or indirectly purchase of such person or persons any goods whatever, and as far as we can effect it, will withdraw our connection from every person who shall import goods from Great Britain contrary to ye Agreement of ye merchants aforesaid."

It was also voted not to drink foreign tea, or to allow their families to indulge in the beverage until the Act of Parliament imposing a duty upon it was repealed, or general importation took place, cases of sickness excepted. A committee was chosen to carry a copy of these votes to every household. All persons who refused to sign these copies were to be looked upon as enemies to the liberties of the people, and their names were to be registered accordingly.

It is related that one Isaac Wilson, who kept the famous old Bell Tavern in the South Parish, then standing near the present monument, was caught selling the forbidden, fragrant Bohea, and in public assembly was obliged to recite, with bowed head, the following lines:

"I, Isaac Wilson, a Tory I be.
I, Isaac Wilson, I sells tea."

Other indignities were also heaped upon him by his patriot neighbors. A short time thereafter there was a jolly coterie of tea-drinkers round Isaac's groaning board, enjoying the forbidden beverage. Cup after cup was drank, until the tea-pot was drained, when, to the disgust of the assembly, Isaac informed them his chest was empty. One reveller, it is recorded, in his desire to get just one more cup, removed the cover from the pot to drain its very dregs, when to the horror and amazement of the company, forth from the leaves there sprang a mammoth toad, none the worse for his steeping. It is probable that Isaac found balm in this for his recently wounded pride. The old Bell Tavern was a favorite hostelry and rendezvous in days "lang syne." It stood for many years at the corner of Washington and Main streets, close beside the site of the present monument. Francis Symonds was the jolly host of the Bell in its early days; his sign was the origin of the tavern's name. Over his doorway was the couplet, —

"Francis Symonds makes and sells
The best of Chocolate also shells
I'll toll you in, if you have need
And feed you well and bid you speed."

There was also here, during these early days, a printing-office, kept by Mr. Russell, who published Amos Pope's almanacs, a "Wenham Price Current," and other publications. He subsequently removed to Boston. Here, at the old Bell Tavern, Foster's minute-men halted on that memorable April morning in '75, when the infant republic was born. Here, too, were received the martyred dead from Cambridge. Here, again, Pickering's regiment halted on its way to Bunker Hill; and from the old tavern a hearty Godspeed was given to Arnold's men ere they plunged into the wilderness to perish at Quebec. A little later, the halo of romance was thrown about the old inn, when it received the beautiful woman and charming writer, Eliza Wharton, whose sad and sinful life was closed within its walls. She was buried in the old parish cemetery, now within the limits of Salem, where her grave has since become a favorite Mecca for the curious, who have left its sleeper scarce a remnant of a tombstone. Miss Wharton came to the tavern in 1788, under an assumed name, and died in a few weeks after her arrival. Her marvellous beauty, and her talents as a poetess, have been the theme of many a tradition, which has been handed down from generation to generation. She was born in 1751, and was therefore in the thirty-seventh year of her age at the time of her death.

June 14, 1770, Francis Symonds, upon his petition, was granted permission "to erect a convenient pair of skails or stilyards, that will answer to weigh cart or sled loads of hay, that are bought and sold in ye markets, on condition, that he keep them in good order and charge no more for his waying hay or anything else than ye common price."

From the organization of the district the town-meetings had been held alternately in the North and South parishes. This appears to have caused some feeling in the South Parish, which evidently felt that it should have all the meetings. December 2, 1771, it carried its point, and it was voted that all further meetings should be held in the South meeting-house, and should not be shifted as heretofore. The vote was carried by fifty-eight in the affirmative, to thirty-eight in the negative. The following February, 1772, the town voted to resume the old way of holding its meetings, by a vote of ninety-three in the affirmative, to ninety-two in the negative. A proposition to build a town-house, and thus settle the difficulty, was voted down, although its friends were very persistent in their efforts to carry their project. In March, 1772, the town had considerable trouble with delinquent constables, who were behindhand in their accounts. One of them, Humphrey Marsh, who was forty pounds in the town's debt, was lodged in Salem jail. The age of defalcation was not entirely confined to the nineteenth century.

In 1773, the town again felt called upon to take some action in reference to the encroachments of Great Britain upon the rights and privileges of the colonists.

Matters were gradually approaching a focus, and the colonists looked with alarm upon the rapidly gathering war-clouds, which threatened to enwrap them in the horrors of civil war. But above all, and beyond all, towered their glorious principles of liberty and independence. Their spirits never quailed, nor did their courage falter; and on the 25th of January, 1773, in town-meeting assembled, the farmers of Danvers chose a committee to take into consideration the state of its civil privileges, and to draw up something proper for the town to act upon, that its civil privileges may be restored, and transmitted inviolate to the latest posterity.

The following seven were chosen: Francis Symonds, Benjamin Proctor, Gideon Putnam, Capt. William Shillaber, Dr. Amos Putnam, Tarrant Putnam, and William Pool. A series of six resolutions were adopted.

After declaring their adherence to the Provincial Constitution, and their loyalty, they declared the necessity of checking the tyrannical course of the government, by which the rights of the colonists in general had been greatly infringed upon. Allusion is made to the affair with the "Gaspee" at Providence, in which "the colonists for their loyalty had been getting the punishment due to rebellion." It was resolved, "that we use all lawful ends for recovering, maintaining and preserving the invaluable rights and privileges of this people and that we stand ready if need be to risk our lives and our fortunes in defence of those liberties, which our forefathers purchased at so dear a rate."

A committee was appointed to correspond with the committee of the town of Boston upon this matter, and Dr. Samuel Holton, Jr., Capt. William Shillaber, and Tarrant Putnam were chosen as its members. Their expenses were granted by the town. In the fall of this year, the small-pox became epidemic in the town, and raged with such violence, that, on the 25th of October, the town met to take action upon the best means to abate the pestilence. The selectmen were authorized to take such action in the premises as they deemed fit.

In 1774, the atmosphere of Boston becoming too warm for Gen. Gage, then governor, on the 5th of June of that year he removed to Danvers, and took up his abode at the residence of Robert Hooper, the present mansion-house of the Francis Peabody estate. Hooper was a noted loyalist of the time, and a man of vast wealth, in consequence of which he was familiarly dubbed "King" Hooper. Gage was accompanied by two companies of the 64th regiment, who encamped upon the wide field occupied by Tapley's brick-yards. It is stated, that the conduct of the soldiery towards the villagers was in every way courteous, and tales of numerous little acts of politeness on their part, have been handed down. It does not appear, however, that the farmers reciprocated their attentions. From the tenor of their recent town-meetings, it was hardly to be presumed that they would. The patriotic husbandmen, and the village youth made it so uncomfortable for the camp, that its occupants were under arms almost every night. The files of the "Essex Gazette," for August 23, 1774, state, that the troops at the camp were on guard all night on the Friday previous, in evident fear of a collision with the inhabitants.

After two months of constant worriment, the regulars gave it up, and on the 5th of September returned to Boston.

September 27, 1774, Dr. Samuel Holton was chosen as representative to the Great and General Court, and was instructed by his townsmen to adhere firmly to the charter given by William and Mary, and to do no act that could possibly be construed into an acknowledgment of the act of the British Parliament for altering the government of the Province of Massachusetts Bay. More especially, that he recognize the honorable board of councillors chosen by the General Court. In the event of an anticipated dissolution of the assembly, their representative was to join with the members to meet, at some future time, to be agreed upon, in a general Provincial Congress.

He was instructed to act in such a way as may be most conducive to the best interests of this town and Province, and most likely to preserve the liberties of all America."

These instructions were passed unanimously, receiving seventy-eight votes in the affirmative, out of a total of seventy-nine.

It will thus be seen, that the people of Danvers were ripe for the coming struggle. It needed but the application of the torch to kindle the fires of patriotism. Upon the organization of the Provincial Congress, Danvers was one of the foremost towns to recognize its allegiance to it. At a special town-meeting, held November 21, 1774, it was voted, "that ye resolves of ye Provincial Congress ought to be complied with," and it was also voted, "that ye constables pay ye province money to Henry Gardner of Stow ye Receiver-General appointed by ye Congress." The constables were further instructed to collect such sums, in aid of the Provincial Congress and its work, as might be possible. These votes were all passed *nem. con.*, in the language of the records. They were, of themselves, overt acts of rebellion, as the rights of the Provincial treasurer were ignored, and the demands of the government appointed by the Crown set at defiance.

On the 9th of January, 1775, Dr. Samuel Holton was chosen as the

town's first representative in the Continental Congress, to be convened at Cambridge on the 19th of the same month.

It was voted, that the association entered into by the American Continental Congress, ought to be strictly adhered to. Capt. William Shillaber, Capt. Jeremiah Page, Dr. Samuel Holton, Jr., Mr. Jonathan Proctor, Dr. Amos Putnam, Capt. William Putnam, Capt. Benjamin Proctor, Capt. Samuel Eppes, and Capt. Israel Hutchinson, were voted a committee of inspection for the town, to see that the association be strictly kept by every person within its appointment, and its resolves adhered to. It was decided that dancing and similar festivities were against the articles adopted by the American Continental Congress, and the committee were instructed to see "that ye said eighth article," referring to these simple pleasures was strictly complied with by the towns-people. The time had come for stern measures, and with the awful pall of civil war hanging over them, the patriots of Danvers felt it incumbent upon them to check unseemly levity. Companies of minute-men had already been organized, for at this meeting it is voted to provide each minute-man with an effective fire-arm, bayonet, pouch and knapsack, together with thirty rounds of cartridge and ball, and it was further stipulated, that they be disciplined three times a week. A bounty of one shilling per head was voted to the train-band soldiery to encourage them to enlist, and for every half day's attendance at military duty. The selectmen were instructed to take effectual care that the town be provided with its full stock of arms and ammunition. These warlike measures on the part of the town caused it to be suspected by Gage and his officers as a depot of supplies for the patriots, and such it undoubtedly was, in a measure, although not to the extent supposed by the British governor. On the 26th of February, 1775, Col. Leslie, with three hundred British regulars, landed at Marblehead, and marched to Salem, on his way to Danvers to seize and destroy such supplies and ammunition as he should find. His bloodless repulse at the North Bridge is a matter of Salem history, and the claim is made by Salem antiquarians, that the Colonel's primary object was the seizure of some cannon owned by Capt. Richard Derby, a successful and wealthy merchant of Salem, which were concealed in the north fields in the neighborhood of the present Devereux homestead on School Street. They were claimed to be old ship's howitzers, and subsequently proved of no value for service. It is also a matter of record, that one Capt. David Mason, by instructions of a committee appointed by the Continental Congress, had committed to the care of one John Foster, who lived at the time on the north side of the bridge, seventeen cannon, which Foster mounted on carriages in his shop, at the present corner of Franklin and North streets. The carriages for these guns were made by Richard Skidmore, of Danvers, a veteran of the old French war, who saw service with Pepperell at Louisburg, and was present at the death of Wolfe on the Plains of Abraham before Quebec. Skidmore subsequently served throughout the Revolution, and as a soldier in the last war with England, he beat the reveillé on the same drum, which had rattled the charge before Louisburg. He was a noted wit and jester, and a great favorite with his townsmen. Danvers authorities claim that these cannon, the object of Leslie's expedition, were scattered about, some in the north fields, some at the new mills, Danversport, and others at "Blind Hole," or on the Gardner farm. As Capt. Derby is not claimed to have been the owner of all of them, and it is probable that they were contributed by different persons in this section, the theory may be probably correct. Neither is it probable, that the patriots would have risked so many pieces of artillery, then a scarce arm of the service, in one spot.

The coming of Leslie was heralded throughout all the country round, and Danvers patriots were at the bridge to dispute his passage, notably Capt. Samuel Eppes's company of train-band soldiery. Others were posted at convenient points along the road over which he must pass. It is not to be supposed, that Gov. Gage and the British officers in Boston had viewed the preparations of the Danvers townspeople with their brethren of the surrounding towns for the coming storm, with feelings other than those of alarm and uneasiness. The governor knew the determined character of the people. He and his body-guard, of Leslie's own command, had had a taste of their temper and their hospitality towards the king's minions during his short tarry at "King" Hooper's residence, the previous summer. Although there is a letter extant from Gage to Dartmouth, in which he speaks of having received intelligence that foreign cannon had been landed at Salem, and that upon sending an expedition he found them to have been valueless, condemned ship's guns, still, it is not probable, had Leslie succeeded in crossing the bridge, without binding himself, that his march would have ended there. It was but a very short time previous to this, that Danvers had voted to instruct its selectmen to purchase powder and ball. Gage had his spies there as well as at Salem.

The theory is, that Gage sent Leslie out under the belief that these cannon were brass howitzers imported from Holland. They were, however, ordinary iron ship's guns, brought in from time to time by merchant vessels, which had accumulated on the wharves. Whatever they were, Skidmore, of Danvers, made the carriages for them, which would seem to imply a Danvers interest in them. There is, too, from the revengeful spirit evinced by the British soldiery in Boston and elsewhere, the strongest reasons to believe that Gage's ultimate object, besides the capture of the guns, was the aiming of a blow at Danvers, and the quelling of the rebellious spirit of its people. Had the result at the bridge been less pacific, the bloody scenes at Concord and at Lexington, with the awful carnage of the retreat, would have been forestalled here. As it was, it is stated, that within a few hours, forty thousand men would have been under arms. Capt. Samuel Eppes's company of minute-men marched to the bridge, and with them went the Rev. Mr. Wadsworth, the beloved pastor of the First Parish Church.

The war spirit at this time ran high, as is evinced by the statement, that the third alarm-list, as it was called, chose its officers and organized as a company on the 6th of the following March. In the winter and spring of 1775, the parishioners of both parishes were much interested in the relief of the patriot poor of Boston, and the North Parish appoints a committee, consisting of Capt. John Putnam, Lieut. Enoch Putnam, Ensign Archelaus Dale, Capt. William Putnam, Francis Nurse, Capt. Nathan Pope, and Capt. Samuel Flint, to gather a contribution, which Enoch Putnam was instructed to carry to Boston and deliver to the Committee of Donations in the town of Boston, in the name of the North Parish in Danvers. He reported the delivery of "8 pair of Men's shoes, 2 pair Boys', $8\frac{1}{2}$ yards of Check, and 2 skeins of thread, and one pair of Moose-skin Breeches, also the sum of twenty six pounds fifteen shillings, and four pence Lawful Money to the said Committee." The South Parish gave £13 13*s*. 6*d*. for the same object.

There were at this time four companies of train-band soldiery, officered as follows: The first company by Capt. Israel Hutchinson, First Lieut. Enoch Putnam, Second Lieut. Aaron Cheever, Ensign Job Putnam. This company contained about fifty men, some of whom were residents of Beverly.

The officers of the second company were Capt. Samuel Eppes, First Lieut. Benjamin Jacobs, Second Lieut. Gideon Foster, Ensign Francis Simonds. It contained about seventy men.

The third company had as officers, Capt. Jeremiah Page, First Lieut. Joseph Porter, Second Lieut. Henry Putnam, Ensign Richard Skidmore. It mustered thirty-five men.

The Fourth Company had as officers: Capt. Samuel Flint, First Lieut. Daniel Putnam, Second Lieut. Joseph Putnam, Ensign Israel Putnam, and contained about forty men. These companies are all that are upon the rolls deposited in the State archives. Prior to this period, this body of militia had been denominated minute-men, from their instructions to be ready for duty at a minute's

warning. Capt. Gideon Foster appears to have been promoted from a lieutenancy in Eppes's company, to a command of his own; for it is recorded, that John Endicott was elected second lieutenant in Eppes's company to take the place of Capt. Foster, and it was Foster's company which covered itself with immortal glory on the British retreat from Concord and Lexington. The news of the British advance on Lexington reached Danvers at four o'clock on the morning of the 19th of April, 1775. Young Foster, then twenty-six years of age, summoned his men at the first sound of the alarm. They met on the green in front of the Bell Tavern; and, having received permission from the commander of their regiment to start in advance, after receiving the parting blessing from the Rev. Mr. Holt, they marched to the Bell Tavern, where the final leave-takings were made, and at nine o'clock started for Lexington. The command pushed on rapidly, making the most of the journey on the run, and reaching West Cambridge, now Arlington, a distance of sixteen miles, in four hours. They took a position on the main road west of the meeting-house hill, in a walled inclosure, where they entrenched themselves behind a barricade, consisting of bundles of shingles. It is supposed, that Capt. Foster's first intention was to intercept the retreat of the British, either under a mistaken estimate of their strength, or from a spirit of reckless bravery, enhanced by the excitement and awful carnage of the hour, and by the indiscriminate slaughter of his countrymen at Lexington, whose blood he burned to avenge. The British main column followed the road, guarded by strong flanking parties, thrown out to the right and left, to protect it as much as possible from its infuriated enemies, who hung like clouds of angry hornets on its flanks, and whose death-dealing rifles rapidly depleted its ranks, turning its retreat into a rout.

Of the existence of these flanking parties, Foster may have had no knowledge, although a statement has been handed down from successive generations, that he was warned of this method of conducting a retreat, by one of his men, who had seen service in the old French war, when it was frequently adopted by the British commanders as the best means of protection from Indian attacks.

Very soon after entrenching themselves, Foster and his men saw the British column descending the hill on their right, and, at the same time, a strong flank guard advancing on their left. They made a good fight, and, for a time, poured in a hot fire on their enemies; but they were between two fires, and were speedily enfiladed by the guard in their rear. The little enclosure soon became a charnel-house. Seven of the men of Danvers were shot dead, and the lives of all were in imminent danger from the exasperated British soldiery. Under these circumstances, there was but one alternative, and brave Capt. Foster at once adopted it. The gallant little band cut its way out into the road, and passed directly across the front of the British column, along the margin of the pond, taking a new position behind a ditch wall on the north side of the road. In this fight, the most shocking barbarities were perpetrated on the wounded by the Regulars. Dennison Wallis, who surrendered as a prisoner, received twelve bullets in his body, and was left for dead; but he subsequently recovered. Joseph Bell was more fortunate in his captors, who took him to Boston, where he was imprisoned for two months on board a British frigate, at the end of which time he was released. The regiment containing the remaining companies marched to the scene of action, but arrived too late to be of much effective service. Nearly every able-bodied man in Danvers responded to the call; and it is related that but two men were left at the New Mills, one of whom was sick in bed, and the other returned in the evening to tell the tale of sorrow and woe.

The martyred dead, — Samuel Cook, aged 33; Benjamin Daland, aged 25; George Southwick, aged 25; Jotham Webb, aged 22; Henry Jacobs, aged 22; Ebenezer Goldthwaite, aged 22; and Perley Putnam, aged 21, were brought to Danvers the day after the battle, and were interred with military honors. The monument to their memory, now standing at the junction of Washington and Main streets, was erected in 1835. It is built of hewn granite, and is twenty-two feet in height, and seven feet square at the base. Its cost was about $1,000.

On the 1st of May, 1775, at a public meeting, at which Capt. William Shillaber was moderator, it was voted that there be two watches kept in the town of Danvers, one on the road near the New Mills, and the other at the crotch of the road near Mr. Francis Symonds's. Also, that each watch shall consist of thirteen men every night. Any person refusing to watch without sufficient reasons, his name shall be posted in the newspapers. It was further voted to procure teams to cart stores to Watertown; and it was voted to be "concerned with ye neighboring towns, in establishing a post between Newburyport and Cambridge."

The firing of guns was disapproved of, except for the purposes of an alarm. These records show the sense of insecurity and alarm which the Danvers towns-people felt at this time, and also the warlike excitement which pervaded the community. It appears that the noted loyalist and Tory, "King" Hooper, felt called upon at this time to explain his position to his fellow-townsmen, for a letter was read from him at this meeting, the contents of which were voted unsatisfactory to the inhabitants. Mr. Hooper was very unpopular at this period. He appears to have been a man possessed of considerable hauteur and aristocratic pride, and to have kept himself aloof from his townsmen in all their transactions, even prior to the Revolution. He was possessed of vast wealth, and was a loyalist to the core. His grounds were tastefully laid out, and handsomely decorated.

The house, still standing, is now the mansion of Col. Francis Peabody. In Hooper's time, there were a number of leaden ornaments upon the gateway and around the entrance. A party of recruits for the patriot army at Cambridge, while passing the house, stopped to strip the lead from the posts, for use in their bullet-moulds. The loyalist owner appeared at the door, and, calling them knaves, rebels, and other harsh epithets, ordered them to desist. For answer, one of the party levelled his gun and fired, the bullet entering the door, as it hastily closed. The mark remained until some years since.

Capt. William Shillaber and Samuel Holton were chosen to represent the town of Danvers in the Provincial Congress, to be held at Watertown, May 25, 1775.

In the summer of 1775, Dr. Calef, of Ipswich, built a ship at the New Mills, then a famous locality for ship-building. The vessel was intended for the East Indies, and was quite large for that day, being of four hundred tons burden. Her building excited the curiosity of the towns-people, and Dummer Jewett was instructed to apply to Calef to find out for whom he was building it. The vessel, it seems, did not find a purchaser. It was launched in the night, and drifted to the south side of the river, where it laid for several years, and ultimately decayed.

At this time, the ship-building interest at the New Mills, Danversport, was a very prosperous industry. As many as seven vessels were at one time on the stocks, in the various yards, in process of construction. Here were built the "Jupiter," "Harlequin," "General Greene," and other famous privateers and war vessels of the Revolution, besides four twenty-gun ships. A large fleet of merchant-men have also been launched here from Danvers ship-yards. Several fine English prize vessels were also towed into Porter's River during the war.

September 14, 1775, Benedict Arnold's ill-fated expedition, designed to effect the conquest of Canada, and to induce its people to join with the Colonies in their struggle for liberty and independence, halted in Danvers, on its passage through the town, *en route* for Quebec. The town furnished generous support to its soldiers' widows all through the struggle.

Col. Timothy Pickering's famous Essex regiment passed through Danvers on its way to Bunker Hill. The regiment was not engaged in that battle; but there is a statement that it met the retreating

Americans on Charlestown Neck, and supplied them with ammunition, Capt. Gideon Foster and his Danvers men being principally engaged in this work. It will be remembered that at this time the British frigates and gunboats were pouring a hot fire across the Neck, which must have rendered Foster's task one of no little hazard and risk. Gen. Israel Putnam, of Connecticut (a Danvers boy), and Moses Porter, of Danvers, are the only two persons from Danvers, of whom there is record as being actively engaged in the fight. A few days before the battle, Foster and his men were summoned to an arduous undertaking, by their own desire, Gen. Putnam having called for volunteers. The company supposed that it was to be detailed on secret service; but, after a thorough inspection by "Old Put" himself, their arms were exchanged for axes, and they were ordered into a swamp, to cut faggots for the earthworks and entrenchments. The only serious peril which they incurred appears to have been from the mosquitoes, and their only exposure to fire was to that of the good-natured raillery of their comrades.

June 18, 1776, prior to the immortal Declaration of Independence, Danvers voted to support the government, should the Continental Congress declare itself independent.

In 1777, the towns-people were severely afflicted with the small-pox, and a pest-house was built. In the same year, they appear also to have suffered from the hard times and the influx of paper money, an irredeemable currency raising the prices of commodities and the necessities of life. Gideon Putnam is posted this year as an enemy to his country, for breaking the resolves of Congress, in presuming to sell cheese at nine shillings the pound.

The next year, 1784, it strongly opposed the removal of the Court of Common Pleas to Newburyport, and in 1786 it was as emphatic in its denunciation of paper money. On the 2d of August, in that year, the citizens, in town-meeting assembled, sent the following instructions to their representative, Israel Hutchinson: "We deem that it will give you satisfaction to receive instructions from the town you represent at so critical a time as this is, when it appears to the bystander that there is almost an end to all publick Faith, which we apprehend will end in the dissolution of the Government, in order to give energy and respectability to government and to make it a blessing to the Subject we wish to see it supported with dignity. This can only be done by a steady and most sacred regard to justice in all publick engagements, the least departure from whitch will be productive of want of confidence and excite the most distressing anxiety in the best of Subjects and disaffection and opposition to others to the distruction and embarrasments, and finally to the dissolution of all government. We conceive there are no promises or obligations more solemn than those entered into for supplies advanced and for the most honorable and hazardous services in defence of the Sacred and invaded rights of this State — when destitute of monies, funds or resourses, the creditor, devoutly hoping a happy issue of a precarious unequalled and calamitous war, did not hesitate to accept the Solemn pledge of his Country's faith as his only Security, and most confidently relying on her justice, resolved to stake his all on her ability and Success. — If for these obligations, valuable considerations were received, especially if those considerations were previous Services and aids in support of what we had solemnly resolved to defend with our lives and fortunes there can be noue for whose fulfilment, justice pleads more loudly. And we hope it impossable that injustice Shall ever be confounded with policy in the government of this State — Whether the original proprietor, through indiscretion or Severe necessity has been compelled to part with them, for a valuable or a vile consideration the obligations of the State remain in their nature unchangeable and ought to be inviolable.

"The emission of a paper currency we deprecate as a calamity; to prevent which we charge you to use your utmost influence. The integrity of the upright shall guide them to Safety, but the injustice of transgressors shall be their destructiou."

These instructions were prepared by Robert Shillaber, Caleb Low, Edw. Southwick, and also included instructions to representative Hutchinson to apprise the Great and General Court that a man in Danvers was taxed much more for £100 in value than if he resided in Salem. In this same year, Col. Benjamin Tupper raised a company in Danvers and Beverly to aid in the suppression of the famous Shay's rebellion.

In 1808, an attempt was made to annex the North Parish to Salem, but it failed of accomplishment, the inhabitants not being favorable to such a movement.

In 1812, came the second war with Great Britain, or as it is familiarly termed the "Last War." Danvers was violently opposed to this struggle from its first inception. At the first sign of hostilities in 1812, it chose Frederic Howes, Jonathan Ingersoll, Andrew Nichols, Jr., Sylvester Osborne, and Thomas Putnam a committee to report upon the awful situation of the country. This committee submitted a series of resolutions, which were adopted. They opposed the course of the nation in reference to France, and regarded the war as ruinous to the prosperity and dangerous to the union, liberty, and independence of the United States. It was unjustifiable and unnecessary, because, as the towns-people of Danvers believed, the differences between Great Britain and the United States could be settled by honest negotiation. Four delegates were chosen to the County Convention called to consult upon the proper means to secure peace.

The town refused to take any active part in the war, although the anchors of the famous frigate "Essex" were forged at the iron works at the Port, and the stern-post of the same vessel came from the old camp-ground of Gage's troops near "King" Hooper's house, being cut from an old oak-tree, which stood on the plain occupied by the camp, and in which was found the iron staple to which the delinquent soldiery were tied when whipped for minor offences.

Two companies of militia were organized, one commanded by Capt Samuel Page, and the other by Capt. Gideon Foster, both veterans of the Revolution. These two companies formed a home guard, and their only service appears to have been, when called out by sudden and uncalled-for alarms in their near vicinity. Some pieces of artillery were posted at Hospital Point, and there was a fort of turf, an earthwork, mounting two iron four-pound guns at Hooper's factory wharf.

On one occasion a boat laden with sea-weed passing Hospital Point was fired upon by the battery, the sound of whose guns summoned the militia. The artillery were again alarmed, sometime later, by fishermen drawing a seine, and began a fusilade, creating such a commotion, that not only were the home companies called out, but the alarm spread as far into the country as Coos County, N. H.

This appears to have been the only glory won by Danvers in this struggle. The old warlike spirit was slightly roused, however, as shown by the following document, still in existence, announcing the organization of Capt. Page's company.

"Attention! The subscribers (exempt by law from military duty) viewing the present as a time, when every American should be in readiness to give his aid in repelling any hostile attempt on our homes, and in consequence of the exposed state of the country, do hereby voluntarily unite to equip and form themselves into an independent company, hereafter to be called the 'New Mills Minute Men.' This company will be under no military authority but that of its commander, and with 'Always Ready,' for its motto, the defence of our common country shall be its object, and Invasion the sign, at which every man will start into the ranks and be found alert in his duty.

"Danvers, New Mills, July 1814."

This company had its warning-post, or meeting-place, in Capt. Samuel Page's "front yard" at the Port.

June 12, 1815, the town remonstrated against an attempt to annex it

to Salem. March 7, 1836, the town voted to sustain a railroad to go directly to Boston, avoiding the inconvenience of ferries. The first railroad through Danvers, the Salem and Lawrence branch of the Eastern Railroad, was not opened, however, till July 4, 1848. The road from Newburyport and Georgetown to Boston via the Boston and Maine Railroad from Wakefield Junction was opened for public travel in June, 1855.

The present First National Bank, formerly the Village Bank, was established in 1836. Sept. 22, 1843, occurred the great fire in the South Parish, now Peabody, The Second Congregational Church, the Essex Coffee-house, twelve stores, a large number of houses, sheds, and out-buildings were consumed. The Unitarian Church also narrowly escaped destruction, being on fire several times. The loss amounted to $75,000. June 10, 1845, the North Parish was visited by a similar calamity. The business of the Plains village received a severe check. A large number of houses, shops, and sheds were destroyed by the flames, and the loss was $80,000, on which there was an insurance of $30,000. The recovery of the parish and its subsequent growth were largely aided by the opening of the Essex Railroad, as before stated, in 1848. In 1844, Danvers was visited a second time by the small-pox, in epidemic form. There were in all thirty cases in the town, of which four resulted fatally.

Dec. 16, 1847, at a special meeting, resolutions were passed by the town strongly condemnatory of the Mexican war. In common with her sister towns in the State, Danvers saw no need for a resort to arms, and she gave the movement neither aid nor sympathy, although it is stated that five of her citizens served in the war.

The Danvers Savings Bank was established in 1850, and in 1854, the present bank building was erected. The present town hall, in which are located the rooms now occupied by the Holton High School, was built in 1854, and first occupied at the annual meeting, March 5, 1855. In the same building, there was opened in 1857, the Danvers branch of the Peabody Public Library. This library was given by George Peabody, Esq., the munificent London banker, who was born in the South Parish of Danvers on the eighteenth day of February, 1795. The house in which he came into existence is still standing on Washington Street, Peabody, next to the Upton Glue Works. The library was first established in South Danvers; as its location there did not conveniently accommodate the inhabitants at the north, the present branch was established.

May 18, 1855, the south parish of Danvers was incorporated as a separate and distinct town, by the name of South Danvers. April 13, 1868, the new town adopted the name of Peabody, in honor of its distinguished townsman.

The decade from 1840 to 1850 marks a transition period in the history of Danvers. Before that time, from its first settlement, it had been known as the Farms, the Village, Salem Village, or the North Parish. Its public centre and place of gathering had been at or near the present First Parish meeting-house; but during this period the seat of business was removed. The present village of the Plains had been gradually developing as a trade centre, dating its present business prosperity from about the year 1830; and within this period of which we are speaking, it became the chief business and public centre of the town. The old appellations were dropped, and those of to-day instituted;—the vicinity of the old meeting-house becoming Danvers Centre; the locality of the present carpet factory, Tapleyville; the present business centre, Danvers Plain; and the New Mills, Danversport. Blind Hole became Putnamville.

CHAPTER III.

DANVERS IN THE LATE CIVIL WAR — THE OLD AND NEW CHURCHES — THE FIRST PARISH, AND OTHER SOCIETIES — LITERARY SOCIETIES.

The patriotism of the sons of Danvers burned as brightly during the recent Rebellion as that of their fathers in the days of the Revolution. The best blood of Danvers watered many a Southern battle-field during the civil war. The town furnished some 800 soldiers during the struggle, and at its close had a surplus of 120 men above the number required for its quotas. Of this number, but forty-four received commissions. Five hundred and ten of this number were enlisted directly from the inhabitants of the town. Ninety-five of her sons laid down their lives that the nation might live, and Danvers, proud of their heroism, in 1870 erected the present beautiful granite memorial, which stands in front of the town hall. The subject of the soldiers' monument was first brought before the town at the annual meeting in March, 1868. As a result, the following committee were chosen: Wm. Dodge, Jr., E. T. Waldron, J. F. Bly, Wm. R. Putnam, Dean Kimball, Timothy Hawkes, George Andrews, Rufus Putnam, S. P. Cummings, Simeon Putnam, Henry A. Perkins, Josiah Ross, Edwin Mudge, and Daniel P. Pope. About $3,000 was raised by subscription. Of this sum, nearly one-half was given by Mr. Edwin Mudge, who contributed to this purpose his salary for two years as the town's representative in the Legislature. The town added a somewhat larger amount, making the sum total $6,298.20. The monument is of Hallowell granite, is 33¼ feet in height, and 7¾ feet square at the base. On its front face, is the following inscription:

"Erected
By the Citizens of Danvers
In Memory of
Those who Died in Defence of Their Country
During the War of the Rebellion, in 1861–65."

On the remaining faces are the names of the ninety-five patriots who gave up their lives. The list commences with the names of Maj. Wallace A. Putnam and Lieut. James Hill. The monument was dedicated with befitting ceremonies Nov. 30, 1870. Its design is especially pleasing and appropriate.

Danvers raised by subscription, and paid in soldiers' bounties during the Rebellion, $6,342. It also raised for the purposes of drilling, clothing, equipments, &c., $4,606. The amount of State aid paid by the town, over and above the amount re-imbursed by the Commonwealth, was $1,884. The whole sum raised for all purposes during the war by the town of Danvers was $38,838.44.

In 1869, the present building of the Peabody Institute was built upon the Park, south of the town house, from donations received from Mr. George Peabody. The institute was made entirely independent of the Peabody institution. The present library contains many thousand volumes. The building has an audience hall, in which courses of free lectures are given each year. The permanent funds of the institute amount to about $66,000. The building is gothic in design, with a tower, and is a handsome structure.

Nearest akin in interest, to the history of the town itself, is the past history of its churches and religious institutions. For, prior to the incorporation of the town, the parish organization was in existence, and was in itself, in a measure, a municipal corporation on a small scale.

The First Parish in Salem Village was made a separate parochial organization, with the conditional assent of the town of Salem, Oct. 8, 1672. The inhabitants of the village first presented a petition to this end in 1670, and the assent of the town of Salem was obtained

in March, 1672. The order of the General Court grantiug the division is as follows: —

"At a generall court held at Boston 8th of October 1672 — In answer to the Petition of the farmers of Salem, Richard Hutchinson Thomas Fuller &c., the Court judgeth it meet, that all persons living within the tract of land mentioned in the town's grant of land to the Petitioners, together with all lands and Estates lying within the said bounds shall Contribnte to all Charges referring to the maintainance of a minister and erecting a meeting house there, and that they shall have liberty to nominate and appoint persons among themselves or town of Salem not exceeding the Number of Five, who are hereby impowered from time to time for the making and gathering of all rates and levies For the ends above expressed — and that in case of refusall or non payment of the same by any person or persons amongst them, that then the Constables of Salem shall and hereby are impowered to make distress upon the goods of any that shall so neglect or refuse to afford their help in that use. And the same to deliver to the persons aforesaid to be improved accordingly and that wheu a minister shall be settled amongst them, they shall be freed from Contribnting to the ministers of Salem — That this is a true Coppy taken out of the Court records Attests Edward Rawson, Secretary."

There was a mutual understanding that no church was to be organized at once, for there was an expressed unwillingness on the part of the Salem church to part with so large a number of its members at once, savoring somewhat, too, of a distrnst as to what the new church might do, if allowed to becoue independent. As there was no church, the distinction customarily made between church members and others in voting was not strictly followed, and all householders in the parish were allowed a voice in the parish affairs. The parish in this case, therefore, instead of being an adjunct, as was customary, to a town, was given eertain incideutal functions as a town.

The first meeting of the farmers was held Nov. 11, 1672. Lieut. Thomas Putnam, Thomas Fuller, Sr., Joseph Porter, Thomas Flint, and Joshua Rea, were chosen a comuittee, "to carry along the affairs according to the Court order." They instructed the committee to lay taxes on this basis: "All Vacant land at one half penny per acre; all improved land at one penny per acre: all heads and other estate at country price." The latter was probably a rate established by the colonial government. It was also voted to make a rate of forty pounds in that year for Mr. Bayley. Mr. James Bayley had been in the parish but a few months, at the time of this organization. By this vote he became, not the settled pastor, but what might now be termed a "stated supply."

At a meeting on the "26th of the 10th month," that is, December, 1672, it was voted to build a meeting-house, "of 34 foot in length, 28 foot broad, and 16 foot between joints;" and Nathan Putnam, Henry Henny, Joseph Hutchinson, and Joseph Putnam, were joined with the general committee before chosen for a building committee. A rate or tax was made to pay for the work. A little later, in March, "at a meeting of the farmers, it was voted, that the fifth part of the rate for building the meeting-house and finishing the same shall be paid in money, or butter at five pence the pound, or wheat at the money price, and the rest of the payment iu sueh pay as shall carry it along. This money and butter and wheat is to provide nails and" [glass, probably, the word being partially obliterated] "for the meeting-house."

This meeting-house was built aceording to vote, though it was not wholly completed for a considerable period. In 1684, it was voted that the meeting-house "shall be filled and daubed at where it wants below the beams and plates, And that six casements shall be Hanged in the meeting-house, and that there be a canope set over the pulpit." A little later, galleries were added. This house was a two-story wooden building, with peaked roof. It stood upon the flat, northeast of the present site, upon the north side of Hobart Street, which is the old meeting-house road, and between the houses now oceupied by Harriet and Hiram Hook. Joseph Hutchinson, a neighbor hard by, owned the meadow, and gave an acre of land to the "Inhabitants of the Farms, for the meeting-house and ministry amongst them." Those who desired were allowed to build "a house for their horses, on that side of the meeting house next the swamp," that is, at the rear towards the north-east.

During the secoud year of his pastorate, Mr. Bayley's salary was made £47. He was to find his own firewood, or, if he preferred, to give up the extra £7, and receive his wood from the parish committee. This supply of wood was reckoned at from thirty to thirty-six cords. In this second year, 1673, the parish voted to build a house for the minister, "the dimensions to be 28 foot in length, 13 foot between joynts, and 20 foot in breadth, aud a leentoo of 11 foot at the end of the house." This does not appear to have been carried into effect, for, seven years later, iu February, 1680, the vote is renewed; "the Dimensions of the House are as followeth: 42 foot long, twenty foot Broad: thirteen foot stnde, fouer chimleis, no gable ends." "A Ratte" was made to meet the expense, to the amount of two hundred aud twenty-one pounds, nine shillings, and six pence. On the "26th of Genewary," 1681, the work was well under way; and in February, 1683, the house is stated to stand in need of being "Repaired." This honse stood some fifty rods north-west of the present parsonage, and a little less than twenty rods from the present eourse of Centre Street, on the north-eastern side, to the rear of the houses of John Roberts and Henry Prentiss, upon land now owned by E. and A. Mudge & Co. A lane near the house of John Roberts leads into the ancient site. It was upon the south-western border of a tract of land eontaining about five aeres, which Joseph Houlton had given in 1681 to the inhabitants of Salem Village, "for the use of the miuistry."

Mr. Bayley's ministry was not harmonious. There were mauy disputes between himself and his people, some of them arising from the delay in building this house, which caused a great deal of annoyance to the minister, and some expense. He was a young man, lacking in judgment and taet. The trouble was augmented from year to year, till it reached such a height as to require the assistance and counsel of the mother church, in Salem, and subsequently the intervention of the General Court of the Colony. Neither of the latter succeeded in reuoving the difficulty, and Mr. Bayley's ministry probably closed near the end of the year 1679. He did not remove from the limits of the parish, for, in the year 1680, certain of his late parishioners, Thomas, Nathaniel, and John Putnam, Joseph Hutchinson, and Thomas Fuller, Sr., gave him a tract of about forty acres of land, lying, in part, upou the hill and meadow east of the meeting-house. Here he had a house, in which he lived, apparently for several years, and which he continued to occupy occasionally, "for some years after the witchcraft transactions." After leaving the ministry, Mr. Bayley became a physician, and practised iu Roxbury, where he died, in 1707.

Mr. George Burroughs, also a Harvard man, came to the village to preach, in November, 1680. The farmers voted, "that Mr Burroughs for his mentenance amongst us Is to Have for the year ensuing sixty pounds In and as money one third part in mony cartain the two thirds in provision at money price as followeth: Ry and barly and malt at three shillings per bushel: indian corn at two shillings a bushel beaf at three half-pence a pound and pork at 2 peuce a pound Butter at 6 pence a pound and this to be paid at each half year's end: it is to be understood, that It shall be at the Inhabitants Liberty to discharge the wholl Sixty pounds in all mony if they se cause and his firewood." It appears that Mr. Bayley's friends still continued to maintain his cause in the parish, and troubles continued in the church. Mr. Burroughs gave up his engagement, and left the village, in 1683, his ministry covering two years, and probably one-quarter of the third. This pastor's experiences here, appear to have been stormy and sad, and also his subsequent career. His salary was neglected, and wheu his wife died, he

had not the means to accord her a proper burial. He was the cause of what proved a bitter and deadly enmity among his parishioners, to whose hatred he became a martyr, in the subsequent years of the terrible witchcraft delusion. In those awful days, when the gallows were made to subserve the interests of petty spite, Mr. Burroughs was the minister, who, dragged from the far-off wilds of Maine, was granted a trial with mere mockery of justice, and, when riding through the streets of Salem to his execution, exercised his divine calling by the repetition of such touching scriptural quotations, that the populace were moved to tears; and but for the intervention of Cotton Mather, might have procured for their former pastor a pardon.

The early church of Salem Village, appears to have been rent and torn by internal quarrels and petty dissensions, and December 27, 1681, it was "agreed upon and voted for the futer by the Inhabitants of Salem Village: that the Ratte made for the Defraing of all our charges for the year 1681: both for Houses and Lands with all other Consarnes belonging to the Ministry amongst us shall Be entered In our Book of Records with the names and perticular summes: And that it shall not Bee Lawful for the Inhabitants of this Village to convey the Houses or Lands or any other consarnes Belonging to the Ministry to any perticular person or persons not for any cause by Voat or other ways: But this estate to stand good to the Inhabitants of this place and to their successors for ever (for them.)" These votes are significant with respect to the nature of the troubles existing among the farmers, which had to do largely with pecuniary affairs. This resolve, as to the conveyance of the lands and houses belonging to "the Ministry," had evident reference to the attempted donation of land to Mr. Bayley, or, perhaps, to Mr. Burroughs. The "rate" for 1681 follows upon the record with the names of the men assessed, of which there are ninety-four, indicating a population of about five hundred. The whole tax amounted to a fraction above two hundred pounds, indicating the collection of a considerable sum, in payment for the minister's house then building.

Mr. Deodat Lawson succeeded Mr. Burroughs. It would appear, by the records handed down, that this gentleman was of a mercenary disposition, and filled with worldly greed. There was a long period of bargaining before a trade was fairly made, and then the reverend gentleman appears to have settled upon the same terms as granted to Mr. Burroughs. Mr. Daniel Eppes, the schoolmaster, supplied the pulpit during the interim. The new pastor finally came and settled, in February, 1684. As to his ministerial work, little is really known. It is certain, however, that dissensions among the people, both old and new, continued with increasing bitterness. Efforts were made to secure Mr. Lawson's permanent settlement, but the resistance was too strong; and there being no prospect of a change, the minister left the parish in 1688. He visited the neighborhood again in 1692, however.

Mr. Samuel Parris was the third pastor. This gentleman was born in London, and was thirty-five years old at his first arrival in Salem Village, in 1688. He had been a member of Harvard College, but was not a graduate, and had also been engaged in mercantile pursuits in the West Indies and in Boston. He also drove a sharp bargain with the parish, and it was more than a year before he finally accepted its invitation. The exact terms of his settlement became a matter of dispute between pastor and people, which they were never able to settle.

June 18, 1689, there is an entry of a vote offering Mr. Parris a settlement of sixty-six pounds, one-third in money and two-thirds in provisions at specified rates, he being required to find his own firewood, and to keep the ministry house in good repair. Mr. Parris, however, never admitted that he settled on the basis of this vote. After his ordination, when the entry was read in a parish meeting, at which he was present, he declared, according to the testimony of three of his parishioners, that he knew nothing of any such vote, and would have nothing to do with it, and that "they were Knaves and Cheaters, that entered it." Upon the 10th of October, after reference to the repeal of the vote of 1681, forbidding the conveyance by sale or gift of the real estate of the parish, it is said to have been "voted and agreed by a General Concurrence, that we will give to Mr Parice our menestrye house and barn and two akers of Land next aioyneing to the house: and that Mr Parice take office amongst us and Live and dye in the worke of the menestrye amongst us." Mr. Parris, under the supposition that he had obtained the property, was now ready to take the office.

On the 19th of November (29th N. S.), 1689, he became the minister of the parish and pastor of the church. Mr. Parris's engagement appears, however, to have dated from the first of July preceding, his receipts for salary being reckoned from that date.

A covenant, "agreed upon and consented unto by the Church of Christ at Salem Village, at their first Embodying, on ye 19 November, 1689," is entered on the church book of records in the handwriting of Mr. Parris. It was probably drawn up by him. The covenant gave promise of better things than subsequently followed. The witchcraft delusion began to show itself about the end of February, 1692. It originated in the house of the pastor of the First Parish, and he, more than any one else, aided and abetted its spread, and urged on to the deeds of public wrong that were wrought. The parish book contains no record of the witchcraft troubles, and it never contained any, for there are no erasions or missing leaves. In this whole affair, Mr. Parris evinced the same spirit to the end, with which he commenced. He made no attempts to conciliate those whom he had offended, or to make such amends as he might for the wrongs they had some of them suffered.

He remained hard and unyielding. He was sharp in all his dealings with his people, standing for trifles, and tenacious of the ground he held. He opposed the calling of a council to consider the troubles and difficulties of the parish, and delayed it upon the most trifling pretences, even when to directly oppose it, had become hazardous. He did not finally consent to its assembling, until he found it would go strongly against him if he longer opposed it. His confession, which he styles "My Meditations for Peace," in which he in some sort admits his error, is not satisfactory. He appears in it to be humiliated, on account of the breaking out of the delusion in his own family; but his expressions and language are still consistent with the maintenance of the ground that the punishment meted out to the unfortunate victims of the delusion was justifiable. He admits that he may have made mistakes with others, but denies that he was actuated by any wrong spirit. The council met on April 3, 1695. It was constituted favorably to Mr. Parris, but it was not unfair in its award of censure and advice on either side. The council did all that was to be expected in its attempts to restore peace and harmony, with the continuance of Mr. Parris in the ministry. The large minority opposed to him did not rest, and they continued to evince such enmity to their pastor that the Mathers and members of the council urged him to resign. This he was not ready to do, and neither were the larger part of the church prepared to have him. The next year, however, with the last Sabbath in June, Mr. Parris closed his ministry. Mr. Parris refused to give up the ministry-house and land, which he held, and there ensued a bitter struggle for possession. The matter went to court, and thence before a board of arbitration, consisting of the "Hon. Wait Winthrop, Elisha Cook, and Samuel Sewall, Esqs." The latter awarded Mr. Parris £79 9*s.* 6*d.* in addition to the arrearages of his salary due him from the inhabitants, and required him to give a quitclaim of the ministry-house and land. This litigation was not finally settled until September, 1697. In the meantime, the minister's wife had died, just after his resignation. Her remains lie in the Wadsworth Cemetery, and over the grave is a stone with this inscription:

"Elizabeth Parris aged about 48 years, Dec. July y^e^ 14 1696

"Sleep precious Dust, no stranger now to Rest.
Thou hast thy longed wish in Abraham's Brest.
Farewell Best Wife, Choice Mother, Neighbur, Friend.
We'll wail thee less for hopes of thee i' th' end. S. P."

This is all which is left to bind the name of Parris with the history of the town. It is a singular coincidence, that each of the four first ministers buried a wife during his residence in the village.

Mr. Parris, after removing from Salem Village, was settled in Stow in the same year, 1697; and subsequently he preached in Dunstable and Sudbury, dying in the latter place in the midst of poverty, crushed and broken, on the 20th of February, 1720.

The parish was at some trouble, after the departure of Mr. Parris, to supply itself with a minister, and "by a unanimous consent" it is recorded, "that we will keep Tuesday the 12th of this instant October (1697) as a day of fasting and prayer to seek direction of the Wonderful Counsellor about providing us a minister." On the 19th of November, following, the people agreed "by a unanimous consent" in the choice of a committee "to treate with the Rev. Mr. Joseph Green; to see if they can prevaile with him to come and preach with us awhile in order to a further settlement."

The next week, the church had a special day of fasting and prayer, and a meeting at the house of Dea. Edward Putnam. Prayer was offered, "that God would provide a pastor for this his church according to his promise made to his people, that he would give them pastors after his own heart, who should feed his people with knowledge and understanding, that his church may not be as sheep without a shepherd." "After prayer being ended, the church having before this day had some experience of the ministerial preaching and teaching of Mr. Joseph Green amongst us, it was then consented to and voted by the church that we desire him to continue in the same work still amongst us, and that in order to take office upon him: if it shall please the grate Shepherd of the Sheep to besto such a blessing upon us."

December 20, 1697, the parish took corresponding action "by a universal consent." A salary of seventy pounds, with the use of the ministry house and land, and his firewood, which last was commuted after some years for eight pounds, was offered the new pastor. The minister came and remained with the church many months prior to his formal settlement, which was deferred to see if the people would hold to the same mind concerning him. In June, the church and parish gave him another call, and on Thursday, November 10, 1698, the new pastor was formally ordained. He then lacked two weeks of being 23 years old. His marriage with Elizabeth Gerrish, a daughter of the Wenham minister, occurred the next spring. Mr. Green labored assiduously with his people to restore harmony and peace, and attained so much success that, soon after his coming, the church voted to drop the action that had been pending for years against the offending, or aggrieved, brethren, declaring that they "looked upon it as nothing," and that it "should be buried forever." Mr. Green has a minute in the church-book for Feb. 5, 1699, of "a matter of thankfulness" in the presence of these brethren and sisters at the communion with the church on that Sabbath for the first time since 1692.

The meeting-house was now in need of extensive repairing, and in the year 1700 it was voted to build a new house. It was placed on "Watch-House Hill," on the site of the present church edifice, but fronting towards the north, upon the "Old Meeting-house Road." It is described as being "before Dea. Ingersoll's door." The latter's house stood about on the site of the present parsonage, but probably a little further to the rear, or toward the north-west. Dea. Ingersoll gave the land; but with the added condition that "Deacon Putnam and John Buxton and John Putnam and Benj. Putnam becom bound in a bond of a hundred pounds apeece to defend the title of said land to the peple as long as they make use of it to that end." This provision was made on account of some question, afterwards adjusted, with respect to the validity of the title, by which Dea. Ingersoll held his real estate. The house was raised in the spring of 1701, and the work of building occupied rather more than a year, so that the people did not meet for the first time in the new house until July 26, 1702.

Its dimensions were forty-eight feet by forty-two; and twenty feet between the joints. It had a tower, or "turret," and a hip roof, or "gable ends." There were galleries in the interior, and the walls were plastered up to the plates, but left unfinished above. The estimated cost of its construction was £330, which fell short of the sum required. About £36 more were subsequently raised by subscription among the "neighbrs"; that is, persons who attended the meeting at the village, but who lived outside of the parish bounds. Of this sum, Mr. Green gave as his own contribution, he not being regularly taxed, £10, and some help was received from Salem.

The building committee were Capt. Thomas Flint, Mr. Joseph Pope, Lieut. Jonathan Putnam, Mr. Joseph Herrick, and Benjamin Putnam. It was voted, that those that had their road shortened to the meeting-house by the change of location, should do the work of levelling the new ground; and, further, this work was required to be done satisfactorily before the house was raised. This house stood until 1785. It played a very important part in town affairs, being used as one of the places of assembly, or town-houses, after the incorporation of the district and organization of the town.

It was during Mr. Green's beneficent administration that the first schools were established, in a building erected for that purpose, as we have before mentioned. The first notice of the thanksgiving collection for charitable distribution occurs in his diary in 1707. Whether the custom existed before that period is not known. The use of the "Halfway Covenant" was introduced by Mr. Green. This was an arrangement by which persons, who had themselves been baptized in infancy, but who did not feel prepared to unite with the church, were yet brought so far into connection with it as to be allowed the privilege of having their children baptized. From this time forward there were many that thus "owned the covenant" who did not thereby become members of the church, and who did not regard themselves as having become, experimentally, Christians. The custom was not set aside for more than a hundred years, and until after the settlement of Dr. Braman. Mr. Green, though not a man of unusual ability, was an acceptable preacher. He was sometimes called upon to preach on public occasions in other towns. He has left no sermons, but his journal remains, which contains a valuable record of his daily life and duties.

His tastes were rural, and he was fond of farming and a great lover of nature. He liked hunting, and it is related of him that he killed, on one occasion, eighteen pigeons at a single shot. He was the owner of a considerable estate, of which there is an inventory which describes his landed property as follows:—

"About 110 acres of land near ye ministry house—400 pounds. Five acres of orchard lot westward of ye house—120 pounds. Twenty-four acres of meadow and upland at Will's Hill—80 pounds. Three hundred acres on ye north side of ye Merrimack—150 pounds. With the personal property, the whole estate amounted in round numbers to 1,050 pounds. The farm north of the Merrimack near Haverhill was bought by Mr. Green the spring before his death."

Good old Bray Wilkins, one of the former pillars of the church, died at the opening of the year 1702, and his pastor thus affectionately records it in his diary:—

"1702, Jan. 1. Cold. I at study. Bray Wilkins dyed, who was in his 92 year. He lived to a good old age and saw his children's children and peace upon our little Israel. 2. The church here kept a day of prayer for ye outpouring of ye spirit of God upon us and ours. Lord hear us. Old William Buckley dyed this evening. He was at ye meeting ye last Sabbath and dyed with ye cold (I fear) for want of comfort and good tending. Lord forgive. He was about 80 years old: I visited him and prayed with him on Monday and also ye evening before he dyed. He was very poor, but I hope had not his portion in this life."

This Mr. Buckley was one of the many sufferers by the witchcraft delusion. His wife and daughter had been imprisoned during the prosecutions of that awful time, and the old man and his family had been impoverished by the costs of the court, unjustly laid upon them.

The Rev. Mr. Green's pastorate covered a period of eighteen years, and he died among his people, while still in the exercise of his duties as their spiritual guide and friend. He passed away on the 26th of November, 1715, being forty years and two days of age.

More than a year and a half elapsed before the dead pastor's place was filled, — the pulpit being supplied in the interim by candidates. On the 7th of August, 1716, a call was extended to Mr. Peter Clark. Negotiations followed, and it was not until June 5, 1717, that he was ordained

Mr. Clark was a native of Watertown, a graduate of Harvard in the class of 1712, and was about twenty-five years of age at the time of his settlement. He married Deborah Hobart, of Braintree, Nov. 6, 1719. The father of the lady, Peter Hobart, moved to Salem Village some years later, or about 1730. He purchased land of Robert Hutchinson, and occupied, perhaps for a time, his house. But soon after, and using, it may be, portions of the old building, he put up upon Hobart Street, which is named for him, the house now owned and occupied in part by his descendants, the family of Perley Clark. The wife of the late John Hook, Jr., and the family of Benjamin Millett are also among the descendants of the Clark and Hobart families by this marriage.

Mr. Clark continued in the ministry in this parish for more than half a century, his pastorate covering a period of almost exactly fifty-one years to the day of his death, June 10, 1768. He differed strongly from his predecessor in character, and was yet well suited to his people. His mind was sharp and vigorous, and he had a taste for theological discussions, which led him into the field of religious literature. He has left a large number of published discourses.

The first church bell in the village was placed in the "turret" of the meeting-house in 1725, the cost being defrayed by subscription. It weighed 326 pounds. The bell-rope came down from the "turret" above to the middle of the broad aisle, where the bell-ringer stood. This bell continued in use almost to the close of the century.

The year 1727 was marked by the occurrence of a very violent earthquake, which shook the town of Danvers to its centre, and of which the Rev. Mr. Clark makes the following record:

"On ye 29th Day of last October, Being Lord's Day, at night, between 10 & 11 o'clock, y^re^ happened a very Great Earthquake, accompanied with a terrible Noise and Shaking w^c^ was greatly surprising to ye whole Land. ye Rumbling Noise in ye bowels of ye Earth with some lesser trepidation of ye Earth, has ben Repeated at Certain Intervals for Divers weeks after." A great fear appears to have fallen upon all the people, and a special day of prayer was held. The circumstance became the occasion of a revival, and many were added to the church.

The people at "Wills Hill" withdrew, after some little opposition, from the Danvers brethren, and organized the first church in Middleton, Oct. 22, 1729. "Wills Hill" and its vicinity had been incorporated as the town of Middleton the year previous, 1728. Mr. Andrew Peters, the first pastor of Middleton church, was ordained Nov. 26, 1729. An addition was made to the ministry house in 1734.

Mr. Clark was very much enfeebled by age in his latter years; his death occurred in his seventy-sixth year. His wife had died three years before, and his remains were interred by her side, in the Wadsworth Cemetery.

The parish was without a pastor for four years after the death of Mr. Clark. A call was extended to Mr. Amos Sawyer, of Reading, which Mr. Sawyer declined. A second invitation was extended to him, couched in somewhat different terms, which he accepted, and a a call was issued for a church meeting to be held early in September, 1769, to arrange for his settlement. There was a minority in the church opposed to his coming, and the people were not entirely harmonious in acting in the matter. In the midst of their consultations and disputes in regard to the settlement, Mr. Sawyer suddenly died.

The population had more than doubled at Mr. Wadsworth's settlement, and there were one hundred and fifty families in the parish.

Mr. Wadsworth was born in Milton, July 18, 1750. He graduated with distinction at Harvard, in the class of 1769; he taught school for a year, then studied theology at Cambridge, and was licensed with Mr. Williams, of Weymouth, to preach, in 1772, and ordained in Danvers in the same year, while he was yet in the twenty-third year of his age. He married Mary Holson, of Rowley, and took for his second wife Mary Carnes, of Lynn, who survived him. He received the degree of Doctor of Divinity, from Harvard University, in 1816.

In 1786, a new meeting-house, the third occupied by the parish, was erected, pursuant to a resolve of the year before. It was used during the subsequent winter, but was not finished until the spring of 1788. This house was sixty feet long, by forty-six feet wide, with posts twenty-seven feet high. It had a well-proportioned steeple at the northern end, which was fourteen feet square at the base. At the opposite end was a porch, twelve feet square. This house was painted; its cost was £1,606. The interior was supplied with pews, built under the direction of the parish, and sold at auction. Prior to this, it had been the custom for persons who desired, to construct their own pews. There were sixty-three of these pews on the ground floor, and twenty-five in the gallery. The old bell of the former meeting-house was hung in the steeple of the new building, but was exchanged in 1802 for a bell weighing 674 pounds, and costing $299.50, for the bell alone. This meeting-house was destroyed by fire, on the morning of the 24th of September, 1805. It was discovered to be on fire before daybreak, and soon burned to the ground. The fire was believed to have been set by one Holten Goodale. He was arrested and tried before the next term of the Superior Court at Salem. He was adjudged *non compos mentis*, and was committed as an insane person.

Eight silver cups, of the value of twenty-five dollars each, belonging to the communion service, were lost by this fire. One of these was presented by Judge Lindal, for whom Lindal Hill is named, and the others by different members of the church. A small amount of silver, though, Dr. Wadsworth says, not sufficient for one cup, was found in the ruins; a circumstance which renders it probable that the church was robbed by some unknown persons, before it was fired. Judge Timothy Lindal, who gave the cup before mentioned, lived at the foot of the present Lindal Hill, at about the middle of the last century, in the house now occupied by Richard Flint. He frequently had represented Salem in the General Court, was Speaker of the House several times, and was also a Justice of General Sessions and of Common Pleas. He died, Oct. 25, 1760.

A brick edifice, with "tower and dome," succeeded the structure which was burned. It occupied the same site, but was made to face in a different direction from its predecessor, fronting, as the present building now does, upon "the great road leading from Andover to Salem." The corner-stone was laid, May 16, 1806, and the building was occupied, November 23d, of the same year. It cost nearly $12,000, including the expense of a new bell to replace the one which had been melted. This new bell weighed 1,116 pounds, and cost $444.75. No attempt was made to heat the house, and it was not until 1821, that stoves were introduced, they being furnished by subscription. There were seventy-six pews in this house, on the floor, and thirty in the gallery. The dimensions of the building were sixty-six feet by fifty-six. Height to the eaves, twenty-eight feet. The tower, as stated by Dr. Wadsworth, was "sixteen feet, four inches square at the base, having two wings, crowned with a cupola, and terminated with a vane ninety-six feet from the foundation."

In the winter of 1805–6, the inhabitants of the New Mills, or Dan-

versport, incorporated themselves with the First Parish. Under the old regime, they had formed a part of the South Parish, or "Middle Precinct"; and as long as the parish taxes had been levied on the inhabitants of the New Mills, as members of the South Parish, they had found it difficult to transfer themselves, although some of them had worshipped in the house which was burned. At this time, however, the South Parish raised its funds by taxes on its pews, and not on the inhabitants: and the people of the New Mills availed themselves of the opportunity offered, to withdraw their connection. They were transferred, by Act of the General Court, March 8, 1806, "for so long a time as the Act empowering the South Parish to tax its pews, keeps in force." The first temperance movement in Danvers, originated during the latter years of Dr. Wadsworth's ministry. Intemperance had become a serious evil; and in 1812, the first society in this State was formed, to take steps to check this curse. Dr. Wadsworth, and Judge Holten, of Danvers, were both members; and, through their efforts, an auxiliary society was formed, in Danvers, in 1813. Dr. Wadsworth delivered an address before this society in 1815.

In 1818, a Sabbath school was organized, in connection with the First Parish Church. Dea. Samuel Preston was its first superintendent. Dr. Wadsworth closed his long ministry on the 18th of January, 1826, the day of his death. He was seventy-five years and six months old, and had been pastor of the church for fifty-three years and twenty-six days, outranking his predecessor in this respect. The Rev. Samuel Dana, of Marblehead, preached the funeral sermon on this occasion, and the remains were interred in the Wadsworth burying-ground. Dr. Wadsworth was a man of fine personal appearance, and of great bodily vigor.

Milton Palmer Braman, son of the Rev. Isaac Braman, of New Rowley, now Georgetown, succeeded Dr. Wadsworth in the ministry of the First Parish. He was born, Aug. 6, 1799; graduated at Harvard, in the class of 1819, and at Andover Theological School, in the class of 1824. He was ordained, April 12, 1826, and, November 15th of that year, married Mary, daughter of John Parker, of East Bradford, now Groveland.

The "Halfway Covenant," before alluded to, was abolished under Dr. Braman's ministry, as also the old method of raising money, by levying money upon all the inhabitants of a parish. From early times, each parish had had its special territory, and all persons living within that territory, had been obliged to contribute to the general parish expenses, and for the maintenance of preaching. This arrangement had caused no trouble in the days of its origin, for the people were all of one faith; but, with later years, other settlers came, who desired to contribute to other sects than the dominant one, or to none at all, and the parish tax soon became a grievance. Abatements were made gradually, but they became more frequent and more generous in their provisions, and near the close of the last century, there was no serious legal obstacle in the way, to prevent a person from paying his assessment where he chose. The parish rate, or tax, however, continued until 1828, when the last one was laid. In 1838, an Act of incorporation was obtained, and that which had been known as the North Parish, the old First Territorial Parish, became the "First Religious Society in Danvers."

In 1831, the society entered into negotiations for a parsonage, and began to take steps to secure the dwelling and estate formerly owned by Dea. Nathaniel Ingersoll, situated north-west from the meeting-house. The property had passed through many hands, until, in 1802, it came into the possession of Ebenezer Goodale, known in later years as Gen. Goodale.

He mortgaged the property to Elizabeth Williams, of Salem; and as he could not fulfil the conditions of the deed, she foreclosed and took possession. This was the opportunity that had been waited for, and the place was deeded at once, May 26, 1832, to Moses Putnam, Samuel Preston, Gilbert Tapley, and their associates, for a parsonage. From Mr. Tapley comes the modern name of Tapleyville, applied to that section of the town in the vicinity of the present carpet factory.

The old house of Dea. Ingersoll was standing in 1733. The present mansion was probably built twenty years later on the same site. This second house underwent extensive alterations and repairs, upon its coming into the hands of the parish. An addition was made along the whole length in the rear, by which the width of the main building was increased. The repairs and improvements having been completed, the house was first occupied by Dr. Braman, Jan. 8, 1833, and has since furnished a home for the parish minister.

Jesse Putnam, Samuel Preston, William Preston, Nathaniel Pope, Peter Cross, Daniel F. Putnam, and John Preston were chosen as a building committee for a new edifice. A year later, Nathan Tapley was chosen to fill the vacancy caused by the death of Daniel F. Putnam. Levi Preston was the master carpenter. The work was done by the day. The new building was eighty-four feet in length by sixty in breadth, and its cost was about twelve thousand dollars. The pulpit, as originally built, was high, and enclosed in front. It was lowered and remodelled in 1864. The new house was built with a basement story, in which was finished a large room for a Sabbath school and other public uses. This was named Village Hall. The designation, though still in use, is growing somewhat less familiar than in former days. The house was dedicated November 21, 1839, Dr. Braman preaching the sermon from Titus i. 3.

In 1840, Dr. Braman asked for a dissolution of the pastoral relation on the ground of ill health, but he was persuaded to take a leave of absence in Europe. He returned, with restored strength, at the opening of the period of the great discussion upon American slavery. He declared that he regarded slavery as an "atrocious system,—an abominable system of oppression and mischief,"—"one of the heaviest curses that ever afflicted man or provoked Heaven," to quote his own language. He did not approve, however, of the particular measures that some advocated for its removal. His course in declining to give certain political notices from the pulpit at this time caused the passage of the following endorsement by the society in 1841: —

"Resolved, that our ordained minister does, and of right ought to stand before his people in the discharge of the duties of his office in a free and independent pulpit; that we approve the stand he has taken in the communication read to us yesterday, so far as relates to the giving of notices, and that we adopt the same as the rule by which we wish him to be governed while God shall spare him to labor amongst us" The resolution was adopted, by a vote of forty-three to five.

On the 25th of March, 1844, the inhabitants of the "Plain," having long desired a church of their own, organized the "Third Orthodox Congregational Society in Danvers." The meeting for organization was held in the school-house at the "Plain," and Benjamin Turner, Samuel Brown, and Nathaniel Silvester were chosen as the standing committee. Moses J. Currier was chosen treasurer and collector. A meeting-house was erected during the same year on the site now occupied. The first meeting was held in the basement, then called Granite Hall, Nov. 4, 1844, and the house itself was dedicated Jan. 22, 1845. A permanent church organization, with forty-two members, had been formed Dec. 5, 1844. The Rev. Richard Tolman, the first pastor of the church, was ordained Sept. 17, 1845. He resigned Nov. 8, 1848. The Rev. James Fletcher succeeded June 20, 1849. The church suffered seriously in the great fire of 1845, and on the 10th of July, 1850, was burned by the act of an incendiary. A young man, who was convicted of the crime, was sentenced to the State Prison for life; but nine years subsequently, on the petition of members of the society, he was pardoned.*

Measures were taken immediately to rebuild, and on the 17th of September, 1851, the present edifice was dedicated. In 1854, a clock was placed in the tower. In 1857, the term "third" having

* The authority for this sketch of the First Parish is taken from the Rev. Charles B. Rice's "History of the First Parish in Danvers."

lost its appropriateness by the division of the town, the present title of the "Maple Street" Church and Society was adopted. Mr. Fletcher resigned May 21, 1864, and the Rev. William Carruthers was installed as pastor April 18, 1866. A revival was in progress at his settlement, as a result of which eighty persons became members of the church. Mr. Carruthers resigned March 28, 1868. The Rev. James Brand was ordained as his successor on the 6th of October, 1869. The Rev. W. E. C. Wright succeeded Mr. Brand in 1874.

In 1860, Dr. Braman prepared again to resign his pastoral relations with his people of the First Parish, but it was not until the last Sabbath of March, 1861, that he closed his ministry. He retired with the strongest expressions of affection and esteem from his parishioners, mingled with regret at his going. Strong efforts had been made to dissuade him from his purpose, but without success. He was minister of the parish but a little less than thirty-five years.

The present pastor, the Rev. Charles B. Rice, preached here, for the first time, on the 24th of May, 1863. He was called, with unanimity, by church and parish, during the next month, and was installed on Wednesday, the 2d of September, 1863. He is a native of Conway, Mass., and had been pastor of the church in Saco, Me., for two years ending with December, 1861.

In 1864, a large part of the parsonage land was sold. Included in it was the original gift, by Joseph Holten, for the use of the ministry. No part of this original "ministry land" is now owned by the parish, it is believed, saving only a narrow lane just beyond the house of Mr. John Roberts, running into the north-east from the main road toward the site of the first parish, or ministry house, and, perhaps, also a small strip at the north-eastern corner of the present parsonage land. The portion thus sold lay mostly to the north-west of the land now belonging to the parsonage, though a part of it was to the east, extending in that direction to Forest Street.

On the 8th of October, 1872, the two hundredth anniversary of the establishment of the First Parish, at Salem Village, was appropriately observed by the society.

The Baptist Church at Danversport is the second, in point of age, in the town. The society was formed Nov. 12, 1781. The Rev. Benjamin Foster was invited to preach for the society, which he did for about two years. A meeting-house was built in 1783, and while Mr. Foster was still in the place. After his removal there was no resident minister for nine years, though there was preaching for most of the time, The church was organized, with thirty-six members, July 16, 1793, and the Rev. Thomas Green became, at the same time, pastor. Mr. Green resigned his pastorate, Nov. 26, 1796, and the church was without a settled pastor till 1802.

In May, 1802, the Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin, afterward president of Waterville College, in Maine, became pastor. His ministry lasted sixteen years. Dr. Chaplin resigned in 1818, and was succeeded by the Rev. James A. Boswell, who remained only till April 25, 1820. The Rev. Arthur Drinkwater was installed, Dec. 7, 1821, and remained until June 26, 1829. In 1828 a new meeting-house was erected and the old building was sold. It was subsequently removed to the Plain, where it is now used as a currying-shop, by Mr. John A. Learoyd.

The Rev. James Barnaby succeeded to the pastorate in July, 1830, remaining until May, 1832. The Rev. John Holyrod followed him, and continued until his death, Nov. 8, 1837. The church prospered under his charge. The next incumbent was the Rev. E. W. Dickinson, who held the pastorate from May, 1838, to Oct. 26, 1839. The Rev. John A. Avery succeeded, from February, 1841, to April, 1843. Several members of the church and society withdrew at this time, to form, at the Plain, "what was styled a Free Evangelical Society." The Rev. J. W. Eaton followed in the pastorate, from July, 1843, to August, 1849. The meeting-house of 1828 was burned, Sept. 6, 1847, the people losing heavily thereby. The present house was built in 1848. The Rev. A. W. Chaffin was ordained April 24, 1850. He remained the pastor until he resigned, April 26, 1862.

The pastoral succession was continued as follows: The Rev. Foster Henry, from Dec. 5, 1862, to May 1, 1865; the Rev. Charles H. Holbrook, from Nov. 14, 1865, to Sept. 2, 1870; the Rev. J. A. Goodhue, from Nov. 22, 1870, to May 1, 1872. The Rev. G. W. Mc Cullough was ordained June 20, 1873.

The Universalist Society was organized in 1829, although there had been a partial organization from 1815, with only an occasional service. Meetings were held, for two or three years after the organization, in the old Baptist meeting-house, after its sale and before its removal. A meeting-house was begun in 1832, and made ready for occupancy by June, 1833. The present church, with "Gothic Hall" in the basement, was built in 1859. The pastors have been: the Rev. F. A. Hodsdon, 1831–32; the Rev. D. D. Smith, 1833; the Rev. W. H. Knapp, 1834–35; the Rev. Samuel Brembleeom, 1836–39; the Rev. Asher Davis, 1840–41; the Rev. D. P. Livermore, 1842; the Rev. S. C. Buckley, 1843–45; the Rev. J. W. Hanson, 1846–48; the Rev. J. P. Putnam, from 1849 to Nov. 30, 1864, the date of his death; the Rev. H. C. Delong, 1865–68; the Rev. G. J. Sanger, 1869–75; the Rev. H. P. Forbes, in 1875.

The first Catholic service was held in Danvers Nov. 1, 1854, at the house of Mr. Edward McKeigne. The officiating clergyman was the Rev. Thomas H. Shahan, then pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception in Salem. Regular services began soon to be held in Franklin Hall, and subsequently in a chapel which stood on the south side of High Street, near the old cemetery. In 1859, the house, first built by the Universalist Society, was purchased, and after an occupancy of several years, this building having been greatly enlarged and remodelled, was dedicated anew by the Right Rev. Bishop J. J. Williams, of Boston, April 30, 1871. Prior to 1864, pastoral duties were performed by clergymen from Salem. Oct. 13, 1864, the Rev. Charles Rainoni was settled in charge of this parish, and also of the Catholic parish in Marblehead, having his residence in Danvers. In 1872 he removed to Marblehead, the parishes being separated, and his place was taken by the Rev. Mr. O'Reilly; to whom succeeded, in April, 1873, the present pastor, the Rev. Joseph Haley.

The church is known as the Church of the Annunciation. The Catholic parish of Danvers includes the towns of Middleton and Topsfield, and it embraces a population estimated at more than 1,500.

Episcopal services were first held in Danvers, in the hall in the bank building, June 28, 1857; the Rev. George Leeds, then of Salem, officiating. The church was organized under the title of Calvary Church, April 14, 1858, the Rev. R. T. Chase being ordained as rector. The church building was consecrated by Bishop Manton Eastburn, of Boston, May 25, 1859, and the parish was incorporated in October of the following year. Nearly the whole cost of this building was borne by Joseph Adams and E. D. Kimball, and to their liberality the parish owes its possession free of debt. Mr. Chase held the pastorate about four years, the Rev. S. J. Evans about three years, and the Rev. W. I. Magill entered upon his duties in June, 1872.

The Unitarian Society began its worship in the town hall on the first Sunday in August, 1865, the Rev. A. P. Putnam conducting the services. The preaching was supplied by various ministers until the coming of the Rev. Leonard J. Livermore, April 1, 1867. A chapel was subsequently built on High Street and dedicated in 1871. The cost of the building was $13,000, including its site. Mr. Livermore was formally settled as pastor in 1872. The number of families connected with this society is about fifty.

The Methodist Society began to hold its meetings in the summer of 1871 in Lincoln Hall, which had formerly been the school-house in Tapleyville. Its meeting-house was commenced the next year, and was dedicated in the spring of 1873. The entire cost of the building was about $15,000.

The Swedenborgians have held occasional meetings for several years. They began to be held with somewhat of regularity in

December, 1869, at the house of Mrs. Mary Page; and in 1872 regular service was established at Bowditch Hall. There is no formal organization, but the services are conducted by the pastor of the New Jerusalem church in Salem.

The literary societies of Danvers form another of the distinctive features of this charming old New England town.

One of the earliest institutions of which there is mention, was the "Danvers Social Library," established about the year 1794. It was owned in shares, and the books were loaned to shareholders.

A library association, known as the Holten Circulating Library, was formed about the year 1836, and existed for five years.

The North Danvers Lyceum, a literary and library association, existed for some years prior to 1840.

Of the later associations, the Bowditch Club was formed in the fall of 1857 in the school-house at Putnamville. The first formal meeting was held Dec. 1, 1857. The membership of the club included both sexes, and its meetings were both entertaining and instructive. For many years, prior to the incorporation of the Peabody Institute, this club constituted itself the town's lyceum, and conducted some fine courses of lectures, for which the best talent in the country was engaged.

A debating society, which had existed for several years at the Centre, under the name of the Holten Lyceum, was merged, in the fall of 1875, with a new organization under the title of the Wadsworth Association. The objects of the latter were similar to those of the Bowditch. The Danvers Shakespeare Club was organized in the winter of 1873–4. The Danvers Choral Society, a musical organization, was formed in December, 1873.

CHAPTER IV.

BUSINESS AND MANUFACTURING INTERESTS — THE GROWTH OF THE TOWN — REPRESENTATIVE MEN — DANVERS TO-DAY.

Of the older mechanical industries of the town, the manufacture of iron at the Port, perhaps, takes precedence, from the fact that we are told, upon excellent authority, that even as far back as the days of the ancient "Orchard Farm," and the residence of the colonial governor at the New Mills, that Endicott himself speaks of his iron-works (*vide* Upham); and from that time to the present, with varying fortunes, the manufacture of rolled iron has been prosecuted upon nearly the same spot.

Prior to the Revolution, the records tell us that the business of ship-building was a thriving industry at the New Mills, as has been previously mentioned in this sketch. Without doubt, that was its halcyon period, for since that time it has steadily declined.

Tanning, and the manufacture of leather, stands next in point of age, although to-day this business is of minor importance. The withdrawal of the South Parish took with it nearly all the leading firms engaged in this pursuit, and there are but very few remaining within the present limits of the town. Edward Southwick has the honor of being the first tanner of whom there is mention, and the founder of the business in Danvers. He carried on the manufacture of leather at the outset, after a very primitive fashion, — his first vats consisting of half hogsheads sunk in the ground. He died in 1771.

Danvers is one of the centres of the shoe trade in the county, and it has within its limits, very near to the old historic grounds of the First Parish, one of the most complete and admirably appointed shoe manufactories in this country, with a capacity for fifteen hundred pairs daily of women's and misses' pegged or sewed shoes, the average value of which is about two thousand dollars. The business has been, for a long period, the prominent industry of the town. Caleb Oakes and Moses Putnam were prominent among the early manufacturers. The shoes produced were chiefly of a coarse grade, intended for the Southern slaves. They were sent South in coasting vessels; but during the war of 1812, this mode of conveyance being dangerous and impracticable, the Danvers "Farmers" established means of communication by horse teams over the road. From about this period, the number of manufacturers in the town has averaged twenty or more; and the average yearly value of the boots and shoes produced, from one-half a million to a million dollars. The early wholesale trade was confined at first to men's sewed slippers, which were packed in barrels, and sent on private venture by the captains of coasting vessels to Baltimore. As the trade increased, the class of work changed to that of pegged shoes.

In 1833, Dea. Samuel Preston, of the First Parish, invented the first pegging machine, for which he received a patent, dated March 8th, of that year, and signed by President Andrew Jackson. Mr. Preston still has the shoe from which he obtained this patent. This machine was arranged to put two rows of pegs upon each side of the shoe at the same time. Although not generally adopted, its principle is involved in all the machines of the present day. From the report of the Bureau of Statistics of Labor for 1875, there were in that year in Danvers twenty-five firms engaged in shoe manufacturing, producing goods of an annual average value of $1,331,548, upon a capital invested of $404,041.

In November, 1844, Gilbert Tapley and his brother Perley Tapley, established the present carpet manufacturing business at Tapleyville, near the ancient site of "Hadlock's Bridge." The goods produced were principally woollen ingrain carpetings. The first factory was built in 1844, and burned in June, 1845. It was rebuilt in the same year, and is still in active operation.

Hanson's History of Danvers twice states the population in 1752, the date of its incorporation as a district, at 500, or about that number. The Village Parish alone had that number seventy years before. There were more than three times as many. At the rate of increase from 1765 to 1776, the number for 1752 would be 1,968. It was probably less. There were 326 resident tax-payers. The ratio of five would give 1,630, which, as the list was made out, is not too high. The population in 1875 was 6,024. The present valuation of the town (1878) is $3,496,390, of which $2,363,100 is in real estate, and $1,057,200 in personal estate.

Danvers may well be proud of her sons, and of her representative men, first and foremost of whom, the name of Samuel Holton shines with an undying lustre upon the page of her history. Samuel Holton was born June 9, 1738. He was a son of Samuel and Hannah Holton, and a great-grandson of Joseph Holton. The house in which he was born, built by his grandfather Henry, and called the Holton Hotel, was situated at the south-west of the meeting-house, upon an old road, or at least a path, near the line of what is now Prince Street, leading from Centre Street to the Newburyport Railroad, and not far from the present site of Artemas Wilson's house. It was his parents' purpose that he should go to college; and he spent four years in preparatory study, in the family of Peter Clark. At the age of twelve his health failed him, and the plan was given up. His hearing was permanently impaired, and he was never afterward strong. Recovering, in a measure, after a lapse of time, he went to study medicine with Dr. Jonathan Prince, a physician of note, who lived upon the southern slope of Hathorne Hill, near Newbury Street, at a spot now marked by a cluster of pines. Dr. Prince's house has been moved away from its original site, and is the one now occupied by John Hooksen. Young Holton made such rapid progress in the study of his chosen profession, that when he was eighteen years of age, Dr. Prince told him that he was qualified to set up for himself. He practised for a short time in Gloucester, and then returned to his native town, where he continued in the practice of his profession — though frequently interrupted after the first few years — until about the opening of the Revolutionary War, when he left it altogether. Dr. Holton

was chosen representative to the General Court in the thirtieth year of his age. He was among the first to enter into the preparations for resistance to the encroachments of the British power, which he did with characteristic zeal and energy. He was a member of the Provincial Convention of 1768, called by a Boston town-meeting without the requisite authority of the royal government. He was also a member of the Provincial (State) "Congress" of 1775, and was an active member of the "Committee of Safety." He was commissioned a major in the 1st Essex regiment, though not a military man. He was a member of the executive council under the provisional government. The duties of these positions interfered materially with his practice as a physician, and soon absorbed all his time. Dr. Wadsworth, his pastor, says of him, that "in 1777, Judge Holton was one of the delegates from Massachusetts, who assisted in framing the Confederation of the United States at Yorktown. The ensuing year, he was for the first time, chosen a delegate in the American Congress, and annexed his ratifying signature to that constitution of government. . . . And so high did he stand in the esteem of that august body, that they elected him President of Congress, and thus promoted him to the first seat of honor in his country." He was five years in Congress under the Confederation, and two years under the Federal Constitution. But for his failing health, he would have continued longer at the seat of the general government. He had been five years in the State Senate, and twelve years in the Governor's Council. Dr. Wadsworth states that he had been appointed in 1776, one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas for his native county, performing the duties of that position nearly thirty-two years, and presiding about half that time. He was also "Justice of the Court of General Sessions of the Peace" thirty-five years, and Chief Justice of the same fifteen.

From 1796 to 1815, Dr. Holton occupied the position of Judge of Probate for Essex County. He also filled at divers times the positions of selectman, town clerk, and assessor; for twenty-four years that of town treasurer; and for nearly half a century was treasurer of the First Parish.

It was also customary to appoint him as arbitrator in case of difficulty, and a general pacificator of the village disputes.

Judge Holton was a man of pure and upright character, with principles of justice and honesty firmly fixed. He was a thorough Christian from boyhood, carrying the fruits of his religion into his daily walks with men. At the age of seventeen, he joined a religious society of young people, and was a zealous working member. He professed his faith, and became a member of the church, Feb. 4, 1759, before attaining his majority. "Whether at home or abroad, he was a constant attendant upon public worship and ordinances, notwithstanding the disadvantage under which he labored of hearing but a part of the services." He passed on from the world at peace, declaring of the great Christian atonement, "It is the foundation of all my hopes."

His homestead and his residence for the major portion of his life, was at the branching of the roads, about a fourth of a mile south of the meeting-house. This house, which had previously belonged to the Holton family, was reconstructed and built anew, either by the Judge or by his father, who removed to it in 1750. The house is still standing, and is owned by Thomas Palmer. This spot is frequently called the "Adams Corner," the residence of Israel Adams, whose wife was a grand-daughter of Judge Holton, having been here for many years.

In addition to his other associations, Judge Holton was also one of the charter members and founders of the Massachusetts Medical Society.

The Holton High School, established by the town in 1850, was named in his honor, and in itself a befitting memorial of this eminent man.

Another foremost man of his time, was Judge Samuel Putnam. He was born in Danvers, on the 13th of April, 1768. His parents were persons of superior intelligence. His father was Dea. Gideon Putnam, and his ancestry ran back into our greatest American antiquity. He was a distant relation of Gen. Israel Putnam. He was early sent to school in Beverly, whither his family removed for a time. At the age of ten, he was a student in Andover academy. He saw the departure of Arnold's ill-fated expedition as it passed on from Danvers. He had early developed a taste for music, and he played the fife for the troops as they marched past his father's gate. Young Putnam entered Harvard University, and graduated in the class of 1787. Among his classmates was John Quincy Adams. It was early purposed that he should be a teacher, but Putnam aspired to the study of the law. He attempted to become one of the distinguished Judge Parsons' pupils, but his class being full, the latter directed Putnam to Martin Bradley, a sound and learned lawyer. Having finished his studies, he established himself in the practice of his profession at Salem, where he speedily attained high renown, and a widespread reputation. No advocate of his time was better versed in the principles of common law than he. The great Samuel Dexter, in an important case, sent his client to Mr. Putnam as the man to consult in that early school of the law in Massachusetts. The afterwards eminent jurist and distinguished scholar, Judge Story, was Putnam's pupil. On the death of Chief Justice Sewall, in 1814, Putnam was made an associate justice on the Supreme Judicial Bench of Massachusetts, by his friend, Gov. Strong, for whom he always had the deepest reverence. He filled this position for twenty-eight years, obtaining the respect of all good men, for the manner in which he performed the solemn and responsible duties of his office. No man ever held the scales of justice more evenly, or was more fearless and independent in his decisions. He was remarkable, too, for the rare urbanity which stamped his whole deportment. He represented the town in both branches of the Legislature, in that stormy period of public affairs, before and after the war of 1812. In 1825, Judge Putnam received the degree of Doctor of Laws, from his alma mater, Harvard University; and, in 1842, he retired from the Supreme bench. He passed away, on the 3d of July, 1853, in the eighty-sixth year of his age. His wife, to whom he had been wedded for fifty-six years, survived him.

Here, too, in Danvers, was born the graceful writer and authoress, Harriet W. Preston, the daughter of Deacon Samuel Preston, of the First Parish Church, whose "Aspendale," "Love in the Nineteenth Century," and her beautiful English translation of the Provençal poem, "Mirèio," together with many other translations of French and German writers, have obtained for her a justly deserved celebrity in the world of letters.

Gen. Israel Putnam, the "Old Put" of Bunker Hill, was another distinguished scion of the ancient Putnam family, and was born in Danvers, Jan. 7, 1718. He passed his boyhood in the old town, remaining until he attained his majority, when he removed to Pomfret, Conn. The place of his birth is still to be seen in Danvers.

One of the most beautiful drives in this vicinity, is that to the summit of Hathorne Hill, now crowned by the new and palatial State institution for the insane, and from the summit of which can be obtained one of the grandest and most comprehensive views in this portion of the county. The asylum, which is here located, was completed and opened in the spring of 1878.

There are two main centre buildings, with four wings radiating from them. The administration building is 90 by 60 feet, with a tower 130 feet in height. In contains the offices for the superintendent and assistant superintendent, reception rooms, and general offices, together with the officers' residences. Connected with it, in the rear, is a building 180 by 60 feet, in which are the spacious kitchens, laundries, chapel, and dormitories for the attendants. On each side of the rear building are the four wings, which are used, respectively, for the male and female patients, connected with each other by small square towers, except the last ones on each side, which are

joined by octagonal towers. These towers are ten feet square, and serve to separate the buildings, as well as to give communication throughout. The whole number of patients which the asylum is designed to accommodate, is five hundred, with possible accommodations for one hundred more in the attic. Directly in the rear of the building, is the boiler or engine house, seventy feet square, with a chimney 120 feet high. It contains boilers of 450 horse power, which furnish steam for heating the asylum, and also for running the powerful fans for forcing fresh air through ducts in each ward. The buildings are supplied with water from Middleton Pond, the commissioners uniting with the town in obtaining the present excellent system of water-works. Prior to the introduction of the latter, the town had no regular supply of water from street mains. There was a Salem and South Danvers Aqueduct Company, which supplied the inhabitants of the South Parish, but made no attempt to supply those of the North, whose only source was their own individual wells.

The present works include a reservoir, on Hathorne Hill, of a minimum capacity of five million gallons, and located about 230 feet above tide-water; also, a Worthington duplex pumping-engine, which supplies the reservoir, and is capable of pumping two million gallons in twenty-four hours, and twenty-five miles of street mains. The actual net cost of the works to the town, is $177,515.97. The first movement on the part of the town, to secure an adequate supply of pure water, was made in the winter of 1869–70. On the 23d of June, 1876, an agreement was signed with the commissioners, under which the present works were constructed.

The hospital was constructed, at a cost of over $1,500,000, and the expense has been made the basis of many heated reform arguments, in recent political campaigns. At the estimated capacity for five hundred patients, the average cost per capita, is $3,000. However, the asylum is a model structure, and one of the finest of its kind in the country.

Another interesting ride is that from Danvers, round through "Royall Side," to Beverly, by "Folly Hill," or, as it is commonly known throughout the county, "Browne's Folly." This is a lofty eminence, on the borders of the present line between Danvers and Beverly. It received its name from the fact, that the Hon. William Browne, a wealthy gentleman of the period, erected a splendid mansion on the summit of this hill, about the year 1750, which he called "Browne's Hall," but which the country people, unable to comprehend such an extravagant waste of money, as they deemed it, to erect so costly an edifice on so bleak a spot, dubbed it "Browne's Folly," a name which has ever since clung to the locality.

This mansion was built in the form of the letter H, a favorite method of building at that day, there being two parallel wings, as it were, front and rear, connected by a spacious hall in the centre. This house had a frontage of seventy feet. The hall was painted in imitation mosaic, and springing from the wall was a commodious circular gallery. Near the house, was a dwelling exclusively for the servants, all of whom were negroes. The mansion was finished and furnished in the most costly manner, in accord with the wealth of its owner. Magnificent entertainments were held here, and, at a dinner-party on one occasion, an ox was roasted whole. Browne was born in 1709, and died in 1763. At his death, Capt. Richard Derby became the owner of the estate. It subsequently passed into the hands of William Burley, who sold it, in different portions, to a number of purchasers, and the mansion was broken up and removed by piece-meal; a portion of it being removed to the square, in Danvers, where it was used as a tavern for a number of years. The traces of the cellars of this house are still to be seen on the summit of the hill.

Danvers possesses a lively, enterprising weekly paper, known as the "Danvers Mirror," published by C. H. Shepard & Co., and established in 1870, which has a good circulation. Previous to the establishment of this paper, there had been other short-lived sheets published, from time to time. Among these were the "Firefly," established March 9, 1844; the "Danvers Eagle," published by Samuel T. Damon, established Aug. 28, 1844, and suspended publication, Apr. 16, 1845; the "Danvers Whig," a campaign sheet, established in 1844, and the "Danvers Courier," published by George R. Carleton, established March 15, 1845. All of these papers ceased to exist many years ago. The Danvers "Advance," was started in 1875, but was given up in the same year. The "Danvers Monitor," which was circulated for a time, was an offshoot of the "Peabody Press." The "Essex County Citizen," a labor-reform organ, was started in the winter of 1877–78, but, after an existence of a few months, it was merged in the "Peabody Press." There are, in addition to the other societies mentioned, a number of secret organizations, including Amity Lodge of Masons, instituted in 1860, a lodge of Odd Fellows, Knights of Pythias, several temperance organizations, and Ward Post 90, of the Grand Army of the Republic.

No town has so much of romance interwoven in its history, unless it be its parent, the city of Salem. Here are the old houses, which have stood for more than two centuries, and the old sites, which so vividly recall the scenes of other days. At the very entrance to the town, at the Port, is the "Old Orchard Farm," where once the stern and lordly Endicott resided, and there still, is the renowned old Endicott pear-tree, from whose fruit the colonial governor partook, and which, year by year, has furnished its pears to generation after generation, for more than two hundred and fifty years. Here is the spot where Endicott established his iron and copper works; and near by, must have been those mines of copper, and of iron ore, of which he has told us, but of whose existence there is now no trace. Here he held his stately receptions, and conducted, in a measure, the affairs of the Colony. Farther on in the town, is the birth-place of "Old Put," and the Putnam homestead; and at the Centre, is the birth-place of the famous Salem witchcraft delusion, the site of the old parsonage of 1681, in which the Rev. Mr. Parris, and his children, concocted the foul tragedy of 1692. Farther down on the Peabody road, near West Danvers Junction, is the cellar of old Giles Corey's little farm-house, the man who was barbarously pressed to death, because he refused to swear to a lie. Here in Danvers lived George Burroughs, Giles Corey and his wife, John Proctor and his wife, Rebecca Nurse, George Jacobs, Sarah Goode, and John Willard, all of whom were executed in that terrible reign of terror. Here is the historic Collins House, where Gov. Gage held court. Almost every foot of ground is linked with the history of the early colonial days. It furnishes a rich spot for the antiquarian, and the lover of historic lore. This sketch is but a brief summary of the past history of the old town, a history which would of itself fill volumes.

E S S E X .

The town of Essex, long known as Chebacco, or the Second Parish of Ipswich, was detached from the latter and incorporated Feb. 18, 1819. It is situated in the easterly part of the county, and is bounded on the north by Ipswich, on the east by Gloucester, on the south by Manchester, and on the west by Hamilton, from which it is for some distance separated by Chebacco Pond. Its mean length is four and a half miles; its mean breadth, three and one-fourth miles. The Congregationalist church is north latitude 42° 38′ 00.50″, and in west longitude 70° 47′ 10.38″. The southerly section of the town is hilly; and there is a fine eminence, called Perkins Hill, in the westerly part, from the summit of which a fine view of the surrounding country and of the ocean is afforded. White's Hill, so named from the first settler, and Burnham's Hill, farther towards the north, are noted elevations, adding much to the beauty of the local scenery. The view from White's Hill embraces the town of Ipswich on the north, Plum Island, the ocean on the east, the forests of Manchester on the south, and the hills of Hampton on the west; together with the windings of the Chebacco River and the farms of the first settlers of the town. Extensive salt marshes, in the north-easterly section of the town, furnish an abundant supply of hay. Chebacco Pond, a fine sheet of water, with an area of about 260 acres, abounds in pickerel, perch, and bream; and is a favorite resort for parties of pleasure. The name of this pond signifies "The Place of Spirits;" it contains Loon and Gregory Islands, and the view of these, with the wooded headlands, and the deep blue waters, as taken from the Chebacco House, or the Centennial Grove, is remarkably fine.

From this pond issues Chebacco or Essex River, a small, but deep and valuable stream, which, pursuing a north-easterly course, divides the town into nearly equal sections, becomes navigable a little below "The Falls" above the village, spreads out into several creeks, passes by Cross Island, and then empties into the sea between Castle Neck in Ipswich, and Two-Penny Loaf in Gloucester. Castle Neck River, which unites with it from the north, is connected by a canal with Ipswich River. Hog Island is a rounded knoll, containing several fine farms, and noted as the residence of the Choate family. The underlying rock of Essex is sienite, of which there are many ledges, overstrown with bowlders of every size and shape. One of these bowlders, near the line of Manchester, has a perpendicular face of about thirty feet, with a thrifty pine-tree growing on its summit; another, in the centre of the village, called "Martin's Rock," consists of huge rectangular blocks piled up fantastically, and surmounted by a flag-staff.

The soil is gravelly, or clayey loam, and well adapted to the growth of the cereals, vegetables, and fruit trees. The number of inhabitants in 1875 was 1,713, the oldest of whom had attained the age of ninety-five years. The whole number of farms was 114; of dwelling-houses, 343; and the town valuation was $862,325. The town has six public schools, and three religious societies, — Congregationalist, Methodist, and Universalist, — each of which has a house of worship.

The central village, pleasantly built on both sides of the Chebacco River, presents a very neat and attractive appearance, and the people are industrious, hospitable, and patriotic. They are mostly engaged in farming, gardening, fishing, and ship-building. Digging clams, for bait, also furnishes employment to many people. Boots and shoes, and cotton lines, are to some extent manufactured; and the capital invested in ship-building in 1875 was $50,500. The value of strawberries annually sold is over $3,000. Apples are abundant; and Chebacco Pond furnishes the best of ice for transportation. The town has greatly improved since the opening of the Essex Branch Railroad to Wenham, in 1872. The buildings are mostly of wood, well painted, and surrounded with well-cultivated gardens, flowers, shrubbery, and ornamental trees. By the ebb and flow of the tide, the scenery below the village is constantly changing, the river at low-water appearing like a silver thread, and at high-water as a broad arm of the sea. The ship-building is carried on near the bridge, in the centre of the village. The largest vessel ever built here was of 767 tons. It was launched in 1873.

This town, as a part of Ipswich, began to be settled as early as 1634, at which period lands "toward Chebacco River were granted to Mr. William White and Goodman Bradstreet." These, it is presumable, were soon followed by John Perkins, John Cogswell, Robert Andrews, George Giddings, John Burnham, William Goodhue, Andrew Story, Thomas Low, and John Choate, all men of good standing, and names ever since prevalent in the town. The place was then a wilderness, infested with wild beasts and savages. The original settlers built their houses of logs, kept them in a state of defence, and the women and children were not allowed to leave them unattended, after night-fall. They attended church at Ipswich, of which the Rev. Nathaniel Ward was the beloved pastor.

Four years subsequent to the first settlement, three Chebacco men, Andrew Story, Robert Cross, and John Burnham, were drafted and served in what was called the "Pequot War;" and Mr. Burnham, in 1639, received a grant of eight acres of land for his service in that hard campaign. It does not appear that the people were ever molested by the Indians in this place, or that the friendly relations between "the pale and the red faces" of old Chebacco were ever in the least disturbed. On the 28th of June, 1638, Masconomo, the sagamore of Agawam, sold to John Winthrop, for £20, his lands at Ipswich, then embracing what is now Essex; and in the deed it is added, "as well as such land as I formerly reserved for *my own use* at Chebacco," which would lead us to infer that this was the favorite residence of the famous chieftain. The facilities for fishing in the ponds and river, the beauty of the locality, together with the numerous Indian implements and skeletons discovered in this vicinity, would seem to corroborate this opinion.

Land, though very good, was also very cheap; and for it a fair compensation was made to the original owners. Hence the peace between the parties.

As Ipswich had early established a grammar school, which must be supported, all "the neck beyond Chebacco River and the rest of the ground up to Gloucester line" was, Jan. 11, 1651, granted to this institution. It was leased to John Cogswell, Jr., for the sum of £14 per annum. In 1656 the first saw-mill was erected at the Falls on Chebacco River, and after this, framed instead of log houses began to be constructed.

The first ship-yard here was set off in 1668, when the town granted "One acre of ground, near Mr. Cogswell's farm, to the inhabitants of Ipswich for a yard to build vessels, for the use of the inhabitants, and to employ workmen for that end." This land was near the present bridge across Chebacco River. It is probable that the business of ship-building, for which Chebacco has since been so famous,* had

* Cooper, in his "Pilot," makes Capt. Barnstable, commander of the "Ariel," come from "Old Chebacco"; and Dr. Elisha K. Kane made a polar voyage in a vessel built on Essex River.

already been commenced, and that this grant was for the purpose of affording greater facilities for its prosecution.

It is said that the first Chebacco boat was built by one of the Burnham family in the attic of his house, and that, in order to launch it, the window had to be cut away.

On the 29th of Nov., 1669, the little colony was called to mourn the death of one of its earliest settlers, John Cogswell, Sr., who was aged about 72 years. His grandson, John Cogswell. Jr., was taken captive by the Indians at the eastward during Philip's war.

As the settlement had now much increased in respect to numbers, and also, by reason of timber-cutting, boat-building, and heavy crops of hay from the rich meadows, had become prosperous, it began to agitate the subject of a distinct parochial organization. Some of the people were obliged to travel five or six miles to attend public service at Ipswich, and to fail in doing it was, with our ancestors, no light offence. Accordingly, in February, 1677, they petitioned the town of Ipswich for "liberty to call a minister to preach among themselves"; but the town chose not to vote concerning the matter at all. They then presented their petition to the General Court, which refused to grant it at the time; but referred them to the town again. As the town would not decide the question they took it upon themselves, Jan. 19, 1679, to call Mr. Jeremiah Shepard (Harvard College, 1669), son of the Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, to be their pastor. He preached for awhile in a private house; but finding, soon, the place too limited, "they agreed to build a plain house, and, if they could obtain leave of the town, or Court, to put it to the use of a meeting-house; if not, to some other use." But the church at Ipswich was dissatisfied, and Mr. Shepard soon left the place. Another petition to the town and to the Court met with a reception no more favorable to the petitioners.

Pending the decision of the Court, however, they prepared the timber for the meeting-house, which was to be erected on the ground of Mr. William Cogswell, near the river.

"While we were in this great conflict," says the record, "that all things seemed to act against us, some women, without the knowledge of their husbands, and with the advice of some men, went to other towns & got help & raised the house that we intended for a meeting-house, if we could get liberty." *Dux fœmina facti.* All honor to the noble mothers of Chebacco for their intrepidity!

Then came posting down the constable with his warrant for the offenders:—

"To attach the body of Abraham Martin and John Chub and bring them before me on Tuesday next about one of the clock to answer for their contempt of authority in helping to raise a meeting-house at Chebacco. You are also at the same time, to bring with you the wife of William Goodhue, the wife of Thomas Varney & the wife of Abraham Martin for procuring, or abetting & encouraging the raising the said house: and so make return hereof under your hand."

What a sensation in the settlement that day!

They were arrested, tried and convicted; but those were days of witchcraft and intolerance.

The case then came before the General Court, which ordered, May, 1679, that they should appear before the Salem court and make a general acknowledgment for their offence, and be dismissed. A committee appointed by the General Court also reported that "the place where the house now standeth, be, and is, hereby allowed by us, and they have liberty to proceed to the finishing of said meeting-house."*

This first house of worship stood on what is now, or lately was, Capt. Joseph Choate's house-lot. It had a bell and a sounding-board over the cushioned pulpit, and the seats were built one or two at a time, as the people could afford the expense of doing it.

The Rev. John Wise, born in Roxbury, 1648, entered Harvard College in 1673, was ordained pastor of the church on the day of its organization, Aug. 12, 1683, having ten acres of land granted him for a "settlement," and a yearly salary of £60, one-third to be paid in cash, and two-thirds in grain. He was also to have forty cords of oak wood and eight loads of salt hay brought annually to his door. The parish were also to build and keep in repair for him a parsonage. This was on the road to Ipswich.

An acre of land was granted for a burial-place Feb. 15, 1680; it is near the present Congregational church, and has served as a receptacle of the dead for many generations. The oldest legible inscription in it is: "Here Lyes ye Body of John Burnham who departed this Life Janʸ. 11. 1708–9 in the 59th year of his age." Another near it is: "Here Lyes ye Body of Mr Thomas Low, Deacon who died April ye 12th 1712 aged 80 years.

As you are so were we,
As we are, you shall be."

In 1683, the village had the pleasure of witnessing, for the first time on the Common, the parade of its military company, of which John Andrews was the captain, and William Goodhue the ensign.

To the exactions of Sir Edmund Andros in 1687, Mr. Wise and others of this place made a manly resistance, and for it, he, together with John Andrews, William Goodhue, John Appleton, Thomas French, and Robert Kinsman were arrested and committed to jail in Boston. The losses sustained by these brave men were subsequently met by the town of Ipswich.

A school for the instruction of the children of Chebacco was opened by Nathaniel Rust, Jr., as early as June, 1695, and for the benefit of the school, six acres of pasture-land was granted by the town.

On the 5th of November of the preceding year, the parish was called to mourn the decease of Dea. John Burnham, the ancestor of numerous families of that name in Essex, and in other places.

At the commencement of the eighteenth century, Chebacco had a population of about three hundred, and they were mostly engaged in farming, fishing, and boat-building.

The first school-house here was erected in 1702, on "the common," and continued in use until 1757; Samuel Phillips (Harvard College, 1708), was the teacher in 1709, and William Giddings in 1713. In 1710, William Cogswell, of Chebacco, was killed at the eastward by the Indians; and on the 12th of April, 1712, Dea. Thomas Low, a prominent citizen, died at the age of eighty years. Dea. William Goodhue, also, died about the same time. He had represented the town in the General Court, and was highly respected.

In 1717, appears the first trace of slavery in this place. By a bill of sale, dated July 30th of this year, we learn that Jonathan Burnham, of Chebacco, bought for £64, in bills of credit, a negro boy of Joshua Norwood, of Gloucester, he having bought the same of Thomas Choate, of Hog Island.

In the year following the parish erected its second meeting-house on "the common," near the pound. It was fifty-two feet long, and forty-two feet wide, having galleries on three sides, and a turret for the new bell, rising from the centre. An hour-glass stood on the pulpit, and the psalms were "deaconed off" from Tate and Brady's celebrated version, and sung by the congregation.

"I received," says the Rev. Thomas Symmes, 1720, "a letter from Mr. Wise of Ipswich, wherein he gave it as his judgment that when there were a sufficient number in a congregation to carry away a tune roundly, it was then proper to introduce that tune."

Mr. Wise died April 8, 1725, greatly mourned by all who knew him. The number of his flock, at the time of his decease, was ninety-one. He was a good scholar, and spoke with unusual grace and power. His person was commanding, and in all the relations of life he evinced remarkable wisdom, firmness, and integrity. He was a stanch defender of civil and religious liberty, maintaining that every church is in itself independent in all matters pertaining to its own government. He was among the first to denounce the obnoxious doctrine of

* History of Essex, p. 82.

taxation without representation, and he was also an earnest advocate of the manumission of slaves.

He served as chaplain in the expedition against the French in 1690, manifesting therein "heroic spirit and martial skill." His publications exhibit something of the wit and the ability of those of the Rev. Mr. Ward, of Ipswich. His funeral sermon was preached by the Rev John White, of Gloucester. A slab, with the following inscription, marks the spot of his interment: "Underneath lies the body of the Rev John Wise A. M., first pastor of the 2nd church in Ipswich. Graduated at Harvard College 1673. Ordained Pastor of said church 1681, and died April 8, 1725 aged 73. For talents, piety & learning, he shone as a star of the first magnitude."

The Rev. Theophilus Pickering, Harvard College, 1719, was ordained as the successor of Mr. Wise, on the 13th of October, 1727, and continued in the pastorate until his decease. Mr. Leonard Cotton was the schoolmaster in 1733, and on the 9th of July of this year, Dea. John Choate, born in 1660, died at the age of seventy-three years. In October of this year, Jonathan Cogswell was commissioned as justice of the peace, an office of much consequence at that period. In 1735, the potato is said to have been first introduced into the parish by Mr. Cavies. It was cut into slices and boiled as a rare vegetable with soup. The Scotch-Irish are said to have brought it with them to this country as early as 1719.

Capt. Thomas Choate, the first resident of Hog Island, and a prominent citizen, died March 3, 1745, much lamented by the people. Joseph Eveleth died December 1st, at the remarkable age of 105 years.

The preaching of George Whitefield, in Ipswich, in September, 1740, which Mr. Pickering opposed, was the cause of some disagreement of opinion among the members of his church, and in consequence, a separate church, called "the Fourth Church in Ipswich," with the Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland as its pastor, was organized May 22, 1746, at the house of Mr. Francis Choate, one of the seceders. Eleazer Craft and Daniel Giddings, were appointed deacons. On the 25th of February of the ensuing year, the Rev. John Cleaveland, was ordained pastor of the separate church, and on the 7th of October, of the same year, the Rev. Mr. Pickering died at the age of forty-seven years.

During his ministry, about two hundred persons were added to the church. He was a learned, faithful, and industrious minister; but of a temperament too cold to accept of the new measures of Mr. Whitefield. He was buried in the old graveyard, and on his tombstone is inscribed: —

"Here lies buried the body of ye Rev^{d} M^{r} Theophilus Pickering, who departed this life Sep^{t} y^{e} 19th, 1747, aged 47 years." Of the animosities between the two parishes, we need not speak; but all is well that ends well, and such in this case was the final issue.

The Second Parish elected as successor to Mr. Pickering, the Rev. Nehemiah Porter (Harvard College, 1745), who was ordained as pastor over it, Jan. 3, 1750. He was dismissed in June, 1766, and died in Ashfield, Feb. 29, 1820, at the remarkable age of ninety-nine years and eleven months.

In 1752, the "separate church" erected a house of worship, it having previously held services in a barn, or private house. In 1758, the Rev. Mr. Cleaveland served as a chaplain in the army, and kept an interesting journal of his adventures in the war. A remarkable revival occurred in his church in 1763; and under him, in 1774, the Second and Fourth parishes were reunited, they voting (April 8th) "to bury forever as a church all former differences between them & the other church and to acknowledge the other a sister church in charity & fellowship."

The officers of the church after the reunion were: the Rev. John Cleaveland, pastor; Francis Choate, and Eleazer Craft, elders; and Thomas Burnham, Stephen Choate, Solomon Giddings, and Seth Story, deacons. A party of seventy-seven ladies visited Mr. Cleaveland's house, June 27, 1769, and spent the day in spinning flax for his family. A surprise party of the olden style.

Dr. Ebenezer Davis, the first local physician, came to reside in Chebacco in 1770; two years later a strange fever appeared in the place, which carried off about fifty persons.

During the contest with Great Britain, the people of Chebacco heartily espoused the cause of liberty, and made great sacrifices to sustain the Revolutionary army. Their pastor, by his voice, his pen, and person, led the way.

At a town-meeting held soon after the destruction of tea in Boston harbor, it was amongst other things voted, "That every person who shall import tea while the act of duty on it continues shall be held as an enemy," and "that no tea be sold in town while this act is in force."

On the 20th of September, 1774, a military company, consisting of sixty-eight men, was organized: Jonathan Cogswell, Jr., was chosen Captain; David Low, Lieutenant, and Francis Perkins, Ensign.

In January, 1775, Michael Farley was chosen to represent the inhabitants of the town in the Provincial Congress; and on the seventeenth day of June following, six men from Chebacco were engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill. Their names are: James Andrews, Benjamin and Francis Burnham, Nehemiah Choate, Aaron Perkins, and Jesse Story, Jr.; the latter of whom was killed in the action.

Mr. Cleaveland was appointed and served as chaplain in Col. Moses Little's regiment. It was said of him, that "he preached all the men of his parish into the army, and then went himself."

On the 15th of February, Jonathan Cogswell was appointed colonel of the third regiment of Essex County, and Mr. Cleaveland served with him as chaplain. This regiment, which embraced the Chebacco company, under Capt. Perkins, did good service at the battle of White Plains, Oct. 28th, and at other places. The parish had twenty-eight men in the northern army, under Gen. Horatio Gates, in 1777; but there was danger close at home. A British frigate this year appeared in the bay below the village, and a boat from it attempted to effect a landing on Hog Island, then guarded by twelve resolute men. Of the inhabitants of that island, all fled for safety, except the wife of William Choate, and grandmother of the Hon. Rufus Choate, who declared that she would, with her two children, remain at home; she did so, and was not molested.

It appears from the church records, that the following soldiers from Chebacco died, in 1788; viz., Israel Andrews, Nathaniel Emerson, Abraham and Isaac Jones, and Abijah Story (negro), in the army; Jonathan Andrews, and Stephen Rent, at Albany; James Rust, a prisoner, aged twenty, at Halifax; and Nehemiah Choate, of the small-pox, at Bilboa.

The whole number of soldiers from Chebacco, serving in the Revolutionary war, so far as can be ascertained, is 105; and of these 22 bore the name of Burnham.

The remarkable "Dark Day," Friday, May 19, 1780, is thus described by a person then at Hog Island: —

"Soon after nine, a dark, heavy cloud was seen rising from the north-west, which gradually spread itself till it covered the whole heavens, except a narrow space near the horizon. About ten, this was also covered, and the darkness increased so that we had to light a candle. All the folks out of doors left their work, and came in. Fear and anxiety were manifest on every countenance. It was quite dark when we set our dinner table. Early in the afternoon, the darkness began to abate, and before sundown, it was light, but cloudy, with a yellow, brassy appearance." The cause of this strange phenomenon has never been satisfactorily given. The most probable theory, however, is that the darkness was occasioned by the smoke of forests burning far away, towards the north-west.

A weekly singing-school, through the winter, was commenced as early as 1764; but congregational singing, the deacons "lining" the hymn, was continued until 1768, after which, the singers sat together as a choir. Abraham and Joseph Perkins, and John Choate, were the first choristers. In 1785, the Psalms and Hymns of Dr. Watts took the place of the "Bay Psalm Book."

In 1787, the population of Chebacco, was 1,200. For the suppression of the insurrection, this year, seven men were sent from this place; viz., Daniel Burnham, Samuel Eveleth, Abraham and Joseph Knowlton, Lieut. Aaron, and Edward Perkins. They enlisted in Capt. John Baker's company, and assisted in capturing the insurgents under Daniel Shays, in the town of Petersham.

On the 8th of October, 1793, a new meeting-house, on "Meeting-house Hill," was dedicated, the pastor preaching an impressive sermon to a large audience; and on the 22d of April, 1799, the Rev. John Cleaveland's long and useful labors were closed by death. He was an ardent patriot, and successful minister. Though not an elegant, he was a vigorous writer, earnest in the defence of the old doctrines, and the new measures. His house stood on Spring Street, on the spot of the house of the late Hon. David Choate. His writings are mostly controversial. "Scrupulous," says Dr. Elijah Parish, who preached his funeral sermon, "in his ideas of right and wrong, ardent in his feelings, daring in his temper, he followed the convictions of his own mind, little regarding what might be the impression upon others."

His friend, Dea. Thomas Burnham died on the 18th of May, following, aged 72. He was a school-teacher, and one of the last who lined out the psalms in church.

During a terrible snow-storm, March 13, 1795, Parker Story, in his 35th year, Aaron Story, in his 28th year, Thomas Holmes, aged 29 years, and Moses Pearce, aged about 16 years — were drowned in the Chebacco River. The loss of these young men caused a deep sensation in the settlement.

The Rev. Josiah Webster (Dartmouth College, 1798), was ordained as Mr. Cleaveland's successor on the 13th of November, 1799.

At the beginning of the century Chebacco had a population of about 1,100, and three school districts. In 1802, a social library was established, and in 1804 as many as forty fishing-boats were owned in the place. In the following year, December 19, Dr. Parker Rust, the beloved physician of the parish, died, and was succeeded by Dr. Reuben D. Muzzey, who subsequently held a professorship at Dartmouth College, and died at Roxbury, June 21, 1866, aged 86 years.

At his own request, the Rev. Mr. Webster was dismissed from the pastorate, July 23, 1806, and was soon afterwards installed over the church at Hampton, N. H., where, after a faithful ministry, he died on the 27th of March, 1837.

On the 5th of April, 1808, "The Christian Society," so called, was established here by Elder Elias Smith, Elder Abner Jones and Brother John Rand. A house of worship was erected by it, sometime during the following year.

Elias Smith has the honor of starting the first religious newspaper ever published. It was called "The Herald of the Gospel of Liberty," and was commenced Sept. 1, 1808. It ceased to be published in September, 1817. Mr. Rand officiated as pastor of the Christian society about seven years. The church is now occupied by the Methodist society, of which the Rev. Frank T. Pomeroy is the pastor.

The successor of Mr. Webster as pastor of the Second Parish was the Rev. Thomas Holt; born in Meriden, Conn., in November, 1762; (Yale College, 1784); was installed here, January 25, 1809, and honorably dismissed, April 20, 1813. His death occurred in Hardwick, Feb. 21, 1836. He was followed in the ministry by the Rev. Robert Crowell, who was ordained on the 10th of August, 1814, and continued faithfully discharging the duties of his pastorate more than forty years.

During the war of 1812–15, as many as nineteen soldiers from Chebacco were engaged in service.

In 1818, the number of voters in the parish exceeded 200; and as the inconvenience of attending town-meetings at Ipswich was considerable, a petition, signed by 206 persons, was presented to the General Court for an Act of Incorporation as a separate town, under the name of Essex. This, though opposed by the town of Ipswich, was granted, and the Act of Incorporation signed by the governor, Feb. 5, 1819.

The first town-meeting was held on the 1st of March following, when Joseph Story was chosen town clerk; George Choate, Esq., Capt. Jonathan Story, 4th, Elias and William Andrews, and William Cogswell, Jr., were chosen selectmen, assessors, and overseers of the poor; the selectmen and the Rev. Robert Crowell were chosen as the school committee, and Nathan Choate was chosen town treasurer.

The sum of $400 was subsequently appropriated for the support of schools, and that of $460 for highways and bridges. George Choate was chosen this year the first representative of the new town of Essex in General Court.

In 1825, a town farm, costing $4,600 was bought for the accomodation of the poor, and the town voted (April 5) this year "that the selectmen allow no bills for liquor on the highwway." It also directed the constables to exert themselves to prevent, by prosecution or otherwise, the desecration of the Sabbath.

The anniversary of the Declaration of Independence was observed July 4, 1826, the oration being delivered by Rufus Choate, Esq , in the meeting-house. The Essex Light Infantry, under Capt. Joshua Low, paraded on the occasion. During this year twenty-three vessels were launched, the register being 2,963 tons. The town had, in 1828, as many as forty vessels on the stocks.

The year 1829 was noted for the formation of "The Essex Temperance Society, on the principle of total abstinence," and a general reformation in respect to the use of intoxicants. Capt. Winthrop Low was the first president of the society, and the first to sign the pledge were Samuel and Francis Burnham, David and John Choate, the Rev. Mr. Crowell, Jonathan Eveleth, Capt. Winthrop Low, and John Perkins.

The population in 1830 was 1,333, of whom three were over ninety years of age. The number of dwelling-houses was 157, and the town valuation $322,298.

A Universalist society, consisting of forty-six members, was organized this year, and preachers of that denomination were employed.

In 1836, the town voted $800 for the support of schools. They were then in a flourishing condition, Mr. David Choate being one of the most popular teachers.

On the 14th of December of this year the Universalist church, which, with the land, cost $4,500, was dedicated, the Rev. Thomas Whittemore preaching the sermon. The pastors of this society have been the Revs. A. C. L. Arnold, John Prince, — 1840–44, and 1852–56, — H. H. Baker, Willard Spalding, C. H. Dutton, Emmons Partridge, S. Goff, J. H. Fuller, F. F. Lovell, C. S. Clark, and Elmer F. Pember, who was pastor here from June, 1874, to December, 1877, and is now at Little Falls, N. Y. The church received, in 1844, a legacy valued at $3,000, from Mrs. Betsey Story.

In 1840, the population of the town was 1,432, and the valuation $439,906. The number of polls was 465. There were eight colored people in town.

In 1842, the Congregational church was remodelled and much improved, the pastor (November 3d) preaching the dedicatory sermon.

In 1843, the Rev. John Prince established here a paper called the "Essex Cabinet," but which was not of long continuance.

A destructive hail-storm passed over the town July 22, 1845, breaking about 3,000 panes of glass. Some of the hail-stones are said to have measured as much as seven inches in circumference.

The population had increased in 1850 to 1,585, of whom thirteen were colored.

In the year following, the "Essex Lyceum" was established, of which Aaron L. Burnham was elected president. Four years later it became "The Chebacco Library Association," of which John Prince was the first president.

"The Spring Street Cemetery," consisting of about two acres, was

consecrated Oct. 27, 1852, the address being given by the Rev. Dr. Crowell.

On the 10th of November, 1855, the town was called to deplore the death of the Rev. Robert Crowell, D. D., who had been its faithful and beloved minister for the long period of forty-one years. He was the son of Samuel and Lydia (Woodbury) Crowell, and was born in Salem Dec. 9, 1787; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1811, and studied theology with the Rev. Dr. Samuel Worcester. The degree of D. D. was conferred on him by his Alma Mater in 1850. He was a conscientious, faithful and energetic pastor, and zealous in every good word and work. His funeral sermon was preached by the Rev. Dr. Daniel Fitz, of Ipswich. He published in 1853 "The History of Essex (then Chebacco, a part of Ipswich) from 1634 to 1700," which has been enlarged and continued by his son, Prof. E. P. Crowell, of Amherst College.

On the 9th of July, 1856, the Rev. James M. Bacon was installed pastor of the Congregational church, in which office he continued until his dismission, June 30, 1870. He was installed pastor at Ashby November 2d of the same year, where he died, much regretted, March 5, 1873. He was born in Newton, Jan. 3, 1818, and completed his theological studies under the Rev. Jacob Ide, D. D., of Medway.

The summer of 1856 was noted for terrific thunder-storms, during which the lightning struck in more than twenty places within the limits of the town. By it, Mrs. Almira, wife of D. W. Bartlett, Esq. (June 30), and Mr. William Burnham (July 4), were killed.

The population, in 1860, was 1,701, of whom twenty-four were colored. The town valuation was $955,106. The fourth ropewalk was this year built for the manufacture of fishing-lines. This business was started here by Capt. Nathaniel and Mr. Jonathan Burnham, prior to 1820, and is still continued.

During the war of the Rebellion Essex furnished its full quota of men for service, and none were more faithful in the discharge of duty, whether on land or sea. In almost every battle she was bravely represented.

A welcome to the soldiers was given by the town, July 4, 1865, when it was said by the orator, "We do not for a moment forget our glorious, but unreturning, TWENTY-FOUR. Peace, peace to their hallowed memories! On the future monument, of which I love to dream, shall all their names be carved. Essex has put 143 of her own citizens into the country's service, besides 39 strangers and 13 substitutes; making the number of 195 in all."

The town voted April 1, 1867, to purchase the manuscript history of the town, begun by the late Rev. Robert Crowell, D. D., and completed by his son, Prof. E. P. Crowell, of Amherst College. It was published in 1868, under the title of "History of the Town of Essex, from 1634 to 1868, by the late Rev. Robert Crowell, D. D., Pastor of the Congregational Church, with Sketches of the Soldiers in the War of the Rebellion, by Hon. David Choate." It is a well-written work of 488 pages, and to it the writer is indebted largely for the materials embodied in this sketch of the town.

The population in 1870 was 1,614; the number of dwelling-houses, 316.

The Rev. Allen D. Morehouse was installed over the Congregational church June 30, 1870, and dismissed Sept. 14, 1874. He was succeeded by the Rev. E. G. Smith, installed July 15, 1875, and dismissed Feb. 8, 1877. The Rev. J. Lambdin Harris, born in Belmont County, Ohio, began to preach here as acting pastor in May, 1877. The "Songs for the Sanctuary" now takes the place of "Watts and Select Hymns" in this church.

The Essex Railroad, five miles in length, and connecting the town with the Eastern Railroad at Wenham, was opened for travel July, 1872, and not only affords accommodation to the people, but also stimulates the industries of the place.

This place has been well represented in our colleges, and has produced many men of eminence. The following is a list of graduates:—

The Rev. John Eveleth (Harvard College, 1689), son of Joseph and Mary Eveleth, and born in Gloucester, Dec. 18, 1669. He supplied the pulpit in Manchester, from the time he began to preach, until 1695; after which he was settled in Stow, and again at Arundel, now Kennebunk, Me. "He was not only their minister and schoolmaster, but a good blacksmith and farmer, and the best fisherman in town." He died Aug. 1, 1734.

John Perkins, M. D. (Harvard College, 1695). He was the son of Abraham Perkins, practised medicine in Ipswich, then in Boston, and died in 1740.

The Rev. Francis Goodhue (Harvard College, 1699), son of Dea. William and Hannah Goodhue He was born in Chebacco, Oct. 4, 1678. After a brief pastorate at Jamaica, L. I., he died at Rehoboth, in 1707, and was buried at Seekonk, Mass.

The Rev. Jeremiah Wise (Harvard College, 1700), eldest son of the Rev. John Wise, was born in Chebacco, 1680, and settled Nov. 26, 1707, over the church in South Berwick, where he continued as pastor until his death, which took place Jan. 21, 1756. Some of his sermons were published. He was an esteemed and faithful minister.

The Rev. Benjamin Choate (Harvard College, 1703), son of John Choate, an early settler, was born in Chebacco, 1680, fitted for college at the Ipswich Grammar School, and, after graduation, was for some time chaplain of the garrison at Deerfield. He subsequently removed to Kingston, N. H., where he was engaged in preaching and teaching until his death, Nov. 26, 1753.

Henry Wise, merchant (Harvard College, 1717), son of the Rev. John Wise. He was for eight years preceptor of the Ipswich Grammar School, and died about 1732.

Francis Cogswell (Harvard College, 1718), son of Jonathan Cogswell, became a merchant, and represented in 1750–52 the town of Ipswich in the General Court. He died March 9, 1756, at the age of fifty-eight years.

Joseph Wise, M. D. (Harvard College, 1728), son of the Rev. John Wise.

Joseph Perkins (Harvard College, 1794), son of Joseph Perkins, was born in Chebacco, July 8, 1772, and entered college at the age of eighteen years. In 1801, he was appointed county attorney. He practised law in Salem, where he died, much lamented, Feb. 28, 1803.

George Choate, M. D. (Harvard College, 1818), son of George Choate, Esq., and born Nov. 7, 1796. He practised medicine in Salem, and represented the city in the General Court. His four sons were graduates of Harvard College.

Rufus Choate, LL.D., Dartmouth College, 1819. This eminent lawyer and statesman, son of David and Miriam (Foster) Choate, was born on Hog Island, Oct. 1, 1799, and began the study of Latin with Dr. Thomas Sewell in 1809. He continued his studies with the Rev. Thomas Holt, Mr. William Cogswell, and the Rev. Robert Crowell, D. D.; and spent seven months, previous to entering college, at Hampton Academy, then in charge of James Adams, Esq.

In college he was distinguished as an industrious scholar, and for his love of the Greek and Roman classics. On leaving college he studied law at Cambridge, and also one year in the office of William Wirt. He commenced the practice of law at Danvers in 1824, and the next year was elected to represent that town in the General Court. He was a State senator in 1827, and representative in Congress, 1832–34. In the latter year he removed to Boston, where he soon, by his commanding eloquence, gained distinction as an advocate. In 1841 he succeeded Daniel Webster as United States senator, and, on the death of Mr. Webster, 1852, became the acknowledged leader of the bar of this State. In 1853 he was the State attorney-general and also a member of the constitutional convention. Impaired health caused him to cease from professional labor, in 1858, and to sail for Europe. But, failing rapidly in strength, he died at Halifax, N. S., July 13, 1859. In person, Mr. Choate was tall and commanding; his

voice was rich and musical, and his imagination brilliant. His power over a jury was remarkable, and some of his forensic efforts are reckoned as the most brilliant specimens of American eloquence. His works, with a memoir by Samuel G. Brown, D. D., were published in two volumes in 1862. His son, Rufus, died at Dorchester, Jan. 15, 1866, at the age of 32 years.

John Dennison Russ, M. D. (Yale College, 1823), son of Dr. Parker and Elizabeth (Cogswell) Russ, was born in Chebacco, Sept. 1, 1801. He prepared for college at Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., and after leaving college, visited Europe, and began the practice of medicine in New York city in 1826. A true and active philanthropist, he assisted Greece in its struggles for liberty; used his efforts to stay the ravages of the cholera in New York; took a deep interest in the education of the blind, and labored for the amelioration of prison discipline. He also strongly advocated the emancipation of the slaves. In 1848 he became a member of the Board of Education in the city of New York, and was instrumental in greatly improving the system of instruction in the public schools. In 1853 he was appointed superintendent of the Juvenile Asylum in that city.

Jonathan C. Perkins, LL.D. (Amherst College, 1832), was born Nov. 21, 1809. He studied law at the Cambridge Law School, and also with Rufus Choate, and commenced the practice of law in Salem, where he soon obtained distinction in his profession. He served in both houses of the Legislature, and was appointed one of the judges of the Court of Common Pleas. In 1853 he was a member of the of the State constitutional convention. His legal writings are extensive, accurate, and valuable. He received the degree of LL.D. from his alma mater in 1867. He died in December, 1877.

The Rev. Thomas Sewall, D. D. (Middletown University, 1837), son of Thomas Sewall, was born in Chebacco, April 28, 1818, and, after his graduation, became a Methodist minister, passing most of his professional life in Maryland and Virginia. He was, in 1868, the esteemed pastor of a church in Brooklyn, N. Y.

George F. Choate (Bowdoin College, 1843), studied law and became a judge of the Probate Court in Salem.

Prof. Edward P. Crowell, Amherst College, 1853.

The Rev. Edward Norton, Dartmouth College, 1861.

The Rev. David O. Mears (Amherst College, 1865), now pastor of the Piedmont Church in Worcester.

Coeleb Burnham, M. D., Dartmouth College, 1865.

The Rev. Michael Burnham (Amherst College, 1867), now pastor of the Central Church, Fall River.

The Rev. Washington Choate, Amherst College, 1870.

Prof. Leverett Mears, Ph.D., Amherst College, 1874.

George F. Mears, Amherst College, 1875.

Gilbert O. Burnham, Brown University, 1875.

Other Professional Men.—Hon. John Choate, 1761, judge of Court of Common Pleas; Parker Cleaveland, M. D., 1770; Nehemiah Cleaveland, M. D., 1783; the Rev. John Cleaveland, Jr., 1785; Parker Russ, M. D., 1788; Asa Story, M. D., 1817, Dartmouth Medical School; Eliphalet K. Webster, M. D., 1837, Dartmouth Medical School; the Rev. Edwin Burnham, the Rev. George W. Burnham, the Rev. Hezekiah Burnham; Jacob Story, Esq., 1846, Cambridge Law School; Obed B. Low, Esq., 1847; David Choate, Jr., M. D., 1854, Mass. Med. College; J. Howard Burnham, 1861, teacher; Edward Smith Eveleth, M. D., 1866, Columbia College (Medical Dep't); Philemon Eveleth, M. D.

David Choate, Esq,, son of David Choate, and brother of the Hon. Rufus Choate, was born on Hog Island, Nov. 29, 1796, and died Dec. 16, 1872. He was a man of sterling good sense, and to his unwearied exertions the town is largely indebted for its intellectual advancement. He was long engaged as a teacher, and through his influence several young men were led to seek a liberal education. He held many offices of trust, and was superintendent of the Sabbath school of the Congregational church for the long period of thirty-five years. It was often spoken of as one of the best institutions of the kind in the State. He wrote, in 1860, "An Agricultural and Geological Survey of Essex County," which is a work of great value.

Representatives since 1780.

1781–83, John Choate, Esq.
1785–86–88, John Choate, Esq.
1792–93, Col. Jonathan Cogswell.
1800–13, Col. Jonathan Cogswell, Sr.
1814–17, George Choate, Esq.
1819, George Choate, Esq.
1824, Jacob Story.
1827–30, Jonathan Story, 3d, Esq.
1833–34, Jonathan Story, 3d, Esq.
1835–36, Charles Dexter.
1837, Oliver Low.
1838, George W. Burnham.
1839, Hon. David Choate.
1840, Samuel Hardy.
1841, Grover Dodge.
1842, John Burnham.
1843, the Rev. John Prince.
1844, Moses Burnham, Jr.
1845, Ezra Perkins, Jr., Esq.
1851, Gilman P. Allen.
1852, William Burnham, 2d.
1853, the Rev. John Prince.
1855, the Rev. John Prince.
1856, Samuel Story.
1857, O. H. P. Sargent, Esq.
1858, Charles Howes.
1859, the Rev. John Prince.
1861, Ebenezer Stanwood.
1863, Nehemiah Burnham.
1865, Timothy Andrews, Jr.
1867, Leonard Mc Kenzie.
1868–70, Leonard Mc Kenzie.
1870, William H. Mears.
1872, John C. Choate.
1874, Aaron Low.
1876, Daniel W. Bartlett.

List of Town Clerks.—Joseph Story, 1819–24; Jonathan Story, 3d, Esq., 1824–29; Col. William Andrews, Jr., 1830–36; Hon. David Choate, 1836–39; Jonathan Story, Esq., 1840–42; Aaron L. Burnham, Esq., 1843–55; O. H. P. Sargent, Esq., 1856–61; John C. Choate, 1861–78.

GEORGETOWN.

CHAPTER I.

ITS TOPOGRAPHY — EARLY HISTORY — ITS ORGANIZATION AS A PARISH — EARLY CHARACTERISTICS.

The location of this town is nearly in the geographical centre of the township granted to Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, in 1639, under the name of Rowley, and which was, about that time, taken possession of by himself, and the sixty families of pioneers in this wilderness settlement, where, for five years or more, they had all things in common; fixing their homes in what is now known as Old Rowley, holding title to all the outlying territory, at present constituting Georgetown, Byfield, Boxford, Bradford, and Groveland, which was for some years uninhabited, and unimproved except for pasturage, for the grass the meadows supplied for winter forage, and for the timber in the extensive forests.

At a very early moment after the new settlement had got into fair working order, there began the process of laying out lots of land to such ambitious men, as, by their keenness of vision, had spotted the desirable locations in the surrounding country.

The records do not, certainly, indicate the date of the first movements of this kind, the earliest recorded being the sale of land in 1661, and the laying out of a meadow, in 1662, "south of the dwelling house of Col. John Kimball," which indicates that settlements had taken place some time before that date.

In 1731, the Second Parish was set off, up to which time the parochial concerns of the old First Society had been managed by the town. Since that time, the parish has acted independently of the town, taking the name and style of the First Parish of Rowley. As a matter of course, the Second Parish adopted the same plan, which placed the maintenance and direction of the religious institutions of the separate precincts under the management and control of those respectively interested.

The topography of the town, as it now appears, it is proper to here present; what it was, may be caught from the historical references to the olden time. It is located six miles north of Rowley, and six miles south of Haverhill, its village being built on a level plain, where now centres the Newburyport Railroad, and the Newburyport, Georgetown, and Haverhill railroads. It is bounded, north by West Newbury and Groveland, east by Rowley, and south and west by Boxford and Groveland. Its soil is excellent for agricultural purposes, and well adapted to fruit-growing. It has three prominent elevations, Rowley Hill, latterly called Spofford's Hill, made historic by the story of the animated meal-chest; Long Hill, 233 feet high, and Bald Pate Hill, 392 feet high, which is said to be the highest land in Essex County. It is watered by Parker River, and has several other creeks, affording some water-power. It also contains Pentucket, Rock, and Bald Pate ponds (which last is partly in Boxford), the first named being the largest body of water in the town. The diversified face of the soil gives to the locality a pleasant landscape view. In some portions of it the scenery is delightful. From these heights, an extensive and delightful view of the surrounding country may be obtained for a great distance, embracing the near view of the plains and valleys below, and distant glimpses of many of the principal mountains and hills in Massachusetts, New Hampshire, and Maine. The spires of the churches in Ipswich, Hamilton, Salem, Reading, Andover, Haverhill, West Newbury, Newbury, Groveland, Bradford, and Newburyport, in Massachusetts, and Atkinson, and Plaistow, in New Hampshire, with several others, are embraced in the view. In a clear day, the Isles of Shoals, the rugged, northern shore of Cape Ann, with vessels upon the ocean, are embraced in the panoramic scene, to be enjoyed by whoever ascends this eminence. When the land was a wilderness, these hills were ranged by the wolf, bear, deer, moose, and other animals, occupying that region as their undisturbed home. These animals were all met with by the early settlers, supplying an abundance of game, which the sportsmen of to-day are accustomed to seek in far-distant wilds. The wolf was the most troublesome · eustomer of all, and it was many years before it was entirely exterminated. Forty shillings was a common bounty for the head of a wolf, paid by the constable of the town. They were often caught with four mackerel hooks, fastened together, baited with brown bread dipped in tallow. Minerals have been discovered, which have led to the exhibition of some enterprise in attempting to develop them, but without substantial results. Many years ago, an iron mine was opened, and, within a few years, a gold mine was discovered near Tenney's Mills, and a shaft sunk thirty feet; but the yield was not sufficient to warrant its further exploration, and it has been abandoned. A portion of Byfield Parish belongs to this town, and the remainder is divided between Rowley and Newbury, its corporate capacity being only as a parish for religious purposes.

Until 1838, this portion of Rowley was known as New Rowley, or the Second Parish, at which date it was incorporated in the name of Georgetown, embracing its present territory. In all its political associations and relations to the State, as a township, it was, up to that date, a part and parcel of Rowley, and the history of that town, so far as it relates to men, institutions, incidents, or events of a municipal, political, heroic, or national character, may be properly shared by the people of this enterprising and thrifty town.

Gage, who wrote the history of Rowley about the year 1840, shows the situation of this town as it was at that time, and very fully describes its leading features, during the time it was a precinct of Rowley in the following:

"At what time that part of Rowley, which has lately been called New Rowley or the Second Parish, began to be settled, is not known with certainty; but the records show, that a lot of meadow and upland lying south of the dwelling-house of Col. John Kimball, was laid out to Elder Rainer, before 1652; the meadow is still known by the name of the Elder Rainer meadow. In 1652, several lots of land were laid out to Thomas Mighill, one of which is described as bounding upon the said Rainer's land. A piece of meadow-land, adjoining land now the burial-ground in Georgetown, was bounded westerly by the Pen Brook, so called, which crosses the road next easterly of the Congregational meeting-house. This last-mentioned piece is now owned by descendants of the said Mighill. Also another piece upon Rocky Hills (now so called). Upon these hills, the young cattle were first penned, from which the brook took its name.

"In 1666, or 1667, the tract of land called the three thousand acres, was laid out as village land. The line, which to this time has divided the village lands, as they were called, from lands belonging to the town proper, was drawn very near where the road leading from Haverhill to Salem, through Georgetown, now passes.

"1687–8, Feb. 23, the town caused a small farm to be laid out in the three thousand acres (had in exchange for land at the neck) and the rent of said farm, it was agreed, shall be for the use of the ministry; John Pickard, John Pearson, and Ezekiel Northend, were chosen to lay out said farm; and they, with the selectmen, were instructed to agree with some person to go upon the farm. The committee were instructed to lay out not above three score acres of upland, and thirty acres of meadow, or half the meadow belonging to three thousand acres.

From 1700 to 1730, many families settled here. On the 27th of May, 1730, they petitioned the General Court to be set off as a separate and distinct precinct or parish. Their petition was signed by forty-two persons, whose names were: —

John Adams, William Adams, John Brocklebank, Francis Brocklebank, Jonathan Boynton, Richard Boynton, Jonathan Chaplin, Beney Chase, Richard Dole, William Fisk, Leonard Harriman, Nathaniel Harriman, Samuel Harriman, Jonathan Harriman, John Harriman, Samuel Hazen, John Hazen, Samuel Johnson, Daniel Kilborn, Jeremiah Nelson, Solomon Nelson, Richard Boynton, Jr., Thomas Burpee, Ebenezer Burpee, Nathan Boyntou, Jonathan Bradstreet, Jeremiah Chaplin, Joseph Nelson, Aaron Piugrye, Job Pingrye, Thomas Plumer, Daniel Plumer, Jedediah Pearson, David Pearson, David Perley, William Searle, Samuel Spofford, Jonathan Spofford, Benjamin Stickney, Jonathan Stickney, Abner Tod, Jonathan Wheeler.

They were incorporated October, 1731. The first parish meeting for choice of officers, was held Oct. 5, 1731.

CHAPTER II.

ADVANCE IN AGRICULTURE — ESTABLISHMENT OF SCHOOLS — INDIAN WARS — FRENCH WAR — THE REVOLUTION.

"In April, 1838, the most of this parish, with the largest portion of Rowley, part of Byfield Parish, were incorporated as a separate town by the name of *Georgetown*. This town has a central location in the northerly half of Essex County, rendering it, therefore, a convenient place for holding various public meetings; the Essex agricultural exhibition, when holden in the northern part of the county, has been oftener held here than in any other town.

"There is one large public house, with spacious hall, &c., kept by Col. John B. Savory, and seven trading stores in the place, some of which are doing an extensive business."

This most interesting leaf, from the earliest history of "New Rowley," supplies the basis for the history of the Georgetown of to-day.

The sufferings of this town from Indian invasion were comparatively light, the principal attack upon this part of the town being Oct. 23, 1692, recorded by Gage, as follows: "In that part of Rowley which is now in Byfield parish, in Georgetown, a Mr. Goodrich and wife, and two daughters, were killed by the Indians. He was shot while praying in his family, on Sabbath evening. Another daughter named Deborah, aged seven years, was taken captive, but redeemed the next spring, at the expense of the Province. She died in Beverly, as appears by the records of the first church in that town. The entry is as follows: 'Buryed, March 28, 1774, Deborah Duty, aged 88 years, a widow.' An engraving exists which is an exact representation of the house in which Mr. Goodrich was shot, as it now appears, it having been altered and addition made to the northern and western parts. It fronts toward the south, and the first lower window east of the front door, is that through which the fatal ball passed. Mr. Goodrich, his wife, and two daughters, were buried in one grave, a few rods easterly of the house.

The house, becoming dilapidated, was taken down a few years ago. The farm is owned by Capt. Gorham P. Tenney, and was the late residence of Mr. Dudley Lull, deceased, father of said Tenney's wife." The spot where the Goodrich family is supposed to have been buried is now pointed out, and the path through the woods, skulked through by the Indians with their French rifles, is still shown.

During the long and bloody Indian wars, Rowley, it is believed, furnished her full share of men, though the records are very imperfect as to names and the number of the men in the service, representing all portions of its territory. Joseph Kilborn, Sr., and Jeremiah Nelson, were slain by the Indians in Dunstable, in 1706, and John Pickard died of his wounds in Billerica. Lieut. Thomas Gage was killed at Port Royal, N. S., in 1707, and Samuel Ayers was killed by the Indians at Winter Harbor, at the mouth of Saco River, in Feb., 1710.

In 1744, Rowley was represented at the battle of Louisburg, on Cape Breton, when James Jewitt was killed by a cannon-ball, and Moses Platts died from his wounds. Moses Davis, Jr., John Platts, Humphrey Woodbury, Joseph Saunders, Samuel Smith, and Richard Harris, all died at Cape Breton in 1745–6.

In 1754, a large number were in the service on the eastern frontier, and in 1755, nearly an entire company served at Lake George, under Capt. Thomas Gage, and Lieut. Israel Davis. The town had soldiers at Fort Edwards, and at Fort William Henry, and was represented in the stirring scenes of Ticonderoga, Crown Point, Niagara, and Quebec. In 1759, Rowley, at different enlistments, furnished fifty-two men for the service. The records of the State show that "nearly one-third of the effective men" were in the service in various ways, thus indicating that they were ruled by a spirit of patriotism and self-sacrifice which, instead of dying out, at the end of the war with the French, only slumbered till the hour came for an awakening, when the oppressions of the mother country called the patriots once more to arms.

At the close of the war, a reorganization of the militia of the Province of Massachusetts Bay took place in 1764. Ipswich, Rowley, and Topsfield made one regiment, called the third regiment in Essex County. On 1st of June, the field officers, Colonel Samuel Rogers; Lieutenant Colonel Thomas Dennis; Major John Baker, were commissioned; and on the 7th, the officers of the Rowley company were commissioned as follows: First company — Captain, Thomas Gage; Lieutenant, Joseph Scott; Ensign, John Jewett. Second company — Captain, Daniel Spofford; Lieutenant, Dudley Tyler; Ensign, Eliphalet Spofford. Livebrook company — Captain, Isaac Davis; Lieutenant, David Dresser; Ensign, Abraham How.

The next stirring event was the disturbance with the parent government, originating in a system of taxation unwarrantable, oppressive, and impolitic. In common with the other colonial towns, Rowley, through the whole length and breadth of its territory, was stirred to action, and the true-spirited men in all the parishes began to move in the expression of opinions and policy of action, and at once to take the preliminary steps for organization, with a view to forcible resistance. As is indicated by an early record, New Rowley, though only a precinct, signified its readiness to send "minute-men" in accordance with the recommendation of the Provincial Congress, when their presence and services were called for.

The next step onward was a declaration, numerously signed, called a "Whig Covenant," in which they mutually pledged themselves to union, to economy, to fidelity in the support of the patriots of Boston, and that they would not "hereafter use any foreign tea ourselves, or suffer it to be used in our families," until the repeal of the revenue act should take place.

The patriotic sentiment of the town, though strong, was not entirely harmonious; there were those who favored the Royalists, because they thought the Colonies were too weak to successfully resist the British power. These refused to sign the Whig covenant, the effect of which was, they were at once denominated "Tories" and the enemies of their country. The time for debate had passed, and the number of this class was too small to resist the outburst of public fervor; and within a year from the first opening of the conflict, nearly all of these got out of the *mirage* of their fears, wheeled into the patriotic line, signed and published recantations, and were in full support of the cause of the Colonies.

By the frequent meetings the town had held, and the work of preparation the inhabitants had long been engaged in, they were prepared at any moment for the note of battle. The news of the battle of Lexington reached Rowley the same day, and Capt. Thomas Mighill, with his company of minute-men, left immediately for Boston. They rendezvoused at Cambridge, on the 20th, awaiting orders, returning home in five days. Capt. Edward Payson, with his militia company, reached there the same day, and returned in three days.

On the 22d of May, 1775, the town voted "That if the Honorable Congress shall, for the safety of the Colonies, declare them independent of Great Britain, that we, the inhabitants of the town of Rowley, do solemnly engage, that with our *lives and fortunes* we will support them in the measure."

From this time onward, the town voted men and money to the full extent of all calls upon them, and fully bore their portion of the burdens of the long struggle. According to the most authentic records, Rowley furnished 448 privates during the war, having an average of about fifty men in the service in each of the eight years of the war. There were also fifteen or twenty officers and musicians, as follows: Captains, Thomas Mighill, Benjamin Adams, Edward Payson; lieutenants, Amos Bailey, Daniel Dresser, Mark Creasey, Thomas Green, Thomas Pike, Benjamin Stickney, Moses Scott, John Tenney, Rufus Wheeler; musicians: Nathaniel Burpee and Samuel Todd, drummers, and Thomas Stickney, fifer.

The records of the town from 1798 to 1815 contain copies of correspondence with President John Adams, together with his reply thereto; also the opinion of the people in relation to the questions which led to the war of 1812, and also in relation to the justice and expediency of that war. These sentiments appear to have been given form, chiefly, by Parker Cleaveland, Esq., Paul Jewett, Joseph Chaplin, Capt. Benjamin Adams, Jr., Capt. Francis Perley, Joseph Pike, and Dea. Thomas Merrill, and nearly unanimously adopted. As literary and political documents, they were well framed, and ably presented the views they advocated. Their spirit was that of uncompromising hostility to the war of 1812, which opinions and judgment did not probably find a stronger or more forcible expression through any legislative body or in any conventions of that time.

CHAPTER III.

EARLY RELIGIOUS HISTORY — ITS LATER HISTORY — NEW SECTS — MEMORIAL CHURCH — PEABODY LIBRARY, &C. — NEW THEOLOGICAL OPINIONS — REV. CHARLES BEECHER — DESTRUCTION OF THE "OLD SOUTH" — THE NEW CHURCH.

The early history of Georgetown, long known as New Rowley, or the Second Parish, is so interwoven with that of Rowley that a brief record of those remote days becomes necessary, inasmuch as the action and interest in all the events of that period were shared by all the inhabitants of the town. The religious history, however, is a different interest, dating with the incorporation of the Second Parish in 1731, and organized on the 5th of October of that year.

In the second centennial address delivered by the Rev. James Bradford, at that anniversary, Sept. 5, 1839, is the following record:

"The second church in Rowley, now Georgetown, was organized Oct. 4th, 1732, ninety-three years after the organization of the first church, and about one year after the parish was incorporated, by the signature of eighteen males to a covenant, to which, not long afterwards, numbers, both male and female, were added. Rev. James Chandler was the first pastor of the church. Having received a call, with the proffer of £300 settlement, and £110 salary, according to the value of money, and twenty cords of wood, he was ordained on the 20th of October, 1732. William Fisk and William Searle were the first deacons. Mr. Chandler was a native of Andover, born 1706, and graduated at Harvard, 1728. He married Mary, the daughter of Rev. Moses Hale, of Byfield. They had no children. He was a man of sound doctrine, exemplary life and conversation, dignified deportment, and greatly esteemed, generally, by his own people; highly esteemed abroad, and very successful in his ministry. He died April 19th, 1789, aged eighty-three, and in the fifty-seventh of his ministry, having been in office longer, by seven or eight years, than any other minister of the town. In June, 1729, two years before the church was organized, the frame of a meeting-house was erected by the proprietors, which probably was completed, and became the place of worship not long after. In 1769 a new meeting-house, fifty-five feet by forty, was raised, with a steeple and porch, *all in one day*. This house was dedicated 1770, and the dedication sermon preached by the eminent Rev. George Whitefield, of England, from 1 Kings viii. 2: 'The glory of the Lord hath filled the house of the Lord.'" This sermon was delivered near the close of the ministry of this eminent divine, his death occurring at Newburyport on the 30th of the same month. He preached in Rowley on the 12th and 13th; on the 23d in Portsmouth, N. H.; on the 29th at Exeter; after which he rode to Newburyport and died the next morning.

"After Mr. Chandler's death, this church was destitute of a pastor more than eight years; and during that period *sixty-four preachers* supplied, for a longer or shorter time, three or four of whom received a call to settle. Feb. 14, 1797, the parish concurred with the church in calling the Rev. Isaac Braman, with the proffer of £200 settlement, and £80 salary, and, conditionally, an addition of £10, and ten cords of wood, which has been somewhat increased from time to time. Mr. Braman was born at Norton, 1770, graduated at Harvard, 1794, ordained June 7th, 1797. He married Hannah Palmer, of Norton, in 1797; and they had five children, three sons and two daughters. He married Sarah Balch, of Newburyport, in 1837. At the commencement of Mr. Braman's ministry, there were but twelve resident male members in the church. Instances of special religious interest occurred among his people in the early part of his ministry. Latterly, precious revivals have been experienced, as the fruits of which many have been added to the church. The whole number of additions during his ministry is two hundred and twelve; and the whole number now in the church is one hundred and sixty-three. The 7th of June last completed *forty-two years* since Mr. Braman's ordination; and the 18th of October next will complete *a hundred and seven years* since the commencement of that of his venerable predecessor. A Sabbath school was organized here in 1817, which contains about two hundred and fifty pupils. The annual donations to benevolent objects amount to $450. The first meeting-house bell was had in this parish since Mr. Braman's ministry, and not until the autumn of 1815. The house was enlarged in 1836. The modern mode of singing was introduced into this parish about half a century since."

The ministry of the Rev. Mr. Braman continued till his death, on the 26th of December, 1857, covering a period of sixty-one years, and the two first pastorates extending over one hundred and sixteen years. During the late years of his ministry he was assisted by several colleagues; the first was the Rev. Enoch Pond; the second, the Rev. John M. Prince; and the third, the Rev. Charles Beecher, who was ordained Nov. 19, 1857. The venerable Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, was present at the ordination of Mr. Braman, and now, at the age of ninety-two years, is in good health, and still possessed of considerable physical, and unimpaired mental force.

On the occasion of the centennial anniversary, an invitation extended to the citizens of Georgetown to join in the same, was accepted by them in town-meeting, April 8, 1839, when they appointed the Rev. Isaac Braman, Solomon Nelson, Amos J. Tenney, George Spofford, Jeremiah Jewett, Ira Stickney, David Mighill, Jeremiah Russell, and Benjamin Winter a committee to join with the committee of Rowley in making arrangements for the celebration. At a subsequent meeting of the town they declined to make any appropriation for defraying any portion of the expenses of the occasion; and although the committee had acted up to that time in the preliminary arrangements, they declined now to further co-operate, and withdrew. The committee of Rowley then extended an invitation, accompanied by a cordial request to the committee, on the part of Georgetown, to continue to act with them as in the beginning. In the absence of an appropriation by the town, some of the citizens contributed liberally to the object, and assisted actively in the work of preparation, by means of which the anniversary exercises were generally participated in.

The church established and the covenant adopted by the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, when the town of Rowley was settled, appears to have long supplied the theology and directed the worship for the people without any disposition being shown to organize for the support of different views, though it cannot be doubted that there early existed conflicting opinions upon matters of religious belief in that town, as elsewhere, but the "standing order" was master of the situation till 1754, when there was a withdrawal from the Second Church, and a new order made its appearance. These people called themselves "Separatists," yet did not then profess to be a different denomination from the one they had left; but they soon became known as Baptists, accepting that name, and organizing as such. From that movement originated the First Baptist Church in Rowley. Those who withdrew finally joined with others in the vicinity, purchased the old church, removed it to Four Corners near Jonathan Hale's residence in Bradford, where they worshipped for several successive years, Mr. Eliphaz Chapman, a Congregationalist, of Bethel, Me., being their principal preacher. This organization was joined by other residents of neighboring towns, becoming what was termed a *branch* of the Baptist church at Haverhill; and the meeting-house was again moved to Rowley, where Baptist worship was established, the subsequent history of which properly belongs to the records of that town.

There does not appear in the early records of this town so much evidence of fierce religious conflicts as occurred about that time in many of the neighboring towns, yet it is evident that the intensely puritanic ideas ruled there, and it is probable the prevalence and strength of those opinions, for a century and a half, contributed to rule out the elements of debate and strife.

The first Universalist society in New Rowley, now Georgetown, was organized in 1829, fifty-nine males becoming members by signing their constitution. In 1834, a meeting-house was built, in dimensions forty-five feet by thirty-five feet, at a cost exceeding $2,000, and preaching instituted every other Sabbath at an annual expense of $200. Sometime after that a Sunday school was established, and sustained for several years. The society continued to flourish for a succession of years, but finally became broken and weakened by the "come-outer" movement of the early anti-slavery days, and finally passed out of existence. George Hastings was the most prominent minister connected with the society, who was also a mechanic of considerable note, and finally abandoned the ministry, becoming interested in the manufacture of watches at Waltham.

Within a few years the Catholics have established worship here, which has had considerable growth under the pastoral care of the Rev. Father McClure. Their place of worship is the old chapel of the Old South Church, about ten years ago refitted and adapted to that mode of worship. With the exception of the Catholics, there are only three religious societies in this town, and three houses of worship, the Peabody Memorial Church, the Rev. Mr. Beecher's church, and a Baptist church and society, now without a settled pastor.

About the year 1875, by order of the county commissioners, a street was laid out over a portion of the site occupied by the Old South Church, and that structure, which had stood the storms and tempests of one hundred and five years, with remodelling and improvements,

was torn down, and its remains are not now in any building, a portion of the site being laid out in a common. From its fragments were manufactured canes, rulers, and other mementoes, which have been widely distributed among the sons of this interesting and somewhat "peculiar" town.

The long condition of harmony in the Orthodox Church at length gave indications of being disturbed by a difference of opinion, in reference to certain fundamental theological questions, between a portion of the church and the Rev. Mr. Beecher. The theological eccentricities of Mr. Beecher — the leading one being the doctrine of pre-existence — became so prominent in the minds of those who dissented therefrom, that unity in the support of his ministry could no longer be maintained; and Jan. 17, 1864, eighty-five members, by consent of a council convened for that purpose, withdrew, and organized themselves under the name of the First Orthodox Society, of Georgetown, establishing worship in the chapel occupied by the Ladies' Benevolent Society.

In 1865, a sister of George Peabody, of London, observing the position of this society, conceived the idea of having a church built for their use, and suggested the idea to her brother of building a church there, which should stand as a memorial to their mother. The suggestion met with the prompt and cordial approval of Mr. Peabody, who at once signified his purpose to carry out the plan, and a site for the church was selected in 1866, upon which the structure was erected, and dedicated in 1868, at which time the new organization took the name of the "Memorial Church." It is located on Main Street, and is built of brick. In the rear of the church, and upon the same lot, is located the Library Building and the Peabody Lecture Hall.

The portion of the old society remaining with Mr. Beecher rallied to his most cordial support, and was re-enforced by additions from the less conservative portion of the community, who saw in his position, made prominent by the action of the seceders, a new religious departure. Although there appeared a peculiarity and independence in Mr. Beecher's belief in certain things, his position was not regarded as decidedly unevangelical. He retained and still retains the leading evangelical views of the Congregationalists, blended with his own philosophy, forming a theory, probably, more harmonious to his own mind than it is to the judgment of many others. He is an independent, vigorous thinker and writer, whose suggestions, if followed to their legitimate results, would open into very broad fields.

The old meeting-house had become too dilapidated for agreeable occupancy; and directly after the erection of the Memorial Church, a new and very beautiful house of worship was erected for Mr. Beecher, on the corner of Andover and Middle streets, fronting on Monument Square.

The ministry of Mr. Beecher has been well sustained, — a large, flourishing, and intelligent congregation having been gathered about him. During some portion of his ministry of twenty-one years in this town, his health has been such as not to withstand the rigors of a northern climate, and he has passed some of his winters in Florida; but he has been the constant pastor of the society, and in his absence the pulpit has been supplied in such ways as the society devised.

For a time, the Rev. Thomas R. Beeber was settled as colleague with Mr. Beecher, but resigned his office in March, 1875. He was succeeded in 1876 by the Rev. Alfred F. Marsh, who remained only one year. Mr. Beecher's health is now quite improved.

In 1868, the Rev. David D. Marsh became the pastor of the Memorial Church, and still retains the position. The society has flourished under his charge, and the tenth anniversary of his settlement has just taken place, under circumstances indicating that strong bonds of union exist between pastor and people.

On the occasion of the laying of the corner-stone of the Memorial Church, Sept. 9, 1866, it was first made known to the public by Mr. Peabody, that it was his further purpose to make Georgetown, the birthplace of his mother, and the home of an endeared sister, the recipient of his bounty by founding a Public Library; but the letter of gift was not received for some time after, by reason of ill health.

Immediately after the receipt of this gift from Mr. Peabody, the Georgetown Agricultural and Social Library Association,—a corporation having 116 shareholders and about 1,100 volumes of books,—donated the books of their library to the town, to become a part of the Peabody Library, on conditions that the "Annals of Congress shall be kept in the Library for reference, and that shareholders, not residents of the town, shall be entitled to the use of the Peabody Library during their lifetime, under such restrictions as the Trustees may think proper."

To the letter of gift the town responded:—"That with the liveliest emotions of pleasure we receive from George Peabody his letter of gift, bestowing upon us a valuable Library and Building, with the means to aid in their improvement and perpetuity; and that we accept the proffered gifts on the conditions conferred, and, for ourselves and our posterity, return our heartfelt thanks to the generous donor, who, while persistently refusing rank from royalty, by his vast and numerous donations has become among men, by letters-patent from the whole civilized world, worthy of the title of the Prince of Givers."

Following this, the town voted that the library should be called the "Georgetown Peabody Library," and appropriated a sum of money to furnish the library-room, and for other incidental purposes; but its expenditure was unexpectedly intercepted by the receipt of a check from Mr. Peabody for $4,000, to be used by the trustees for the benefit of the library, accompanied by the assurance that he should not permit the town to be at any expense in the maintenance of the library, and, if any had been contracted, he wished it to be repaid with interest. In emulation of the example of liberality by her brother, Mrs. Daniels made a donation of books, which was followed by contributions from other persons. The institution was then fully organized by the choice of the following board of trustees and other officers for the year 1869:—

David D. Marsh, Charles Beecher, J. M. Burtt, *ex officio*. Chas. P. Low; Isaac Wilson; G. J. Tenney, *Treasurer;* J. P. Jones; Solomon Nelson; G. D. Tenney.

President, D. D. Marsh; *Secretary*, Isaac Wilson; *Librarian*, O. R. Tenney. The officers are changed, from year to year, as necessity requires. The present librarian is Richard Tenney.

Following these noble gifts to the town, in December, 1871, the trustees received a letter from Mrs. Daniels, giving to the board, in trust for the town, "The Peabody Lecture Hall," adjoining the library building, a joint gift of herself and her affectionately remembered brother; the objects and purposes of which, with the conservative restrictions attending the gift, are fully set forth in the letter, which was accompanied by a gift of $500, to be expended for lectures and concerts. This munificent gift was accepted by the trustees, and the hall taken possession of by appropriate dedicatory exercises, as had already been the case with the Memorial Church and the Library. In the hall hangs a fine portrait of Mr. Peabody. The letter of gift from Mrs. Daniels is as follows:—

President and Trustees of the Georgetown Peabody Library.

GENTLEMEN:—It is known to you, but probably not to all who are interested, that the death of Mr. Peabody suddenly checked the building of the library hall, which he had caused to be commenced before he left this country.

No record having been made of his gift for this purpose, I was aware that considerable delay must ensue before the balance due, ($3,000) could be paid over, and being desirous that the building should be finished at or near the time which he had contemplated, I assumed the responsibility, and authorized the immediate prosecution of the work.

That work has been faithfully and beautifully accomplished; each artisan having seemed to vie with the others that his particular department should excel.

The $3,000 which I advanced at the commencement has been returned to me, and, having previously directed that the whole of the gift of $5,000 should be expended on the building, I have employed the returned $3,000 in furnishing it suitably and conveniently for the purposes for which it was designed; and I now, in behalf of my beloved departed brother, and for myself, offer for your acceptance, as trustees, the finished and furnished lecture and concert room as our joint gift, to be part and parcel of the Georgetown Peabody Library, and, as such, subject to the entire management and control of yourselves and your successors.

In regard to the uses to which the room is to be devoted, I have but one condition,—that which the founder invariably attached to the literary institutions which sprang from his bounty,—in substance, as follows:

That it shall be strictly guarded against being made a theatre for the dissemination or discussion of infidelity, party politics, or that pretended philosophy which may be aimed at the approved morals of society; and, that it shall never minister, in any manner whatever, to the propagation of opinions tending to create jealousies and alienation among the people.

I make the above articles a condition, knowing how earnestly my brother enforced them, and having seen how quickly they were ignored when he did but recommend them.

The piano I include in the furniture, on condition that it be kept locked, and the librarians have custody of the key, and that it shall never be carried out of this hall, to be used elsewhere on any occasion whatever,—unless by some contingency another room shall be substituted for this,—and as the hall is the property of the town, and not any particular district or parish, it is my hope that no article of the furniture or fixings will be carried out to be used elsewhere, that everything may be preserved to you as long as possible, and be on hand whenever it is wanted.

Believing that, had my brother lived to see the lecture-room finished, he would have provided for at least one course of lectures in a year, and finding my happiness in carrying out his intentions, as far as I may, I have placed in the hands of your treasurer the sum of $500, to procure a course of six free lectures for the ensuing season.

These lectures must be given by gentlemen of high moral standing, of acknowledged talents, and of approved ability on the subjects of which they treat.

Should the $500 not be sufficient to procure six lectures as specified, then let there be five only, rather than that the standard of excellence be lowered.

Whether they shall be a consecutive course by one person, and one subject, or separate lectures by different individuals, on different subjects, alternating with such lectures, concerts, or entertainments, as may be supported by tickets, whether they shall be literary, scientific, or miscellaneous, I leave to the discretion of the trustees, who will act as circumstances or their better judgment determine.

If once, or even twice in the course, the trustees shall choose to substitute for a lecture a first-class concert, it will not be inconsistent with my views; and here allow me to state, that it was the request of Mr. Peabody, that the hall should be finished and furnished with special reference to music, and especially the improvement of the music of the town, remarking that the influence of good music on a community is more salutary than that of popular lectures, generally.

The library lecture-room then may, in accordance with his wishes and intentions, at the discretion of the trustees, and on occasions which they shall approve, be used for any musical purpose of good moral tendency, either of instruction or entertainment, in which the whole town are interested.

I have only to ask, that before the room is opened for its legitimate purposes, some simple ceremonies of dedication may be observed; and that whatever religious services are required, may be performed by the ministers of the town.

That the citizens of this town and their successors may enjoy within its walls all the pleasure and instruction which our lamented benefactor hoped and anticipated, is also the earnest desire of her whom a kind Providence has permitted to finish his work.

Most respectfully,

J. P. Russell Daniels.

J. P. Jones, *President, in behalf of the Trustees.*

These interesting official records and correspondence cover the origin and completion of the most important movements ever occurring in connection with the religious and literary interests of this town, and which are to supply the elements of religious improvement, literary culture and refinement for generations to come, filling a distinguished and pleasant page in the local history of this town.

CHAPTER IV.

SCHOOLS — WITCHCRAFT — THE MOVING MEAL-CHEST — BUSINESS CHANGES — GREAT FIRE — ARTS AND INVENTIONS — DISTRESSING CASUALTY, &c.

The history of the establishment of common schools in this town, possesses the usual interest which surrounds the action of all the colonial towns; but the records are very imperfect as relating to the first movements for their introduction. It was an indictable offence, in 1647, for towns to neglect to maintain schools of some kind, which shows the just appreciation the fathers had of education. In 1706, the town was fined for not keeping schools as the law required. Comfortable school-houses appear, also, to have been appreciated; for the record shows, that, in 1720, the "rogueish boys" tore down a dilapidated structure, because of the tardiness of the town in supplying a new one. In 1742, Benjamin Adams was a teacher, keeping school eight months in the First Parish, two month in the Second Parish, and two months in the Byfield Parish. In 1749, the town apportioned the schools among the several parishes, according to their county taxes paid.

In 1789, the law required the defining of school districts, and the town was divided into four districts. Long after that, other divisions were made; and, in 1840, Georgetown had seven school districts. In 1839, there were 336 scholars, between the ages of four and sixteen years. The appropriation for schools was $600, to which was added the interest accruing from their surplus revenue. A high school or academy had then been kept for several years, supported by tuition from the pupils. Among the early teachers in this town, were Greenleaf Dole and Dr. Joshua Jewett, graduates of Dummer Academy; Samuel Adams, of Harvard; the Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin, of Providence; Nathaniel Merrill, of Dartmouth; Dr. Richard Spofford, of Cambridge. In 1836–1837, the Old South School was taught by Mr. Pingree, of New Hampshire, now at the head of the seminary at Newark, N. J.

With the changes in the modes of education, the school district system has been abolished, and a high school established, in September, 1856. The following named persons, in the order given, have filled the position of principal; William Reed, D. Milton Crafts, Edward Parker, Jr., A. J. Dalton, S. C. Cotton, and Edward F. Fickett, the present incumbent.

The external elements of a people are ever visible, but the presence of invisible forces is only shown by results. The religious, the political, and the educational impulses of the early settlers of this town, and those of their successors, have been briefly traced in the acts which make up their history. There still remains to be put on record, in this connection, some account of a mystical power, which made its appearance in this town at an early day, and appears to have been a mixture of delusion, superstition, and facts, strangely combined in its development, the manner of its handling, and the murderous results, which supply a dark page in the history of the judicial proceedings of the county. This mystic force was denominated "witchcraft" in the early time, but its close relations to the phenomena of the present day, known as Spiritualism, brings it to consideration as a matter of great historic interest.

Many persons at that time believed that the witches actually signed a material book, presented to them by the devil, and were baptized by him, in which ceremony the devil used the words: "Thou art mine, and I have full power over thee!" After this, they were thought "to partake of a hellish *bread* and *wine* administered unto them by the devil," which was denominated a "witch sacrament." In these communions, "the witches were supposed to meet on the banks of the Merrimac River, riding there upon poles through the air."

It is recorded. that "on the 27th of September, 1692, John Shepard of Rowley was bound over to Court for assisting to convey Mary Green, of Haverhill, a prisoner, charged with witchcraft, out of Ipswich jail." Twenty persons thus accused, tried, and condemned, were put to death, and eleven others were under condemnation, before there was a halt in the horrible slaughter.

The following is a specimen of the evidence upon which these witches were condemned and executed, given Sept. 15, 1692: —

"Danell Wycomb | Dep° ags^t Margret Scott.

"The testymony of Daniell Wicom ayged aboue fifty years who sayth that abought five ore sixs years a go Margret Scot of Rowlah came to my hous and asked me if she might gleane corne in my felld i towld hir she might if she would stay whilst my corne was ought of the feeld s^d Scot s^d you will not get youer corne ought to night it may be i tould hir i would s^d Scot s^d maybe not; at that time my wife gave s^d Scot sum corne and then Scot went a way and presently after s^d Scot was gon i went with my cart and oxsen into the felld for corne and when i had lodid my cart i went to go home with my corne but the oxsen would not draw the cart any ways bout from home thof i wear not twenty Rod from my Door and i coulld not get any corne ought of my felld that day the next Day i touck the same oxsen and put them to the same cart and the s^d cart and the same lode of corne they did draw a way with case."

"Iurat in Curia."

Nearly a hundred years after the date of the above deposition, a remarkable event took place in Georgetown, at the house of Moody

Spofford, Esq., situated on Rowley Hill, in the westerly part of this town. These singular occurrences took place about the year 1780, nearly a hundred years ago. The following statement, written by the venerable Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, of Groveland, prepared by the request of many persons, is given, as the facts were related to him by his father, corroborated by the testimony of a dozen other eye-witnesses of what took place, among whom were Dr. Amos Spofford, David Thurston, Capt. William Perley, late of Haverhill, and David Tenney, of Georgetown, grandfather of David B. Tenney, city clerk of Haverhill, who was one who rode across the room on the meal-chest propelled by the invisible power. This statement is of value as to the fact of what occurred, on account of the entire reliability of Dr. Spofford as a witness concerning a traditional matter, and also from the fact that he had no sympathy with modern Spiritualism or in the defence of any of its theories:

"On a day about 1780, — exact date not known, — my father, living at the next house, was passing the house of Mr. Moody Spofford, and was called in to hear the strange statement that the girl weaving in the chamber, was annoyed by strange sounds, apparently in the walls of the room, answering each stroke of the lathe with which she beat each thread of the filling into the cloth! He examined to see if the jar of the loom produced the sound, but could find no loose boards or clapboards producing it. He pounded on the house himself, and found every blow made by the experiment, answered by a similar blow. Unable to account for these things, he left and went home, but was soon recalled.

"The weaver was Hannah Hazen, a native of the place, of respectable family and good character, and nothing is known of her having any voluntary agency in relation to the doings of the afternoon, but a saying of the children's that Hannah had been trying her fortune, by some of the experiments popular at that day. . . . Disturbed in the weaving, Hannah was set to sifting meal, but she or her clothes had no sooner touched the meal-chest than it began to move away from her by jogs of one or two inches, and so continued as long as she kept at work! A family of children, up to ten or a dozen years of age, soon spread the story over the neighborhood, and many gathered to see the wonders. My father, with my mother, a sister of 'Squire Moody, soon returned to find many there, and experiments going on; a table, standing in the open floor, when touched by the girl or her clothes, would move by jogs from her, and other articles in the same way. The door-latch flew up and down with great rapidity when her clothes touched the door, and even the farmer's heavy work-bench, at the shop, upon trial, receded by a similar jogging motion. Spectators, by this time, were plenty, and the meal-chest experiment was renewed, and the chest moved as before, and continued to do so while the girl sifted meal, though the weight of three men were added. This motion was continued till it reached the corner of the room. The men concerned in this experiment, often named in stating those facts by those present, were Dr. Amos Spofford, David Thurston, Esq., afterwards removed to Maine, Capt. William Perley, late of Haverhill, all of them residents here, and large and heavy men, well known to the writer.

"Hannah was a passive instrument in the hands of others in all these experiments, and probably knew no more of the cause of these wonders than they did. Iron or steel played its usual part; a fork stuck in a table or meal-chest arrested its motion, a horse-shoe hung on the door, and the latch was still; why the latch, if of iron, did not do the same we do not know; perhaps it was of wood. Other experiments might show the curiosity or preconceived notions of the actors, but throw no light on the *moving* cause of the chest, bench and chairs. On the esquire's return at evening, he put a stop to all experiments, and would not even hear their stories; and everything was quiet over the Sabbath; but, on his departure, Monday morning, the same game was recommenced at his house, upon which he was immediately recalled.

"Mr. Chaudler, the minister, and Mr. Bradford, the candidate for settlement, as colleague, were called in. Ere this, it had been decided that all unnatural appearances were optical delusions. Salem Village had never seen Margaret Rule suspended above the bed without hands, — it was all deception and imagination; but the twenty witnesses, who had seen the loaded meal-chest move to the wall, and begin to turn the corner, were not to be put down by a theory, even by two clergymen; they were obliged to concede the facts as stated, or virtually hold half the Parish to be fools and liars! To conclude, the girl was sent away. Prayer was offered at the house, and henceforth, to this day, chairs, tables and chests, have obeyed the laws of gravitation there as elsewhere."

The venerable author of the above, though not taking any interest in the manifestations of that or later times, thinks it "unphilosophical and absurd to disbelieve all facts we do not understand."

The most important and extensive early mechanical industry established in this town was that of tanning and currying, the annual production of leather being quite large. Among the principal tanners and curriers were Jeremiah Nelson, Asa Nelson, Nathaniel Nelson, Nathaniel Morse, Capt. Benjamin Adams, Solomon Nelson, Benjamin Low, Asa Nelson, Henry P. Hilliard, William Nelson, and Col. John Kimball. This branch of industry has now nearly ceased to exist in this town, only one establishment, doing a small business, now remaining.

The boot and shoe business, which began to exist here contemporaneously with the leather business, has been a constantly growing interest, and is now the principal mechanical industry of the town, its extent and importance being indicated by the manufacturing and agricultural statistics elsewhere given.

The early manufacturers of boots and shoes were Moses Stickney, Solomon Stickney, Joseph Little, Benjamin Little, John L. Platts, George W. Nelson, Greenleaf Spofford, Coleman Platts, D. M. Winter, Benjamin Winter, Samuel Holmes, Nelson & Hood.

The later ones are G. J. Tenney & Son, Little & Noyes, Little & Moulton, Walter M. Brewster, John A. Lovering & Son, H. P. Chaplin, Holmes & Noyes, Noyes & Carleton, A. B. Noyes & Co., Daniel Pierce, George Spofford, James B. Giles, Maj. Jerry Nelson, and Capt. Moses Wright. Heavy goods are principally produced, and the business has been subject to comparatively little fluctuation for many years.

At an early date there were numerous small mechanical enterprises started, most of which have now passed out of existence. Between 1730 and 1740, Dea. Abner Spofford erected the first saw-mill on the site where William Spofford's mill was afterwards built. In 1780, Col. Daniel Spofford erected a grist-mill in connection with the saw-mill, which was in existence about forty years, but only run a portion of the time.

About the same time Eleazer Spofford erected a mill in the same neighborhood for drawing wire, which was only operated a few years. Another enterprise added to that locality was a snuff-mill by Jeremiah Spofford, which also ceased to operate after a few years.

In 1739, iron-works were established on a stream running from Rock Pond into Pentucket Pond, believed to have been operated by Samuel Barrett, but they have so long been closed up that little is now known of them.

In the year 1740, the only canal enterprise ever attempted in the town was projected by Daniel Pierce, who attempted to convey the water from Pentucket Pond to the site of Dole's mills, for the purpose of operating a grist-mill, but the scheme was not a success in his hands. It was finally accomplished, and a mill established which was capable of being operated six months in a year. In 1807, John Wood came in possession of the power, and erected a saw-mill.

All these enterprises have passed out of sight, or have ceased to be noticeable by reason of the prominence of more important interests. The manufacture of boots and shoes, most of which is heavy pegged work, has proved to be quite remunerative, and for many years has been less fluctuating in this town than in a majority of towns engaged in similar manufactures, which is attributed to the peculiar styles of goods made.

For the last twenty-five years the custom-clothing trade has been an important and profitable branch of manufacturing, commanding the best trade of the country for many miles around. The two principal clothing-houses are those of Stephen Osgood and S. Plummer, and both have been successful. The business still continues to be extensive and profitable.

It is a noticeable fact that in Byfield Parish, a portion of which is in Georgetown, the first woollen manufactory in New England, and perhaps in America, was established, but the business was never largely extended, and has now passed away.

The first triumph of the Daguerrean art, in Essex County, was in this town, the achievement being by Mr. W. S. Horner and his brother, who conducted the process according to printed directions obtained in New York. Mr. Horner has a pair of compasses in his possession, once owned by George Washington, which are regarded of value as a relic of the past. Mrs. Horner is one of the most thorough botanists in Essex County, and is thoroughly acquainted with the whole family of ferns. It is not uncommon for her to take to Boston one hundred and fifty specimens of wild flowers. Mr. Horner is the ticket-master at the railroad station.

Georgetown lays claim to being the home of the inventors of many improvements in machinery and devices connected with the manu-

facture of shoes. Among these are improved modes in making pegged shoes, by the late Paul Pillsbury; the application of machinery to cutting sole leather, by H. P. Chaplin; the Post sewing-machine, by David Haskell; the first use of upper-leather dies, by Horatio Nelson; the first pegging-machine and metal-bound patterns, by Mr. Chaplin; the inventions of Moses Atwood, Manly Morse, Edwin Brown, William Burton, Dr. Huse, and others.

Paul Pillsbury was a remarkable man as an inventor. He first invented a corn-sheller, and next a bark-mill, both of which were practical. His next great invention was the peg-making machine, which he long kept a secret, but, as his biographer says, he "let a good pious deacon see it, to gratify his curiosity, and when he went out of the door the secret went with him." In this way the monopoly of peg-making ceased. Mr. Pillsbury invented many other machines, but the pegging-machine was the leading one. Mr. Pillsbury was an athletic man, and when a soldier in the war of 1812, is said to have shouldered a cannon weighing seven hundred pounds. He was born in West Newbury in 1780, and died in Byfield in 1868, aged eighty-eight years. His first wife was Elizabeth Frink, of Haverhill, who was born in a house standing on the present site of the Boston and Maine Railroad station. His second wife was Mrs. Benjamin Pike, mother of Gen. Albert Pike, of Arkansas, the poet and the rebel general in the war of the Rebellion. Parker Pillsbury, one of the great anti-slavery leaders, was his nephew.

Since the existence of this community as a precinct, or its incorporation as a town, few fires have occurred, involving great loss, till, on the morning of Oct. 26, 1874, when a fire broke out in the barn of Mr. George J. Tenney, which rapidly spread, threatening the destruction of the whole compact portion of the town. A large number of buildings, stores, Masonic Hall, stables, and the dwelling-house of George J. Tenney were destroyed, laying in ruins the establishments of more than thirty business men and firms, destroying a large amount of merchandise, and other property. The origin of the fire is not certainly known. The property was generally insured, and the loss to individuals substantially covered. The fire department was entirely inadequate to cope with so extensive a conflagration, and assistance was sought from Newburyport and Haverhill, which was promptly supplied, by which a general sweep of the village was prevented. The burnt district was at once built up with substantial structures in the place of those destroyed. The business of the town was only temporarily interfered with, and a succession of successful business years have followed. It is a singular phenomenal fact, that a lady friend of one of the sufferers by the fire, at that time residing in the western part of the State, was able to tell at the time that a fire was raging there, and to describe the buildings burnt, though no communication, by telegraph or otherwise, had reached her.

In 1732, soon after the organization of the parish, a burial-ground was laid out, which has since been enlarged; first, in 1755, and again in 1805. It has from time to time been improved, and the usual attention paid to the improvement and embellishment of the grounds which refinement and cultivated sentiment suggest, as appropriate to the resting-places of those whose memory is fondly cherished

On the 27th of August, 1867, a distressing casualty occurred, engulfing several families in deepest affliction, and carrying sorrow to the hearts of a widely-extended circle of friends, while it caused a general gloom to settle over the whole community. A party of cousins were out sailing: Eugene and Albert Beecher, sons of Dr. Edward Beecher; Lockwood and Nellie Coffin, children of Rev. William Coffin; and Esther and Hattie Beecher, daughters of Rev. Charles Beecher. At an unfortunate moment, the boat capsized, and three of the number — Albert Beecher, and Esther and Hattie Beecher — were drowned, the others narrowly escaping the same fate. The parties were here spending their summer-vacation from school.

George W. Boynton, a prominent and well-known citizen, died March 23, 1877, after a long and distressing illness, aged 56 years and 4 months. He was appointed constable in 1846, deputy-sheriff in 1858, collector of internal revenue, 5th district, in 1862; deputy provost-marshal in 1863; overseer of house of correction, Lawrence, in 1863; appointed deputy-constable by Col. King in 1865; again appointed in 1866 and 1869; chief constable by Gov. Talbot in 1874, for the Commonwealth. His last appointment was that of deputy-sheriff by officer Herrick, Sept. 23, 1875. He was an efficient officer.

CHAPTER V.

PATRIOTISM OF THE PEOPLE — WAR OF THE REBELLION — FRATERNAL INSTITUTIONS — THE MYSTIC ORDER — THE "OLD NANCY" — PECULIAR CHARACTERS — LOCAL INCIDENTS.

The history of this people began at a time when they were only the fragment of a wide-spread township, sparsely populated, whose centre was at the point where the pioneers first located, and built their village. The public sentiment of this section was blended with that of the whole township, making one voice.

At the later period, when patriotism was put to its severest test, the duty of a town was accepted by a *precinct*, when its citizens volunteered as "minute-men," in harmony with the suggestions of the Provincial Congress, and through all the Revolutionary struggle not a duty was neglected, nor a responsibility shunned. Public sentiment was kept at "concert pitch" at home, while the "spirit of '76" was taken to the front.

At length, assuming the position of a separate township, the duties of citizenship under the new relation, began with their proper estimate and faithful performance. At the first town-meeting, April 28, 1838, Robert Savory was the moderator. The first town officer elected was George Foot, town clerk, who was sworn into office by Jeremiah Russell. The first board of selectmen and assessors were John A. Lovering, Sewell Spofford, and Gorham P. Tenney. James Peabody, Moses M. Thurlow, and Jeremiah Clark, were the overseers of the poor; Benjamin Winter, treasurer and collector; and Robert Savory, Moody Cheney, and Charles Boynton, were constables.

The appropriations for the expenses the first year were: for schools, $600; for repair of highways, $600; for other purposes, $650. The first representative to the general court was Jeremiah Russell, elected in 1840.

The public sentiment of this town was in harmony with the advance movement of the people, which aimed at a practical application of the principles that had been embodied in the organic law of the country. At an hour when the question of Union and equality of rights was up for decision, it was not difficult to judge of their course. While the South had been threatening, they had been deliberating, and when the signal-gun was fired, they were instantaneously standing shoulder to shoulder, and ready for action. By frequent intercourse with the citizens of neighboring communities, they imparted a general inspiration which was a constant help to the loyal cause, and strength to its local support.

In 1861, the selectmen, who were the war magistrates all through the war, were O. B. Tenney, Sherman Nelson, George W. Sanborn. The town clerk during the entire period, was Charles E. Jewett. The town treasurer, in 1861 and 1862, was Lewis H. Bateman; in 1863, William H. Harriman; in 1864 and 1865, George H. Carleton.

After the outbreak, in 1861, the first legal meeting of the town, to deliberate upon war, was held April 30th, when it was voted to appropriate five thousand dollars "for the benefit of such of the citizens as may volunteer in the service of their country during the ensuing years, and their families." A committee of one from each school district was appointed "to ascertain what supplies may be needed" by the volunteers, or their families, and all bills approved by the committee, were ordered to be paid by the selectmen. The committee were also authorized to aid in the formation, equipment, and drill, of a military company in the town. The committee reported the expenditure, from May to October, of eleven hundred dollars, for uniforms, equipments, and in aid to families of volunteers.

At a town meeting, July 17, 1862, it was voted to pay to residents of the town, a bounty of one hundred dollars, on enlistment for three years in the military service; and the treasurer was authorized to borrow money to pay the same. On the 9th of August, the bounty was increased to one hundred and fifty dollars, and those who had already enlisted, were to receive an additional fifty dollars. The vote restricting the enlistments to citizens of the town, was reconsidered, and the selectmen were authorized to receive recruits from other places. A reward of ten dollars was offered, for the arrest of any person liable to be drafted, "who shall absent himself from the State, before such draft shall be made." On the 16th of August, a bounty of two hundred and fifty dollars was voted for nine months' volunteers, and that the selectmen be limited in recruiting to eight days from date, to residents of the town, exclusively; after that, to be open to any one who may be legally counted to the quota of Georgetown, and the treasurer authorized to borrow money to pay the boun-

ties. John G. Barnes, Solomon Nelson, and John P. Bradstreet, were appointed "to confer with other towns in regard to forming a company." On the 4th of November the town appropriated five hundred dollars for the benefit of disabled and discharged volunteers, and their families, residing in town. In 1863, recruiting was still continued, in answer to calls by the President for men, and bounties paid to volunteers.

On the 26th of April, 1864, the town again voted to pay a bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars to each volunteer who had been mustered into the military service, to the credit of the town, since the 1st instant, and on the 28th of June, it voted to pay the same bounty till Jan. 1, 1865. On the 14th of November, the town ratified the action of the selectmen, in paying a bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars each, to ten men who had enlisted for one year, and the treasurer authorized to borrow money therefor. In 1865, on the 3d of June, it was voted to "reimburse the money paid by voluntary subscription towards filling the quota of the town," the same to be paid, Oct. 1st, following.

During the war, Georgetown furnished one hundred and ninety-four men for the service, making a surplus of twenty-six above all demands for filling quotas. Of these, six were commissioned officers. The whole amount of money raised and expended by the town for war purposes, exclusive of State aid, was $24,217.99.

The amount of money raised and expended by the town, during the four years of the war, for State aid to soldiers' families, which was afterwards repaid by the Commonwealth, was $20,824.39.

The part taken by the ladies of the town in measures of relief for the sick and wounded soldiers, is worthy of most honorable mention. The ladies' sewing-circle, connected with the Orthodox Congregational Church, were untiring in their efforts; and others, not thus associated, joined in most hearty co-operation in general measures for the relief of the sufferers. The treasurer of that society, Mrs. William S. Horner, supplies the record that "early in the autumn of 1861, the ladies commenced knitting socks and mittens, making shirts, &c. The first contribution was sent to the Sanitary Commission, and about the same time, we forwarded two boxes to the Nineteenth Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers; and as many as twenty smaller packages were sent by individuals, on their own account, to Dr. Howe, or the regiments in the field. During the first months of winter, we sent to the Sanitary Commission, four boxes of garments and bedding, valued at $450; we also sent another box to the Nineteenth Regiment. During 1863, we sent barrels of clothing, boxes of books, and supplies for the Sanitary and Christian commissions, amounting in value to about $350. During the year 1864, we sent about twenty barrels, boxes, and packages, which were equally distributed, to Surg. Gen. Dale, and to Mrs. Mary B. Dully, for the hospital at Hampden, Va., value in all, about $480; also fifty dollars in cash to the Christian Commission. We also sent, in 1865, about ten barrels to those various points, valued at $350. The total, as near as can be ascertained, is about twenty-five hundred dollars. Contributions were made by other societies, to the amount of about two hundred dollars."

At the close of the war, after the remembrances of the great struggle had become crystallized into a sentiment of grateful memory of those whose lives were given for their country, and the institutions of freedom, the citizens caused to be erected a granite shaft, about twenty-five feet in height, on a space near the town house, upon which, in connection with various chiselled devices, emblematic of war, are the following inscriptions: —

"THEY DIED THAT THE COUNTRY MIGHT LIVE.
OUR PATRIOTIC DEAD — HONORED — REMEMBERED.

"Erected by the citizens of Georgetown as a token of gratitude to those brave men who died in the service of their country, during the war of the rebellion, 1861–5."

The tablets contain the names of fifty heroes whose lives were surrendered. The structure was erected at a cost of $3,553.77, and is enclosed within an iron fence.

Everett Peabody Post, No. 108, G. A. R., was also organized, and is patriotically sustained. H. N. Harriman is the present Post commander.

Since the close of the war, the business of the town has been remarkably prosperous, wealth has been accumulated, and there has been considerable growth in population. In 1840, the population was 1,553; in 1875, 2,214; the number of dwelling-houses was 424; and of families, 547. The capital invested in business is $192,700; the annual value of manufactures, $537,700, and of agricultural products, $51,385. The present valuation of the town is $1,149,360; the number of polls, 676, and the rate of taxation, 15 mills.

The post-office in New Rowley was established in 1824, with Benjamin Little, postmaster; it was changed to Georgetown in 1838. A bank was established in 1836, with a capital of $100,000, but it ceased with the expiration of its charter in October, 1851. In 1840, there was one hotel, which is still in existence, and serves the public. There were then seven stores, since which time the number has been much increased, doing business on a more extensive scale, and possessed of all the modern appointments. At present the superior advantages of large and varied stocks of goods attract an extensive trade from the surrounding localities, In 1869, a savings bank was chartered, of which O. B. Tenney is treasurer, and in 1875, the Georgetown National Bank was established, of which Henry P. Chaplin is president, and George H. Carleton, cashier.

The fraternal institutions have always been well sustained in this town, and have experienced a thrifty growth. C. C. Dame Lodge, of Free and Accepted Masons, is one of the best known in the county. Protection Lodge, Independent Order of Odd Fellows, is also a flourishing organization. The various temperance organizations, as the Good Templars, Sons of Temperance, and the Reform Club, with some others, have for many years been active and effective organizations. There are other benevolent institutions of acknowledged activity and usefulness.

Another mystic institution, known to outsiders as the "Doedunks," but whose real name has never been divulged, had its origin here, and was founded in 1852 by six young men, all of whom are now living. The veil which shrouds its mysteries is an impenetrable one, even to the eye of the historian, and very little is known of the surroundings of the inner court which only the "faithful" are permitted to enter. Its claim to have embraced in its membership a large majority of the best citizens of the town, is undoubtedly a just one; certainly it has been the centre of the men of "infinite jest." The organization here is the head of the Order in the world, and lodges have been established in various localities in New England, and some of the Western States of the Union. It claims to have a membership scattered in the four quarters of the earth.

The early physicians of the town were Amos Spofford, Moses D. Spofford, David Mighill, Moses P. Clark, Richard Herbert, George Moody, Hiram M. Couch, William Cogswell, now of Bradford, and Isaac G. Braman. The present physicians are R. B. Root, and R. C. Huse.

The "Georgetown Advocate," established several years since, by William B. Hammond, and H. N. Harriman is an interesting local paper, well conducted and well sustained.

No movement in Georgetown was ever of a more important and stirring character than that of the early agitation of the question of anti-slavery. In it were enlisted many men and women, whose hearts were fully committed to the agitation.

Among the leaders in this reform were Theodore G. Eliot, Moses Wright, James H. Swett, Asa W. Swett, Mrs. Almira Swett, and others. The speakers frequently heard here were William Lloyd Garrison, Parker Pillsbury, Frederick Douglas, Wendell Phillips, and the long line of early advocates of that cause. They carried the discussion to the doors of the churches, which were then committed to silence. Rev. Mr. Braman was unfriendly to the agitation, which added warmth and interest to the debate. These speakers were bold and incisive in their utterances, which made the conflict between them and the conservatives, as they were called, a warm one. Mrs. Almira Swett was one of the boldest of the female supporters of the cause, and when she attended church, was accustomed to take her knitting-work with her, which led her to be arrested for contempt of the worship. For this, and for the defence of her brother, who was before the church for waywardness upon this subject, she was arrested and tried, being charged in the forms of law, with "assault and battery"; she was convicted and sentenced to Ipswich. When arrested, she told the officers she "could not leave home at that time; that her family needed her attention." She offered no resistance, simply declining to comply with the request of the officer. Assistance was procured, and Mrs. Swett lifted into the sleigh, and carried into the court-room in the same way. After trial, and conviction, she was borne back to the sleigh and carried to Ipswich, but the keeper of the house of correction declined to receive her, declaring that "those who had brought her there deserved, more than she, to be retained."

The meetings of the come-outers were held on the steps of churches, in groves, and in barns. Thomas P. Beach was once rotten-

egged while speaking from the steps of a church. To avoid this indignity in barns, the women were seated, and the speaker stationed before them, when the doors were opened to accommodate the listening crowd without. On one occasion, Sewell E. Jewett, then a citizen of Georgetown, organized an all-day Sunday meeting in "Major Dole's thicket," now "Little's Grove," which thinned the attendance at the churches. Refreshments were advertised, and a barrel of crackers, a cheese, codfish, &c., with cool, spring water, were supplied. The meeting continued from 8 o'clock, A. M., till night. This record comes from well authenticated traditional sources.

The history of the "Old Nancy" is one of much local interest. This is the name of a cannon, originally brought from Gloucester to Rowley, in a vessel, by Maj. Boynton, with the intention of selling it to the Rowley people. Some difficulty occurred in closing the trade, and he was about to return it. One night a party of "wide-awakes" boarded the vessel and threw the ordnance overboard. It remained in Rowley River several years, after which it was finally raised; but being the property of no one in particular, it was very hard to keep possession of. It was alternately possessed by different parties, and made to "speak" on anniversary occasions. A company of Georgetown men, formerly citizens of Rowley, conceived the idea of holding possession of it for a while, and on a given night captured it and brought it to Georgetown, where it was kept carefully guarded, and was used on special occasions. Its hiding-places were in sheds, under rubbish, in barns, under hay, and sometimes in cellars. The desire of Rowley men to again possess it was intense, but in all attempts they failed.

Two years ago, some unknown person or persons entered into an agreement with the Rowley men to deliver the "Old Nancy" to them for a certain sum of money. The preliminaries were all agreed upon, and the place appointed for the return of the gun on a certain night. A gun of the same style was purchased in Topsfield, by the delivery of which, the contract was supposed to be fulfilled; and there was "great joy" in Rowley. Preparations were soon made by the Rowley men to visit their Georgetown brethren, to indulge in a little exultation over the re-possession of the gun. The Georgetown men were made acquainted with the arrangements, and were ready for their reception. The *genuine* "Old Nancy" was brought out, double-shotted, and prepared to welcome them with a salute. The gun was well manned, and a band of music gave life to the occasion. The two forces met in friendly greeting, the bells were rung, and there was a brisk cannonading for a little while. A dinner had been ordered at the hotel, by the Rowley men, to which they contemplated inviting their *unfortunate* Georgetown brethren; and although it soon became evident to them that there was "some mistake about the gun trade" it did not interfere with the convivialities around the festive board. The historical fact is, the "Old Nancy" is still in Georgetown, and the Rowley gun of to-day is *another*.

In Gage's history is recorded the destruction of an old school-house in the town, in 1720, by a party of "rogueish boys" who had become impatient for the building of a new one. In 1840, another event of a kindred nature occurred in the centre of Georgetown. At that time an old school-house stood on the site now occupied by the soldiers' monument. The district where it was located claimed the exclusive ownership of it, which was disputed by the outlying districts. The centre district sold the building, and it was made ready to be moved away on a given Saturday. A large team of oxen was hitched to it, and the movers were prepared to start. The men from the outside districts gathered in such numbers as to prevent its removal, and the attempt was abandoned. When night came the defeated party began to consider upon other ways of disposing of it. It was proposed to blow it up with gunpowder, but moderate counsels prevailed, and it was not done. On the following Sunday night, April 21st, a large force gathered, and, during a heavy thunder shower, completely demolished the structure, which took the object of strife out of existence. Several persons were arrested and tried for the offence, but but were not convicted. The escape from an unpleasant collision was very narrow on that occasion.

The history of Georgetown would be quite incomplete without mention of the "characters" who have from time to time made their appearance there, becoming, in their way, celebrities. A local writer has preserved and published the following list: "Dean Tyler, Moody Clark, Fiddler Noyes, Tailor Thurlow, Tantrum Dick, Charley Gordon, Boss Chandler, John Simonds Barr, Jack Lovejoy, Uncle Vickery, Peter Cloughlin, John Emery, Old Stevens, Lang Tyler, Paul Cheney, Bashylore, Uncle Enos, Farmer Edmands, Major Danks, Tinker Davis, and Old Dan Brocklebank."

Every one of these was an eccentricitie, and for years some one of them was liable to supply the elements of amusement to those whose mental structures were shaped in the more common moulds of nature. Peter Cloughlin was particularly noted for his love of New England rum and cross dogs. His wife was traditionally reputed to be a witch, and to have died of spontaneous combustion. Charley Gordon was notorious as an astrologer and soothsayer, having excessive fondness for cider. Fiddler Noyes was a musical celebrity of some note, and bore a striking resemblance to Paganini; he was tall, slim, and angular. His favorite instrument was the violin; and the bewitching and skilful manner in which he rendered the popular airs of the day always excited the wonder and admiration of his hearers. John Emery was a marked character, possessing poetic and oratorical powers, and on the 4th of July doted on the American flag, and revelled in tar-barrels and fire-balls. He gave rise to what were called "Emery meetings," at which he was the chief actor and speaker. These were presided over by men of dignity and standing, and attended by the best citizens, as a source of agreeable pastime.

John Simonds Barr was much addicted to his cups. On one occasion he called on Parson Braman, while in a state of exhilaration, and addressed him as follows: "Good morning, Parson Braman, the priest of the parish. My name is John Simonds Barr. I attend your meeting Parson Braman; now can't you give me a glass of cider?" The parson rather objected at first, but after much solicitation the cider was produced. Barr drained the mug of the last drop, then feeling a little more independent and impudent, slightly changed his tone, and remarked: "Parson Braman, priest of the parish, I attend your meeting *when I go to meeting;* but the fact is, it's seldom that I go, — d —— d seldom."

Dan Brocklebank was a strange combination, in looks, manners, and expression, being tall and slim, with a remarkably small head, short gray hair, and hooked nose. He was a preacher, a sort of independent come-outer, who delighted in opposing everything. He often dressed in an entire suit of calico, from hat to boots. He composed his own hymns, and at one of his meetings, after reading one of his newly-made songs, remarked: "Brethren and sisters, I don't know as you will be able to sing this hymn, *for it's most a devil of a metre.*" Such were the characteristics of these men, with which the resources of tradition are full. The number of odd characters centered in this community seems to have been unusually large, as compared with the population.

This sketch, necessarily brief, embraces the salient points in the history of this very interesting and enterprising town, but is by no means exhaustive.

GLOUCESTER.

CHAPTER I.

TOPOGRAPHICAL DESCRIPTION — SURFACE OF THE TOWN — FOREST — THE MAGNOLIA — PONDS — ISLANDS — NORMAN'S WOE.

The town of Gloucester originally covered the whole of the prominent headland on the northerly side of Massachusetts Bay, known as Cape Ann. This headland is the most easterly part of the county of Essex. From the towns of Manchester and Essex, on its western side, it extends into the sea about nine miles. It does not vary much in width, the narrowest part between Ipswich Bay and Massachusetts Bay being a little less than four miles. It is divided into two nearly equal parts by Annisquam River, an arm of the sea extending from Ipswich Bay towards Gloucester harbor, from which it is separated by a short and narrow neck of land. This harbor is formed by the projection from the south-easterly end of the Cape of a strip of land called Eastern Point, extending in a south-westerly direction about three miles, and affording within its friendly embrace safe anchorage and shelter for a large fleet. With its own hundreds of schooners, and the strangers here finding a refuge from easterly gales, it sometimes presents the appearance of a forest of masts; and when these vessels, under sail, are all working out of the harbor together, the scene is one of surpassing interest and beauty.

The only other natural harbor on the Cape is at Annisquam. This is somewhat difficult of access, having a bar across its entrance; but it is a safe haven for small vessels, and in the early part of the last century was much used in carrying on the fishing business. The earliest mention of the name given to this part of the Cape is on William Wood's map of Massachusetts, drawn in 1633, where it is spelled Wonasquam. It is also so spelled by Josselyn, 1638, in his "Account of Two Voyages to New England," who adds, "a dangerous place to sail by in stormie weather, by reason of the many Rocks and foaming breakers." At the easterly end of the Cape small artificial harbors have been constructed at the principal coves, by the erection of stone piers and breakwaters.

The surface of the town is of a very remarkable character, which strikes every beholder, at first sight, with astonishment. It is strewed with bowlders, some of which are of immense size. In many places they are scattered thickly over the surface; and in one place, called Raccoon Ledge, they are gathered into such a wonderful heap, of all sizes, as to be well worth visiting as a great natural curiosity. These bowlders, together with bold, rocky hills, and precipitous ledges of rock, some of which are of striking and majestic form, combine to present a scene such as the eye cannot probably elsewhere in Massachusetts rest upon. The highest elevation of land is a hill called Tompson's Mountain, near the western border of the town. It is two hundred and fifty-five feet above the level of the sea, and its summit affords an extensive prospect of land and ocean. On a clear day there are plainly discernible, at distances varying from twenty to eighty miles, — Bunker-Hill Monument; Wachusett Mountain, in Worcester County; several mountains in New Hampshire; and Agamenticus, in Maine.

The geological structure of the town presents a few other features deserving notice. One of these, Rafe's Chasm, is a remarkable fissure in a ledge on the sea-coast between Norman's Woe and Kettle Cove. The ledge itself presents oceanward an aspect of singular boldness and grandeur, and the booming of the sea from the hidden recesses of the chasm causes every visitor to feel the presence of a sublime and majestic influence. Other "observable Rarities," to use the words of Rev. Cotton Mather, in writing about them to a friend in England, in 1724, are two rocking stones, one of which is in a pasture on the north side of the Cape, and the other on the sea-shore, near Bass Rocks. The latter is situated at the end of a large and high ledge, jutting out into the sea; and is not perceived, without close examination, to be a detached portion of it. It lies in such juxtaposition to the main rock as to strike against it at every oscillation. Its weight has been estimated not less than five hundred tons. It has a rocking motion of about one inch, and at or about half-tide, when a heavy sea is breaking upon the shore, it exhibits a constant, tremulous motion, affording a rare illustration of hydro-dynamic power.

There is abundant evidence that the rocky surface of the town, now offering scarcely a tree or bush to relieve the eye, was once covered with a fine growth of the various kinds of wood found in New England. Besides the quantity required for home use, an early exportation of wood and timber to Boston was commenced and carried on, without doubt, till a large portion of the territory was left in the condition of mere pasture ground. The botany of Cape Ann is, however, rich in the possession of a rare plant called the *Magnolia glauca*, whose only native place in Massachusetts is a swamp in the westerly part of Gloucester. It grows to the height of about ten feet, and yields a beautiful, fragrant flower, through nearly the whole of the warm season. The discovery of this plant has been attributed to Chief Justice Parsons, who was of a Gloucester family. He may have been the first to bring it into public notice, but it probably attracted the attention of the inhabitants long before his day.

There are but two ponds of considerable magnitude within the limits of Cape Ann; one, a beautiful sheet of water, covering about seventy acres, near the easterly end of the Cape, and another, of smaller size, on Eastern Point.

The islands near the Cape and in its harbors are few in number, and of but little importance, except for the historical interest connected with those that attracted the notice of early explorers of our shores, particularly of that celebrated navigator, Capt. John Smith, who associated them with one of the marvellous exploits of his own wonderful career, by naming them the "Three Turks' Heads." These islands all lie off the south-easterly part of the Cape. One, Straitsmouth, is separated from the main land by a channel of only a few rods in width. Its surface is rocky, and covers not more than forty or fifty acres. A lighthouse has been erected on it for the accommodation of the inshore navigation of the Cape. The other islands of this group are farther from the shore, but not much, if any, more than a mile distant. Thacher's, the larger of the two, is estimated to contain about eighty acres, part of which consists of good soil. In 1771, the Colonial Government became its owner, and in the same year erected two lighthouses and a dwelling-house on it, at a cost of £2,735. The name of this island perpetuates the memory of one of the most distressing shipwrecks that ever happened on the coast of New England — that of a pinnace, having on board the Rev. John Avery and Mr. Anthony Thacher, with their families, on the 12th of August, 1635.

Near the entrance of the principal harbor, on the westerly side, is Kettle Island, which is high and rocky, and of no importance as to size or use. It was known by its present name as early as 1634, when five men, belonging to Salem, were drowned from a canoe near it. Within the harbor, and in Annisquam River, are a few small islands, of sufficient importance to receive names at an early date, but deserving no further notice here.

On the westerly side of the harbor is Norman's Woe, a large rock, lying a few rods from the shore, and connected with it by a reef, which the sea leaves bare at low water. It is mentioned in the town records as early as 1702, and is there called Norman's Oh. Öe, in some of the languages of northern Europe, means an island, and this may have been the origin of the doleful name now applied to this spot. Distressing shipwrecks have occurred near it, one of which suggested the "Wreck of the Hesperus," a pathetic ballad of one of our most popular poets.

CHAPTER II.

EARLY VISITS OF EUROPEANS — CHAMPLAIN VISITS AND NAMES THE CAPE AND HARBOR — CAPT. JOHN SMITH VISITS AND NAMES THE CAPE — A FISHING PLANTATION ESTABLISHED UPON IT — DORCHESTER ADVENTURERS AND PLYMOUTH PEOPLE OCCUPY THE TERRITORY.

The first Europeans who landed on the shores of Cape Ann were some of the company of the French who founded the first permanent settlement in Nova Scotia. DeMonts, the leader of the enterprise, accompanied by Champlain and others, made a voyage of exploration along the coast of New England in 1605, and, during its progress, anchored off the head of the Cape, which, from the three islands they saw there, they called Cap aux Isles. In the next year (1606), another party, with Champlain again of the number, in a small bark, in search of a better place for settlement than that they occupied in Nova Scotia, once more visited the Cap aux Isles and entered what is now Gloucester Harbor, where they came to anchor and remained two or three days. They gave it the name of Le Beau Port. Here, under a chief named Quionhamence, they found as many as 200 natives, with whom they had considerable intercourse, during which the French thought they perceived some signs of hostile demonstrations, whereupon they hastened to depart.

The next visitors to the Cape were of the English race. In 1614 the famous Capt. John Smith, with two ships and forty-five men and boys, came to the coast of New England, or, as it was then called, North Virginia. Leaving his ships and most of his men at Monhegan to pursue the objects of the voyage, Capt. Smith, in a small boat with a few of his men, explored the coast from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod, within which bounds, according to his own account, he "sounded about twenty-five excellent good harbors." Le Beau Port does not appear correctly drawn on the map of the territory he visited, and it is not known that he landed anywhere on the Cape, though he gave it a name,—Tragabrigzanda,—which was that of a Turkish lady who showed him much kindness while a prisoner in her country. After his return to England, Prince Charles substituted for it that of his mother, Queen Ann, consort of James I. The three islands lying off the head of the Cape were called the "Three Turks' Heads," in memory of an exploit by which three Turkish champions were successively slain by Smith in personal combat; but the name was not retained and the islands have long borne their present separate appellations.

Having received the name by which it has ever since been known, and which, in fact, down to the present century, was quite generally used for that of the town situated upon it, Cape Ann does not again appear as a point of interest, or even of notice, till, in the autumn of 1623, fourteen men were left, by an English fishing vessel, to spend the winter upon its shores. These men were part of a company sent in that year, in a small ship of fifty tons, on a fishing voyage to the coast of New England. One object of their employers,—some merchants and others about Dorchester, Eng.,—was the establishment of a plantation for fishing and trade, but it does not appear that they had any particular spot in view for this purpose. The ship came to the usual fishing-ground (about Monhegan), but, arriving late in the season for fishing, did not complete her lading there; and "the master thought good to pass into Mattachusetts Bay, to try whether that would yield him any." It was the first fishing voyage from England to any part of our coast so far to the west as Cape Ann.

The Dorchester adventurers, in pursuance of their design to establish a fishing settlement in New England, sent over two ships in 1624 to fish, and had thirty-two men carrying on the plantation work at Cape Ann,—two of whom, John Tylly and Thomas Gardener, were overseers, the first of the fishing and the other of the planting. But the fishing this year "sped very ill," and the returns promised no encouragement for the continuance of the enterprise. Not disheartened, however, the company despatched three vessels in 1625; in one of which, of about forty tons, were sent "kine and other provisions"; and, that nothing should be wanting to secure the prosperity of the colony, so far at least as the proceedings of the plantation could contribute to it, a very superior man, Roger Conant, already in the country, was appointed its superintendent, or governor, and the Rev. John Lyford was invited to join the plantation as its minister; but at the end of the year, finding their operations still resulting in a large pecuniary loss, the adventurers decided to abandon the design of planting a fishing colony at Cape Ann. Their property at this place was left in charge of Mr. Conant, who, with John Woodbury, John Balch, Peter Palfrey, and perhaps a few others, soon removed to Naumkeag, now Salem, and planted there "a new Colony upon the old foundation," which became the first permanent settlement in the colony of Massachusetts Bay. The spot occupied by these early residents is plainly marked by tradition; and other evidence is not wanting to indicate the place. It is on the north-west side of the outer harbor. With reference to its early use, probably, it received the name of "ffisherman's field," by which it is called in the early records of Gloucester. The spot used for landing fish is indicated by the name it has always borne—the Stage.

The Dorchester adventurers were not the only party that made the harbor of Cape Ann a scene of business operations in 1624 and 1625. Some of the Plymouth Company had procured, in the year first named, a patent, conveying to them "a certain tract of ground in New England," "in a known place then comonly called Cape Anne," and sent hither the ship "Charity," on a fishing voyage, in the spring of that year, after she had discharged some supplies at Plymouth. The master of the ship, it is said, was a "drunken beast"; most of his men were like him; and a poor voyage was the natural result. Notwithstanding this ill success, the Pilgrims and their friends in England undertook another enterprise of the same kind, in 1625, with a ship and pinnace; but, before their arrival, another vessel came into the harbor, and her crew seized the stage and other provisions made by the crew of the "Charity" and the Plymouth people the year before. This act led to a dispute and a war of words, but happily a more serious encounter was prevented by the friendly interposition of Mr. Conant and Capt. William Peirce, the master, it is supposed, of the ship in which the Pilgrims were interested, and which was then lying in the harbor.

With the close of this year's fishing all connection of the Plymouth people with Cape Ann seems to have terminated, though their last vessels were highly successful in taking fish, and both of them, "well laden," "went joyfully home together," the master of the larger ship towing "ye lesser ship at his sterne all ye way over-bound."

Thus, probably in the early part of 1626, Cape Ann, after three years' occupancy by English residents, was left in quiet possession of the aborigines. During the succeeding five or six years an occasional visitor of that race came to its shores, but not more than one or two years followed before the natives were supplanted by a company of permanent settlers from England. All we know about the territory, as the seat of any Indian settlement, is derived from the account of Champlain's visits in 1605 and 1606. Its Indian name was Wingaersheek. Skeletons of the aborigines and Indian tools have been found here; but whether it was the permanent seat of a tribe, and whether our ancestors were welcomed to a friendly wigwam, or alarmed by the menacing gesture and suspicious carriage of the red man, no record or tradition is left to tell.

CHAPTER III.

PERMANENT SETTLEMENT.

TRADITIONARY ACCOUNT OF FIRST SETTLEMENT — PERMANENT SETTLEMENT AND INCORPORATION OF THE TOWN — LISTS OF SETTLERS TO THE END OF THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY — DISTINGUISHED DESCENDANTS OF SOME OF THEM.

It is not certain when the permanent settlement of Cape Ann was commenced. A tradition, which has been handed down in the Robinson family, relates that a son of the Pilgrim pastor, with others, left Plymouth in 1626, in search of a suitable place for a fishing station, which they found at Cape Ann, where they set up a fishing stage, and established their families. This tradition comes to us through a channel which entitles it to some respect, but, in the absence of any confirmatory evidence, it may properly be left without further remark here.

On somewhat better authority we are told that there were settlers here as early as 1633, who "met, and carried on the worship of God among themselves, read the word of God, prayed to him, and sung psalms." This statement is made in a printed sermon, preached by the Rev. E. Forbes, minister of the First Parish in Gloucester, in September, 1792, who gives, in the margin, reference to an "ancient manuscript" to warrant his assertion.

But, whatever uncertainty may exist with reference to the first permanent occupation of Cape Ann by English settlers, it is a matter of record that the General Court, May 22, 1639, passed an act for the

encouragement of Mr. Maurice Thomson, merchant, and others to begin a fishing plantation there. It is not known, however, to what extent he availed himself of the privilege granted to him by the act, but it appears that he actually commenced operations under it, for the early town records make mention of "the land where Mr. Tomson's frame stood"; and it was, probably, the enterprise of Mr. Thomson, to which a writer of that period, who resided in Boston in 1639, alludes in a work which he published soon after his return to England, in which he says: "At Cape Ann, where fishing is set forward, and some stages builded. there one Master Rashley is chaplain." Another early writer calls "Cape Ann a place of fishing; being peopled with fishermen till Mr. Richard Blindman came from a place in Plimouth Patten."

From the statements here presented, it is reasonable to conclude that Cape Ann was occupied by a few fishermen several years, perhaps continuously, before a town was incorporated upon its territory. The first movement with this end in view was in October, 1641, when commissioners were appointed by the General Court to view and settle the bounds of Ipswich, Cape Ann, and Jeffries' Creek (now Manchester); and the deputy-governor (Mr. Endicott) and Messrs. Downing and Hathorne, deputies from Salem, or any two of them, were appointed to dispose of all lands and other things at Cape Ann. Pursuant to this authority, as the town records declare, "the first ordering, settling, and disposing of lots, was made by Mr. Endicott and Mr. Downing, commissioners, 2d month, 1642." Whatever the settlement may then have been, in regard to numbers, it assumed more importance, about that time, by the arrival of the Rev. Richard Blynman, with several families from Plymouth Colony; and it was, at a court in May in that year, by the simple form of incorporation then used, established as a plantation and called Gloucester, taking this name, probably, by desire of some of the principal settlers, who are said to have come from the city of the same name in England.

No means exist for ascertaining the names of all of Mr. Blynman's companions. No discrimination is made in the records of the town between these settlers and those who preceded and those who followed them; but it is not difficult to make out a list of those who are known to have been residents of Gloucester and proprietors of its soil from the time of its permanent settlement to the close of 1650. The following persons appear to have been of this class, all of whom, certainly with one, and possibly with three or four other exceptions, died in town, and all but three of whom left descendants: —

James Babson, Thomas Bray, William Brown, Mr. (probably Edmund) Clark, John Coit, Jr., Cement Coldam, John Collins, Anthony Day, Osman Dutch, Robert Elwell, Sylvester Eveleth, Stephen Glover, William Haskell, Thomas Jones, Thomas Judkin, Thomas Kent, John Pearse, Capt. (probably William) Perkins, Thomas Prince, Abraham Robinson, William Sargent, Morris Somes, William Stevens, Wm. Southmayd, Walter Tybbot, Thomas Very, William Vinson, Henry Walker.

Capt. Perkins is supposed to be the William Perkins who became a preacher, and removed to Topsfield. The three other exceptions are John Coit, Jr., William Stevens, and William Southmayd, each of whom left a wife and children in town, but it is not known that any one of the three died in it. Stephen Glover, Thomas Judkin, and Henry Walker left no descendants.

After residing in Gloucester a few years, Mr. Blynman and several of the first settlers removed to New London, thirteen in all, as follows, viz.:

Christopher Avery, James Avery, William Addes, Richard Blynman, Obadiah Bruen, Hugh Calkin, John Coit, Sr., William Hough, William Kenie, Andrew Lester, William Meades, Ralph Parker, William Wellman.

We may infer that these settlers left with no unfriendly feeling towards their recent home, for their lots in New London were laid out in a new street, long known as Cape Ann Lane, and now called Ann Street. Others of the first settlers who were land-holders, were —

William Ash, Thomas Ashley, Alexander Baker, George Blake, John Bourne, Thomas Chase, Matthew Coe, Thomas Cornish, William Cotton, William Dudbridge, William Evans, Henry Felch, James Fogg, John Gallope, Charles Glover, John Holgrave, Zebulon Hill, George Ingersoll, John Kettle, Nicholas Liston, John Luther, Solomon Martin, Thomas Milward, George Norton, Hugh Pritchard, Phineas Rider, Edward Rouse, John Sadler, Thomas Skellin, James Smith, Thomas Smith, Stephen Strecter, John Studley, Thomas Wakley, John Wakley, Philip Yondall.

The names of four others — Richard Beeford, Mr. Fryer, Samuel Haieward, and Robert Sadler — who do not appear as proprietors of the soil, complete the list of settlers of the early period before named, — eighty-one in all.

In the second half of the seventeenth century, not many New England towns gained much by immigration. We cannot count as many as ninety, who became new settlers in Gloucester, during all that time. The following list is believed to contain the names of all of them:

Joseph Allen, Ralph Andrews, Edmund Ashby, Thomas Bailey, Giles Barge, William Bartholomew, Anthony Bennet, Richard Biles, John Briars, Edmund Broadway, John Brown, John Butman, William Card, Arthur Churchill, Peter Coffin, William Cogswell, William Colman, John Cook, John Curney, Zaccheus Curtis, John Davis, Nicholas Denning, Richard Dike, Samuel Dolliver, Moses Dudy, Peter Duncan, John Durgee, William Ellery, John Emerson, Peter Emons, John Fitch, Bartholomew Foster, James Gardner, George Giddings, Richard Gooding, John Hadley, Nathaniel Hadlock, John Hammons, John Hardin, Edward Harraden, George Harvey, Samuel Hodgkins, James Hughes, John Jackson Charles James, Henry Joslyn, John Lane, Thomas Lufkin, Thomas Low, Edmund Marshall, Philip Merritt, Thomas Millet, Edward Mills, Henry Muddle, Francis Norwood, Joseph Page, Elias Parkman, Jeffrey Parsons, Thomas Penny, John Pool, Rowland Powell, Thomas Pulcifer, Thomas Riggs, John Ring, John Roberts, John Rowe, Abiel Sadler, James Sawyer, William Sargent, 2d, James Sayward, Robert Skamp, Morris Smith, John Smith, Philip Stanwood, George Storer, Harlakenden Symonds, Richard Tar, James Travis, Robert Tucker, John Tucker, Bridget Varney, John Wallis, Samuel Webber, Nathaniel Wharf, William Whitridge, Richard Window, Henry Witham, Humphrey Woodbury, Samuel York.

Of these eighty-nine persons, about fifty became permanent settlers, and found here their final resting-place. At least, thirty of the whole number are represented by descendants living in town, and bearing their names.

The first settlers seem to have located themselves around the harbor, and on the "neck of house-lots," by which term they usually designated that portion of the territory lying between Annisquam River and Mill River. Before 1651, it is not certain that there was a single family residing in any other part of the town, excepting one or two on the easterly side of Mill River; but, soon after that year, settlers are found near Little Good Harbor, at Walker's Creek, at Little River, at Fresh-water Cove, and at Annisquam. A few years later, inhabitants gathered around the coves on the north side of the Cape; and finally, about the end of the century, the head of the Cape itself received a few permanent occupants. Kettle Cove had become the abode of one family or more; and no portion of the soil, fit for agricultural purposes, remained unappropriated to attract the attention of new comers. Such is the rugged and broken character of the territory, that even the small number of people that then composed its population, covered almost every acre of land that could be easily cultivated. From this fact, and other evidence, it appears that most of the early settlers got their living from the soil, and not from the sea. Boat-fishing, near the shore, may have been carried on in a small way; but, noted as the place has since become for its great fishing interests, there is nothing to show that this branch of industry engaged the attention of the people of Gloucester, to any considerable extent, during the first fifty years after the settlement of the town.

In concluding this account of the early settlers, it may be added for the information of any who may wish further knowledge concerning them, that works are extant in print in which the descendants of all who became founders of families in the town are traced down through several generations. The names of some of them have been carried, by the distinction of descendants, into the domain of general history. William Ellery, a signer of the Declaration of Independence, was a great-grandson of one; Theophilus Parsons, a man of the highest eminence as a lawyer and judge, was a great-grandson of another; Winthrop Sargent, governor of the Mississippi territory, was a great-grandson of another; besides whom, each of these families has furnished other distinguished men; and each has been more or less conspicuous in the humbler sphere of town affairs.

Winthrop Sargent, son of a merchant of Gloucester, of the same name, was born May 1, 1753, and graduated at Harvard College in 1771. In 1776, he joined the Revolutionary Army, and served with distinction till the close of the war, attaining the rank of major. He was adjutant-general in the disastrous defeat of St. Clair, at the battle of the Miamis, Nov. 3, 1791, and was wounded in the engagement. In 1796, a territorial government was established for the Mississippi country, and Gen. Sargent was soon afterwards appointed its governor. From this place he was removed by President Jefferson in

1801, but he made Mississippi his home during the remainder of his life. He died June 3, 1820.

CHAPTER IV.

FIRST SELECTMEN — EARLY ORDERS FOR THE GOOD OF THE TOWN — SHIP-BUILDING — THE FIRST CHURCH — ITS MINISTERS AND MEETING-HOUSES.

The first persons appointed by the Commissioners of the General Court "to order the prudential affairs of Gloucester," were William Stevens, Mr. Sadler, Obadiah Bruen, George Norton, Mr. Addes, Mr. Milward, Mr. Fryer, and Walter Tybbot. The next board of selectmen, as we should now call them, consisted of only five, — four of the preceding list, with the addition of Hugh Calkin. These were chosen by the town, for the year 1643, and five continued to be the number of this board of town-officers for more than a century following. The orders "made and published for the good of the town," during the first ten years after its settlement, relate to trees and timber, highways, trespass by "whatever great beasts," burial place, and various other matters of less importance. For mending the highway, "not above half of the town" were to be warned for one day.

Among the early acts of the town was a regulation providing that all ship-carpenters that build vessels of greater or lesser burthen should pay the town one shilling a ton.

This indicates the occupation of some of the settlers; and we know that a ship was built in the town as early as 1643, by Mr. Stevens and other ship-carpenters, and that an historian of this period takes notice of the good timber for shipping to be found here, of several vessels that had been built in the town, and of "a very sufficient builder." This builder was, without doubt, William Stevens, who had built in London many ships of great burthen, among which was one called the "Royal Merchant," of 600 tons. Perhaps he built many vessels in Gloucester. We know that he was under contract to build one in 1661, soon after which date he was heavily fined, and probably imprisoned, for speaking in contemptuous terms of Charles II., and renouncing his allegiance to that monarch.

The settlers of Cape Ann, with a minister among their number, were, of course, soon organized into a church government. This gathering of believers, under Rev. Richard Blynman, was the nineteenth church, in the order of formation, in the Colony of Massachusetts. Neither history nor tradition has handed down any account of its members, or its early proceedings; nor, in fact, of its history for sixty years. Mr. Blynman's ministry in Gloucester was not a happy one. His church was defamed, his public meetings were disturbed, and he himself was charged with a false interpretation of Scripture. But he appears to have worked undisturbed in other fields of labor, and to have been greeted with the loving salutations of eminent men. He was living in New London in November, 1650, and, in 1658, removed to New Haven, whence he returned to England, and was living in the city of Bristol in 1670. He is said to have died at an old age. His wife's name was Mary, and their children, born in Gloucester, were, Jeremiah, Ezekiel, and Azarikam. The name was found in Bristol in 1871.

Mr. Blynman's successor in the ministry here was William Perkins, — the Capt. Perkins who owned land in town in 1647. No means exist for ascertaining his rank in the church, nor the exact office that he filled in it, and it is only by the Quarterly Court Records that he appears at all as a laborer in spiritual things. These present him as a defendant in actions brought by a factious member of his congregation; but they contain nothing more serious against him than the reason alleged by a silly woman, in justification of her absence from meeting, that the teacher was "fitter to be a lady's chamber-man than to be in the pulpit." He remained in Gloucester till 1655, when he sold his houses and land here to Thomas Millet, Sr., and removed to Topsfield, where he died May 21, 1682. His wife was Elizabeth Wortten, whom he married at Roxbury, Aug. 30, 1636. Besides a daughter, Mary, born here in 1651, he had several other children.

During a few years following Mr. Perkins's departure, the church contented itself with such religious edification as the two most gifted of the lay brethren — William Stevens and Thomas Millet — could afford; but the town was mindful of its want of a "meete person to come and preach the word of God," and accordingly engaged Mr. John Emerson, in 1661, to be their minister. In July of that year, they voted him a salary of sixty pounds per annum, which he was to receive in Indian corn, pease, barley, fish, mackerel, beef, or pork. He was son of Thomas Emerson, of Ipswich. He graduated at Harvard College, in 1656; and was ordained as pastor of this church, Oct. 6, 1663, which, to use the language of one of his successors, "he served more than forty years in the gospel of God's dear Son." He was not indifferent to the secular concerns of life, for he was part owner of the three principal mills in town, and though not favorably located for the accumulation of property, he died possessed of a considerable estate. Only one article from his pen is known to be extant in print, — the account furnished by him in a letter to the Rev. Cotton Mather, of the strange and wonderful occurrences by which the town was kept in a state of agitation and alarm for several months, in 1692, which Mr. Emerson ascribed to diabolical agency. Mr. Emerson died Dec. 2, 1700, aged seventy-five. His wife was Ruth, daughter of Deputy-Gov. Symonds. She died Feb. 23, 1702. They had several children, one of whom, John, born May 14, 1670, graduated at Harvard College, in 1689, and died June 21, 1732, minister of a church in Portsmouth, N. H.

Mr. Emerson's congregation, small and weak at the time of his settlement, had about trebled in number, and was left by him in a state of increasing growth and prosperity; but nearly two years elapsed before the vacant pastorate was filled. Finally, Sept. 11, 1702, out of four who were proposed as candidates, the church unanimously made choice of the Rev. John White, chaplain of Saco Fort. He was a son of Joseph White, of Watertown, and was born in 1678. He graduated at Harvard College, in 1698. Liberal terms of settlement were made, and his ordination took place April 21, 1703. A long and peaceful ministry of more than half a century followed the connection now formed between pastor and people. In 1703, his church consisted of seventy members. In the course of fifty-one years, three new churches were formed by members of his flock; and at the end of that period, there remained in the parent church two hundred and sixty members. When old age came on and his health began to fail, he was provided with a colleague; but he continued to preach occasionally till near the end of his life, and at last dropped gently away, while sitting in his arm-chair, Jan. 17, 1760, in the eighty-third year of his age, and the fifty-eighth of his ministry.

Mr. White was thrice married: first, June 9, 1703, to Lucy, daughter of the Rev. John Wise, of Ipswich, who died March 5, 1727, aged fifty-six years; next, to Widow Abigail Blake, daughter of the Rev. Increase Mather, of Boston, who died Dec. 10, 1748, aged seventy; and last, to Mrs. Alice Norwood, of Gloucester, who died in January, 1763. His children, eleven in number, were all by his first wife. Two of his sons — Benjamin and Samuel — graduated at Harvard College, but of their history and end very little is known. Four of his children were daughters, all of whom were married. One of them, Hannah, died at the great age of ninety-three, Oct. 26, 1814.

Mr. White's death left his colleague sole pastor of the church. Mr. Samuel Moody, of York, afterwards the famous Master Moody of Dummer Academy, grandson of Mr. White, had been the choice of a majority of the church as colleague, but he declined, and an invitation was extended to the Rev. Samuel Chandler, of the same place. He accepted it, and was installed as colleague pastor, Nov. 13, 1751. Mr. Chandler was a son of Josiah Chandler, of Andover, where he was born in 1713. He graduated at Harvard College, in 1735; and, in 1742, was ordained minister of the church in York. Into the social festivities of the day of installation, we are permitted to take a look by the pastor himself, who informs us, in a journal which he kept, that "Deacon William Parsons entertained the council at his own charge; Mr. William Stevens, the Schollars and Gentlemen, at his own charge; and Mr John Stevens entertained the Council in the morning with Plumb Cake." During Mr. White's ministry, a second, a third, and a fourth church had been organized by members dismissed from the first. In 1755, the fifth and last one was formed by members residing at Sandy Bay, which portion of the town had been already set off as a separate parish. In the same year, Mr. Chandler served from Sept. 8th, to Dec. 28th, as chaplain in the expedition against Crown Point. The First Parish had now become so reduced in territorial extent, that its members were comprised chiefly of those who dwelt on the borders of the main harbor; but the growth of the maritime business of the town within fifty years, had been such that these now formed a very large religious body. The customs of the town exacted of the pastor of this large flock, numerous and trying duties, and they were sometimes a heavy burden upon him. In addition to these were the political troubles of the period, and, hardest of all to

bear, the danger that, towards the close of his life, threatened the eternal welfare of his parishioners. A new teacher had come to them, and, in opposition to the venerable authority of ancient interpretation and universal belief, was proclaiming the final salvation of the human race as a doctrine of the Holy Scriptures. Besides the trials incident to his public office, great domestic troubles fell to his lot; but wisdom, prudence, and patience were conspicuous traits of his character, and he bore all his afflictions as a sincere disciple of Christ. Mr. Chandler died of consumption, March 16, 1775, aged sixty-two. His wife was Anna Pecker, of Haverhill, to whom he was married Sept. 12, 1738. He had two sons and two daughters. John, the eldest son, was a mariner; and, in 1777, was a prisoner in England. Samuel, the other son, graduated at Harvard College, in 1775. He was also a prisoner in England, in 1777; and, on his release, settled in Newburyport, where he died, in May, 1787.

The next pastor of the First Parish was the Rev. Eli Forbes. He was born in Westborough, in October, 1726, and entered Harvard College in 1744, but did not graduate till 1751, having been absent a portion of the intervening time as a soldier in the service of the Colony. He was ordained minister of the Second Parish in Brookfield, in 1752, and remained in that office till March, 1776, when, at his own request, he received a dismission. His call to the First Parish in Gloucester was opposed by friends of the Rev. John Murray, but without success; and it was formally made and accepted. The installation took place June 5, 1776. At the time of his settlement, the prospect of a happy ministry was not encouraging. The town had just entered upon a period of severe suffering in various forms, which continued through the Revolutionary war; and the church itself was distressed by the withdrawal of the followers of Mr. Murray from public religious worship. A long controversy followed the latter event, which was finally terminated by a lawsuit, which resulted in favor of the seceders. The war had now ceased, and the remainder of Mr. Forbes's ministry was passed in a quiet discharge of the ordinary duties of his office, which he continued to perform till far advanced in life. He died Dec. 15, 1804, aged seventy-eight. His ministerial gifts, together with his high moral character and his social qualities, secured him a large degree of popularity in the town, and consideration and respect wherever he was known. The degree of Doctor of Divinity was conferred upon him by Harvard College, a short time before his death. Several productions of his pen were printed, among which was a "Family Book of Sermons."

Mr. Forbes married — first, Mary, daughter of the Rev. Ebenezer Parkman, of Westborough; she died Jan. 16, 1776; and he next married, Sept. 15, 1776, Mrs. Lucy, widow of Hon. Thomas Sanders, of Gloucester, who died June 5, 1780, aged forty-eight. For a third wife he took Mrs. Sarah, widow of Capt. Thomas Parsons, of Newbury, to whom he was married Sept. 13, 1781; she died in Boston, of small-pox, Sept. 19, 1792. He next married, Nov. 13, 1793, Mrs. Lucy Baldwin, of Brookfield, who died March 13, 1804. She was a sister of his first wife, and both died of cancer. Mr. Forbes had a son Eli, who was a captain in the army, in 1800; and a daughter Polly, who married Peter Coffin.

Mr. Forbes was succeeded in the ministry, in this parish, by the Rev. Perez Lincoln, who was ordained Aug. 7, 1805. He was son of David Lincoln, of Hingham, and was born Jan. 21, 1777. He graduated at Harvard College in 1798. He entered upon the duties of his pastorate with zeal and devotion, but his health soon began to fail; his complaint, which was of a pulmonary nature, made such progress that he ceased to preach in the fall of 1810, and died in Hingham, June 13, 1811. His wife was Sophia, daughter of Thomas Loring, of Hingham. She remained a widow, and died Oct. 2, 1817, leaving no children.

Though Mr. Lincoln's ministry was a short one, it had continued long enough to make a deep impression upon the people of his charge, and to secure him a large place in their affections.

After supplying their pulpit with transient preachers for more than four years, the parish gave the Rev. Levi Hartshorn a call to become their pastor, which he accepted, at a salary of $700. Mr. Hartshorn was born in Amherst, N. H., in 1789, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1813, and was ordained over the First Parish here Oct. 18, 1815. The ministry of this young pastor, like that of his last predecessor, was soon cut short by death. While on a visit to his father, at Amherst, in September, 1819, he was taken sick with typhus fever, and died there on the 27th of that month. In a sermon preached to the bereaved parish by the Rev. Dr. Dana, his character is portrayed as one of the highest excellence. Mr. Hartshorn was the last person who died in the office of minister of the First Parish. The divisions with regard to some of the fundamental doctrines of Calvinism, which, about the time of his death, had begun to rend many of the ancient churches of New England, were beginning to separate the members of this parish, the Baptists and Methodists proselyting within its limits, drew many away; and it was not till Aug. 3, 1825, that the vacant pulpit was again filled by a settled pastor. On that day, Hosea Hildreth, who had been for many years an instructor in Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., was ordained to that office. He labored with zeal and ability in the cause of temperance, both in town and abroad, and finally engaged in it as a public lecturer and agent. Having entered upon this employment, his connection with the parish was dissolved, at his own request, Dec. 31, 1833. Mr. Hildreth died at Sterling, July 10, 1835, leaving a widow and several children, of whom the only one born in Gloucester, Charles H., is a physician in his native town.

The next minister of the parish was the Rev. Luther Hamilton, a native of Conway, who was installed Nov. 12, 1834, as a decided Unitarian in his religious views. To these views, a majority of the parish were now attached; but a majority of the members of the church still held to the ancient faith. Their concurrence in the settlement of Mr. Hamilton had not been asked; and they soon held a meeting, at which they voted that all connection between the church and parish should be dissolved. Their organization was kept up, however, till 1837, when, most of its members having joined other churches, this venerable body, after a duration of nearly two hundred years as a church of the Puritan faith, ceased to exist.

Mr. Hamilton's ministry here was a short one. Having been elected in November, 1835, as a representative to the General Court, by a political party whose opinions were opposed by a majority of his parishioners, they soon after dismissed him. From this time the pulpit was occupied by transient preachers till July 19, 1837, when the Rev. Josiah K. Waite was installed as pastor. He continued in that office till Sept. 30, 1849, when he resigned. The following have since been the ministers of this parish: The Rev. William Mountford, the Rev. Robert P. Rogers, and the Rev. Minot G. Gage, who is the pastor at the present time.

In a printed sermon of the Rev. E. Forbes, he tells us, "that the first settlers of Cape Ann were early solicitous to set up and maintain the public worship of God among them. Though they were few in numbers, and strangers in the land, yet, like Abraham, as soon as they pitched their tent, they set up an altar; i. e., they agreed on a place where they might meet for the public worship of God on the Sabbath." In another sermon, he says: "So long ago as in 1633, the first settlers of this town consecrated a house for public worship." The exact location of this house cannot now be ascertained; but it is known to have adjoined the burial-place. Very soon after the incorporation of the town, it may be inferred, from allusions in the town records, that there was a meeting-house on the Meeting-house Plain. On this spot, about the time of Mr. Emerson's settlement, a new one was erected, probably the third one built in the town. The sum voted by the inhabitants to pay for it was £60, besides the boards that should be used upon it Nothing more is known about it, except that, in 1686, the town voted to build two galleries in it, and that it was furnished with a bell. In 1700, a new one was erected on the site of, or near the old one. The amount raised, in three assessments, to pay for it, was £253. After it was built, the town voted that the women should be seated in the east gallery; and appointed a committee, consisting of the two deacons and three other prominent citizens, to seat the people in it. The population at the Harbor, at the end of the forty years following, had gained so much in wealth and numbers over the northerly part of the parish, that seven of the principal citizens, resident in the former, undertook to build a new meeting-house for the parish in their section of the town; and after considerable trouble, the northerly part was set off as the Fourth Parish. The new meeting-house was erected on a street named Cornhill Street, but now known as Middle Street, and was of large dimensions: sixty feet wide, seventy-five feet long, and thirty feet stud. It had a tower seventy feet high, which was surmounted by a spire of equal height. It stood ninety years; and, in its old age, when, on a windy Sunday, the great building shook upon its foundation, and the timbers creaked with startling sounds, the worshippers were awed by a feeling of insecurity, even in the temple of the Lord. Public worship was held in it, for the last time, April 6, 1828. It was soon afterwards taken down; and before the close of the year, the meeting-house now standing on the same spot was erected. This was dedicated Dec. 25, 1828.

CHAPTER V.

EARLY EVENTS — INDIAN WAR — DIVISION OF LAND — TOWN OPPRESSED BY THE RULE OF ANDROS — WITCHCRAFT — COLONY TAX IN 1693 — FIRST SCHOOL — BURIAL GROUND — THE PEOPLE ALL FARMERS.

Life in an isolated hamlet of fifty or sixty families furnishes few incidents for general history. Very few matters are transmitted to posterity even in its local annals. A few facts, however, concerning the early history of Gloucester, have been preserved and may properly be grouped together here. In the year of its incorporation, Gloucester was "to have ten muskets of the country's left them," by order of the General Court. The rank of the town, at that time, in pecuniary importance, is shown in its proportion of a Colony tax of £800; that of Gloucester was £6 10*s*., while Ipswich is down at £82. In 1650 the town was presented at court for being "deficient in y^e^ Stocks"; and in 1653 was fined the penalty of the law and costs for defect in ammunition. In the last mentioned year the people authorized the erection of a saw-mill, a corn-mill having been set up previously.

The early inhabitants of the town were undoubtedly indebted to the forests, which covered their whole territory, for a considerable part of their living. The various acts of the town, in reference to wood and timber, authorize a belief that a traffic in these was early commenced, and indicate a watchful care of the forest. For several successive years, every family was permitted to cut twenty cords on the town's common for its own use; but none was to be sold out of town under three shillings and sixpence per cord.

From these matters of mere local interest the concern of the people was called to an important event, which awakened deep anxiety in the minds of every inhabitant of the English race in the Colony. The isolated situation of the town, protected on three sides by the sea, and on the other by a tract of country quite thickly peopled by the new settlers, saved it from great apprehensions of assault by an Indian enemy, though not perhaps from some degree of alarm. During all the troubled period of the Indian war of 1675, it is not known that any hostile Indian set his foot on the soil of Cape Ann, nor is it known that more than one person fell in fight during the war. Sixteen men from Gloucester were certainly in the military service of the Colony at this time, one of whom, Joseph Somes, was killed in the great fight at Narragansett Fort. Isaac Ellery, said to have been of Gloucester, was also slain in the same battle. Edward Haraden, who was in the company with Somes, was wounded. The large number sent to the war by this town, comprising as many as one-fourth of all its male citizens who were capable of bearing arms, shows the exigency of the occasion, and proves that the struggle, on both sides, was for the possession of the soil.

A few years after the restoration of peace, the town entered upon a measure which engaged the attention of all of its people — the first general division or grant of land. On the 27th February, 1688, it voted that every householder and young man, upwards of twenty-one years of age, that was born in town, and was then living in it, and bearing charges to town and county, should have six acres of land. In accordance with this vote, one hundred and thirteen lots were laid out. The list of grantees exhibits one remarkable fact, that not more than fifteen males of adult age had been added to the population by immigration in the preceding twenty-four years; and it does not seem that the number of transient settlers in the same time had been considerable.

While the people were thus adding to their individual property, they were losing some of their political privileges. The Colony charter was taken away, and a governor of New England, Sir Edmund Andros, was appointed by the king. The oppressive rule of Andros was resisted by the selectmen of Gloucester, who, for non-compliance of the town with a warrant for the assessment of one of the odious taxes levied upon it by him and his council, in 1688, were fined at the superior court in Salem, to the extent, with costs, of upwards of forty pounds. This proceeding prepared the people of the town to hear with joy the news that soon after reached them, giving information that their tyrannical ruler had been deposed and imprisoned; and to declare, in town meeting, with "a full and clear vote in the affirmative," in favor of re-assuming the old government under the charter.

The political anxieties of the people were scarcely terminated when a new and wholly unlooked-for trouble overwhelmed them with amazement and terror. The shocking delusion of witchcraft, which makes the year 1692 one of the saddest in New England history, left no fatal results in Gloucester, but several of its people were charged with this imaginary crime, and confined in prison for trial. It does not appear, however, that any were brought before the court. The names of the accused were: Abigail, daughter of Timothy Somes; Ann, wife of Capt. William Dolliver; Mary, wife of Hugh Rowe; Phebe, wife of Timothy Day; Widow Rachel Vinson; Esther, wife of Samuel Elwell; Rebecca, wife of Richard Dike; and Abigail, daughter of Hugh Rowe.

Besides the consternation and alarm produced by these arrests, the people of the town were distressed by other occurrences, which were supposed to be occasioned by diabolical agency. Spectral French and Indians were seen prowling about the houses and lurking around the garrison; and, after enduring these disturbers of their peace for a fortnight, the people sent abroad for help. A company of sixty men came from Ipswich to assist in their deliverance from these mysterious invaders; but it does not appear that any of them were captured, which can hardly be a matter of surprise, considering that they were too ethereal to leave a foot-print upon the soft and miry places over which they were pursued.

The slow increase of the town in population and property to 1693 is shown by a tax-list levied in that year. The tax was for a quarterly instalment of its proportion of a Colony tax of £30,000. The number of polls assessed was seventy-eight, on which ten shillings each was charged. The balance of the assessment — the amount taxed for property — was £29 11*s*. This tax-list exhibits the noticeable fact that Gloucester held at this time but a very insignificant rank as a place of maritime importance; for it shows that all its tonnage in vessels was comprised in six sloops, a boat, and a shallop.

Though the growth of the town was slow, it had from the beginning contained the number of householders requiring it, according to a law of the Colony, to support a public school. These, however, were so scattered over its territory that no considerable portion of the children could be conveniently gathered in one school. At length, in 1696, education began to be a matter of public concern, but no schoolmaster was chosen till 1698, when a vote in town-meeting "carried it to choose one," and Thomas Riggs, Sr., was chosen to that office, "to have one shilling and six pence a day during the town's pleasure, and the said Riggs's likeing to carry it on." Mr. Riggs was then town clerk, having been in the office thirty-three years.

Allusion has already been made to a burial ground. This spot, situated near the First meeting-house, and about midway between the Harbor and the Second meeting-house, is supposed to have been the sole depository of the dead till 1698, when the inhabitants on the westerly side of Annisquam River had a grant of land for the same purpose. The first burial place has been enlarged from time to time, and been used as a place of sepulture down to a recent date. In this ancient cemetery, at the period of which we are now writing, nearly all of those who had given the vigor of early manhood to the pioneer work of the settlement were sleeping the sleep of death. Of the twenty-four persons mentioned in the list of the first settlers as known to have died in town, eleven were living in 1690, and three passed the limit of the century, — one of whom, William Sargent, lingered on till 1717, when, at the age of ninety-three, he, too, joined the great congregation of the dead. The descendants of these first settlers, with the accession of those of later comers, and those brought by immigration, composed, at the close of the seventeenth century, a population, probably, amounting to six hundred.

It has already been stated that, down to the period of which we are now writing, nearly all the inhabitants of the town were farmers. There is sufficient evidence of this in the locations selected for their homes, and in the inventories of their estates. The largest accumulation of property shown by any one of these inventories was that of Henry Walker, who died in 1693, leaving an estate of £922, consisting almost wholly of land and farming stock, and a similar preponderance of this kind of wealth, with entire absence of maritime property, is found in nearly all of the inventories that have been preserved. The distribution of the substantial comforts of life was probably quite as nearly equal among the early settlers as it has ever been since. None were so poor, so far as we know, as to wish in vain for food; and none were rich enough to have much left for luxury, after their daily necessities were supplied.

Having, in 1700, paid Samuel English, an Indian, a few pounds, in satisfaction of his claim to their territory, the town closed its public acts for the seventeenth century by a "full vote and consent of all" to keep the second Wednesday in the next as a day of humiliation and prayer.

CHAPTER VI.

FIRST CHURCH AND ITS DEACONS — NEW SETTLERS — ACTIVITY IN SHIP-BUILDING — FIRST SCHOONER AND THE MAN WHO BUILT IT — SCHOOL AND FIRST SCHOOL-HOUSE — SAMUEL PEARCE, AND TWO EMINENT MERCHANTS, HIS DESCENDANTS — OTHER NEW SETTLERS — SEVERE LOSS BY SHIPWRECK — THE SECOND PARISH, ITS MINISTER AND MEETING-HOUSE.

The religious exercises on the day of humiliation appointed by the town to be observed at the commencement of the eighteenth century were probably carried on by the most gifted of the lay brethren of the church, for they were then without a minister. This body then consisted of twenty-one males and forty-nine females. The deacons were Joseph Haskell and James Parsons. In the early part of the century it increased rapidly in numbers, and, as we shall hereafter see, in a few years set off a new church without harm to itself.

Of the new settlers who came from 1700 to 1710, a few left descendants by whom their names have been perpetuated in town. Samuel Griffin settled in Squam and died about 1764; Samuel Gott, at Halibut Point, and died Nov. 3, 1748, aged 71; John Gilbert, at Kettle Cove, and probably died about 1752; Ezekiel Woodward, at Little River, where he bought one hundred acres of land, and died Jan. 26, 1743; Thomas Harris, at Pigeon Hill. Griffin and Gott came from Wenham, the others from Ipswich. Thomas Sanders, who came about the same time from an unknown quarter, settled at the Harbor, and died July 17, 1742, aged 60.

Thomas Sanders was a ship-carpenter, and probably many others, who about this time seem to have been transient settlers, were of the same occupation. Though vessels were built in the town at an early date, it appears that not more than half a dozen sloops and shallops belonged in it in 1693. In 1698 a ship was built here for Boston merchants, and the notice of this occurrence is the first sign of the great activity in that employment, in which our people soon afterwards engaged on their own account. In the fourteen years following, one ship, ten brigantines, and more than thirty sloops were built in the town. Many of the vessels of the latter class were open, and are supposed to have been employed in the transportation of wood and timber to Boston, in which a brisk trade was carried on for a few years. The decked sloops were, without doubt, sent out on fishing voyages to Cape Sable and other distant places.

One of the results of this enterprise in ship-building gave a new name to our marine vocabulary and a new rig to the commerce of the world. Capt. Andrew Robinson, a citizen famous for his ingenuity, built a vessel, which, while on the stocks, he masted and rigged in a peculiar manner. At the launching, while she was gliding into the water, a by-stander cried out, "O, how she *scoons*," whereupon Robinson instantly exclaimed, "A *scooner* let her be." He probably meant that this name should be her own particular appellation, but, as she became the type of a class, the designation passed from a proprietary to a common use. It is supposed that the peculiar rig of this vessel consisted in her carrying two trapeziform sails, suspended by gaffs, and stretched out below by booms, in place of the lateen sails and lug sails previously in use. Capt. Robinson was a grandson of Abraham, one of the first settlers, and was one of the most remarkable men that Gloucester has ever produced, though his fame has survived in local annals only. He was a great hunter in his youth, and in his manhood a most skilful fisherman and terrible Indian fighter; and his mind was fertile in resources for every emergency. He was sometimes employed by the Colony Government in hostile expeditions against the French and Indians, and died in 1742, aged 63, while superintending the erection of a fort and truck-house at St. George's River, Me.

The town, having discontinued the school it had provided in 1699, was, in 1701, presented at a Quarterly Court in Salem for non-compliance with the law. An appeal was made to the General Court to send one or two members of the Council to see how it was "circumstanced with respect to a school," but no excuse availed to relieve it of its obligation to comply with the law. Accordingly, in January, 1703, an agreement was made with Mr. John Newman to keep the school; to be allowed suitable satisfaction for his pains by the town, besides such pay as he should receive from young men whom he might teach "to wright and cypher." Mr. Newman married Ruth, daughter of the Rev. John Emerson, but did not reside in Gloucester till after the death of the latter. He was succeeded in the school by John Ring; but, in 1707, the town was again in fault about it, and it was not till 1711 that the grammar school became one of the permanent institutions of the town. The then engaged master was "to teach lattine, if scholars appear," and to have a salary of eight pounds per quarter, with so much in addition as he should be obliged to pay above four shillings a week for his board.

The first school-house in the town was built in 1708, at a cost of twenty-four pounds. It was situated on the easterly side of the Meeting-house Green. Before this building was erected the school was kept in the meeting-house. The grammar school occupied the new structure continuously, from year to year, for twenty-five years; at the end of which, in consequence of discontent on account of the inconvenience of its location for the people in the outlying sections of the town, it was made a "circulating" school. A plan was adopted by which the town was divided into seven districts, and the school was apportioned to each according to its proportion of the town rate. With a slight modification, by which the districts were reduced in number and made to conform to the parish lines, this arrangement continued almost seventy years; the number of teachers being increased according to the growth of the town in population and wealth. In 1757, the apportionment of the time of two teachers was nearly as follows:—

One at the Harbor Parish,	. . . . .	11 months.
the Second, or West Parish,	. . .	$4\frac{2}{3}$ "
the Third, or Squam Parish,	. . .	$3\frac{2}{3}$ "
the Fourth, or Town Parish,	. . .	$3\frac{1}{3}$ "
the Fifth, or Sandy Bay Parish,	. .	$1\frac{1}{3}$ "

These parish schools were sometimes of an inferior order, but, poor as they were, most of the children acquired the ability to read and write.

The tide of immigration, induced by a vigorous pursuit of maritime employments, continued to swell the population of the town throughout the early part of the eighteenth century. Among the new settlers, who left descendants in it, was Samuel Pearce, a ship-carpenter, who removed hither from Duxbury about 1713, and here became the founder of a family, which, by its wealth and influence, occupied a commanding position in the town for more than half a century. The date of his death is not known. His son, David, born in 1713, died about 1759, leaving three sons, — David, Joseph, and William. Joseph was an early settler at New Gloucester, Me., and died there, Nov. 8, 1837, aged ninety-two. The other two became eminent merchants in their native town. David commenced business as a fisherman, and by industry, temperance, and frugality, soon rose to the command and ownership of a schooner. Continued success enabled him to increase his business, and placed him at length among the wealthiest merchants of his time, with vessels engaged in the whale-fishery and in the European and East and West India trade. The course of this active merchant had been one of constant prosperity from youth to old age: when, at threescore and ten, a series of reverses, as if to mark the instability of all worldly success, reduced him at once from affluence to bankruptcy. He bore this great trial with resignation, and died in March, 1818, aged eighty-two. William Pearce, at an early age, commenced a sea-faring life, and at twenty-one, such good traits of character were developed in him that he was placed by his brother in command of a vessel in the West India trade. In a few years he acquired sufficient property to establish himself as a merchant, and he engaged in extensive commercial pursuits which increased his property largely, and raised him to a position among the most eminent merchants of New England. He continued in active business about fifty years, sharing, during the latter portion of the time, the labors and profit of it with the members of his family, who, together with himself, constituted the well-known firm of William Pearce & Son. He was a good man, and his best characteristics were brought out, as usual, by severe trial. He had long withdrawn from the cares and anxieties of business, having secured, as he supposed, an abundant competency for his declining years, and had reached the venerable age of eighty-two, when the commercial house, of which he was the founder, and in which his name and property had always been used, was suddenly obliged to yield to the pressure of pecuniary embarrassment. The aged merchant bore the descent from affluence to poverty with Christian resignation, and a calm and peaceful death closed his well-spent life, Feb. 3, 1845, at the age of ninety-three.

The year 1716 is memorable in the annals of the town, as that in which its people were first overwhelmed with sorrow, on account of a terrible calamity by shipwreck. Five vessels, comprising, upon a

reasonable supposition, not less than one-tenth part of the entire tonnage of the place, were wholly lost in that year on a fishing voyage to Cape Sable, and about twenty men — a fifteenth part, probably, of all the male citizens of the place — perished by the catastrophe. The town has often since, by the same cause, been shrouded in mourning; but considering the scanty resources, both of population and property, upon which this misfortune fell, it stands almost without a parallel in all the subsequent disasters to be noticed in this history.

The inhabitants of the town, residing on the westerly side of Annisquam River, had, from the beginning, been put to great inconvenience in attending public worship; but they had, at this time, by immigration and natural increase, so gained in number as to be able to settle a minister in their own section, and to procure from the General Court an Act incorporating them as the Second Parish in Gloucester, June 12, 1716. Soon afterwards, Mr. Samuel Tompson received a unanimous call to be their minister, with a salary of sixty pounds per annum, and was ordained November 28th, in the same year. Mr. Tompson was a son of the Rev. Edward Tompson, of Marshfield, and was born in Newbury, Sept. 1, 1691. He graduated at Harvard College in 1710. His ministry over the new parish was terminated by his death, Dec. 8, 1724, at the age of thirty-three. It was said of him that "his ministerial gifts were superior, and his fidelity, diligence, and success answerable." The house in which he resided is still standing, and is situated a few rods from the spot occupied by his meeting-house, and his final resting-place is marked by a grave-stone in the old burying-ground of his parish. He married, Nov. 21, 1716, Hannah Norwood, by whom he had five children.

The next minister of the parish was Richard Jaques, who was born in Newbury, April 12, 1700, and graduated at Harvard College in 1720. He was ordained Nov. 3, 1725. His yearly salary was to be £100 "so long as he should perform and carry on the whole work of the ministry"; and he was to receive it in public bills of credit, which were to be increased or diminished in amount according as the bills should fluctuate in value. With such terms of settlement, it is not strange that the relations between the pastor and people finally ceased to be of a harmonious character. An attack of paralysis, in 1764, rendered him unable longer to perform his ministerial duties, and his salary now ceased. The parish made him a small allowance from year to year till his death, but it is evident that, in the latter years of his life, he considered himself ill-used by his people. He died April 12, 1777, the day on which he entered upon his seventy-eighth year, having been confined to his house, and most of the time to his bed, for the long space of thirteen years. His wife was Judith Noyes, of Newbury. She died Sept. 30, 1790, aged eighty-eight. Their only son, Thomas, married Sarah Haskell, of Gloucester, and died in Newbury about 1805, upwards of eighty years of age.

During the illness of Mr. Jaques, some ineffectual attempts were made to obtain a minister, but, at last, Mr. Daniel Fuller was induced to settle over the troubled parish as colleague pastor, and in his letter accepting the call to it, he expressed an earnest prayer that love, peace, and Christian charity might hallow and bless the union. Mr. Fuller was born in Middleton, Mass., Sept. 1, 1740, and graduated at Harvard College in 1764. He was ordained over the Second Parish Jan. 10, 1770. A long and happy ministry followed, and continued till the infirmities of advanced age admonished the venerable pastor that he must cease from his labors. He preached a sermon on the fiftieth anniversary of his ordination; and soon afterwards his pastoral connection with the parish was dissolved. He died at the house of his son Samuel, in Boston, May 23, 1829, in his eighty-ninth year. "Full of years, and mature in virtue, he departed in peace."

Mr. Fuller's wife was Hannah, daughter of the Rev. Benjamin Bowers, of Middle Haddam, Conn., by whom he had eight children, all of whom lived to marry. Mrs. Fuller died Feb. 19, 1810, aged fifty-eight.

Mr. Fuller was the last minister of the Second Parish, and with his decease the history of the parish is here brought to a close.

The Second Parish meeting-house was already erected when Mr. Tompson was settled. It stood on an elevated plateau, on a pleasant spot, surrounded by wood and pasture land. It was a plain structure, without porch, tower, belfry, or spire, and outlived the parish organization several years, not having been taken down till 1846. It was then probably the oldest church in New England standing in the shape in which it was originally built.

For several years after the close of Mr. Fuller's ministry, no public religious exercises were regularly held in the Second Parish, though there was occasional preaching in the old meeting-house, chiefly by Universalist clergymen. Finally, that portion of the people who still adhered to the ancient faith, took steps for the re-organization of the church and the erection of a new house of worship. This building — a small meeting-house standing on the main road to Essex — was dedicated Jan. 1, 1834; but no permanent ministry was established over this society till Nov. 11, 1840, when the Rev. Isaac Brown was ordained, who died the next year. The Rev. N. Richardson is the present pastor.

CHAPTER VII.

FIRST PHYSICIAN — OTHER PHYSICIANS — WORK-HOUSE — NEW SETTLERS — THIRD PARISH, ITS MINISTERS AND MEETING-HOUSES.

Among other indications of an increasing population, at this period, was the settlement of a physician in the town; for no one of that profession is known to have lived in it during seventy years from the date of its incorporation.

Perhaps Mr. Emerson qualified himself, as many of the early ministers of New England did, by the study of physic, to minister to the bodily diseases of his flock; for, in the settlement of the estate of one of his parishioners, he receipted for twelve shillings, and two glass bottles, "being all that was due to him for physic." About the time of Mr. Emerson's death, and for several years later, cases are mentioned of sending abroad for medical help. In 1669, the selectmen had power from the town to send Ralph Andrews to the Lynn doctor, James Kibber, to be cured of his lameness, "if the said Kibber doth think he can cure him." In 1715, Robert Elwell died in Ipswich, "under the doctor's hands." Female practitioners of the healing art, were also occasionally resorted to, and even the settlement of a professional doctor in the town did not destroy their business; for, in 1722, Mrs. Mary Ellery was paid £3 18*s*, "for cureing Ebenezer Lurvey and his Diat;" and, in 1725, Elizabeth Gardner received £1 10*s* "for what she did to the cureing of the widow Peny's brest." It is possible that John Newman was the first physician in the town, for he is once called physician, in 1712, but his name is usually given without the professional title. Dr. Nicholas Webster bought a house of Thomas Sargent, in 1717, and, at that time, probably established himself as a physician in Gloucester; but his residence was of short duration, for he died Dec. 22d, in that year, aged forty-three. About three years after this date, Dr. Edward Tompson appears in the town as a resident. His marriage to Ann Peker, of Haverhill, took place Oct. 27, 1720; and the births of his children (Ann and Abigail) are on the town records. In 1721, he was engaged for one term, to teach the grammar school. In 1725, he had land "on the town-neck, on the way leading from town to Squam," and, in that, and the next year, he was one of the selectmen. With the end of his duties in that office, his connection with the town appears to have closed. It is supposed that he removed to Haverhill.

Another physician had established himself in Gloucester before Dr. Tompson's removal. Dr. David Plummer (probably son of Joshua, of Newbury, born in 1696), married Ann Newman in 1723, and from that date was a permanent resident in town. Nothing more is known about him, than can be gathered from the public records. His wife, Ann, died about 1736, leaving a son Samuel, and he next married Widow Anna Barber, by whom he had sons, David and Daniel. He died before 1748, but the date of his death is not known. His son Samuel was educated in his father's profession, and succeeded to his practice. He was four times married, and, by his several wives, had eleven children — six sons and five daughters. He died Jan. 30, 1778, aged fifty-three, having, according to the testimony of a contemporary, maintained a character adorned with the highest virtues. An unusual share of domestic troubles fell to his lot, one of which must have sadly embittered his last days.

David, another son of Dr. David Plummer, became a merchant in his native town, and was a prominent citizen many years. He died in July, 1801, aged sixty-three.

In 1719, the town built its first work-house. It had not, for many years, been without paupers, but it does not seem that the proportion of the whole population who were of this class, was as great in early times as it is now. Few, then, were without means to secure the necessaries of life, and none were rich. For more than fifty years after the settlement of the town, it does not appear that any person in it was worth a hundred pounds, exclusive of real estate and farming stock; and of that, not more than two or three had enough to relieve

them from the necessity of daily toil. The work-house now built by the town, was a small structure, with two rooms, probably, and does not appear to have been much used as a home for paupers; for separate provision, in a private family, continued to be made for each one, by the selectmen, long after the work-house was built. Finally, it became the custom to let the poor out annually to board; and this practice was continued till 1796, when they were brought together into a home just erected for their accommodation. This building cost about five hundred pounds, and, with additions, served the town for this use more than fifty years.

The tide of immigration still flowed towards the town, and added to its population a few settlers, who became founders of families, which have gained a local distinction, at least, in its annals. William Fears came about 1721, married in town in that year, and died about 1775. Robert R. Fears, a descendant, was the first mayor under the change from a town to city form of government. Jonathan Trask and wife removed into town from Salem, about 1722, and had seven sons born here. One of his grandsons, Israel, born in 1765, went to sea, on privateering expeditions, in his youth, and experienced the varied fortune by which that employment was attended. In manhood he was a shipmaster, and gained a fortune by commercial pursuits. With only a small stock of school learning, he became a man of much intellectual culture, and took such interest in public affairs that he was twice elected senator from Essex County. He died Oct. 4, 1854, in his ninetieth year. Thomas Saville, a cooper, took up his abode in Squam, where he married in 1722, and died at the age of eighty-four. The name was perpetuated by a son, Jesse, whose son, William, was a schoolmaster in early life; next a trader; and finally, for about twenty years, he held the important office of town clerk, and died Jan. 12, 1853, aged 83. John Stacy became an inn-holder in Gloucester, in 1723, on the condition that he should sell no mixed drink on the Sabbath day. He died Feb. 22, 1732, aged 67. One of this name, Philemon, graduated at Harvard College in 1765, and taught school in town many years. In 1779, he embarked on a privateering cruise in the ship "Gloucester," which went down at sea with all on board. Two others of this family, Eben H. and Eli F., have been collectors of the customs at Gloucester.

Another indication of the growth of the town, in the first quarter of the century, was the organization of a new parish and the settlement of a minister over it. The northerly part of the Cape did not attract settlers at first; but, towards the latter part of the seventeenth century several families had settled at Annisquam and at the coves east of that place. These had so increased in 1728 that, on the 9th of June, in that year, they were incorporated as a separate precinct, and immediately proceeded to settle a pastor. Their minister was Benjamin Bradstreet, who was born in Newbury. He graduated at Harvard College in 1725, and was ordained over the new parish at Squam Sept. 18, 1728. The sermon at the ordination was preached by Rev. John Tufts, of Newbury, and was published, with a preface by Rev. John White, of the First Parish. Mr. Bradstreet's ministry continued thirty-four years, and terminated with his death. His health began to fail in the fall of 1761, and the parish took measures to supply his pulpit. He went away on a journey for the benefit of his health, and while returning home in May, 1762, suddenly became very ill at Danvers, and died there on the 31st of that month. He was buried in the burying-ground of his parish, on the 3d of June. Tradition reports that he was a good man and an acceptable preacher. His wife was Sarah Greenleaf, of Newbury, by whom he had eight children. It is not known that either of his two sons lived to mature years.

After the death of their first pastor, the parish remained nearly four years without a settled minister. At length, Mr. John Wyeth accepted an invitation to settle, and was ordained Feb. 5, 1766. He was born in Cambridge, March 1, 1743, and graduated at Harvard College in 1760. His connection with this church was a very unhappy one. Great discord prevailed in the parish for about two years, and Mr. Wyeth was finally dismissed, May 17, 1768. It does not appear that anything was alleged against his moral character, but much fault was found with his pulpit performances and his general demeanor. He left the ministry, and died in Cambridge, Feb. 2, 1811, in his sixty-ninth year.

The next minister of the parish was Obadiah Parsons. He was a son of Dea. William Parsons, of Gloucester, and was born April 5, 1747. He graduated at Harvard College in 1768, and was ordained over the Squam Parish, November 11, 1772, at a yearly salary of £86 13*s*. 4*d*. The former tranquillity of the parish seemed to be now fully restored; but it was not destined to be of long duration. Reports deeply affecting the pastor's moral character were circulated against him, and so alienated the people from their pastor that an ecclesiastical council was held at the meeting-house, November 3, 1779, to take into consideration a charge brought by a female of the parish against him. Mr. Parsons made a long and able defence, which made such an impression on the council that it passed a vote that the charge was not supported. The parish refused to accept this decision, and on 15th of November dismissed him from the work of the gospel ministry over them. He afterwards preached in Beverly, and in Lynn, but left the ministry July 16, 1792, and returned to Gloucester, where he taught school several years, and died in December, 1801, aged fifty-four. He was twice married; first to Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth, of Ipswich; and next to Sarah, daughter of Peter Coffin, Esq., of Gloucester. By both wives he had nine children; one of whom, William, became a physician in North Yarmouth, Me., and died there in March, 1810.

The unhappy termination of the ministry of Mr. Parsons, together with the impoverished condition of the people, resulting from the Revolutionary war, discouraged for many years any attempt to fill the vacant pastorate. The vitality of the parish was, however, preserved by occasional preaching; and at last the people rejoiced once more in having a settled minister. Mr. Ezra Leonard, the new pastor, was ordained Dec. 5, 1804, at an annual salary of $400. He was a son of Ezra Leonard, of Raynham, Mass., and graduated at Brown University, in 1801. The only incident in the history of his ministry, deserving notice in this work, is the remarkable conversion of both pastor and people to the doctrine of universal salvation. A large and respectable society of Universalists had long existed in the town, by whose influence, it is likely, the new faith had taken root at Squam; and it is certain that some of the parish often engaged their pastor in discussing the Calvinistic creed. In whatever way the change may have been brought about, the temporal results at least were happy, and the affairs of this religious body went on for the next twenty years in a calm and peaceful flow. Mr. Leonard continued to be the minister of this parish till his death, which took place April 22, 1832, at the age of fifty-seven. Mr. Leonard possessed sufficient talents to satisfy the people of his charge during a long ministry; but his greatest influence among them was exercised by his daily life. He was a man of rare sympathy, kindness, and benevolence; and in the place of his ministry his name is still held in tender and affectionate remembrance.

Mr. Leonard married, in 1805, Miss Nancy Woodbury, of Gloucester, by whom he had two sons and three daughters. She died Aug. 23, 1850, aged sixty-four.

Clergymen of the Universalist denomination have followed the Rev. Ezra Leonard, as ministers of this society, one of whom, the Rev. H. C. Leonard, is the present pastor.

The first meeting-house of this parish, erected in 1728, stood till 1830. It was a plain building, resembling that of the Second Parish, but considerably larger. The present edifice, on the same site, was dedicated Jan. 5, 1831.

CHAPTER VIII.

EMIGRATION TO FALMOUTH, ME. — BATTERY ERECTED — SETTLEMENT OF NEW GLOUCESTER, ME. — FOURTH PARISH AND ITS MINISTERS — OLD TAVERN AND MEETINGS OF SELECTMEN — REDUCTION OF LOUISBURG — FIFTH PARISH AND ITS MINISTERS, AND MEETING-HOUSE.

Quite a remarkable occurrence in the history of the town, which took place about the beginning of the second quarter of the seventeenth century, was the emigration of a considerable number of families and a few single individuals to the town of Falmouth, now the city of Portland, Me. This place had, in its earlier history, suffered severely from attacks by the Indians, and several of its people, who were driven away in consequence, found refuge in Gloucester. An interesting historical connection had existed, indeed, from the early settlement of both towns; for among the early inhabitants of the former, were six of the pioneers of Gloucester, two of whom became victims of savage cruelty on the first destruction of Falmouth by the Indians. On the final re-settlement of the town, the connection was strengthened by the emigration above mentioned. In 1727 and 1728, a large number of Gloucester men were admitted inhabitants there, of

whom it seems quite certain that as many as thirty removed to the place. Some of them carried families, a few of which are still represented by descendants living in Portland or its vicinity.

To compensate for this large loss of population, Gloucester was constantly receiving accessions from abroad; but a single line will tell of all those who became founders of families still existing in town: Joseph Herrick, George Dennison, and William Steel.

In 1734, the Provincial Government was reminded by the town, that, in case of war, it would be "naked to the enemy." As early as 1703, the inhabitants called the attention of the General Court to its defenceless state, and asked to have a fortification erected on the "small island, or neck of land, out into the harbor"; but nothing for its protection seems to have been done till 1743, when, with a suitable breastwork and platform erected on the south side of the spot indicated in their first petition to the General Court, and furnished with eight mounted twelve-pounders, and all necessary warlike stores, the people of the town found themselves prepared to meet any hostile demonstration upon their own waters. It is not known that a single shot was ever fired from it at an enemy. For several years it might have presented an appearance somewhat imposing to the mariners who sailed along under its eight twelve-pounders; but nothing to mark the site of the battery now remains.

At this period in the history of the town, the agricultural portion of the population could no longer find room for expansion within its limits; and the young men who had been brought up to husbandry, were obliged to turn to the sea for support, or make a home in distant fields. They chose to emigrate, and, on one spot, adjoining North Yarmouth, in Maine, they perpetuated the name of the home they had left. Nearly all of the early emigrants to the new settlement, were from the parent town; and New Gloucester, after the lapse of a century, still contains many families who feel an affectionate interest in "old Cape Ann." This place was settled under a grant made by the General Court, to a number of the inhabitants of Gloucester, in 1736. The proprietors, sixty in number, soon proceeded to the work of settlement, and, in 1742, had built a good road, cleared much land, and built bridges, a saw-mill, and several houses; but this good progress was interrupted in 1744, by dread of the hostility of the French and Indians, during the wars of that period, and the time for a safe occupation of the place did not arrive, till the peace of 1763 relieved the proprietors from all fear of further molestation from an armed foe. It then began to increase in population, and is found to have contained, in 1770, as many as seventy men, who, in that year, subscribed towards the erection of a meeting-house. Their first minister, the Rev. Samuel Foxcroft, had then been their settled minister, preaching in the garrison five years; his ordination having taken place, Jan. 16, 1765. An honest-hearted minister, who was present on that occasion, informs us that they had a "jolly ordination, and lost sight of decorum."

For about half a century, a constant intercourse was kept up between the parent town and its eastern offshoot; but the bonds of near relationship and strong affection have become weakened by time, and the strongest tie that now connects them, is that which binds all men to the homes and graves of their ancestors.

Allusion has already been made to the circumstance which led to the formation of a Fourth Parish in the town. It was incorporated Dec. 15, 1742, but no minister was settled till Feb. 1, 1744, when Mr. John Rogers, of Kittery, Me., was ordained as pastor. He was a son of the Rev. John Rogers, of Kittery, where he was born in 1719. He graduated at Harvard College in 1739. His ministry continued for a period of thirty-eight years; and furnishes no other matter for history than the melancholy fact that the closing years of it were rendered distressing, both to him and his parishioners, by the results of the Revolutionary War. Most of his people were engaged in maritime pursuits, and, as they could derive no support from their accustomed employments after the war commenced, they enlisted in the army, or engaged in privateering. Of those who sought support for their families in the latter occupation, some were taken and died in captivity, and many perished at sea. The pecuniary condition of the parish became so reduced at this troubled period, that the minister's salary was only paid in part, and he was obliged to eke out a scanty maintenance by supplying destitute parishes in neighboring places.

Having thus shared in the sufferings of war, Mr. Rogers was not permitted to greet the return of peace. He died suddenly, without a struggle or a groan, at the house of a friend, where he had just dined, Oct. 4, 1782. He was accounted a good scholar and an excellent preacher. He belonged to a family which claims the distinction of descent from the martyr; and which is really entitled to the renown of having furnished to the New England churches, through five generations, some of their most able, faithful, and godly ministers.

Mr. Rogers was thrice married: first to Susanna Allen; next to Mary Ellery; and last to Mrs. Abigail Woodward, who died March 12, 1819, aged eighty. The eldest of his eight children, John, graduated at Harvard College in 1767, and, for more than forty years taught school in his native town. He also held the office of town clerk forty-five years, and died Nov. 24, 1827, aged seventy-nine.

The Rev. John Rogers was the only settled minister this parish ever had; but the parish organization was kept up, many years after his death, for the purpose of taking care of its meeting-house, and managing the public school kept within its limits. The meeting-house, which was built in 1752, on or near the site of the old one, built by the town in 1700, was kept in very good repair, nearly down to 1840, and was used for religious worship, occasionally, chiefly by the Methodists, to about that time, when it was taken down. The bell had long been cracked, and its last doleful tones were in melancholy unison with the closing existence of the parish, and the departed glory of its abandoned and decaying temple.

The Meeting-house Plain on which this building stood, as well as previous ones, in which the early settlers worshipped, is about a mile from the Harbor, on the road to Squam. Not far from it, the first and the second mill, and the first taverns were situated; and this section was of so much importance in the first hundred years after the settlement of Gloucester, that it was usually called the "town," and to this day, it is customary for the people at the Harbor to speak of going "up in town." Standing on the Meeting-house Plain, and looking towards the Harbor, one sees, a few rods distant, a very ancient house, which has stood, apparently without alteration, about one hundred and seventy years. It is the oldest building in town which is known to have been occupied as a tavern. It was built by the Rev. John White, and occupied by him many years, but after the removal of that minister to be nearer to the new meeting-house, erected at the Harbor, in 1738, it passed first into the possession of James Stevens, and next into that of Capt. William Ellery, both of whom used it for the purposes of a tavern.

It had long been the custom of the selectmen to meet at a tavern for the transaction of their business. These meetings were not frequent, but, when they did take place, they probably continued a whole day; and the cost of the meals and drink for the Board, at the end of the year, was brought as a charge against the town. Their records show that the "expense for the Selectmen and Licker at the house of Mr. James Stevens," on the occasion of swearing in the town officers in 1740, was £3 18*s*. 2*d*. Looking at the old tavern, its venerable appearance turns our thoughts at once to the past; and only a slight exercise of the imagination is necessary to revivify the scene of 1740, with its solemn assumption of municipal duties, and the simultaneous discussion of town affairs and the quality of the dinner and the "licker." It is quite probable that the tavern bills produced at least some dissatisfaction, for, at a town-meeting in March, 1745, a vote was passed that the selectmen should be allowed, for the ensuing year, a salary of five pounds, old tenor, "for doing the town's business and finding themselves." But the year 1745 is memorable for the occurrence of an event of much greater importance to the people of Cape Ann than the tavern bills of the selectmen. The reduction of Louisburg, a strongly fortified place in the island of Cape Breton, then belonging to France, was felt to be a matter of the highest importance to the people of Gloucester, because the town now sent yearly several vessels on fishing voyages to the Banks of Newfoundland; and these vessels, in case of hostilities between the two countries, would lie at the mercy of this stronghold of the enemy. Such a case had already arisen; for the kings of England and France had mutually declared declared war in March, 1744, and, according to a statement of the Rev. John White, the enemy had already begun to "molest and break in upon our fisheries, and break them to pieces." The resolve of the colonial authorities, to undertake the reduction of Louisburg, was, therefore, without doubt, warmly approved by the people of Gloucester; and the news that the city and fortress had surrendered to the provincial forces on the 16th of June, 1745, must have been received with great satisfaction. Little is known of the part borne by Gloucester men in this expedition. Capt. Charles Byles, belonging to the town, commanded a company of forty-one men engaged in it; and Capt. Thomas Sanders, of Gloucester, had, during the siege, command of the transports in Chapeau Rouge Bay. The persons from Gloucester who are known to have suffered on this occasion were,—Job Stanwood, who lost his left arm; David Stanwood, who was wounded; Thomas Ayres, who lost his life; and James Parsons and Samuel Goodwin, who returned home sick and died soon.

A few of the immigrants of this period fixed their homes on the south-easterly end of the Cape. Settlers had been slowly gathering in that section during the first half of the century, principally around the cove known from about the beginning of this period as Sandy Bay. Inconveniently situated by distance from religious worship at either of the meeting-houses of the town, they sought, of course, at the earliest practicable moment, separate parish privileges. These were secured to them by an Act of the General Court, approved by the governor Jan. 1, 1754, incorporating them as the Fifth Parish of Gloucester. It was the last act by which the inhabitants of any particular section of the town were organized as a separate religious body. Ten members were dismissed from the First Church to form the new one, which was organized Feb. 13, 1755, when the ministers of the First, Third, and Fourth churches, with delegates, were present to assist in the ceremonies and solemnities of the occasion.

The minister selected for the new parish was Ebenezer Cleaveland, who was ordained in December, 1755, at a salary of sixty pounds per annum. He was born in Canterbury, Conn., Jan. 5, 1725. He and his brother John, who became minister of Chebacco Parish, Ipswich, were expelled from Yale College for attending a Separatist meeting while at home during vacation. This act of the college government aroused public indignation, and the brothers were restored to favor, and obtained their degrees. It is said that Mr. Cleaveland was a chaplain in the army sent again Ticonderoga in 1758, and in the triumphant campaign to Canada in 1759. With the consent of his church, the patriotic minister joined the Revolutionary army as chaplain, and was stationed at Dorchester Heights in the winter of 1775. He afterwards served in Rhode Island, and other places; but he returned home before the close of the war, and finding his people in a distressed condition, and unable to do anything more for his support than to furnish him a few quintals of fish per annum, he sought another field of labor. After several removals, he came back to his old home at the Cape, some time in 1797, and finished his days in the house which he built there at the commencement of his ministry. He died July 4, 1805, aged eighty. His wife was Abigail Stevens, of Canterbury. She died Dec. 25, 1804, aged seventy-seven. The virtues of this pastor were subjected to severe trials. Through the misconduct of some of his children — twelve in number, in all, — great and unusual domestic troubles fell to his lot; but he kept a patient, serene, and affectionate spirit to the end, and died in faith, trusting, as he said, "in the same God who had protected him when the bullets were flying about his head on the battle-field," and resting "on the doctrines of free grace his hope of immortal glory."

Three of Mr. Cleaveland's sermons were printed, entitled respectively, "Sins of Omission," "Sins of Commission," and "The Abounding Grace of God Towards Notorious Sinners."

The meeting-house erected by the Fifth Parish stood near the head of Long Cove. It was about thirty-six feet square, two stories high, and unprovided with belfry or steeple. It was taken down in May, 1805, just before the decease of the venerable man who had been its only occupant as the minister of the parish.

The Sandy Bay Parish was without a settled minister more than twenty-five years, though the place of one was partially supplied at different times by Mr. Cleaveland, before and after his final return to the Cape in 1797. At the time of his death, the church was in a low condition, and the people exhibited the usual signs of a want of religious instruction and New England Sabbath influences. A strong, sincere, and earnest spirit was needed to undertake a reformation in the parish, and such was happily found in the Rev. David Jewett, who became its next pastor. Mr. Jewett was born in Hollis, N. H., July 16, 1774; he graduated at Dartmouth College in 1801, and was ordained over this parish Oct. 30, 1805. A long and eminently successful ministry followed. He found a church of ten members, which he increased to two hundred and fifty, and the happy result of his labors for the improvement and elevation of his people, entitles him to a high rank among the ministers of the town. Compelled by ill-health to resign his office in 1836, he removed from town, and died in Waltham, July 14, 1841.

Mr. Jewett's successor was the Rev. Wakefield Gale. His ministry may more properly be given in the history of Rockport than in that of Gloucester. Of all the parish churches of Gloucester, the Fifth (now the First Congregational Church of Rockport) is the only one that has preserved a continued existence, and the faith of the early settlers.

The meeting-house in which it now worships, was erected in 1804. It has been greatly altered and improved at different times, at considerable expense, and is now a very neat and handsome edifice.

CHAPTER IX.

FRENCH WAR — POPULATION, 1755 — THE POOR — TOWN EXPENSES — SMALL-POX — STAMP ACT — SAD LOSS OF LIFE AT SEA — PEOPLE OF THE TOWN READY TO DEFEND THEIR RIGHTS AND LIBERTIES — PREPARATION FOR WAR.

The year 1755, is distinguished in American history, for the beginning of the systematic operations which resulted in the total destruction of French power on this continent. Not many towns had a larger interest at stake in the war, than Gloucester. Its Grand Bank fishery had now become important, and the contest was to decide for its people, whether, on their visits to this fishing-ground, they should continue to be subject to annoyance by French cruisers, or not. In the first year of the war, the town furnished one whole company, and several soldiers for other companies; but in addition to this, all we know is, that Capt. Jonathan Fellows commanded the company, of which John Row was lieutenant, and Samuel Fellows ensign; and that it formed part of the expedition against Crown Point. Of the particular service of the Gloucester soldiers who joined the army for service against the French, in 1756, no account is preserved. They assembled at the meeting-house, on the day of the annual public fast, April 29th, and listened to an address from the Rev. Samuel Chandler, which, at their desire, he copied for them. Again, on the day of their departure, May 3d, they went to the house of public worship. On this occasion, the venerable Mr. White prayed for them, and his colleague gave them a word of exhortation.

Though the war had been disastrous to the English, so far, great preparations were made for a vigorous prosecution of the contest, in 1758. On this occasion, Gloucester was a scene of considerable military display. On the 18th of April, a general meeting of officers was held at Col. Allen's, followed by a "genteel entertainment." On the 23d, the transport, with troops from Gloucester and some of the neighboring towns, sailed for Halifax, to join the large force there assembling for an attack on Louisburg; and, on the 24th of May, a large company, commanded by Capt. Andrew Giddings, marched out of town, accompanied by a great concourse of people. This company, consisting of about eighty men, formed a part of the unsuccessful expedition to Ticonderoga. The great success of the year, was the reduction of Louisburg, which surrendered in July, and was the occasion for great rejoicings by the people of Cape Ann.

The conquest of Canada followed, in 1759, and the struggle of the French for a controlling power in North America, ceased forever. A company from Gloucester was in the battle on the Plains of Abraham, near Quebec, but no particular account of its doings or its sufferings, has been preserved. We know, however, that the great victory was celebrated by the people of the town, who testified their joy by an illumination, and the firing of cannon. They might well rejoice, for the result of the war secured to them a safe prosecution of the business, by which they advanced steadily in a career of prosperity, till called upon to assert their rights in the struggle which gave them liberty and independence.

An estimate of the population of the town, at the end of the seventeenth century, in a preceding chapter, gives the number of inhabitants at about six hundred. Taking the best data that can now be obtained for an approximate result, it appears that, in 1755, the population had increased to about twenty-eight hundred.

With regard to the increase of property, our information is very scanty. Though a few of the citizens were accounted rich, because they had enough to supply all the necessaries, and some of the luxuries of life, it is quite certain that none could be reckoned so, according to the standard by which wealth is now measured in mercantile communities. It is not supposed that half a dozen citizens, in 1755, possessed an estate of the value of ten thousand dollars in gold or silver money. Nor were there many so poor as to require public aid. The practice of "letting out" the poor was still continued, and the whole number of this class, in 1757, was nine, — three males and six females, who were supported, for that year, at an expense of $203. Assistance rendered to a few others, carried up the total expenditure for the poor, in that year, to $281. In other words, the cost of the yearly support of the poor, amounted to about ten cents for each inhabitant of the town. It now amounts to about twelve times as much.

The taxes for the payment of town expenses, at this time, were very light; but, considering the means upon which they were levied, they

were no lighter, perhaps, than the heavy rates of the present day. In 1757, the expenditures for "necessary charges," were as follows: —

On account of the poor,	$281 68
For schools,	407 37
Miscellaneous,	35 94
Selectmen's pay,	86 62
Selectmen's expenses at Capt. Ellery's tavern,	48 60
	$860 21

The tax for the repair of highways was made in a separate assessment, and all who chose to do so, "worked it out." The allowance for labor, in this work, was three shillings a day for a man, and twelve shillings for a man, a yoke of oxen, and a cart.

It is, of course, easily seen how taxes increase with the increase of wealth; but, making all due allowance for the difference in the value of money between their day and ours, it still strikes us with some amazement that the people could, in 1757, enjoy all the benefits of a good town government at an expense of about half a dollar for each inhabitant, when the same blessing now costs about ten dollars for each.

If this taxation for town purposes was even slightly burdensome, how heavily must the expenses of the French war have borne upon the people of that day! The town's proportion of the Province tax, in the first year of the war, was double the amount of the town tax for the same year; and, in 1758, it was between three and four times the amount raised in that year for the current expenses of the town. In view of this fact, it is gratifying to observe that, instead of reducing the expense for public education, they, at this very period, established more schools; and that the amount paid for all of them was a larger proportion of the whole town tax than is paid even at the present time. It was at this period that a permanent public grammar school was opened in the Harbor, with Samuel Whittemore, a young graduate of Harvard College, as its teacher, at a salary of £6 13*s.* 4*d.* per quarter, exclusive of board, for which the town paid nine shillings per week.

The town had but just got relief from the calamity of war, when they were thrown into a condition of great alarm by the occurrence of an event which threatened greater distress. The small-pox had grievously afflicted the people of Boston in 1752; but Gloucester had never as yet seriously suffered from it. In that year, precautionary measures were taken to prevent its introduction, by establishing a guard at the Cut and at the Battery; and it is not known that a single case occurred in the town. But, in January, 1764, it broke out in the Harbor Village, and, the first case proving fatal, we find, on the 7th of February, "almost all the Harbor are moving on account of the small-pox; nothing but carting, — all in motion." It prevailed about three months; during which, it is known that eight inhabitants were its victims. Eighteen took the disease by inoculation, of whom only one died. The selectmen used all possible means to prevent its spreading, and it was, undoubtedly, owing to great exertions in that direction, that there were no more deaths.

A darker day was about to dawn. New England was ripe for self-government, and the proceedings of the people of Gloucester, with reference to the measures by which the mother country sought to prevent it, gave no uncertain indication as to the part they would take in the final struggle. The Stamp Act, that odious measure for taxing the Colonies, was to go into operation Nov. 1, 1765. On the 7th of the preceding month, in a very full town-meeting, the people declared "*nemine contradicente*, and most unanimously, That the Stamp Act is disagreeable"; and that their representatives in the Great and General Court should, "by all direct and lawful means, endeavor that the Stamp Act may never take place among us." The opposition to the Stamp Act procured its repeal; but the plan of taxation was not abandoned. Next followed the duty on tea, and some other articles imported into the Colonies. This led to a town-meeting, held Dec. 14, 1767, which adopted the vote passed by the people of Boston, on the same occasion, and ordered the same to be entered at length upon the records.

The year 1766 is distinguished in the annals of Gloucester as one of peculiar distress. Nineteen fishing vessels sailed together, in March, for the Grand Bank, and, while on the passage thither, encountered a violent storm, which wrecked and scattered the fleet, and sent many to the bottom. Two were cast away at Nova Scotia, seven foundered at sea, with all on board, and several of the rest were so much disabled, that they could not proceed on their voyage. The number of men lost by this terrible calamity is not known; but it was probably not less than forty.

The dissolution of the General Court, by the governor, in 1768, and his refusal to convene another, led to a convention of the people at Faneuil Hall, Boston, on the 22d of September, in which Thomas Sanders, Jr., and Peter Coffin, Esqs., were the delegates from Gloucester, — elected by a vote which wanted the consent of one only to be unanimous.

In 1772, the crisis was fast approaching, and it was apparent that the matters in dispute would never be peaceably settled. The people of this town, at a meeting held on the 25th of December, took into consideration a letter from the people of Boston, in connection with a pamphlet issued by them, containing a statement of colonial rights, and pointing out the infringements and violations of them by Parliament; and, at an adjourned meeting, adopted resolutions in full accordance with the sentiments of the Boston patriots, and declaring "that the people of Gloucester were ready to join with them and all others, in every legal way, to oppose tyranny in all its forms, and to remain steadfast in the defence of their rights and liberties"; and, finally, should all other methods fail of desired relief, that they were "desirous of joining with all others in an appeal to the great Lawgiver and Fountain of all justice."

Enough has been given to show that the people of Gloucester kept step with the most advanced patriots of this anxious and alarming period; and, it will be sufficient to add, that, in the progress of the great events of the next two years, they did not falter, and that, when the first blow for American liberty was struck at Lexington, they were ready to make good a declaration long before made, that, if compelled to make the last appeal to Heaven, they would defend their resolutions and liberties at the expense of all that was dear to them.

In accordance with the recommendation of the Provincial Congress, active military preparations were commenced in town. Musket-balls were procured, cartridges made, small-arms purchased, and a company of minute-men organized. While the people were busy about these matters, came the news of the fight at Lexington, which, on account of the exposed and unprotected situation of their own homes, filled them with consternation and alarm. They knew that there was a large British naval force in Boston harbor, and, fearing an attack, many of the inhabitants at the Harbor immediately sought safety for the women and children, by removing to West Parish and Ipswich. The flight was on the Sabbath.

CHAPTER X.

REVOLUTIONARY WAR.

THE APPEAL TO ARMS — TWO GLOUCESTER COMPANIES IN BUNKER HILL BATTLE — CAPT. LINDSAY, IN THE BRITISH SLOOP-OF-WAR "FALCON," ATTACKS THE TOWN AND IS REPULSED — POVERTY OF THE PEOPLE — THE "YANKEE" HEROES — PEOPLE READY FOR DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE — PRIVATEERING — LOSS OF BRIG "GLOUCESTER" — PRIVATEER SHIP "GENERAL STARKS" — GREAT NUMBER OF MEN OF THE TOWN VICTIMS OF THE WAR — DESPERATE ACT OF POOR WOMEN — APPEAL TO THE GENERAL COURT — SMALL POX — MONEY VOTED TO MEET CALLS FOR SOLDIERS — LOSS OF SHIP "TEMPEST" — STATE CONSTITUTION — PEACE.

The first blood in defence of American liberty had been shed; and it now became the duty of the people of Gloucester to join their brethren, who were gathering for a conflict in arms in support of the glorious cause.

It is not easy to ascertain the whole number of Gloucester men that repaired to the different encampments around Boston, but we know that more than 220, in six companies, were in the field in the first year of the war. Two of these companies were in the Battle of Bunker Hill. From one of them, commanded by Nathaniel Warner, two men were killed and three wounded; and from the other, commanded by John Rowe, three men were killed and two wounded.

In less than ten months from this time, the war was brought to their own homes, and the fidelity of the people of the town to their principles was put to the test on their own soil. On the 8th of Aug., 1775, Capt. Lindsay, in the sloop-of-war "Falcon," chased a schooner into the harbor, and, having followed her as far as he safely could,

came to anchor, and prepared to take possession of her where she lay on the flats. For this purpose he sent in two barges, well armed and manned; but the resistance of the people on shore, who had hastily mounted two old swivels, and gathered all the muskets and ammunition that could be procured, with which they opened a smart fire upon the enemy, compelled Lindsay to send in a prize schooner and a cutter with a re-enforcement, the commanding officer of which he ordered to fire on the "damned rebels," wherever he could find them. At the same time he cannonaded the town, and sent some men to attempt to set it on fire. But the little party at the water-side performed wonders, and were at length rewarded by a complete victory. They got possession of both schooners, the cutter and barges; and, with them, took thirty-five men prisoners; having already killed three of the enemy, and wounded several others. The loss of the town was two men,—Benjamin Rowe and Peter Lurvey. Having acquitted themselves of their duty so well, the wearied victors repaired to James Prentice's tavern for refreshment. This tavern was at the corner of Middle and Pleasant streets, where the Baptist church now stands, and there, without doubt, a great concourse of the people of the town assembled to tender congratulations and thanks, and to rejoice over the good work of the day. Public attention was now drawn to the defenceless state of the town, and breastworks were thrown up in five different places around the harbor.

This eventful year drew to a close with dismal forebodings of distress for the coming winter. The town derived its chief means of support from maritime employments, to which the war put an end, and a very large proportion of its people were obliged to resort to public help for even a bare subsistence.

In the next year, the only local occurrence growing out of the war, in which people of the town were chief actors, was the attempt to take a large British ship, which appeared off the Cape one morning in June. Observing that she seemed to be clumsily worked, and to have few men on board, and supposing that she could be easily captured, the people of Sandy Bay made preparations to board her. About twenty men, in three fishing-boats, proceeded fearlessly to the attack. They had scarcely left their moorings, when they perceived the privateer brig "Yankee," then just out from Newburyport, coming round Halibut Point. They went on board of this vessel, and easily induced the captain to attack the British ship. The boats were sent back, and the brig proceeded towards the ship, into which, upon approaching near enough, she let off a broadside. The ship immediately opened two tiers of ports, and gave such a return as convinced the Cape men of their great mistake. A contest of about an hour ensued, at the end of which, having spent all their ammunition, and loaded their last gun with pieces of iron, spikes, and a crowbar, they struck to the British frigate "Milford," of thirty-six guns. There is no doubt that the Yankee heroes made a gallant defence in this fight, but the wonder is that they should have been so thoughtless and reckless as to get into it at all. They paid dearly for their temerity. They were carried as prisoners to Halifax, and thence to New York, where, while in confinement in a prison-ship, many of them had the small-pox. On board the brig one man was killed, one was wounded, and died after some time in Halifax prison; one was shot in the thigh, and one lost a hand.

The suffering condition of the poor again demanded public attention, and at a town-meeting in May, this year, a loan of £100 was authorized to procure provisions for their relief. But there was no abatement of ardor in the cause of liberty. The customary official recognition of royal authority in warning town-meetings in the name of the king was now abandoned, and the one just mentioned was called in the name of the government and people of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay. One other step remained for them, which the people of Gloucester soon took, by declaring their readiness to renounce all political connection with the land of their ancestors.

At the close of this year, and the beginning of 1777, exertions were made by the town to enlist men for the Continental Army, but enlistments for the land-service now went on slowly. Privateering was an employment better suited to the habits of a mercantile community, though its profits were uncertain, and its risks great. In the first year of the war, the people of the town engaged in enterprises of this kind, in a small way; making use of their fishing-boats for the purpose. They took a few prizes of little value near their own shore, but met with no great success. The first vessel that put to sea from Gloucester on a privateering cruise, was a fishing schooner named the "Warren." She sent in two valuable prizes, but, on a subsequent cruise, she herself became a prize to a British ship, on the third day from home. Another fishing schooner and a sloop, were this year fitted out as privateers, and made a few prizes, of no great value; but the most important enterprise of the kind in which the people engaged at this time, was the fitting out of the brig "Gloucester," a new vessel, carrying eighteen guns, and having a crew of one hundred and thirty men, including officers. It is said that she sailed about the 1st of July, 1777. Not long after leaving home, she captured two brigs, which were sent in under charge of a prize-master and crew in each; and no further tidings of the "Gloucester" were ever received. Tradition always affirmed that sixty wives in Gloucester were made widows by the loss, and that the calamity overwhelmed the town with sadness and gloom. With this addition to the common calamities of war, it is hardly possible to draw too dark a picture of the condition of the town during the following winter and the next spring. Its impoverished state induced it to send a memorial to the General Court, stating its inability to comply with the resolves of that body respecting supplies to the soldiers' families; for whose relief the only apparent resource at this time was a subscription for voluntary contributions. But all the means at the command of the benevolent were hardly adequate to give even a meagre support to the whole number of families depending upon public aid.

In 1778, and all the succeeding years of the war, Gloucester continued to be the scene of considerable enterprise in the business of privateering, but many of the vessels were owned wholly or in part by people of other towns, and the gains to Gloucester by it were small. One of the vessels, owned chiefly by David Pearce, a merchant of the town, was a new ship of 400 tons, named the "Gen. Starks." She made several successful cruises, but was taken, on her last cruise, and carried to Halifax. Capt. Wm. Coas, her commander, with some of his officers, sailed from that port in a cartel for Boston, which was supposed to have foundered at sea, as she was never again heard from.

The fifth year of the war came, and the prospect still before our fathers was so gloomy that they needed all the hope and courage they could summon to their aid to stimulate them to further sacrifices in the contest for independence. The retrospect was, indeed, sad and discouraging. One item of the town's loss during these four years of war speaks in too plain words of its suffering and sorrow. Three hundred and fifty-seven of its people,—about one-third of the whole number who were assessed for a poll-tax when the war began,—had perished at sea, fallen in battle, died as prisoners, or in some way become victims of the war. The poverty, which was one of its unhappy consequences, is sufficiently attested by the fact that 750, probably more than one-sixth of the whole population, were at this time chiefly dependent upon charity for their daily bread. The soil of the town had not furnished enough for the support of its people two months in the year; its shore-fishery had been unproductive for want of a market; its few privateering enterprises had yielded the means of subsistence to a small number only, and its foreign trade was nearly annihilated; 700 tons of its shipping, employed in foreign commerce, having been captured by the enemy in the single year of 1779.

It was at this period of great poverty that a large troop of women, in want of the necessaries of life, marched to the store of Col. Joseph Foster, and made known their determination to supply themselves with provisions and groceries from his stock, in spite of all resistance. They would give an exact account of all they took, and pay if they were ever able, but, pay or no pay, they must have them. This merchant was one of the most ardent patriots of the town, and his conduct on this occasion proved him to be one of the most benevolent; for the tale of destitution and suffering that the women had to tell so touched his feelings, that he liberally supplied their wants, and dismissed them with words of kindness and sympathy.

From all these facts it may readily be seen that the people of Gloucester had thus far borne a heavy share of the burdens, sacrifices, and sufferings of the war; but, great as these had been, another year of trial was before them. Their resources were again taxed, even beyond their ability to pay, for their proportion of the public burdens; and they were obliged to plead to the General Court for an allowance, and ask that an agent from that body should be sent to view the impoverished condition of the town. They continued, however, to do their best to furnish their quota of men and clothing for the army, and in no case failed to come up to the full measure of every demand made upon them which their means enabled them to supply.

In addition to the suffering and distress which the war brought upon them, they were now afflicted with a loathsome disease, which, in the early part of 1779, had spread all over the town, defying every effort to check it. During the last four months of the preceding year great excitement had prevailed in the town on account of the small-

pox. The people had taken a firm stand against inoculation, having voted, in the spring, "to have no inoculation in town on any terms," but in October they changed their minds, and provided hospitals in different places to accommodate the inoculated. The disease was so widely spread that all were exposed to it, and the prejudice against inoculation, as the safest way of taking it, yielded to necessity, and the citizens submitted to a general inoculation. Several died, but no particulars have been preserved to inform us how many or what proportion of those who took the disease became its victims. Tradition reports that of 110 who, in one of the villages of the town, were inoculated, only two died.

The acts of the town in relation to its supplies for the Continental Army during the remainder of the war, may be briefly stated here. Of the State's quota, in 1780, of 4,000 men, the number to be raised in Gloucester was thirty-two, whom a committee was authorized to procure, and to borrow $120,000 for that purpose. On the 17th of July the town voted to raise a tax to procure thirty-eight men as militia, and offered £300 per month for three months' service. Authority was also given for a loan of $60,000, and, on the 7th of August, they voted to raise $51,060 to pay soldiers, and directed that all money and goods furnished by the inhabitants for the campaign be carried to the several committees for them to lay before the selectmen in order for payment. To provide the town's quota of provisions and clothing for the army, a tax of £40,000 was levied, and the selectmen were authorized to borrow that sum in anticipation of payment. These figures sound large, but it must be remembered that the paper currency was now depreciated to about one-seventieth of its nominal value. In January, 1781, the town was called upon to raise forty-eight men for the army, and, although it voted a tax of £1,000 in silver money to pay the bounty authorized by the State (fifty dollars to each man), the committee appointed for raising the men reported, in April, that they had not procured them, but the delinquence was not of long continuance, for, in August, it appears that the men had been furnished. The town's quota of clothing and provisions for the army at this time was also supplied, though the taxation necessary to procure it, with the other assessments made upon them, must have been a grievous burden to the people. It would be a gratification to know more concerning the supply of such demands upon the pecuniary resources of the town, but all we can learn of the financial operations of our fathers at this period is the little that is contained in the votes which they passed in town-meeting. The valuations and tax-lists of the town have not been preserved.

Another sad disaster at sea, at about this time, inflicted a severe loss upon the town. The ship "Tempest," Isaac Semes, captain, was fitted out for the West Indies as a letter of marque, and sailed in company with the ship "Polly," Capt. Foster. They kept company till they got into the Gulf Stream, where they encountered a severe gale, attended with the most terrific thunder and lightning. During one brief flash, by which several men on board the "Polly" were stunned, the "Tempest" was seen by Capt. Foster, a short distance off; but, when the next flash enabled him to discern distant objects, she was missed, and never again seen. Capt. Foster supposed that she was taken aback, and went down stern foremost. The names of a few Gloucester men who perished in her have been preserved, but the exact number is not known. It was very large, without doubt, for tradition has always reported that the grief occasioned by the loss, was not only deep, but wide-spread.

Any further account of Gloucester privateering in the Revolutionary War, would be but a mere sketch of voyages, and may properly be omitted here. It may be added, however, that a true history of the Revolutionary privateering of the town, could only be given in a record of individual experience, which would tell of widows' broken hearts, of orphans' bitter tears, of the agonies of men struggling with the ocean, in the face of death; of physical suffering in prison-ships; of wanderings in foreign lands, without friends, without money, and without health; and, worst of all, of the demoralizing influences of a practice which every enlightened conscience must condemn.

One of the most important and interesting events that occurred during the later years of the war, was the formation of the State Constitution. The delegates from Gloucester to the Convention which assembled for this purpose, were Winthrop Sargent, Joseph Foster, Peter Coffin, Samuel Whittemore, and Epes Sargent. The Constitution was submitted to the people, and accepted, at a town-meeting in Gloucester, March 22, 1780, by a vote of forty-eight in its favor. No negative votes are recorded, but Capt. Sargent and Col. Foster said that they objected to it.

The surrender at Yorktown, at last brought to the people of Gloucester a happy release from the burden which had weighed most heavily upon it for the last two years, — the furnishing of its quota of soldiers for the army. It was a welcome relief; for it had at last become so difficult to hire men for it, that the town was obliged to petition the General Court to accept a partial compliance with its last requirement.

This event was soon followed by efforts, on both sides, to end the war. Besides the great question, — the acknowledgment of independence, — the people of Gloucester were interested to preserve their ancient privileges on the fishing grounds; and, at a meeting on the 28th of January, 1782, declared that, in any treaty of peace, an article to secure these privileges, was "of the utmost consequence, not only to this town, but to the State in general."

The welcome intelligence that a treaty of peace had been concluded and signed, was received in Gloucester on the 22d of October, 1783, by the arrival of the ship "Robin Hood," Capt. Smith, from London. No record of any public rejoicings on the occasion, is preserved; but the men of that time have handed down an account of the celebration of the joyful event, on a low hill which rises from the sea-shore, at Duncan's Point. On that spot, at the close of the Revolution, stood a solitary and venerable oak-tree, twenty-three feet in circumference. It had long been a cherished object, and a favorite resort for the people; and thither the happy citizens of the town now hastened, to exchange congratulations that the war was ended, and the great blessing of independence secured. In the evening, the hollow trunk and leafless branches of the ancient oak were brilliantly illuminated; and, though no living person could remember the grandeur of its maturity, all agreed that it could not have surpassed the splendor which it now exhibited in its decay.

CHAPTER XI.

INDEPENDENT CHRISTIAN SOCIETY.

JOHN MURRAY — HIS FIRST VISIT TO GLOUCESTER — COMES AGAIN AND IS PERSECUTED — HIS FRIENDS FORM A RELIGIOUS SOCIETY AND BUILD A HOUSE OF WORSHIP — ORDINATION OF MR. MURRAY OVER THE SOCIETY — HIS REMOVAL TO BOSTON, AND DEATH — SUCCESSION OF PASTORS — INDEPENDENT UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY AND ITS MINISTERS.

This society, the first organized religious body in America, professing the doctrine of universal salvation, owes its origin to John Murray, who was born in the town of Alton, in Hampshire, England, Dec. 10, 1741. After a somewhat remarkable religious experience, as a follower of Wesley and Whitefield, in his native country, he became converted to the sentiments of James Relly, who had gathered a society in London, to which he proclaimed the final salvation of mankind. Arriving in America, at the age of twenty-nine, he was led to appear as a public preacher of the doctrine he had embraced, and had preached in several of the large cities and towns amidst great opposition, when, while on a visit to Boston, in November, 1774, he was invited to come to Gloucester. In compliance with the invitation, he came down immediately, and was received with much kindness, and hospitably entertained by members of the Sargent family, then occupying the highest rank in social standing and religious character. He obtained permission to preach in Mr. Chandler's pulpit. He was a fluent and agreeable speaker in extemporaneous discourse, and he had the faculty of a happy choice of language. With these gifts, it is not strange that he made a deep impression upon the minds of many of his hearers, considering that several of them had already perused the writings of Mr. Relly. More than a century has passed away, since this memorable visit, and all personal recollections of the excitement it produced, and the deep impression it left, long since ceased to exist; but the writer of these lines may add, that he has himself heard, from the lips of one of Mr. Murray's first hearers, that his sermons, on this visit, were not of a doctrinal or controversial character, but were designed to draw his hearers to the love and service of God, by a touching and vivid portrayal of the divine benignity.

In the next month, Mr. Murray made another visit to the town; but the parish meeting-house was now closed against him, and its dying pastor issued a warning address to his people. His followers therefore assembled, at stated times, at the house of Winthrop Sargent, where their religious worship was held. From this time he made Gloucester his home, but he occasionally visited other towns,

and was, for some time, a chaplain in the army. He was, of course, regarded by a great majority of the people of the town as the promulgator of a monstrous and dangerous heresy; and though the small circle of admiring friends which he drew around him included some of the most respectable families, they could not shield him from the effects of that "exquisite rancor of religious hatred" which stops not short of insult, abuse, and even personal violence. The latter was threatened, and a mob was collected; but the wise advice of Gamaliel to the first enemies of our religion was timely suggested by an elder of the church as a proper guide for the present occasion, whereupon the mob dispersed.

On the 1st of January, 1779, Mr. Murray's friends adopted a covenant, in which they professed themselves an independent church of Christ, and received him as their minister; and on Christmas Day, 1780, they first assembled for public worship, in a small building without belfry or other architectural ornament, which they had erected for that purpose, on the spot which is now the westerly corner of Spring and Water streets. The society was as yet only an association of individuals. In 1785, they organized themselves under a "compact," containing a few regulations for their future government. This was signed by upwards of eighty males, who were probably all of the supporters of Mr. Murray at that time. Finding, however, no form of association they had yet tried suited to their wants, they obtained from the Legislature, in 1792, an Act of Incorporation under the name they at first adopted.

The supporters of Mr. Murray believed that the covenant they had entered into, in 1779, constituted them a religious society, in a sense that entitled them to the protection of the State Constitution as such; but the parish authorities thought differently, and assessed taxes upon the Universalists for the support of their minister. Upon the refusal of the latter to pay these taxes, their goods were seized and sold at auction, whereupon they instituted an action for the recovery of this property, which, after a protracted trial of three years, resulted in their favor.

After various persecutions, both of pastor and people, out of which they came at last triumphant, Mr. Murray was publicly ordained as minister of this society on Christmas Day, 1788. In 1793, he was installed as pastor of a society of Universalists in Boston, and continued in that office till his death, which, preceded by six years of helplessness, took place Sept. 3, 1815, at the age of seventy-four. He came to America a widower, and so remained till his return from a visit which he made to his native land in 1788, when he married Mrs. Judith, widow of John Stevens, and daughter of his early and constant friend, Winthrop Sargent. She was a lady of great personal attractions, and of literary accomplishments that secured her temporary distinction as an authoress. She died in Natchez, Miss., June 6, 1820, aged sixty-nine; and she and a daughter, and a granddaughter, lie buried side by side in that distant State.

After Mr. Murray's removal, the society remained several years without a settled minister, but their pulpit was supplied most of the time by itinerant preachers, a few of whom remained several months. Finally, on the 26th of September, 1804, the Rev. Thomas Jones was installed for life, at a salary of $600 per annum. Mr. Jones was born at Narbath, Wales, April 5, 1763, and was educated in the doctrines of the Calvinistic Methodists at the seminary established by Lady Huntingdon, at Trevecca. In 1785, he was ordained as a preacher, and was, for about five years, a sincere and earnest advocate of the sentiments of his sect. About the end of that time, while settled over a society of this sect in Reading, England, he became a convert to the doctrine of universal salvation, and, strange to say, carried his society with him; at least so much may be inferred from the fact that its members severed their connection with Lady Huntingdon's sect and attended his ministry till 1796, when, at the solicitation of the Rev. John Murray, he came to America, and, not long after his arrival, was settled over a society in Lombard Street, Philadelphia, where he preached till his removal to Gloucester. The ministry upon which he then entered was undisturbed by any important event for the long period of thirty-four years; at the end of which, his advanced age and impaired health induced the society to relieve him of a portion of its duties by providing him a colleague. The Rev. Daniel D. Smith was the minister chosen, and very unfortunate results followed the act. The peace and harmony of the society were soon destroyed by dissensions among its members, concerning the conduct and character of the junior pastor; and the venerable senior, although in no way blamable for the quarrel, acceded to an arrangement by which, in 1841, his pastoral connection with it was dissolved. Suitable provision was made by the society for the declining years of both himself and his wife.

The aged pastor was now, apparently without any confirmed disease, sinking by slow and gradual decay; but during several years of bodily infirmity, and a long confinement to his house, his mental faculties remained unimpaired, and, in the last hours of his life, enabled him to give assurance that his faith in the universal and impartial goodness of God was sustaining him through the valley of the shadow of death. About seven o'clock on Thursday evening, Aug. 20, 1846, he called his family and friends to his bedside, and took a solemn and affectionate leave of all; and, soon after, drew his last breath. He died in his eighty-fourth year.

Mr. Jones was not a popular preacher, in the common meaning of that term; and he was not endowed by nature with those gifts of conversation and manners which attract in social life; but he possessed all the qualities necessary to secure to him, both as a preacher and a man, during the whole of the long period of his ministry, the affectionate regard of his flock and a high place in public esteem.

Before the death of Mr. Jones, the dissensions already mentioned, had rent the society in twain. Half of its members had left, in company with the junior pastor, whose labors with it ceased in April, 1841; but, notwithstanding this loss, and the pecuniary embarrassment growing out of its troubles, the society maintained its existence, and, finally, by the return of most of the seceders, recovered its former prosperity. Able ministers have in succession, for many years, occupied its pulpit as pastors; and it is now one of the strongest societies of the denomination to which it belongs. The following have been its ministers since the resignation of Mr. Jones, in 1841: Frederick F. Thayer, H. B. Soule, Amory D. Mayo, W. R. G. Mellen, George W. Skinner, Elmer H. Capen, Richard Eddy. The society is now without a pastor.

The meeting-house in which the society now worship, on Middle Street, was erected in 1805, at a cost of about $10,000. The avenue by which its front is approached is bordered on each side by a row of noble elms.

The friends of Mr. Smith, after their withdrawal from the Independent Christian Society, proceeded to form a new religious body, and took the name of the Independent Universalist Society. It consisted of seventy-seven members, who, April 13, 1843, signed a subscription paper for the support of preaching. Mr. Smith was then preaching in Virginia; but, upon the invitation of the new society, he returned the next year and became their pastor. He was succeeded by the Rev. David H. Plumb, in 1849, who was himself succeeded by the Rev. G. J. Sanger, in 1853. Mr. Sanger preached his farewell sermon, March 2, 1856, and no pastor succeeded him. The dissolution of the society soon followed, and a large portion of its members returned to the parent body. The meeting-house which they occupied, on Elm Street, built in 1845, was sold to the Methodists in 1858, and is now their place of public worship.

CHAPTER XII.

RE-OPENING OF THE PUBLIC SCHOOLS — SAD ACCIDENT — SHAYS' REBELLION — CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES — GENERAL TRAINING — CUSTOM-HOUSE — POST-OFFICE — FIRST STAGE LINE TO BOSTON — RAILROAD TO BOSTON — FIRE-ENGINE — FORT — SHIPWRECKS — GLOUCESTER BANK — GLOUCESTER SOCIAL LIBRARY — GLOUCESTER LYCEUM — SAWYER FREE LIBRARY — DEATH OF A PROMINENT CITIZEN — DEATH OF WASHINGTON.

During the Revolutionary War the public schools had been suspended, but, upon the return of peace, the town took measures to re-establish a grammar school, and schools were again opened in the several parishes and maintained, from this time, during a portion of each year, upon the system in use before the war. One of the most earnest friends of the public schools, at this time, was the Rev. Eli Forbes. In accordance with his recommendation a building was erected for the use of the grammar school, and dedicated March 5, 1795, on which occasion he preached a sermon from these words of the Psalmist: "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth." This building was the second school-house erected by the town, and cost about one thousand dollars. It was square, of two stories, and was furnished with a belfry and bell. Besides occasional use as a school-room, the upper part served as a place of meeting for the different boards of town officers, and the lower room was often used for elections and other town-meetings. The annual town-meeting continued to be held in one of the

meeting-houses till 1840, when a town house, with a hall suitable for such purposes, was erected. The teacher of the grammar school at this time, and during several subsequent years, was Obadiah Parsons, whose salary was one hundred and thirty pounds per annum.

No change was made in the system upon which the public schools were conducted, till 1804, when the town availed itself of a law of the Commonwealth, which permitted the division of its territory into school districts. Eleven districts were established, among which the school money, after deducting the salary of the grammar-school master, was divided according to the number of polls in each district. The whole amount raised for the support of schools was two thousand dollars.

The permanent location of the Town Grammar School in the Harbor Parish gave great dissatisfaction to the people of the other parishes, who complained that they were excluded by distance from its benefits, and who finally succeeded, in 1826, in making it a circulating school. Tired at last of dissensions about it, the town practically abolished the school, by voting yearly that the money appropriated for its support should be divided among the several districts. This evasion or violation of law was continued till 1839, when, by the efforts of Robert Rantoul, Jr., a town grammar school was again opened, but was again discontinued in 1845, and was never but once afterwards (in 1849) revived upon the old plan and with its ancient name. Since 1849, under another name, the town has supported the permanent school of this kind required by the law of the State.

One of the evils of the district system was a constant tendency to the division of sparsely settled territory into small districts. It failed also to furnish good and equal advantages of education to all the children of the town. The latter defect was enough to arouse the people to the necessity of a reform, and the school committee for 1849 addressed themselves to this work, and in their annual report brought before the town a plan for a re-organization of the public schools, which was adopted with remarkable unanimity. By this act the district system was abolished, and the town, in its corporate capacity, assumed the management of the schools. It involved the necessity for a considerable increase of taxation, and, in all its aspects, may be contemplated with the highest satisfaction, as the beginning of a creditable state of public feeling in regard to the cause of education, which has continued to the present time.

The number of children between five and fifteen years of age in Gloucester, May, 1877, was 3,843; the number in all the schools, in the summer term of that year, including those over fifteen, probably about two hundred, was 3,596. Considering that a few of the children attend private schools, and that many cease to attend school at all before the age of fifteen, these figures authorize the pleasant reflection that very few, if any, are growing up in ignorance. The total expenditures for the schools in the same year were $54,701.20. In the percentage of its taxable property appropriated for the support of public schools, Gloucester then stood thirty-first in a numerical arrangement of all the towns in the State. It heads the list of the cities.

In the fall of 1786 occurred the insurrection generally known as Shays' Rebellion. It found neither advocates nor apologists in Gloucester. On the call for troops, the town responded instantly by raising a company, which was placed under the command of John Rowe, a Bunker Hill soldier. Having reached the scene of disturbance, he was appointed to head a column, which attacked the rebels, and drove them from a strong fort, where they threatened defiance. The speedy dispersion of the rebels relieved the company of the necessity of a long service; and, at the end of forty-five days, it was disbanded.

In the next year a more pleasing duty devolved upon the people. On the 18th of December, 1787, they chose delegates to the State Convention for "assenting to and ratifying" the Constitution of the United States, recently adopted by delegates from the States, at Philadelphia. The persons chosen were Daniel Rogers, John Low, and William Pearson, wise and prudent men, who gave their votes for the ratification, and on their return home received the plaudits of their constituents at "a generous entertainment" provided for them at Capt. Somes' tavern, by the principal citizens of the town.

This Constitution declared that a well-regulated militia was necessary to the security of a free State. The Gloucester companies composed the third Essex regiment. No general muster had taken place in town for more than twenty years, when, on the 3d of November, 1788, this regiment was ordered out for exercise and review. Upwards of three hundred and fifty men appeared under arms, well equipped, and went through their exercises to general satisfaction. In the afternoon they were reviewed by Col. Pearce, the officers of the artillery company, and several gentlemen of the town, and the evening, it is said, "was closed with convivial cheer, good fellowship, and a seasonable return home, after drinking several patriotic sentiments, with a discharge of a field-piece to each." The Gloucester artillery had been recently organized under the command of James Pearson, and had, on the 11th of September, received a "very elegant stand of colors" from Capt. David Pearce. The flag was presented at Capt. Pearce's house, where the company partook of an ample and generous refreshment at his invitation.

The annual "general training" was continued for about forty years from this time, and the day on which it occurred was the greatest holiday of the year, — men, women, and children all mingling in its enjoyments. A vacant space in the rear of Back Street was sometimes used as a training field, but the Meeting-house Green was generally resorted to on these occasions; and it was there that the aged men of to-day beheld in their boyhood the expiring glory of the old militia.

Upon the organization of the Federal Government in 1789, a custom-house was established in Gloucester, and, under its acts for regulating commerce, upwards of seven thousand tons of shipping are found in the registered and enrolled tonnage of the district. Part of this was engaged in the fishery, and the rest in a profitable foreign trade.

About this time a post-office was also established in town. The chief means of intercourse with the metropolis, enjoyed by the people during the first century after its settlement, were those afforded by the fishing shallops and wood-coasters; but concerning their arrangements at that time for sending and receiving letters we have no knowledge. It is certain, however, that long before the establishment of a post-office in Gloucester, the people received their letters from abroad by a messenger who went twice a week to Beverly to get them. They were probably brought by mail to Salem, and thence across the ferry to Beverly with the letters for that place. The first postmaster in Gloucester was Henry Phelps, probably appointed in 1792.

The first regular communication between Gloucester and Boston by land was established in 1788 by Jonathan Lowe. On the 25th of April in that year, he commenced running a two-horse open carriage between the two places, leaving Gloucester twice a week in the morning and returning the next day. Tradition reports that the first arrival of this vehicle in town created a great sensation, and that several of the principal people were treated to a ride in it before it was used for public travel. The stage accommodations were increased from time to time as public convenience required, till at last passengers were enabled to visit Boston and return the same day. By railroad they can now do it twice a day, and transact a large amount of business besides. On the 2d of November, 1847, the Eastern Railroad Company commenced running regular trips on the Gloucester Branch, having, on the previous day, following the example of Jonathan Lowe, with his two-horse carriage, treated a party of citizens to a free ride.

In 1793, we first find fire-engines in the town, thirty pounds having been granted at a meeting in that year towards paying for them.

In May, 1794, the town ceded to the United States the land on Watch-house Neck, where a breastwork had been thrown up in the early part of the Revolutionary War. The Government immediately commenced to erect a fort upon it for the protection of the town, and there soon arose upon the site of the old layers of turf a fortress, of which we now see only the ruined embankments. Early in January, 1796, a distressing shipwreck occurred at Little-Good-Harbor Beach. The ship "Industry," Capt. Miles Barnes, from London, bound to Boston, was lost on that beach, near Salt Island, in a violent snow-storm. All hands perished. Several of the bodies were found, and buried from the First Parish Church, with the usual religious solemnities.

A noteworthy event of this year was the establishment of the Gloucester Bank, with a capital of forty thousand dollars. It was organized under a "covenant," which was made void by an Act of Incorporation obtained from the Legislature about three years afterwards; but it now exists as a national institution. A few opposed its establishment, on account of their aversion to paper money; but it has proved a public convenience and a private benefit. Three other banking institutions are now in operation in the town.

Another useful institution, which came into existence about this time, was the Gloucester Social Library, — an association of sixty individuals, which had already made a considerable collection of books, when, in the spring of 1796, the town gave its consent that they should

be kept in the grammar school-house building, then just erected. The annual assessment was small, and its increase, consequently, slow; but nearly two thousand volumes had been accumulated in 1830, when almost the whole of them were destroyed by the great fire of that year. The only resource for literary gratification and improvement now left was found in the inadequate means furnished by parish libraries and a small circulating library; but the demand for a larger and more varied amount of reading matter led the members of the Gloucester Lyceum, and other public-spirited citizens of the town, acting under the stimulus of a generous offer by one of its natives, Samuel E. Sawyer, then of Boston, to establish a new library, which was placed under the management of the Lyceum. This institution was established in 1830, and existed several years as a vehicle for the entertainment and instruction of its members, through the medium of popular public lectures; but this, one of the objects of its formation, has been abandoned, and the control of the excellent library committed to its care in 1854 is the only purpose for which it now has a useful existence. By the liberality of its early and constant friend, Mr. Sawyer, it has been made "forever free to the inhabitants of the town." He has been its chief benefactor; though a recent donation of a handsome sum for the purchase of books, by another native of the town, not resident in it, encourages the indulgence of a hope that the good example of both its early and its later friend may induce others to do likewise. The library now contains five thousand volumes, and its yearly issue is about fifty thousand.

On the 4th of January, 1800, died Daniel Rogers, Esq., aged sixty-six. He was a brother of the Rev. John Rogers, minister of the Fourth Parish, and passed the days of his boyhood and youth in mercantile establishments in this town. At an early age he commenced business for himself, and became one of the leading and most successful merchants in Gloucester. At one time he had sixteen vessels engaged in the fisheries and foreign commerce; and the number of his houses is said to have been the same as that of his children, of which he had twenty-one in all. He left a considerable estate and an untarnished reputation.

While the town was lamenting the loss of this prominent and valuable citizen, a deeper grief filled the hearts of the people on account of the death of the great and good WASHINGTON. Suitable public notice was taken of this mournful event; and on the 22d of February, the birthday of the departed benefactor, the Rev. Dr. Forbes, at the request of the town, delivered a eulogy and offered prayer at the First Parish meeting-house, where a large audience assembled to engage in the solemn services of the day.

CHAPTER XIII.

POLITICAL EXCITEMENT — FEDERALISTS AND REPUBLICANS — WHIGS AND DEMOCRATS — SUCCEEDING PARTIES — LOSS OF FISHING-BOATS AND MEN — SLOW INCREASE OF POPULATION IN TWENTY YEARS — FIRST BAPTIST SOCIETY — SECOND BAPTIST SOCIETY — WAR OF 1812 — PEACE.

The beginning of the nineteenth century witnessed the introduction of an element of discord into the public proceedings of the town, which had not hitherto occasioned any marked division of its people. The foreign policy of Mr. Jefferson's administration aroused a strong opposition, and, in 1806, for the first time, a violent party-spirit prevailed. In the elections that year, and in 1807, the Republicans obtained a majority for their candidates for town officers and for representatives; but the Embargo Act of the President aroused the Federalists to make a strenuous effort to carry the town at the March meeting in 1808, and thus manifest the opposition of its people to the policy of the national executive, which threatened their chief business pursuits with destruction. At this meeting, the Federal party chose their three candidates for selectmen, by a majority of seven in a total vote of 496, and, at an adjourned meeting, three more, by a majority of one in a total vote of 657; but on the trial for the seventh selectman, the Republicans prevailed by the same majority, and thus ended the first hard-fought political contest in the town. The election was held in the First Parish meeting-house, and the first adjourned meeting was not itself adjourned till nearly midnight. The parish committee would not allow the building to be lighted, and as the political feelings of the voters were worked up to a high state of excitement, which the free use of liquor, at their places of refreshment, tended to increase, it is no wonder that the floor of the holy edifice presented a dim scene of wild confusion and discord worthy of Pandemonium itself.

In the State election, soon after held, a full vote was brought out, and the Federalists carried the town by a majority of twenty-five. At the next election for governor, their candidate received more than two-thirds of the votes, and they continued to maintain their ascendency till the party-names of the day ceased to have any political significance.

No period of political agitation again occurred in the town till 1834, when all the opponents of the national administration united and formed the Whig party; the supporters of the President, at the same time, assuming the name of Democrats. The first trial of strength in Gloucester, between the two parties, took place at the fall election, in the same year, when nearly every voter in town, then at home, deposited a ballot. The Democrats achieved a decided victory, and kept the ascendency till the election for State officers in 1838, when, in consequence of a division in their party, growing out of the nomination of Robert Rantoul, Jr., for Congress, they were defeated in the election of representatives, the Whigs having, at two meetings, elected five of their candidates. At the last meeting, they threw 763 votes, against 757 cast by both divisions of the opposition, — 1,520 in all, — being the largest vote that had ever been thrown in the town. It was said that every voter in the town, with a single exception, went to the polls.

Having healed its feuds, the Democratic party regained its ascendency in 1839, but lost it again in 1840, when it was thrown into a minority by the incorporation of Sandy Bay as a new town. At the Presidential election in that year, it threw but 491 votes for Van Buren, against 694 for Gen. Harrison; but it again prevailed, through distractions in the Whig party, in 1842 and 1843, after which it never again became the dominant party in the town. Nor did its old opponents resist a tendency to the formation of new parties. In 1843, the Native American sentiment found earnest supporters, who, for a short time, carried the elections. Again, in 1854, under a new organization and name, it commanded the support of a great majority of the voters, most of whom were finally absorbed into the great Republican party, which, in 1860, elected Abraham Lincoln president. At this memorable election, Mr. Lincoln received 745 votes, against 487, in the aggregate, thrown for the opposing candidates; and the party which has supported him has ever since maintained its ascendency in Gloucester.

In June, 1811, was incorporated the First Baptist Society in Gloucester. Nearly all of its members resided in the Fifth (Sandy Bay) Parish, now the town of Rockport. This society owes its origin to the labors of Capt. Benjamin Hale, a respectable shipmaster of Sandy Bay, who, while absent on a foreign voyage, about 1804, was converted in a somewhat remarkable manner. The first baptism in Sandy Bay was of Andrew Woodbury, on the 10th of March, 1805. Through the exertions of Capt. Hale and others, a church was organized in March, 1808, and frequently enjoyed the ministerial services of the Rev. Elisha Williams, of Beverly; but no pastor was settled over it till December, 1820, when the Rev. James A. Boswell became its minister. He left in 1823, from which time till 1840, when it ceased to be a Gloucester church, five different ministers were, at different times, its pastors. This society held its religious meetings for several years at the house of one of the brethren; next it met for public worship in a hall, and, finally in a meeting-house, built in 1822, which it still occupies. Capt. Hale, the founder of the society, removed from Sandy Bay about 1812, but returned and died there in 1818, aged forty-two.

Among the first members of the Sandy Bay Baptist Church was John Smith, of the Harbor Parish. He had been a member of the First Church, but withdrew from it, in 1806, to join the Baptist church in Beverly. He, and a few earnest persons who joined with him, assembled for religious worship in private houses at the Harbor, till the number so increased that they were obliged to resort to a large school-room. At these meetings, and at their public baptisms, they were sometimes annoyed by the disorderly conduct of persons drawn by that idle curiosity which everything new serves to arouse, but no serious persecution was attempted. They increased so slowly, however, that no church organization was effected till Dec. 29, 1830, when twenty persons were constituted the Second Baptist Church of Gloucester. Their first settled minister was the Rev. Samuel Adlam, a native of Bristol, Eng., who was installed March 24, 1831. He resigned in 1834, since which time several pastors have successively been settled as ministers of the society. The Rev. J. M. English is the present pastor, and the society is now one of the largest and most prosperous religious bodies on Cape Ann. Their place of worship is

the large and handsome meeting-house, at the corner of Pleasant and Middle streets. John Smith, the worthy leader in the founding of this society, died Oct. 29, 1828, aged sixty-eight.

On a previous page mention has been made of the hostility of the people of the town to the policy of the National Government, under the administration of President Jefferson. That policy brought on the war with Great Britain in 1812, which threatened the business of the town with serious interference, if not temporary destruction. "Our home," the people said, "is on the ocean; our wealth we draw from the deep; and by dangers and sufferings which from repetition have become familiar, we support ourselves, our wives, and our children." But, the poor resources of opposition at the elections, complaint, and endurance, was all that was left for them. The anticipated effects of the war upon the prosperity of the town were fully realized. Its fisheries were interrupted; its commerce was nearly destroyed, though some was carried on under cover of a false neutrality; and many of its citizens were made captives at sea, and confined in English prisons. In fear of an attack by sea, the old forts were put into a condition for defence, and two companies of State militia were raised by draft and stationed in the town for its protection; besides another company raised by authority of the National Government.

The necessity for these preparations was soon apparent. In August, 1813, the British ship "Nymph" made her appearance in the bay, and created considerable alarm among the inhabitants. No landing, however, was attempted, but she made several captures of coasting and fishing vessels, and compelled the masters to come on shore and procure money demanded for their ransom.

In the next year the enemy had several large ships on the coast; and the ringing of the alarm-bell, and the startling cry of "alarm!" "alarm!" several times, occasioned great excitement and fear that they would land and destroy the town. Their apprehensions of this kind were so serious, that many families moved their most valuable effects into neighboring villages; but their alarm proved groundless; for, with a single exception, it does not appear that any Englishman set his foot upon the soil of Cape Ann with hostile intent. The injurious acts of the enemy were chiefly such as he could inflict upon the sea. On the 6th of June, an English frigate sent two barges, well-manned, into Squam harbor, to take or destroy a few vessels then lying there. One of these was burnt, another was sunk, and two others, laden with fish, were carried off. About the same time, a schooner laden with flour was chased into Gloucester harbor, and run ashore at Eastern Point, but she was saved by the timely appearance of Col. Appleton with an artillery company. Another schooner was chased in by an English frigate, and run ashore at Norman's Woe; the artillery hastened to her relief, but the barges of the frigate, under protection of her guns, succeeded in getting her off, and taking her away.

A more important affair occurred on the 8th of September, when the captain of the British frigate "Nymph," sent into Sandy Bay two barges, full of men, to get possession of a fort the people of that place had built on Bear-Skin Neck. They left the frigate about midnight, and, favored by a dense fog, one of the barges made a landing not far from the fort, to which the men on board immediately marched, took the sentinel by surprise, and made prisoners of the soldiers stationed in it. They then spiked the guns and threw them out of the fort. The men in the other barge reached the shore about daybreak, at a place near which a sentinel was on watch, who gave an alarm, which roused the people of the village, and brought a number of armed men to the spot. Some firing on both sides ensued, but no one received injury, for the fighting was soon brought to an end by the sinking of the barge, caused by the firing of a large gun in her bow, which started a butt. The men succeeded in getting on shore, where most of them were made prisoners, but were finally exchanged for those taken in the fort.

The people of Gloucester did not engage in privateering to any considerable extent during this war. Only three vessels, suitable for ocean navigation, were fitted out. Two of these were taken by the enemy on their second cruise, and the other returned in safety from a third cruise, without taking a valuable prize on either. One of them captured an English East Indiaman, with a valuable cargo; but, by a blunder, suffered her to be retaken. The greatest success achieved in this line, was by a fishing-boat of twenty-eight tons, carrying twenty-eight men. In one short cruise, she took a ship of four hundred tons, laden with timber and naval stores, and a brig of three hundred tons, bound to Halifax, with a valuable cargo. Both of these prizes were brought into Gloucester, and yielded the captors about $900 a share.

However wide apart the views of the people had been with regard to the justice and necessity of the war, there was no difference in the feelings with which, in February, 1815, they received the news of peace.

The large meeting-house of the First Parish was brilliantly illuminated; patriotic songs were sung within its walls; and the sacred edifice was a scene of merriment and extravagant demonstrations of joy.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE SEA-SERPENT — BOYS DROWNED — SHIPWRECKS — FIRST METHODISTS AND METHODIST SOCIETIES IN GLOUCESTER — NEWSPAPERS — EVANGELICAL SOCIETY — NORTH ORTHODOX CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH — OTHER RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES — GREAT FIRES — SHIPWRECKS AND LOSS OF LIFE.

One of the most remarkable events in the history of this town, whether a reality or a delusion, was the visit of the famous sea-serpent to its waters, in August, 1817, the particulars of which were gathered by the New England Linnæan Society, and comprise the statements of ten persons, given on oath, and all nearly agreeing as to the size, shape, color, and motions of this wonderful creature. Its length was variously estimated, from seventy to a hundred feet; and its body, which was apparently rough, and of a very dark color, was about the size of a half-barrel. One man saw eight distinct portions, or bunches, apparently caused by a vertical motion of the animal. Its straight onward movement was thought to be at the rate of about twelve or fourteen miles an hour, though sometimes, when on the surface of the water, its motion was slow; the animal at times playing about in circles, and then disappearing by sinking directly down like a rock. Three men saw it within a distance of thirty feet, and reported that it darted out its tongue, which resembled a harpoon, and was two feet in length. Three other men saw it at the same distance, one of whom fired a ball at its head. A moment's anxious suspense followed, for the creature turned immediately towards them as if to approach. But he sank down, and went directly under the boat, again making his appearance at about one hundred yards distance.

The existence of an enormous marine animal of the serpent kind had been affirmed long before this time. One had been seen, indeed, on our own shores as early as 1639, when a visitor to New England was told "of a sea-serpent, or snake, that lay quoiled up like a cable upon a rock at Cape Ann. A boat passing by with English aboard, and two Indians, they would have shot the serpent; but the Indians dissuaded them, saying that, if he were not killed outright, they would be all in danger of their lives."

About this time efforts began to be made to form a Methodist society in the town. The first preacher of this sect who visited Gloucester was the Rev. George Pickering, who found here John Edney, an English Wesleyan, in whose house Mr. Pickering preached. Great crowds flocked to Edney's house, out of curiosity, and some of the citizens, becoming alarmed for the peace and good order of society, induced the selectmen to interfere, and request the minister to leave the town. He told the selectmen that he should remain just as long as there was a prospect of doing good. A few converts were the fruit of those early labors; but the foundations of a permanent ministry were not laid till 1821, when, and in the four following years, Mr. Pickering frequently visited the town, and preached either in a private house or in the old meeting-house of the Fourth Parish.

A society, consisting of about twenty persons, was organized in 1826, in which year the Rev. Aaron Wait was appointed to the new station, which embraced the whole Cape. His Sunday labors were usually performed in the old meeting-house before mentioned, till the fall of 1828, when he began to preach in a new one erected on Prospect Street, in the Harbor Parish. The Methodists of that part of the town had constant preaching, in their first house of worship, till 1858, when they purchased the meeting-house on Elm Street, which they now occupy.

The Rev. Aaron Wait, and the five succeeding ministers of this denomination, labored in the Harbor Parish and in the Fourth Parish, occasionally preaching at Sandy Bay, till 1838, when the Methodists residing in the Fourth Parish erected a house of worship, in which they have enjoyed constant preaching down to the present time. Another Methodist society was organized at Bay View, on the north side

of the Cape, in 1870; and the three churches are now in a prosperous condition, and happy in the enjoyment of their religious privileges.

The Methodists of Sandy Bay, just before that section was set off as the town of Rockport, erected a small house of worship, and had the Rev. Israel Washburn as their first minister.

An event of this period, worthy of notice, was the establishment of the first newspaper in the town. On Monday morning, Jan. 1, 1827, appeared the first number of the "Gloucester Telegraph," afterwards published on Saturdays, and, after 1833, also on Wednesdays, till 1873, when it was again made a weekly paper. It had nearly reached the end of its fiftieth year, when, in October, 1876, its publication was discontinued. Till within about a year of its discontinuance, its editor and proprietor for thirty-two years was John S. E. Rogers, who made it such a faithful chronicle of local events that a file of it will ever be of great value for reference.

The "Telegraph" was a family newspaper till 1834, when it became an engine of political warfare in the memorable contest between the Whigs and Democrats. Having taken sides with the former party, the latter established an opposition paper, which was called the "Gloucester Democrat." The first number was issued on Tuesday, Aug. 18, 1834, and continued to be issued semi-weekly till Feb. 16, 1838. Its most important political articles were understood to be from the pen of Robert Rantoul, Jr. That able man had recently settled in the town, in the practice of law. He made here a brilliant start in politics, and soon won for himself a wide renown as the able, bold, and independent representative from Gloucester in the General Court of Massachusetts. His residence here terminated in 1839.

The next newspaper published in the town was the "Gloucester News," a family sheet, established by John J. Piper, and issued semi-weekly from October, 1848, to December, 1851.

Except a few ephemeral sheets, the only other newspapers that have been published in the town are the "Cape Ann Advertiser" and the "Gloucester Bulletin." The former was first issued Dec. 19, 1857, by Procter Brothers. After about a year it was made a weekly paper, issued on Friday, and has been continued as such to the present time. Besides its general merits, it has particular value as a record of current local history, both of which combined have secured it the large circulation which it enjoys.

The "Bulletin" was first issued in 1877, from the old office of the "Gloucester Telegraph." Its publication day is Wednesday. It is a well-conducted newspaper, and, like the "Advertiser," aims to interest its readers, by supplying them with all the current local news.

On the 17th of November, 1829, a new church was formed in the town, by an ecclesiastical council convened for that purpose. It was composed of a few seceders from the First Church, who alleged that they could not be instructed or edified by the pastor's preaching. The pastor, at that time, was the Rev. Hosea Hildreth; and it was generally allowed that his sermons were not after the old Calvinistic model — that he did, indeed, enforce good works more than good belief. It was owing to this, without doubt, that the seceding members failed to reap instruction or edification from his sermons. Having completed their church organization, they next organized a society, March 13, 1830, which they called the Evangelical Society, and then took measures for the erection of a house of worship. Soon after this was completed they invited Mr. Charles S. Porter to become their pastor, who accepted their call, and was ordained over the new society Aug. 1, 1832. During Mr. Porter's ministry, the settlement of a decided Unitarian in the First Parish produced another breach in that ancient body, the result of which was that a number of its members joined the Evangelical Society. Mr. Porter's connection with the society was dissolved in 1835, since which seven different ministers have been settled over it. It is now without a pastor. The society now occupies a small, but neat and beautiful meeting-house, built in 1854, on the site of their first one, at the corner of School and Middle streets.

Soon after the formation of the church last mentioned, another, of the same religious sentiments, was organized at Lane's Cove, now called Lanesville. At an ecclesiastical council, convened Aug. 25, 1831, three males and ten females were constituted a church, to be known as the North Orthodox Congregational Church. An Orthodox society was formed about three years before this time, and had already built a small meeting-house. Their first minister was the Rev. Moses Sawyer, who was installed March 2, 1831. He remained till 1835, since which year it has had nine regularly installed pastors, and sometimes it has been long without one, though preaching has been constantly maintained. The small house of worship, built by the society in 1828, gave place in 1865 to a new and larger one, in which they now worship. The Rev. S. B. Andrews is their present minister.

The next religious society organized in Gloucester was of the Catholic sect. It was, of course, composed almost entirely of persons of foreign birth or parentage, of which class of persons there were but few in town before 1840. This sect held their services, at first in 1849, in a room of a Catholic family; and afterwards, till 1855, in the town-hall. In that year they purchased the meeting-house first erected by the Baptists, and dedicated it to their own religious worship, Sept. 30, 1855. The great influx of persons of this denomination, since that date, created a necessity for better accommodations, which have been recently supplied by the erection of a church, which, when completed, will be the largest, the most imposing, and the most costly religious edifice in Gloucester. It has already been occupied some time by the society, the ministering priest of which is the Rev. J. J. Healey. His predecessor, the first Catholic priest settled on Cape Ann, was the Rev. Luigi Acquarone.

The other religious societies, formed since the preceding, and now existing in Gloucester, are: St. John's Church, Episcopal, of which the Rev. William R. Harper is rector; the East Gloucester Baptist Church, of which the Rev. G. W. McCullough is the pastor; the Swedenborgian Society, of which the Rev. Robert P. Rogers is pastor; the Universalist Society, at West Gloucester; and another of the same denomination at Lanesville.

Before 1830, Gloucester never suffered severely by fire; but on the morning of the 16th of September, in that year, at about four o'clock, the people were roused by the cry of fire, and soon saw a raging conflagration that threatened the whole compactly-built part of the town with destruction. It commenced in the rear part of a large building, occupied as a dwelling-house and a store, near the westerly end of Front Street; and the progress of the flames was not arrested till twenty dwelling-houses and forty stores and out-buildings had been consumed. The estimated amount of all the property destroyed was $150,000; and, as it was not so customary then to seek protection by insurance as it now is, many of the sufferers were reduced to poverty. Of this class, the greater number were assisted from the money liberally contributed in Boston and other places for their relief.

Since 1830, the town has suffered by one other extensive conflagration. A great fire on the 18th of February, 1864, swept away nearly everything on the easterly half of Front Street, that the fire of 1830 had spared. The number of buildings destroyed was 103, and the total amount of property lost was estimated at $450,000, on which there was insurance to the amount of $150,000.

CHAPTER XV.

THE FISHERIES AND COMMERCE OF GLOUCESTER — STONE BUSINESS.

Nature has denied to Cape Ann a fertile soil; but she has given it a harbor of such excellence as will make it the seat of an active population, so long as men shall pursue that great sea-business of fishing which first attracted people of the English race to its shores. Among the inducements to the settlement of New England, were the advantages it offered for the prosecution of this business, in the contemplation of which, that early and famous visitor, Capt. John Smith, was warmed up even to poetic enthusiasm, for what, he says, "doth yield a more pleasing content, and less hurt or charge, than angling with a hook, and crossing the sweet air, from isle to isle, over the silent streams of a calm sea." On this side of the Atlantic, this business was first pursued by English fishing-vessels, which made voyages hither before the landing of the Pilgrims, and returned with their fish to England. In 1624, no less than fifty came. These vessels sought the best stations on the coast of Maine, west of Monhegan, for their fishing-stages; though a few resorted to the Isles of Shoals, and three certainly to Cape Ann. As settlements were made on the coast, these voyages ceased, of course, on account of the reduced expense with which the business could be carried on by the colonists. That they commenced it early, there is abundant proof; for in 1629, preparations for fishing were made in Salem. In 1634, eight boats were fishing at Marblehead, and, in the next year, the settlers at Portsmouth are found engaged in it. About this time, also, Cape Ann was the abode of a few fishermen, and several settlements were established on the coast of Maine.

The first fishermen of Cape Ann were transient occupants of its soil. The permanent settlers of Gloucester were nearly all planters. Indeed, its first maritime business was not fishing, but wood-coasting,

and that was of small amount for many years; for, towards the close of the seventeenth century, it appears that all the property of the town, in shipping, was comprised in about a dozen sloops, shallops, and boats.

The commencement of an active pursuit of maritime business by the people of the town may be fixed at about the beginning of the eighteenth century, when, as previously mentioned, they engaged extensively in ship-building. The division of the woodland, at that time, enabled them to cut large quantities of wood for sale, and the transportation of this article to Boston created a need for many vessels. This business increased so rapidly that, in 1706, not less than fifty, probably, were engaged in it. About this time, too, vessels belonging in town began to visit distant waters for fishing, but the business was attended with considerable hazard on account of the hostility of the French and Indians on the whole eastern coast. The Rev. John White, writing in 1711, says, "the enemy make fearful depredations upon our poor fishermen at Cape Sable"; and, two years afterwards, three men were taken from two Gloucester sloops fishing there. Another hazard attended this fishery, which no human care could avert,—the danger of shipwreck. The first recorded calamity of this kind is that of a new schooner, while on a fishing voyage to Cape Sable in 1716. In October, the next year, four of a fleet of seven were lost on the passage from the fishing-ground, and to these was added, in 1722, another at Sable Island, involving, in each case, the loss of all the crew. Thus begins that melancholy list of the disasters to fishermen which have since so often cast a gloom over the town.

Notwithstanding these risks, the business so increased that, in 1741, above seventy fishing vessels were owned in the town; some of which, without doubt, were engaged in the Grand Bank fishery. The peace of 1763 secured to the fishermen unmolested use of the fishing-grounds; and, from this time till the Revolutionary War, they carried on the business with energy and success. The whole number of schooners engaged in it, in 1775, was eighty; of an aggregate burden of 4,000 tons, and of an average value of about three hundred pounds. Besides those employed in distant waters, there were about seventy boats engaged in the home fishery, which landed, on an average, 160 quintals of fish each.

After the war the Grand Bank fishing was resumed. In 1788 fifty schooners were employed in it; but the business yielded small profit to the owners, and the average earnings of the fishermen were so small that they were kept in a condition of poverty. In 1804 it had become so reduced that only eight vessels were engaged in it, and even this small number dwindled down to one or two, about 1825, though an incorporated company attempted to give the business a new start by employing four new vessels in it in 1819. After three years' trial this company was dissolved, and was glad to save even a part of the capital with which it began. Not even the stimulus of the Bounty Act, passed by Congress in 1819, served to encourage a continued pursuit of this business.

The shore-fishery of Gloucester continued to be pursued, as it had been before the war, and gave better returns than the distant fishery; for, in 1804, about 200 boats, of an average burden of nearly twenty tons, were engaged in it. These boats resorted to the ledges near the coast, where they took, at different seasons, cod, hake, and pollock. This boat-fishing was chiefly carried on at Sandy Bay and the other coves on the outside of the Cape; and for nearly twenty years this shore-fishery continued to be almost the only fishing business of Gloucester. In 1828 the total product of the cod-fishery, in value, was about one hundred and twenty thousand dollars; but soon after that date the fishermen, in larger vessels, began to resort to Georges Bank for cod, where they have found this fish so abundant that, in a few instances, a hundred thousand pounds have been taken in a single trip of two or three weeks. In later years, too, they have begun to go again to the Grand Bank, where, by the use of trawls, they continue to pursue a successful business. The total product of the cod-fishery, from all sources of supply, for the year 1872, was estimated at 384,000 quintals, of the value of about two millions of dollars.

Another branch of the fishing business,—in which, for about fifty years, Gloucester has taken the lead,—is the mackerel fishery. In the early years of the present century, the boats employed in the shore-fishery occasionally took small quantities of mackerel, which they sold fresh in Boston, but the remarkable abundance of these fish in Massachusetts Bay, in 1820, induced the fishermen of the town to make special preparations for mackerel-catching. They built "jiggers" of forty tons burthen or more, and, in the summer season, made regular trips in pursuit of mackerel only, which were rewarded with great success. One of these jiggers, carrying eight men, took, in 1825, over 1,300 barrels; and in 1830 and 1831 the fish were so abundant close to our own shore that, in those two years, upwards of 121,000 barrels were taken by the Gloucester fishermen; but the mackerel is a capricious fish and its habits are not well understood. These years of plenty were followed by years of scarcity, and the total product of five years, from 1839 to 1843 inclusive, did not amount to one-half of that of the two successful years above mentioned. The enterprise of the fishermen, however, has not failed. They have been accustomed of late years to seek the mackerel in the latter part of spring, in southern waters, and follow them along the coast northward into the Gulf of St. Lawrence, where they finish the season's work, sometimes with a fair remuneration for their time and toil; often without earning enough for the winter's support. The business was, indeed, last year, so unproductive that only 49,044 barrels of the fish were packed in Gloucester,—less than half as many as have been taken in some years when fewer vessels and fewer men were employed in it.

One other great branch of the Gloucester fisheries remains to be mentioned, — the halibut fishery. It is an enterprise of recent times, induced by the great abundance of that fish found on Georges Bank, when the fishermen of this town first resorted to that fishing-ground, about 1830. For a few years, the business was insignificant in amount, but the opening of railroad communication with all the cities and principal towns in the country, and the use of ice on board of the vessels, and in packing for transportation, enabled the most distant inhabitants to procure this excellent article of food in a fresh condition, and created such a demand for it that it now takes a great quantity to supply the market. This fishery had risen to such importance in 1847, that the Gloucester vessels took in that year considerably more than three millions of pounds, which sold for something over seventy thousand dollars. The annual product is now much larger, for, in addition to the supply from Georges Bank, the fishermen bring in large quantities from the Grand Bank, to which ground they began to resort for halibut about 1865; and from which, one vessel, in 1876, brought in the great quantity of one hundred and twenty-nine thousand pounds as the product of a three weeks' trip. Indeed, it sometimes comes upon the market in such enormous quantities, — by the arrival of several schooners at the same time, — that the price from the vessel sinks to a cent or two a pound, and it is then that the establishments at which it is cured for preservation are supplied.

The fishing business of Gloucester has now attained such importance that the port ranks the first in the country, and perhaps the first in the world, for the extent to which it is pursued. The growth of the business during the last fifty years is shown by the amount of its products at different periods. Reliable statements, founded partly upon exact returns, and partly upon careful estimates, show that the total product, in value, for 1828, was about two hundred and fifty thousand dollars; for 1847, about six hundred thousand dollars; for 1859, about one million four hundred thousand; and for 1875, nearly four millions of dollars; but the last-named year was one of remarkable success, and was followed by two years of reverse fortune, which has not materially changed up to the present time. According to a statement published in 1876, the three principal items embraced in the product of that year were: 363,231 quintals Grand Bank and Georges cod, of the value of $2,020,297; 9,710,787 pounds Grand Bank and Georges halibut, of the value of $679,754: and 51,040 barrels of mackerel, of the value of $710,201; the value in each case including the cost of preparation for market.

Nearly all of the fishermen who bring this large amount of wealth to our shore are of foreign birth, and a large majority of them have only a temporary home in Gloucester. Considering the temptations to which, more than men of other employments, they are exposed, it may be truly said that, in manners and morals, they will well stand a comparison with any other class of society. For one great quality they are pre-eminently conspicuous; for what but the stoutest heart could brave the dangers and hardships of an employment in which, during the last twenty years, fifteen hundred and seventy-three men have passed through appalling scenes of storm and seas and shipwreck to a watery grave. More than half of this number, in five years, sailed on the voyage from which they never returned.*

The foreign commerce of Gloucester was, for many years after its origin, carried on with the fishing vessels. Before the Revolutionary

* For more particular information concerning the fisheries of the town, the reader is referred to the "History of Gloucester," 1860; the "Fishermen's Memorial and Record Book," 1873; and the "Fisheries of Gloucester," 1876; all published by Procter Brothers, Gloucester.

War, it is not certain that half a dozen square-rigged vessels were owned in the town; and all we know of the commencement of this commerce is, that about 1750, mention is made of voyages to the West Indies, to Bilboa, and Lisbon. The West India cargoes consisted of fish and other provisions, for which sugar, molasses, rum, and coffee were returned; while to Europe little was sent except fish, the proceeds of which came home in salt, fruit, wine, and specie. The first vessel that ever left Massachusetts Bay with a cargo of fish for a European market, was the ship belonging to the Dorchester Company, which sailed from Cape Ann Harbor for Spain, in 1623; but of the great trade in that article, of which that voyage was the commencement, we know little more than the beginning and the end. In 1767, there were sent to Bilboa from the ports of Essex County as many as fifty-one thousand quintals of fish; furnished mostly, without doubt, by Gloucester and Marblehead. This exportation of fish to Europe was interrupted by the war, but resumed at its close, and continued till some time in the early part of the present century, when it ceased entirely.

The foreign commerce of the town gradually increased till 1775, when several merchants were engaged in it; some of whom, if tradition truly reports, disregarded the Revenue Acts, and smuggled great quantities of various articles of importation. In the first three years of the war which followed, the town had a few small vessels employed in foreign commerce, but nearly all of them were captured by the enemy; and, in 1779, it had but one merchantman at sea, and she was owned partly in Boston. Towards the close of the war, however, it began to revive, though still attended with great risk of capture.

After the peace of 1783, the foreign commerce of Gloucester rose to be of considerable importance. In 1790, forty-three vessels, measuring, in the aggregate, four thousand and eighteen tons, and including four ships and nine brigs, were employed in it. During the twenty years succeeding, vessels belonging in the town visited most of the principal ports in Europe and the West Indies; and a few made voyages beyond the Cape of Good Hope. At this period (about 1800), a small ship, of one hundred tons, owned by an association of merchants called the India Company, made two voyages to Calcutta, and was next sent to Sumatra, but was never heard from after leaving that island on her homeward passage.

The Embargo Act of 1808, and the war of 1812, inflicted a severe blow upon the commerce of Gloucester, from which it never fully recovered. During this period of interruption, a few of the small fishing-boats of the town stole away with cargoes of fish to the West Indies, where boat and cargo were both disposed of; and, after the war, a lawful trade was resumed; but it was of small amount; and, before 1830, was totally abandoned. At that time, but one mercantile house, engaged to any considerable extent in foreign commerce, existed in the town, and that, soon after, was closed by insolvency. From this period till 1860, a trade with Surinam, the capital of Dutch Guiana, which has been carried on since 1790, continued to be pursued; but, for many years, hardly a single vessel, belonging in the town, has been engaged in it.

At the present time, the business of Gloucester with foreign ports is confined almost wholly to those from which it imports the salt used in its fisheries, about one hundred thousand hogsheads per annum; and the places in the British Provinces from which it receives firewood, fish, potatoes, and a few other articles.

The number of vessels, schooners, sloops, and boats employed in the business of the town, at the present time, is four hundred and sixty-six, measuring twenty-eight thousand six hundred and twenty-one tons, and manned by about four thousand men.

Such is the business to which the people of Cape Ann are invited by their geographical position. Another important branch of industry has grown out of the geological structure of the Cape, and is of comparatively modern origin. An extensive business in the quarrying of granite was commenced in 1824, when Mr. Bates, of Quincy, came to Sandy Bay, and leased a ledge for that purpose. Within a year or two, others followed, and gave the business such a start that it has become a prominent branch of industry, and has been attended with such prosperity that its yearly products exceed those of the fisheries of that part of the Cape. A more particular account, however, of the stone business, at that locality, belongs to the history of Rockport. The success of the early stone-workers at the easterly end of the Cape induced the opening of quarries at various other places in town not included within the limits of Rockport. The ledges at Lanesville, Bay View, and West Gloucester have been found to yield granite of good quality, suitable for the various uses to which the article is applied, and have been worked more or less extensively for several years. Much of it is cut into paving-blocks, and sent to the principal cities of the United States; and a great deal of it is used for building purposes, — the coarser qualities for foundations, and the finer for superstructures for various public and private uses. At one of the Bay View ledges was got out the largest block of granite ever quarried in this country. It was twenty-eight feet long, eighteen feet wide, and three feet thick, and weighed one hundred and fifty tons. It was used in laying the foundation of the Scott Monument at Washington, D.C. These ledges also furnished the stone used in the erection of the new Boston Post-office. The amount of work done at the quarries in the sections of Gloucester before named varies according as the demand for stone is brisk or otherwise; but in some recent years there have been as many as seven hundred men employed in the business.

Gloucester in the Civil War. — On Saturday morning, April 13, 1861, the mail brought intelligence of the opening of the civil war by the firing upon Fort Sumter, and, on the following Monday, full particulars of the bombardment were received, and occasioned, as they did everywhere in the loyal States, the greatest excitement. The signs of military activity soon appeared in the streets, and, on Tuesday morning, the 16th, Company G, belonging to the 8th Regiment of Massachusetts Infantry, left town for Boston. Its officers were, Addison Center, captain; David W. Low, first lieutenant, and Edward A. Story, second lieutenant. In obedience to a call from Washington, the regiment left Boston, on the 18th, for that city, going by the way of Annapolis, Md., where the Gloucester soldiers, with others, assisted in securing the safety of the old frigate "Constitution." It arrived in Washington on the 26th, and the great service it rendered by opening another route to the capital, when a rebel mob made a bloodless passage through Baltimore impossible, will ever entitle the regiment to an honorable notice in the history of the war. On the expiration of the three months for which it had enlisted, Company G returned to Gloucester, and on its arrival, August 2d, was warmly greeted by the citizens of the town.

The attack on Fort Sumter made it apparent that there could be no peace without a deadly strife of arms, and there was no greater unanimity anywhere than in Gloucester, that the Union must be preserved, even at the cost of this dread arbitrament. A town-meeting was held on the 22d of April, at which patriotic resolutions were adopted, and liberal provision was made for aid to soldiers' families. At this time a company of volunteers had already been raised by David Allen, Jr., a citizen of considerable experience in military affairs, which had its first parade on the 27th, and on Sunday, the 28th, by invitation of the pastor, attended service at the Unitarian church. This company is known as Company K, of the 12th Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, which was mustered into the service for three years, July 26, 1861. David Allen, Jr., was commissioned captain; Benjamin F. Cook, first lieutenant; and Gilman Sanders, second lieutenant. The names of forty non-commissioned officers and privates, belonging in Gloucester, are borne on its roll. It was engaged in much hard fighting in Virginia, and was also engaged in the battles of Antietam and Gettysburg. Capt. Allen was wounded in the leg at Antietam, and soon afterward was promoted to be lieutenant-colonel, and was division-inspector on Gen. Robinson's staff, when he was fatally wounded in the battle of the Wilderness, May 5, 1864. He was carried to the rear by members of Company K, and died in half an hour. His remains were brought home in June of the next year, and buried, with impressive funeral obsequies, on the 13th of that month. Lieut. Cook rose through all the upward grades to the rank of lieutenant-colonel, in which he was commissioned on the day after Col. Allen fell, and is handsomely noticed in Col. Bates's narrative of the services of the regiment. Edwin Hazel, first sergeant of the company, became its captain, and brought, in July, 1864, to meet an enthusiastic welcome home, only seventeen men, who had been with him through the three years' service. Of the Gloucester men in the company, five were killed in battle, two died of wounds, and four died from other causes.

The next company raised in Gloucester was that afterwards known as Company C, of the 23d Regiment. Andrew Elwell, of Gloucester, was major of this regiment, and rose to be its colonel. Company C was commanded by Addison Center, with Edward A. Story first lieutenant, and Fitz J. Babson second lieutenant. The last two were, while attached to the regiment, promoted to be captains in it. A few Gloucester men enlisted in other companies of the regiment. This regiment had been sometime in camp at Lynnfield, when it left, Nov. 11, 1861, to form a part of the Burnside Expedition to North Carolina. It took part in several engagements in North Carolina and

Virginia, and was mustered out as a regiment, Sept. 28, 1864. Thirty members of Company C re-enlisted. Of the Gloucester men in this regiment, seven were killed in battle, two died of wounds received in battle, and one died in a rebel prison. Besides these, sixteen of Company C died in the service.

The third company of three years' men enlisted in Gloucester was the one which became Company D in the 32d Regiment. Its captain was James P. Draper, of Boston; James A. Cunningham was first lieutenant, and Stephen Rich, second lieutenant, both of Gloucester. Lieut. Rich was promoted captain, and Lieut. Cunningham rose through all the upward grades to be lieutenant-colonel, and colonel by brevet for special gallantry on the field of battle. Most of the Gloucester men in this company enlisted in November, 1861; but the regiment did not take the field till June, 1862, when it joined the Army of the Potomac. The part which it bore in the great work of that army is sufficiently attested by the order to the regiment to inscribe upon its flag the names of thirty battles. A large number of the men of this regiment re-enlisted, and, in January, 1864, were granted a furlough to enable them to visit their homes. Forty of the Gloucester men, and sixteen of the 23d Regiment, who came home on a like furlough, had a grand reception and dinner on the 18th of that month, at the Gloucester House, where they were addressed in eloquent words of welcome by B. H. Smith, Esq. The number enlisted in the 32d Regiment from Gloucester was ninety-two, five of whom were killed in battle, one died of wounds, and ten others died in the service.

The next and last company enlisted in Gloucester for three years' service, was that known as Company K, in the 30th Regiment. It was composed mostly of Gloucester and Rockport men, and had for its commander Jeremiah R. Cook, who had a good deal of military enthusiasm, and was long a captain in the volunteer militia. Though he had reached the ripe age of fifty-eight, his country's call for actual service on the battle-field found him ready for duty; but he broke down in health under the influences of a Southern climate, and was obliged to resign and come home after eight months' service. Alfred F. Tremaine, the second lieutenant, became captain of the company. The company joined the regiment to which it belonged, at Ship Island in the Gulf of Mexico, March 9, 1862, and proceeded with it to New Orleans, and Baton Rouge, reaching the latter place on the 2d of June. This regiment remained in the Department of the Gulf till January, 1864. In July, it went to Washington and took part in the closing campaign of the war. Though engaged in no important battle while in the South, it did much hard work, and death by disease made fearful havoc in its ranks. Of sixty-two Gloucester men in Company K, when the regiment left Massachusetts, twenty-four died from that cause. Two were killed in battle in Virginia, and one died of wounds.

This regiment was the last of the three years' regiments mustered out. "Its history," according to the report of the adjutant-general, "had been most eventful and honorable."

On the call of the President for nine months' men, in the autumn of 1862, Company G responded with alacrity, and, with full ranks, left town September 12th, for the camp of the 8th Regiment at Boxford, under command of David W. Low, with Edward L. Rowe, first lieutenant, and Samuel Fears, second. The regiment was on duty chiefly in North Carolina, though it was, for a few days, at the close of its time, attached to the Army of the Potomac. It was not so placed, during its service, as to be called to take part in any serious engagement with the enemy, but it suffered some of the hardships and privations incident to war, and, if required, would have upheld the honor of the State in the deadly breach. Company G arrived home July 29, 1863, with the loss of two of its members, who died in Newbern, N. C.

Company G was again called into the service, with the regiment to which it belonged, and left the State on the 26th of July, 1864. Its captain, David W. Low, was on that day elected major of the regiment; Edward L. Rowe then became captain; George L. Fears, first lieutenant; and Isaac N. Story, second lieutenant. It was raised for one hundred days' service in the fortifications around Washington, and there the regiment was ordered to report. It was on duty, most of the time in Maryland, till November 10th, when its term of service expired. The only casualty in Company G was the loss of one man, who died in Maryland.

The last company raised in Gloucester, was one enlisted by Capt. Fitz J. Babson, for coast defence.

It was composed of men belonging in Gloucester and the towns immediately adjoining, and was known as the Twenty-fifth Unattached Company. It left town Dec. 11, 1864, and was stationed at the fort in Marblehead, where it remained till the close of the war. Besides the Gloucester men enlisted in the companies raised in the town, of which some account is here given, many joined other military organizations, some of whom not only fought, but bled and died for their country. The whole loss of life inflicted upon Gloucester by the war, according to a statement published at its close, was thirty-six men killed in battle and died of wounds; and ninety-one who died of disease.

In addition to the number of men furnished by the town for the military forces of the country, quite as many, perhaps, went into the naval service, for which the customary employments of its people led to a preference. In August, 1864, the selectmen presented a list of 649 men who had enlisted in the navy, for which Gloucester should have credit, and claimed that the town had furnished 699 men over its quotas. Only about a third of this claim was allowed, but, even with this great reduction, it was found at the end of the war that the town had a surplus of 158 men.

At one time during the war, it seemed to be necessary that a naval force should be provided by government to cruise in the New England and other Northern waters, for the protection of the fishermen; as a Confederate war-vessel, called the "Taeony," had suddenly appeared on our coast in the month of June, 1863, and had captured and destroyed six Gloucester fishing-schooners. This act created a great excitement in the town, for it was feared that further depredations upon the fleet would be made, to an extent, at least, that would ruin the year's business. Application was made to the authorities at Washington for protection, and, in the meantime, three schooners were fitted out from the town, suitably manned and armed, to cruise in search of any rebel vessel of the enemy that might be on our coast; but there was no danger of further molestation, for the rebel captain wisely fled from the fate that would have awaited him by a longer continuance in our waters, and no successor came.

It is needless to add particulars, to show that Gloucester did its whole duty as a loyal and patriotic town, in the dreadful struggle to which this chapter relates; for every community in New England did the same; nor is it necessary to dwell upon the fervor of its joy at the cessation of a war which had secured the unity of the nation and the abolition of slavery.

CHAPTER XVII.

GLOUCESTER A CITY.

The people of New England do not surrender the town-meeting unless an urgent necessity compels them to do so. There comes a time, however, in the life of a constantly growing community, when its public affairs can no longer be conveniently and wisely administered by the assembled citizens. The progress of Gloucester to this necessity is indicated by the following statement of its population at different periods. It was, in

1704,	by estimate,	700
1755,	by estimate,	2,745
1765,	by Colonial Census,	3,763
1776,	by Colonial Census,	4,512
1790,	by United States Census,	5,317
1800,	by United States Census,	5,313
1810,	by United States Census,	5,943
1820,	by United States Census,	6,384
1830,	by United States Census,	7,510
*1840,	by United States Census,	6,350
1850,	by United States Census,	7,786
1860,	by United States Census,	10,904
1870,	by United States Census,	15,389

With the exception of the town grammar school-house, which was sometimes used for elections and unimportant meetings, the town had no special place for its meetings, and the transaction of its business, till 1844, when a suitable town-house was built, which served the purposes of its erection till 1867. In that year a new one was erected, which was destroyed by fire May 16, 1869. On the site of this, on Dale Avenue, there soon arose the costly and elegant structure now known as City Hall.

* Sandy Bay, with a population of 2,650, was this year set off to be a separate town, and called Rockport.

The records of the town were, from the commencement, generally well kept, and are now, owing to the attention which it bestowed upon them in the latter years of its existence, in good condition. The record of proceedings in town and selectmen's meetings, of births, deaths and marriages, and of the grants of lands, have all been preserved; and the latter, without doubt, show the original individual ownership of nearly every acre of its territory.

The Act incorporating Gloucester as a city was approved by the governor April 28, 1873, and was accepted by the town on the 15th of May following, by a vote of 689 in the affirmative, and 353 in the negative.

The venerable municipal form of government, under which the town had grown and prospered for 232 years, came to an end on the first Wednesday of January, 1874, when Robert R. Fears was inaugurated first mayor of the new city.

During the few years that have elapsed since that event, the long-continued prosperity of the peculiar business of the city has suffered some diminution, but there is no ground for fear that the means of a comfortable subsistence will be wanting, while the sea yields its treasures abundantly to the skill and industry of its people.

Exposed to the peculiar temptations which beset the path of virtue in a large maritime community, Gloucester may not, with respect to morality, suffer in comparison with other seaports, but its historian must take the liberty to call the attention of all its wise, intelligent, virtuous, and humane citizens to the fact, that the official reports from its police and pauper departments show that all the influence which can be exercised by its churches, its schools, and all other benevolent and reformatory instrumentalities, will be needed to make the new city a satisfactory home for themselves and their descendants.

CHAPTER XVIII.

OBITUARY RECORD

Of Early Settlers, the date of whose death is known.—Joseph Allen, Oct. 6, 1724, aged 71.

Ralph Andrews, Feb. 25, 1718, aged 75.
James Babson, Dec. 21, 1683.
Thomas Bailey, Oct. 15, 1704.
Anthony Bennet, Jan. 12, 1691.
Thomas Bray, Nov. 30, 1691.
John Brown, March 17, 1732, aged 70.
William Brown, May 3, 1662.
William Card, July 7, 1736.
Arthur Churchill, Jan. 22, 1710.
Edmund Clark, Feb. 26, 1666.
Clement Coldam, Dec. 18, 1703, aged about 80.
John Collins, March 25, 1675.
William Colman, April 18, 1680.
John Curney, May 3, 1725, aged 80.
Anthony Day, April 23, 1707, aged 91.
Nicholas Denning, June 9, 1725, aged 80.
Richard Dike, May 6, 1729, aged 89.
Samuel Dolliver, July 22, 1683.
Peter Duncan, May 6, 1716, aged 86.
Osman Dutch, Dec., 1684, aged 81.
William Ellery, selectman and representative, Dec. 9, 1696, aged 53.
Robert Elwell, May 19, 1683.
Sylvester Eveleth, Jan. 4, 1689.
John Fitch, May 9, 1715, aged 79.
Bartholomew Foster, Dec. 5, 1689.
James Gardner, Dec. 8, 1684.
Stephen Glover, Dec. 10, 1686.
Richard Goodwin, March 5, 1709.
John Hadley, Oct. 22, 1711.
Edward Haraden, May 17, 1683.
George Harvey, Dec, 23, 1723, aged 70.
William Haskell, selectman and representative, Aug. 20, 1693.
Charles James, Sept. 11, 1720, aged 69.
Thomas Jones, 1671.
Thomas Judkin, Feb. 23, 1695.
Thomas Kent, May 1, 1658.
John Lane, Jan. 24, 1738, aged 86.
Thomas Low, Feb. 8, 1698.
Thomas Lufkin, Nov. 3, 1708.
Francis Norwood, March 4, 1709.
Joseph Page, March 18, 1725, aged 48.
Jeffrey Parsons, Aug. 16, 1689.
John Pearce, Dec. 15, 1695.
John Pool, May 19, 1727, aged about 57.
Thomas Prince, Jan. 17, 1690, aged 71.
Thomas Riggs, selectman, town-clerk, and representative, Feb. 26, 1722, aged 90.
John Roberts, Jan. 10, 1714.
Abraham Robinson, Feb. 23, 1645.
John Rowe, March 9, 1662.
Abial Sadler, Sept. 15, 1697.
William Sargent, selectman and representative, Feb. 19, 1717, aged 93.
James Sawyer, May 31, 1703.
James Sayward, elder of First Church, selectman, and representative, Feb. 13, 1736, aged 67.
Robert Skamp, April 23, 1691.
Morris Smith, May 13, 1726, aged 70.
Morris Somes, Jan. 16, 1689.
Philip Stanwood, Aug. 7, 1672.
Walter Tybbot, Aug. 14, 1651, aged 67.
Bridget Varney, Oct. 25, 1672.
Thomas Very, March 28, 1694.
William Vinson, Sept. 17, 1690, aged about 80.
Henry Walker, Aug. 29, 1693.
John Wallis, Sept. 23, 1690.
William Whitridge, Aug. 8, 1726, aged 70.
Henry Witham, April 17, 1702.
Humphrey Woodbury, April 9, 1727, aged 80.

Of Other Citizens, Conspicuous in Various Ways.—Joseph Allen, merchant, selectman, and representative; died April 6, 1750, aged sixty-eight.

Joseph Allen (Harvard College, 1774), clerk in the custom-house, and cashier of the Gloucester Bank thirty-three years; died Oct. 8, 1831, aged seventy-five.

Mrs. Joanna Andrews, whose maiden name was Burnham; born in Chebacco Parish, Ipswich, Oct. 11, 1744 (old style); died Jan. 20, 1847, more than 102 years old.

William Beach, son of Capt. John Beach, an Englishman, was selectman, representative, colonel in the militia, and collector of the customs from 1829 to 1839, when he removed to Chilicothe, Ohio, where he died Nov. 22, 1840, aged fifty-three.

James Blatchford, killed in battle at Fisher's Hill, Va., Sept. 22, 1864, aged twenty-seven.

Charles Byles, captain of a company at the siege of Louisburg in 1745, and in other service against the French; died March 9, 1782, aged eighty-one.

Peter Coffin, justice of the peace; selectman twenty-two years; representative nine years, and senator; died Feb. 4, 1796, aged seventy-two.

Peter Coffin (Harvard College, 1769), son of the preceding; studied law, but did not practise; was a shopkeeper and farmer; died Aug. 4, 1821, aged seventy-two.

William Coffin, son of Peter, Sr., one of the leading physicians of the town nearly half a century; died June 20, 1827, aged seventy-one

Nathaniel Coit, selectman and representative; died Jan 10, 1743, aged eighty-four.

John Cunningham, killed in battle at Drury's Bluff, Va., May 16, 1864, aged twenty-one.

Hezekiah Colby, killed in battle at Bull Run, Va , Aug. 30, 1862, aged twenty-one.

Albert C. Cook, killed in battle at the Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864, aged nineteen.

Ebenezer Dale, a native of Danvers; physician; settled in Gloucester in 1810; was one of the two principal practitioners for many years, and died June 29, 1834, aged fifty-one.

Ephraim Davis, a native of Connecticut; physician; died Dec. 11, 1825, aged eighty-five.

James Davis, son of the early settler, John Davis; was captain in the wars with the French and Indians; often selectman; representative eight years, and died May 1, 1715.

James Davis, son of the preceding, had military title of "lieutenant"; was a selectman several years; representative two years; and died March 5, 1743, aged eighty.

James Davis, son of the last-named James, deacon of the Third Church nearly half a century; selectman many years, and representative seven years; died Aug. 15, 1776, aged eighty-five.

Ebenezer Davis, son of Capt. James Davis, merchant and selectman many years; died Oct. 30, 1732, aged fifty-one.

Eliphalet Davis, merchant, and general in the militia; died Sept. 7, 1804, aged forty-eight.

Nathaniel Ellery, son of the early settler, William; engaged in maritime business; was four years selectman; had the titles of lieutenant and captain, and died May 30, 1761, aged seventy-eight. A fine portrait of his wife (Ann Sargent), by Copley, is in possession of a descendant.

Nathaniel Ellery (Harvard College, 1772), grandson of the preceding; engaged in privateering; was taken by the enemy, and suffered much. After the war, was employed as a penman and accountant, and died March 1, 1833, aged eighty.

Isaac Elwell, sea-captain, merchant, and postmaster; died Jan. 22, 1832, aged eighty-nine.

William Ferson, born in New Boston, N. H.; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1797, and in 1805 was appointed to an office in the custom-house in Gloucester, from which he was removed in 1829. Afterwards he filled many important town offices; was a State councillor and senator, and died Dec. 14, 1853, aged seventy-nine.

Joseph Foster, a native of Ipswich; sea-captain; merchant; representative four years, and delegate to State convention in 1779; died Dec. 10, 1804, aged seventy-four.

Addison Griffin, killed in battle at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 16, 1862, aged twenty-six.

Charles H. Gray, killed in battle at Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862, aged twenty-seven.

Samuel Hale (Harvard College, 1766), son of John Hale, teacher and lawyer in New Hampshire. As a royalist, went to England at the beginning of the Revolutionary War, and died there about 1787.

William Haskell, merchant and selectman; died Jan. 17, 1731, aged sixty-one.

William Haskell, deacon of the Second Church; selectman and representative; died Dec. 10, 1766, aged seventy-seven.

Benjamin K. Hough, a native of Chelsea, Mass., came in his boyhood to Gloucester; was brought up in mercantile employments, and continued in them till late in life. He was a distinguished leader in the old Federal party, and was twice elected by it a representative in the General Court. He died March 10, 1855, aged eighty-nine.

John Kittredge, a native of Andover; collector of the customs in Gloucester in 1805, and died Aug. 31, 1822, aged forty-five. He left an only son, Thomas, who graduated at Dartmouth College in 1833; studied medicine, but never practised, and died in Milton, Mass., July 27, 1845, aged thirty-four.

Fitz H. Lane, a distinguished marine painter, died Aug. 13, 1865, aged sixty.

John Low, merchant and farmer; deacon of the Fourth Church; colonel in the militia; selectman thirty-five years; representative and delegate to State conventions; died Nov. 3, 1796, aged sixty-eight.

John Low (Harvard College, 1773), merchant; died Feb. 10, 1801, aged forty-seven.

John W. Lowe, son of Jonathan Lowe, who was proprietor of the first stage-line from Gloucester, succeeded to his father's business, and engaged in various mercantile enterprises; was a representative and senator, and died Jan. 14, 1867, aged seventy-four.

John Mason, a native of Cambridge; by trade a carpenter; came to Gloucester in early life, and engaged in various employments, one of which was that of land-surveyor. From actual survey, he made a correct map of the town, which was published in 1830. He died June 6, 1852; aged eighty-three.

Alphonso Mason, son of the preceding; in early life, first a mechanic, and then a bank officer in Cambridge; came back to his native town; was a selectman and government officer; and perished by the burning of the steamer "Lexington" on Long Island Sound, Jan. 13, 1840, aged forty-six.

James M. Morey, killed in battle at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862, aged twenty-two.

William Morey, killed in battle at Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862, aged twenty-one.

Frederick Morton, killed in battle at the Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864, aged eighteen.

John J. Murphy, killed in battle at Bethesda Church, Va., June 3, 1864, aged twenty.

Lonson Nash, lawyer; came from the western part of the State when a young man, and was a very active member of the Federal party. He was a representative in 1809, and afterwards a senator. He died at Great Barrington, Feb. 1, 1863, aged eighty-three.

John Newman, who married a daughter of the Rev. John Emerson, came to Gloucester, after the death of the latter, to teach the grammar school. He was a selectman several years, and representative three years, and died Jan. 2, 1720, aged fifty-nine. His grandson, John Newman (Harvard College, 1740), minister of Edgartown; born in Gloucester; died Dec. 1, 1763.

Albert E. Parsons, killed in battle at Cedar Creek, Va., Oct. 19, 1864, aged twenty.

Ebenezer Parsons, son of Jeffrey; trader; ruling elder of the First Church, and selectman nine years; died Dec. 19, 1763, aged eighty-two. His son, Moses (Harvard College, 1736), minister of Byfield Parish, Newbury, was father of Chief Justice Parsons.

James Parsons, son of Jeffrey, elder of the First Church; selectman; town clerk eleven years, and representative five years; died Oct. 1, 1733, aged seventy-five.

William W. Parrott, a native of Portsmouth, N. H., married a daughter of Col. Pearce, and became a member of the firm of William Pearce & Sons. He was the single representative seven years in succession, and afterwards a senator. He died Sept. 24, 1858, aged eighty-one.

William Parsons, merchant; deacon of the First Church, and representative six years; died July 10, 1755, aged fifty-five.

William Pearce, Jr., selectman and representative, and collector of the customs from 1822 to 1829; died Dec. 14, 1841, aged sixty-four.

William Pearson, merchant, and representative nine years; died Dec. 5, 1826, aged eighty-five.

William Pearson, son of the preceding; physician; went in ill-health to St. Eustatius, and died there, Feb. 9, 1795, aged twenty-six.

William Pew, a native of Virginia, came to Gloucester when young, and after an industrious life on land and sea, died Jan. 26, 1840, at the reported age of 107.

Henry Phelps, born in Salem; graduated at Harvard College in 1788; settled in Gloucester in 1790 as a physician and apothecary. He was a scrivener, and principal acting magistrate in the town many years, and died Feb. 15, 1852, aged eighty-six.

Frank Pierce, killed in battle at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 16, 1862, aged thirty-two.

Richard Powers, killed in battle at Weldon Railroad, Va., Aug. 21, 1864; aged thirty-two.

Mark Pool, lieutenant in Bunker Hill battle; captain in the Continental army, and major in the militia; died Feb. 11, 1815, aged seventy-six.

Henry Prentiss, born in Medfield; physician; graduated at Harvard College in 1817, and, soon after completing his medical studies, came to Gloucester, and continued in practice here till his death, Oct. 13, 1839.

Joseph Procter, a native of Danvers; came to Gloucester about 1766; established himself as a miller and potter; built, owned, and employed vessels; a skilful and enterprising man, and, five years in succession, selectman; died Jan. 29, 1805, aged sixty-two.

John S. Ramsdell, killed in battle at Laurel Hill, Va., May 12, 1864, aged thirty-four.

John Rogers (Harvard College, 1767), son of the Rev. John, of the Fourth Church; schoolmaster, and, for forty-five years, town clerk; died Nov. 24, 1827, aged seventy-nine.

John Rowe, soldier in the French War, and captain in the battle of Bunker Hill; died about 1800.

John Rowe, son of the preceding; enlisted in his father's company, and served in the army throughout the war. He commanded a company in Shays' Rebellion, and died in Maine, October, 1820, aged sixty-two. He was buried at Sandy Bay, Jan. 24, 1821.

Deborah Sanders, widow of Capt. Joseph Sanders; died April 12, 1868, aged 101 years, 6 months, and 8 days; the only native of Gloucester known to have lived over a century.

Thomas Sanders, commander, for many years, of a vessel in the service of the Provincial Government; died Oct. 24, 1774, aged seventy.

Thomas Sanders (Harvard College, 1748), son of the preceding; selectman, representative ten years, and councillor; died Jan. 10, 1774, aged forty-five.

Thomas Sanders (Harvard College, 1772), son of Joseph Sanders; taught the town grammar school, and a private school, and died by suicide, April 23, 1795, aged forty-two.

Epes Sargent, son of William Sargent, 2d, an early settler; was a merchant, magistrate, and representative in 1740; soon after removed to Salem, where he took an active part in public affairs, and died, Dec. 6, 1762, aged seventy. He was buried in the family tomb at Gloucester.

Epes Sargent, son of the preceding; a leading merchant of the town before the Revolution; joined the unpopular side in the contest with the mother country, and died of small-pox in January, 1779, aged fifty-eight.

Epes Sargent (Harvard College, 1766), son of the preceding; engaged in mercantile pursuits; became first collector of the customs in Gloucester; removed to Boston, and died there, April 18, 1822, aged seventy-four.

Winthrop Sargent, son of Col. Epes Sargent, merchant: a warm supporter of the Revolution; government agent in Gloucester during the war, and delegate to important State conventions; died Dec. 3, 1793, aged sixty-five.

Daniel Sargent, brother of the preceding; a merchant in Gloucester and Boston: died in the latter city Feb. 18, 1806, aged seventy-five, leaving four sons, who became prominent men, the youngest and most distinguished of whom, Lucius Manlius, died June 2, 1867, aged eighty.

James R. Saville, killed in battle at Petersburg, Va., July 30, 1864, aged twenty.

John Somes, sea-captain and merchant; selectman ten years, representative two years, and first president of the Gloucester Bank; died Aug. 17, 1816, aged seventy-three.

John Somes, selectman and representative; died Sept. 3, 1820, aged fifty-three.

Henry Staten, killed in battle at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862, aged forty.

James Stevens, son of William, one of the first settlers; deacon of the First Church; officer in the militia; selectman eighteen years; and representative ten years; died March 25, 1697.

William Stevens, son of James; merchant: lieutenant in the militia, selectman, and representative; died Sept. 24, 1701, aged forty-two.

Samuel Stevens, son of Dea. James Stevens; trader, selectman, and representative six years; died Nov. 16, 1756, aged ninety-one.

John Stevens, son of the preceding; prominent in mercantile and military affairs; died April 13, 1779, aged seventy-two.

William Stevens, brother of the preceding; merchant, selectman, and representative seven years; died May 10, 1767, aged fifty-four.

Joseph W. Story, killed in battle at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 17, 1862, aged thirty.

Israel Trask, sea-captain, merchant, and senator from Essex County; died Oct. 4, 1854, aged ninety.

John Tucker, sea-captain; lieutenant in the Revolutionary Army, colonel in the militia, and representative seven years; died January, 1831, aged eighty-two.

Philemon Warner, probably born in Ipswich; came to Gloucester in his boyhood; was not conspicuous in civil affairs, but was a distinguished elder of the First Church, and died April 14, 1778, aged eighty-one.

Nathaniel Warner, son of the preceding; captain in the battle of Bunker Hill; died February, 1812, aged sixty-eight.

Daniel Warner, son of Elder Philemon; colonel in the militia, and selectman several years; died May 8, 1810, aged seventy-eight.

Benjamin Webber, a soldier of the Revolution, sea-captain and merchant; selectman and representative; died Jan. 9, 1841, aged eighty-five.

John Webber, General; land-surveyor in Maine many years, residing in New Gloucester, of which town his father was an early settler; removed to Gloucester; was a selectman several years, and died Dec. 16, 1858, aged seventy-two.

Samuel Whittemore (Harvard College, 1751), a native of Cambridge; came to Gloucester in 1752, and taught the grammar school a few years; he served as selectman and representative; was an officer of the customs, a major in the militia, and died, July 15, 1806, aged seventy-three. Margaret, his last surviving child, died unmarried, June 3, 1872, aged ninety-five. George Whittemore, Jr. (Harvard College, 1857), who was killed at the battle of Antietam, May 17, 1862, was his grandson.

Daniel Witham (Harvard College, 1718), in early life a schoolmaster; became a physician; was town clerk forty-two years, selectman thirty-seven years, and died about 1776.

GROVELAND.

CHAPTER I.

ITS TOPOGRAPHY — EARLY SETTLEMENT — LOCAL CHANGES AND IMPROVEMENTS.

The pleasantly located and thriving town of Groveland, situated on the southerly side of the Merrimac River, two miles and a half below Haverhill, was embraced in the original grant of land to the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, in the name of Rowley, so named in honor of the town in England from which the reverend gentleman emigrated. It first began to be settled in 1649, and was then a part of the territory called "Merrimack lands." It afterwards took the name of Rowley Village, and finally that of Bradford, in which name it received its corporate charter, in 1675. For more than fifty years there was no formal division indicating local interest or concentrated population. As the years passed, mechanical industries sprang up on Johnson's Creek, stores were built which created a centre for trade, and quite a village was gathered. In 1727, this section was set off as a second parish, when a church was organized, and the Rev. William Balch ordained as the first pastor. As a town, it was chartered March 8, 1850, embracing half the population, and half the valuation, of the original town of Bradford. It is bounded, north by Merrimac River; east by West Newbury; south by Georgetown and Boxford; and west by Bradford. It is thirty-three miles, by railroad, north-east from Boston, ten miles west of Newburyport, and twenty miles north of Salem. Its population in 1850 was 1,367, and its valuation $397,079. In 1875, its population was 2,084, its valuation $833,000, its mechanical products $647,518, and its agricultural products $77,072. Its location is picturesque, the soil good, being diversified by hill and valley, and is heavily wooded. There are indications of minerals in its hills, which have attracted some attention, and have led to explorations, but without practical results. Several springs exist, with mineral impregnation supposed to possess valuable medicinal qualities. Johnson's Pond, a handsome sheet of water, is located between this town and Boxford, from which flows Johnson's Creek, which has seventy-five feet fall between the pond and the river, affording fine water-power, which has been variously utilized from the earliest times. At present, this power moves the machinery of Hale's Flannel Mills, standing at the head of manufactories of that class, owned and operated by any single manufacturer in New England. At this point the tide in the Merrimac flows six feet, which renders the river navigable for vessels of more than two hundred tons burden, and also floats numerous steamboats, some of which are of capacity to carry twelve hundred passengers.

In 1745, Mulikin's Ferry was established here, which served the public till the bridge was built at Haverhill, in 1794, when its patronage so declined that the daily income became less than "seven and sixpence" per day, and it was abandoned. For a time after that, Mr. Russell, a ship-builder there, accommodated the drizzle of travel across the river at that point; Cottle's Ferry, a little below, also served for the transit of the scattering travel; but from 1795 to 1826, there was no established ferry in that locality.

The want of such convenience was so great that Dr. Spofford conceived the idea of establishing a "Chain Ferry" there, by a stock company; but it was with great difficulty that the stock — only $300 — could be disposed of. It was finally taken, and became at once a success, and the property much coveted. Mr. George Mitchell was the ferryman for many years, and it continued to operate as a convenient and paying institution till the iron bridge was built across the river here, which opened direct and free communication with Haverhill. The town contains over five thousand acres of land, having since 1850 received an accession from the town of Boxford, which places more than three-fourths of Johnson's Pond within its limits. This pond is stated to be one and a quarter miles long, and one mile wide. Crane Pond is also located in this town, containing fifty acres.

Some portions of the territory of this town are rugged and wild in appearance. There is a natural curiosity on the land of Eldred S. Parker, in the shape of a huge rock, known as "Cradle Rock," standing with its sharp edge resting upon a granite base, apparently ready to tumble over, but its position is firm, its over-hanging sides affording considerable shelter. The weight of this mass of granite has been estimated as high as one hundred and fifty tons.

The new iron bridge is King's patent, and was built in 1871, under the superintendence of the county commissioners, at a cost of $84,962.70, and was formally opened to the public April 10, 1872. In 1877, the Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway was built, extending from the Boston & Maine Railroad, in Haverhill, across the bridge to Groveland, and is operated every day in the round year, affording excellent facilities for business, and on Sundays brings all the churches in Haverhill to the doors of the inhabitants of this suburban community. It is much patronized for purposes of pleasure, the ride along the Merrimac being delightful.

The early history of the town is closely interwoven with that of Rowley, having been the outlying "pasture" of that settlement in the beginning. It is also closely connected with the opening history of Bradford, of which it was a part till 1850.

This town embraces within its limits the extensive grants, made in 1658, to Ezekiel Rogers and Samuel Phillips, which were soon possessed and improved by the Hardys and the Parkers; following which other grants were made by the town of Rowley to various persons, which were also at once improved. Besides being an inviting opening for the agriculturist, the fine water-power afforded by Johnson's Creek attracted the weavers and other mechanics who had come over from England with Rogers to find homes in this new land. It is generally conceded that most of what is now Boxford, Bradford, and Groveland, was not contained within the first patent granted to Mr. Rogers, but was the next year granted to him and to Mr. Phillips, at the special request of Mr. Rogers.

The first grant of land, which led to the settlement of the original Bradford, was made to Robert Haseltine, John Haseltine, and William Wild, to each "forty acres of land to be laid out to them as convenient as may be without the great prejudice of the town." In addition, each of them were "to have commons for twenty head of cattle, which commons they shall have liberty to fence in wholly, or in part, as they see cause"; but they were "restrained from liberty to erect more than three tenements upon any part of the aforesaid upland or commons." They were also granted "twenty acres of meadow and upland to be laid out to them when they claim it, unless some providence of God may hinder." They were each to have liberty to "cut a thousand pipe-staves yearly for the space of seven years from 1649." They were to have liberty to cut firewood, timber for building, and for fencing in their grounds, "provided they are not to fall any fencing stuff within a quarter of a mile of the pasture fence." The further record is that "they are to be freed from all towne charges for the lands, houses, four oxen, and six cows, and four calves, each of them such a quantity, during the space of seven years, beginning in 1649; also they have liberty to keep swine." In consideration of this grant by the town of Rowley, the parties named "have covenanted with the said town for themselves, their heirs and assigns, sufficiently to look to the herd of cattle that the town of Rowley shall put into the pasture during the time of seven years, beginning in 1649, provided the cattle be two years old and upwards. Provided also, the towne shall pay 2*s.* by the day for so much time as they shall spend about looking to said pasture." Another consideration was, that "the said Robert, John and William doth covenant with the towne to provide convenient diet and lodging, at different times, to any that the towne shall send to keep any herd there." This mutual covenant was subscribed to by Robert Haseltine, John Haseltine, William Wild, Francis Parrot, Matthew Boyes, Richard Swan, William Hobson, William Stickney, William Tenney.

Although these early settlers had not the characteristics of a nomadic race, their necessities and interests pointed to seeking extensive pasturage for their herds, which they occupied in common; indeed, their necessities required of them to be very neighborly, and to pos-

sess many things on the community principle. This condition of things is clearly shown by the terms of the grant of the Merrimac lands to those who were to possess and improve them. This fact is further shown by the record of the settlement of Mr. Ezekiel Rogers. It is recorded in Gage's History, that "Mr. Rogers brought over from England with him, about twenty families. Before coming to Rowley, however, he had increased his company to about sixty families. These people, it appears, labored together and in common, for nearly five years, from the time they commenced a settlement in the place; no man owning any land in severalty from the company, until after they had, probably, cleared up the lands on each side of the brook that runs through what is now the First Parish in Rowley, and had laid out the several streets and roads, as now improved."

From this community of sixty families in Rowley, having "all things common," came the outflow to these lower "Merrimack lands," through the grants to Ezekiel Rogers and Samuel Phillips, which tracts of land were soon after settled by the Hardys and Parkers; and here we find the connecting link between these settlers and the Haseltines, Wilds, and others on the upper "Merrimack lands," forming one town, under the name of Bradford, which held its corporate union from 1675 till 1850.

CHAPTER II.

RELIGIOUS FEATURES OF THE SETTLEMENT — PARISH SET OFF — DIVISION OF THE CHURCH — NEW THEOLOGICAL DOCTRINES — NEW SOCIETY, &C.

In the beginning of this settlement, as with all other of the colonial towns, the institutions of religion were of the first consideration; the "meeting-house" was one of the first things to be provided for, and the support of preaching became an interest of the town, which of necessity made it an affair of the Province, and ultimately of the State.

From the historic sermon delivered in 1820, by the Rev. Gardner B. Perry, the earliest information is gathered, bearing upon this subject, he says: "At what time the people upon this river began first to enjoy the public worship by themselves, does not appear from any record that I have found." The Rev. Zachariah Symmes must have resided in this town, in capacity of a religious teacher, at least about fourteen years before his ordination. At the first town-meeting on record, held in 1668, it was voted that the selectmen chosen that year should "have power to carry on the minister's house according to Mr. Symmes direction," though he was not ordained till 1682. And for his support, the first year, "he received fifty pounds; the next fifty, which appears to have been the salary till the time of his ordination. The one half of this was to be paid in wheat, pork, butter and cheese; the other half in malt, Indian corn and rye." This extract indicates what the currency of those days was, and is suggestive of the probable fact that "greenbacks," and "national currency," were not even such "stuff as dreams were made of," at that time. In these stirring temperance times, it may also be a wonder with some, of what possible value "*malt*" could be as a compensation for the "preached word."

These people were kind to the minister; they built his house, they moved his goods to the town, and gave him fifty acres of land near Indian Hill, appointing Sergeant Gage, John Simmons, and David Haseltine, to lay it out. The first meeting-house was built prior to the first town-meeting on record, but at what date is not now known. It was located west of the centre of the town, near the site of the old cemetery, and the second one was erected in 1705. They called the meeting-house a "sanctuary" in those days. This is the record: "We the inhabitants of Bradford, met together at a legal town meeting, 13th March, 1682, in thankfulness to God for his great mercy in setting up His sanctuary among us, do hereby engage ourselves, jointly and singly, and *do engage our children after us, as far as we may by our parental authority*, to endeavor by our and their utmost powers, to uphold the faithful ministry of the gospel of Jesus Christ in this town of Bradford so long as we and they shall live."

The records do not show, that prior to the organization of the East Parish, there were any religious meetings held in that section; but it is quite probable that there were frequent social meetings held in the houses of those who resided there.

With public worship established, the next step was to organize a church, or, as they termed it, "to prepare for the settlement of the ordinances of God in this place." The question proposed was, "Shall the minister and people of Bradford promote, without delay, a coalition of themselves into a church and society?" The answer to this was in the affirmative, "provided that the people do their utmost in taking effectual care, that he that preaches the gospel among them, live on the gospel according to 1 Cor. ix. 14, that so he may provide for his own household as in 1 Tim. v. 2." This, with other conditions, completing a practical plan, was agreed to, it having been drawn by the pastors of several neighboring churches called in to settle the matter for the people. It was signed by the Rev. Elder John Higginson, William Hubbard, John Baak, Samuel Phillips, John Richerson, John Hall, Edward Payson. "To the conditions of these Reverend Elders the town assented at a legal town meeting the 13th of January, 1682, as attests Shubel Walker, Recorder."

Mr. Perry further relates, that "During the time these things were doing by the town, those who intended to unite in church relation, were preparing themselves for this solemnity."

The venerable Mr. Perry says: "Having, as they hoped, sanctified themselves, they united in fellowship the day Mr. Symmes was ordained, the names of those signing the covenant being, Zachariah Symmes, Samuel Stickney, John Tenney, Joseph Simmonds, William Huchence, Joseph Palmer, David Haseltine, Richard Hall, Thomas West, Samuel Haseltine, John Hardy, Joseph Bailey, Abraham Haseltine, John Boynton, John Walson, Robert Haseltine, B. Kimball, Robert Savory.

This church was after the order of the Puritan church; its faith and its principles were kindred to those which sailed in the "Mayflower," and the church then established was of the "standing order," claiming to be thoroughly evangelical, and, so far as its belief went, was such.

Mr. Symmes was a graduate from Cambridge, in 1657, and a successful minister, gathering 126 to the church, and baptized 238. In 1705, the town voted to employ a colleague, appointing Capt. David Haseltine, and Ensign John Tenney to go abroad and invite some one to come and labor among them. Mr. Hale was invited, at a compensation of "thirty pounds a year, his own board and horsekeeping, and the next year his pay was the same with fifty shilling added instead of keeping his horse." In 1706, a difficulty arose between Mr. Symmes and the town, which occasioned the call of a council, but it was amicably adjusted through the prudent management of Dea. Tenney, Dea. Bailey, and Philip Atwood; and in 1807, Mr. Symms died at the age of seventy-one, passing out from the conflicts of the church militant, into the silent land. July 20th, 1708, Thomas Symmes, son of the former pastor, was called, and settled in the December following. He was a native of Bradford, and educated at Cambridge. It is said of him, that he "was a man of strong powers of mind, and of considerable learning, often reading in his family the Hebrew scriptures." He was a man of revival powers, adding sixty-four to his church in 1720, and forty-six in one month. Two hundred and seventy-three were added to communion during his ministry, four hundred and seventy-four were baptized, and eighty-seven couples were marrried, which are indications that marrying and giving in marriage, and infant baptism, were the usages of those days. He died, Oct. 6, 1725, aged forty-eight years, and the town voted fifty pounds to defray his funeral expenses.

The successor of the second Mr. Symmes was the Rev. Thomas Parsons, of Brookfield, who was ordained June 8, 1726, with a hundred pounds settlement, a hundred and ten pounds salary, and the use of the parsonage and dwelling-house. Under his ministry, 288 were added to the church, 831 baptized, and 176 couples married. He was an accomplished penman, and kept a splendid church record. In a memorandum attached to the records, he observes that "the earthquake on the 29th of October, 1727, produced a great effect upon the minds of his people, and was the means of awakening their attention to the things of religion." Mr. Perry remarks that "the same providence was followed with the same effect in his parish, and many were in consequence added to the church." Changes in the physical condition of the earth in this latitude seem to have taken away this instrumentality for the promotion of church growth, and earthquakes are not now reckoned among revival instrumentalities. Mr. Parsons died, May 4, 1765, aged sixty-three years, and in the thirty-ninth year of his ministry.

When Mr. Parsons was called to the ministry, the question of setting off the East Parish into a separate religious precinct had begun to be agitated, which caused the people of that section to vote against his settlement, to avoid the expense attendant upon the settlement of

a man whose ministry they did not expect to wait upon. In June following his decease, the East Parish was set off; and from that time dates its religious history as a separate parish. From that date, the title of West Parish was applied to the organization hitherto serving the purpose of the whole town for religious worship.

Immediately after the incorporation of the East Parish, a meeting-house was erected, located very near the site where the present one stands, and the first parish meeting was held July 4, 1726, at which Samuel Tenney was moderator. On the 8th of November of that year, the Rev. William Balch, of Beverly, became the preacher, and on the March following, he was invited to the pastorate, with one hundred pounds settlement, and one hundred pounds salary, and the use of the parsonage, with the provision that if, at the end of four years, that should not prove enough for his support, as "signified under his own hand," they would give him ten pounds more, and if that should not be enough, they would add still other ten pounds. He graduated at Harvard in 1724, was ordained in 1728, and "fell asleep" with the people of his first charge in 1792, at the age of eighty-eight years.

The early years of his ministry were pleasant and harmonious; but theological difficulties finally appeared which gave rise to much controversy, out of which, it is recorded, "a spirit of disorganization prevailed in many places, especially in the towns near the Merrimack. Nine members of Mr. Balch's church declared themselves dissatisfied with the preaching of their minister, and made a formal complaint to the brethren. The church thought the complaint unreasonable and refused to act upon it." This did not dispose of the matter, the conflict between opposing theological dogmas not being so easily disposed of. An appeal was made to a neighboring church "to admonish their pastor," as it is recorded, "according to the direction of the [church] platform, *by the third way of the Communion*." A council was called, of which the venerable John Barnard, of Andover, was moderator, which approved of the action of the church, and sustained Mr. Balch. The difference was that which exists between "Arminianism and Calvinism," at that time the vital bone of contention among theologians of the evangelical type. Mr. Balch published the proceedings, together with his able replies to his antagonists.

Two years after, Messrs. Wigglesworth, of Ipswich, and Chipman, of Beverly, became his assailants, charging him with propagating Arminian tenets, and ably maintaining the doctrines of Calvin, which had come to be quite generally the accepted sentiments of New England planters. Out of this controversy came a division, those withdrawing terming themselves "Separatists," and, joining with disaffected members of other churches, built for themselves a meeting-house in Bradford. This was the beginning of the Baptist denomination in this section, which name the new order soon after took. This meeting-house was afterwards moved to Rowley.

Mr. Balch was much beloved by the flock which he had gathered about him, and to whom a life ministry had been given. His life was one of comparative retirement from the public activities which marked the career of many clergymen of his time, and he was fond of agriculture. His fruit orchard was reputed to be the best in Essex County. He was an accomplished conversationalist, and was particularly fond of theological discussion. He was a man of liberality in opinion and thought, and was ready to hear and read the latest thoughts in ethics and metaphysical lore, and was fond of the society of young men of thought and culture; to a late hour in life retaining his mental vigor. His freedom of thought and opinion upon doctrines which some thought had been taken out of the range of questioning or debate, because embodied in a creed or confession of faith, led those not satisfied with his religious opinions to make the declaration that "their pastor propagated doctrines not agreeing with the confession of faith of these Congregational churches; and also, that the church neglected the proper means of convicting said pastor of his errors." To this, his defence was manly and able, and while he did not wander far enough away from the landmarks of faith, as held by the "standing order," to lead to schism between himself and the churches composing the council called to pass upon his doctrinal offences, he was so committed to freedom of thought and free inquiry as to remove him from harmony with the men who separated from his communion to rally around these differences of opinion, and found a new sect.

The time at length came when he was unable to discharge the full duties of pastor, and his people were led to consider the question of settling a colleague. The Rev. Mr. Chaplain, of Rowley, was called, and accepted; but some objections arose which led to his release, the effect of which was to create some division, though nothing existed derogatory to the ministerial standing of the prospective pastor. The division led to the multiplication of ministerial candidates; but, in 1779, both church and parish united in calling Rev. Ebenezer Dutch, of Ipswich, who accepted, and he was ordained on the 17th of November of that year. He is described as "a man of impassioned eloquence, and could, without preparation, hold forth on any subject connected with his profession. He was a man of quick feelings, which led him into eccentricities, contradictions, and irregularities of action and expression, and for a time he engaged too much in speculations of a worldly nature, which injured his fame and his estate." Notwithstanding these peculiarities, he retained his position, and the closing years of his ministry were full of good fruits. During his pastorate, 147 were added to the church, 218 married, and about 300 baptized. He died Aug. 5, 1813, in the thirty-fourth year of his ministry.

His successor was the Rev. Gardner B. Perry, D. D., who was ordained Sept. 28, 1814, entering at once upon a vigorous and successful ministerial career. In his historical discourse in 1820, he says: "Previous to the separation of the town into parishes there were 399 gathered into the visible church; since that time [to that date] 333 have been added to the church in the west parish, 542 to that in this, making 1284 in all; while the town worshipped together 837 were baptized; since that time 1175 have been served with this ordinance in the west parish, and if our calculations concerning the number baptized by Mr. Dutch be correct, something more than 1000 in this, making altogether more than 3000. The whole number who have lived and died, or who do still live in this town, is about 7000; of whom, as we have mentioned, 1284 have made open profession of having obtained a saving interest in the Lord Jesus Christ."

Dr. Perry retained his charge of this parish and society till his death, which occurred December 15, 1859, his pastorate extending over a period of forty-five years. He was a prominent and commanding man, and was widely known as a leading clergyman among the Congregationalists. When the temperance reformation commenced, he took a leading part, and was influential in the cause. He was also regarded as well informed upon general questions, and his opinions and utterances were considered of value upon most subjects.

For several years prior to his death, his infirmities prevented him from the full discharge of his pastoral duties, and in 1851, the Rev. D. A. Wasson was settled as his colleague; but owing to the promulgation of opinions, in his pulpit utterances, which were regarded as not squaring with the creed of the church, his connection with the society terminated in about one year. He was succeeded by the Rev. D. W. Pickard, who soon resigned on account of ill-health. His successor was the Rev. Thomas Doggett, in 1857, who remained with the society till 1864. The Rev. Martin S. Howard was his successor; but his ministry was short, resigning in 1868. He was followed by the Rev. J. C. Paine, in April, 1870, who resigned in 1877. There is now no settled clergyman in connection with that society, the pulpit being supplied by the Rev. James McLain.

The resignation of the Rev. Mr. Wasson, for theological reasons, created quite a sensation, there having been no pulpit questioning of any point in the church creed and confession of faith during the official career of Dr. Perry, although he had been suspected by some of cherishing Unitarian views, which suspicions were strengthened by his friendliness to the Rev. Dr. Peter Eaton, of Boxford, who was quite pronounced in that direction; and pulpit exchanges with him, for that reason, were not altogether agreeable to many parishioners.

Mr. Wasson was a graduate of the Bangor Seminary, and in accepting the call as colleague pastor of this society he objected to being ordained, but waived his objections after presenting to the church his confession of faith, which was accepted as sufficiently evangelical. His sermons, however, did not come up to the line of Orthodox expectations, and a rupture soon ensued. Among his offensive theological views was his statement that "instantaneous conversion was as much an impossibility as to jump from the earth to the moon"; and he also pointedly disavowed his belief in infant damnation, which he affirmed was originally the doctrine of the church.

At a meeting of Congregational ministers, with Mr. Wasson, a sharp theological discussion took place, the precise nature of which is not known. Among those who took part in it was the Rev. B. F. Hosford, of Haverhill, who immediately after preached a sermon in the Groveland church criticising the opinions and doctrines of Mr. Wasson. Mr. Hosford was unmistakably evangelical, and this was the opening gun of the conflict. The resignation of Mr. Wasson soon followed, and the society became divided, many of the influential

members adhering to the adjudged heretic. Among these were George Savory, Jonathan Balch, — great-grandson of the Rev. Mr. Balch, the first minister, — Albion Merrill, and others.

The Methodists formed a society there in 1830, building a church in 1832, in which they had sustained preaching a portion, if not all, of the time. In 1852, being in a languishing condition, the adherents to Mr. Wasson purchased the church of the Methodists, and formed an Independent Congregational Society, inviting him to become their pastor, which he accepted, becoming the independent and radical preacher of the town, and remaining about three years, when he resigned. He was succeeded by the Rev. James Richardson, who was not adapted to follow a man of the type of his predecessor, and he remained but one year. The support of the Independent Society became much weakened by the death of prominent members of it, and by other causes, which led to closing the house most of the time from 1857 till 1865, when it again passed to the hands of the Methodists, who, in the mean time, had sustained preaching in a small chapel in the neighborhood.

Some of the Independents found their way back to the old church, while others retain their position, worshipping, as occasion permits, where liberal theology is promulgated. In this town is quite a sprinkling of Spiritualists, who are cordially attached to that theory.

Dec. 18, 1866, a Baptist church was organized in this town, and a new church dedicated. The Rev. Henry Hinckley was the first pastor, who was succeeded by the Rev. Mr. Anderson. At present, the society has no settled minister, and the pulpit is supplied by the Rev. Otis Wing. The two religious contests which especially mark the history of the church in this town are: the early one with the Rev. Mr. Balch, and the late one with Mr. Wasson; the latter being by far the most violent, and productive of the most important results. The struggles in the parish meetings were often of an exciting nature, and sometimes those whose right to vote was doubted by the moderator, got their fingers pinched by the sudden sliding of the lid to the ballot-box while attempting to exercise that right. The liberal, or independent sentiment, is still strong, though not at present so active as in former years.

The great reform movement of the later times found warm supporters here, the temperance reform movement being early espoused by the Rev. Dr. Perry and others, and has since been carried forward by individual effort, and through the popular voluntary associations of the day.

The anti-slavery cause found some of its warmest and ever-constant supporters here, and there was always an open door to the most radical of this class of reformers. The Rev. Dr. Perry was among its friends, but his pacific nature led him to hesitate in taking an extreme position when the radicals pointed to the crime as resting chiefly at the door of the church. Among the early supporters of that cause were John Brown, Warren Ladd, — now of New Bedford, — and Albion Merrill. The frequent lecturers here were William Lloyd Garrison, Wendell Phillips, Parker Pillsbury, Ralph Waldo Emerson, Stanton, and the Misses Grimpkey. The feeling at times rose to a great height, and sometimes violence was threatened; but no actual outbreak ever occurred.

In education, the town was always foremost, and common schools were well sustained. In 1821, Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, one of the firmest friends of education in the State, was instrumental in establishing the Merrimack Academy, which became an incorporated institution, and was for many years a flourishing school. The early preceptors were Stephen Morse, David L. Nichols, John Tenney, Alonzo Chapin, Sylvanus Morse, Rufus C. Hardy, A. J. Saunders; and in later years its interests were committed to female teachers, of whom were Miss Hattie Paine, and the Misses Martha and Jenny Thompson. In its most successful days its pupils numbered from fifty to seventy-five. The academy was burned in 1870, and rebuilt in 1871. About that time, the difficulties of sustaining the institution became too formidable for the trustees to longer attempt to master, and the school was discontinued by an arrangement between the trustees and the town, by which the latter assumed all responsibilities, taking a perpetual lease of the building. In 1869, the school districts were abolished, and in 1877, a high school was established. It is in a flourishing condition, and has fifty pupils. Truman B. Rice is the principal.

CHAPTER III.

FRUIT-GROWING — "ARMINIAN CIDER" — RESOURCES OF THE TOWN — MR. PERRY'S HISTORICAL SERMON — FISHERIES — SHIP-BUILDING — MANUFACTURES — SOUTH GROVELAND.

The location and character of the soil rendered this town peculiarly adapted to agriculture, and for many years from the date of its settlement that was the principal business. The strong and somewhat stony soil of portions of the town adapted it to fruit-growing, which was quite extensively engaged in,—apples being the leading fruit, though peaches, pears, and plums were raised in considerable quantities for many years. The apple-tree was the most flourishing, often growing to a great size, and, when in bearing, there were trees which produced a sufficient quantity to yield from seven to ten barrels of cider. Mr. Perry, in his sermon of 1820, says, "One of the largest of these trees was on land owned by Jonathan Balch, a grandson of the first pastor of this church, by whom cider of a very superior quality was made, familiarly called *Arminian* cider, and which for many years bore the highest price in the market of any made in the State." It may be said that cider of most excellent flavor is still made in the same neighborhood, and may justly be entitled to the same "brand."

In the lapse of years new industries began to make their appearance by the centering here of mechanics who were attracted by the fine water-power existing on Johnson's Creek. In connection with the Bradford history, mention has already been made of many mechanical enterprises which were located here; of these were William Tenney, Jr.'s, chaise manufactory; Thomas Carleton's, Aaron Parker's, and Benjamin Morse's fulling and cloth-dressing mills; Jesse Atwood's chocolate factory, the manufacture of brass and pewter buckles by Stephen Foster; coopering, by Jotham Hunt; saltpetre, by Dea. Samuel Tenney; tobacco, by Moses Parker, and straw bonnets by various persons. Clay was discovered, of which some was of fine quality, and bricks were made. Grist-mills and saw-mills were numerous, and tanning leather was an extensive business. The facilities appear to have been excellent for lumbering, but not fully improved.

A large shoe manufactory, established several years ago by Charles Stickney, a mile below the bridge, at Stickneyville, is in successful operation, producing with its machinery and thirty or forty workmen large quantities of shoes.

In 1820, Mr. Perry said, "Ship-building has been, and would be still, were it not for the present depressed state of commerce, a very important branch of business here; ships of rising four hundred tons may be safely launched, and with what is publicly known on the subject, it will not appear a matter of boasting to say, our ship carpenters are well-taught and skilful mechanics. This business was commenced by Mr. John Atwood from Boston." At a later time several other ship-builders carried on the business here, among whom were Mr. Russell and Mr. Stevens; and several vessels have been seen here on the stocks at once by persons still living. East Bradford post-office was established in 1842; changed to Groveland in 1850.

For thirty years or more subsequent to 1820, the water-power on this stream was employed to run the grist-mills, the fulling-mills, the saw-mills, and the bark-mills; but they gradually disappeared, one after another, till all have passed away. In the mean time a factory was built of greater capacity than any which had previously existed. In 1837 it was used by William Perry, of Bridgewater, for a brass-foundry; in 1843 it was changed into a shoe-thread manufactory by Perry & Swett, which was not a success. In 1854 it passed into the hands of Hon. E. A. Straw, of Manchester, N. H., and Nathaniel Webster, of Amesbury, who transformed it into a factory for manufacturing seamless bags. In 1859 it was purchased by Hon. E. J. M. Hale, of Haverhill, who was then manufacturing flannels in Littleton, N. H., and was then changed into a woollen factory, commencing operations with two sets of machinery. Not long after that the movements of Mr. Hale indicated that his purpose was to concentrate his manufacturing at this point. Steps were soon taken to more fully improve the water-power; seeing, as Mr. Perry did forty years before, that "much considerable advantage might be derived from it."

The old mill was doubled in size by extensions, and filled with machinery to its fullest capacity, and ultimately, as the water-power was distributed, an engine of forty horse-power was supplied, which relieved from entire dependence upon water as a motor. In 1861 a new brick

mill was built above the old one, in dimensions 52 × 137 feet, and four stories high. To this was attached an engine of eighty horse-power, which insured its operation in the contingency of a short supply of water. This mill was filled with first-class machinery, combining the latest improvements, and manufacturing began to look lively in that locality. In 1875 an addition was made, 80 × 54 feet in size, and three stories high.

In the prosperous days of production, during and following the close of the war, extension in manufacturing was warranted. During this time Mr. Hale purchased the remaining mill-sites on the stream, and in 1869 he erected a second brick mill, which is called the "lower mill," 52 feet in width and 316 feet in length, in all, the main building being four stories high; to which is attached an engine of 150 horse-power. These mills contain thirty-six sets of machinery, which means 108 carding-machines, 49 "mules" or spinners, and 238 looms. All this stands in response to the call of the venerable Perry, less than sixty years ago, for "the erection of a carding machine" which he thought might be profitably operated. Within the last year a brick repair-shop, 32×55 feet, has been built at the lower mill, supplied with first-class machinery. There are four brick picker-houses, separate from each of the mills; a brick dye-house, and a forging-shop; also, three extensive fire-proof storehouses for wool and merchandise. The water-power has been much increased by raising the dam and extending flowage.

These factories give employment to 400 operatives or more, and a village of about 1,000 inhabitants has grown up at that point. About 1855 a church was built in that section, which is now known as South Groveland, chiefly through the enterprise of the late Jacob W. Reed, Esq., which was occupied by various denominations, though largely by the Methodists; but it has now passed out of existence. Since then the St. James Episcopal Church has been built, which is a handsome edifice, and a flourishing congregation has been gathered. St. Patrick's Catholic Church has also been built, which supplies a place of worship for a large congregation. The site for the Episcopal church edifice, together with the structure and its furnishing, was a gift to the society from Mr. Hale, at a cost of $10,000, or more. The lot upon which the Catholic Church is located was a gift from Mr. Hale, who was also a liberal contributor to the structure. He also owns some forty blocks and dwellings, occupied by the operatives. The shoe business is also a mechanical industry here, chiefly in the hands of contractors. A post-office has been established here, and several stores are sustained.

The early building up of mechanical industries upon Johnson's Creek, united with the general excellence of the surrounding agricultural advantages, together with the fishing interest and the facilities for ship-building, led to a concentration of trade in this locality. At the most flourishing period of its business, seven or eight country stores were in successful operation, some of them keeping extensive stocks, for those days, which gave them a wide reputation, attracting considerable trade from the surrounding country. The most prominent merchants were the Parkers. Of these Moses Parker was the first, and following him was Peter Parker, whose name is still remembered by many persons now residents of New Hampshire, whose knowledge of him came through his mercantile fame. The excellent quality of the rye grown upon the pine-plains in New Hampshire made that grain a coveted article in this section. Nottingham West, now Hudson, located in the vicinity of Nashua, N. H., was noted for the growth of that grain, which was annually sold in large quantities to the East Bradford merchants. In gathering the material for these pages, persons were found still living who well remember "Mr. Hill's Nottingham rye," and were able to give interesting reminiscences of the commerce of those by-gone days.

The increase in the value of land, from 1660, is shown by the following: "Before Thomas Kimball moved into this town, probably about the year 1660, or a little after, he was driving a herd of cattle through on his way to Haverhill or Hampstead, when he was met by one of the land-holders in this place, probably Haseltine, who offered to take his cattle at a generous price, and let him have land upon the river at *eight pence* an acre in exchange."

CHAPTER IV.

CHURCHES — HIGHWAYS — SCHOOLS — INDIAN TROUBLES — FRENCH AND INDIAN WAR — THE REVOLUTION — WAR OF THE REBELLION, &C.

When the first meeting-house was built is not certainly known, as before stated, but it was at an early date, and probably before the first recorded town-meeting was held. The builders of the second one, in 1705, were Capt. Haseltine, Cornet Richard Kimball, and John Hutchins. The first committee on record for laying out highways in this town were Serg. John Gage, Joseph Pike, and John Griffin, which was in 1668. The early historian complains of their work, in "making them so narrow as to require them to be widened by the town." The cheapness of land at that time ought to have suggested the practicability of broad highways, but it is quite likely these men got glimpses of the then distant future, when house lots would be sold by the *spoonful* instead of by the rod or acre, and were thereby led to be stinting in public convenience, for the sake of bequeathing more acres to posterity.

The pound was then a necessity for the safe-keeping of unruly cattle, and the burying-ground equally so, as the resting place of those who should die. These were supplied by the town, and were usually located on the meeting-house land, and remained so till the improved public taste suggested a change.

There is no early recorded vote of the town for the support of schools, but there is reason to believe that schools were supplied at a very early day at the public expense. The first record is in 1701, when it was "voted that the selectmen should provide a school, according to their discretion, and that they should assess the town for the expense of the same." The first teacher was Ichabods; the second was "Master White," who taught in 1723, and received £24 10*s*. per annum. Mr. Hobey followed him, and his successor was Mr. Merrel. The meeting-house land also supplied the site for the first school-house, which was 22 feet long, 18 feet wide, and 7 feet post, costing £25. The meeting-house, the school-house, the pound, and the burying-ground were neighboring institutions.

Following the common schools were the private schools, becoming institutions, which have done so much to educate, elevate, and refine society, as well as to give fame to the town. The Female Academy, established in 1803, was an institution which was held in high esteem by the whole people for its educational work. A very large majority were equally interested in the religious features which surrounded it, and with which are associated the names of Harriet Newell and Mrs. Judson, of immortal memory, for their self-sacrificing missionary labors.

Later than the common schools and the academy came what was called the "Washington Benevolent Society," which became exclusively devoted to literary interests, and had many years of prosperous life. This was not confined to one section of the town, yet a majority of its members were in the East Parish. Prior to 1820 the town supported two libraries of respectable size, and besides these were several smaller collections owned by associations.

It is recorded that the town affairs were entrusted to the hands of discreet men, and well worthy to be designated as "the fathers of the town." Town officers were then few, and selectmen, school committee, and sometimes assessors were all embraced in one Board, "empowered to manage its prudential affairs according to the best of their discretion."

The first selectmen of the town were Serg. John Gage, Robert Haseltine, Joseph Pike, John Griffin, and John Tenney; and Thomas Kimball was the first constable. Samuel Worcester, Benjamin Gage, Benjamin Kimball, and David Haseltine were the overseers, and Joseph Pike, the clerk. From the date of the first town-meetings, till the division of the town into parishes, it was the usage to make the houses of Benjamin Gage and Thomas Kimball "legal places for posting up any order or other business of public concernment to the whole town." He remarks that "the appointment of two constables instead of one, in 1707, chosen from the two parts of the town, was the measure which led the way in the division of the town into two parishes, which took place about twenty years after." The compensation of twenty-five shillings a year, formerly given to one, was divided between the two.

The sufferings of East Bradford from Indian invasion were less than most settlements, probably in large measure owing to the peculiar location of the town, being protected on the north by the river, with

a populous settlement along its northerly bank, and on the south and west by communities sure to receive the first assault of the savages, and beat them back. The town, however, was not without its trials, and was often called upon to supply men to assist in guarding against the foe. The town maintained three garrisons and a block-house, which afforded places of refuge and safety when attacks were threatened.

In 1850 it became a separate town, and from that time dates its distinct history in everything which pertains to a town municipality. Its leading citizens have ever been distinguished for their interest and activity in public affairs. When the War of the Rebellion broke out, its citizens were thoroughly posted in reference to the issues before the country, and were ready at a moment's warning to stand for the defence of the loyal cause.

The records of the town show that the selectmen in 1861 and 1862 were Nathaniel Ladd, Solomon Spofford, C. W. Hopkinson; in 1863, Nathaniel Ladd, C. W. Hopkinson, Samuel Balch; in 1864, Nathaniel Ladd, Z. C. Wardwell, C. W. Hopkinson. The town clerk and town treasurer through the war was Morris Spofford.

The first town-meeting in Groveland, to consider matters connected with the war, was held April 30, 1861, at which E. B. George, Elijah Clarke, John C. Foote, N. H. Griffith, and D. H. Stickney were chosen "to furnish all persons who are called into active service from this town with all necessary articles, and to provide for their families during their absence"; also, "that all volunteers from this town in regularly organized companies, holding themselves liable to instant call to the service of their country, and in constant drill to prepare themselves for service, be paid ten dollars a month while so employed." June 22d, voted "that all volunteers entitled to pay for drilling be paid to this day, and that hereafter no money shall be paid for drilling"; also, voted "to transfer the duties of the committee chosen at the last meeting to the selectmen."

In 1862, July 19th, voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars to each volunteer, "to the number of twenty-one," who shall "enlist from this town" for three years, said bounty to be paid upon the production of "satisfactory evidence of enlistment and mustering in as above"; voted "that the payment of the above bounty be limited to those who enlist in the month of July." July 26th, voted to authorize the selectmen "to pay fifty dollars, in addition to the amount previously voted, to all residents that have, or may, volunteer from this town previous to the first of August next." The following resolution was spread upon the town records: —

Resolved, That we have learned with pain and sadness of the privations and sufferings of our soldiers in the late battles before Richmond, especially those who went from our midst; that they all deserve our deepest sympathy and highest gratitude for the heroic bravery and unyielding fortitude with which they met the trials of that terrible carnage; and that we will ever revere the memory of our townsman, Charles Boynton, who died in the thickest of the fight, facing the foe.

August 13th, voted to pay a bounty of one hundred and fifty dollars for nine months' volunteers, "under the recent call of the President for three hundred thousand militia." The selectmen were instructed "to pay fifty dollars in money to each person, provided he shall require that amount; and that they give the note of the town treasurer, payable on demand after one year, with interest from date, for the balance." December 12th, it was voted, "that the town pay no further bounty for nine-months' men;" "that the selectmen procure three-years' men to fill the quota of the town, and inform the Adjutant-General that the town has rescinded the bounty offered for nine-months' men, and will endeavor to procure three-years' men to fill its quota."

In 1863, August 17th, voted, that the selectmen be authorized to hire money to pay aid to the families of drafted men.

In 1864, April 8th, the treasurer, under the direction of the selectmen, was authorized to borrow money sufficient "to pay a bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars to each volunteer for three years' service, as will enlist to the credit of the town under the pending call of the President for two hundred thousand men." June 25th, the same officers were authorized to borrow money and pay the same bounty for volunteers in anticipation of another call for more men by the President. August 13th, a citizens' meeting was held; a committee was appointed "to circulate a subscription paper to raise funds for the payment of bounties to volunteers, in addition to the one hundred and twenty-five dollars voted by the town," which meeting was adjourned till August 15th. At that meeting the committee reported thirteen hundred and sixty-four dollars collected from one hundred and twenty subscribers, which money, and the subscription list, were passed to the selectmen.

On the 16th of February, 1865, the selectmen were authorized to enlist men to fill the quota of the town, and to draw upon the treasury for the necessary funds.

During this time Groveland furnished one hundred and eighty-five men for the war, making a surplus of seventeen over and above all demands. Seven were commissioned officers. The total sum of money appropriated and expended by the town for war purposes, exclusive of State aid, was twenty-seven thousand eight hundred and twelve dollars and fifty-seven cents ($27,812.57).

In addition, the amount of money raised and expended by the town during the four years of the war, for State aid to soldiers' families, which was afterwards re-imbursed to it by the Commonwealth, was as follows: In 1861, $764.08; in 1862, $2,544.66; in 1863, $3,403.96; in 1864, $3,557.33; in 1865, $3,000; making a total amount of $13,-269.93.

In addition to this, the ladies of this town were constant in their labors in supplying the means of relief and comfort to the sick and wounded soldiers in hospitals and in camp, which were distributed through the agency of the various instrumentalities organized for that service.

At the close of the war, upon the return of the soldiers, the town gave them a public reception, which took place on the 27th of July, 1865, which was a fitting testimonial of respect for the surviving heroes who had faithfully served their country in this memorable conflict.

While the living were thus made sensible of a proper appreciation of their services, the "Roll of Honor" was not forgotten, and a monument was erected to commemorate the patriotic deeds and sacrifices of the twenty-four who gave their lives for their country during the War of the Rebellion. This marble shaft, of appropriate design, was erected on the Common, near the Congregational church, at a cost of fifteen hundred dollars; and was dedicated in 1866, on the first anniversary of the return of the soldiers, with appropriate ceremonies. In 1867, the L. B. Schwabe Post, No. 107, G. A. R., was organized, which name was subsequently changed to that of the Charles Sumner Post, and now bears that honored name and title.

Of the business men in this town, none have occupied a more prominent or influential position than the late George Savory, whose death occurred in 1854. He was a man of noble impulses, possessed of ample means, generous of heart, and public-spirited, whose business enterprise was of great advantage to the town. He was liberal in his religious opinions, and in politics Democratic. He was an acknowledged leader of that party in this section, and was once a candidate for lieutenant-governor on the Democratic State ticket.

Dea. Nathaniel Ladd was also a man of much prominence and of a patriarchal character. He was much in town office, and much engaged in services of trust and responsibility for his neighbors and townsmen. He was a man highly respected, and one in whom the fullest public confidence reposed. He died, June 9, 1878, at the ripe age of 92 years.

The most remarkable living man in Groveland, at the present time, is Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, now in the 92d year of his age, yet in the possession of tolerable health, considerable vigor of body, and retaining his mental powers with remarkable strength, clearness, and activity. Dr. Spofford has been for more than seventy years a citizen of the town, during which time he has been constantly engaged for the promotion of its interests. He has usually been found a warm friend of public improvements, and the promotion of educational interests. The existence of the "chain ferry," so long a convenience to the public, was through his instrumentality. He was one of the earliest and most earnest promoters of the Newburyport and Georgetown Railroad enterprise, and warmly favored the bridging of the Merrimac for the public convenience, while he was generally friendly to public improvements. The establishment of the Merrimack Academy was largely through his efforts, and his voice and pen have ever been actively employed in behalf of the cause of education. As a physician, he has ever held an honorable position, though now chiefly, if not entirely, retired from practice. His life has been long enough to span nearly all the political phases of parties since the days of Washington, and he possesses much personal knowledge of all the political organizations which have existed in the present century. He is the author of "Spofford's Gazetteer of Massachusetts." The present possession of his powers of body and mind, in so full measure, renders him a remarkable man, and one whom it is a pleasure to meet.

HAMILTON.

Hamilton was a part of Ipswich, and known as "The Hamlet," until its incorporation, June 21, 1793, when it received its present name in honor of Alexander Hamilton. It is bisected by the Eastern Railroad, and is by it about twenty-four miles from Boston. The church is in north latitude 42° 37′ 22.09″, and in west longitude 70° 51′ 35.21″. The town is bounded on the north by Ipswich, from which it is partly separated by Ipswich River; on the east by Essex; on the south by Manchester for a short distance, and by Wenham; and on the west by Topsfield, the dividing line being in part the Ipswich River. The underlying rock is sienite, and bowlders are plentifully strewn over the surface of the ground. The soil is in general productive, and under good cultivation. The whole number of farms is ninety-three. They are well fenced, and the highways are kept in good order. Vineyard Hill, a notable eminence in the westerly part of the town, overlooks the valley of the Ipswich River: and from Brown's Hill, a beautiful, rounded eminence in the south-easterly part, may be seen the windings of the Miles River, and the well-shaded village of Hamilton, on the north; the Chebacco Pond, and the dense forests of Essex and Manchester, and the ocean, on the east; the spires of Marblehead, on the south; and a broad sweep of land, with the State insane asylum, on the west. The views on every hand are very charming. This hill and the neighboring ponds were favorite resorts of the red men.

There are several other pleasant eminences, as Sagamore and Dodge's hills, within the limits of the town; but the land is for the most part level, or gently broken, with a gradual slope towards the north-west. An extensive swamp occupies the south-western angle of the town, and prevents its being settled.

The water-supply is very good, and furnishes some motive power, together with an abundance of fresh-water, and in some instances salt-water, fish. On the west and north, the Ipswich River, rising in the town of Wilmington, meanders through fertile valleys, and then enters Ipswich near the line of the Eastern Railway. It receives, as affluents from Hamilton, the outlet of Pleasant Pond, Black Brook, and Miles River, — a pretty, serpentine stream which flows from Wenham Pond, and holds its course north-eastwardly, and nearly parallel with the main street of the central village. Several beautiful sheets of water — as Beck's Pond, Round Pond, Gravel Pond, and Chebacco Pond, a part of which is in Essex — diversify the scenery in the south-eastern section of the town, and furnish pleasant resorts for boating and angling in the summer, and for skating in the winter season. Asbury Grove, a noted Methodist camp-meeting ground, in the southerly part of the town, is laid out, in a forest of lofty pines, with streets, avenues, and parks, on which have been constructed many cottages, in various styles of architecture, for the accommodation of families during the continuance of the meetings, which annually attract thousands of people to this delightful spot. It is approached by a branch railroad from the Wenham station of the Eastern Railroad. The first meeting was held here in 1859.

The town has four public schools, all in a good condition; a handsome Congregational church; a good parsonage, built by the ladies; and an ancient cemetery, opposite to the church. There is an excellent hotel on the Chebacco Pond, owned and kept by Mr. John Whipple. It commands a fine view of the pond, and the scenery on every side is quite romantic. The building was struck by lightning in August, 1878, but has since been repaired. The town is accommodated by three railroad depots; one of which is the Wenham station on the Eastern road, and the others are the Miles River and Woodbury's station on the Essex Branch road.

The people are mostly engaged in agricultural pursuits, for which the soil is well adapted; and lead very quiet, frugal and contented lives. None of them are very wealthy, none very poor; and hence republican simplicity in the main prevails.

The principal village consists of one extended and well-shaded street, the buildings of which present a rural and comfortable aspect.

In answer to a petition of sixty-five men of the Hamlet, it was organized as a parish, Oct. 14, 1713; and in November of that year the first meeting-house was completed. It was 50 feet long, and 38 feet wide, with a turret on the south end. In September, 1731, a bell of 300 pounds for it arrived from England, and was for some time hung on a pine-tree near the meeting-house.

A church of twenty-eight members was organized here as the third of Ipswich, Oct. 12, 1714; and, on the 27th of the same month and year, the Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth was ordained as pastor. The salary of Mr. Wigglesworth for the first year was £60, two-thirds to be paid in money, the rest in corn; and he was also to have twenty cords of wood per annum. His salary was to be increased by £5 the second, and £10 the third, year; with the use of the parsonage when completed. His "settlement" was £100, and one and a half acre of land.

Mr. Wigglesworth was the son of the Rev. Michael (and Martha) Wigglesworth, author of the once-popular poem called "The Day of Doom;" and was graduated at Harvard College in the class of 1707. After leaving college, he spent several years in practising medicine and in teaching school. He delivered the election sermon before the General Court in 1733, and the Dudleian lecture in 1760. He was a man of more than ordinary ability, and continued in the pastorate at the Hamlet until his decease, which occurred at the age of seventy-nine years, Sept. 3, 1768. He was twice married, and had thirteen children; of whom Edward Wigglesworth (Harvard College, 1761) was a colonel in the Revolutionary War. [Memoir of the Rev. Michael Wigglesworth by John Ward Dean, A.M., p. 120.]

He was buried in the graveyard nearly opposite to his church. The dwelling-house in which Mr. Wigglesworth lived and died is still standing, a little distance southward from the church, and is at present occupied by Mrs. Francis Dane.

Among the earliest deaths at the Hamlet was that of Mr. Richard Hubbard, May 3, 1681. He was a brother of the Rev. William Hubbard, was a graduate of Harvard College in 1653, and deputy to the General Court in 1660. Also, that of John Whipple, Aug. 10, 1683. He was appointed, Feb. 21, 1676, captain of a troop to repair to Marlborough against the Indians, and in 1677 was sent with a company against the enemy at Salisbury. He was treasurer of the county. The burial-place, enlarged and still in use, was occupied as such as early as 1706; and the earliest legible inscription in it is: "Memento mori, Fugit hora. Here Lyes ye Body of John Dane, who departed this Life, Dec. 23, 1707."

Nathaniel Woodbury, of the Hamlet, was taken by the Indians, at Wells, in 1712; and after many hardships, and paying £30 for his redemption, returned home in November, 1720. The General Court allowed him £60, and appointed him interpreter of the Indian language. (Felt, p. 210.)

March 17, 1722, the Hamlet was saddened by the death of Dea. John Gilbert, only son of Humphrey Gilbert, and a useful citizen.

In 1726 there were three Indian families, each of which owned a wigwam on Wigwam Hill. But they soon afterwards left the place.

The great earthquake which occurred Oct. 29, 1727, caused many of the people to give serious attention to religion, and within one year afterwards ninety-nine persons united with the church. Ipswich votes this year to give the Hamlet its "old school bell." Abraham Tilton died here, March 28, 1728, in the ninetieth year of his age.

Alive to the cause of education, the Hamlet voted March 10, 1730, to erect a school-house; and Joseph Seccomb was that year employed as an instructor. Mr. Samuel Langdon subsequently taught the school. The innholder in 1732 was John Thomson. The building was near the church. The spotted fever prevailed here extensively in 1738; and Jan. 23d of that year Nathaniel Cross had lost all his seven children, within a month, of that disease. On the 28th of January, 1739, Matthew Whipple, of this place, died in his eightieth year; leaving, *inter alios*, William, whose son William became a signer of the Declaration of Independence. June 29, 1740, John Whipple, Jr., was killed while felling a tree. On the 7th of April, 1741, "Mr. Lord, of the Hamlet, who had left his house but a short time after breakfast, was found in the evening, under a tree, killed

by lightning." The people at that time knew but little of the laws of electricity, and had not noticed that a tree is a good conductor of the fluid, and therefore to be avoided in a thunder-storm. Aug. 30, 1741, Col. Symonds Eppes died at the Hamlet, in his seventy-ninth year. He gave a large silver can to the Hamlet church. He held many public offices, and was highly respected. He married, in 1715, Mary Whipple, who afterwards became the wife of President Holyoke. While Mr. Wigglesworth was conducting service in church, June 3, 1744, the people were greatly alarmed by an earthquake.. To restore quiet, he said to them, "There can be no better place for us to die in than the house of God."

The sensation of the Hamlet in 1753 was the introduction of a chaise by the Rev. Mr. Wigglesworth, who in all things was determined to keep abreast of the times in which he lived. The sleigh had already come into use.

In 1757 it was voted by the parish, that the scholars attending school "find the wood and the master's board."

In the old French war, the Hamlet was well represented. In March and May, 1755, the Rev. Mr. Wigglesworth delivered good sermons in the presence of the troops enlisted from the town of Ipswich. Both of them were printed. Antipas Dodge, John Jones, Joseph Symonds, Amos Howard, and Elijah Maxey were soldiers from the Hamlet. The first three were killed at Lake George; the other two were wounded in the service. The soldiers from the Hamlet, under Capt. Stephen Whipple, in the expedition against Crown Point in 1756: Benjamin Pinder, aged nineteen; Ebenezer Porter, twenty-four; Joseph Whipple, seventeen; Nathaniel Adams, nineteen; William Poland, twenty; Stephen Brown, twenty; Stephen Lowater, twenty-three; Benjamin Glazier, twenty-one; John Baker, seventeen; John Marshall, forty-two; Thomas Adams, thirty-three; and John Boynton, nineteen. Capt. Whipple, then twenty-nine years old, had charge of the stores at Fort William. Samuel Porter, of the Hamlet, was at the eastward, in a company disguised as Indians.

On the 8th of July, 1758, Capt. Whipple was severely, as his two lieutenants, Burnham and Low, of Chebacco, were mortally, wounded. On the day preceding, Samuel Porter and Nehemiah Knowlton, of the Hamlet, with some others, captured a French lieutenant and two privates. The lieutenant threw down his watch and purse, and cried for quarter. On meeting Capt. Whipple, Porter made inquiry as to the wound he had received. To which the gallant officer replied, "No matter for it: I am afraid I have lost my two lieutenants."

Porter was afterwards in a ship below Quebec when that city, in 1759, surrendered to the victorious army of Gen. Wolfe.

Abraham Hobbs, of the Hamlet, was in the army at Quebec, and in the battle on the Plains of Abraham. He heard Gen. Wolfe say to his men, as the French approached, "Now, my boys, do your best!" Unconsciously, the men were training themselves in these hard campaigns for the great struggle of the Revolution.

Capt. Stephen Whipple and nineteen men of his company took passage in the snow "Hibernia," from Louisburg, for Boston, Dec. 5, 1760; but were driven by a storm to the West Indies. They soon however, returned in the ship "Montreal," Capt. Caleb Seabury, to New York, and thence to the Hamlet.

A warden was appointed for the parish in 1761, whose duty it was to enforce a strict observance of the Sabbath. This office was continued many years, and all offenders were promptly prosecuted.

The parish contributed this year £82 14*s*. 2*d*. for the relief of sufferers by fire in Boston the year preceding.

A second church edifice, 60 feet long and 40 feet wide, was erected on the site of the old one in 1762, at a cost of about $2,151. It had long seats on one side of the aisle for men, and on the other side for women. It has been remodelled, and is still in use.

John Annable, born Feb. 19, 1722 (Harvard College, 1744), died on the 18th of April of this year. He had been a schoolmaster, and was fitted for the ministry.

Dea. Matthew Whipple, son of Maj. Matthew Whipple, died here, much lamented, Feb. 17, 1764.

The Hamlet had, in 1768, a school in the centre; and also one at the east, and another at the west, part.

Mr. Wigglesworth was succeeded, Sept. 11, 1771, by the Rev. Manasseh Cutler, who continued in the pastorate until his death, July 28, 1823. He was born in Killingly, Conn., May 3, 1742: graduated at Yale College in 1765; studied law, and was admitted to the bar in 1767. Dissatisfied with his profession, he then studied theology with his father-in-law, the Rev. Benjamin Balch of Dedham, and in 1770 was licensed to preach the gospel. Though settled over a quiet rural parish, he manifested great vigor of mind, and in various capacities rendered valuable service to his country. In the Revolutionary war, he was appointed chaplain of the 11th Massachusetts regiment, commanded by Col. Ebenezer Francis; and for his gallantry in the action in Rhode Island, Aug. 28, 1778, was presented with a fine horse. He studied and practised medicine, and became noted for his knowledge of botany, to the study of which he was allured by the varied flora of the Hamlet. He was the first to attempt a scientific description of the plants of New England; and by him was in part prepared the chapter on plants and trees in Dr. Jeremy Belknap's History of New Hampshire. In 1781 he was made a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. To him belongs the honor of laying the foundation of the State of Ohio. As agent of the Ohio Company, he bought, in 1787, one and a half millions of acres of land lying north-west of the Ohio River. On the 7th of April of the ensuing year, the settlement of Marietta was commenced by a company of emigrants under his direction; he himself travelling thither the next year, in a sulky, in the short space of twenty-nine days. The emigrants started from Dr. Cutler's house in December, 1787, and fired a salute on leaving his door. They went in a large covered wagon, on which was painted, "Ohio! For Marietta on the Muskingum." He is justly considered the founder of that noble State. He was buried in the graveyard in front of his church. In his epitaph it is truly said: "He was eminent for his botanical, medical, political, and theological knowledge."

In 1791 he received from Yale College the degree of LL.D., and he served as member of Congress from 1800 to 1804. He delivered a centennial discourse at Hamilton, Oct. 27, 1814, which was published. His son Jervis Cutler was one of the emigrants who settled Marietta, and died at Evansville, Ind., June 25, 1844.

Dr. Cutler was dignified and courteous in manner, fluent in conversation, and ever zealously bent on the acquisition of knowledge. His complexion was light: his voice, low, distinct, and clear.

At the time of the settlement of Mr. Cutler, the church had twenty-seven male and forty-one female members. Two years later, the Hamlet contained 116 dwelling-houses, 172 families, 419 males, and 451 females; making a total of 870 inhabitants.

Dr. Elisha Whitney (Harvard College, 1766), came to practise medicine at the Hamlet in 1772, served as a surgeon in the army, and removed to Beverly in 1793. He was followed by Dr. Nathan Lakeman, who practised here from that time until 1800.

In the opening of the Revolution, and all through that great struggle, the people of the Hamlet evinced an ardent patriotism, and the village was well represented in most of the great battles of the war. The citizens abstained from the use of imported manufactured articles, and substituted other beverages for tea. The soldiers were mostly enrolled in the Ipswich companies, and for their equipment and payment the Hamlet made great sacrifices. An alarm-list was made up at the Hamlet; and, March 13, 1775, John Whipple, Jr., was chosen captain, John Thompson, 2d, lieutenant, and Jonathan Lamson ensign. In 1776 Joseph Lufkin was killed by the fall of a tree while serving in the western army.

In 1777, June 30th, there were sixty-one cases of the small-pox in the easterly part of the parish; and people from some other towns opposing inoculation came here to be inoculated for that disease. The pest-house was even more dreaded than the British army. Some of the neighboring towns, as Beverly and Manchester, stoutly opposed the practice of inoculation, and hence the large number of cases at the Hamlet.

A considerable quantity of saltpetre was made here in the early part of the Revolution, and one lady, when asked if her oak wood might be cut down for this purpose, nobly replied: "It is for liberty; take as much of the wood as you want."

Dec. 18, 1778, Benjamin Ireland died in this place, at the remarkable age of 100 years; and Feb. 12, 1780, the Widow Marshall died at the still more remarkable age of 102 years. From 1771 to 1792, there were 252 deaths at the Hamlet. Thirty-three of these were of persons eighty years old or upwards.

At the close of the Revolution, fishing vessels, some of twenty tons, were to some extent built here, and drawn by ox-teams two or three miles to the Chebacco River; but the business has long since been abandoned as unprofitable.

On the 4th of July, 1784, three sons were born at one birth in the Hamlet, all of whom attained the age of manhood.

The Hamlet was, through the efforts of Dr. Cutler, incorporated as a town June 21, 1793, and named in honor of Alexander Hamilton, then Secretary of the Treasury of the United States.

The town voted £36 for schools in the year of its incorporation.

A post-office was established in 1803.

On the 16th of August, 1808, Jonathan Lamson, aged 87 years, died in consequence of being scalded by hot water.

Dea. Nathaniel Whipple, a prominent citizen, and the last man who wore a full-bottomed wig here, died Dec. 19, of the year following, aged 89 years.

Solomon S. Whipple, of this town, was graduated in 1811 at Dartmouth College.

In 1812, the town voted in opposition to the war; but two years later it voted to pay the detached men, when called into actual service, $5 per month.

On the 15th of August, 1814, the town lost a valuable citizen by the death of Barnabas Dodge, owner of the mills on the Hamilton side of the Ipswich River. He was in his 75th year at the time of his death. He was a land surveyor, and held several civil offices.

A Sabbath-school was established here on the 8th of May, 1818, which has been in operation ever since. By it the knowledge of the Scriptures has been extended, the singing improved, and the church augmented.

John Safford, born Oct. 15, 1750, and representative to the General Court in 1809, 1810, and 1815, died here Oct. 15, 1820, much lamented. He married Martha Whipple, who survived him.

Col. Robert Dodge, another highly esteemed citizen, who served in the Revolution, and represented the town in the General Court several years, died here June 15, 1823, at the advanced age of 80 years.

The successor of Dr. Cutler, and third pastor of the church, was the Rev. Joseph Barlow Felt, eminent as an antiquary and local historian. He was son of John and Elizabeth (Curtis) Felt, and was born in Salem, Dec. 22, 1789. Graduating at Dartmouth College in 1813, he studied theology with the Rev. Samuel Worcester, and was licensed to preach March 2, 1815, by the Essex Association. After preaching several years in Sharon, he was installed pastor of the Hamilton church June 16, 1824, and continued in the faithful discharge of the duties of his sacred office here until Dec. 4, 1833, when, owing to declining health, he was obliged to ask a dismission from his ministerial labors. During his pastorate in Hamilton he published his invaluable "Annals of Salem" and his "History of Ipswich, Essex and Hamilton," to which work we have been greatly indebted for material in making up our sketches of these towns.

Mr. Felt spent the later part of his life in historical pursuits, making many valuable contributions to the civil and ecclesiastical literature of the country. The degree of LL.D. was conferred on him by Dartmouth College in 1857. He was noted for the modesty of his demeanor and kindliness of his spirit, as well as for his indefatigable industry and accuracy in research. He died in Salem Sept. 8, 1869, much lamented by all who knew him.

The three pastorates had extended over a period of 119 years, a remarkable contrast with the ministerial changes of the present day.

In 1827 a Universalist society was formed in the place, but was not of long continuance.

Dr. Enoch Faulkner, who had practised medicine here since 1800, and was a Democrat in politics, died here March 16, 1830; and on the 15th of February of the following year, the Rev. Francis Quarles, at the age of 81. He was a graduate of Brown University in 1777.

In 1832 the town had seven Revolutionary pensioners; and on the 28th of May of the same year, Capt. John Whipple, who was present as a cavalry officer at the surrender of Gen. John Burgoyne, died at the age of 89 years.

In 1833 the town raised $400 for the support of public schools, and the number of scholars was 205. Isaac Brown of this place was graduated this year at Amherst College.

The fourth regular pastor of the church was the Rev. George W. Kelley, who was ordained over the church and society July 3, 1834. He was born in Greenbrier County, Va., Aug. 5, 1808, graduated at the Ohio University in 1830, and at Andover Theological Seminary in 1833. He was dismissed from the pastorate June 12, 1850, and resides in Haverhill.

James R. Newhall, Esq., says in his "Essex Memorial," published in 1836, that Hamilton has "two public houses, one near the meeting-house, kept by Israel D. Brown (who was also postmaster), the other near the Ipswich line, kept by Jacob Brown." The great eastern post-road passed through the town, over which several stages ran daily from Boston to Newburyport, and hence the necessity for the two hotels. It also appears from his book, that the town had then one company of the line; one grist and one saw-mill; also two veneering mills, 118 dwelling-houses, 51 shops, and a valuation of $211,888.99. The number of public schools was the same as at present, that is, four; and the amount raised for their support was $400, being about twenty-three cents for each pupil. Nathaniel A. Lovering was the town clerk, John Tuttle the town treasurer, Israel D. Brown, Samuel Dodge, and John Whittredge were the selectmen. Oliver S. Cressy was the physician, and also a justice of the peace

The church, built in 1762, was remodelled and rededicated in 1843, and furnished with a new bell.

In 1845 Hamilton had one woollen mill with five sets of machinery. The amount of hay cut the year preceding was 1,493 tons. The number of bushels of fruit raised, principally apples, was 21,266 bushels.

The Hon. Daniel E. Safford graduated at Williams College in 1848. He is the son of Ephraim and Sally (Roberts) Safford, and was born in Hamilton, Feb. 5, 1826. He married Mary E. Smith, of Ipswich; and, while residing in Hamilton, practises law in Salem. He was a member of the State Senate in 1871–72.

The fifth pastor of the church was the Rev. John H. Mordough, installed June 12, 1850, and continued in the pastorate until April 1, 1861. He was successful in his ministry.

The town furnished, patriotically, its quota of men for the War of the Rebellion, and took a lively interest in the progress of the Union army. The Hon. Allen W. Dodge and others spoke earnestly in favor of prosecuting the war with vigor; and supplies for the soldiers in the army were furnished freely by the citizens. Several public meetings were held during the course of the contest; and the ladies lent efficient aid in the way of encouragement, as well as in providing stores and clothing for "the boys in blue."

The Rev. Frank H. Johnson was settled as pastor here Oct. 15, 1861, and remained until Sept. 29, 1864. He now resides in Andover.

In 1864 the hosiery establishment in town made 55,000 pairs of army and ribbed socks, valued at $24,000; and the woollen mill, with six sets of machinery, employing sixty persons, made goods to the value of $135,000. At the saw-mill 20,000 feet of lumber was prepared. Shoes were made to the value of $1,050.

The Rev. G. Franklin French, a faithful minister, now of Tewksbury, was installed here Sept. 29, 1864, and continued as pastor until 1871.

The Rev. Calvin Grant Hill (Amherst College, 1867) succeeded Mr. French, and was ordained Sept. 5, 1872; and, after an efficient ministry, was dismissed in 1876. He now preaches at East Walpole. He was followed by the Rev. Benson M. Frink, who began his labors here as acting pastor in October, 1876. The whole number of church members in 1877 was 109; of whom 40 were males, and 69 females.

On May 17, 1878, the town lost a valuable and highly esteemed citizen in the death of the Hon. Allen W. Dodge, who had long resided here. He was born in Newburyport in 1804 (Harvard University, 1826), studied law, and practised in New York City. He was treasurer of the county of Essex for twenty-five years, a member of the State Senate, and trustee of the State Agricultural College. He became a member of the church here Nov. 8, 1840; and ever manifested a lively interest in the educational, civil, and religious interests of the town.

Miss Mary Abigail Dodge (Gail Hamilton), a distinguished author, is a native of this town, and still resides here. She is the daughter of James B. and Hannah (Stanwood) Dodge, and was born about 1838. Her father, son of Jonathan Dodge, was born Feb. 7, 1788, and died March 4, 1864. Her mother was born Aug. 6, 1793, and died May 9, 1868. She published "Country Living and Country Thinking" in 1862; "Gala Days," 1863; "A New Atmosphere," 1864; "Battle of the Books," 1870; and is the author of many other works — as "Summer Rest," "Stumbling Blocks," "Wool Gathering," and "Woman's Wrongs" — distinguished alike for piquancy of style, as well as for originality of conception. She became a member of the Congregational church in Hamilton, Sept. 1, 1850, and of late has become noted for her letters on political affairs. She occupies, with her sister, a plain house in the central village. A plain marble slab has been placed over the remains of her parents in the old cemetery, bearing this inscription: "Our Father, James B. Dodge. Born Feb. 7. 1778. Died March 4. 1864. Our Mother, Hannah Stanwood, wife of James B. Dodge, born Aug. 6, 1793. Died May 9. 1868. Father and Mother."

HAVERHILL.

CHAPTER I.

ITS LOCATION AND BOUNDARY—ITS HILLS AND LAKES—BIRTH-PLACE OF THE POET WHITTIER—FARMS AND SCENERY.

The town of Haverhill is one of the most attractive and thrifty in the Commonwealth, situated on the northerly bank of the Merrimac, and from its natural advantages of situation, and improvements by art, is justly regarded as the gem of the Merrimac valley. In location, Haverhill is about fifteen miles from Newburyport and the sea, twenty-nine from Boston, eighteen from Lowell, nine from Lawrence, and thirty from Portsmouth, N. H. It is situated on the line of the Boston and Maine Railroad, by which it holds immediate and direct connection with the vast network of railroads, giving it communication with all sections of the country. Its northern boundary line is Salem, Atkinson, and Plaistow, N. H., once largely composing its territory. On its eastern line is Amesbury, now Merrimac, and on its western, Methuen, also once a portion of the town, and on its southerly border is the beautiful Merrimac. By purchase of the Indians, the township was fourteen miles in length, six miles from Little River eastward, and eight miles from the same point westward, with a breadth of six miles northerly from the Merrimac. The survey by the General Court in 1667, by reason of the curve of the river, gave it nearly the form of a triangle. Its form and area remained the same, with the exception of the separation of Methuen from it in 1725, till the running of the State line in 1741, which took away Salem, Atkinson, and Plaistow, N. H., making its northerly boundary the dividing line between New Hampshire and Massachusetts.

The township has a present length of nine miles, and is three miles wide northerly from the river. It contains 15,200 acres, 1,107 of which are covered with water, with only thirteen acres that are otherwise unimprovable. The soil is generally rich, easily cultivated, and generally productive. From its first settlement the cultivation of the soil has been a leading pursuit, in the early days constituting the principal vocation with its inhabitants, and is now the chosen calling of those who find their rural homes within its borders. Many of its farms are under a high state of cultivation, and the products of its soil will bear favorable comparison with other communities. Within the past thirty years increased attention has been given to the cultivation of fruit, with gratifying results.

Within the borders of the town are four large bodies of water, which add much to its landscape beauty. Creek Pond, now known as Crystal Lake, is situated in the West Parish, three miles north-west of the city proper, and has an area of about 250 acres, with water of remarkable clearness and purity, and is surrounded by much fine scenery and many productive farms, while it is a favorite resort for fishing. Its outlet supplies considerable power, which is made available for manufacturing purposes.

Round Pond, formerly known as Belknap's Pond, but now given the name of Pentucket Lake, is a mile away from the river in a northerly direction, and contains about thirty-eight acres. It is supplied entirely by springs, and its water is remarkably cold and pure. It is 150 feet above the Merrimac, and for many years, alone furnished the city with water, through the facilities supplied by the Haverhill Aqueduct Company.

Plug Pond, formerly called "Ayer's Pond," and now known as Lake Saltonstall, located north-easterly from the river, half a mile distant, contains about forty-one acres. It was formerly connected with Round Pond by an outlet therefrom, but that has for several years been closed. Portions of its bottom are muddy, but it has been discovered that its supply is by means of springs from the bottom, bubbling up through the sand. Formerly the outlet from this pond was known as "Mill Brook," but it is now closed up entirely, retaining the water in the pond, which is now attached to the city aqueduct.

Great Pond, now known as Kenoza Lake, the largest and most beautiful of the three lakes, is located a mile and a half from the Merrimac, in a north-easterly direction, about one-third of a mile from the two other lakes; and the three, nestling in the midst of the surrounding hills, present a landscape view of great beauty. This is the largest body of water in town, having an area of about 200 acres, and in some parts its waters are fifty feet in depth. It abounds in pickerel and perch, and its borders on the southerly side are still covered by a growth of wood. On the north-eastern extremity are several acres which, since 1807, have been free for occupancy, by individual purchase, to every citizen of Haverhill for purposes of pleasure. Since 1859 they have been under the control of the Kenoza Lake Club, an incorporated body, and thus held, subject to the right of every citizen to occupy the grounds at pleasure. A stone building has been erected on the premises by the club, which is subject to its control. On the south-westerly shore is Lakeside Farm, and on the heights, Winnekeni Hall, owned by Dr. James R. Nichols, overlooking the lakes and the surrounding landscape.

The streams running through the town are Little River, taking its rise in Plaistow, N. H., upon which "Hale's woollen mills," now known as Stevens's mills, are located; East Meadow River, rising in Newton, N. H., and running through the easterly portion of the town, supplying power to several small manufactories; Creek Brook, the outlet of Creek Pond, also supplying power for running considerable machinery; and "Fishing River," the outlet of Kenoza Lake, which empties into Little River.

There is considerable high land in the town, but no chain of hills. Golden Hill, formerly known as "Golding's Hill," is an eminence of 325 feet in height, a mile east of Main Street, with its base twenty rods from the Merrimac, supplying a delightful prospect of this beautiful stream, the surrounding country, and of the river valley for many miles. The growth of the city has of late somewhat encroached upon this hill, and at its base handsome residences and unpretending cottages have taken position to rest under its shadow.

Silver Hill, or "Silver's Hill," as it was formerly called, is another eminence about three-fourths of a mile west of Main Street, and is about 300 feet high, with its base a short distance from the river. The lower portion or base of this elevation, known as Mount Washington, stretches out for quite a distance, forming an inviting plateau for residences, which has become well covered with dwellings within a few years, and the course is still onward for the possession of the extreme heights for the same purpose. The view from this elevation is also very fine, embracing the charming Merrimac and its valley for many miles. Lawrence, Methuen, and Andover appear in the distance, together with many remote mountains. The outlying parishes, the town of Bradford, and nearly the whole of the compact portion of Haverhill, are also embraced in the view.

Great Hill is the highest point in town, being 339 feet above the level of the ocean, and is the second highest land in Essex County. It is located one mile north of Lake Kenoza, and is the highest of several elevations sometimes spoken of collectively as "Great Hills." The view from the summit is very fine; more than forty towns in Massachusetts and New Hampshire being visible in a clear day. With the aid of a glass, the Atlantic, from Boar's Head to Cape Ann, the villages there, and the buildings in Newburyport are clearly visible, though the view of the latter is somewhat obstructed by Pipe-stave Hill in Newbury. Picturesque views of Groveland, Bradford, Haverhill, North Andover, Andover, Methuen, and the city of Lawrence are also obtained. Powow Hill in Salisbury, and Atkinson in New Hampshire, with its highlands and its historic academy, are also finely presented. Of the mountains visible from this point, are Wachusett in the south-west, Monadnock in the west, with the Peterborough range in near connection; Deerfield mountains in the north, and Old Agamenticus in the east. These, combined with the nearer rural beauties, embracing the mirroring waters of lakes Kenoza and Pentucket, form a landscape which, for extent and magnificence, is not easily surpassed.

Turkey Hill, and Job's Hill, are lesser eminences in the East Parish, which command many pleasant views. Brandy Brow Hill, given its name from the breaking of a bottle of that fluid on its summit, is of moderate elevation, but well known from its location at the corner of

four towns, — Haverhill, Plaistow, Amesbury and Newton, — and that upon the summit rests a large bowlder. Its immediate locality has long supplied excellent pine timber in abundance. These heights are all beautiful for situation, commanding varying views of a locality abounding in scenery which has charmed the eye of thousands and inspired the Muse to sweetest utterance. Not far from here is the birth-place of the poet Whittier, whose songs of freedom, of labor, and of legendary lore have so charmed the world, and given their author a world-wide fame. From the surrounding scenery he drew his first inspiration, quickening the brain of the "Barefoot Boy," to the gushing rhythm, —

"Let the million-dollared ride!
Barefoot, trudging at his side,
Thou hast more than he can buy
In the reach of ear and eye, —
Outward sunshine, inward joy:
Blessings on thee, barefoot boy."

CHAPTER II.

SETLEMENT OF HAVERHILL — INDIAN TITLE.

The first recorded indication of settling in Pentucket, the Indian name of what is now Haverhill, came from Giles Firman, of Ipswich, who addressed a letter to Gov. Winthrop, bearing date Dec. 26, 1639, indicating a desire to select a plantation, suggesting the name of Pentucket, and asking counsel as to his course. His purpose, however, was soon abandoned, and he finally returned to England, where he became celebrated as a non-conformist minister.

On the 13th of May, 1640, "Mr. Ward and Newberry men"* presented a petition asking to commence a new plantation on the Merrimac, which was granted on condition that they would locate and build within six months. Some have doubted whether it was John Ward or Nathaniel Ward, his father, who appeared in this petition, but that is of little consequence inasmuch as it is known that John Ward was the actor in this important work. His associates were William White, Samuel Gile, James Davis, Henry Palmer, John Robinson, Christopher Hussey, John Williams, Richard Littlehale, Abraham Tyler, Daniel Ladd, Joseph Merrie, Job Clement.

Before October, 1640, the first blows were struck, but it is not certain that Mr. John Ward, the chieftain of this band, was among the first to commence operations. It is thought by some that his engagements were at Agamenticus, in Maine, during that year. The historical record is conclusive, however, that in 1641 he became a fixture and a worker on the Pentucket plantation. He was the master-spirit among these adventurers; and his policy, judgment, and toil contributed to the prosperity and final success of the plantation. Of him Cotton Mather said: "He was learned, ingenious, and religious. He was a person of quick apprehension, a clear understanding, a strong memory, a facetious conversation, an exact grammarian, an expert physician, and, which was top of all, a thorough divine; but, which rarely happens, these endowments of his mind were accompanied with a most healthy, hardy and agile constitution of body, which enabled him to make nothing of walking on foot a journey of thirty miles together."

He was a grandson of the Rev. John Ward, and son of the Rev. Nathaniel Ward, both worthy and distinguished ministers of Haverhill, England. He was born in Haverhill, Essex County, England, Nov. 5, 1606; educated at the University of Cambridge, England, where he received the degree of A.B. in 1626, and that of A.M. in 1630, and came to this country in 1639. Fixing his home here in 1640, the pioneer settlers honored him by giving this town the name of "Haverhill," that being the name of his birthplace in England. With this people he lived through a long life as their leader, minister, and teacher; dying Dec. 23, 1693, aged eighty-seven years.

At the time these pioneers planted themselves here, the adjacent country was a dense forest, with the exception of the lowlands. These had been cleared by the Indians long years before, or had never been covered with a growth of wood, and were of much value for the heavy crops of grass they produced, of such height, when in maturity, as to hide from view either man or beast.

These meadows were a part of "the happy hunting-grounds" of the Indians, and were of much value for the grass they were able to utilize for some purposes, but they were accustomed to burn the residue in the autumn, which made the tender grass of the lowlands inviting to the deer in the spring, and, herding there, they were easily captured. These lowlands were, as well, highly valued by the settlers on account of their luxuriant crops of grass, so useful in feeding the herds they expected to rear.

The records do not show that any considerable number of Indians had their home here at that time, and it is supposed that they had previously been swept away by disease. A remnant of the Pentucket tribe then had their home on the banks of Little River, and were under the care and direction of Passaconaway, chief of the Pennacooks, whose home was at Concord, N.H. These sons of the forest had their village and burying-ground on what is now Merrimac Street and Washington Square. Their burying-ground occupied the spot upon which the residence of Thomas R. Appleton stood, and other buildings in that locality; and is now the site of Grand Army Hall.

During the year 1641, the settlers along the frontier, and in all localities where the Indians were numerous, became alarmed by information that the wily warriors were about to combine for an attack upon the English throughout the country for the purpose of their destruction. This intelligence was followed by orders from the Colonial Government to disarm the Indians; and forty men were sent with instructions to disarm Passaconaway, "who lived by Merrimack." The terror struck so deep that the movement was hastily made, the company starting on Sunday. A heavy rain prevented the force from reaching the wigwam of the chief, but gaining that of his son, took him, with Passaconaway's squaw and her papoose, prisoners. The son was tied and led by a line, but he escaped, which led to their firing upon him, though without effect. These indiscreet and exasperating acts, so akin to the ill-treatment of the sons of the forest, which has often been recorded to the disadvantage of the white man, were not approbated by the Governor and Council, and Cutshomokin, the sachem of Braintree, was sent to Passaconaway, with words of explanation and apology. The trouble appeared to be settled; Passaconaway delivered up his arms after the return of his family to him, and no massacre was attempted at that time, but it will never be known how much of the spirit of revenge that unjust and hasty act stirred up in the Indian heart, which ultimately found an outburst in the bloody scenes of the drama which was enacted a few years after.

Passaconaway was held to be friendly to the English, and no act of his hostility to them is on record. Soon after this event he was permanently located at Pennacook, taking under his jurisdiction the Agawams, Naamkeeks, Pascatoquas, Accomentas, and some others. His spirit appears to have descended to his son, Wonolanset, his successor as sachem of the Pennacooks, who has the reputation of having never invaded the English.

Although the plantation had been occupied sometime, and quite a number of houses built, it was not till over two years from its first occupancy that a formal purchase was made of the land, and a title received from the Indians, the original owners. This was accomplished in 1642, and the following is a copy of the instrument as recorded on the town books, with the original document placed on file:

"Know all men by these presents, that wee Passaquo and Sagga-Hew wth y^{e} consent of Passaconnaway; have sold into y^{e} inhabitants of Pentuckett all y^{e} lands wee have in Pentuckett; that is eyght myles in length from y^{e} little Rivver in Pentuckett westward; Six myles in length from y^{e} aforesaid Rivver northward; And six myles in length from y^{e} aforesaid Rivver Eastward, wth y^{e} Ileand and y^{e} rivver that y^{e} Ileand stand in as far in length as y^{e} land lyes by as formerly expressed; that is, fourteene myles in length; And wee y^{e} said Passaquo and Sagga Hew wth y^{e} consent of Passaconnaway, have sold unto y^{e} said inhabitants all y^{e} right that wee or any of us have in y^{e} said ground and Ileand and Rivver; And wee warrant it against all or any other Indians whatsoever unto y^{e} said Inhabitants of Pentuckett, and to their heires and assignes forever Dated y^{e} fifteenth day of november Ann Dom 1642.

Witness our hands and seales to this bargayne of sale y^{e} day and year above written (in y^{e} presents of us,) Wee y^{e} Passaquo & Sagga-Hew have received in hand, for & in consideration of y^{e} same three pounds & ten shillings."

John Ward		y^{e} mark of	
Robert Clements	Passaquo	+	Seal
Tristram Coffin			
Hugh Sherratt			
William White			
y^{e} sign of			
Thomas Davis +	Saggahew	+	Seal

* Dr. Robert Crowell in his history of Essex says that "*Nathaniel* Ward, with some men from Newbury, commenced the settlement of Haverhill in 1640, where afterward his son John was settled in the ministry," p. 37.

This deed is indorsed as being recorded in the County Records for Norfolk, and also in the Essex County Land Records, at Ipswich, with the signatures of Thomas Bradbury, Recorder for Norfolk, and Robert Lord, Recorder for Ipswich. In 1680, this deed was copied into the Town Record, and the following testimony, taken by Nathaniel Saltonstall, recorded on the sneceeding page:

"The Rev. Teacher of y^e^ church & town of Haverhill Mr. John Ward; & William White and Thomas Davis do testifie that Haverhill township or lands then by y^e^ Indians called Pentuckett, was purchased of y^e^ Indians as is mentioned in y^e^ deed in this paper contained, w^c^ is entered upon record and that we were then inhabitants of Haverhill, and present with y^e^ Indians Passaquoi and Saggahew (who were the appareut owners of y^e^ land & so accounted) did sign and confirme y^e^ same; and that then, wee, (with others now dead) did signe our names to y^e^ deed, which land we have ever since enjoyed peacably without any Indian molestation from the grantors or their heirs. Taken upon Februay y^e^ 4^th^ 1680 before Nathaniel Saltonstall, Assist."

The chief Indian village was supposed to have been in the vicinity of Little River, and many years ago Indian skeletons were frequently dug up, together with heads of arrows, stone mortars, and other implements, confirming the belief that a numerous tribe once dwelt here. On one of these occasions, a "bumper of punch" was drank to the memory of the aborigines from one of the skulls exhumed.

CHAPTER III.

FIRST MEETING-HOUSE BUILT — CHURCH ORGANIZED — PARSONAGE LOT — NEW CHURCHES BUILT — RELIGIOUS TROUBLES — DIVISION.

The first house was built near the old burial-ground, now known as Pentucket Cemetery, which was followed by the erection of others there; so that the first prineipal settlement was in the neighborhood of what is now known as Mill Street. About two years after the first house was built, one was erected near the site of the present woollen mills, on what is now known as Winter Street. The first meeting-house was built in 1648, upon the site designated by vote of the town as "the lower Knowle at the lower end of the Mill Lot," which embraced the territory now occupied by Linwood and Pentucket cemeteries. It was twenty-six feet in length, twenty feet in width, and one story high, without gallery, cupola, or other adornment, and faced toward the river.

It was a rough, but substantial structure, supplying the neeessary room for purposes of worship, and was quite acceptable to the tastes of the hardy sons of adventure and toil who had chosen their home on the banks of the smiling Merrimae, and were content to nestle for a time beneath the shadows of the overhanging forests.

The event of death was not forgotten in the midst of the active struggles of life, and, following the old English usage, it is likely that a spot in the vicinity of the church was at first constituted the "God's Acre" which should become the resting-place of the sleepers. The first formal vote of the town, touching this subject, was in November, 1660, when it was ordered that "the land behind the meeting house should be reserved for a burial ground," and that was the present centre of what is now called "Pentucket Cemetery." It is not doubted that from the date of the erection of the church the burials had taken place in that locality, and that this vote gave formal sanction to the selection of the spot for that purpose. The first adult dying in town was Thomas Dow, May, 1654. Thirteen children had previously died; and previous to April 1, 1663, there were forty-seven deaths, forty of which were children.

The company of settlers upon this plantation numbered twelve, besides John Ward, and their names were: William White, Samuel Gile, James Davis, Henry Palmer, John Robinson, Christopher Hussey, John Williams, Richard Littlehale, Abraham Tyler, Daniel Ladd, Joseph Merrie, Job Clement. About the time of this movement, Robert Clement came from England to Salisbury, but soon settled here. He was soon followed by Tristram Coffin, who had just reached Salisbury from Devonshire, England. Both settled a few rods east of the burial-ground, where Clement pursued the avocation of cooper, and Coffin that of a farmer; and is said to have been the first person who ploughed land in Haverhill. Both moved either to Holt's Rocks or Newbury the following year, Coffin to improve "y^e^ land in y^e^ planting of corne;" and in 1645 he was licensed to keep an ordinary, or tavern. After taking prominent part in the affairs of the plantation for several years, he moved to Salisbury in 1649, from there projecting the settlement of Nantucket, purchasing four-tenths of the island, and removed there in 1662, accompanied by four of his children. His daughter Mary was born in this town, and was a woman of unusual ability. She became the wife of Nathaniel Starbuck, of Nantucket, and it is recorded that "the Islanders esteemed her as a Judge among them, for little of moment was done without her." She became a Quakeress in 1701, leading the religious interests of the island, and exerting a wide influence. The descendants of Tristram Coffin are very numerous, Admiral Sir Isaac Coffin being of the number.

Among others who very soon took up their residence here were Hugh Sheritt and Thomas Davis; and the names of the four last-mentioned settlers are recorded on the Indian deed of the town. Job Clement was the first tanner in town, and as a settler, soon followed the pioneer party. John Favor also took up his residence here about that time. The early settlers were generally the founders of families of standing and influence; and their deseendants are now regarded as among the best citizens. The most numerous of the descendants of these first settling families are the Whites, Clements, and Davises.

Without doubt the arrival of Mr. Ward was delayed for a short time, either by other engagements or with a view to giving the workingmen an opportunity to open the way in some slight degree for his accommodation and comfort. In the records of the town it appears that on the 29th of September, 1642, he had "sixteen acres of land laid out to him for a home lot, with all the accommodations thereunto belonging." It is recorded of him that "Though he had great offers of rich matches in England, yet he chose to marry a meaner person, whom exemplary piety had recommended. He lived with her for more than forty years, in such an happy harmony, that when she died he professed that in all this time, he never had received one displeasing word or look from her." His marriage to Alice Edmunds took place in 1646, by whom he had two children, Elizabeth and Mary; and her death occurred March 24, 1680. His daughter Elizabeth married Nathaniel Saltonstall, a prominent citizen, Dec. 28, 1663, to whom she bore five children.

In 1645, John Ward was ordained pastor of the flock, and around him was gathered a church during that year, numbering fourteen members, eight males and six females. The population had considerably increased, and as nearly as could be ascertained there were thirty-two landholders, whose names were John Ward, Robert Clement, Job Clement, John Clement, Joseph Merrie, Abraham Tyler, Hugh Sheritt, Henry Savage, Christopher Hussey, Daniel Hendrick, John Williams, Richard Littlehale, William Butler, John Ayer, Sr., John Ayer, Jr., Joseph Peaslee, William White, John Robinson, Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis, George Corlis, Nathaniel Wier, James Fiske, Thomas Hale, James Davis, Sr., James Davis, Jr., John Eaton, Bartholomew Heath, Tristram Coffin, Daniel Ladd, Samuel Gile, and John Davis. In point of rapidity of growth in population and success in their industries, together with their efforts to build up the church, which they regarded of the first importance, what had been accomplished appeared to have fully met their highest expectations, and the new settlement was already basking in the sunshine of success. Mr. Ward, the minister, or teacher as he was commonly called, commanded the entire respect and love of the little band of settlers, and they accorded to him all the favor which their condition would admit of. In 1646, the freeholders unanimously voted that his land should be "free rate" during his life, if he continued to be their minister, and at the same meeting voted him a salary of £40, to be paid in "wheat and indian," and in addition, his wood was to be brought to the door, and "cut and corded." This salary was increased to £50, and an additional supply of wood, in 1651. The tax for the support of the ministry was collected in the manner prescribed by law, and the usual difficulty appears to have existed in the way of prompt payment. In 1660, ten acres of meadow, and two hundred acres of upland, were granted for a parsonage to Mr. Ward and his successors.

In the early days, prior to the erection of a church, religious meetings were held at private houses; and during the warm weather, on pleasant Sundays, they gathered in the shade of a large tree in the neighborhood of the burial-ground. The erection of a house of worship did not bring with it a bell; and, to supply its place, the town voted, "That on the Lord's day morning and evening, and on lecture days, Richard Littlehale should beat the drum to call the people together." He was also employed to beat the drum for town-meetings, for which he received the annual compensation of thirty shillings. For some reason drum-beating became distasteful as a signal for prayers, and, in 1651, it was voted, "that Abraham Tyler shall blow his horn in the most convenient place every Lord's day for about half

an hour before meeting begins," for which annual service he should receive a peck of corn from every family. This signal, however, was abandoned the next year, and the drum-beat again became the call to worship, which continued until the purchase of a bell. Free ferriage to ministers and to the people of Bradford on Sundays, was another indication of favor towards fostering the interests of religious worship.

In 1680, the infirmities of age having gathered upon Mr. Ward, the supply of a colleague began to be thought of; but not till 1690 was a permanent assistant secured, when the Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, a native of Newbury, became the preacher, and assistant of Mr. Ward in parochial duties. After the death of Mr. Ward, he remained the pastor of the flock till he was killed in the attack of the French and Indians upon the town, in 1708.

In 1682, the matter of building a new meeting-house began to be agitated, and much division of opinion existed as to building, and also in reference to its location. A plan was not adopted till 1697, and not till late in 1699 was the building completed and accepted. It was located on "the common land," now known as the city park, and about fifty feet in front of the present First Parish church. It was a plain structure, 50½ feet in length, 40½ feet in width, and 19 feet stud; but several years afterwards it was supplied with a belfry. In 1748, the first bell in town was put in the belfry of the First Parish church, at a cost of £65. In 1753, it was exchanged for a new one, at a cost of £500, and Benjamin Harrod authorized to make the exchange. After the erection of the new meeting-house, in 1699, Joseph Peasley asked the town to allow himself and others "to meet at the new house for and in their way of worship, which is according to the quakers." The request was read, but denied the courtesy of a vote, and they were peremptorily excluded.

In 1761, the building of a new church began to be talked of; but a decision was not reached till 1765, and it was erected in 1766, "at the northerly side of the old meeting house." It was a commanding structure, surmounted with a steeple at the easterly end, and cost £1,000. It remained standing till 1837, when it was taken down, and a new church built in its place, at a cost of about $9,000. The First Parish had then passed to the control of the Unitarians, who sold their interest in the "common," erecting the church on a lot north of it. On the morning of Jan. 1, 1847, this edifice was totally destroyed, and during the following year the present church was built, at a cost of over $7,000.

The pastors succeeding Mr. Rolfe, who was killed by the Indians, were the Revs. Joshua Gardner, in 1711, John Brown, in 1719, Edward Barnard, in 1743, John Shaw, in 1777, all of whom died while occupying the ministerial office. Their successors were the Revs. Abiel Abbot, in 1795, Joshua Dodge, in 1808, and Dudley Phelps, in 1828. The two first named resigned their positions, and Mr. Phelps, after a long contest, was dismissed on account of differences in opinion upon religious doctrines, and reformatory matters, between himself and a majority at the time constituting the parish.

For some time a liberal feeling upon religious doctrines had prevailed in the society, and the Rev. Mr. Barnard, late in life, had receded from the Trinitarian view, and his successor, the Rev. Mr. Abbot, was also regarded as a Unitarian. To many of the society the old doctrines, which frequently found utterance from the pulpit, had become distasteful. The writer has received it by tradition, from present undoubted Orthodox authority, that as late as 1815, it was declared from the First Parish pulpit that "hell is paved with infants' skulls, not a span long." Doctrine so rank as that, instead of terrifying, tended to develop more cheering views, and hence the increase of liberal strength. Mr. Phelps was an able and fearless man, who, being educated at Yale, and at Andover Theological Seminary, came to the society with opinions decidedly Orthodox, which he delivered with precision and boldness, while his zeal in the temperance and anti-slavery discussions was equally pronounced. Though eminently social and open-hearted, and full of agreeable humor, he was blunt, severe, and searching in all his pulpit utterances. In 1830, an attempt was made to dismiss him for those reasons, but it was ineffectual. In September, 1832, another attempt failed; but the liberals, availing themselves of the privilege of proselyting, immediately secured the membership of seventeen to the society, who had hitherto been known as Universalists, which entitled them to vote, and in a meeting held in the November following, there was a clear majority against Mr. Phelps. The Orthodox, finding themselves permanently in the minority, soon withdrew, and formed what is now the Centre Congregational Society. From 1640 till that hour, the First Parish had been in harmony with the spirit of the Puritan church, in doctrine and discipline; but this event wrought a change, closing the records of the old history, and opening the pages of the new one.

CHAPTER IV.

DIVISION OF LANDS — CITIZENSHIP — MECHANICS ENCOURAGED — BLUE LAWS — THE WHIPPING-POST AND STOCKS OFFENSIVE TO PUBLIC SENTIMENT.

Following the location of the twelve pioneers upon the soil of Haverhill, came the erection of dwellings, and before the commissioners, — Matthew Boyse, John Woodbridge, John Cross, and George Giddings, — appeared to establish the boundary lines, it is believed that more than the requisite number of six houses had been constructed. The town, incorporated in 1645, was the twenty-third settled, and the church the twenty-sixth. Although dense forests were stretched out before them, a wise forecast pointed to guarding against improvidence and waste. In the division of the Colony into counties that year, Haverhill was included in that of Norfolk. At this time, Richard Littlehale was chosen clerk of the "Court of Writs," a court for the trial of causes not exceeding forty shillings, and was also chosen town "Recorder." In 1646, the first selectmen were chosen, the board consisting of Thomas Hale, Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis, James Davis, and William White. The compensation for performing the duties of that office was fifty shillings, to be distributed "to each man according to his services." Attendance upon town-meetings was compulsory, voters being required to answer to their names, and, in some instances, were fined for delinquency. By vote of the town, no vote was held to be legal if taken after sunset. The first record book of the town was stolen by the Indians, and was afterwards found in a damaged condition in the westerly portion of the town, in what is now Methuen.

The disposal of the "accommodation grants," or house lots, in the village, laid the foundation for the apportionment of all the other lands owned by the proprietors, through the grant from the government, and the purchase from the Indians. That was also the basis for the apportionment of all other rights and privileges held in common. Three hundred acres had been divided among the proprietors, in lots of twenty acres and less, and their apportionment of lands held in common were in like proportion. There was a continual apportionment of meadow lands, of plough land, of rights of pasturage and of cutting of timber, until all the common lands and common interests were disposed of. So long as the population was small, and represented, or chiefly controlled by the original proprietors, the management of these affairs was comparatively easy.

Agriculture appeared to be the leading pursuit; but the necessity of encouraging the establishment of the mechanical industries seems to have been early understood and appreciated. A community dependent entirely upon foreign manufactories for all the comforts and conveniences of civilization, could not fail to see the advantage of offering all possible encouragement to the varied industries whose products contribute to assist in relieving the necessities and promoting the comfort of men. The blacksmith, the tanner, the shoemaker, the brickmaker, the carpenter, the miller, and the sawyer, with every other industry which promised to contribute to the general welfare, were welcomed here, though new settlers were received with caution.

In 1651, Isaac Cousins, a blacksmith, was granted six acres of land if he would remain here five years; failing to do that, the grant was transferred to John Webster in 1653; but he also failed to comply with terms. The next proposition was made to John Johnson to purchase a house for him at the cost of twenty pounds, provided he would remain seven years, and do the town's work. This agreement was entirely fulfilled, and he became the ancestor of most of the Johnsons in town. The house was located on the site now occupied by Exchange Building, Water Street. Job Clement, the first tanner in the city, a man of considerable ability, and the first constable in the town, was voted "a parcel of ground, not exceeding one quarter of an acre at the Mill Brooke, being bounded forth by the Free-men to sett him up a *tann-house* and *tann-fatts* upon, to him and his heirs forever." At an early day, the existence of clay was discovered here, and "clay pits" opened; but not successfully worked. In 1650, three-fourths of an acre, and the clay-pits, located in the West Parish, near the Ephraim Corliss

estate, were granted to John Hoit, on condition that he should become an inhabitant of the town. John Couzins was granted the right to build a saw-mill on Thomas Hale's River, now known as Little River, on terms of not using "any timber within three miles of the meeting house except pine and hemlock, paying every twelve hundredth board to the use of the town in general." Subsequently, but as late as 1720, a corn-mill and fulling-mill were erected by Samuel White and William White on the same river, for many years known as "Saw-Mill River." The only mechanic which appears to have been received with reluctance was the shoemaker. In 1679, it required a formal vote of the town to admit Benjamin Webster and Samuel Parker, two young shoemakers, "to live in towne, and follow the trade of shoemaking." On another occasion, a William Thompson, shoemaker, was refused citizenship in the town: but no explanation of this singular vote is given.

It is evident that the axe, the plough, and the hoe were the leading implements depended upon by these sturdy sons of toil, to assist in establishing themselves in the home of their choice. It is, also, altogether probable that, in the practical industries of life, the strength and skill of woman was an important element, and that the loom, the spinning-wheel, the linen-wheel, and the distaff were the contrivances which assisted her toils, and contributed not a little to augment the common fund of comforts, and add to the common store of wealth. These machines, once so prominent in rural homes, are scarcely mentioned in the written histories of this people; but tradition assures us that they were prominently associated with those toils which resulted in the prosperity of this settlement, and its increase in wealth. The flax from the field, and the wool from the flocks, were transformed into comfortable and enduring fabrics by the handiwork of woman, and generous contributions by her toil were thus made to the peace, comfort, and joy of multiplying households.

In 1650, two orchards were planted, which opened the way for the cultivation of fruit, for which the soil was admirably adapted. In 1654, the fisheries of the river were established, which were of considerable importance, supplying a large amount of food, and furnishing a dressing for the corn-field in the application of which they were but following the example of the Indians before them in the use of fish as manure. In 1647, a hive of bees was first brought here by Thomas Whittier, of Newbury, a legacy to him by Henry Rolfe, and then considered very valuable.

The principles of self-government found an early illustration through the order and direction of the affairs of the settlement in the town-meetings which were early established. The annual town-meeting, first fixed in 1663, on the first Tuesday in March, was changed, in 1675, to the last Tuesday in February; but was changed back again, in 1694, to the first Tuesday in March, on account of the change in the day of the meeting of the Colonial Assembly. Under the new charter of 1692 the office of "Recorder" was given the title of town clerk, and several new officers were provided for by which the government of the town was made more perfect and effective.

The importance of opening highways to the back country was early brought to view. With the exception of the few open acres upon the border of the river, the whole back country was an unexplored wilderness, and generally dense forest, with here and there the beaten path of the Indian, the bridle-path of the adventurers who had begun to press their way into the interior, and the cart-paths of the husbandmen and lumbermen, who were constantly enlarging the domain of labor and bringing to the centre the fuel and the lumber necessary to supply the wants of the inhabitants, together with the crops from the fields which had been cleared and were beginning to be productive.

Law and order were not at all set aside or underestimated, rough and unrefined as were the surroundings of the newly-planted town. Their leader was a man of culture, in whose heart the kindled fire of Christian devotion burned with a steady and brilliant flame. He was emphatically "a man of God," and associated with him were men of generally sober mien and manly bearing, which led to the establishment of healthful rules for the direction of the affairs of the new community, bordering, without doubt, towards the rigid Puritanic order, yet generally conducive to the public welfare; and, with numbers and wealth constantly increasing, the good name of the town became firmly established.

The rules and regulations governing many matters were peculiar, illustrating what were the notions of the people of the Colonies rather than indicating exclusively local characteristics; for what were termed "blue laws" were of general adoption, in some form, in all the Colonies. Ludicrous, as it may seem, they had a law prohibiting a man from living alone, or, in other words, from living the life of a bachelor. For the violation of this law John Littlehale was held to answer, but they only required him to forsake living a "solitary life" and take up his abode in some family. This persecuted bachelor passed an unmarried life till attaining his sixty-sixth year, when he married and became the father of two children. In 1653 the wife of John Hutchins was presented for wearing a silk hood, but the record says, "upon testimony of her being brought up above the ordinary way, was discharged." In 1675 two daughters of Hanniel Bosworth were fined ten shillings for wearing silk, but the fine was remitted in 1677. There was also a law prohibiting the wearing of gold and silver lace, and other articles of ornament, unless the wearer was possessed of a certain amount of property. These selections from the records indicate the temper and customs of the hour and of the community.

Not less rigid were they in many other matters, and among their rules of citizenship was one requiring every voter to answer to his name in town-meeting, for neglect of which he was fined eighteenpence, which was to be appropriated to the use of the town.

In 1659 no person could be admitted to citizenship except by vote of the town. At that time the town was increasing so rapidly that the meeting-house soon became too small to accommodate the worshippers.

Convenience, rather than the fitness of things, led to a peculiar ordering of many matters. In 1672 the selectmen were ordered to prepare a storeroom in the meeting-house to secure the *town's powder* and "all other amunition"; which arrangement led to the waggish suggestion that the storing of so dangerous explosives so near the centre of fiery threatenings to the ungodly, was placing the lives of saints and sinners in great jeopardy.

The first "Pound" for the confinement of stray animals was located in the burying-ground, but was removed at an early day to a more appropriate place.

A watch-house was ordered to be built near the meeting-house in 1672, which was also used for a school-house and for the entertainment of persons who might wish to congregate there on Sundays.

In 1649 the General Court ordered the erection of a watch-house, a pound, and *stocks*, and the records show the existence of the former institutions, but no records of the town give any indication of the existence of stocks or the whipping-post, which is generally regarded as an indication that the public sentiment of the people was not in sympathy with those modes of punishment, and they were not inclined to mar the public records with an account of their establishment or their use as a means of discipline. Their existence here, however, is established by the best of traditional testimony. They were located at the east end of the old meeting-house, on the common, and within sound of the merciful benedictions of the minister who broke to the people the bread of life, and about ten rods from the present southerly entrance to the park. The whipping-post is said to have been from ten to fifteen inches in diameter, standing at an angle of forty-five degrees. The culprit was tied upon the upper side, with his face to the post, and chastisement applied with a "cat" of stout leather thongs. Mrs. Stebbens and Hon. Moses Wingate, till within a few years, were the living witnesses to these facts, and beheld with their own eyes the infliction of the humiliating punishment. Sheriff David Bradley inflicted the punishment upon one culprit who cheerfully offered to "to take as many stripes more for half a pint of rum." The stocks stood near the whipping-post, but were rarely used. It is an enduring credit to the town that they only acted in obedience to instructions in establishing these modes of punishment, and never were either forward in their use or in recording the facts of their existence, or the application of the severities they were intended to inflict.

CHAPTER V.

ANCIENT NAMES PERPETUATED — ROADS AND BRIDGES — THE SCHOOLS, WHAT THEY WERE AND WHAT THEY ARE.

The names of many of the original proprietors of the town, and those who immediately joined the company, passed permanently to the early records as the directors in its affairs, leading in its industries, or performing most honorable and heroic parts either in the defence of the town from Indian invasion, in resistance to British oppression, or in maintaining the common interests of the inhabitants in their struggles for their rights to the territory acquired

both by grant and deed, but which in time became so mixed with other interests and the claims of others, as to sometimes lead to the employment of force for the maintenance of individual rights. Prominent among these names is William White, who was a settler on the farm on Mill Street, now owned by Samuel White, it having been carried in the name to the present time. From Robert Clement and Job Clement descended the many families bearing that name residing in this town and vicinity. The Coffins, the Emersons, and the Davises are the descendants from the men bearing these names, who had a part in the pioneer work of founding and building the town. In all the names of early residents, probably none have become more numerous than the descendants of John, Robert, Thomas, and Peter Ayer, who settled here in different sections of the town. In the year 1700 it was judged that about one-third of the inhabitants of the town were of that name, and their descendants had then become scattered through nearly every State at that time composing the Union. Thomas Hale was another leading name, he being a member of the first board of selectmen, and from whom, what is now known as Little River was given the name of "Thomas Hale's River." Michael Emerson, who came here in 1656, settling on Mill Street, was induced to "*go back into the woods*" by being given a tract of land on Winter Street, between what is now Little River and Emerson Street. At a later time came a class of names whose descendants have become very numerous, and now compose a large portion of the oldest families in town.

Notwithstanding the abundance of land possessed by the original grant, we find the inhabitants petitioning "the General Court for a tract of land to *enlarge the town*." The Court did not see fit to grant the request of the petitioners, and disposed of the matter by referring it to a committee, an expedient which has often been practised since by legislative bodies for the disposal of disagreeable subjects.

The settlement of Haverhill was early marked by the social events which have always attended life, and, in their unfolding, contribute so much to the joy of existence. The first marriage in town was that of Job Clement to Margaret Dummer, which occurred Dec. 25, 1643, and the second that of George Corlis and Joanna Davis, Oct. 26, 1645. During the twenty years succeeding the first marriage, thirty-seven marriages occurred in the town. The first recorded birth in town was that of a son to John Robinson, in 1641, who survived but three weeks. The second was also a son, to the same father, in 1642, who also died within a week from birth. From 1641 to 1662, inclusive, there had been 158 births and forty-one deaths, showing sorrow to have been the companion of joy. It will be seen that the population had quite rapidly multiplied, and the occasion for the improvement of more land was daily increasing.

The first road laid out was Mill Street, in 1651, which was called the "great road," and for more than a century was the principal one leading into the village. In 1665, a road was laid out to Holt's Rocks; in 1669, another to Topsfield, and in 1685, one to Amesbury. The record is that a part of this route had long before been travelled, and was called a "bridle-way." Beyond the laying out of these roads, very little was done for their improvement. In some instances they were left to be kept in repair by those who used them; but the most important thoroughfares were maintained in condition as best they could be by a community whose principal currency, for many years, was land, butter, wheat, and Indian corn. It was not till 1735 that the town voted "to mend and repair highways by vote," and no separate sum was appropriated for that purpose till twenty years after.

A matter of still greater importance, in many respects, was the establishment of ferries, and the construction of bridges. The "great river" was between the town and many of the principal settlements, with whose inhabitants they desired to become placed in unobstructed communication. For many years there was no permanent ferry established, and the town was frequently "presented" for not maintaining a ferry. In 1648, after being "presented" for not previously maintaining one, the town was ordered to provide a suitable boat, within six months, or pay forty shillings. Thomas Hale was appointed ferryman, and the price of ferriage established at "one penny for a passenger, two pence for cattel under two yeares old and four pence for such as were over that age."

The subject of building a bridge across the river, at this point, had been for several years much agitated; but it was not until 1794 that the structure appeared, — over 150 years after the settlement of the town. In its time, it was considered as a marvel in structure, and really opened a new era in all the interests of the town. It was built from a model by Timothy Palmer; and Moody Spofford, of Georgetown, was the chief engineer in its construction. It was built on three arches, of 180 feet each, with three stone piers, and as many defensive ones, or sterlings, extending fifty feet above, and was supplied with a draw, thirty feet wide, over the channel. It is recorded that, on its completion, Judith Whiting, then in the hundredth year of her age, walked over it unaided. This bridge was rebuilt in 1808.

In 1795, Merrimack Bridge was built across the river, a few rods above Holt's Rocks, now known as Rocks Village. It was the longest bridge over the Merrimac, being, in its span, 1,000 feet. It had four arches, resting on five piers and the abutments. Commanding little travel, the proprietors suffered it to fall into decay, and it was swept away by the ice in the spring of 1818. This bridge was rebuilt in 1828, on Towne's system, and was 900 feet in length, with four stone piers and abutments, defended by four sterlings, and was supplied with a draw, as required in bridges over navigable waters. In 1871, an iron bridge was built across the river, at Groveland, at a cost of $84,962.70.

In 1874–75, the wooden bridge between Haverhill and Bradford, having passed into a state of decay, was removed, and its place supplied by an iron structure 690 feet in length, composed of five spans, from 102 to 117 feet in length, resting upon new granite piers, and supplied with a pivotal draw. The estimated strength of this bridge is such as will sustain a moving load of 2,600 pounds per lineal foot of span. The weight of the draw is 100 tons, and so adjusted that it can be moved with ease by the power of one man. It is a handsome and substantial structure, and was built by the National Bridge Company, of Boston, at a cost of $98,500, $20,000 of which was paid by the county, two-thirds of the balance by Haverhill, and one-third by Bradford. Both of the iron bridges are free to public travel.

As early as 1669, a convenient bridge was built over Little River, near where the woollen mills now stand, which has since been substantially rebuilt several times.

Another substantial bridge was built across the same stream, at Washington Square, which, within a few years, has been rebuilt, widened, and improved. Still another bridge has been thrown across the stream, midway between the two, connecting the two portions of the town. From the earliest date of highway improvements, the means for the transit of all streams has been supplied, either by ferries or bridges.

Early attention was given to the subject of education; but for many years the only opportunity afforded for instruction was of a private nature, either within the pale of the family circle,—the parents becoming the teachers of their children,—or by a union in neighborhoods, and the gathering of children of several families under one roof for purposes of instruction in the rudimental branches. Early in the experience of the settlement, there were many obstacles in the way of adopting any system of instruction; and, at a later time, when the elements would have been ripe and ready for vigorous work, the Indian wars prevented much from being accomplished, although the first public school was established about the year 1660, and Thomas Wasse was the master, at a salary of £10 a year, paid by the town, and, perhaps, trifling receipts as "tuition." He also taught at Chebacco Parish, in Ipswich, and at Newbury. He taught a school here from that date till 1673. In the year 1685, James Chadwick was engaged as a school-teacher, and was the second master employed here. The long interim between the services of the two masters would indicate that the cause of education had rather passed into neglect. The somewhat voluminous records, referring to the subject, show that to have been the case, and that the town was frequently "presented" for being destitute of a schoolmaster. The principal reason for this was the distraction occasioned by the Indian troubles, which, for nearly seventy years, surrounded the town, and much of the time made every hour and day of the round year to be moments of fear and uncertainty. In the year 1700, the grammar school ordered to be established, was obliged to be abandoned, and in 1703, the schools in operation had to be discontinued, on account of Indian troubles. In 1706, the town was again presented for being destitute of a schoolmaster. In 1711, an effort was made to engage a schoolmaster who would teach quarterly in different parts of the town, but that failed. The proposition to employ a teacher, at the expense of the town, to teach a school in the centre, was promptly voted down by those living in remote localities, and that opened the way for the adoption of the district-school system which has proved so successful and practical. In 1712, two schoolhouses were voted to be built in the north-west part of the town, and in 1725, three more were voted to be erected in the northerly and westerly sections. In 1729, it was proposed to appropriate £100 for the

support of schools, and a grammar school was permanently established, to be kept three months in the year, in each of the parishes. The schools kept in the private houses were then termed "common schools." In 1751, a grammar school was kept in each of the parishes four months in the year. From 1764, a grammar school was kept in the First Parish the year round, and in 1774, two schools — one termed the grammar school, and the other the English school, — were sustained in town the whole year. In 1790, a code of regulations for schools was adopted; and in 1791, the town was divided into school districts.

In 1798, the first written school report was presented by the Rev. Hezekiah Smith. In 1801, the increase in the school interest, and the importance attached to it, were shown by the existence of a committee of *forty-nine* to superintend its interests, of which twenty-two were in the first district, eleven in the second, and eight each in the third and fourth; but this large number proved too unwieldly, and, in 1827, a general school committee of seven was chosen instead. In 1814, the districts first chose district clerks.

In 1826, two maiden ladies — the Misses Abigail and Lydia Marsh — gave to the town half an acre of land, on Winter Street, as a site for an academy, which was immediately built, and dedicated April 30, 1827, the oration being delivered by the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, of Salem, and an ode, written by John G. Whittier, who is a native of this town, was sung by Mr. John Crowell. The institution was incorporated, and went into operation at once, continuing in a successful educational career till 1841, when the First District High School was organized, and the academy building leased for its use.

In 1829, an infant school was established, under the direction of a society formed in that interest, of which Mrs. James H. Duncan, Mrs. Rufus Longley, and Mrs. Isaac R. Howe, were managers, and Miss Rebecca Smith the instructress. The school continued to flourish for several years, and was supported by private subscriptions. The Haverhill Lyceum was an outgrowth of the common-school system, through the interest developed in education, and was organized Feb. 25, 1830, with James H. Duncan, president; James Gale, recording secretary; and Isaac R. Howe, corresponding secretary. From the year 1838 the large increase in population created additional demands for school accommodations, and school-houses were enlarged and multiplied with great rapidity in all parts of the town. In 1855, another decidedly advance step was taken in the interest of education, and larger and more commodious school-houses were called for. In that year, the brick school-house, on School Street, was built, at a cost of $15,000. In 1856, the brick school-house, on Winter Street, was built, at a cost of $18,000, and in 1859, a school for Catholic children was opened by Francis J. Nichols, but was long since discontinued. Another large brick school-house was built on Washington Street.

From 1860 to 1870 there was no decline in the educational interests, but the liberal provisions made for the accommodation of schools in the years immediately previous, rendered movements in that direction less vigorous during these years; but the rapid growth of the town in population indicated the near approach of a time when another stride must be taken.

The change of the government, from that of a town to a city, became the occasion for another new departure, and liberal appropriations were made for the promotion of education. In 1870 the Locust Street school-house was built; in 1872 came the Currier school-house, on Mount Washington; and in 1873 the high school building was erected, at the head of the park, at a cost of $125,000. In addition, nearly all the school-houses in the parishes were remodelled, or new ones built, and not a reasonable want, apparently, was left unsupplied.

There are, at this time, fifty-five public day schools, an evening school in the winter, and two evening drawing-schools, six months in the year, with sixty-four teachers in the employ of the city, whose pay-roll, in 1877, amounted to $41,103.31. There are twenty-eight school-houses in the city, each costing from $500 to $125,000. In 1878, the school appropriation was $48,000.

"Long terms" have been much the order here, with faithful teachers, whose inclination was to remain in the service. Among those who taught many years, are Luther Emerson, Dr. John Crowell, and J. A. Shores. Of the oldest now in the service, are Henry Cummings, since 1861: Miss Annie S. Kimball, since 1832; Miss A. M. Wheeler, and Miss Louise Shattuck, since 1853; Miss Martha R. Nichols, since 1856; Miss Mary I. Gould, Miss Eleanor N. Bagley, and Miss Sarah S. Noyes, since 1858. The experience of many a "little rascal," in the past, will enable him to say in his manhood, that he took his first lesson, and his first whipping, from "Mistress Kimball."

The high school is organized with three courses of study, each embracing a term of four years. The first is an English course; the second, an English and classical course; the third, a classical course. Vocal music and drawing are also taught.

CHAPTER VI.

EARLY MANUFACTURES — THEIR DECLINE — DISTILLERIES — TANNERIES — SHIP-BUILDING — HATS — SHOES, &C.

In the line of early manufactures, susceptible of expansion, that of tanning seems to have been the leading one to attain to permanency here. Job Clement first located on Mill Street, in 1643, the town granting him one-fourth of an acre of land upon which to establish his business. In 1674, John Kezar, of Salem, a tanner, was also granted land to set up his trade upon, which he permanently established. The principal tan-yards were on Mill Street, and, immediately east of what is now Stage Street, then called Colby's Lane, from a tanner of that name. Sometime after the year 1824, Col. John Woodman became his successor, and removed the business to Mill Street, when the "pits" in the vicinity of Colby's Lane were filled up, and the site converted into a garden. From the date of the purchase of the Mill Street property, that became the principal centre for the tanning business, while the curriers were distributed about the town, on Water Street, Merrimac Street, Fleet Street, and elsewhere. The leading tanners and curriers, from 1824 to 1860, were the Butterses, Hardings, and Blodgetts. Since 1860, the "pits" on Mill Street have been abandoned, and finally filled up, and the business has ceased to exist here. In the changes wrought by time in that locality, Mill Brook has entirely disappeared, the waters of the pond being reserved by the Haverhill Aqueduct Company for the supply of the city.

In like manner, other mechanical interests attempted to be established here, failed of success. In 1759, pot and pearl ash works were established by Samuel Blodgett; in 1769, salt-works were projected on Mill Brook, by James Hudson; and in 1775, a saltpetre manufactory was established, which was aided by an appropriation by the town of fifty pounds; but all failed to be remunerative, and were soon abandoned. Corn-mills, and fulling-mills were more successful. In 1791, a duck factory was established, also by Samuel Blodgett, who was a man of much energy of character, but it did not succeed. In 1738, James McHard "had liberty to build a rum distillery," which was also located on Mill Brook, near the residence of William White. The proprietors of the land granted McHard the use of the land on which the distillery stood, in answer to his petition which set forth that he was "about to build a Still House for the good of the town of Haverhill, and without any regard to my [his] own interest, as I generally do." There were four distilleries in operation at that time, three at the Centre, and one at the Rocks. In productive seasons, cider was distilled in large quantities. One of these was owned and operated by Mr. West, another by Mr. Osgood, a prominent merchant, which was subsequently changed to a brewery, and was located a few rods east of the bridge. The last distillery in operation was owned by Capt. William Caldwell, located on Merrimac Street, and was sold to Alfred Kittredge, in 1836, at which time the temperance reform was beginning to take deep root here. On taking possession, the fires were immediately put out, and were never kindled again. In 1840, the range of stores now known as "Kittredge's Block" took the place of the distillery. In the early days, the distillery was regarded as a fixture among men, and its product as among the necessaries of life, alike with all classes. The distillery was a popular centre with the people, and, in 1774, when Capt. James Brickett, with his company of thirty-three men, "each equipped with arms and accoutrements, and one pound of powder and twenty balls," were preparing to bear honorable part in resistance to British tyranny, they were accustomed to meet at "Mr. Osgood's and Mr. West's Still houses" for purposes of drill, and the transaction of company business. That was their armory, and, without doubt, in accordance with the customs of that day, the occasional source of their inspiration.

In 1790, there was a ship-yard at the Rocks Village, but it ceased operations about the year 1800. About the year 1733, Henry Springer established a ship-yard at the Centre, engaging, to a limited extent, in ship-building. In 1759, another ship-yard was established by Jonathan Buck, who remained here only a few years, removed to Maine, and became one of the founders of Bucksport. During the

war, the business languished, but after its close developed into increased activity, continuing to be a leading industry for many years. For twenty-five years, many ships, schooners, brigs, and sloops were built here, giving employment to a large number of mechanics. There was a large export and import trade to and from England, and the West Indies, and vessels sometimes sailed from here to London direct. This industry finally reached its height about the year 1812, and as soon after as the year 1815 became quiet. There were three yards, one near the foot of Mill Street, another on Water Street, and a third at the foot of How Street. These yards were operated respectively by David Webster, Barnard Goodridge, and a Mr. Kendrick. The last vessel built below the bridge was the "Thorn," launched in 1815. Mr. Goodridge, the builder, afterwards took the yard above the bridge, which was the only one thereafter operated. From 1835 to 1840, the business was carried on by Capt. William Caldwell, during which time five vessels were built. The last of that number, the "North Bend," was launched Nov. 19, 1840. From that time the business was discontinued, and Capt. Caldwell, a man of much business activity, died, January, 1842. Since that date, only two vessels have been built in this town, and these by John C. Tilton, in his shipyard above the railroad bridge, on River Street. They were schooners of about two hundred tons each, — the "Lucy Jane" and "Eliza Ann," the keels of which were laid in 1874, and the vessels launched in 1875.

Thus far it is seen that the prominent mechanical industries, early engaged in, either failed in becoming fairly established, or finally died out by force of circumstances. The shoemaker was a mechanic early looked upon with disfavor by the town, and in some instances denied citizenship by a vote of the inhabitants. At the annual meeting in February, 1676, William Thompson, a shoemaker, was denied citizenship by "a clear and full vote." At the next annual meeting, Peter Patie, also a shoemaker, made application for acceptance as a citizen, but the moderator announced the negative vote in the words, "the town doth not own him, or allow him for an inhabitant of Haverhill, and that it was the duty of Grand-jurymen to look after him." He was not driven from the town, however, as the records show that he was chosen constable in 1694 by a "plentiful, clear and legal paper vote," and as late as 1710 was the proprietor of "Pattee's ferry." By a more lucky turn of fortune, Benjamin Webster and Samuel Parker, both shoemakers, were admitted to citizenship in 1679. From that time the fortunes of the shoemaker appeared to turn, in this community, till the vocation has become the leading one and its product the principal one in the town. For many years the business was not marked by any thrift, and, in 1794, it is recorded that there were only two shoemakers in town.

In 1795, a sudden change took place in this industry by the proposition of Moses Gale to exchange several thousand fresh and dry hides for shoes, and that he would give credit for the hides till the shoes could be made from the same. This appears to have been the entering wedge which opened up shoe manufacturing here, and from that time the business developed with great rapidity.

At that time Moses Atwood, father of Harriet Newell, of missionary memory, was a merchant doing business on Merrimac Street, contemporary with David How, who was also among the first shoe-manufacturers. He entered into the manufacture and traffic in shoes, receiving them in exchange for merchandise, and, during the war of 1812, Moses and James Atwood sent a wagon-load of shoes to Philadelphia, from which they realized a handsome and encouraging profit. David How, a leading business spirit, was among the first to encourage the new business. Phineas Webster, David P. Harmon, Daniel Hobson, Thomas Meady, Warner Whittier, and others, at once engaged in the business, and by 1817 there were as many as 200 shoemakers residents here. Thomas Tileston, a printer in Haverhill, removed to New York in 1818, where he received from the manufacturers here heavy consignments of shoes and hats, which were also made in this town. Paul Spofford, a manufacturer here, soon became united with him in the commission business, forming one of the largest shoe-houses in New York.

In March, 1832, there were twenty-eight shoe-manufacturers in town, and the business largely increased the freighting between here and Boston. The two-horse "baggage-wagon" of Rufus Slocomb, making regular trips to and from Boston since 1818, failed to supply the wants, and he found his facilities increasing till, in 1836, his force consisted of forty horses and eight oxen. In March, 1837, there were forty-two shoe-manufacturers, and fourteen tanners and leather dealers here, and nine other large manufacturers in Bradford, but chiefly doing their business in this town. The resident shoemakers had largely increased, and by that time constituted an important and powerful element in the population. The business also gave employment to mechanics in all the surrounding country, and soon made the town a still more important industrial and business centre. Barter was at times largely the mode of business intercourse, which much increased the commerce of the town.

In 1837, the revulsion in business had a disastrous effect, and many of the heaviest manufacturers were broken down, while the business was temporarily, in large measure, destroyed. It was not long before the enterprise of the town again found its way up through the ruins of the business and the financial crash, and the march was again onward.

In 1860, another count was made, and 100 manufacturers were found here, nine of whom were then situated in Ayer's Village, a thrifty and growing community, four or five miles away, in the westerly part of the town. For several years it was an important centre for the manufacture of hats and shoes, increasing rapidly in population; but the tendency of business to concentrate in the city proper, led to a decline in its interests, and at the present time manufacturing there is quite limited. Among the leading manufacturers, there were the late Jonathan Crowell, Edwin F. Ayer, and Calvin W. Crowell. Among the other prominent business men there, were Ayer Brothers, John A. Houston, and C. W. Thom. Most of these have transferred their business to other localities. The shipments of shoes by rail show in 1850 the number of cases of shoes manufactured to have been 56,272, and in 1860 the number was increased to 93,856 cases. In 1875, the number of cases of boots and shoes manufactured here, as nearly as can be ascertained, was not far from 150,000 cases. The total value of production was $10,196,840.80, being an increase in ten years of $4,473,917.80, a gain of seventy-eight per cent.

About the year 1860, the tide of business began to show indications of leaving the old centres and forming new ones nearer the railroad. Main, Merrimac, and Water streets had hitherto been the principal ones for manufacturing, and for business, but since 1865 the transformation has been very rapid, and the manufactories and warehouses of that day have been forsaken for larger and improved ones in other localities. The erection of first-class manufactories around Washington Square, and in the rear of Washington Street, in connection with elegant stores, for the accommodation of wholesale business, has drawn the bulk of shoe manufactories and sales to that locality, constituting it the present chief manufacturing centre.

Within ten years the style of architecture has much changed for public buildings and business establishments, while much improvement has appeared in the style of private residences. On every hand change and improvement are visible, and freshness of growth is indicated in all directions. Haverhill has 2,643 dwellings, occupied by 3,422 families.

The manufacture of hats was early an important industrial interest, having existed here for over 130 years. The first hatter appears to have been Jonathan Webster, who was engaged in the business as early as 1747. A Mr. Ladd and Daniel Appleton were, also, two other early hatters here, and were in business near the site of the present city hall, in 1800. Nathan Webster was one of the most extensive hat manufacturers in New England in 1815, having his establishment on Green Street, the firm being N. & B. Webster. David Webster was also a hat manufacturer on Water Street. Isaac How, in the West Parish, was a large manufacturer, from 1785 to 1800. He took his hats to market in sacks, on horseback, exchanging them for wool and merchandise. His three sons learned the trade, and are all living: Rev. Moses How, of New Bedford, who has preached 8,000 sermons since abandoning hatting; Isaac How, of Derry, N. H.; Phineas How, of this city, who continued the business in his father's shop. Each is now over eighty years old. All were born, reared, and worked at hatting on "Scotland Hill."

Among the other hatters in the West Parish were: John Ayer, John Ayer, Jr., Jonathan Crowell (forty years in the business), David Gleason, Moses Lull, J. B. Merrill, Crowell & Ayer, John A. Houston & Co., Ayer Brothers, Calvin W. Crowell, P. B. How, Eben Mitchell. Greenough, Cook & Co. began manufacturing in the village about 1830; How & Mitchell followed them, and since then the business has centred here, and entirely passed to the hands of William B. Thom & Co., and the Haverhill Hat Company (Mitchell, Butters & Russ).

In the early days cotton hats, with pasteboard bodies; silk hats, "napped" fur hats, also beaver and woollen hats, were manufactured here; but time has wrought changes, and now only wool hats are produced under the improved factory system by two establishments.

In 1835, the brick flannel-factory, on Little River, located on Winter Street, was built by Ezekiel Hale & Son. It had the capacity of 1,600 spindles, and was an addition to a former structure of less capacity, and the whole gave employment to about thirty operatives, with a producing capacity of 600 yards of flannel per day. In 1855, it passed into the hands of Messrs. Stevens & Co., of North Andover, who increased its capacity, afterwards employing forty operatives and producing 8,000 yards of flannel daily. Since then an additional factory has been built, and the whole establishment now gives employment to 125 operatives.

CHAPTER VII.

INDIAN INVASION — A LONG AND BLOODY STRUGGLE — CAPTURE OF MRS. DUSTON — HER HEROISM — TRIALS OF MRS. BRADLEY — CONSTANT FEAR AND SUFFERING FOR MORE THAN A GENERATION — THE MASSACRE — THE FINAL END — MONUMENT TO ROLFE AND OTHERS.

At an early day after the twelve pioneers had established themselves in the new settlement, they were alarmed by the rumors of Indian invasion and massacre, and that the tribes all over the country had combined to cut off the English. This led to measures for disarming all the Indians, and to prepare for self-defence. It resulted, at that time, that no massacre or attack occurred; but it was afterwards ascertained that the plot was laid, and was headed by King Philip, the chief of the Narragansetts. For some time the inhabitants lived in constant fear, knowing the treachery and revengeful nature of the Indian. In the excitement attendant upon the disturbing rumors, some things had been done which somewhat exasperated the Indians, and it was natural to anticipate revenge from them. The favorable influence of Passaconaway, who was the chieftain in this section, contributed in some degree to the public safety. Some defence, however, was deemed prudent to be made, and a fort was built about the meeting-house, arms and ammunition procured, but no occasion occurred at that time to repel invasion. The excitement became gradually allayed, a sense of security took the place of fear, the neighboring Indians were not generally offensive, and at length unrestrained intercourse grew up between them and many of the inhabitants. The fortifications were suffered to pass into a state of decay, and the years of a generation rolled away before the notes of alarm were again sounded. There had been a rapid growth in population, and from a community of twelve persons, the town had come to rank in size the twenty-fifth among the forty-nine towns composing the Colony, when the year 1675 rolled around.

Early in that year King Philip's war broke out, and danger threatened in every quarter. The influence of this wily and powerful chief had secured the co-operation of many of the tribes in New England, to aid him in his work of revenge. The cause of that war was the execution of three Indians for the murder of Sausaman, a Christian Indian, and it raged with bloody desperation for three years.

The fortifications about the meeting-house were at once repaired, with port-holes in the walls, and the brush and top wood on the common ordered to be burnt, that the lurking enemy might not find concealment. On the 19th of March, 1676, it was announced that the Indians were crossing the river several miles above the town, but that proved a false alarm. On the 2d of May following the long-feared attack was made, and Ephraim Kingsbury was the first man killed. The next day, May 3d, Thomas Kimball, of Bradford, was killed, and his wife, with five children, Joanna, Thomas, Joseph, Priscilla, and John, were taken prisoners. Philip Eastman, of Haverhill, was also captured at that time. The perpetrators of this violence were three well-known "converted Indians," whose names were *Symon*, *Andrew* and *Peter*. Symon had previously been punished for theft, and it is probable that revenge was the controlling motive with him. From that time till 1684 thirty-five troopers were kept constantly on the scout on the borders of Haverhill, Amesbury, and Salisbury. These Indians escaped, and were afterwards troublesome in other localities, until the termination of the war by a treaty formed at Casco in 1678.

In 1688 a fresh Indian war broke out in New England, which was the opening of a struggle which continued nearly thirty years. In 1689 the invasion of Haverhill was made. The Indians hovered about the town in a manner to occasion constant alarm, and small parties were daily seen skulking through the adjacent woods, or stealthily approaching farm-houses for plunder.

The Indian was a cruel, vindictive, and treacherous foe, making sly approaches and skulking behind protecting objects. At times they made their attacks in the night, barbarously slaughtering their defenceless victims; and no hour of day or night was freed from fear of their approach. The people were obliged to go armed to their daily toil, and attended Sunday worship with psalm-book in one hand, and the gun, loaded and primed, in the other. At night the doors of every dwelling were barred and bolted, and the loaded gun placed at the bedside before retiring to rest. Such was life in Haverhill for more than the duration of a generation, and the sufferings of the inhabitants can never be fully described. Sometimes the pop of an Indian gun, from behind a rock or tree, laid the object of its aim low in death. Sometimes, the attack was made suddenly and without warning, and frequently it was a hand to hand fight, in long and bloody frays; and whatever the form of attack, treachery and cruelty were the invariable characteristics displayed by the tawny foe. It has been said to their credit that, as a rule, they never violated the chastity of woman, either in word or deed; but this appears as less a virtue in them when we remember that they were a cold-blooded and unemotional race, rather than one at all accustomed to discipline themselves in integrity, virtue, and honesty. In the struggles of these heroic days some of the most daring acts were performed by woman, indicating alike courage and forecast, equalling the directing and performing qualities in man, on occasions when decision and executive force were called for.

On the 13th of August, 1689, a small party of Indians made a descent on the northerly part of the town, killing Daniel Bradley and Nathaniel Singletary, whom they scalped, and also made a prisoner of Singletary's son. On the 17th of October another attack was made, in which Ezra Rolfe was wounded, from the effects of which he died on the 20th.

In the spring of 1690, the Indians again began to make their appearance, and the inhabitants became more alarmed. A meeting was called on the 7th of April to provide means of safety; and six garrisons were ordered to be put in a state of defence in different sections of the town, and four "houses of refuge" established. Most of the garrisons and houses of refuge were built of brick, and were two stories high; and those not entirely of that material had an inner wall of brick. They had but one outside door, and that usually so narrow that only one person could enter at once. The windows were two feet in length, and eighteen inches wide, protected in the inside with iron bars. The chambers were approached by a ladder, which could be drawn up in case the lower story should be captured by the enemy. The fireplaces were large enough to take in wood, sled length, and the ovens of such enormous size as to bake for a whole neighborhood. One of these garrisons was commanded by Sergeant John Haseltine, another by Sergeant John Webster, the third by Jonathan Emerson, the fourth by James Ayer, the fifth by Joseph Bradley, and the sixth by Capt. John White; and each was garrisoned with from five to eight men. The houses of refuge were the brick houses of Joseph and Nathaniel Peaslee, in the east part of the town, and the houses of Major Nathaniel Saltonstall and Capt. Simon Wainwright, in the centre. These were the retreats for the aged, and for defenceless women and children, in cases of an attack, and in the perilous hours of threatened invasion. Watch-houses were also constructed at a little later time, and on one occasion the town clerk made a journey to Ipswich on horseback for the nails to use in their construction. At the raising of the frame of one, it is recorded that "two quarts of rum were employed at an expense of four shillings." In these days of prohibition this would have been a legal purchase, it being for a "mechanical purpose."

On the 31st of August of that year, Samuel Parker was killed by an attacking party, while at work in East Meadow. In 1691 John Robie was killed, while returning to his home in the North Parish, and his son taken prisoner. He had previously taken his family, consisting of a wife and seven children, to a house of refuge, by means of which they escaped. In the same attack Nathaniel Ladd was shot, and soon after died. On the 19th of July, 1692, Hannah Wheeler became the next victim of Indian assault. In the August following John Kezar went to Pond Meadow to cut grass, placing his gun by the side of a tree. An Indian, on the watch for him, crept stealthily along, seized the gun, and, bringing it to his shoulder, with exultation, exclaimed, "Me kill you now." Kezar, seeing no certain chance of escape, with great presence of mind rushed upon the savage with a shout, and swinging his glittering scythe, threatened to cut him to

pieces. This attack, so unexpected, frightened the Indian, who, throwing down the gun, fled for his life. Tradition affirms that Kezar followed close upon the heels of his treacherous enemy, whom he at length reached, and, with one stroke, buried the scythe in his bowels.

In 1695, two persons are recorded as killed at Pond Plain, and two others wounded by the Indians. Early in the autumn of the same year a party of Indians attacked the northerly part of the town, surprising and taking prisoners Isaac Bradley, aged 15 years, and Joseph Whittaker, aged 11 years; and the history of their captivity opens a chapter of a series of the most thrilling Indian narratives, of events occurring in connection with Haverhill, which are contained in the early history of New England. The prisoners were taken through the wilderness to the home of the Indians on Lake Winnipiseogee, where they were placed in an Indian family. Here they learned that they were to be taken to Canada in the spring, which was afflictive intelligence. Bradley is represented as small in stature, full of vigor, with an active mind. Whittaker was overgrown, clumsy in body, and mentally heavy. It was for Bradley to plan some method of escape, but prostration by fever in the winter led to delay. When health and strength returned, his plans were matured, and a night in April fixed upon to carry them into effect, all which was kept from Whittaker till the last moment of time. At a given hour the escape was made. The Indians pursued on the following morning, and their dogs were soon on their trail. The boys hid in a hollow log, making friends of the dogs by throwing them moose meat, and they passed by them, after devouring it, the Indians soon following. When night came again, the boys emerged from their hiding place, and continued their flight homeward. On the seventh day, having chiefly subsisted on roots, Whittaker became exhausted by exertion and sickness, while he was mangled in limb and foot-sore. In this condition, with a bleeding heart, Bradley was obliged to leave his companion by a stream, probably to die alone. Pursuing his course he soon came to a framed building, which so encouraged him that he returned to his companion, and, part of the time leading him, and occasionally carrying him on his back, both succeeded in reaching Saco Fort on the following night, and on the ninth day from their escape, subsisting during that time "on a little bread, on buds and berries, and on one raw turtle and a pigeon, and without seeing the face of a friend, or warming themselves over a fire." They were kindly cared for by their countrymen at the fort, and Bradley soon pursued his journey homeward, but Whittaker was long detained there by disease, and was finally borne home by his father.

In 1696, "Old John Hoyt," as he was called, and a Mr. Peters, both of Amesbury, were slain by the Indians on the road between Andover and Haverhill.

On the 15th of August, in the same year, Jonathan Haines, living in the westerly part of the town, was surprised and captured by the Indians, together with his four children, Mary, Joseph, Ruth, and Elizabeth, in a field near Bradley's Mills, and the party taken to Pennacook, which is now Concord, N. H. Here the prisoners were divided, one party taking the father and son, and the other party the three daughters. The men were taken to Maine, but soon escaped, and reached home after much privation and suffering. The girls were taken to Canada, where tradition says they were sold to the French. Chase's history has a traditional statement that Mary was afterwards redeemed with one hundred pounds of tobacco, and, marrying John Preston, of Andover, moved to Connecticut. Miriek has the record that they remained there, forgot their mother tongue, one of them marrying a Frenchman, and all became so fascinated with the manners and customs of the French that they could not be persuaded to return, though remembering many of the incidents of their childhood. It is believed they lived and died there.

On the 15th of March, 1697, there was another invasion of the same section of the town by a body of about twenty Indians, which, in all the circumstances of the attack, its immediate results, and its ultimate issues, forms one of the most remarkable and thrilling chapters in the annals of Indian depredation and warfare, clearly illustrating how desperately this town was besieged by these painted devils. It is not to be wondered at that the people began to be discouraged, and to think it was time to "draw off," seeking safety in some less exposed place. In this instance, as usual, the attack was without warning, dashing with the swiftness and fury of a tornado, and as quickly disappearing.

Concerning this assault, Miriek says: "The Indians made a descent on the westerly part of the town, and approached the house of Mr. Thomas Duston. They came as they were wont, arrayed with all the terrors of a savage war-dress, with their muskets charged for the contest, their tomahawks drawn for the slaughter, and their scalping-knives unsheathed and glittering in the sunbeams. Mr. Duston was at this time engaged abroad in his daily labor. When the terrific shouts of the blood-hounds first fell on his ear, he seized his gun, mounted his horse, and hastened to his house, with the hope of escorting his family to a place of safety, which consisted of his wife, whom he tenderly loved, and who had been confined only seven days before in childbed, her nurse, Mrs. Neff, and eight young children."

He ordered his children to fly from the approaching danger, and then sought to assist his wife; but before it was possible to escape with her the house was captured, and he fled to protect his defenceless children. With them he retreated, under fire from a detachment of the Indians, for a mile or more, all escaping unharmed, though every time he raised his gun an Indian was sure to "bite the dust." The savages ordered Mrs. Duston from her bed, took the infant from the arms of the nurse, and dashed its head against an apple-tree. Partly dressed, and with one foot shoeless, Mrs. Duston was ordered to march, together with Mrs. Neff, and, after plundering the house, it was set on fire, as were eight others in the neighborhood.

There were other captives, who were tomahawked as they grew weary in the journey, till none remained except Mrs. Duston and Mrs. Neff. Twelve miles were travelled the first day, and the journey of one hundred and fifty miles pursued through the wilderness, till reaching what is now called Duston's Island, at the mouth of Contoocook River, six miles above the State House at Concord. There the two female captives, and an English youth named Samuel Lennardson, taken from Worcester a year and a half previous, were placed in an Indian family of "two stout men, three women and seven children," all of whom followed the religious instructions given them by the French, and said prayers morning, noon, and night. The female prisoners were told that they would soon be taken to a distant settlement, and, on arriving, would be stripped and made to run the gauntlet between files of Indian warriors. This was so revolting to them that it stimulated to planning a way of escape. Mrs. Duston learned from one of the Indians that a blow on the temple was surely fatal, and also became posted on the most approved style of taking a scalp. Thus prepared for business, on the night of the 30th of April, while they were all in a deep sleep, Mrs. Duston and Lennardson, dispatched ten of the twelve Indians, one of the squaws escaping badly wounded, and one of the children, being awakened, ran away. Taking her savage master's gun, and the tomahawk with which she had liberated the spirits of the sleepers, together with a few other articles, this heroic woman, with her captive companions, hurried their departure from the strange scene of death, and toward the home they so longed to see once more. They had not proceeded far before Mrs. Duston remembered she had forgotton to scalp her victims, and was thus without any evidence, except her word, of what she had done. She instantly retraced her steps, took the scalps of the slain, bagged the bloody trophies, and started a second time on her homeward journey. All the canoes but one were scuttled to prevent pursuit, and the liberated party quietly dropped down the river on their homeward journey, carefully guarding against strolling bands of Indians.

A directing hand appeared to be over them, and in the face of sickness, disaster, and capture, ills to which they were liable, they pursued their course, reaching their home in safety, to the astonishment of those who had for days and weeks given them up for dead. The story of the great achievement was told to an astonished world, every word of which was verified by the trophies she had been careful to preserve. The three heroes soon after visited Boston, carrying with them the ten scalps, the gun, and the tomahawk, for view by the authorities of the Colony, from whom they received expressions of approbation for their heroism, and the General Assembly subsequently gave them a bounty of fifty pounds for the courageous act. They were afterwards the recipients of valuable presents from Governor Nicholson, of Maryland, and from other persons.

Historians and others have been somewhat free to criticise this act of Mrs. Duston, in the performance of which there appears to have been a ready co-operation by her companions in captivity, and a cordial approbation of the result by the Executive and the Assembly of the Colony, as well as by the public sentiment of the pioneers in civilization, who had learned to properly estimate the worth of Indian character, and Indian life, when placed in the scale against the life of a white man. That invasion, capture, and murder by the Indians, was by the sword, and their fate was but the speedy fulfilment of the old law that "all that take the sword shall perish with the sword." It was an illustration of the principle of the "survival of the fittest," and of that law which appears to inhere in all things, that the lower

must give place to the higher. There was, indeed, an opportunity for revenge, and an occasion for the application of that "wild justice"; but there is, in the history of this event, no evidence whatever that such a feeling stirred the breast of that heroic woman. To escape bondage worse than death, to be delivered from indignity the meanest, and to regain her home and friends once more, she aimed her blows at those who were not only murderers, but the destroyers of every opportunity which could make life desirable to her. In the act, she was a law unto herself, and the judge and executioner, and the complete success of the plan, together with her guidance back to her home in the midst of so much peril, and with odds so fearfully against her, is good evidence that an unseen force, overshadowing that age of rudeness and peril, did so direct results, that out of the conflict between the representatives of the two races, left to settle, between themselves, the question of their inalienable rights, victory was given to the highest in the scale of possibilities.

Hannah Duston was the daughter of Michael and Hannah Webster Emerson, and the eldest of fifteen children. Her descendants are quite widely distributed through the country, and are among our most respected and honored citizens.

In 1855, a Duston Monument Association was formed in Haverhill, originating in the West Parish, of which Charles Corlis was president, and George Coffin, secretary. The association was incorporated in 1856, and met with so general favor with the public, that $553.39 was realized for the purpose from a levee in the town hall, Jan. 22 and 23, 1856, at which the gun Mrs. Duston took from the Indians at the time of her escape, together with the scalping-knife said to have been used by her on the memorable occasion, were exhibited. The monument, which was of Italian marble, five feet square, and twenty-four feet high, resting upon a granite base, was erected and dedicated June, 1861, at a cost of $1,200. The tablets were historically inscribed, and, in design, the memorial shaft was appropriate for the commemorative purpose it was intended to serve.

Unfortunately, a debt was incurred by the association which somewhat embarrassed its action, and its adjustment became a matter of litigation. This occurred in 1862, at a time when the fresher and more exciting event of civil war overshadowed the land, causing minor interests to be temporarily lost sight of, and, in 1865, judgment having been obtained in the courts, the monument was removed to Barre, Mass., the records on the tablets erased, and, after being suitably inscribed, was erected as a soldiers' monument.

The disagreeable conclusion of so worthy an enterprise, as the commemoration of that tragic incident of frontier life, was not a result for which the town should be held responsible, it being an enterprise confined to the direction of a few persons, who were unfortunately overmastered by the law's entanglements, and the troublesome events of the hour. The historic spot remains; a proper regard for the memory of this heroic woman still lives, and it is yet within the power of the association to consummate their memorial plans. "Redemption" ought to be the watchward of every heart possessing the elements which kindles over historic memories, and it is not too much to hope and expect that the ungracious result will be followod by restoration at no distant day. Let the hope be cherished that the child has already been born who will feel it a pleasure, as well as a duty, to perfect the record of this ancient town, by placing on the vacant spot a memorial shaft befitting the historic importance of the event, and the fair fame of the city.

A monument to Mrs. Duston has, within a few years, been erected on the island in the Merrimac River, near Concord, N. H., the very spot where the singular "taking off" occurred. Let the rational hope be cherished that the "tooth of time" shall alone take this memorial mark from the observation of men.

On the 22d of February, 1698, another Indian raid was made on the western part of the town, killing Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, and making prisoners of Joseph Haynes and Daniel Ladd. The latter was treated with great cruelty as a punishment for attempting to escape, and both were many years in captivity. On the 5th of March following, another attack was made on the town for plunder. From this date, till the spring of 1701, there was no Indian invasion of a serious nature, though their presence in the neighborhood was a continual source of annoyance and fear.

Early in the spring of this year, small parties of Indians were frequently seen in the adjacent woods, and soon became very bold, attacking the garrison of Jonathan Emerson, in which the Indians lost two killed, but the whites sustained no loss or injury. In 1702, the first exhibition of the Quaker mode of dealing with the Indians was presented by Thomas Whittier, a member of the Society of Friends, who resided in the northerly part of the town. He declined to conform to the custom of sleeping in the garrison at night, or to protect his house with palisades, and refused to carry about him weapons of war. The Indians knew this, and though frequently heard and seen about his house at night, never offered any injury. Friend Whittier treated them civilly, and they never offered any indignity beyond looking into his windows at night, and whispering about the house.

For nearly two years there had been a state of relief from Indian invasion, and the record says: "The inhabitants pleased themselves with the hope that they should see no more of them;" and this sense of security led to neglect in guarding their dwellings. The French, in Canada, desiring to ruin the frontier settlements in New England, stirred up the Indians to deeds of blood and cruelty, which led to a revival of hostilities.

On the 8th of February, 1704, at four o'clock in the afternoon, a party of six Indians attacked the garrison of Joseph Bradley, which was left with the gates open, and the sentries away from their posts. With stealthy tread the wily foe approached, and were within the enclosure before they were discovered. Jonathan Johnson, one of the sentinels, standing in the house, shot at and wounded the foremost savage, and Mrs. Bradley, having a kettle of boiling soap on the fire, threw a ladle of the scalding fluid upon his head and face, which killed him. The remaining five immediately rushed in, killed Johnson, and captured the brave woman, with several others, three only succeeding in making their escape from the garrison. The Indians suddenly retreated with their prisoners, aiming for Canada, which was their favorite headquarters when in possession of captives. Mirick says: "Mrs. Bradley was in delicate circumstances, and in slender health; still she received no kindness from her savage conquerors. No situation of woman would ever protect her from their demon-like cruelties. The weather was cold, the wind blew keenly over the hills, and the ground was covered with a deep snow, yet they obliged her to travel on foot and carry a heavy burthen, too large, even, for the strength of man. In this manner they proceeded through the wilderness, and Mrs. Bradley informed her family, after she returned, that for many days in succession she subsisted on ground-nuts, the bark of trees, wild onions, and lily roots."

While in this situation, with none but savages for her assistants and protectors, and in the midst of a thick forest, she gave birth to a child. The Indians then, as if they were not satisfied with persecuting the mother, extended their cruelties to the innocent and almost friendless babe. For the want of proper attention, it was sickly, and probably troublesome; and when it cried, these remorseless fiends showed their pity by throwing embers into its mouth. They told the mother that if she would permit them to baptize it in their manner, they would suffer it to live. Unwilling to deny their request, lest it should enrage their fierce and diabolical passions, and hoping that the little innocent would receive kindness at their hands, she complied with their request. They took it from her, and baptized it, gashing its forehead with their knives. The feelings of the mother, when the child was returned to her, with its smooth and white forehead gashed with the knife, and the warm blood coursing down its cheeks, can be better imagined than described. Here was another illustration of the amiable traits of character possessed by the "noble savage," which have proved so fascinating to the minds of some who have regarded the Indian as worthy to be placed on an equality, in the conflict for life, with competitors possessing the characteristics of mind and heart which distinguished the English race.

When again able to travel, they resumed their march for Canada; but before reaching their destination, the mother's affections were tortured by seeing the child of her bosom, born in sorrow, and nursed in the midst of affliction, put to death and borne about on a pole, the sport of the heartless wretches who were her captors, and from whose hands deliverance would have been justifiable by the extreme application of the first law of nature. She was sold in Canada to the French, for eighty livres. Her husband, hearing of the fact, started on foot, with no companion but a dog, for the purpose of redeeming her, bearing a bag of snuff from the governor of this Province to the governor of Canada. He succeeded in finding the object of his search, and redeemed her; after which they sailed from Montreal to Boston, and from thence returned to Haverhill. The terrible sufferings of this heroic woman render the narrative of her experience, in some respects, more thrilling than the captivity of Mrs. Duston. There is a record suggesting that this was her second capture; but it does not appear to be very well substantiated. In 1738, in consideration of her sufferings during captivity, the General Court granted her two hundred

and fifty acres of land, surveyed by Richard Hazen; and Joseph Neff, son of Mary Neff, was also granted two hundred acres of land in consideration of the sufferings of his mother at the time of her captivity.

On the 4th of August, in the same year, another attack was made by the Indians, but the details of the struggle were never recorded, except that Joseph Page and Bartholomew Heath were killed, and a young lad in company with them narrowly escaped the same fate.

In the summer of 1706 a second attack was made upon the garrison of Joseph Bradley, at which time the only occupants were Mr. Bradley, his wife and children, and a hired man. It was by night and under the light of the moon, which rendered the approach of the stealthy savages clearly visible, and gave opportunity to prepare for defence. Mr. Bradley, his wife, and hired man, each took a gun, and such of the children as could shoulder one were also armed. Mrs. Bradley supposed they had chiefly come to make her a prisoner, and having learned to appreciate Indian character, by a former captivity, she told her husband she would rather be killed than to be again taken. The Indians rushed upon the garrison, endeavored to beat down the door, and carry it by storm. In this they were partly successful, succeeding in pushing the door nearly open. Mrs. Bradley was ready for business, and when the foremost Indian had partly crowded his body in she shot him dead, which terrified his companions, and they beat a hasty retreat.

On the 3d of July, of the same year, it is recorded that Sergeant Kingsbury was either killed or taken prisoner. About this time there was quite a military force employed for frontier defence, the record showing that from thirty to fifty men and horses frequently passed Griffin's Ferry, which was just opposite the village.

On the 24th of June, 1707, Joseph and Ebenezer Page, sons of Joseph Page, were killed, and in the following August another attack was made, in which Nathan Simonds, of this town, and Jonathan Marsh, of Salem, were wounded; but no details of these assaults are on record.

During the remainder of the year, and the early part of the year 1708, few Indians were seen lurking in the woods, and no attacks had been made. The inhabitants along the frontier again began to feel a sense of security, and vigilance in defence was again remitted. The lull of war and the repose of the inhabitants was, however, of short duration. Intelligence was received by Governor Dudley, at Boston, that an army of eight hundred men were about to march for attack on some of the frontier settlements. This created the most intense solicitude along the whole line of border settlements, and where there had formerly been attacks and slaughter, the most tormenting fears possessed the hearts of the otherwise peaceful and happy dwellers. Troops were furnished for defence, and under Capt. Coffin a body of horsemen patrolled from Kingston to Cocheco, in New Hampshire. At this time, four hundred Massachusetts militia were posted in the New Hampshire province along the border. The guard sent to this town consisted of about forty men, with three choice officers from Salem, — Maj. Turner, afterwards a colonel, a principal merchant of that place, and for many years a member of the council, together with Capt. Price and Capt. Gardner, who were at once quartered in the frontier houses and garrisons. The elements and character of this invading army are very well shown by the following extract from Mirick: "Early in the year a grand council was held at Montreal, when an extensive engagement was agreed upon, which was to be joined in by the principal Indians of every tribe in Canada; the Abenakis tribe; one hundred select French Canadians, and a number of volunteers, several of whom were officers in the French army, comprising a formidable body of about four hundred men. The French were commanded by De Chaillons, and the infamous Hertel de Rouville, the sacker of Deerfield; and the Indians by La Perriere. The Indians were merciless, insolent, and revengeful; but the French, at that period, equalled, and we had almost said, exceeded them, in acts of wantonness and barbarity. When the former were weary of murdering poor, helpless women and children; when they were glutted with blood, it is said that M. Vaudreuil, then governor of Canada, employed the latter to do it."

This force was to be increased by additions from the Norridgewock, the Penobscot, and other Eastern tribes, but to the astonishment of the French commanders the Eastern Indians broke faith, and the original design to attack Portsmouth and afterwards march rapidly on other settlements was of necessity modified. The force then only numbered 250, having much dwindled since leaving Canada, and, to prevent the mortification of utter failure, the French officers were determined to make an attack at some point while they possessed the power. Haverhill was prominent, and having a compact village of about thirty houses, it was selected for the slaughter. This attack exceeded all others in its bloody and brutal character, and was the severest blow which had fallen upon the town. The following account of the attack is from Mirick:—

"At the break of day, on the 29th of August, they passed the frontier garrisons undiscovered, and were first seen near the pound, marching two and two, by John Keezar, who was returning from Amesbury. He immediately ran into the village and alarmed the inhabitants, who seemed to have slept totally unguarded, by firing his gun near the meeting-house. The enemy soon appeared, making the air ring with terrific yells, with a sort of whistle which, says tradition, could be heard as far as a horn, and clothed in all the terrors of a war dress. They scattered in every direction over the village, so that they might accomplish their bloody work with more despatch. The first person they saw was Mrs. Smith, whom they shot as she was flying from her house to a garrison. The foremost party attacked the house of the Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, which was then garrisoned with three soldiers, and he, and a part of his beloved and accomplished family, were suddenly awakened from their slumbers only to hear the horrid knell of their departure. Mr. Rolfe instantly leaped from his bed, placed himself against the door, which they were endeavoring to beat in, and called on the soldiers for assistance, but these craven-hearted men refused to give it, for they were palsied with fear, and walked to and fro through the chambers, crying and swinging their arms. Had they displayed half the ordinary courage of men, no doubtt hey could have successfully defended the house. But, instead of that, they did not fire a gun, or even lift a finger towards its defence. The enemy finding their entrance strenuously opposed, fired two balls through the door, one of which took effect, and wounded him in the elbow. They then pressed against it with their united strength, and Mr. Rolfe, finding it impossible to resist them any longer, fled precipitately through the house, and out of the back door. The Indians followed, overtook him at the well, and despatched him with their tomahawks. They then searched every part of the house for plunder, and also for other victims on whom they might inflict their savage cruelties. They soon found Mrs. Rolfe and her youngest child, Mehitable, and while one of them sank his hatchet deep in her head, another took the infant from her dying grasp and dashed its head against a stone near the door."

The severity of the attack and the brutality of the warfare may be judged of by this brief extract from the pages detailing the events of that tragic hour. Two of Mr. Rolfe's daughters, respectively six and eight years of age, were providentially saved by the courage and forecast of Hagar, a negro slave who resided in the family. She leaped from her bed, fled with the children to the cellar, covered them with tubs, and then concealed herself behind a meat-barrel. The Indians plundered the cellar, drank milk from the pans, took meat from the barrel behind which the faithful Hagar was concealed, and stepped upon a foot of one of the children, but they all escaped their notice and their lives were saved. One of these afterwards became the wife of Col. Hatch, of Dorchester, and the other the wife of the Rev. Samuel Checkley, Sr., of Boston. There is a tradition that Mr. Rolfe was killed by a shot through the door, but it does not appear to be very well authenticated. The door, with its bullet perforation, was preserved as a relic, and was kept in the First Parish Church, where it was lost when the edifice was destroyed by fire. The locality of this terrible scene of slaughter was the site upon which the residence of Dr. Moses Nichols now stands, on the corner of Main and Summer streets.

Anna Whittaker, who was then living in the family, concealed herself in an apple-chest under the stairs, and escaped with her life, but Mirick says the cowardly soldiers met with a different fate: "They earnestly begged for mercy of their inhuman conquerers, but their cries were unheeded; and when the massacre was over, their bodies were numbered with the slain. We can have no pity for the fate of such contemptible cowards. A man who will shrink from danger at such a time, and in such a situation, while he holds the weapons of defence in his hands, should be ranked with the reptile, and ever be looked upon with scorn by the world."

The residence of Thomas Hartshorne was also attacked, and the family suffered as severely as did that of Mr. Rolfe. Mr. Hartshorne and two of his sons were shot dead a short distance from the house, which was situated a little way west of the meeting-house, and a third was tomahawked as he was passing out of the door. Mrs. Hartshorne had only a moment for thought and action. She left her infant on a bed in the garret, through fear that its cries might prevent the success of other plans, and, with her other chil-

dren, fled through a trap-door into the cellar, where they remained successfully concealed while the house was ravaged for plunder. The infant boy was thrown from the garret window out upon a pile of clapboards, where it was found after the slaughter was over, completely stunned, but not permanently harmed. He lived and became a man of uncommon stature and strength, who was often jokingly spoken of as being *stunted* by the Indians.

One of the attacking parties descended upon the residence of Lieut. John Johnson, shooting him, and tomahawking Mrs. Johnson, who had fled to the garden with her infant, but the child was saved, being found on the breast of its dead mother after the massacre was over. Another party attacked the house of Capt. Simon Wainwright, whom they killed on the first fire. Soldiers were stationed in the chambers, intending to defend the house, but Mrs. Wainwright fearlessly unbarred the doors, and let the murderers in, treating them with kindness. This for the moment paralyzed them, and instead of offering further violence, they demanded money. Apparently retiring to bring it, as she said, she fled with her children, which so exasperated them that a furious attack was made on the soldiers, who courageously and successfully defended the premises, and after attempting to fire the house, the enemy retired, taking with them three prisoners. Two Indians skulked behind a stone, near the house, intending to shoot the soldiers, but they were discovered and picked off, and their bodies buried in the field, from which resting-place their skeletons were washed out many years afterwards. Two Indians attacked the house of Mr. Swan, in a field afterwards known as "White's Lot," nearly opposite the house of Capt. Emerson. Swan and his wife determined, if possible, to save their own lives and the lives of their children; barring the narrow door, and placing themselves against it. The besiegers were too powerful, and Mr. Swan, being a timid man, was inclined to surrender: but his wife was not disposed to yield. After partly forcing open the door, one of the Indians crowded in, when this plucky woman seized her roasting "spit," an iron weapon about three feet long, and summoning all her strength, drove it through his body. Thus repulsed, the besiegers withdrew, and by this heroic act of a woman the family was saved. Another party set fire to the meeting-house, but it was extinguished.

This work was being done in the gray dawn of the morning, but the inhabitants soon become generally aroused, and forces began to gather from all quarters. Mr. Davis, a fearless man, resorted to successful strategy: going behind Mr. Rolfe's barn, striking upon it with a club, and shouting with a loud voice, "Come on! come on! we'll have them!" which led the party attacking at that point to think they were being resisted by a large body of English. They at once raised the cry, "The English are come!" and, after attempting to fire the house, they precipitately fled, taking with them a few prisoners.

Joseph Bradley collected a small party for defence in the northerly part of the town, who captured the medicine-box and packs of the enemy, which were left about three miles in the rear. Capt. Samuel Ayer, a powerful and valorous man, gathered a company of twenty, who pursued the retreating foe, overtaking them near the woods, when a sharp battle took place. The gallant men were soon re-enforced by another company, under the lead of Capt. Ayer's son, and a smart skirmish ensued, which lasted about an hour, in which some of the prisoners were retaken, and nine of the enemy killed, when the invaders commenced a hurried retreat, though they numbered thirteen to one in the contest.

The sufferings of the French and Indians in their retreat were very great, owing to the loss of their baggage and medicine-box, in consequence of which many of the Frenchmen returned and surrendered themselves prisoners of war. Some of the captives were released and sent back with the message that if further pursued, the remaining ones would be put to death. The evening left thirty of their number dead on the field, and many who escaped were wounded; but on their return to Canada, they made the lying report, that "the English, being astonished, were all but ten or twelve killed or taken prisoners."

The burial of the dead was the next sad office, and the day being somewhat advanced before being prepared for the service, active movements were called for, especially as the weather was too hot to admit of delay. Coffins could not be made for all, and a large pit was dug in the burying-ground, where the uncoffined were laid side by side. The slain of the enemy were also buried by the inhabitants, and doubtless many were interred on the spots where they fell.

The names of the slain, so far as they have been preserved, are as follows: the Rev. Benjamin Rolfe, his wife and one child, Mrs. Smith, Thomas Hartshorne and three sons, Lieut. John Johnson and his wife Catherine, Capt. Samuel Wainwright, Capt. Samuel Ayer, John Dalton, Ruth Ayer, wife of Thomas Ayer, and one daughter, and Ruth Johnson, wife of Thomas Johnson, numbering in all sixteen. No correct list of the prisoners taken at this time is in existence, and but few of their names have been preserved. Of the number was Mary Wainwright, for whose redemption an effort was made in 1710; Joseph Bartlett, a soldier stationed in Capt. Wainwright's house; a soldier named Newmarsh, and another named Lindal, of Salem, were of the number, and beyond this the names of the captives are not known. In Pike's journal it is recorded that the enemy "killed and carried away 33 persons, and burned several houses." Hutchinson gives the number as "about forty." Pike also states that many soldiers from Salem were here slain, among the number William Coffin, who distinguished himself for his bravery, and his widow was allowed £5 by the General Court, "on account of the remarkable forwardness and courage which her husband William Coffin distinguished himself by, in the action at Haverhill where he was slain."

After the return of Joseph Bartlett from his captivity, he published a narrative of his experience, and the sufferings and fate of the captives, which supplies a thrilling record of the inhumanity and cruelty which distinguished both the French and Indians in the treatment of their prisoners, some of whom they murdered, and others they most inhumanly tortured. Bartlett was paid £20 15*s.* by the General Court on his return from captivity.

Chase says, "Mr. Rolfe, his wife and child were buried in one grave near the south end of the burial-ground. A single monument was erected to their memory, on which was chiselled an inscription for each; but the hand of time has been rough with them — they are overgrown with moss, and the epitaphs are almost illegible." In 1847–48, the ladies of Haverhill erected a granite monument over the grave of Mr. Rolfe, upon which are inscriptions to the memory of Mr. Rolfe, Mrs. Rolfe and her child, Capt. Samuel Ayer, Capt. Simon Wainwright, and Lieut. John Johnson, all of whom were slain on the morning of Sunday, Aug. 29, 1708.

Capt. Wainwright came from Ipswich, and his father from Chelmsford, Eng. He was prominent in the Pequot war, in which he had a hand to hand fight with two Indians, in his defence breaking the stock of his gun, but afterwards using the barrel as a bludgeon, finally killing them both. He was a high-minded and influential citizen, generally supposed to be very rich. There was a tradition that he had a large chest filled with dollars, and that all were once offered to a man if he would extract one of them with his fingers. The trial was a vain one, and he was obliged to go away with only a look at the shining coin. The remainder of the tradition is, that the money was buried, and the field south of Nehemiah Emerson's house was dug over, and a large oak tree near Little River twice dug around to find the buried treasure, but all in vain. The field alluded to is now entirely covered with dwellings, and is the portion of the town located between Emerson Street, Winter Street, and Little River.

The events here narrated were chiefly embraced in an early morning attack on the Sunday of August 29th, and before the sun arose the massacre was fully completed. This was the most formidable, and about the last attack made upon the town during the long period of two generations, in which the inhabitants had been subjected to an almost constant baptism of fear, attack, torture, and death. The events supply the material for a remarkable page of colonial history, and have also been immortalized in verse, by John G. Whittier, the gifted and much honored son of this ancient town, of which the following is a verse: —

> "The morning sun looked brightly through
> The river willows, wet with dew.
> No sound of combat filled the air,
> No shout was heard, — no gunshot there:
> Yet still the thick and sullen smoke
> From smouldering ruins slowly broke;
> And on the greensward many a slain,
> Told how the midnight bolt had sped
> Pentucket, on thy fated head!"

On the 25th of the following September, a party of thirty skulking Indians approached the town; but by the vigilance of Col. Saltonstall, in ordering a company of soldiers for the defence, they were driven back without suffering or loss. The garrisons and houses of refuge, together with the parsonage house, were for long years kept in a perfect state of fortification, and a large company of soldiers were also kept constantly armed and equipped, under the command of Lieut. Col. Saltonstall. For full preparation for any emergency, these men were ordered, by the General Court, to be supplied with snowshoes, and fifty-six men were thus equipped. The massacre of 1708 could not be forgotten; and, on the breaking out of the Indian

War, in 1722, vigilance in defence was renewed; and the parsonage, then occupied by the Rev. John Brown, was ordered to be surrounded by a fort. No attack was made on the town, however, and the great massacre substantially closed the Indian invasion. During the whole frontier war, sixty inhabitants were killed, and between fifty and sixty captured; but most of them were ransomed, or escaped and returned home.

The only evidences remaining of what constituted the defences of the perilous times of which the preceding pages are a record, are portions of one of the garrisons on Winter Street, known as "the Lancaster house," and the "Bradley house," on Hilldale Avenue, now owned by Augustus H. Adams. The third, which was located in the easterly part of the town, not far from the Groveland bridge, was demolished a few years since; and the fourth, which stood on the Duncan estate, near the "Buttonwoods," was removed at a quite early day. The residence of Mr. J. B. Spiller, in that neighborhood, has been supposed by many to have been a garrison; but that is a mistake. The house was erected in 1724, and possesses architectural features belonging to that early time. It was the residence of "Clark Eaton," so called, who was the town clerk from 1711 to 1774, a period of fifty-seven years.

CHAPTER VIII.

DIVISION OF THE FIRST PARISH — WITHDRAWAL OF A PORTION — ORGANIZING THE PARISHES — SHARP CONFLICTS — UNIVERSALISTS — BAPTISTS — METHODISTS.

The defeat of the friends of the Rev. Dudley Phelps, at the First Parish meeting, in the autumn of 1832, led to their withdrawal, and the formation of the Independent Congregational Society, the name of which was changed to the "Centre Congregational Society," in 1840. This movement opened a new era in the history of the First Parish, which was originally gathered around the Rev. John Ward, the leader and master-spirit among the little band of settlers here, in 1640. For nearly two hundred years, the religious interest had largely been in the hands of the First Parish, and exclusively so for about a hundred years, and until the separation, at first reluctantly consented to, of the outlying parishes from the central religious teaching and influence.

For many years, the way had been opening for that schism, by the expansion and liberalizing of religious opinions by both ministers and laymen, and the time at length arrived when the First Parish should cease to be the "established church" in the town. From the position of maintaining the Orthodox Congregational church as the only form of religious faith, as was the case for over a century, change had already long since taken place; for, since 1765, the Baptists had been established here, and successfully maintained their position, although they were not willingly tolerated.

The change in religious opinions was not then fully represented by the varying organizations in existence; the revolution was deeper than that, and what was considered strictly evangelical in doctrine, was not only rejected by some of the clergymen, nominally of the established and Orthodox order, but was discarded by many more of the laymen and supporters of the ministry. As early as 1765, the Rev. Edward Barnard was thought, by the strictly evangelical, to be heretical in doctrine, being, in theological views, ranked with the Arminians, a designating term in those days; and Bradford, the historian, says of this class, "they gradually departed from the Calvinistic system, and forebore to urge or profess its peculiar tenets, although they did not so expressly and zealously oppose them as many have done in later times." The Rev. Abiel Abbot, who was the minister of the First Parish in 1794 and on, though settled as a Trinitarian, subsequently embraced the Unitarian view, which, without doubt, had much to do in modifying the opinions of those who sat under his preaching. His immediate successors, the Rev. Joshua Dodge and the Rev. Dudley Phelps, were, without doubt, squarely enough Orthodox to suit the more conservative. It was the period when the extreme doctrines of future discipline and destiny would once in a while find utterance in that pulpit, but chiefly from the lips of itinerants, only to stimulate the reasoning and doubting to deeper thought. Mr. Phelps had pronounced theological opinions, the utterance of which led to much mental debate in the minds of many of his parishioners, and when the hour for action arrived, the society became suddenly revolutionized from Orthodox to Unitarian, and its affairs placed in the hands of a Unitarian committee. The first Unitarian pastor was the Rev. Nathaniel Gage, in 1835; he was followed by the Rev. Nathaniel P. Folsom, in 1840, and his successors have been the Rev. James Richardson, in 1847, the Rev. Frederic Hinckley, in 1850, the Rev. Robert Hassall, in 1858, the Rev. William T. Clarke, in 1859; and since then, the Rev. J. Vila Blake, the Rev. William H. Spencer, the Rev. Mr. Patten, and by Mr. Spencer in a second settlement, who is now in pastoral charge of the society. Since 1858, the society has given its most cordial support to what is usually known as the radical preaching of that denomination. As is usually the case in society changes, the early movements of the contending parties for the control of the destinies and the sentiments of the First Parish pulpit, were attended at times by some warmth of feeling, but nothing has occurred to interfere permanently with the amenities which belong to social life.

The first Sunday school in Haverhill was gathered in July, 1817, by the instrumentality of two religious young ladies, Miss Gibson and Miss Paget, of Charleston, S. C. They were spending the summer here with Mrs. Atwood, mother of Harriet Newell, of missionary memory. There had been no teaching for children before that, except catechising out of the "Westminster Assembly's Catechism," a well-remembered theological document. The Rev. Mr. Dodge, the First Parish pastor, together with ladies and gentlemen of that church, co-operated. The master of the town school also joined in the work. Mr. James Bates, Mr. Isaac R. Howe, Miss Sarah Atwood, the Misses Elizabeth, Harriet and Rebecca Marsh, and Miss Elizabeth Ayer were also active in the work.

During that summer, ninety girls and fifty boys were gathered in; but the schools were separate, the boys being gathered in the meeting-house, and the girls in the town school-house on the common. The boys were taught by the minister, and the girls by the ladies. The exercises were singing, repeating the catechism and verses from the Bible, closing with a recitation of the Lord's Prayer. Out of this early movement grew the various organizations of classes and associations which have since existed. In 1833, the school numbered 115; and in 1835, 168. The organization appears to have followed those who withdrew from the First Parish, to organize the Centre Congregational Church, and, from its successful results there, the institution became at length adopted by all others.

At an early day the inhabitants of the outskirts became impatient for better opportunities for religious worship, and earnestly petitioned the town, which then took the direction of religious matters, to provide them with suitable places of worship, which was refused. The north portion of the town led off in this movement; and these conveniences being denied, they next petitioned to be set off in a distinct precinct or parish, which request was finally granted, on conditions that they should "decide within a month where their meeting-house should be, and settle an Orthodox minister as soon as possible." It was formally erected into a parish by the General Court, and the bounds established, including what is now a part of Hampstead, Plaistow, and Atkinson. The location of the meeting-house placed it in New Hampshire, when, in 1740, the State line was finally established, and it was then declared by the General Court that the territory remaining in Haverhill should be, to all intents and purposes, the North Parish, though two-thirds of the original parish was in New Hampshire, including the meeting-house, but the parsonage was in Massachusetts. The church still remains the same, and for long years the attendance has been about equal from Plaistow and Haverhill.

The North Parish society has a fund of something over ten thousand dollars, the interest of which is alone to be applied for the support of preaching; and in addition, a sum amounting to something like three thousand dollars, which may be applied to other parochial purposes. This fund has been controlled by the Universalists for many years. A seven years' struggle in law, by the Plaistow Congregational Society, ended in defeat. An attempt to secure the interposition of the Legislature in their behalf was equally unsuccessful, and the question appears now to be settled. The Universalists are now contemplating the building of a church, an enterprise they might, with eminent propriety, have entered into many years ago.

The church was organized two years later, and the Rev. James Cushing became its first pastor in 1730. His immediate successors were the Revs. Gyles Merrill in 1765, Moses Welch in 1826, and Samuel H. Peckham in 1831. After the death of the Rev. Gyles Merrill, in 1801, the church was without a settled preacher twenty-five years. The later ministers have been men of ability and good repute.

In 1734 the westerly part of the town was set off, and erected into a separate parish, under the name of the *West Parish of Haverhill*. The first meeting-house was immediately erected, near the present

residence of Timothy J. Goodrich, and the Rev. Samuel Bachellor became the pastor, in response to the following parish vote, providing him with "a sofishant hous the Bigness of Mr. Nathan Webster's well fineshed and a Barn of thurty feet long and twenty feet wid and convenancy in land partsin for ceeping three cows on hos and ten sheep sumer and winter"; also, "one hundred and thirty pounds in pasabil money or Bils of creedit and value, annually." The depreciation in paper money led to trouble in the parish, which ultimately assumed alarming proportions, running into theological matters. Mr. Bachellor was accused of heresy, in saying that the work of redemption was declared finished, when Christ uttered the words, "It is finished."

A long and bitter controversy grew out of this, led by Joseph Haynes, a talented, well-informed, shrewd, and fearless man, which resulted in the retirement of Mr. Bachellor by the recommendation of a council, which sustained his theological views. This result was not reached till the controversy had continued for several years, terribly stirring up the elements of conflict and contention. Nine years elapsed before another minister was settled, when the Rev. Phineas Adams assumed the pastorate, remaining in charge about thirty years, and the society was prosperous under him. "He was a graduate of Cambridge in 1762; a man of mild and conciliatory manners, amiable disposition, sound sense, excellent understanding, and extensive reading. He was not bigoted, and seemed well calculated to quiet a turbulent society." He died in 1801, after which there was no pastor of the society for twenty-five years, during which time its religious affairs were in a very disturbed condition.

Within this time an effort was made to join with the North Parish, in the support of preaching, half the time in each parish, but that did not succeed. As time passed, there came to be conflicting religious opinions among the members of the parish, which were pressing to be represented. At the annual parish meeting, March 17, 1806, the following important vote was passed: "That the Baptists, Methodists, or Universalists, who belong to the West Parish, shall have a right and privilege to draw out of the parish treasurer's hands as much money as they pay in by taxes, after allowing or deducting for levying and collecting for the same, for to hire such minister or ministers as they choose, provided they are of good standing or character, when there is not a minister employed by the parish committee, as has been usual in times past."

Under this arrangement the money continued to be divided, and a mixed gospel preached till 1818, when an attempt was made to break up the arrangement to hire "the Baptists, Methodists, and Universal preachers as usual," the aim being to reinstate exclusively Congregational preaching. This was not successful till 1826, when the church and parish joined in settling the Rev. Moses G. Grosvenor, a Congregationalist, as the pastor. Soon after this David Webster, by will, bequeathed to the parish, land, money, and personal property, on condition that it was to be "applied exclusively for the support and maintenance of an ordained gospel minister of the Congregational or Presbyterian denomination, who is Orthodox or Calvinistic in his sentiments, in the west or second parish in said Haverhill." The trustees of this fund were John Marsh, Brickett Bradley, of Haverhill, the Rev. Gardner B. Perry, the Rev. Ira Ingraham, and David C. Kimball, of Bradford.

Mr. Grosvenor was ordained in December, 1826, and dismissed in March, 1828, which showed the Congregationalists to be in the minority in the parish, and they soon withdrew, forming a new society, and built a brick meeting-house a mile west of the other house. The Rev. Abijah Cross was invited to the pastorate of the new organization by a unanimous vote of the *church*, which was Congregational, and a parish meeting was called to concur in the same, Aug. 3, 1829. The next day the Universalists called a parish meeting, to be held at the same time, to see if the parish would vote to call the Rev. Daniel D. Smith to become its pastor, which they voted to do. The church had invited Mr. Cross and the parish Mr. Smith, the result of which was Mr. Cross remained the pastor of the church and society till Jan. 23, 1853, when he was dismissed at his own request. Mr. Smith continued the minister of the *parish* till 1831, and it was then without a pastor till 1834, when the Rev. Thomas G. Farnsworth was called and remained till 1837, when the Rev. Henry M. Nichols was his successor, continuing till his death, which occurred in 1842. From this time till 1852, there does not appear to have been any settled minister in the *parish*, though preaching was sustained most of the time, the officiating clergymen being the Revs. Josiah Gilman, Cyrus Bradley, W. W. Wilson, Willard Spalding, James E. Pomfret, Lemuel Willis, and Martin J. Steere.

The Universalists were in full control of the parish property and the parish taxes, but neither the Congregationalists nor Universalists could control the Webster fund, as neither could comply with the terms upon which the bequest was made, and it continued to accumulate till the two thousand dollars amounted to several thousand dollars more, not a dollar of which had been or could be used. The Universalists had not the right kind of theology, and the Congregationalists were not in possession of the parish, the two essentials to secure the control and use of that fund. The power of money, the glitter and fascination of a fund, would not admit of longer quietude, and it became the topic of parish discussion and the subject for negotiations for many years. The proposals made by the two parties surrounding the "bone" were numerous, but none proved mutually satisfactory till March 29, 1851, when the Congregational society offered the parish, or Universalists, $2,400 for the privilege of becoming themselves the parish, which offer was accepted. The terms were, that the Universalists, or old parish, were to retain all the parish property they were in possession of, and were to relinquish to the Congregationalists all right and claim to the old parish, in its organization, and all claims to the Webster fund. April 27, 1852, the legislature granted leave to the parish society to make the transfer, which was accepted June 17th thereafter, and on the 6th of October following, forty-five members of the Congregational Society were admitted members of the parish, and on the 16th of the same month thirty members of the parish withdrew, leaving the ancient parish in the hands of the Congregationalists, where it still remains. The disposal of this question was followed by the settlement of the Rev. Asa Farwell as pastor of the West Parish Society, and Aug. 30, 1852, those who had relinquished the control of the parish organized themselves into the First Universalist Society of the West Parish of Haverhill, which was rendered necessary by reason of the transfer of the parish to the Congregationalists.

During this time of conflict for supremacy and control, many changes had taken place. In 1834, the old church had been taken down and moved a mile and a quarter west, which was more central. There were a few Methodists there, but they had no church organization in the parish, and they received little favor from the original controllers of the parish. In 1818, they held a communion, in which service they solicited the use of the communion vessels belonging to the parish church, which were refused, and in their place they substituted *decanters and common tumblers*. Chase records that "even their use of the 'Sacrament Table' was thought to have been 'an unchristian encroachment on the ecclesiastical rights of the church' in the parish, and 'highly reprehensible.'"

The first allusion to singing in church was in 1770, when the parish voted "to continue to sing Dr. Watts' Psalms & Hymns in the Congregation," and in 1771 an article was in the warrant for the annual meeting "To see if the Parish will vote a part of the Frunt Galary for those to sit in who Have Larnt or are Larning to Sing by Rule. Either to Build a Pew or otherwise as shall be most proper." The men of the West Parish were strong in their purposes, and tenacious in their adherence to convictions; hence the severity of the religious contest which for many years raged there. The long warfare with the Indians had deprived two generations in large measure of educational advantages, and though deficient in education, as their records show, they were men of thought and purpose, and the wonder is that they were so well qualified for the transaction of business as their records indicate. It was the day for religious bigotry and sectarian control, and it is not strange to find what was the "established church" tenacious of their rights, and exacting in their rule. As they gradually divided in opinion, however, a more liberal spirit crept in, which made them better citizens, better neighbors, and better Christians. The historic period of this parish is covered by these years, through all of which time a worthy ministry was sustained, which has been continued down to the present hour. In 1859 a Universalist church was built at Ayer's Village by the "Ayer's Village Associates," a corporate body, but preaching is now only sustained a portion of the time. During the last twenty-five years the events and interests of the West Parish have been only such as ordinarily pertain to communities similarly situated. Within a few years the Methodists have somewhat increased at Ayer's Village, and have had occasional preaching.

In 1734 the inhabitants of the easterly portion of the town made an unsuccessful attempt to be set off into a separate parish, but the action was not consummated till 1743, immediately after which measures were taken for the erection of a church, and though so far finished as to be occupied for preaching the same year, it was many years in

becoming fully finished, and was not really completed till a few years before it was torn down, which was in 1838.

As soon as the house was ready for occupancy, the record says the parish invited the neighboring ministers to pray with them "for ye divine direction, in order to give a Person a call to settle among them in the work of the ministry," and the 6th of September, 1744, set apart for that service, when the Rev. Benjamin Parker was the shepherd mentioned in the recommendations, a son of Daniel Parker, of Bradford. It is very probable the newly organized parish had become pecuniarily embarrassed in their efforts to provide suitable accommodations for religious worship, and after voting to erect a parsonage-house for their new minister, a committee waited on him, asking if he could consent to some delay in its construction, to which the record says his prompt reply was, "No, he would not," and the house was at once built. It is evident that the spirit of *exaction* was the disagreeable peculiarity of Mr. Parker, exhibited in his early insisting upon prompt compliance with all contracts, which was shown in his demand for the payment of his salary. Out of this came an unpleasant feeling, which led to greater trouble, and to his dismissal. He further alienated the members from him by withholding his encouragement and sympathy from the patriots of the Revolution, to the extent of his being regarded as a Loyalist or "Tory," and when in 1775 the parish requested him to abate some of his salary, his answer was that he would not, but "would stand for the whole of it." The straitened condition of the struggling inhabitants led to a repetition of their request, in answer to which his desire was that "the parish would not trouble him with any committees hereafter, for he would not hear them."

Following this, the records of the parish show that action was prompt and decisive. The record says: "It was put to vote by the moderator to see if the Parish will have the Reverend Mr. Parker to preach to them any more for the futur or not, it passed in the affirmative — they would not have him." The second vote was as recorded: "It was put to vote by the moderator to see if the Parish will Shut up the meeting house Dors and fasten them up for the time to come — it passed in the affirmative." Capt. Daniel Johnson, Anthony Chase, and Samuel Ayer, Jr., were then chosen "a committee to fasten up the meting house dors on Monday the 8th of January instant — 1776."

After the performance of this patriotic deed, matters remained in that situation a year. The doors of the church were closed, and so were the lips of their "spiritual adviser," at the expiration of which time an ecclesiastical council dissolved the connection, and Mr. Parker, retiring from the ministry, removed to his farm in the parish.

There was no preaching in the meeting-house for more than two years. After that the pulpit was variously supplied till 1797, when Rev. Isaac Tompkins, son of Christopher Tompkins, of New Bedford, having accepted the invitation of parish and church, was ordained as their pastor. During the long suspension of preaching and the irregular supply, the church died out, and only one member resided in the parish in 1796. The retiring minister had captured the records, which, according to Chase, "were conditionally returned to one of the deacons of the church by a daughter of Mr. Parker," a few years ago. Under Mr. Tompkins, the reconstructed church flourished, and the foundation was laid anew for its usefulness and permanence. Mr. Tompkins died Nov. 21, 1826, at the age of sixty-five, he being the last of what may be termed the pioneer ministers. Since that time the history of the parish has only been of the ordinary character and interest.

The clash of sectarian interests does not appear to have been very sharp in this parish, their chief trouble being a conflict between the patriotism of the people and the Loyalty or "Toryism" of the minister, and that was summarily brought to an end by the decisive action of the former.

The Baptists began to be somewhat numerous in 1817, and frequent meetings were held in the school-house on the Common. In 1821, the Second Baptist Society in Haverhill was formed, the inhabitants of Amesbury joining in the movement. Cutting Moody, Samuel Pillsbury, and William D. S. Chase were the leading men in the organization. In 1822, a meeting-house was erected, which was thoroughly remodelled in 1857, and a bell placed on it. In 1823, the Rev. William Bowen became the first pastor of the society.

CHAPTER IX.

CHANGES IN THE FIRST PARISH — THE "SEPARATISTS" — NEW SOCIETIES — THE BAPTISTS — RELIGIOUS CONFLICTS.

In previous chapters mention has been made of the position occupied by the First Parish, the early narrowing of its limits of power by the erection of three additional parishes, and establishing worship in each of them. Following this, mention has been made of the change in religious sentiments with a majority of those who were entitled to vote in its affairs, thereby transferring the direction of its business into the hands of the Unitarians, and the subsequent withdrawal of the remaining Orthodox or evangelical portion, forming what is now the Centre Congregational Society.

Long before this last event, however, there were other things connected with the religious movements of the inhabitants, which were the source of solicitude with the "standing order," as the ruling and directing sect was called. In 1764, the Rev. Hezekiah Smith, an attractive, winning, and talented young clergyman, made a casual visit here, having recently graduated from Princeton College, N. J., and was immediately ordained to the Christian ministry. At first this successful preacher was admitted to the pulpits of the "standing order," but when converts began to multiply, and it appeared probable they would be gathered under the banner of the "Separatists," as they were called, with this "New Light" leader as their shepherd, those pulpits were closed to him.

Mr. Smith was a magnetic man; an inspiration pervaded the hearts of his converts, and events moved rapidly. On the 28th of June following, the embryo church invited him to its pastorate, which did not appear to be answered or acted upon, till it was renewed on the 12th of November, 1766, though he was practically the pastor of the new church from the date of its organization. Mr. Smith became a member of the church, by letter from the Baptist Church in Charleston, S. C., and, immediately following the complete organization of the church, a large and commodious meeting-house, without a steeple, located near the present church, was erected and finished the same year, and a steeple was added in 1799.

None but residents of the town were received as members of the church, previous to July 1, 1767, in which year a desire became active to multiply members, and authority was given to the pastor and two members to receive into the church worthy persons residing elsewhere. Missionary visits were made from time to time, by the pastor and laymen, to the surrounding towns, and to distant localities in New Hampshire and Maine. In Methuen, Dracut, Chelmsford, Rowley, and other towns, a lively interest sprang up. Frequent calls were received for the pastor to administer the baptismal rite in distant localities, and churches began to be organized, both in New Hampshire and Maine. In Rowley, a branch of the Baptist church of Haverhill was organized, with Samuel Harriman as its elder, becoming a separate church in 1785, and in the same year one was organized in Newburyport by the withdrawal of members, who had joined here.

The "standing order," annoyed and alarmed by the increase of the "Separatists," began to perplex them. Members of the new churches were taxed for the support of the old one, their goods frequently distrained for payment thereof, and their religious meetings frequently disturbed and interrupted, while the "standing clergy" forbade the pastor to preach within parish bounds. In one instance, while he was delivering a week-day evening lecture, in a private house, a stone was hurled at him through a window, but without effect. All acts of this nature, and all restraints imposed, were regarded in the light of persecutions, and the new sect was benefited rather than harmed thereby; and by vigorous efforts they soon succeeded in securing more perfect religious freedom by favorable legislation.

In 1793, the society received an Act of incorporation as *The First Baptist Society in Haverhill.*

Mr. Smith's manners and ability drew about him large audiences, and his sermons were very effective. He first preached in the West Parish; but when it became known that he was a Baptist, that pulpit was immediately closed to him, and the smouldering fires in that somewhat inflammable parish were kindled into a fresh blaze. He was early appointed one of the Fellows of Brown University, and in 1797 had conferred upon him the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity. He was a successful pastor for over forty years, dying Jan. 24, 1805, in his sixty-eighth year.

This society made strenuous efforts to secure a share in the parson-

age-lands in town, from 1796 to 1818, though without success; but in 1820, a plan for a ministerial fund was adopted, and the fund raised by quarterly contributions and donations. The early contributors were Mrs. Sarah How, $1,000; Mrs. Annie Saltonstall, $500; Mrs. Rebecca Duncan, $500. In 1842, ninety-three acres of land, given by Mrs. Sarah How, came into the possession of the trustees.

Although the church has at times been distracted by divisions, it has been an instrumentality of power since its organization. The immediate successor of Mr. Smith was the Rev. William Batchelder, and after him the Rev. George Keeley. From 1836 to 1860, the Rev. Arthur S. Train, D. D., was its pastor, at which time he was appointed professor of sacred rhetoric in the Newton Theological Institution, which office he held till his death. The present pastor of the society is Rev. George W. Bosworth, D. D.

The history of the Baptist society in this town shows the opening of a new era in religious affairs, and the appearance of a religious organization, so ably led and so zealously handled, as not only to secure a rapid local growth, but become able to possess and improve, as a missionary field, the outlying country as far east as Portland, Me., and as far north as Concord, N. H., its leader, practically a "John the Baptist," preaching and baptizing, "in all the region round about," was an event which could not fail to make its mark in the religious history of the community.

The First Parish Church embodied the Puritanic ideas, the churches in the outlying parishes were only offshoots from it, and not its antagonists. The Baptists were a new order, and met with bitter opposition from all the parish organizations, but the most formidable came from the First Parish, which naturally assumed to control the religious interests of the town. Gradually, however, its power declined, through the influence of broader views and more liberal feelings, cherished by many of its leading supporters. When the final revolution came, in 1832, and the Unitarians attained possession of the parish organization, much of its ancient control and sectarian sway was practically destroyed, and what remained of the element in closest sympathy with the early spirit, the early rights, and early rule of that parish withdrew, forming the Centre Congregational Church, taking position with other organizations, subordinate to the First Parish Society, which, under the Unitarian control, claimed the distinction of preaching "Love" with the abatement of the "Threatenings," and gradually became the nursery of the radical thought and utterance which, in later years, have distinguished its pulpit teachings.

There appears to have been a neighborly and friendly feeling existing towards the retiring body, who conscientiously believed themselves to be the custodians of religious truths, vital to the interests of man in the present, and in the future, and the rightful bearers of the "ark of the covenant," received by them from the fathers. The records of the time show that they first worshipped in the Universalist church on Summer Street, which arrangement might have been in some degree influenced by the notable courtesy extended to that class of believers by the First Parish, as early as 1811, in admitting the Rev. Hosea Ballou to its pulpit to preach the first Universalist sermon ever delivered in the parish.

The society was strong in its early organization, it having a hundred members, and the church, organized in 1833, consisted of ninety members. When the division became assured, Dea. Le Bosquet, one of the few of the members of the church who remained with the First Parish, having in his possession the communion service, carried it and delivered it to Dea. Ezra C. Ames, remarking that, "as it was a present to the church from Abigail and Lydia Marsh, and a few others, he considered the parish had no claim upon it, and as the church had chiefly withdrawn, he regarded the service as justly belonging to them." This appears to be a fair statement of the manner in which the service followed the church, and, as such, may properly pass into history.

A new house of worship was built in 1834, and the Rev. Joseph Whittelsey became the first pastor, remaining till 1837. He was succeeded in 1839, by the Rev. Edward A. Lawrence, who remained till 1844. His successor, in 1845, was the Rev. Benjamin F. Hosford, who was an acceptable and successful pastor, being, in his theological opinions, of unquestionable soundness, as estimated by the evangelical standard. He remained till failing health compelled his resignation in 1863. The next minister was the Rev T. T. Munger, settled in 1863, and remaining till 1869. The Rev. C. M. Hyde followed him as pastor, in 1870, closing his labors in 1875. In 1876, the Rev. H. E. Barnes, the present pastor, assumed charge of the society.

During the existence of this society it has been subject to occasional internal divisions, the first appearing in 1839, when sixteen members of the church withdrew, and with others joining them, organized the Winter Street "Union Evangelical Church." In 1858, other disturbing elements made their appearance, causing considerable internal commotion, finally resulting in the withdrawal of nearly a hundred members of the church, in 1859, and an organization immediately effected under the name of the "North Church."

In 1860, the church edifice was remodelled, improved, and rededicated, about which time large accessions were received from the late Winter Street Society, that edifice having passed to the control of the Free Baptists. In 1878 the church was again remodelled, the entire structure having been raised, and a chapel placed beneath it, combining all the facilities for the accommodation of the religious and social interests of the society.

The Winter Street Society, an offshoot from the Centre Church, had an existence from 1839 to 1860, a period of twenty-one years, passing through many severe trials, and supported by a self-sacrificing and earnest band of men and women. To the stranger there was always an open door, and special interest bestowed upon the rising generation. In 1860, after the organization of the North Society, the necessity for three Congregational churches was seriously questioned, and about that time a family feud was revived, which crept into the Winter Street Church, causing the secession of thirty-four members, which finally led to its disbandment, and its members were absorbed by the other churches. The church edifice was sold to the Free Baptists, who still retain it, and have built up a large and flourishing society.

The Winter Street Society was distinguished by the powerful revival work in which it was from time to time engaged. Its first minister was the Rev. Job H. Martyn, its founder and leading spirit, who retired in 1841. He was followed by the Rev. Charles Fitch, who soon adopted the Miller theory in regard to the second coming of Christ, preaching his farewell discourse to the society in 1842. His successor was the Rev. George W. Finney, a powerful revivalist, and under his ministry a remarkable revival excitement, coupled with the Miller delusion, took possession of the church, producing a shock, the evils of which lasted for many years. Among the immediate effects was the excommunication of ten members of the church, and nine others stricken from the roll, and from 1843 to 1853, no society record was kept. After Mr. Finney's release from pastoral duties, he became the agent of the State Temperance Society, and was much interested in the Washingtonian temperance movement. He finally settled in California, where he died. The Rev. D. N. Merritt was the society's pastor in 1846, and was succeeded by the Rev. E. J. Cummings in 1848. During his ministry the church was reorganized and received into Congregational fellowship. In 1853, the Rev. Leonard S. Parker was called to the pastorate, who remained till the breaking up of the church and society in 1860.

The organization of the North Church gave considerable strength to the Congregational interests of the town, a large and influential congregation of worshippers being at once gathered, and the foundations laid strong and deep for future growth and influence. The society was organized March 1, 1859, and the church established on the 30th of the same month. Immediate steps were taken for the erection of a house for public worship on the corner of Main and White streets. The cost of the structure and organ was $30,000, and the house was dedicated Feb. 21, 1860. Until the completion of the new church, the society worshipped in the First Parish Church. On the 8th of August, 1860, the Rev. R. H. Seeley, D. D., a native of Norwalk, Ct., but recently in charge of the American Chapel in Paris, was installed as pastor, in which relation he still continues.

In 1803 a new organization called the "Christian Church" came into existence, under the lead of the Rev. Elias Smith, then of Portsmouth, N. H., who came here to do missionary labor. The first meeting was held in Bradford at the residence of John Morble. It had considerable prosperity, though with many the sect was unpopular and bitterly opposed. Divisions at length crept in, the love grew cold, and in 1816 the meetings were discontinued, having been entirely sustained up to that time by itinerant preachers.

All efforts to revive the sect proved abortive till 1823, when the church was reorganized by Elder Abner Jones, and the record says "this was followed by a glorious revival, in which, we trust about fifty were brought from darkness to light." Sufficient strength attended the movement to build a brick chapel on the west side of Washington Square, on the site now occupied by the Washington Square Hotel. In 1825 Abel Nichols and George W. Ayer were "selected for deacons upon trial," and Henry Plummer "selected as Bishop" of the church, and in 1826 he was ordained to the work of the ministry, and became the society's pastor, remaining such till 1843, when the relation was

dissolved at his own request. His ministry was a successful one, the flock constantly increasing, which required the enlargement of the chapel.

In 1843, embracing the belief that "the second coming of Christ was near at hand," Elder Plummer withdrew from the Christian Union Society, accompanied by a number of the principal members, erecting a building on Essex Street, known as the "Tabernacle," where he became the oracle of the new doctrine and the pastor of the Tabernacle Society, continuing to preach that doctrine till 1855, when he resigned his charge to become an evangelist.

In 1856 Elder Plummer again became the pastor of the Christian Union Society, but resigned in 1857, and was succeeded by the Rev. L. B. Hatch, during whose pastorate the church was remodelled, and a steeple and bell added. Since, the march of business westward led to the sale of the church, and in 1874 the society removed to Washington Street extension, building a new church there, and have now a flourishing society under the pastoral care of the Rev. C. A. Beck.

Elder Plummer was not a man for a salary, and never received one. He believed "the gospel should be free," and, thus believing, so he preached and practised. At the conclusion of his labors he passed to the unseen, beloved and respected by all.

Among the historic societies, the First Universalist, or Summer Street Society, holds a worthy place, its founders and early supporters being among the prominent and substantial men of the town, and its ministry among the ablest of the denomination. The Rev. Hosea Ballou first preached in this town in 1811, and there was occasional preaching of that kind thereafter; but no society existed till March 17, 1823, when fifteen persons met at the tavern of Asaph Kendall, organizing "The First Universalist Society in Haverhill and adjacent towns," choosing Barnard Goodridge moderator, and Thomas Meady clerk and treasurer.

The first sermon before the new society was preached by the Rev. Hosea Ballou, in old Masonic or Assembly Hall, Water Street, where services were regularly held till the brick meeting-house, in process of erection on Summer Street, was finished and dedicated, which took place April 12, 1826.

The Rev. Thos. G. Farnsworth, of Newton, became the pastor and was installed April 11, 1826, holding the relation till 1833. His successor was the Rev. Thomas J. Greenwood, in 1835. Following him was the Rev. Otis A. Skinner, in 1836, who was soon called to the Fifth Society in Boston. He was succeeded by the Rev. Matthew Hale Smith, during whose ministry a church was organized and publicly recognized in 1837, the deacons being John Crowell, Samuel Johnson, and John S. Fuller. Mr. Smith was succeeded by the Rev. Henry Bacon, in 1838, and after him came the Rev. T. P. Abell, in 1841; the Rev. Massena Goodrich, in 1844; the Rev. L. B. Mason, in 1849; the Rev. J. E. Pomfret, in 1853; the Rev. Calvin Damon, in 1855; the Rev. William McNiel, in 1859; and the Rev. J. W. Hanson, in 1860, who held the pastoral relation during the war, the society granting him leave of absence to serve as chaplain of the sixth regiment. He resigned in November, 1865. In November, 1865, the Rev. Calvin Damon was recalled to the pastorate of the society, and still retains the charge.

The church was rebuilt in 1856, to which has since been added a basement, which serves for a chapel and for social purposes. The society is large, united, and strong.

The society is identified with the early conflicts in the First Parish by the union of some of its members with the Unitarian members of the First Parish to obtain control of its affairs. In that contest "thirty-seven members of the society were dismissed to become members of the First Parish," by whose vote the disturbing questions then existing were put in the way of settlement by placing the Unitarians in control. After the withdrawal of the Centre Society there came a triangular contest for the division of the parish fund. There was a combination forming between the Unitarians and the Centre Society to outvote the Universalists, who had then become a majority in the parish, and divide the funds equally between themselves; but before it could be perfected the Universalists offered the Unitarians better terms than those embraced in the arrangement with the Orthodox, which were accepted; the taxes of sixty-eight Universalist members of the parish were abated, whereupon they withdrew, receiving four thousand dollars as their part of the funds in the hands of the Trustees, leaving the parish organization and the remaining funds in the hands of the "Congregational Unitarians," where it still remains. The amount remaining at that time was $7,296.48.

This action ended the long and sharp contest for the possession of the First Parish fund, by the division of it between the Unitarians and Universalists, leaving the seceders without any share in the distribution.

The Rev. John Wesley Hanson, A. M., D. D., was the war minister of the Universalist Society in the days of the Rebellion; his pulpit utterances in defence of the principles involved in the contest were clear and emphatic, and his support of the loyal cause enthusiastic and firm. In the nine months' campaign, 1862–63, and the hundred days' campaign, 1864, of the "Old Sixth" Regiment, he was the chaplain. He also visited each Massachusetts regiment scattered from Washington to Florida, from January to April, 1864, under appointment from Gov. Andrew and from the Massachusetts Convention of Universalists. He was also the pioneer of the Soldiers' Mission, a benevolent organization of Universalists, supplementary to the Christian Commission, and war correspondent of the "New York Tribune" and "Boston Journal." Subsequently he became the author of the History of the "Old Sixth," and is also the author of several town histories and other works. He is now the editor and business manager of the "New Covenant," of Chicago, the Universalist denominational paper in the West.

The Methodists appeared here quite early, as is shown in the records of the West Parish, but they did not meet with a very friendly reception from those committed to the maintenance of the forms, doctrines, and usages of Puritan order. Their first appearance was in the West Parish, and as early as 1806 there is a record of their occupancy of the meeting-house. The Universalists, also, were first known in town in that section, and it appears the Methodists, Baptists, and Universalists, by clasping hands, wrested the control of the parish from the "standing order." The Methodists first commenced holding meetings in the village about 1830. Osgood G. Boynton, Moses M. Chase, and Joseph T. George are among the first recorded as identified with the movement. Itinerants supplied the preaching till 1837, after which it was supplied by conference, and a church was organized at that time.

Till 1842 there was considerable prosperity, at which time the church numbered about 200. The Miller delusion then became a distracting element, and the interest rapidly declined, till in 1844 the meetings were altogether discontinued. There was a revival of interest and a reorganization in 1851, and meetings again established in Athenæum Hall. In 1854, "The First Methodist Society in Haverhill, Mass." was formed, and the Wesleyan church, on Winter Street, erected in 1855. The society has had many able ministers, under whose labors there has been a rapid growth, among whom were Revs. James Pike, R. W. Humphries, O. W. Scott, C. W. Millen, E. A. Smith, S. B. Sweetser, and Charles E. Hall. Rev. J. M. Durrell is the present pastor.

In 1869, a second society was organized, and Grace Church, an elegant structure, erected in 1871, at a cost of $50,000, also on Winter Street, in which has been gathered a large and strong congregation of worshippers; first under the pastoral care of the Rev. L. D. Barrows, who has been succeeded by able men. The Rev. Leon C. Field is the present pastor.

The Third Baptist Society was an outcome from the First Baptist Society, in 1858, thirty members withdrawing and commencing worship in the town hall, under the pastoral direction of the Rev. Benjamin Wheeler. Subsequently, meetings were held in Music Hall on Winter Street, and in 1864 a large church was erected on Portland Street, where has been gathered a flourishing and substantial society. The house has since been much enlarged, and the Rev. Mr. Burns is the present pastor.

The Freewill Baptists organized here about 1858, first worshipping in a hall, and subsequently in a vestry erected for that purpose. In 1859, difficulties arose, creating division, and secession of a part of the members. The stronger portion of the society purchased the Winter Street church, where they have gathered a large and thriving society. The seceders continued to worship for a time in a small building on Duston Street, but the meetings were long since discontinued, and the organization is extinct.

In 1858, a Free Evangelical Church was organized here for city missionary work, under the care and guidance of Elder Charles H. Cole, but, after a feeble and struggling existence of about two years, the enterprise was abandoned. Mr. Cole had for some time previous labored as a town missionary among the unchurched.

For some time prior to 1850, the Catholic population had been increasing here, but religious services had not then been held in town, except occasionally on week days by the officiating priest at Lawrence. On the second Sunday in September, mass was celebrated here for the

first time, and shortly after the foundations of a house of worship were laid, the structure built and dedicated July 4, 1852, and a residence for the priest built adjacent to the church. In 1859, the congregation had so increased as to call for an enlargement of the church, and further accommodations have since been supplied for the multiplying number of worshippers. Father McDonnell, during his residence here, was supplied with an assistant priest. He was succeeded a few years since by Father Daley, and quite recently he has been transferred to Boston, and Father Doherty has taken his place.

The rapid increase of French population, since 1860, led to the establishment of French Catholic worship here, which for several years was held in West's Hall, Water Street, where a large congregation was gathered and ministered to by the Rev. Father L. A. Casgrain, who organized St. Joseph's Church, Nov. 24, 1872. In 1875, a church was built on the corner of Locust and Grand streets, which is occupied by a flourishing society.

The establishment of Episcopal worship here appears to have been to some extent accomplished as early as 1773, but failed at that time because of the sympathy of the rector, the Rev. M. A. Badger, with the mother country, for which reason he fled from Boston with the ministerial fleet in 1775, abandoning his house and land here. From that time, until 1820, services were rarely held here, but at and after that date, the Rev. Drs. Wainwright and Eaton, of Boston, Morse, of Newburyport, and others, preached here. James H. Duncan, then a young lawyer, and Mr. Hovey, a devout churchman, at that time took an interest in the worship, but the effort failed of permanent success. From 1833 to 1835, the effort was again made by A. W. Thayer and the Rev. James C. Richmond, but services were only occasionally held. In 1855, the Rev. Charles Wingate removed from Philadelphia to Haverhill, and soon opened an Episcopal Sunday school. He was joined by B. R. Downes, of Bradford, and the Unitarian church was secured for a Sunday service by the Rev. Dr. Packard, of Lawrence, which awakened considerable interest.

This resulted in the organization of a parish called the Trinity Church Parish; the Rev. W. C. Brown was invited to the rectorship, and a church built on White Street, which was consecrated in 1857. For several years the Rev. Charles H. Seymour was the rector, who was succeeded by the Rev. S. C. Thrull, D. D. The present rector is the Rev. C. A. Rand. The congregation has had considerable growth, and the church has been enlarged to accommodate the worshippers.

In 1875, the Rev. Charles Wingate, in pursuance of a long-cherished purpose, erected an Episcopal church upon the former homestead of his father, the late Moses Wingate, on Broadway, which was given the name of the Free Church of St. John the Evangelist, and is to be maintained by him forever as a free church, in which he is at present the officiating clergyman. Around this altar of worship have been gathered seventy families, many of whom have not previously been regularly connected with any society, and a thriving Sunday school is gathered.

In 1877, the September festival known in England as the "Harvest Home," an English festival, was permanently established in connection with this church, when the fruit and harvest offerings of the season, of every kind, were brought to the church, where were united thanksgiving services and social festivities, terminating with a banquet. Simultaneously with the establishment of this Free Church, Sisters Annie and Mary took up their residence here, and have since been diligently serving the public in labors of love and deeds of charity. The ultimate aim of their mission here is the establishment of a hospital.

CHAPTER X.

THE EARLY DAYS — THE COMMONERS — THEIR CONFLICTS — THE LAND QUESTION — ITS SETTLEMENT — BORDER WAR.

From the commencement of the settlement of Haverhill, a great tract of territory had been held in common by a small number of men, the first step in the division and disposal of which being to divide three hundred acres into lots, and afterwards to divide the rest of the territory, and its improvements and emoluments, proportionately, among the original owners, or confer grants to such as wished to become citizens of the town.

As a matter of course, the manner of transacting business was very imperfect, which gave rise to many misunderstandings, and questions of grave character soon came up for settlement. The first recorded deed of real estate in the town was from Thomas Sleeper and his wife to William White; and was recorded Oct. 11, 1659. The first selectmen were chosen in 1646, — Thomas Hale, Henry Palmer, Thomas Davis, James White, and William White; but the town had the power, as early as 1636, to choose, not exceeding seven men, to have power over its own affairs, who were first called "the seven men," and afterwards "towne's men." These men were doubtless chosen here, but the records of the early days were not preserved. Richard Littlehale was chosen recorder in 1643. In 1663, the first *annual* town-meeting was held, and in 1664, John Carleton was chosen recorder and clerk of the writs, which empowered him to try small causes. In 1648, there was a sort of board of trial justices appointed, consisting of Thomas Hale, Henry Palmer, and Thomas Davis, with power to hear "small causes" under forty shillings. Carleton was succeeded in the office of Recorder by Nathaniel Saltonstall, who held the office till 1700. That office was afterwards filled by comparatively few men, John Eatton holding it fifty-six years, Phineas Carleton eighteen years, and A. B. Jaques twenty years.

In the early days they made it compulsory to attend town-meetings. The name of every freeholder was kept on the town records, and the vote was, "having lawful warning he is to come within half an hour after the meeting is begun, and continue till sunset if the meeting hold so long, under the penalty of halfe a bushel of Indian corn or the value of it." In 1647, it is recorded that "John Ayer, Sen., and James Fiske were fined for not attending town meeting, in season." If there was an early disposition to shun attendance upon town-meetings, or to maintain silence, it was soon improved upon, for in the account of the meeting in 1700, the officer records that "the meeting was full and the mouths, too," which gives a clew to the date when "town-meeting oratory" began to prevail.

The questions coming before the town at that early date were varied in character, and quite exciting. All the affairs of the parish were disposed of by the town, the voting of the salary of the "Teacher," the division of parsonage lands; and as early as 1765 the parish had the ordering of "Tate and Brady's Psalms, with the largest impression of Dr. Watts Hymns, to be sung in public." Upon parish questions, and especially upon the voting of salaries, there was a wide difference of opinion, which led to many exciting contests.

In 1651, the town voted "that all the undivided land, after all the meadows and second division of plough land is laid out, shall remain to the same inhabitants, the proprietors of the three hundred and six acres, to every one according to honest and true meaning, all commons remaining in general to them."

This made the original purchasers or grantees the proprietors of the lands. Conflicts often occurred between the commoners and non-commoners, sometimes ending with bloody noses and battered faces. The question of land division was a disturbing one from 1651 to its final settlement. The division of plough lands and meadow lands took place from time to time.

In 1706, the land question was revived again with increased violence, and in town-meeting all inhabitants of the town were voted proprietors of the common lands. Notwithstanding this, all division of lands was made on the basis that the commoners were the rightful owners thereof. Out of the conflicting opinions grew a long contest, involving questions of rights of ownership and titles. In course of the scrimmages the town books were lost, and when returned they were in a damaged and mutilated condition, involving the loss of valuable and interesting records.

In the autumn of 1723, the critical time arrived when the settlement of the land question became very pressing. The selectmen of Haverhill and Kingston met at that time and ran the lines between the two towns, which by the original grant bordered on each other. The talk was all about land, and the two parties were fast verging to a state of open, sanguinary hostility; and unless a peaceful settlement could be reached, disastrous results promised soon to follow. Five town-meetings, in succession, ended with no results except a war of words, and the question of homestead and land interest was the stirring one of every household. The largest, and then quite valuable tract of land, remaining undivided, was what was called "Cow Common," laid out in 1665, to be "forever" a common pasturage.

Moderate counsel still prevailed, and, Sept. 2, 1723, a committee was chosen by the "town" to confer with the commoners, having in view a settlement which would lead to peace. Two meetings passed, and the committee were only able to report that they had been "met with silence and nothing more" by the commoners. This silence seemed like declining to accept the olive-branch of peaceable adjustment, but subsequent events proved otherwise.

In January of 1724, a meeting of the proprietors was called, in which the petitioners said: "Taking into consideration the damage of contention" they would inquire "upon what condition such persons would be satisfied." Dea. James Ayer, Nathaniel Peasely, and Richard Hazzen were chosen a committee to meet the non-proprietors for conference. An interview was had at the tavern of "Cornet James Pecker," with a large number of the discontented inhabitants, who appear to have only indicated what would personally satisfy themselves, rather than suggesting any general plan of distribution or adjustment; and there does not appear to have been any more practical plan of settling the question entertained by the committee representing the commoners.

The report of the committee fully illustrated the selfishness of the men whose claims they were called upon to consider, and this early page of history supplies a practical lesson in the ways of men, while it presents a disagreeable picture of the deformity which cupidity is capable of producing. As an illustration of their claims the following is taken from the records:

"Joshua Swan would not be easy unless They would grant him 15 acres between Samll Davis & Job Clement."

"William Johnson would not be easy unless they would fling up ye cow common."

"Isack Bradley, because he had bore charges and lost friends by ye Indians requests six acres neer honey ball mill."

"Matthew Harriman junr declared yt hee would bee uneasy unless all ye fences erected on ye cow common were demolished & itt lay according to ye vote of ye ancient fathers & ye proprietors records Burnt."

These are samples of the terms of settlement offered by a large number. Upon the presentation of the report to the proprietors they voted to grant the several parties the land specified in their applications, on "Condition yt They rest satisfied & Contented wth ye division of ye Comon land according to ye proprietors order & yt for ye future They appeare in all Towne meetings, unless hindered by extraordinary Casualty & doe oppose By voate & argument, all such persons and voates as any way disturbe or hinder ye proprietors in their peaceable Injoyment of their lands."

Though articles of agreement were drawn up and signed, nothing was settled, and the General Assembly was petitioned for redress. The court took the direction of electing town officers after the commoners and non-commoners had come to a dead-lock, appointing Richard Kent, Esq., of Newburyport, the moderator. John Eaton was declared town clerk, and the election of other officers followed in order.

After that, the meetings of the commoners and non-commoners were held separately, and separate records kept. In the town of Haverhill, the long and bitter contest suddenly terminated by the practical acknowledgment of the rights of the "Proprietors"; but in portions of the original township, set off to other towns in New Hampshire, the conflict continued; but, in all cases, the rights of the commoners were respected in law. After disposing of all their lands, the organization of commoners disappeared. Their last meeting was Oct. 10, 1763.

The boundary line between New Hampshire and Massachusetts was not settled till 1741, when it was established by being referred to the king, who authorized the appointment of commissioners to mark the line. George Mitchel and Richard Hazen were appointed by Gov. Belcher on the part of New Hampshire; but Massachusetts declined to make an appointment, and the proceeding was *ex parte*, as the king's decree permitted. According to Chase, "This line gave to New Hampshire a territory of about fifty miles by fourteen more than she had ever asked for."

The effect of this was to cut off one-third of the original territory of Haverhill; but the "proprietors" continued to claim the common and undivided lands in all the territory thus set off, and to prosecute trespassers. There was a constant warfare going on between those who attempted to hold and occupy the common lands and the Haverhill proprietors. The forests were cut down, the meadows mowed, and the possession of the land in various ways interfered with. It was frequent that fierce encounters took place, resulting in pummelled heads and bloody noses, and, it is said, the parties sometimes went fully armed with deadly weapons. Sometimes men were taken prisoners in the field, and taken to Haverhill, where they were detained under guard. The Rev. Mr. Parker, in his history of Londonderry, relates an account of the visit of a large party from Haverhill, led by Mr. Herriman, fully armed for a fight unless the settlers surrendered to their demands. It was Friday, and the families were assembled, after the Presbyterian custom, under a spreading oak, in the preparatory service for communion. The assailants yielded to the request to desist till the religious services were over, after which, Herriman said to his followers: "Let us return; it is in vain to attempt to disturb this people, for surely the Lord is with them."

These settlers were a determined people, and so were the original proprietors, and the settlement of their differences generally passed to the courts, where the claims of the proprietors were almost invariably sustained.

In addition to this trouble, the New Hampshire government claimed, not only jurisdiction of the territory, but also the property, which was contrary to the order of the Crown, and attempted to drive out all the inhabitants, and take away their property by force of arms. There were more than one hundred families there, settled by Haverhill, who were oftentimes besieged by clans, from fifty to one hundred, coming from Kingston and Londonderry, to fence in and possess their lands.

The distress and vexation attendant upon this state of things came to the notice of Mr. Richard Hazzen, a citizen of Haverhill, who transferred his residence to Hampstead, having lands there, to aid and assist the Haverhill settlers in their resistance of the people who were attempting to drive them off by force. His influence with Gov. Wentworth put a stop to that; but the Kingston and Londonderry people only changed their tactics by commencing lawsuits against the inhabitants. These Mr. Hazzen defended to the utmost of his power through ten successive years, making "one hundred and thirty-nine journeys to Portsmouth, oftentimes in rain and snow, heat and cold," and, by his energy and devotion, saved to every Haverhill man his estate. In this work, his own estate became involved to Capt. Edward Tyng, for the redemption of which the General Court voted to loan him five hundred and sixty-eight pounds, free of interest, for the term of five years, but failed to comply with the vote, and after the death of Mr. Hazzen, in 1754, his wife petitioned that body for aid.

The "border war" had been long and severe; but it finally drew to a close, the last mention of it being in 1759, when the "proprietors" chose a committee to adjust the "Mason claim" in the township of Salem.

For nearly half a century the land question, in various shapes, had kept the people on the "perilous edge of battle," till many had become weary and desponding, and even the indefatigable Hazzen was led to say that "rather than endure so much again, he would give up all his estate and sit down in the remotest parts of the earth."

The end came, and following the termination of turmoil and strife, came thrift and prosperity to the peace-crowned community, which had even then begun to be known as the "Ancient town of Haverhill."

CHAPTER XI.

HOME STRIFE AND ITS END — THE FRENCH WAR — TAXING THE COLONIES — THEIR RESISTANCE — THE REVOLUTION — THE PART HAVERHILL TOOK IN IT.

Through a period covered by more than two generations, the history of the town has been traced, the first of which is marked by the trials, struggles, and privations incident to frontier life in the midst of a wilderness till then untouched by the hand of civilization, followed by more than a generation of almost constant conflict with a savage, treacherous, and murderous foe, at the close of which came a distracting internal conflict, for the settlement of property rights, between two clans, — the "commoners" and the "non-commoners," — begun long years before, but left to culminate in much violence of spirit, after the occasion had passed for a clasping of hands in a common interest for defence against an inveterate border enemy.

The notes of war had never fairly ceased their sounding, but there had been comparative peace, and cessation of sanguinary strife, and a few years had been given to harassing and costly contests in the courts for the settlement of legal titles. These days of quasi peace proved to be of short duration, for, in 1754, the Colonies were again involved in a state of solicitude and distress by another war with the French, which was formally declared in 1756, and expeditions were, that year, planned against the French in Nova Scotia, Ohio, Crown Point, and Ticonderoga.

Haverhill men were embraced in the memorable expedition to Nova Scotia. In the expedition to Crown Point, the town was represented, and in 1756, nearly an entire company went to Albany, and a large number of them bore part in the disastrous campaign of that year. In 1757, every man was enrolled, and liable to be called into service. There was an "alarm list" which embraced all between the ages of sixteen and sixty years of age, who were exempt from ordinary call, but upon extraordinary occasions were liable to be called out to do duty in their own town. Niagara, Ticonderoga, and Crown Point were the objective points in that day of struggle, and Haverhill men were plentifully mixed with the forces at the front. In 1757, Peter Webster and Nathaniel Saunders were taken prisoners at Fort William Henry.

Capt. Henry Young Brown served through the whole war, and the General Court granted him eleven thousand acres of land on Saco River. Dr. James Brickett was surgeon's mate in Col. Frye's regiment from 1759 till the close of the war.

The revival of the Sugar Act, and the passage of the Stamp Act, aroused the people of Boston in resistance, and all the Colonies joined in remonstrance and appeal. Patriotic, energetic Haverhill was neither slow to move, nor uncertain in her utterance. Within her borders were the fit constituent elements of a State —

> "Men who their duties knew,
> But knew their rights, and knowing, dared maintain."

At a town-meeting, Oct. 14, 1765, they instructed their representative, Col. Richard Saltonstall, to use his influence against the Stamp Act and Excise Act, and that there be "no excise on tea, coffee, &c., and that the duty be not more than fourpence per gallon on liquors for private consumption."

When the General Court refused to rescind the famous resolutions of Samuel Adams, for which refusal the Colonial Governor dissolved the body, Haverhill at once called a town-meeting, — the engine of power in those days, — and "the thanks of the town voted to the Gentlemen of the House of Representatives for their firmness in defending the liberties of the people."

Every moment of lapsing time showed a strengthening of the spirit of resistance to the oppression of the mother country. When the collision came between the people of Boston and the British troops, on the 5th of March, 1770, a meeting was called for deliberation. They were of one mind, voting to resist the importation and sale of British goods, and to do so, "by all lawful ways and means exert ourselves in exposing to shame and contempt all persons who shall offer or make sale of British Goods imported contrary to the agreement of marchants, . . . and that all persons who shall violate or counteract this vote and resolve, shall be rendered incapable of being chosen to any office of profit or honor in this town." To give force to this vote, Messrs. Thomas West, Dea. John Ayer, Capt. William Greenleaf, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent, Esq., Nathaniel Walker, John Young, and James Carr were chosen a committee to "Give notice and expose all who shall violate it, that their names may be remembered with infamy."

When the port of Boston was closed June 1, 1774, another town-meeting was called July 28th, at which the most radical action was taken. They voted not to use or deal in East India tea; to abide by any action of the approaching Continental Congress, if rational, and generally adopted; to create a committee of correspondence with the committee of Boston, as follows: Samuel White, Isaac Reddington, Joseph Haynes, Richard Ayer, Jonathan Webster, Jr., Daniel D. Rogers, and Timothy Eaton. They also chose a committee "to inspect the conduct and inform of those persons who shall counteract the resolutions" previously passed.

Immediately following this meeting, although there were three companies of militia in town, a fourth was formed, which was called an "Independent Artillery Company," but practically they were a company of light infantry, never having any ordnance. The officers were: captain, Dr. James Brickett; lieutenant, Isaac Bartlett; ensign, Joshua B. Osgood; clerk, Edward Barnard. This company looked forward to immediate service, and Bailey Bartlett, Israel Bartlett, Thomas Cogswell, Nathaniel Marsh, Dr. Brickett, and Nathaniel Walker sent to England for copies of the "Norfolk Militia Book," at a cost of £6 15*s.* per copy, to perfect themselves in the manual of arms.

Their uniform was of the Continental style — "blue coats faced with buff, and yellow plain buttons; the coats cut half way the thigh, and the pockets a-slope; with buff or nankeen waistcoat and breeches, and white stockings, with half-boots or gaiters, and hats cocked alike. Each had a bright gun, with bayonet and steel ramrod." This company met for drill in Mr. West's distillery, and the clerk was authorized to procure *candles*, with the money collected for fines.

At an adjourned meeting of the town, Sept. 15, 1774, it was voted "to buy eight hundred pounds of powder, with balls and flints answerable, as the town stock." The meeting then adjourned to Oct. 10th, at which the only vote passed was to instruct the constables "not to pay any more money into the Province treasury until further orders from the town, but that they pay immediately to the Town Treasurer, and take his security for the same without interest."

Events of the greatest importance were rapidly following each other, and the town was fast making history. Those who adhered to the Crown were the "Loyalists," and those who resisted the acts of British oppression were "Patriots." The patriots were many, and the loyalists few. The leading men of the latter were Col. Richard Saltonstall and his brother-in-law, the Rev. Moses Badger, an Episcopal clergyman. Col. Saltonstall was a commanding and influential man; he was commissioned colonel at the age of twenty-two years, and was in active service during the French war, and had been a representative man in many important matters. At this time his sympathies flowed out in the wrong direction, and he erred in judgment, as many men before him and since have done. The people knew him to be a loyalist, and that of necessity settled the question as to their further relations and duties toward him. Coolness and distrust, only, took the place of cordial friendship and confidence, till his influence was felt to be dangerous and his presence an offence.

Not long after the July meeting, the test was applied to him, as described by Mirick in the following: "The principles of Col. Richard Saltonstall, who was a Tory, were very repugnant to the Whig party, which composed a majority of the voters. A party from the West Parish, and Salem, N. H., collected before his house, armed with clubs and other instruments to mob him; but he made them rather ashamed of their conduct. He came to the door, and with dignity told them his reasons for pursuing a different course from that which they had adopted. He ordered refreshments for them, and requested them to go to the tavern and call for entertainment at his expense. They accepted of his invitation, and huzzaed to his praise. He soon after went to England to escape the resentment of the Whigs, where he was well received by his connexions."

Timothy Eaton, a member of the committee of correspondence, and a prominent patriot, was the leader of the party calling on Col. Saltonstall, and Chase gives the following as the traditional account of the interview, which he thinks is a more reliable version: —

"The bold and unpatriotic action of Saltonstall had become so obnoxious to the public opinion of the town, that a large party was made up to call on him, and notify him that such was the case. They went, and Mr. Eaton, leaving the company a short distance from the house, called the Colonel to the door, and informed him of his errand. Upon this, the Colonel drew himself up, and exclaimed, 'Is that any of *your* business?' Eaton quickly replied, 'I'll let you know that it *is* my business," and was about retiring to his companions when the Colonel, finding that the affair was likely to terminate seriously, dropped his lofty air, held a parley, promised to give them no more cause for offence, and invited them all to refreshments at his expense."

This affair was a Revolutionary incident, neither singular nor peculiar. There were similar proceedings in all parts of the country, which grew out of the decided and determined spirit of the hour. Col. Saltonstall was one of the few men in the country who felt it their duty to cling to the rule of the sovereign, and the great majority everywhere felt it their duty to "crush them out," and they did. That violence was not desirable, on the part of those who waited upon him, is evident from their prudent steps, and that the Colonel was sagacious enough to avoid more unpleasant results is equally plain; and his immediate departure from the country, accompanied by Mr. Badger, was an act of good judgment. There was no room for Tories in America in the days of the Revolution, as there was no place in the North for rebel sympathizers in the war for the Union. The estates of both Saltonstall and Badger were taken possession of under the directions of the General Court.

The delegates to the first Provincial Congress were Samuel White and Joseph Haynes, and to the second and third were Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent, and Jonathan Webster, Jr. These were the days of Patrick Henry; and at the meeting of the Continental Congress, the power of his eloquence lifted that body promptly up to an adoption of what had been done by Massachusetts in the way of resistance to British oppression, and a harmony of spirit ruled in reference to the practicability and necessity of prompt and decisive action against the tyranny of the mother country.

In January, 1775, the town voted one hundred pounds, in aid of the poor of Boston; and for aid in defence of the cause of the patriots, they voted to raise a company of sixty-three minute-men, of which James Sawyer was captain, and Timothy Johnson and Nathaniel Eaton, lieutenants. The news of the battles of Lexington and Concord reached this town in the afternoon on the same day, and before night one hundred and five Haverhill men, nearly half of the whole militia force of the town, were on their way to the scene of conflict. Another company, under command of Capt. Daniel Hills, soon followed, marching to Cambridge. Supplies were also sent to Lexington from this town, amounting to £57 4*s*. 6*d*., for which payment was made out of the public treasury. A third company immediately followed, under command of Capt. Ebenezer Colby; and in addition Col. James Brickett joined the forces at Cambridge, as early as the 26th.

In the midst of war's alarms came the calamity of fire, sweeping out seventeen buildings, embracing all the west side of Main Street from the "Corner" to what is now Court Street, including stores, the tavern, and a distillery. The meeting-house was several times on fire, and the earth being parched with drouth, everything was combustible, which threatened the destruction of the whole village. This occurred on the 16th, and the news of the battle at Lexington came only three days later. The representatives to the Provincial Congress, then in session, Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent and Jonathan Webster, asked to be excused from attendance, their presence being so much needed at home; but their presence was insisted on, or others in their place.

To add to the distraction of the hour, John Tracy, of Marblehead, came riding into town in the afternoon of the second day after the Lexington fight, announcing that the British were marching on the town; that they would be there the next morning, and that they were "cutting and slashing all before them." This alarm proved to be a false one, but it spread terror through the town, left without defence by the absence of almost the entire militia. The women and children prepared to flee, packing their valuables in bundles, and gathering during the night around the meeting-house, and in the vicinity of the "Town Pump." Horses were saddled, and oxen yoked, preparatory for the flight. The people of the East Parish fled to the "Hemlocks," on the east shore of Kenoza Lake, where they passed the night. Sentinels were posted at a distance to give the alarm of approaching danger, but the dawn of morning revealed that the alarm was a false one, probably raised by the British to distract the people, and was part of a succession of similar disturbances, extending from Ipswich to Coos.

In response to the call of the Provincial Congress for thirty thousand men, enlisted for eight months' service, Haverhill furnished ninety-four.

At the battle of Bunker Hill, of the detachment of one thousand engaged in that fight, seventy-four, or about one in fourteen, were Haverhill men; and of the number was Lieut. Col. Brickett. In that memorable struggle, two of that number were killed, — John Eaton and Simeon Pike; and twenty-one others lost their arms, or suffered some casualty. Col. Brickett was standing by the side of Gen. Putnam in the early part of the action, when a cannon-ball struck the plank upon which they stood, knocking them both down, wounding Col. Brickett in the foot, and causing a rupture from which he always suffered. It is recorded, that, as Gen. Warren went upon the hill to engage in the fight, he obtained his arms of Col. Brickett, who was borne off with the first wounded. Col. Brickett was subsequently promoted to brigadier-general.

In 1778, £60 were paid to four men who served as guards to Cambridge, £55 each to six months' men; nine soldiers enlisted in the militia were paid £590; and fifteen soldiers for the Continental army were paid £1,500. This illustrates the cost of obtaining soldiers at that time. Patriotism abounded in the hearts of the people, but it required money to fill quotas at that time, as it did in later days. The expenses of the town for soldiers in that year were over *thirty-one hundred pounds*. There appears to have been no murmuring, however, for at a September meeting the authorities were directed "to hire any detachments ordered by authority at any time, and to pay what money was necessary for them," and "if the Treasurer had no money he was to hire some." To meet this, personal loans were effected, in sums from £5 to £626, amounting to nearly £5,000. The largest sum was loaned by the Widow Phebe Hateh, a magnificent "widow's mite" to drop into the treasury at such an hour. In addition, the families of soldiers were cared for, and many hundred pounds paid for their support.

In 1779, Dr. James Brickett was chosen a delegate to attend the convention for revising the Constitution, which was then claiming attention. At this time the expenses of the town were regarded as "enormous," and its indebtedness very heavy, but every emergency had been met, and in a final review it was found that Haverhill was only deficient one man in meeting all the drafts made upon it. There were soldiers of varied ages, and in the enlistments of 1781 were two lads only fifteen years old, — Thomas Page and Nathaniel Clark, — one a drummer, and the other a fifer. They were received into Capt. Nehemiah Emerson's company, at their own earnest solicitation. These young musicians, by their skilful execution, attracted the attention of Washington, who, with his characteristic interest in youth, inquired of Capt. Emerson in regard to them. Their general bearing drew from him the compliment, "They are pretty boys." They remained in the service till the close of the war.

The final end of the struggle was hailed with delight, and the announcement of the result followed with enthusiastic rejoicing. The ringing of bells, the booming of cannon, and bonfires and illuminations, were the outward tokens of the general joy, and all hearts beat high and warm over the victory of our eagles, and the establishment of AMERICAN INDEPENDENCE. In the general view, Mirick says: "There were but few towns, if any, which made greater exertions to forward the cause of freedom than this; no effort was spared, no sacrifice was thought too great. The courage of the inhabitants never flagged, even at the darkest period; 'they had nailed the flag to the mast,' to use the expression of a veteran of that period, and 'they determined to see it wave in the winds of freedom, or see it fall nobly fighting!' They were willing to spend their treasures, and shed their blood; and when there was scarcely room to hope, the votes which were passed in their town-meetings, show a spirit of coolness, determination, and patriotism, which is truly astonishing; — they evinced a chivalry far nobler than that of olden time; they were actuated by a principle from which death only could separate them."

CHAPTER XII.

AFTER THE REVOLUTION — REVIVAL OF BUSINESS — GROWTH OF THE TOWN — VISIT OF WASHINGTON — WAR OF 1812 — SCHOOLS — SLAVERY AGITATION — MILLERISM — PATRIOTIC DEMONSTRATIONS.

The close of the War of the Revolution found Haverhill, as all other towns, groaning under the burden of a heavy debt, for the payment of which provision must be made, and the discharge of which rested on the integrity, energy, and thrift of the people. Industry had been crippled, commerce broken down, and the sources of income dried up.

In 1781, this town raised 32,256 pounds of beef for the Continental Army, and it was not backward in voting and contributing relief to the poor, at home and abroad. In 1790, they did not hesitate to vote and pay a "*hard money*" bounty of fifteen hundred pounds, for twenty-eight men to fill the call for that number of three months' men. In addition, they voted, "That the Town Treasury be open to the recruiting committee, and that the Town Treasurer be ordered to pay them *what money they may call on him for*, they being accountable for the expenditure of said money." They also instructed their representatives to resist the return of "Refugees" to the State, determined that patriots and brave men, rather than skulkers, should possess the soil. Their letter of reply to the Boston committee, in 1786, from the pen of Gen. James Brickett, referring to the disorderly situation attendant upon Shays' rebellion, which had then broken out, in which they declared themselves ready to "join in a firm and vigorous support of our Constitution for the redress of grievances, and in promoting industry, economy and every other virtue which can exalt and render a nation respectable," had the true ring.

With business at a standstill, and a currency so depreciated that board was £60 per week, shoes £20 per pair, potatoes 96*s*. per bushel, rum 45*s*. per pint, a mug of flip, £3 12*s*., the outlook was a dismal one; but the skies soon brightened, and the blessings of peace brought thrift and prosperity.

The location of Haverhill was favorable, it being at the head of sloop navigation on the Merrimac, and a centre for a brisk inland trade. There were heavy importers and exporters here, to and from England and the West Indies, and business was not slow in reviving. Ship-building, which had been exceedingly depressed during the war, revived again, and scenes of busy toil appeared once more, while the spreading sails of commerce took every breeze.

The principal merchants of that day, were John White, Benjamin

Willis, James Duncan, James Duncan, Jr., and Isaac Osgood. The elder Duncan was a son of George Duncan, one of the early settlers of Londonderry, and his son, James, Jr., became a leading merchant and manufacturer, extending his business to Lebanon, N. H., where he had an extensive business, and was a man of a high order of business talent and business enterprise. This family became established here at an early day, and continues to be represented in the religious, social, and business interests of the town. Mr. Osgood, a native of Andover, was long identified with the commercial and business interests; and at his decease, his business passed to the hands of his son, Peter Osgood, at whose death the business activity of the family ceased.

At this time, 1790, the first United States census was taken, which showed the population of this town to be 2,408, with a valuation of $1,519,411. The mails were carried by post-riders on horseback; and the mail-coach, making only occasional trips, was the only means of public conveyance, and it was a twelve hours' journey to Boston, as the late Robert Willis had occasion to realize, by a journey thither with his mother, for the express purpose of being vaccinated. A post-office was first established here, Jan. 1, 1795, 155 years after the settlement of the town, and John Wingate appointed postmaster.

The stage-coach was a novelty and a wonder, gazed at by boys on the highways, and women at the windows; and its approach, announced by the jingling of a bell suspended from the neck of one of the leaders, was the occasion for the shout of "THE STAGE," "THE STAGE," and a general halting from labor, and a gazing at the wonder; and the "knights of the whip," who held the "ribbons," were usually the most popular men in the country.

Every interest of a public nature received attention. The poor were cared for as best they could be, and the unpleasant ordeal of annually selling their support to the *lowest bidder*, soon gave way to the establishment of the well-ordered almshouse, where they could in some degree realize the pleasant relations of family union.

Education received early attention, and a code of regulations for schools was established. Among the things of the first importance was "that in reading they may be taught to observe the Stops and points, notes of affection and interrogation, accenting and Emphasizing," and an answer brought daily "out of the catechism." The master was also "recommended to exclude corporeal punishment from the school, and particularly, that he never inflict it on females."

Of this people, Dr. Dwight said, after visiting this town about this time: "The manners of the inhabitants, in general, are very civil and becoming. Those of the most respectable are plain, frank, easy and unaffected. Both the ladies and gentlemen are well-bred and intelligent; and recommend themselves not a little to the esteem and attachment of a traveller."

An almost constant conflict had imbued the people with a military spirit, not destined to lapse into indifference, or die. Military organizations were kept up, and the "training field" became an institution; and the "train-band" were allowed a quarter of a pound of powder each, for sham-fight on muster days, which the town refused to increase, deeming that quantity "sufficient for such sport."

An event of great historic interest was the visit of George Washington, the President of the United States and Father of his country, to this town in 1789, while making his tour through New England. It had been heralded that he was to pass this way, on his return from Portsmouth, and the announcement that a change of programme would take him to Concord, N. H., instead of here, sadly disappointed the people. Knowing that he was surely to visit Exeter, Rev. Gyles Merrill and Jonathan Payson, with their daughters, Sally Merrill and Sally White Payson, started for Exeter, and on their way met the distinguished company, who had finally concluded to come to Haverhill. The president journeyed in an open carriage drawn by four horses, accompanied by his private secretary, Maj. Jackson, and a single servant, Mr. Lear, riding in advance, on a beautiful white charger. Meeting the throng which followed the president, the young ladies were jostled and overturned in their carriage, and, though uninjured, their misfortune attracted the attention of the president and called forth expressions of congratulation over their escape from harm.

Preceding him was a volunteer courier to announce his approach. The single horseman rode *bare-headed;* with one hand he guided his plunging steed, while in the other he bore a trumpet, whose shrill blasts aroused the people, supplemented by the shout, "Washington is coming! Washington is coming!" The parish bell was rung, and all the people were aroused. The village schoolmaster suddenly ejaculated, "School's dismissed," and away the nimble urchins ran to catch glimpses of the hero and his attending retinue. A cavalcade of horsemen were at once in line, embracing the first men of Haverhill, who advanced to meet the distinguished visitors and escort them to town, which they entered at half-past two o'clock, November 4th.

His headquarters were made at Harrod's Tavern, located on the site now occupied by the city hall. On alighting he was presented to many of the most prominent citizens, and, after a brief rest, spent the afternoon in looking about the town. He called on Mr. John White, whose daughter-in law had often visited his residence in Philadelphia, with whom he took a social glass of wine. He also called on Sheriff Bartlett, who, with his deputies, had aided in escorting him through the county. He wore a drab surtout, then a fashionable color, and a military hat. His tall, straight form and majestic tread, threw about him an air of dignity, and commanded respect.

Visiting such manufactories as had then been established, among them Col. Blodgett's duck factory, he expressed his interest in them, and extended his line of observation up Merrimac Street to what is now called Washington Square, when his passing remark, "Haverhill is the pleasantest village I have passed through," was accepted as a high compliment at that time, and has descended down the line of the generations as the inspiring unction of attachment to what is now the bustling and beautiful amphitheatre city.

At an eligible point, near Little River, he had an unobstructed view of the Merrimac valley for miles, embracing the Saltonstall residence, now the Duncan estate, which led him to exclaim, "Beautiful! beautiful!"

The plane-trees which Hugh Talent, the Irish cobbler and "village fiddler," had planted in 1739, were there with luxuriance of growth, and he pronounced it "a most charming and picturesque location for a home." This visit and the landscape observation have been immortalized in charming lines of Whittier, from which are the following extracts:

"And he stood up in his stirrups,
Looking up and looking down
On the hills of Gold and Silver,
Rimming round the little town.

. . . . . .

And he said, the landscape sweeping,
Slowly with his ungloved hand,
I have seen no prospect fairer
In this goodly Eastern land.

Then the bugles of his escort
Stirred to life the cavalcade;
And that head, so bare and stately,
Vanished down the depths of shade."

Returning to his quarters, he received the visits of the people in the most democratic manner, and was especially cordial to the lads and lasses who thronged around him. Two misses he drew to him and gave them his gloves to mend, in return for which he bestowed on each a kiss. A young miss, who was thoughtful enough to use the *warming-pan*, the "luxury of the period," in taking the chill from his bed before his retiring, he also paid in the same coin. To a young lad, who insisted on seeing him after retiring to his room for the night, his ideal being that he was a god, he said, "I am George Washington, my lad; but I am only a *man*."

He left town about sunrise on the following morning, and the militia were called out for inspection by their commander-in-chief, while all were anxious to extend to him every mark of consideration and respect. While waiting at the ferry for a boat to bear him over the river, an incident occurred which proved the depth of his remembrance for the soldiers who had been with him in the great struggle for independence. "Bart. Pecker," a faithful soldier from Haverhill, in the war of the Revolution, and for some time one of the famous "Washington Life Guards," was there, and determined to see his great commander. Poverty and a too strong attachment to his cups, rendered him in the judgment of the people unpresentable, but "Bart" said he *knew* Washington, and must see him. With a sudden dash he opened a way through the resisting crowd, extended his hand, and exclaimed, "General, how do you do?" Washington knew the voice, and, turning to him, grasped his hand, replying, "Bart, is this you?" Quietly dropping a gold coin into the hand of the rejoicing, but demoralized old veteran, he bade him a cordial "good-by" and took his departure. In his diary he made a long entry, descriptive of his visit here, which concludes with the remark, "The inhabitants of this small village were well disposed to welcome me to it by every demonstration which could evince their joy."

Another soldier from this town, who was closely connected with the army under Washington's immediate command, was James Walker. He was an ensign in a company raised here, and commanded a detachment, having charge of the boats of one division of the army in cross-

ing the Delaware, on the night previous to the battle of Trenton, Dec. 25, 1776. He died, Feb. 8, 1846, at the age of ninety-eight.

The traditional story of his services at that time eomes down well authenticated, and is of interest. Washington was disposed to give Cornwallis battle, and a majority of his staff agreed with him, but Gen. Mereer hesitated. Washington ealled Walker to him and asked him to reconnoitre the enemy and ascertain his strength, his term of enlistment having just before expired, and he was not then a soldier. He consented, and engaged himself to a Dutch farmer to build wall for a day. While at work he noted the movements of the British forces, and for every company or battalion which were on parade he broke off a small stick and put in his pocket. At night he placed the sticks in the hand of Gen. Mereer, with the proper explanation, which revealed the strength of the opposing army. Washington saw that he was not safe for a moment, and, ordering the camp-fires to be brilliantly lighted, eommenced the movement of his army across the Delaware. The result of this was escape from certain disaster by risking an engagement with Cornwallis, and a victory at Trenton, which revived the drooping spirit of the eountry, and was in large measure the culminating event and turning-point of the struggle. The success of James Walker, as a spy, undoubtedly saved Washington's army from disaster.

Capt. William Baker, another native of this town, while at work in a distillery in Boston, in 1775, was the first man who knew of the intended British expedition to Concord, and gave the information to the eountry through Adjt. Devins. He was subsequently in the Continental army, and breveted captain. Nehemiah Emerson was also one of the first to march, April 19, 1775, entering as a private, and rising to the rank of captain. He served through the whole war, only visiting his home once during the whole time.

So prominent was Haverhill in the Revolution, by the manifestation of the patriotie spirit of its citizens, and by the bravery and fidelity of its soldiers, that it took high rank with Washington, and became prominent, in his estimation, as a leading town in the Commonwealth.

The year 1800 opened with clouds, and the whole nation was clothed in weeds, by reason of the death of the immortal and beloved Washington, which took place Dee. 14, 1799. Everywhere the demonstrations of sorrow were abundantly and sincerely expressed, in which this town took a prominent part. Gen. Brickett early moved, with others, in calling a public meeting to take measures for a proper observance of the event, and a committee of twelve was appointed "to determine in what manner it should be done." An eloquent eulogy was pronounced by the Rev. Abiel Abbot, and Washington's farewell address publicly read, both of which were printed and distributed among the people.

The march of improvement in the town was still onward, and in 1801 the Haverhill Aqueduct Company was formed, the leading spirits in the enterprise being Benjamin Willis, Jr., Nathan Ayer, Samuel Walker, Jonathan Souther, and Jesse Harding, which was granted authority by the Legislature to take the waters of Round Pond, although opposition was made to it when the project was first started, in 1798. The water was first conducted in log pipes, whieh, after about forty years, were exchanged for iron pipes, and, in all, $100,000 invested in the enterprise. It was then estimated that this pond was capable of supplying a population of twenty thousand, but the experienee of after days proved its unsoundness. Sinee that time the log pipes have all been exchanged for iron ones, which have been extended to nearly all parts of the city, the waters of Great Pond and Plug Pond being added to the supply. Probably fifteen miles of pipe have been laid, starting with two eight-inch mains extending from Round or Pentucket Lake, and a twelve-inch main from Plug, or Lake Saltonstall. There are about 2,000 takers and 600,000 gallons of water used daily.

In 1801 "Fish Wardens" were first chosen, and, for the first time, a list of voters and a list of names for jurymen were made out. In 1803 Ward Eaton obtained liberty to erect hay-scales, and an annual financial statement of the town first appeared at this time. In 1804 the Fourth of July was first publicly celebrated. There had been previous celebrations of a private nature by patriotie gentlemen; the first, of which there appears to be any record, being in the shape of "a dinner at Lieut. Bradley's Tavern, followed by a number of toasts."

In 1808 the town memorialized Congress, in eonneetion with many other towns, for the repeal of the Embargo Act. About this time the Russian brick stoves were introduced here in place of the old provincial fire-place, but they were soon supplanted by the Yankee invention of east-iron ones, though they were too costly and too much of a luxury to be possessed by any but the wealthy, their value being about $75. About this time musie began to be an aceomplishment, in which those possessed of the gift began to take an interest, and in 1812 the first musical society was formed, with J. H. Hovey secretary, and was called "The Haverhill Musical Society." Improvement in "Sacred Music" was the object of the organization. The first singing school was kept by Samuel W. Ayer in the First Parish schoolhouse.

In 1812 the notes of war again bceame the unwelcome sounds breaking upon the cars of the people. A recruiting-office was opened at Greenleaf's tavern, where "men of Patriotism, Courage and Enterprise" were called to enlist. Notwithstanding there were many eitizens who condemned the second war with England, as uncalled for and ill advised, that view of the situation did not prevent them from uniting in prompt and vigorous efforts to sustain and strengthen the government in measures of resistanee and defence.

When the call was made for soldiers the response was prompt, and at a town-meeting held with twenty-four hours' notiee, the substanee of the emphatie vote was, "no man's poverty shall bar his patriotism"; the meaning of which was, that not only "lives," but "fortunes and sacred honor," were pledged for the maintenance of that nationality whieh the blood and treasure, freely poured out in the Revolution, had so dearly purchased. Haverhill stood in the front rank of patriotism and devotion to country.

July 25, 1814, Col. John Johnson, of East Haverhill, received orders to draft for his regiment, eonsisting of the companies of Haverhill and Methuen, fifteen additional men, and to immediately march to Newburyport, armed and equipped with three days' provisions. Sept. 9th he received orders for the company of light infantry of Haverhill to march to Boston. This order was received on Saturday evening, the company was ordered out on the "Church Green" on Sunday afternoon, and early Monday morning were on their way to Boston.

The news of peace, not long after this, was most agreeable to the people of this town, and it is recorded that "the grateful tidings were welcomed with loud and repeated huzzas; by the peal of bells and the thunder of artillery and musketry, all the inhabitants giving themselves to pleasure." A procession was formed, prayers said, anthems sung, mingled with the *feu de joie* of infantry, and brilliant illuminations in all parts of the town were added in the evening, closing with brilliant fire-works from the bridge, constituting the sum and life of the festivities.

Once more the advent of peace came, with its inspiring power, showing that—

> "Peace hath her victories
> No less renowned than war."

The basis had already been laid for commeree and for mechaнical industries, but the possession of the seas by the enemy for several years had crippled every interest. When peace was restored there came an instantaneous revival of eommereial and manufaeturing interests, whieh swept onward and upward with a rapidity hitherto unknown to the people, and the resourees of the country became surprisingly developed.

Dwellings and stores were erected, and among them the Baunister Block, a large brick pile near the river; school-houses were also erected in the outlying parishes; ship-building revived again and eontinued brisk for some time; new streets were laid out and a new stage company soon organized, and every interest moved with vigor for a succession of years.

In 1820 Bailey Bartlett, Moses Wingate, and Charles White were chosen to the Constitutional Convention. In 1821 the Fourth of July was celebrated in an imposing manner, James Duncan, Esq., reading the Declaration of Independenee, and James H. Duncan, Esq., delivering the oration, followed by a dinner and patriotic toasts at Kendall's Hotel.

The new enterprises of Alfred Kittredge, then an aetive man, made their appearanee at a little later date, of whieh mention is elsewhere made, and the navigation of the river by a steamboat was attempted in 1828, for the first time. In 1831 Mr. B. L. Miriek, a dry-goods clerk with John Dow, issued a prospectus for a history of Haverhill, whieh was published that year. Of him Chase says: "Miriek was a man of considerable literary talent, and wrote some excellent poetry. In 1832 he was for a few months editor of the 'Middlesex Telegraph' at Lowell, after whieh he engaged in the dry-goods business in Boston, and subsequently in Bangor, Me." By order of the General Court, the seleetmen were ordered to make a survey of the town in 1830,

from which Mr. James Gale published a lithographic map in 1832. In 1835 the town voted to build a work-house at the town farm. The census of 1837 indicated a population of 4,726, an increase of 814 since 1830.

In 1833, while President Jackson was making his tour through New England, it was expected he would visit this town, and vigorous efforts were made to secure that result. Ira Noyes, and Edwin Harriman, were the committee to extend the invitation, and the selectmen, with a large number of other citizens, were intrusted to make the necessary preparation for his reception. Triumphal arches were erected, buildings decorated, and flags given to the breeze, but the sudden illness of the President caused him to change his route, greatly to the sorrow and disappointment of the people.

The subject of railway communication with Boston, was at this date becoming a matter of interest and discussion. The extension of the road from Andover to Haverhill was proposed, and the first meeting to promote that enterprise was held at the Eagle House, Jan. 4, 1834, at which the Hon. James H. Duncan presided, and Alfred Kittredge, Esq., was secretary. The utmost favor was extended to the enterprise, and practical measures adopted, which resulted in the building of the road, and its formal opening to Bradford, on the 26th of October, 1837, which was celebrated by a free ride to the stockholders, and a collation at Academy Hall, attended by sentiments and speeches.

About this time, the disturbing subject of slavery began to come before the people, and the question was agitated with much earnestness. This was the opening of the long conflict which finally culminated in the civil war of 1861, and some mention of the incidents of this great struggle will be found in another chapter.

In 1847, there were forty-two shoe manufacturers, and fourteen tanners and leather dealers. The extension of the streets called for their designation by names, which was then systematically done for the first time, the names, hitherto, having been, in most instances, informally applied. The disposal of the surplus revenue became a matter of much importance, in 1837, but it was satisfactorily applied for the payment of portions of the town debt, the aid of schools, &c., by recommendation of a committee, of which the Hon. James H. Duncan was chairman. In 1838, Moses E. Emerson, a citizen of the town, established the first express between here and Boston, by rail. In 1839, the Fourth of July was again celebrated with patriotic fervor. The panic and revulsion in 1837, caused depression and suffering here, as in other communities, but it was gradually overcome, and another prosperous stride ensued.

The demonstrations in the celebration of the Fourth of July had become so boisterous, and so literally fulfilling the prophetic words of Adams, that the day would be celebrated with "bonfires and illuminations," that the people began to be so much alarmed for public safety, that the town voted, in 1839, to prohibit the use of combustibles, and even crackers and squibs; but the order was hard to enforce. Immense bonfires were lighted in the streets, tar-barrels were burnt, cotton balls soaked in spirits of turpentine, were hurled, flaming, through the streets, and every variety of fire-arms used, accompanied by the wildest demonstrations of rejoicing, in the name of Liberty; and this had become the rule for successive years, but at length it became tamed to a condition of approximation to safety.

During the same year the Miller delusion had its sweep here, producing the most intense religious excitement, and protracted revival meetings had their run through several months. It was not unusual for converts to become entranced, and the meetings were sometimes continued to the gray dawn of the morning. As 1843 approached, there were some found who were expecting to be caught up "to be forever with the Lord," and actually were preparing for the flight. The religious fear and fervor was extreme, and is not likely to be again soon repeated, for the day came and passed by, leaving all things as they were.

CHAPTER XIII.

SCHOOLS — THEIR INCREASE — GROWTH OF THE TOWN—PUBLIC SPIRIT — PATRIOTISM—WAR OF THE REBELLION—PROMPT ANSWER TO THE CALL FOR SOLDIERS — LOCAL INCIDENTS OF THE WAR — SOLDIERS' MONUMENT — CITY CHARTER — CITY GOVERNMENT — PUBLIC LIBRARY — NEWSPAPER HISTORY.

The advent of 1840 appeared to mark the opening of a new period; the large increase of population had so multiplied the number of pupils in the schools that new houses were called for, as well as the enlargement of the old ones, to meet the growing wants, and the town found it necessary to largely increase its appropriations to supply the demand.

The late Isaac Ames, Esq., and Mr. John B. Garrick were the prominent teachers at that time, but the resignation of the latter gave place to Dr. John Crowell, who became principal of the School Street school, with five female assistants, for a succession of years, at length resigning to resume the practice of his profession.

In 1841 the First District High School was established, in accordance with the vote of the town; and the same year the town established a fire department, as provided for by law, and at the fires in that year firemen were, for the first time in this town, paid for their services.

The Fourth of July was this year celebrated for the first time on temperance principles, under the auspices of the "Haverhill Washingtonian Society," the Washingtonian movement, of Baltimore origin, having obtained a strong hold here, and accomplished wonders.

It was in this year that the distinguishing event of petitioning for a peaceable dissolution of the Union, by forty-four citizens of this town, took place, notice of which will be found elsewhere. The act was a stirring one, and made the town famous. "from Maine to Georgia."

In 1842 another Fourth of July was celebrated by the "Washington Street Washington Total Abstinence Society," Charles T. Woodman, Esq., delivering the oration.

In 1843 the National Anniversary was celebrated by a ladies' levee "for the benefit of the poor." In 1844 another worthy enterprise was entered into by the ladies, that of enclosing the common with a suitable fence, which was an entire success. Temperance still continued to be a vital reform, and the Independent Order of Rechabites made their appearance in 1845. The old Washingtonian Society faded out, and the "Pentucket Total Abstinence Society" took its place, but lacked vitality, and soon drew its expiring breath.

In 1846 the new "Linwood Cemetery" was publicly dedicated, and immediately after that, the improvement and restoration to order of the old burial-ground commanded attention. In this work the ladies became enthusiastically enlisted, foremost among whom were Mrs. Jeremiah Stickney and Mrs. Rufus Longley. In two years, over a thousand dollars were gathered and expended, enclosing the cemetery with an iron fence, and otherwise adorning it. Subsequently it was given the name of Pentucket Cemetery, and the two, Linwood and Pentucket, being joined, were made practically one.

In 1847 the "Fraternity of Shenstones" were organized, with Isaac Ames the president, and Thomas M. Hayes secretary. This society had an active existence for many years, and accomplished much in beautifying the town, the generation of to-day being sharers in the benefits resulting from their work.

From the settlement of the town the inhabitants had been accustomed to hold town-meetings in the parish meeting-house without charge, but time's changes found things differently ordered, which led to the proposition to erect a town hall, which was at length agreed upon, and the building erected on Main Street, on the Harrod lot, at a cost of $16,384.44, exclusive of clock and bell, both of which were secured by private contributions and a public festival.

In 1848 the building of the Newburyport and Bradford Railroad began to be agitated, and Alfred Kittredge, J. H. Duncan, Warner R. Whittier, Rufus Longley, and Caleb Hersey were chosen a committee to promote the enterprise. The same year the superintendence and laying out of the common was given to the hands of a committee, consisting of William Taggart, James H. Duncan, William Merrill, William D. S. Chase, and Thomas N. Chase.

In 1849 additional school accommodations were called for, which were promptly supplied. Not far from this time large appropriations were made for the improvement and maintenance of the fire department, which resulted in bringing into existence a force which contributed immensely to public safety, and was a credit to the town. In 1853 the town voted $300 for aiding in the celebration of the Fourth of July, which was liberally increased by private subscriptions, and a patriotic demonstration was the result. In 1853 the town was lighted for the first time with gas.

In 1854, following the usage of the olden time, the town-meeting became the arena in which to present a national question of great importance, and which was then agitating the whole country. The repeal of the Missouri Compromise was up, and a provision to that end had been introduced into the bill creating the Nebraska Territory. Hon. James H. Duncan had prepared a preamble and resolutions setting forth the facts in the case, and the solemn compact entered

into by earlier men. The measure of repeal was deprecated as a breach of public faith, and denounced as a great wrong, and the representative in Congress, Hon. N. P. Banks, requested to use his efforts to "defeat the passage of this odious and unjust provision." The resolutions were supported by Mr. Duncan in an able speech, after which they were adopted, thereby setting the town right upon a question which became the fruitful source of evil in after years.

In 1855 the question of organizing a town high school again came before the people, resulting in establishing the institution in the academy, which was purchased for that purpose. The rapid increase of the town in population caused the new school-houses which had been erected to soon become thronged with pupils, though supposed to possess great prospective capacity. The town again celebrated the Fourth of July this year, by a military parade and procession, in which the fire companies, the Masonic societies, and other organizations joined. An oration by Hon. Charles W. Upham, of Salem, a dinner, and a brilliant demonstration of fireworks in the evening, were embraced in the programme.

In 1858 there came another extension and improvement of streets, and it was in this year that Merrimac Street was paved, which was the first street paved in town. In 1860 a portion of Water Street was also improved in the same way.

The limited capacity of the town hall had become a serious annoyance, and in 1859 a new structure was earnestly demanded. Messrs. James H. Duncan, Robert G. Walker, A. A. Sargent, Moses D. George, Orenzo T. Emerson, James F. Gile, and Elbridge W. Chase were made a committee to procure plans and estimates for recommendation to the town, and on the 7th of January, 1861, their report was adopted, and the building ordered to be erected at once. A short time prior to the grand opening of the War of the Rebellion, a portion of the walls of the old structure had been demolished. Had it been otherwise, it is quite probable the new structure would not have appeared so soon. The edifice is possessed of much architectural beauty, and well supplies the wants which have had their outcome from the establishment of a city government.

The transformation of what was known as the "Fish House Lot" into a rural park and place of public resort, with a convenient stone structure upon it, was commenced in 1859, and finished in 1860. It is now in the possession of Kenoza Lake Club, the lake having been christened by that name.

The first and last general strike occurring here among shoemakers, took place early in 1860, at the time the mechanics of Lynn were committed to the same policy. About 600 were engaged in the combination, but it did not possess the elements of success, and the organization soon broke up. Since that time mechanics and manufacturers have usually understood each other pretty well, and have been able to reach satisfactory arrangements in their industrial and business connections.

The first steam mill was built here by David P. Harmon and Sewell E. Jewett, and was located near the line of the Boston and Maine Railroad. Mr. Jewett, still living, has been connected with the use and management of steam power for forty years, and is an inventor of many novelties in machinery.

The year 1860 was one big with issues; the whole nation was being rocked in the cradle of conflict, and "coming events cast their shadows before." True to the example and spirit of the fathers, Haverhill was not a whit behind the men of Revolutionary history, either in words or deeds, and before the year closed it became fearfully evident that serious work must be engaged in. Public meetings for discussion were of frequent occurrence, in which the great question between Freedom and Slavery, which was the one upon which the threatening battles were to be fought, was freely and earnestly debated, and the fire of patriotism began to burn with a brilliant flame. Martial thoughts began to be the ruling ones, and swords were ready to leap from their scabbards when the call for conflict should come.

The public ear was open to catch the rumbling, and the crashing from without; and also for the call of John A. Andrew, the great War Governor, when it should be made, summoning the gallant sons of the Old Bay State for the defence of Liberty and the maintenance of the Union, made sacred to their hearts by the consecrating blood of the fathers. The time of waiting was short, for on the 16th of January, 1861, the fourth general order was issued, which called for an answer.

In response thereto, Capt. C. P. Messer called a meeting of the "Hale Guards" on the 24th, which was responded to by every member but two. Every member present voted to hold himself in readiness, subject to call, and the two absent ones were in harmony with that action. A committee consisting of Thomas T. Salter, James M. Palmer, and I. N. Smith presented resolutions covering all questions of necessity, and an appeal was turned back to the people for aid in preparing for the foreshadowed emergency, which appeal was responded to in the most hearty manner. The ranks were not full, but they soon became so, nine applying for membership at the first meeting.

On the 19th of April, just eighty-six years after the Battle of Lexington, the constantly expected call came, which found these men ready to respond to the momentary notice. Suddenly, on the afternoon of that memorable Saturday, the implements of toil were dropped; cool-headed, warm-hearted, patriotic men were seen hurrying to and fro in the streets, in preparation for the march. The bells were rung, agreeably to prior arrangement, and the whole town notified of the event; children were relieved from school, by direction of their parents, to witness the historic scene of the departure of the first soldiers to battle, to be absent for the term of their first enlistment, or perhaps forever. With streaming tears the hasty "God bless you" dropped from the lips of thousands, and before evening the brave men were *en route* for Washington.

Previous to their departure the people assembled at their armory on Merrimac Street, where the volunteers were addressed by Hon. Alfred Kittredge, who presented to them, in behalf of the citizens, a purse of $1,477.50, to be used for their necessities. Thomas F. Barr, Esq., in behalf of their fellow-citizens, presented them with a silk American flag; and an address was delivered before them by Rev. R. H. Seeley, D. D., and each member presented with a copy of the New Testament. Following the address were words of good cheer from Hon. E. J. M. Hale, whose name the company bore.

The surviving members of the old Haverhill Light Infantry, with Captain, Nathan Burrill; 1st Lieut., Ezekiel Hale; 2d Lieut., Andrew Johnson; Sergeant, J. H. LeBosquet; officers improvised for the occasion, organized at the counting-room of Moses Nichols, Merrimac Street, and escorted the "Guards" to the common, where prayer was offered by Rev. Benjamin Wheeler, and they were addressed by Hon. George Cogswell, of Bradford. From thence they were escorted to the depot, under the marshalship of Dr. William Cogswell, taking their departure amid the cheers and tears of friends.

From that hour the excitement became intense, and no utterance of indifference to the success of the loyal cause found favor with the popular sentiment. Deep feeling had been generated by articles which had appeared in the "Essex Banner"; the office was surrounded by a menacing throng, asking for a display of the American flag, and copies of the paper and an effigy of the editor were burned in the street, before the demonstrations ended.

The enlistment of this company was for three months, and they were immediately stationed at Washington, which brought them into the Bull Run battle, where the first Haverhill man, Hiram S. Collins, was killed. James A. Shaw was wounded, and taken prisoner at the same time.

Immediately following this, came the thought of preparation for inevitable war. On the 2d of May succeeding, a meeting was called in Music Hall, to make provisions for the families of soldiers, and to aid soldiers in procuring uniforms. A resolution, offered by Hon. Alfred Kittredge, proposing to raise ten thousand dollars for the aid of volunteers, was passed, and the following committee appointed to provide for families: Alfred Kittredge, J. B. Swett, George W. Lee, E. D. Bailey, Jacob How, Levi Taylor, E. J. Sawins, Charles W. Chase, Moses E. Emerson, and George W. Kelley.

Further resolutions were offered: first, that as the fathers pledged, so we pledge "our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor," for the support of the government and the maintenance of the laws and the Union in its integrity; second, that we commend the President for promptness, energy, and firmness, thus securing the hearts of the people, and the cordial support of all friends of free government and free institutions; third, that in this contest we know no parties, but are for "our country, one and inseparable, now and forever."

The ladies of Haverhill were alive to a sense of their duty, and on the 22d of April, 1861, a Relief Society was organized in the chapel of the North Congregational Church, but with no just conception of the magnitude of the work before them, or the extent of its duration. On the 3d of May following, it took the name of the "Soldiers' Relief Society of Haverhill and Bradford," adopting articles of association. In this work the ladies of the parishes and Ayer's Village joined with hearty good-will, and are deserving of honorable mention. The officers were: President, Mrs. E. P. Hill; Vice-President, Mrs. James Noyes; Secretary and Treasurer, Mrs. Edmund Fletcher.

Subsequently, Mrs. S. M. Coburn, Mrs. Daniel Harriman, Mrs. James H. Duncan, Mrs. E. P. Minot, and Mrs. J. T. McCollum, were Vice-Presidents, with Miss Mary Stickney and Mrs. I. E. Chase serving portions of the time as Secretary and Treasurer; Miss Anna Porter also filled the office of Assistant Secretary. In addition to this, every religious society had its directress, making the organization full, strong, and effective.

This powerful organization existed from the commencement till the close of the war. Through all the years, till the last one, Mrs. E. P. Hill was the chief officer, at which time Mrs. Daniel Harriman became her successor. This occurred when one of those sectarian tornadoes, which sometimes sweep through communities and organizations, had its roll and tumble, only to be remembered as an accident, to escape from which, for a long succession of years, in such an organization, would be too much to expect. Serious evil, however, to the vital interest did not come; the administration was always efficient, and its work among the noblest and most effective of all the charities and labors of love which surrounded the soldiers from this town in the long and terrible struggle in which they participated. A knitting society also existed as an auxiliary to the main organization.

The society also received valuable aid from Count L. B. Schwabe, who spent much time here in the interest of the soldiers. It was always in harmonious co-operation with the authorities of the town, and their first work was to supply clothing and comforts to the volunteers. First were the Hale Guards, company G, Capt. C. P. Messer: next came company D, Capt. A. J. How; company F, Capt. Luther Day; company E, Capt. McNamara. Capt. Day's company they supplied with a full uniform, and two other companies with undress uniforms.

When the bloody struggle of Antietam came, the suffering ones of the 35th Regiment, in which was company G, Capt. Gibson, found in this society a succoring hand, and so was it with those in companies F and G, Capts. Samuel W. Duncan and George W. Edwards, of the 50th Regiment, suffering in an uncongenial climate. Capt. E. F. Tompkins's company of the 17th, Capt. Boynton's of the 60th, received attention, as did all others whose locality and needs were known. The camp and home were practically united. While none of "our men" were forgotten, the society found means to make large contributions to the "Sanitary Commission;" to the New England Rooms, New York; to the Cooper-Shop Hospital, at Philadelphia; to the Massachusetts Soldiers' Relief Society, at Washington, and occasionally to others. When the disaster came to our arms on the Peninsula on the first of July, 1862, the cry for help coming up from the swamps of the Chickahominy was responded to with equal promptness, and the co-operation of the citizens was not exceeded by the benevolence and patriotism of any other community. With all the labors and petty trials incident to such an association, its service is crowned with blessed memories.

The return home of the Hale Guards, after a three months' campaign, and their passage through the Bull Run battle, brought into the community a fresh influx of lively loyal sentiment, and there was less patience with expressions of sympathy for the rebels and the rebel cause. The "Essex County Democrat" had been quite free in those utterances, and friends had warned the editor, Mr. Ambrose L. Kimball, of his imprudence, but he chose to be his own counsellor. On Monday evening, Aug. 19, 1861, a large crowd of men assembled at the residence of Mr. Kimball, on Main Street, took him into the street, and conducted him to the front of the Eagle House, where they made a halt. They then requested him to retract his offensive sayings, which he refused to do, and he was at once ordered to remove his clothing from his body, after which they applied a coat of tar and feathers, placed him on a rail, bearing him to the front of his office, where he was required to give three cheers for the Union. He was then remounted and taken to Bradford, and from there returned to the front of the Eagle House, where he was required to kneel down, hold up his hand, and repeat the following: "I am sorry for what I have done, and I promise I will not publish anything more against the North and in favor of secession as long as I live." After this he was returned to his home. Although Mr. Kimball, and his guard of friends, proposed resistance with pistols, they were too soon disarmed to use them, and nothing of violence occurred beyond what is here described. The event was one of those outbursts, through the guards of law and order, when the subtle violence which men do to principles and the rights of man is of that peculiar nature which invites spontaneity of redress. The wave of violence had its sweep, and all was calm again. The actors were at once again in their orbits of order, and the offender stepped down from his position, and was seen no more. It is a hopeful indication that the tendency of the spirit of the age is in the direction of kindness, of toleration of thought, opinion, and action, and that outbursts like the one here recorded are very rare, and the disposition to repeat them not inclined to become a fixture in the tempers of men. The records of the past show that our patriot fathers had a kindred way of dealing with offenders, and from them succeeding generations may have been inclined to pattern.

The town was fully committed to the country's cause, and the memory of every soldier who fell was precious to them. They passed resolutions declaring that they recognized in the names of those who on the battle-field and by the wayside have fallen in defence of their country, martyrs to the sacred cause of liberty, and pledging themselves to cherish their names and perpetuate them to posterity. Of such a people, it could not be expected that they would submit to the inculcation of sentiments exactly the reverse of these without exerting themselves to secure silence, especially in the midst of a raging sanguinary conflict. Their first request was for silence, which being refused, they were determined to enforce it.

On the 19th of July, 1862, the town voted $100 bounty to soldiers mustered into the service, and recruiting offices were ordered to be opened. The families of soldiers were to be provided for according to law, and the names of all the soldiers were ordered to be printed on a "Roll of Honor," and kept standing during the war.

At another meeting, August 15th, a bounty of $200 was voted for nine months' men, and on the 12th of September it was again voted to pay a bounty of $200 for a number not exceeding three companies.

Early in July, 1862, intelligence was received of the death of Maj. Henry Jackson How, who fell in the memorable struggle before Richmond. The loss of so brave and true a soldier was a source of much sorrow, and to his friends an occasion for the deepest grief.

At the September town-meeting resolutions were presented declaring that "Liberty had lost an heroic champion, the country a gallant leader, and the town a chivalric, noble, and generous citizen," and the sympathy of the citizens was tendered to the family. James H. Carleton, Esq., was also authorized to request of the family of Maj. How his battle-sword as a legacy to the town, to be placed near the speaker's stand, and inscribed, "The Battle Sword of Henry Jackson How, who fell in front of Richmond while defending the Constitution and flag of his country." Maj. How fell at the battle of Glendale, before Richmond, June 30, 1862.

Provision for soldiers and soldiers' families then embraced much of the business of the town, while promptness in furnishing men to fill all quotas was the rule. Aug. 8, 1863, a meeting was held to make preparations for the reception of the 50th Regiment and the firing of a salute. March 12, 1864, Addison B. Jaques withdrew from his position as town clerk, after a service of twenty years, to which was extended the response of complimentary resolutions.

On the 16th of April, 1864, the town voted to pay a bounty of $125 in gold to fill the quota under the last call. Objection was made to the payment in gold, many believing it to be in violation of the statute of the Commonwealth, and anticipated resistance to the payment of taxes, which would lead to litigation. A petition was presented, signed by James H. Duncan, and twenty-seven others, asking for an injunction restraining the selectmen and town treasurer from paying bounties in gold, which was granted by the court. This gave rise to much unpleasantness, from which trouble was apprehended, and on one occasion there were indications of violence, Mr. Duncan's house being surrounded by a threatening mob, but the critical moment passed by without any very serious demonstration, and the matter was soon quieted, the bounties being paid as heretofore. This was the only important occasion when his townsmen refused to listen to him. Confidence, however, soon returned, and he again became their trusted counsellor.

On the 6th of March, 1865, the town authorized continued enlistments in *anticipation* of a call of the President, paying such bounties as were authorized by the Commonwealth. Not long after this the war ended by the surrender of Gen. Lee and the rebel army, an event which gave rise to heartfelt rejoicing, and the public thought was once more given to peace.

Attention was early given to recording the names of the patriotic citizens of Haverhill, who had fallen in battle in defence of the country, for inscription on a memorial tablet, and very soon the subject of erecting a soldiers' monument began to be agitated. A committee, of which James H. Carleton, J. V. Smiley, E. T. Ingalls, O. H. Roberts, J. P. Gilmore, Alfred Kittredge, and E. P. Hill were members, were chosen to procure plans and estimates. The committee to consider

the place of locating it, were James H. Duncan, Wm. Taggart, and Caleb Hersey.

After much deliberation the site was fixed upon, at the junction of Main and Pond streets. In March, 1868, the committee reported a plan of monument at a cost of $6,000, and $1,000 for enclosing the same, which was accepted, and James H. Carleton, J. V. Smiley, C. P. Messer, Henry T. Fitts, J. K. Jenness, D. Smith Kimball were constituted the building committee. A contract was made with Charles H. Weeks, of Haverhill, to become the sculptor and architect, who at once entered upon its construction.

This memorial to the memory of the patriotic dead is twenty-six feet high. Its base is two and a half feet high and ten feet in diameter, the plinth is two feet in height, with buttresses surmounted by inverted cannon six feet four inches in length; the second die is five feet ten inches high; and all surmounted by a statue eight feet four inches in height, representing a volunteer soldier, with musket at parade rest. The base is of Rockport granite, and the other portions of Italian marble, the whole weighing forty tons, and is enclosed by an iron fence sixty-six feet in circumference.

Chiselled upon the tablets are the names of those who fell in the great conflict, accompanied by the following inscription: "In grateful tribute to the memory of those who, on land and on the sea, died, that the Republic might live, this monument is erected by the citizens of Haverhill, A. D. 1869."

One hundred and eighty-six names are now upon it, and there is space for about fifty more. The completion of the monument was followed by its formal presentation to the town by J. V. Smiley, in behalf of the building committee, and was received in behalf of the town by Nathan S. Kimball, chairman of the board of selectmen, of which Levi Taylor and David D. Chase were members. Other gentlemen at times during the war officiating on the board, were the late Robert G. Walker, A. A. Sargent, and David Boynton. These constituted the successive boards of war magistrates of the town during the continuance of the conflict. The dedication of the monument, with imposing ceremonies, immediately followed its presentation, July 5, 1869, the address being delivered by Hon. George B. Loring, of Salem.

The number of men furnished by Haverhill for the war was about thirteen hundred, giving a surplus of eighty-five men in excess of all claims. Of that number seventy-three were commissioned officers, embracing six field officers, five of whom were credited to its quota, and one to Boston, as follows: Gen. William F. Bartlett; this officer was captain in the 20th regiment, where he lost a leg in the service. He afterwards raised the 49th (nine months') Regiment, becoming its colonel, serving in the Department of the Gulf, where he was again wounded, before Port Hudson, on which occasion his bravery commanded the admiration of both armies. Recovering a second time, he became the colonel of the 57th, and, June 27, 1864, was commissioned brigadier-general of volunteers. Subsequently he was breveted major-general for brave and meritorious services in the field.

The other five were Col. Wm. B. Greene, of the First Heavy Artillery, Col. Jones Frankle, a German officer, of the Second Massachusetts Artillery; this officer was captain in the 14th Regiment, major in the 17th Regiment, and came out of the war brigadier-general of volunteers by brevet; Col. Carlos P. Messer, of the 50th Regiment; Maj. Luther Day, of the 17th Regiment; Maj. Andrew Jackson How, of the 19th Regiment, who fell before Richmond; Lieut. Col. Henry Splaine, of the 17th Regiment.

During the four years of the war the town raised and expended for the support of the same, exclusive of State aid, one hundred and eighteen thousand one hundred and thirty-five dollars and forty-nine cents ($118,135.49).

The amount raised and paid out for State aid to the families of volunteers, afterwards refunded by the Commonwealth, was as follows: In 1861, $8,941.20; in 1862, $29,316.82; in 1863, $31,284.22; in 1864, $26,000; in 1865, $19,000; making a total amount, $114,542.24.

On the 8th of January, 1869, occurred the death of Hon. James H. Duncan, at the age of seventy-five years, an event much deplored. He had from his youth been identified with the town in its business, political, social and religious interests, and was highly esteemed for his many qualities of head and heart, which caused him to be leaned upon as a leader, counsellor, and common friend.

At the annual town-meeting, March 1, 1869, N. S. Kimball, E. P. Hill and J. B. Swett were made a committee to prepare a series of memorial resolutions to the memory of their late honored citizen and friend. These resolutions recognizing the event as the order of Providence, accepted the stroke as falling upon one whose entire life had been spent here, identified with all the interests of the community; also expressing grateful remembrance of him as a prudent counsellor and common friend, who had at length been gathered to the fathers "like a shock of corn fully ripe"; at the same time bearing sympathy to the family in their affliction, uniting common sorrow with private grief over the event which was a public loss as well as a private heartfelt bereavement.

In 1867 the Legislature granted a city charter to the town, but the following census failed to show the requisite number of inhabitants, and the measure failed. On the 12th of September, 1868, the town applied for a re-enactment of the city charter if 12,000 inhabitants should be found, which proved to be the case, and the organic law for a city was again supplied.

On the 15th of May, 1869, the town accepted the city charter by a ballot of 671 yeas to 141 nays, and on Sept. 1, 1869, the town accepted an Act of the Legislature to unite Bradford with Haverhill in a city, by a vote of 212 affirmative to 67 negative votes, but Bradford failed to concur, and the movement did not succeed.

On the 15th of May the town voted $1,000 to the widow of the late Joseph Burnham, a watchman of the town, who was shot in a conflict with a gang of burglars attempting to break into the Merrimack National Bank.

Following the acceptance of the city charter, the selectmen, N. S. Kimball and Phineas Ayer, divided the town into six wards, preparatory to the coming change of government, and the last town-meeting was held in the autumn of that year. On the 6th of December, 1869, at meetings held in the respective wards, the officers of the new city government were elected, as follows: Mayor, Warner R. Whittier; Aldermen, Samuel Laubham, James E. Gale, A. Washington Chase, R. Stuart Chase, L. V. Spaulding, Levi Taylor; Councilmen, Carlos P. Messer, Moses How, Wm. A. Brooks, James F. West, E. B. Bishop, Calvin Smith, Charles W. Wentworth, Wm. L. Bass, B. F. Leighton, M. G. J. Emery, Addison B. Jaques, Daniel Fitts.

The adoption of a city charter, and the election of officers under it, opened a new era in the history of this ancient town, whose primitive record still stands in thought, clustered about by unnumbered pleasant memories.

On Monday, Jan. 3, 1870, Warner R. Whittier, the first mayor elect, appeared in the town hall, accompanied by his associate officers elect, in the presence of a large assembly of citizens, and received the oath of office, administered by Alfred Kittredge, justice of the peace; after which he proceeded to qualify the respective boards of the city council, which was followed by the delivery of his inaugural address. David B. Tenney was immediately after unanimously elected city clerk, and has been unanimously re-elected to that office at every successive election since that time. The various offices under the new government were acceptably filled, and the new power was put in motion, commanding the full confidence of the people.

The policy of the new city government proved to be a liberal one, and improvements in every department of public interest were entered upon with directness and energy. The streets and highways became greatly improved by adding new sidewalks, and paving the principal thoroughfares, and a general careful supervision established; the public schools were given particular attention, and better accommodations generously supplied; the poor department was properly watched over, and a general "budding and blossoming" appeared on every hand. Mayor Whittier was re-elected in 1871, and his successors have been: Levi Taylor in 1872, who was elected to a second term, but resigned before being qualified; J. V. Smiley, in 1873 and 1874; Alpheus Currier, in 1875; Joseph K. Jenness, in 1876 and 1877, and Nathan S. Kimball in 1878.

The distinguishing literary and educational event of the present period has been the establishment of a public library. On the twenty-ninth day of January, A. D. 1873, Hon. E. J. M. Hale addressed a communication to "His Honor the Mayor, and City Council," proposing to found a public library, and convey a lot of land on Summer Street as a site for the building, accompanied by a donation of thirty thousand dollars in money, provided an equal sum of money should be raised by the city within the term of six months. The proposition was promptly accepted, and a committee of twelve persons selected to solicit subscriptions, which resulted in securing the required conditional sum. On the 1st of August following, E. J. M. Hale, James H. Carleton, James E. Gale, James R. Nichols, R. Stuart Chase, and John L. Hobson were elected the board of trustees. A model for a library building was soon adopted, and the structure built at the cost

of $49,543.32. The edifice is at once an ornament to the city, and admirably adapted to the uses for which it was designed. The dedicatory exercises took place Nov. 11, 1875. The opening address was by Mayor Currier; the dedicatory prayer by Rev. R. H. Seeley, D. D.; and a poem, written by John G. Whittier for the occasion, was sung by the quartette of the South Congregational Church of Boston, Mrs. Julia Houston West, Mrs. J. F. Winch, and Messrs. W. J. and J. F. Winch, of Boston. A historical sketch was read by Hon. E. J. M. Hale, followed by addresses by Col. Leverett Saltonstall, Gen. W. F. Bartlett, Judge Charles Bradley, of Providence, R. I., Prof. James Thayer, of Harvard College, and Maj. Ben. Perley Poore, of Newbury. Gov. Gaston was present, but being unwell, did not speak.

Since its dedication Mr. Hale has made liberal appropriations in money, with donations of books and articles of *vertu*, and the institution now contains more than 25,000 volumes, choice in selection, together with statuary and many adornings of art. The librarian is Edward Capen, and his principal assistant Mrs. Grace A. Borges de Freitas Henriques.

Since the adoption of the city government, the city hall has been remodelled, the old high school building entirely reconstructed, a new high school building erected in 1873, on the site where Harriet Newell was born, and the Currier school-house built on Mount Washington. On every hand have appeared improvement and expansion, all bearing the impress of solid growth.

The population in the census of 1875, was 14,628; its number of dwellings, 2,643, with 3,422 families. The amount of capital invested in manufacturing was $2,234,227, and the annual value of its manufactures, $10,635,827. The assessors' valuation in 1878, was $9,580,385. There were in all 289 manufacturers, 106 of whom were shoe manufacturers.

The early toil and frugal habits of the possessors of this favored heritage laid the foundation for its future prosperity. Devotion to home, united with a patriotic fervor which caused their interests and their love to embrace the town, the Colony, the State, and their country, was enriched by the early forecast which flowered out into the conviction that religion and education were the basis and the safeguard of a free people, and those interests, from the first, commanded their watchful care. With the Bible and the Psalm-book in one hand, and the musket in the other, they said their prayers before the altar they had erected in the wilderness, and early learned to realize, with Dr. Watts, that

> "While the lamp holds out to burn
> The vilest sinner may return."

Intellect and affection, as well as muscle, found development, while genius had its birth amid the rude scenes of the earlier days, and the town at length became honored as the birth-place of Whittier, the great poet of freedom, whose love for his native acres, which he has so beautifully expressed in poetic measures, can never die:

> "Home of my fathers! . . .
> O never may a son of thine,—
> Where'er his wandering steps incline,—
> Forget the sky that bent above
> His boyhood, like a dream of love."

Haverhill has thus become poetically historic; and in painting and music, companions of the Muse, she is not without a name. Harrison L. Plummer, a son of hers, is a portrait painter of rare and peculiar genius, possessing powers as natural and unerring as instinct. Mr. O. R. Fowler, a landscape painter, has preserved to us on canvas the home of Whittier, the school-house where he was early taught, and the charming rural scene of "Country Bridge," whither the poet often retired while under the inspiration of the Muse. Within a few years there has been a great "lifting" in musical taste and culture, which has been promoted by bringing hither combinations of artists of a high order, by Mr. James F. West, a connoisseur in those matters.

Closely allied to education and a comprehensive intelligence is the Newspaper, and this agent for extending civilization soon became planted here, becoming, with the growth of years, an Institution.

The first newspaper ever printed here was "The Guardian of Freedom," published by E. Ladd and S. Bragg, continuing till 1798, when it disappeared, and was succeeded by the "Impartial Herald," which expired in 1800, giving place to "The Observer," published by Galen H. Fay. In 1804, Francis Gould became its proprietor, and its name was changed to the "Haverhill Museum," which had only two years of life. In 1808, William B. Allen established the "Merrimack Intelligencer," which passed to the hands of Burrill & Tilesston, and finally to Nathaniel Green, where it died, about 1815. This was followed by the "Essex Patriot," a Democratic paper, and the first ever published here. The Federalists were not pleased with the death of their organ and the springing up of a Democratic sprout from its ruins, and a new paper, the "Haverhill Gazette," was started by Nathan Burrill and Caleb Hersey, with Mr. Hersey as its editor. The "Gazette" ultimately absorbed the "Patriot," and the two, merged in one, became the "Haverhill Gazette and Essex Patriot," with W. Hastings, editor, and Nathan Burrill, proprietor. In 1824, the paper passed to the control of Isaac R. Howe. In 1827, it was transferred to the hands of Abijah W. Thayer, who changed its name to the "Essex Gazette," which was continued till 1835. He strongly espoused the temperance cause, and the "Essex Gazette" was the first political paper that ever became the advocate of total abstinence, and the second of any kind, either in America or the world. From a circulation of 1,000 it immediately dropped to 600. The "Gazette" then had the standing of being among the first in the county and State. The "Christian Messenger" was published for a short time by Rev. Dudley Phelps and Rev. Abijah Cross; and the "Haverhill Iris," by Edwin Harriman, was short-lived.

In July, 1834, Rev. Thomas G. Farnsworth and Eben H. Safford started the "Essex Banner and Haverhill Advertiser," a weekly Democratic paper. This journal passed through several changes, Mr. Farnsworth retiring in 1836. The late William Taggart was for some time its editor, and Mr. Safford its business manager, but in 1843 Mr. Safford became the editor and proprietor, and has remained substantially so till the present time.

In 1837, the "Essex Gazette," after several changes in ownership, and portions of the time edited by John G. Whittier, Erastus Brooks, and Dr. Jeremiah Spofford, the latter as the political editor, became the property of Dr. Spofford and John H. Harris, and again took the name of the "Haverhill Gazette." In 1840 it was again sold to William E. P. Rogers, and in 1843 it became the property of E. G. Frothingham, retaining Dr. Spofford as contributor and political editor, holding position as the organ of the Whigs. About the year 1854, E. P. Hill, then the local representative of the Boston "Traveller," on its staff of correspondence, became a contributor to the "Gazette," representing more particularly the Free Soil, or Republican idea, and remained such through the Fremont and Lincoln presidential campaigns. In 1869 Mr. Frothingham sold the paper to Alfred Kittredge, who changed it to a semi-weekly, continuing to be its proprietor and editor till his death, May 1, 1877. It was again sold in the following June to Dr. F. J. Stevens, who admitted Mr. E. P. Kimball as associate editor; and in January, 1878, it was changed to a daily and weekly, but was not a success. In the following April it was sold to Drs. O. D. Cheney and C. D. Hunking, and Mr. Amos W. Downing, its present proprietors, and is now edited by C. L. Webster and J. H. Huntington, with Apphia Howard, editorial contributor. It is Republican in tone, but touches lightly on politics.

In 1845 the "Star in the East," a religious paper, edited by Rev. H. P. Guilford, made its appearance. In 1856 the "American Citizen," a "Know-Nothing" paper, edited by John M. Harding, came to the surface; and in 1857 the "Masonic Journal" was started by George W. Chase, which was sold to Rev. Cyril Pearl, and removed to Portland, Me. The two former soon passed out of existence.

In 1859 the "Essex County Democrat" was established by D. P. Bodfish and A. L. Kimball, as a Buchanan organ, in the closing days of that administration, but was short-lived.

January 1, 1859, Z. E. Stone, formerly of the "American Citizen," Lowell, Mass., and since of the "Vox Populi" of that city, established the "Tri-Weekly Publisher," as an independent paper, which met with much favor. In 1860 it was sold to E. G. Woodward and J. M. Palmer, and in 1861 E. P. Hill became connected with it as the "*" contributor, continuing for several years, during which time the paper had a growing list. January 1, 1878, Mr. Woodward disposed of his interest to Mr. Palmer and retired. The paper was continued till last July, when, owing to a combination of adverse circumstances, its publication ceased. Its list, with the good-will, has since been sold to the "Bulletin."

July 1, 1871, the "Haverhill Daily Bulletin" was established by A. J. Hoyt & Co., and in the January following a weekly was added to it. Sept. 1, 1875, the establishment was sold to its present proprietors, Warren Hoyt and I. L. Mitchell. The existing papers, at this time, are the weekly "Essex Banner," Democratic, the daily and weekly "Gazette," and the daily and weekly "Bulletin," which are both Republican.

CHAPTER XIV.

EARLY REFORM MOVEMENTS — TEMPERANCE — ANTI-SLAVERY — THE CHURCH AND THE COME-OUTERS — MOBBING ANTI-SLAVERY LECTURERS — THE FINAL TRIUMPH OF FREEDOM — FIRE DEPARTMENT — FIRES — ARCHITECTURE — RIVER IMPROVEMENTS — STEAMBOATS — ORGANIZATIONS — THE MEN OF THE PAST, &C.

As early as 1645 the sale of intoxicating beverages was restrained by license, both as to the manner of sale and the number of places where it should be sold. "Presentment" and fines were common for selling drink in violation of law, and for excessive indulgence; and the steady purpose appears to have been to restrain the traffic within practical limits. In 1728 the town voted that two taverns were "sufficient for the town's benefit"; but it was not till a century after that date that a temperance organization made its appearance. The tendency of the traffic had been to increase; and, with the growth in population, drinking, as a social habit, became a marked and alarming evil. In 1827 nearly every West India goods trader in town sold liquors. In the summer of that year, the Rev. Mr. Hewett was the first to lecture upon the evils of intemperance. His attack upon the evil created great excitement; and, while the reform found warm supporters, a violent opposition to the movement was enlisted on the part of a large class interested in the traffic, and wedded to the habit, who thought the subject had "better be let alone."

With the opening appeal of Mr. Hewett, the reform had been established in the thought and purpose of the men who had become convinced of the necessity and practicability of the movement. An organization was soon effected, embracing Haverhill and Bradford; the first meeting being held in the chamber of Jonathan K. Smith, which was in the wooden building standing west of Haverhill Bank, on Merrimac Street, it being used at the time for evening meetings by the First Baptist Society. The Rev. George Keeley advised the church to suspend their usual evening meeting, to favor the movement. The officers of the society then formed were: President, the Rev. Gardner B. Perry, East Bradford; Vice-President, the Rev. Dudley Phelps, of the First Parish; Secretary and Treasurer, A. W. Thayer. Mr. Perry moved with moderation and prudence; while Mr. Phelps was bold, aggressive, and earnest. Mr. Thayer was equally decided and outspoken; making his appeals through the "Gazette," of which he was the editor. The stand taken by that paper was unpopular, and the circulation at once dropped from one thousand, weekly, to six hundred; but that did not change the purpose of the editor, and the work went on.

The fruit of the movement was soon seen in the abandonment of the traffic by prominent dealers. Dea. Ezra C. Ames was the first merchant to give up the traffic; becoming a zealous advocate of total abstinence, and impassioned in his appeal to his fellow-traders to abandon the business. The determined spirit of Mr. Thayer and Dea. Ames was more offensive to those differing from them in opinion than were the position and movements of the clergymen, who were expected to be in advance of laymen. So bitter was the feeling towards this reform that Messrs. Thayer and Ames were borne through the streets in effigy, and the forms placed on a raft in the river and burned. The cause remained not only unharmed, but became strengthened; and both of its early champions, thus brought to prominence, lived to witness the acceptance of the principle of total abstinence by thousands, and the abandonment of the traffic by the merchants of the town.

Following this early movement, a Youths' Temperance Association was formed, under the charge of Elias T. Ingalls as President, in 1831, which existed for many years in a flourishing condition. In 1833 a list of town officers was nominated by the reformers, whose ballots were printed on colored paper; and in 1842 the cause became so strong that emphatic temperance resolutions were adopted in town-meeting, the selectmen instructed not to license the sale of liquors, and other measures adopted to further the cause, embracing both moral and legal instrumentalities.

From that time to the present hour, there has been no permanent subsidence of interest or effort in this reform. The pulpit and press have unequivocally indorsed the movement, while the lecture-field has been constantly improved; and voluntary associations of Sons of Temperance, Good Templars, Knights of Honor, Rechabites, &c., have done much to strengthen and mould public sentiment. Of the later movements, the Reform Club of "blue ribbons" takes rank as one of the strongest moral movements which has ever appeared here. It was organized by J. K. Osgood, of Gardiner, Me., April 1, 1874, with Reuben E. Griffin, President; at once becoming an efficient power. Hon J. B. Swett became his successor, and for three years or more led the club through successive campaigns of victory; becoming the banner club of Massachusetts, and the parent of more than a score of organizations in this State and New Hampshire, and holding a membership of over four thousand. Early in its existence, a union Sunday-evening prayer-meeting was established under its auspices, supported by all religious societies, and exerting a powerful influence. It also sustains weekly meetings for lectures and conference exercises, attracting large audiences; and its anniversary celebrations are among the most popular public gatherings.

A Reformed Men's Union was organized in 1876, of which Duncan Sherwood is President; which has a large membership, and has accomplished a thorough work of reform with the class which has been gathered within its folds. Both organizations are regarded as permanently established, and very influential for good.

Another great moral and political conflict was that of anti-slavery, which really had its beginning when slavery received the sanction of colonial law, and never ceased till its overthrow was finally accomplished through the most bloody conflict the age has known. The code of laws recognizing it was written by the Rev. Nathaniel Ward, of Ipswich, father of John Ward, who was at the head of the pioneers in the settlement of Haverhill; but he wanted the institution controlled by the "law of God established in Israel concerning such persons." Slaves were not numerous in the Colony; but a few were to be found in certain sections. A small number were owned in Haverhill; and, in the town valuation as late as 1767, ten "servants for life" are enumerated, at forty shillings each. A deed of a negro slave, bearing date Haverhill, June 16, 1740, from Benjamin Emerson to Nathaniel Cogswell, conveying his "negrow Boy seser," in consideration of "one Hundred pounds paid in hand," was in 1860 in the possession of William G. Brooks, Esq., of Boston, showing that traffic in human flesh was once carried on here to a limited extent. A few slaves were also owned in the Merrimac valley; but the public sentiment against the ownership of that kind of property was early developed, and in 1766 the agitation for the abolition of the slave-trade found strong supporters in this section. In 1775 it became a disturbing element in the church; continuing to increase till, in 1832, an anti-slavery society came into existence.

This town was not far behind; for, April 3, 1834, an anti-slavery society was formed here, of which Hon. Gilman Parker was President; A. W. Thayer, Recording Secretary; and John G. Whittier, Corresponding Secretary. - This was followed by the organization of a female anti-slavery society, and several similar combinations in different parts of the town. The Essex County Anti-slavery Society next appeared, June 10, 1834, of which the Rev. Gardner B. Perry was President, and John G. Whittier, Corresponding Secretary. A co-operating force was found in the persons of William Lloyd Garrison, and Isaac Knapp, of Newburyport, Joshua Coffin, of Newbury, and others. The logic of Garrison and the poetry of Whittier soon made the valley ring with the sentiment of liberty, which was the sentiment of the age.

The utterances and movements of these men attracted kindred spirits, and the agitation soon became general. The pulpit and press began to speak out; but an open hostility to the reform soon made its appearance, which in large measure silenced both pulpit and press. When this happened, a class of reformers who would not be silenced made their appearance, and were known as "Come-outers." Very soon newspapers appeared specially devoted to the defence of the cause. About this time George Thompson, of England, visited this country to advocate the cause. While lecturing in Concord, N. H., he was attacked by a mob, and driven away. He fled to this town; and was sheltered and protected by John G. Whittier, for several days and nights, against the fury of his pursuers. The sentiment of freedom grew strong, however, by agitation; and in 1835 Mr. Thompson lectured in the Centre Church. A hostile and bitter spirit was generated; and an effigy was set up on the common, placarded "Abolitionist," where it remained during the day, and was blown up with powder and burned at night. About this time, William Savory, a well-known abolitionist, residing on Merrimac Street, not far from the site of the Masonic Temple, was threatened with violence by a howling crowd gathered about his house.

The next mob was also in 1835, attacking an assembly gathered in the South Church, Washington Square, to hear Samuel J. May. This was a demonstration of great violence. Stones were thrown through the windows, and a cannon planted in the street, which was

to be fired after the flight of steps to the church were torn away, causing the audience to rush out, falling in a promiscuous pile. This catastrophe was averted by Mr. Rufus Slocomb, whose appeal to the reason of the crowd was heard and heeded. From that time the meeting-houses and public buildings were closed against anti-slavery lectures, through fear, till Judge Minot tendered the use of the basement of the First Parish Church for the discussion of the question.

On another occasion a stone was thrown through a window of the town hall while Parker Pillsbury was addressing an audience. The speaker coolly remarked, that "the argument was weighty, but not convincing." In 1848, when Charles Remond was the guest of David P. Harmon, on Summer Street, a stone was thrown through a parlor window, from which Mrs. Harmon narrowly escaped injury.

During the heated discussion of "the right of petition" in Congress, a dissolution of the Union was threatened, if petitions for the abolition of slavery continued to be sent in. This led to discussion here, and to the drawing of a petition by Benjamin Emerson, 2d, of this town, signed by forty-four persons, asking for a peaceable dissolution of the Union, and sent to John Quincy Adams, who presented it to the House of Representatives, Jan. 24, 1842, moving its reference to a special committee, with instructions to report an answer to the petitioners. The petition and the signers were as follows: —

"To the Congress of the United States: The undersigned, citizens of Haverhill, in the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, pray that you will immediately adopt measures, peaceably, to dissolve the Union of these States.

"First, because no union can be agreeable or permanent, which does not present prospects of reciprocal benefit.

"Second, because a vast proportion of the resources of one section of the Union is annually drained to sustain the views and course of another section without any adequate return.

"Third, because (judging from history of past nations) this Union, if persisted in, in the present course of things, will certainly overwhelm this whole nation in utter destruction.

"Benj. Emerson, 2d, John P. Montgomery, Osgood G. Boynton, Elihu Hutchinson, Franklin Currier, Edward R. Dike, Elijah S. Tosier, Wm. Hale, Joseph Flanders, Alfred S. Parmlee, George O. Harmon, N. P. Dresser, James Harmon, Otis W. Butters, John Philbrick, Wm. H. Noyes, Edwin A. Sargent, Hermon Kimball, Washington Johnson, Thomas Ball, Joseph B. Spiller, J. Henry Johnson, Francis Butters, Jr., Sewell E. Jewett, William H. Currier, Daniel Brickett, Cornelius Jenness, Wm. N. Davis, Ezekiel Hale, Jr., Tappan Chase, Samuel Stuart, Samuel Plummer, Nathaniel Foot, Leonard Parker, Francis Butters, Geo. F. Bailey, Elbridge G. Davis, Alfred Gage, Truman M. Martin, Oliver H. F. Delaware, B. Greeley, Nathan Webster, Charles Fitch, John L. Head."

The presentation of this petition created intense excitement; and Mr. Adams, as well as the petitioners, received the bitter denunciation of those who had often threatened the very thing the petition asked for. The petition was doubtless intended as a rebuke to the men from whom these unmeaning threats had so often come. This action was an outcome from the "gag" resolutions against the right of petition, presented to Congress by Charles G. Atherton, of New Hampshire.

The movement had its origin in Webster's hat store, on Water Street, the same now occupied by Higgins & Lewis for a fish-market. The active men in carrying it forward were Benjamin Emerson, 2d, Sewell E. Jewett, Franklin Currier, and Osgood G. Boynton; and a large portion of the signatures were written on the *communion table* of the Winter Street Orthodox Church. A peculiar interest now surrounds the survivors who signed this historic document, and the localities where it was drawn and the signatures obtained.

There was no decline in the agitation of the question; and in 1845 Thomas P. Beach came here, and asked for liberty to speak upon the subject in the Winter Street Church; which was granted by the Rev. Mr. Finney, who occupied the pulpit, he only requesting Mr. Beach to wait till a revival prayer-meeting could be brought to a close, it then being a time of unusual religious interest.

In opening his address Mr. Beach said: "I have come here to test the religion you are getting. If there is no humanity in it, the less you get of it the better." Immediately following this remark, the lights were blown out, and Mr. Beach hustled into the street, and the door of the church closed. The speaker found his way to the steps of the house, delivered his address, and the audience dispersed. Such were the conditions under which these reformers were accustomed to speak for several years. Those most frequently heard here at that time, and down to 1856, were William Lloyd Garrison, Parker Pillsbury, A. P. Foss, Frederick Douglass, Lucy Stone, Sallie Hawley, Abbie Kelley, and Stephen S. Foster. The first time Frederick Douglass came here, he lodged with John A. Collins, a white man, in the Corlis House, corner of Winter and Pleasant streets. On being introduced to his lodging companion, Mr. Douglas was politely inquired of by his friend if he had any "color prejudice."

Among those who always kept an open door for the fleeing and hunted fugitives, were David P. Harmon, Ezekiel Hale, Jr., William Savory, Sewell E. Jewett, and O. G. Boynton. Mr. Jewett received and protected the negro whom Delia Webster was accused of helping to freedom, and tried therefor, but not convicted. Calvin Fairbanks, however, was convicted of the crime, and suffered the penalty of fifteen years' imprisonment in Maryland. Parker Pillsbury was a frequent visitor here; and on one occasion, after lecturing in Andover, came to town with his chaise besmeared with barn-yard filth, by the mob element he encountered there.

The abolitionists and the leading politicians were for many years mutually and bitterly hostile, and the dominant political party in the nation fully committed to the defence, maintenance, and extension of slavery. The evangelical church was also generally opposed to the agitation of the slavery question, after the manner of the abolitionists, and a large majority of the pulpits were closed to these reformers. In some instances the pulpit led in the suppression of free discussion upon this question, and sometimes the pews controlled the pulpit. It was the silence of the churches upon that issue which caused William Lloyd Garrison to place the standing quotation from Isaiah xxviii. 15. at the head of the columns of the "Liberator": "They have made a covenant with death, and with hell they are at agreement." Ecclesiastical and political hostility, however, could not stifle discussion, or crush the truth; pulpits ceased to be dumb, and politicians were obliged to accept the principle that liberty is the inalienable right of man; each achievement being an advancing step towards the final sanguinary conflict through which its practical recognition was established in the National Government.

The early records of the town show that there was an occasional exhibition of hatred of races, which was exercised to exclude such as were objectionable to the dominant race from settlement here. In 1714, by authority of the magistrates, negroes were warned out of town, Nathaniel Merrill receiving compensation for the service. There was also a primitive hatred exhibited towards the Irish, which undoubtedly prevented early settlements being made here by representatives of that race. In 1718, five shiploads of emigrants from the north of Ireland landed in Boston; sixteen families of whom, hearing of a tract of land above Haverhill, called Nutfield from the abundance of chestnuts there, started to take possession of it. They came this way; and in crossing the river, just before they had reached the shore, the boat accidentally capsized, and men, women, and children were thrown promiscuously into the river. Mirick says: "This adventure afforded much amusement to the inhabitants of this town, at the expense of the poor Irishmen, whom they thoroughly hated, and were not at all delicate in making it manifest." Strangers and in a strange land, the spirit of their reception under circumstances of misfortune could not have been very flattering. The families remained here, however, till the following spring, while the men went to possess the land they designed to make their future home, and erect huts to live in. In 1722 their settlement was incorporated in the name of Londonderry, from a city of that name in the north of Ireland. Although not desired as citizens here at that time, they planted a neighboring community, which, for religious zeal, sound morality, true patriotism, industry, and thrift, was not exceeded by any in the Colony. It was this party who first introduced the potato here. They were first planted in this town by William White, on Mill Street, whose first product was four bushels, so largely in excess of his own wants that he distributed the surplus to his neighbors.

Besides being rather particular as to who should become citizens of the town, the early settlers were somewhat notional as to what people should say, and how it should be spoken. Dictation in this respect was not confined to Irishmen and negroes, or to men of low estate; for, in 1717, the celebrated George Whitefield was refused the use of the meeting-house, and warned out of town by the authorities when informed that he was to speak. On his first visit here, he did not speak; on his second visit, he was the guest of Dea. William White, and preached to a large congregation in the open air, opposite the deacon's house on Mill Street. He read the warning received from the authorities, to the audience, and, instead of complying therewith, remarked, "Poor souls! they shall have another sermon," and appointed another meeting the next morning at sunrise,

which was numerously attended. The spirit of the governing class in the Colony was that of dictation, shown as early as 1652, by an order of the court prohibiting Joseph Peasley and Thomas Macy of Salisbury "from exhorting the people on the Sabbath, in the absence of the minister." Thomas Pike, of that town, arraigned the decision as "against the liberty of the country, both civil and ecclesiastical," for which utterance he was "disfranchised by the General Court and heavily fined." Puritanically arbitrary as was the rule of that early day, there was a germ of liberal public sentiment which had already attained to healthy and hopeful growth. A petition from various towns was presented to the Court, asking for the remission of Pike's sentence, which was signed by thirty-seven from this town. Although the Court was indignant, and held the petitioners to answer for an offence, it opened the way for deliverance from the arbitrary control of the combined power of Church and State, which sought to govern the people. Pike paid his fine three years after, and was released from the other part of the sentence by humbling himself before the Court. The petitioners from this town were obliged to acknowledge their act as an "offence," to escape giving bonds of £10 each, and answering before the Court. This arbitrary procedure was not many times repeated. Hatred of races and a desire to dictate in modes of worship and utterance were transient elements, and now exist only with the few. Public sentiment, which is law, opens wide the door of welcome and freedom to all races, and guarantees freedom of speech and worship, while the appeal is now being made to add to these privileges that of suffrage without regard to sex. Mary Coffin, daughter of Tristram Coffin, one of the early settlers, was a "strong-minded woman." Her position in history is that of a representative woman, and the female reformers of to-day may properly point to her as one of their early leaders. She became a Quakeress in 1701, and led the spiritual concerns of the whole island of Nantucket, where she resided. There is a well-organized Female Suffrage Association in existence in this town at the present time, which is increasing in power; aiming to secure to women all the civil rights which the law accords to men, which is what "suffrage" implies.

The early means of communicating with other sections and the performance of mail service were very meagre. Up to 1790 newspapers and letters were carried through the country by persons on horseback called "post-riders." Samuel Bean was the post-rider from Boston to Concord, N. H., accomplishing the trip once a week. A post-office was first established in this town, Jan. 1, 1795, and John Wingate appointed postmaster.

The first stage from Haverhill to Boston was started about 1791, a Mr. Gage being the proprietor. It was a two-horse coach, and was run only when there were a sufficient number of passengers for a load. The journey from here to Boston was then accomplished in about twelve hours. In 1793 a stage commenced running regularly once a week; but soon changed to twice a week, the advertisement being that "The Haverhill stage-coach is complete, with genteel curtains and cushions, and a pair of able horses for service." In the same year a stage commenced running twice a week from here to Concord, N. H., connecting with the Boston stage. In 1803 a mail stage commenced running between Haverhill and Newburyport, and still continues its regular trips. In 1811 a stage line was established between Haverhill and Salem, and continued till railroad facilities superseded it for passengers and mail service. In March, 1818, the Haverhill and Boston Stage Company was organized, with a capital of $4,200. In 1831 the capital was increased to $28,900, and the name changed to "The Northern and Eastern Stage Company." The mail register of that time embraced the Boston Mail and Accommodation Stage, Salem stage, Newburyport stage, Lowell and Methuen stage, Exeter and Dover stage, and Concord stage. The late Thomas Newcomb, who died in 1878 at the age of ninety-two years, was for many years the agent of the company; and the Eagle House, established in 1819 by Col. William Brown, became the principal stage hotel. The various lines of stages remained unbroken till the opening of the railroads, when the leading routes were discontinued. Prior to that time a large portion of the expressing and freighting from here to Boston was performed by Rufus Slocomb, who was also proprietor of a hotel on Merrimac Street. Mr. Slocomb had occasion to travel much between here and Boston, and sometimes passed over the road on Sunday in the days when *tythingmen* existed. On one occasion he was stopped by one of these officers, in Andover, who demanded his name. His reply was, "My name is *Slo-comb* and fast go," at the same time applying the whip to his horse, and was soon out of sight and hearing of the Sunday magistrate.

Protection against fire received attention at an early day, and a Fire Club organized Feb. 22, 1768, choosing Cornelius Mansise, Enoch Bartlett, Samuel White, and Isaac Osgood fire-wardens. The members were provided with buckets, ladders and bags for saving property from destruction, and it was thoroughly organized for service and for guarding against theft. The institution was very popular, embracing in its membership the first citizens of the town. The annual supper was for many years regarded as a great social occasion. The organization still exists; but the preservation of its social features embraces its principal practical service.

In 1769 the first fire-engine was purchased by a company formed for that purpose, of which Cornelius Mansise was captain, and Nathaniel Walker, Jr., *clerk*. In 1780 the engine was presented to the town, and the service ultimately became changed from a private enterprise to that of a public service under the direction of the town. The management passed through many stages of organization by which its efficiency was perfected. While the old Tiger Company had an existence, it was its pride, on parade days, to placard the figures, "Feb. 15, 1769," as the date of its first organization, connecting them with the current date of the celebration. The records indicate a reorganization of the fire-department Dec. 20, 1827, the meeting being held at the house of Leonard Whittier, at which time Leonard Whittier was chosen director and Moses George, 4th, clerk.

The first instance of paying firemen for services, with the exception of the allowance of their annual poll-tax, was in 1841, when the steam-mill of Noyes & Dunbar and the house and shop of Lyman Worthen were burnt on Stage Street. At this time the town had accepted the Act of the General Court establishing a fire department. In 1843 increased facilities were added, and in 1848 new engines were procured and the compensation of firemen increased. In 1852 other additions were made to the force. In 1860 there were four companies and a hook and ladder company, all supplied with excellent machines and apparatus for service. Since then there has been an entire change by the introduction of three steamers and a chemical extinguisher for the city proper, with a hand-machine at the Rocks Village and one at Ayer's Village. There is also a hook and ladder and hose company fully equipped for service. Each company is supplied with suitable headquarters and the department is thoroughly efficient. Augustus McDuffie is the chief engineer, with office at the city hall.

The most notable fires which have occurred were the malicious burning of a large quantity of rails in 1725, the property of the "commoners," which extended to the neighboring forests and continued for many days, destroying much property. This grew out of the land disputes, which were then at their height. On the 22d of January, 1743, the house of Dr. H. Brown, at Holt's Rocks, was burnt, and his daughter, twenty-three years old, and a son of D. Currier, perished in the flames. On Sunday, April 16, 1775, a destructive fire swept all the west side of Main Street, from the present Court Street to the corner on Merrimac Street. Seventeen buildings were burnt, embracing a brick hotel, owned by John White, the stores of Dea. Joseph Dodge and James Duncan, and a distillery. This was a distressing event, occurring on the eve of the commencement of the Revolutionary struggle, and at a time when most of the able-bodied men of the town were in the military service. Oct. 9, 1827, the house and barn of Daniel Appleton, and the barn of Hon. James H. Duncan, on Main Street, not far from the present Court Street, were destroyed by fire. This was one of the most alarming fires which ever occurred here, threatening to make a general sweep, and required the utmost exertions to arrest its progress. Women took their places in line, passing buckets of water for hours, and it was only by combined energy that it was brought under control. The next fire of magnitude was the burning of Noyes & Dunbar's steam-mill and the carrying-shop and house of Lyman Worthen, on Stage Street, which required the services of the fire department for the entire night. In several instances incendiary fires have been set, which have thrown the community into excitement and called for the exercise of vigilance. These have been mostly confined to the destruction of barns. On the morning of Jan. 1, 1847, the church edifice of the First Parish was entirely destroyed by fire.

On Sunday morning, Nov. 16, 1873, a fire broke out in Washburn Block, near Washington Square, in rear of the shoe manufactory of Sewell F. Prescott, raging with great fury and extending to the brick shoe manufactories on Washington Street. For a time it threatened to sweep through the entire street, but by the energy of the fire department, with assistance promptly supplied from the city of Lawrence, it was brought under subjection. Thirty-five business firms were burnt out, and the loss estimated at $150,000. The distressing event in connection with the casualty was the destruction of human life. Two men,

—Mr. Amos C. Heath, of Bradford, and Mr. Amos George, of Haverhill,—lost their lives in attempting to save their property. This was the severest fire which has ever happened in Haverhill.

Within a few years a large number of costly edifices have been built, which add much to the architectural beauty of the city. The city hall, built in 1860, is a handsome and commodious structure. Since then have been erected Odd Fellows' Hall, on Main Street, at a cost of $40,000; Masonic Temple, on Merrimac Street, a thoroughly-built and handsome structure, erected at an expense of $75,000 or more; the Hale Library Building, on Summer Street, a pleasant and commodious building, costing about $50,000, and finely adapted for the purposes for which it was designed; the High School Building, located on Crescent Street, on the site where Harriet Newell was born, the most commanding and expensive educational structure in the city, the cost of which was $125,000. The Currier School Building, on Mount Washington, is the finest public building in that part of the city. Grand Army Hall, recently erected on Merrimac Street, supplies to the "boys in blue" a pleasant centre for fraternal and social purposes. There are also many private residences of a massive and commanding style of architecture which add much to the external beauty of the city.

Another structure, peculiar in its character and attractive in its style of architecture, is "Winnekenni Hall," erected by Dr. James R. Nichols a few years ago, on Mid-lake Hill, an eminence overlooking Kenoza Lake. It is of castellated form; in style, of the mediæval period, and is built entirely of granite, from bowlders found upon the premises, which drifted thither during the glacial period. The structure is 86×36 feet, with walls 24 feet high and two feet thick, with an octagon and a round tower, respectively 44 and 42 feet high; and near the centre of the building, on the line of the front elevation, is a martel tower.

The eminence is 200 feet above the lake and 320 feet above the sea. The castle is surrounded by an extensive lawn, and adjacent is a deer-park and a lovely grove, interspersed with walks and adorned with fountains and an artificial cascade.

The location is a mile from the city, in the midst of the rural scenes so beautifully described by Whittier in his early poetry, and overlooks the three lakes whose crystal waters sparkle below it. A fine view of old Agamenticus, of grand Monadnock, and many other mountains, is obtained, and in sight are twenty or thirty towns and villages. The castle structure is the summer residence of Dr. Nichols, and was built for the ages. In the future its moss and ivy covered walls will become the memorial marks of the then ancient days. It is one of the most notable and delightful summer residences in the country, and, for uniqueness in style and solidity of construction, is not surpassed in New England.

Attention was early called to the improvement of the channel of the Merrimac; and Haverhill, being at the head of sloop navigation, took a lively interest in the matter. Active operations were commenced as early as 1797. Newburyport subscribed liberally for the enterprise, operations extending as far as Pawtucket Falls, and an Act of incorporation obtained for a company for "Clearing and Locking the Falls of the Merrimac." The enterprise was superseded by the incorporation of the "Middlesex Canal Company." Embraced in the plan was the purpose of making Haverhill a large manufacturing city, and Newburyport a great commercial centre.

In 1828, the steamer "Merrimac," Capt. William Haseltine, the first steamboat on the river, was built in Haverhill, making its first trip between here and Newburyport, April 8, 1828. The boat was chiefly owned in this town, and run, though irregularly, for several years, but was finally withdrawn. It was originally a sailing vessel, and remodelled.

In June, 1846, the side-wheel steamer "Lawrence," 140 feet long, was built at Newburyport, and intended for river navigation, but proved too large for the service, and was transferred to Connecticut. The same year a stern-wheel steamer, of the same name, was built at Waterville, Me., to run on this river, and once ascended the river as far as the new city of Lawrence. James H. Carleton, James R. Nichols, and others, procured an Act of incorporation of the "Pentucket Navigation Company," in 1848, the object of which was to clear the river and establish steamboat navigation from Newburyport to Lawrence. The principal impediment was Mitchell's Falls. Nothing was done to open the channel till about the year 1870, when a large appropriation was made by Congress, through the instrumentality of Gen. Butler, and an attempt made to cut a navigable channel through Mitchell's Falls, sixty feet wide, and of sufficient depth to admit of the passage of light-draught steamers and for freight barges. About $100,000 were expended, and the work so far accomplished that Gen. Butler and a large party of gentlemen attempted the ascent in 1873, which was only partially successful. Since then much additional work has been done, under the direction of E. Moody Boynton, of West Newbury, but the work is still incomplete. Steamers of light draught and coal barges have made the passage, and an attempt made to establish a coal mart at Lawrence, but it has not yet become an entire success. Those engaged in the enterprise are confident of ultimate practical success. With the agitation of the matter, river navigation has greatly increased. From 1848 to 1854, seven steamers were at different times on the river, successfully ascending as far as this town. In 1862, the steamer "Thurlow Weed," was the first to ascend the river, as a tug for schooners. Since then, the navigation of the river, by schooners, has greatly increased, and a second tug, the "Mattie Sargent," placed on the river. Steamboats and steam yachts have greatly multiplied within a few years, Messrs. Sargent & Holden, Mr. Henry Vatter, "The Merrimac River Steamboat Navigation and Express Company," Messrs. Crane, and Mr. E. E. Stimpson, having done much to increase the business on the river. During the season of 1878, not less than fifteen steam-yachts, tugs, and steamboats were in use on the river, doing a large business in conveying passengers and in the tugging service. The receipts of the seven principal boats during that season, for passengers and tugging, was $22,500. The steamer "City of Fredericton," Capt. Stimpson, is of so light draught as to run independent of tides, and will accommodate a thousand passengers. Its introduction has completely revolutionized the navigation of the river, and is destined to work still greater changes. Whatever may be the practical results of opening the channel through Mitchell's Falls, so far as navigation to Lawrence is concerned, the general effect has been beneficial, and the expenditure compensated for by the stimulus it has given to navigation below, and to the improvement of the river at other points from Newburyport bar to Haverhill. Since the introduction of tug service, in 1862, by placing the "Thurlow Weed" on the river, the arrivals of vessels here, with freights of coal, lumber, and lime, have rapidly increased. The flat-bottom steamer "City of Fredericton," placed upon the river in 1878, having demonstrated that one thousand passengers can be floated independent of tides, will tend to make the river, from this point, a great thoroughfare for pleasure excursions to the sea during the jaunting season.

On the night of Dec. 23, 1867, the quiet of the town was disturbed by the announcement of a murder, perpetrated in connection with a daring attempt at burglary. There were intimations that an attempt was soon to be made to enter one of the banks, and Mr. Joseph Burnham, one of the police officers, was on the alert for the robbers. While in the fearless and faithful discharge of his duty, he discovered and alarmed the burglars in the Merrimack National Bank, coming in so close contact with them that they shot and killed him instantly with a revolver, the ball entering his head. So much was known of the plot that Daniel Murphey, Patrick Daley, whose crack name was "Spud" Daley, Robert Barrett, and John Hamilton, commonly called "Scott" Hamilton, were arrested and retained in Salem jail for about a year and a half, but were never brought to trial, from supposed lack of evidence to convict them. Daley was subsequently arrested for house-breaking, and attempt to kill, in Lawrence, for which he was convicted and sentenced to State prison for life.

Another tragical event occurred in Fleet Street, then the centre of the liquor traffic, on the night of Aug. 27, 1870. Barnard B. Carleton, son of Amos Carleton, of Plaistow, N. H., twenty-one years old, and George Graham, son of Rufus K. Graham, of Bradford, in passing through the street, were attacked, without provocation, by Burton G. Roberts, Isaac L. Roberts, and John Reynolds, who were partially intoxicated. Carleton was fatally stabbed in the abdomen, dying on the 11th of September following. Andrew Cooney, Jr., another inoffensive young man, who happened to be present, was fatally cut in the back, from the effects of which he died September 1st. The verdict of the coroner's inquests fastened the crime upon Burton G. Roberts, and the result of his trial was a sentence of seven years in the State prison. Isaac L. Roberts was sentenced to six months in the house of correction. The connection of Reynolds with the affair was not clear enough to secure his conviction.

A notable event of a centennial character, was the completion of one hundred years of life by Hon. Moses Wingate, and his entrance upon another century, on the 25th of October, 1869. He received the congratulations of his friends at his residence, and several citizens presented him with a portrait of himself. The day was chiefly given to these centennial festivities, the Masonic fraternity taking the lead

in the demonstrations. He was borne through the streets in a barouche, followed by a long Masonic procession, attracting an immense crowd of spectators. He was able to take his seat in the lodge room, and witness the ceremony of making his son, the Rev. Charles Wingate, a Mason. Mr. Wingate was made a Mason in 1803, and was Master in 1813–14. He was for twenty years postmaster, and was much in town office. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, and represented the town in the House of Representatives, and the Senatorial district in the Senate. He was originally a Jeffersonian Democrat, but was a moderate politician. His last vote was given for the re-election of Abraham Lincoln. He died June 5, 1870, aged one hundred years, seven months, and twenty-one days.

Lieut. John Mills, of the United States army, was born in Londonderry, Ireland. He entered the army in 1808, but subsequently fixed his home in Haverhill. He enlisted in Rhode Island, in 1808, and was under Gen. Harrison at Tippecanoe. In 1812, he was under Gen. Hull, and was one of the number surrendered to Gen. Brock. He served in the Florida war, and was in the whole Mexican campaign. His regiment was afterwards stationed in Texas, where it remained till the breaking out of the rebellion. Convinced that Gen. Twiggs intended to surrender his command to the rebels, two companies of the regiment, accompanied by Maj. Mills, made their escape, marching away under non-commissioned officers, reaching Washington in safety. He was nearly sixty years in the service. In 1865, at the age of seventy-five, he was retired with a lieutenant's commission and pay of the regular service. His death occurred in Bradford, from paralysis, in 1867, at the age of seventy-seven years.

In the cemetery at Rocks Village is the grave of the "Countess," to which most pleasant reference is made in a poem by Whittier. The interesting young lady to whom this title is given, was Mary Ingalls, daughter of Henry Ingalls, and a relative of the late Moses Wingate. During the French rebellion in Gaudaloupe, a company of ten fled in a vessel, which brought them to Newburyport. Nine of the number settled there, but the tenth, Count Francis Vipart, took up his abode in Rocks Village, where he became acquainted with Miss Ingalls, whose unusual personal and mental attractions captivated him, the result being a marriage, which was the sensation of the hour. The union took place in 1806, and the death of the young bride, from consumption, occurred Jan. 5, 1807, at the age of twenty-one years. Many keepsakes were distributed among the friends of the young bride by the Count, who soon left, it is supposed, for his native land. Referring to the briefness of the union, the poet sweetly says: —

"Ah! life is brief, though love be long;
The altar and the bier,
The burial hymn and bridal song
Were both in one short year!

"Her rest is quiet on the hill,
Beneath the locust's bloom;
Far off her lover sleeps as still
Within his scutcheoned tomb.

. . . . . .

"What matters whose the hillside grove,
Or whose the blazoned stone?
Forever to her western wave
Shall whisper blue Garonne!"

Another of the number, the ancestor of John Poyen, came to Rocks Village with the Count, marrying Sally Elliot, from whom descended the Poyens, of Amesbury.

The death of Joseph Morse, at the age of thirty-seven, occurred under peculiar circumstances, Sept. 26, 1831, the event being preceded by a presentiment of its approach, and the manner of its occurrence. Mr. Morse was of a nervous temperament, and had been for some time despondent, under the impression that he had "committed the unpardonable sin." A short time previous to his death, he announced to his friends that it had "appeared to him" that he should bleed to death while in the act of raising the draw of Rocks Bridge to allow a vessel to pass. On the morning of his death, he proceeded to perform that act, but, before he had fairly commenced, he was heard to say, "I am dying!" and at that moment the sailors on board the vessel saw the blood copiously pouring out of his mouth. The physical result may be easily accounted for by the bursting of a diseased blood vessel, or by extraordinary excitement, but the presentiment, indicating the manner of the event, came through the operation of other forces, and is subject to other laws.

The best and most economical plan for providing for the comfortable maintenance of the poor, was considered at an early day. The matter remained unsettled till 1820, when the present "Town Farm" was purchased of Thomas Cogswell, for $1,500. With the additions and improvements made from time to time, it supplies a comfortable and pleasant home for the unfortunate.

Another indication of the humane spirit ruling the community, was the organization of the Haverhill Female Benevolent Society, Jan. 13, 1818. It gave its sanction to the temperance reform, in 1827, by excluding wines or cordials from its meetings. It always had a membership of efficient workers. Mrs. Jeremiah Stickney was for many years its chief officer. Her successor, equally efficient, was Mrs. Samuel Fellows, who was followed by Mrs. James F. Bragg. The society has never suffered a decline in vitality, but has grown in strength and expanded in usefulness by the lapse of years. It is still active in measures of relief.

Another benevolent movement, originating about the year 1858, was the Old Ladies' Home Association, having for its object the establishment of a home for aged females requiring such provision, the plan being subject to practical limitations and conditions. The means adopted for raising a fund was by an annual May festival, which has become an "institution." Its success attracted the favor of the benevolent, resulting in contributions and endowments enabling the association to build a home, on Main Street, which was publicly opened Oct. 18, 1876, and is now in successful operation. A Children's Aid Society and Home has since been established, located on Kenoza Avenue.

The celebration of the national centennial anniversary was entered upon with a becoming spirit of patriotism on the 4th of July, 1876. The city was made gorgeous with the display of the national emblem of the nation's life and power, together with streamers and patriotic decorations; and a grand procession moved through the principal streets. The entire day was given to becoming demonstrations of rejoicing, and a large number of citizens kept open house. In the afternoon, the centennial oration was delivered before the city government and the public, in the city hall, by John Crowell, M. D., the theme being "The Colonial and Revolutionary History of Haverhill." Unusual courtesies were extended by the city government to representatives of the press, and the fullest details of the event were published in the journals of the city.

Among the brave men who participated in the war for the preservation of the Union, gaining an imperishable record, was Gen. William F. Bartlett, a native of this town, born June 6, 1840. He was the son of Charles L. Bartlett and Harriet Plummer Bartlett, and grandson of Hon. Bailey Bartlett. He was a member of the junior class in Harvard College in 1861, and his political sympathies were then with the South. On the 2d of January of that year, he gave a theme, "maintaining that the demands of the South were just," and on the 10th instant he said: "All these troubles have arisen from the interference of the North." Three months later, when thinking of going to war, he said: "It would be fighting against my principles, as I have stuck up for the South all along." The very day this sentence was written, April 17th, he joined the 4th Battalion of Massachusetts volunteer militia, for a brief time performing garrison duty in one of the forts of Boston Harbor. During this time the political *mirage*, which had encumbered his mental vision with illusions and inverted forms, began to be dispelled. In this month of service in garrison duty he "caught the martial fever," and on the 20th of June the call for ten more regiments much rejoiced him. He became a captain in the 20th Regiment, soon after going to the front, taking part in the battles at "Ball's Bluff," "Plains Store," "Yorktown," &c.

He lost a leg before Yorktown, April 24, 1862. Before fairly recovering from his wounds he was elected colonel of the 49th Regiment, which he led in the gallant attack on Port Hudson, where he was again wounded in the foot and wrist. Once more recovering, he was commissioned brigadier-general, June 20, 1864, and assigned to the 9th Corps. At the close of the war he was made brevet major-general of U. S. volunteers. He was in some of the hardest fighting; he suffered in rebel prisons, and was among the bravest of the brave. At the early age of twenty-six years he so gained the confidence of his countrymen that high political positions were tendered to him, all of which he declined, preferring to commit himself to a business career. He became largely engaged in the iron business at West Stockbridge, and in Richmond, Va. He died at Pittsfield, Dec. 17, 1876.

The business institutions, social fraternities, and organizations for the maintenance of business, social, humane, and memorial interests of Haverhill are many. The first bank was established in 1814. There are four national banks, — the First, Merrimack, Haverhill,

and Essex,—with the Haverhill Savings Bank, established in 1828, and the Five Cents Savings Bank, established in 1870.

Masonry was established here in 1802. Its organizations are: Merrimack and Saggahew lodges, Pentucket Chapter, Haverhill Council, Haverhill Commandery Knights Templar, and Masonic Hall Association.

Odd Fellowship is well established, being represented by Mutual Relief and Mizpah lodges, Kenoza Lodge, Daughters of Rebekah, Merrimack Lodge (colored), Eagle Encampment, and Odd Fellows' Hall Association. In addition to these, are the St. Jean Baptiste Association, Knights of Pythias, Hibernians, Knights of Honor, and, perhaps, some others.

Major How Encampment, Post No. 47, G. A. R., was organized in 1868, and is well sustained. A Savings Fund and Loan Association was organized in 1877. The Haverhill and Groveland Street Railway was incorporated in 1877, and is in successful operation. The only military organization is the Haverhill City Guard, Co. F, 6th Regiment, organized in 1869.

There are three cemeteries: Pentucket, embracing the first burying ground; Linwood, adjacent to it, which has lately been much enlarged and improved; and Hilldale Cemetery, established in 1859, at the suggestion of the late Eleazer A. Porter.

Kenoza Lake Club, a social institution, holding control of public grounds on the shore of Kenoza Lake, was organized Aug. 26, 1859, with James H. Carleton, president; E. A. Porter, B. P. Woodman, Newell Harding, vice-presidents; E. P. Hill, clerk. John G. Whittier was elected honorary member. The three principal hotels are the Eagle House, J. Dow, landlord; Washington Square Hotel, Mrs. E. J. Griffin; and the Ætna House, J. Dewhirst.

Very few of the ancient buildings now remain. Two relics of the past are the "White" house on Mill Street, now 198 years old, containing oak beams eighteen inches square; and the residence of Mrs. James Day, on Washington Street, which is over 200 years old.

The early and prominent names connected with the opening history of the town, are: John Ayer, Gen. Joseph Badger, Hon. Bailey Bartlett, Israel and Isaac Bartlett, Gen. Samuel Blodgett, Capt. Henry Young Brown, George Corlis, James Duncan, Capt. Nehemiah Emerson, Rev. Peter Eaton, D. D., Isaac Bradley, Gen. James Brickett, John Johnson, Gen. Benjamin Moers, Judge James C. Merrill, the Saltonstalls,—Nathaniel, Hon. Guerdon, Hon. Richard, Col. Richard (the loyalist), Dr. Nathaniel, and Hon. Leverett Saltonstall,—Nathaniel Peaslee Sargent, Hon. John Varnhum, Hon. Leonard White, and Thomas Whittier, who came here with Rev. Mr. Rolfe, and from whom, it is believed, all the Whittiers here descended. The name of Thomas was transmitted to successive generations, and was the name of the father of Hon. Warner R. Whittier. The name of Harriet Atwood Newell is worthy of perpetual record, for her self-sacrifice and devotion to principle, and a cherished purpose, though the fruit was blasted by adverse conditions and early death.

Later in the order of time are to be placed the names of those identified with the town's affairs as men of professional, mercantile, industrial, and common interests, who were known and will be remembered by many now living: David How, Isaac R. How, John Marsh, David Marsh, Hon. Stephen Minot, Dr. Rufus Longley, Hon. James H. Duncan, elsewhere referred to, James Gale, Phineas Carleton, Jesse Harding, Col. Charles White, Rufus Slocomb, Eleazer A. Porter, Charles Porter, Ezekiel Hale, Caleb Hersey, Moses D. George, Thomas Newcomb, John Keeley, and Roger Buttrick.

Benjamin Emerson, who died March 7, 1874, at the age of eighty-eight years, was, from an early date, the friend of the slave, and was one of the few, in the early days when the North was the slave-hunting ground of the South, who possessed the combined will and moral courage to protect the fleeing bondman.

Benjamin Greenleaf, the author of Greenleaf's Arithmetic, and other mathematical works, was born in Haverhill Sept. 25, 1786. Mr. Greenleaf was for many years preceptor of Bradford Academy, and afterwards president of the Board of Trustees. He died in Bradford at the age of seventy-six years.

David P. Harmon, whose death occurred Nov. 11, 1869, at the age of seventy years, was for many years the open and devoted friend of the slave, and one of the pillars of the anti-slavery cause. His house was ever open to shelter the hunted fugitive, and was the welcome home of the advocates of the anti-slavery cause.

Edward G. Frothingham, who died Sept. 17, 1876, at the age of sixty-five years, was a native of Newburyport. He was, for twenty-six years, from 1843, editor and proprietor of the "Haverhill Gazette," and for several years was assistant assessor in the internal revenue service. For several years prior to his death he had retired from active life on account of physical infirmities and declining health.

Hon. Alfred Kittredge, who died May 1, 1877, in the seventy-second year of his age, was, at the time, the editor and proprietor of the "Haverhill Gazette." Mr. Kittredge had been long a citizen here, and had at times been so intimately connected with public and business affairs that his name is inseparably connected with the history of the community, in many ways, through full three decades. As an editor, he was a success, being at once bold, original, and independent. Under his management, the "Gazette" was a paper of opinions, and much read by those relishing independence in utterance and originality in thought. Mr. Kittredge was a man of ability, and quite distinctive in his characteristics.

The Rev. Benjamin F. Hosford, for many years the much-beloved pastor of the Centre Congregational Society, died Aug. 11, 1864. He was a man much esteemed by the general public for his integrity and firmness of character, and his unflinching support of what he held to be true in theology made him a trusted leader by all who were harmonious in faith with him. Of him, a friendly hand has written: "Mr. Hosford's love for nature and the arts was a true devotion. Music was to him a special delight, and the early part of his sickness was soothed by the grand symphonies of the masters, as rendered by the Boston Orchestral Union. His character as a Christian minister stands without blemish. He preached the gospel as a man thoroughly imbued with the spirit of the Divine Master. Sometimes he cut sharply into the sins and absurdities of men; but this might be expected from one who saw things with

> . . . . 'Truth's directness,
> Meeting each occasion
> Straight as a line of light.'

His peaceful death was the crowning act of

> . . . . 'A life of duty
> Transfigured into love.'"

A history of Haverhill was written by B. L. Mirick, in 1832; a second by George Wingate Chase, in 1860.

With this page ends the present record of this historic town, from its settlement in 1640, to the present hour, covering a period of two hundred and thirty-eight years. Few towns occupied so prominent a position as this in the early days, and few so abound in facts of historic interest. The leading events have been brought together with as much of detail as space would allow. It has been the aim of the writer to be faithful to facts, and to the spirit of the community whose record he was making, constantly thinking and believing that its course, politically, and in its social, intellectual, moral, and religious features, has steadily tended upward from the beginning. It has been the aim to give a true interpretation to the events which make up its history, and to their influence upon the public, as well as their relations to the line of right and justice. Although three histories have now been written, the full and perfect one is yet to come.

IPSWICH.

Ipswich is a large and beautiful seaboard town in the easterly part of the county, and distinguished alike for the pleasing variety of its natural scenery and for the intelligence and sobriety of its inhabitants. It is, by the Eastern Railroad, twenty-seven miles from Boston, eighty from Portland, and twelve from Newburyport. The First Congregational Church is, according to the State Trigonometrical Survey, 42° 40′ 54.03″ north latitude, and 70° 50′ 29.49″ west longitude. The township is triangular in form, having Boxford and Rowley (from the latter of which it is in part separated by Rowley River) on the north-west and north, the ocean on the east, and Essex, Hamilton, and Topsfield (by an irregular line), on the south. The eastern boundary is formed in part by the southern section of Plum Island, and by Castle Neck, on the northern shore of which are situated the two Ipswich lights.

The water supply is abundant, and affords considerable motive power. North-easterly, through the centre of the township, flows in a circuitous course the Ipswich River, which is navigable for small vessels nearly to the principal settlement, and which discharges itself into the sea between Plum Island and Castle Neck. Johnson, in 1646, speaks of it as "a faire and delightful river, whose first rise or spring begins about twenty five miles farther up the country, issuing forth a very pleasant pond. But soon after it takes its course through a most hideous swamp of large extent, even for many miles, being a great harbour for bears. After its coming forth this place, it groweth larger by the income of many small rivers, and issues forth in the sea, due east against the Island of Sholes [Plum Island] a great place of fishing for our English nation."

A long sand bar extends across the mouth of the river, and obstructs, in some degree, the navigation. Its main affluents on the south are: Miles River, the outlet of Wenham Pond, and Fox Creek, which flows from Essex; and into it from the north flow Plum Island River and several minor streams. Bull Brook and Muddy Brook, together with Rowley River, into which they flow, drain the northerly section of the town and serve to beautify the landscape. A creek from the last-named stream forms with it Holy Island; and Plum Island River, with its creeks and those of Ipswich River, form the peninsula called Jeffrey's, or the Great Neck, supposed to be the place first settled by the Englishmen in the town.

Prichard's Pond, in the westerly angle of the town, is a fair sheet of water, well supplied with pickerel, bream, and other fish. The southern section of Plum Island, a long and narrow bank of sand, blown by the winds into fantastic forms, and named from a peculiar plum (*Prunus maritima*) it bears, makes the eastern feature of the town.

The underlying rock is sienite and trap, and bowlders of all shapes and sizes, from another region, frequently appear. A fine blue clay, and also clay for making bricks, are found in several localities. The soil, consisting of yellow, gravelly or sandy loam, or alluvium, is well adapted to pasturage and to the growth of grain, fruit, and forest trees, and garden vegetables. The flora is both varied and abundant, and the timber growth consists of oak, maple, pine (both hard and soft), birch, willow, elm, and alder.

The surface of the town is charmingly diversified by hill and valley, glade, meadow, forest, orchard, and cultivated field. Referring to the scenery here, Mr. William Tudor, in his "Letters on the Eastern States," 1820, says: "We have still so much wood that even in the oldest cultivated parts of the country it is very difficult to find a panoramic view of any extent, where some patches of the native forest are not to be found. I know of but one exception, which is from the steeple of the church in Ipswich, in Essex, Massachusetts. This is one of our oldest towns, and the prospect will put you in mind of the scenery of your own country. I need not add that it is a very pleasing one, and will repay you for the slight trouble of ascending the steeple."

A range of beautiful, isolated, and rounded eminences, for which this town is noted, extends from Great Neck on the north-east to Topsfield on the south-west. The first is known as North Ridge, rising from Great Neck, and overlooking Plum Island River and the ocean; then comes Tilton Hill, on which the Coast Survey erected a signal-station, and which was once fortified by the Indians; then Town Hill on the left, and Heart-break Hill on the right, bank of the river, overlook the central villages; Turkey Hill, a commanding elevation west of the villages, affords a fine view of the whole township. Scott's Hill, Turner's Hill, and Bear Hill, follow successively in the chain of elevations to the south-western angle of the town. Jewett's Hill occupies an angle jutting into Rowley; and near it, Prospect Hill rises on the confines of the respective towns to an altitude of 264 feet, affording a magnificent view of the surrounding country and the ocean.

"Ascend on some lovely morning, in the month of June," said the writer, in another work, "that beautiful eminence which they call 'Town Hill.' To the north your eye stretches far away over the verdant meadows of Rowley and Newbury, catching glimpses of the spires of Newburyport, to the rounded summit of Powow Hill in Amesbury. A little to the right you see the fantastic and shifting sand-knolls of Plum Island, the beaches of Salisbury and Hampton, the solitary peak of old Agamenticus, the Isles of Shoals, and the dim, distant outline of the coast of Maine. On the east you send your gaze along over the silvery beach of Squam and the headlands of Cape Ann, far out into the Atlantic ocean, sparkling in the sunbeams and dotted with countless sail of fishing or of coasting vessels. Below you, on both sides of the river, lies the quiet village, half sheltered by its towering elm trees, while farther inland rises a succession of wooded or cultivated hills and knolls, with intervening glades and hamlets, green pastures and blossoming orchards, which terminate picturesquely in the confines of the neighboring towns of Hamilton, Topsfield, and Rowley." — [Memoir of Rev. N. Ward, by J. W. Dean, M. A., p. 87.]

The whole number of inhabitants (1875) was 3,674, of whom 1,796 were males, and 1,878 females. There were two persons of the age of ninety-two years. The number of ratable polls is 1,015; of voters, 917. The number of farms was 450; of cows, 635, and of horses, 436. The town valuation was $1,801,936.

The capital invested in manufacturing establishments was $401,150, and the value of goods made in the year ending May 1, 1875, as follows: Boots and shoes, $107,750; hosiery, $480,000; bread and pastry, $12,480; bricks, $3,000; clothing, $11,100; confectionery, $1,000; die blocks, $950; fringes, head nets, &c., $13,800; harnesses, $3,000; houses, barns, &c., $54,310; ice, $700; isinglass, $54,375; lumber and meal, $16,100; lumber and packing boxes, $6,685; newspapers, $2,500; soap, $5,700; stoves and tin-ware, $2,500; wagons and carriages, $11,363; total, $787,313; the whole number of establishments being thirty-five. The whole number of persons employed was 504, of whom 325 were males, and 179 females.

The town had eight vessels employed in coastwise, and the same number in ocean commerce, with a total tonnage of 1,504, valued at $71,800. Two vessels were engaged in the fisheries, and the amount of fish taken was 1,900 quintals of cod, valued at $8,500; 300,000 herrings, valued at $4,200; 3,870 bushels of clams, valued at $2,535; 9,250 gallons of clams, dressed, valued at $5,413; and 4,000 lobsters, valued at $300; amounting in all to $20,948, as the yearly product of the sea and river.

The town has three Congregational churches, one of which is at Linebrook, a quiet village in the westerly section, one Methodist, one Episcopal, and one Catholic church; it has nine public schools, one of which is a high school; a public library, founded by the munificence of the late Augustine Heard, Esq.; a public reading-room; a good hotel, — "the Agawam House"; a well-conducted public journal, "The Ipswich Chronicle," established in 1872; a savings bank, incorporated in 1869; and a handsome granite monument, costing $2,800, erected in memory of its soldiers lost in the late war. It has also the John T. Heard Masonic Lodge, the Agawam Lodge of Odd Fellows, and a lodge of Good Templars. The principal village is neatly built on both sides of the Ipswich River, is well shaded by ancient elm-

trees, and presents a very neat and prosperous appearance. The First Congregational church is literally founded on a rock, and the architecture of the Episcopal church is unique and elegant. The ancient cemetery on the western slope of Town Hill is still in use.

Proceeding from the railway station along Market Street, and arriving at the well-shaded common, we have on high rocky land in front, the First Congregational church, surmounted by a vane that has come down from former generations, and on our right, the Ipswich Female Academy, the parsonage, the well-constructed library building, and the Methodist church. In the rear of the library, and on another street, stands the elegant Episcopal church. Crossing the common by the Congregational church, and towards the west, we come to the ancient "Agawam House," whence, moving northerly, we pass the old "Norton House," and soon arrive at the old burial-place, where

"The rude forefathers of the hamlet sleep."

Returning, we leave the Roman Catholic church, distinguished by its cross, upon our right, and then passing Choate Bridge, and by the elegant mansion of Mr. Heard on our left, and the ancient residence of Dr. Dana on the right, we reach the substantial edifice of the Second Congregational church.

The citizens of Ipswich are intelligent, industrious, and very much attached to their beautiful town. Agriculture, manufactures, and fishing occupy their attention mainly; and their schools and religious institutions are well supported. The people of Linebrook, four miles west of the principal settlement, are mostly farmers, and lead very quiet and peaceful lives. Remote from a railway, this village, still inhabited by descendants of the original settlers, reminds one of the rural pictures drawn by Goldsmith, and "while the world is ever changing, changes not."

"Ipswich," says Joseph H. Bragdon, "has acquired some reputation as a watering place. The beach, some miles from the centre of the town, is an attractive and healthful place; and the lower end of Plum Island, which belongs to the town, is one of the finest resorts for water parties in the county. There are few towns better suited to the invalid than this. The clear air and general quietness, with the fine drives and walks, are highly beneficial to health."

The town has much improved within the last twenty years. Several new streets have been opened, two of which, County and Central streets, with their lines of commodious buildings, add much to the beauty of the place, as well as to the convenience of the people. Fruit culture has of late received much attention, and George Haskell, Esq., has, by singular persistence, succeeded in producing several new and hardy varieties of grapes, which in flavor much resemble those of foreign growth.

Originally Ipswich embraced the present towns of Essex and Hamilton. When first discovered by the English, the land was owned and occupied by a small tribe of Indians, whose chief, or sagamore, bore the name of Masconomo, and the place was known as *Agawam*, or "The Fishing Station." These aborigines were dressed in skins; they wore a single lock of hair upon the summit of the head; and, with faces rudely painted, made a very grotesque and hideous appearance. They dwelt in huts, called wigwams, and subsisted mainly on wild animals, fish, and Indian corn. They frequently engaged in war with tribes in the vicinity, but were kindly disposed towards the English settlers.

Masconomo's possessions extended from the Merrimac River to Salem on the south, and from the sea to Cochicewick, now Andover, on the west. He was friendly to the English; and when the fleet which brought over the settlers of Boston anchored at Cape Ann, in 1630, he gave the people welcome, and spent some time on board of one of the ships. "In the morning," says Gov. John Winthrop, "the Sagamore of Agawam (Masconomo) and one of his men came aboard our ship, & staid with us all day." But in July of the year following it was ordered by the Court that "the Sagamore of Agawam is banished from coming into any Englishman's house for a year under penalty of ten beaver skins." This was probably done through fear of the Tarratines, with whom he was at war, and who, on the 8th of August following, attacked him and his friends in his wigwam at Ipswich. He himself was wounded in the affray, seven of his men were killed, and the wife of Montowampate was taken captive. She was, however, ransomed, and sent home in September. The few English settlers were at this time saved from the tomahawks of the Tarratines by information given to them by an Indian named Robin, who said that armed Indians in forty canoes would lay in wait for them under "the brow of the hill," while four of the enemy were leading them down to the water's edge to trade. Aware of the stratagem, the English, by the aid of an old drum and a few guns, frightened the Tarratines away. The warning of their hostile intentions was given by Robin to John Perkins, "living then in a little hut upon his father's island on this side of Jeoffrey's Neck."

Masconomo sold, March 13, 1638, "his fee in the soil of Ipswich" to John Winthrop, Jr., for the sum of £20. The record of the deed has been preserved: "I Masconnomet, Sagamore of Agawam, do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr John Winthrop the sum of £20, in full satisfaction of all the right, property & claim I have, or ought to have, unto all the land lying & being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called now by the English, as well as such land as I formerly reserved unto my own use at Chebacco, as also all other land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr Dummer's farm excepted only; and I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, islands, huntings & fishings; with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatever else is, or may be, in, or upon the said ground to me belonging: and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the premises & parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs & assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever. Witness my hand. 28th of June 1638. MASCOUNOMET his + mark.

"Witness hereunto, John Joyliffe, James Downing, Thomas Caytimore, Robert Harding."

We learn from the colonial records, March 5, 1639, that Masconomo was to have his gun, broken by the governor's servant, mended, and that he had permission to kill fowl and deer. On the 5th of November, the town was required to pay John Winthrop, Jr., the amount which he paid the sagamore for his land. Soon afterwards, the Indians of Agawam were disarmed, through fear of treachery on their part; but in September, 1642, it was ordered that their arms should be restored to them. On the 8th of March, 1644, Masconomo and other sachems appeared in a Court, held in Boston, put themselves under the protection of the government of Massachusetts, and desired to be instructed in respect to the principles of Christianity. When they had answered the questions proposed by the Court, they presented to it "twenty six fathom of wampum," and the Court in turn "gave each of them a coat of two yards of cloth and their dinner; and to them & their men, every one of them, a cup of sack at their departure; so they took leave, & went away very joyful." In 1646, Masconomo received 10*s.* from the government for killing wolves.

On the 21st of February, 1655, the town allowed the "seven men" to grant six acres of planting land to Masconomo, and on the 18th of June, 1658, the town permitted his widow "to enjoy that parcel of land which her husband had fenced in." The noble chieftain had died in March preceding, and his gun was buried with him, on Sagamore Hill, at the Hamlet. "Idle curiosity, wanton, sacrilegious sport," says Dr. Felt, "prompted an individual to dig up the remains of this chief, and carry his skull on a pole through Ipswich streets. Such an act of barbarity was severely frowned on, and speedily visited with the retributions of civil justice." The red faces gradually dwindled away before the civilization of the white men. In 1671, two or three acres of land were granted by the town to Ned, "to plant during his life, in some convenient place, if he fence it sufficiently with stone wall"; and Dec. 23, 1678, the town granted provisions to "several Indians living in a wigwam." On the 27th of February, 1683, a small quantity of land was laid out for *Ned* and his family, and "the old sagamore's daughter & her children." As late as 1690, Ned was still living, and, with another Indian by the name of Robert, assisted by the town. Three Indian families were living at the Hamlet as late as 1726, after which but little is said of the aborigines in this place. Their remains are sometimes exhumed; and tomahawks, gouges, pestles and mortars, and arrow-heads, all made of stone, are from time to time discovered in digging cellars and wells, or in making similar excavations. The Indian forts were on Tilton's Hill, Treadwell's Island, and at Jeffrey's, or Great Neck; but nothing now remains of them. The Indian had but little art or care to perpetuate himself; and, even if he had effected it, no very important service would have been rendered by it to mankind. His story is a sad one; and its lesson is that something above nature is demanded for the civilization of the world.

In the year 1611, Edward Hardie, or Harlie, and Nicholas Hobson, who came to New England on a voyage of discovery, landed at Agawam, where they remained a few days, and were hospitably entertained by the natives. They were the first Englishmen who visited

Essex County. Three years later, Capt. John Smith thus deseribed Agawam: "Here are many rising hills & on their tops and descents are many eorne fields and delightful groues. On the east is an isle [Plum Island] of two or three leagues in length; the one halfe plaine marish ground, fit for pasture or salt ponds, with many faire high groues of mulberry trees. There are also oakes, pines, walnuts and other wood, to make this plaee an excellent habitation."

In his "New England Prospeet," William Wood, who returned to England, Aug. 15, 1633, speaks of Agawam as "one of the most spatious plaees for a plantation; being neare the sea, it abounds with fish, and flesh of fowles and beasts, great meads and marshes and plaine ploughing grounds, many good rivers and harbours, and no rattlesnakes." He says, also, that "as yet searce any inhabitants."

It was probably from the eircumstanees above mentioned, the abundanee of fish, the extensive salt marshes, the exeellenee of the timber, and the pleasantness of the situation, that the English were induced to seleet Agawam for a plaee of settlement. This was permanently eommenced in March, 1633, by John Winthrop, son of Gov. John Winthrop, and twelve others, whose names, with the exception of three unknown, are as follows: Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., John Biggs, Mr. William Clerk, Robert Coles, John Gage, Thomas Hardy, Thomas Howlet, William Perkins, William Serjeant, and Mr. John Sellan. Thomas Sellan was permitted by the Court, June 11th, to join them. Other settlers, by the permission of the Court, soon followed, some of whose deseendants still remain in the plaee.

Dr. Felt gives the following names of settlers, up to 1652, without changing the original orthography. The date refers only to the name immediately preceding it.

Andrews, Robert, 1635; Appleton, Samuel, 1637; Avery, William, Archer, Henry, Andrews, John, 1639; Annable, John, 1639; Adams, William, Andrews, Richard, 1643; Averil, William, 1648; settled at Chebaeco; Appleton, John, Ayres, John; Braeey, Mr. Thomas, 1635; Bradstreet, Dudley, Bradstreet, Humphrey, Bradstreet, Mr. Simon, Bartholomew, William, Bishop, Thomas, 1636; Bishop, Nathaniel, 1637; Bixbey, Nathaniel, Browining, Thomas, Boreman, Thomas, Brown, Edward, 1638; Burnam, John, Baker, John, Button, Mathias, 1639; Bird, Thomas, Belcher, Jeremy, Bellingham, Mr. Richard, Bosworth, Nathaniel, Bird, Jathuell, Boreman, Samuel, Bachellor, Mr., 1640; Brown, John, 1642; Beaeham, Robert, Bitgood, Richard, Bachellor, Henry, Brower, Thomas, Buckley, William, 1643; Bridges, Edmund, 1644; Burnam, Thomas, 1647; Bosworth, Haniel, 1648; Bragg, Edward, Betts, Richard, Birdley, Gyles, Bishop, Job, Bixbey, Joseph, 1649; Carr, George, 1633; Currin, Matthias, 1634; Cross, John, 1635; Cogswell, Mr. John, settled at Chebacco; Covengton, John, Clark, Daniel, 1636; Clark, Thomas, 1637; Cross, Robert, Challis, Philip, Colebeye, Arthur, Comesone, Symond, Cooley, John, 1638; Cartwright, Michael, Cacharne, Henry, Crane, Robert, Comings, Isaae, Caeharne, Edward, 1639; Chute, Lionel, Castell, Robert, Cowley, John, 1642; Chelson, Robert, 1644; Chapman, Edward, Chute, James, 1648; Catcheame, John, Clark, Malachi, Choate, John, settled at Chebaeco; Cogswell, William, do. Colborne, Robert, Dillingham, John, 1634; Dudley, Mr. Thomas, 1635; Dudley, Mr. Samuel, Dennison, Mr. Daniel, Dorman, Thomas, 1636; Dix, widow, 1638; Dane, John, Davis, John, 1639; Dane, John, Jr., 1642; Duglas, William, Davis, Richard, Dane, Francis, Day, Robert, Dennison, John, 1647; Dutch, Robert, 1648; Dix, Ralph, Elliot, ——, 1634; Easton, Mr. Nicholas, Emerson, Thomas, 1638; English, William, Eppes, Daniel, Mr., Emerson, Joseph, Emerson, John, Franklin, William, 1634; Fuller, John, Fawne, Mr. John, Fuller, William, 1635; Fowler, Philip, Foster, William, Firman, Mr. Thomas, French, Mr. Thomas, French, Edward, 1637; French, Thomas, Jr., 1638; Filbrick, Robert, 1639; Firman, Dr. Giles, Farnum, Ralph, Fellows, William, 1642; Foster, Abraham, 1648; French, John, Goodhue, William, 1635; Gardner, Edmund, Giddinge, George, Graves, Robert, 1638; Gibson, Thomas, Greenfield, Samuel, Gilven, Thomas, 1639; Green, Henry, 1642; Gutterson, William, 1648; Granger, Lancelot, Gilbert, Humphrey, Greene, Thomas, Griffen, Humphrey, 1651; Gillman, Edward, Hubbard, Mr. William, 1635; Hassell, John, Haffield, Richard, Hall, Samuel, 1636; Hart, Nathaniel, Harris, Thomas, Heldred, William, 1637; Hayes, Robert, Hovey, Daniel, Hauchet, John, 1638; Humphrey, ——, 1639; Huttley, Richard, Hadley, George, Hodges, Andrew, Hart, Thomas, 1641; Hoyt, John, Howe, James, 1642; Hunter, Robert, 1647; Heard, Luke, Heiphar, William, 1648; Harris, Anthony, Harris, Thomas, Harindin, Edward, 1651; Jeffrey, William, before 1633; Jackson, John, 1635; Johnson, John, Jordan, Francis, Jacob, Richard, Jennings, Richard, 1636; Jordan, Stephen, 1637; Knight, Alexander, 1635; Kent, Richard, Kinsman, Robert, Kemball, Richard, 1637; Kingsbury, Henry, 1638; Knight, Mr. William, Kemball, Henry, Knowlton, John, 1639; Knowlton, William, 1642; Knowlton, Thomas, Knight, Aleph, Kemball, Richard, Jr., 1648; Laneton, Roger, 1635; Lord, Robert, 1636; Lamson, William, 1637; Ladd, Daniel, Lord, Katherine, widow, Lumkin, Richard, 1638; Lee, John, 1640; Lee, Thomas, 1642; Lumas, Edward, Lumas, Richard, Low, Thomas, 1643; Lovell, Thomas, 1647; Long, Samuel, 1648; Laneton, Joseph, Long, Philip, Layton, John, Leigh, Joseph, 1651; Manning, John, 1634; Moody, William, 1635; Metcalf, Joseph, Mussey, John, Mussey, Robert, Merriall, John, 1636; Mosse, Joseph, 1637; Morse, John, 1638; Medcalf, Thomas, Miller, William, Mohey, Robert, 1639; Newman, John, 1634; Norton, Mr. John, 1636; Norton, Mr. William, Northe, John, 1637; Newmarch, John, 1638; Nichols, Richard, Newman, Thomas, 1639; Osgood, Christopher, 1635; Perkins, John, 1634; Perkins, John, Jr., Parker, Mr. Thomas, Proctor, John, 1635; Perley, Allen, Pebody, Francis, 1636; Pike, ——, Mr., 1637; Purrier, William, Perkins, Isaac, Paine, William, 1638; Perry, Thomas, 1642; Pitney, James, 1639; Preston, Roger, Paine, Robert, 1640; Pettis, John, Pingrey, Moses, Pinder, Henry, Podd, Daniel, Perkins, Jacob, 1648; Pinder, John, Pingrey, Aaron, Podd, Samuel, Pearpoynt, Robert, Pendleton, Mr. Bryan, Prichard, William, 1649; Palmer, George, Potter, Anthony, Quilter, Mark, 1637; Robinson, John, 1634; Rogers, Mr. Nathaniel, 1636; Reading, Joseph, 1637; Rawlinsone, Thomas, Robinson, John, 1638; Reddin, John, 1642; Roberts, Robert, 1644; Ringe, Daniel, 1648; Rawlinsone, Thomas, Jr., Roffe, Ezra, Roffe, Daniel, Shatswell, John, 1633; Symonds, Mark, 1634; Spencer, John, Sewall, Mr. Henry, Saltonstall, Mr. Richard, 1635; Short, Anthony, Short, Henry, Symonds, William, Sayward, Edmund, Saunders, John, Sherrat, Hugh, Scott, Thomas, Sherman, Samuel, 1636; Seaverns, John, Sawyer, Edmund, Symonds, Mr. Samuel, 1637; Silver, Thomas, 1638; Sherman, Thomas, Scott, Robert, Stacy, Lianon, Swinder, William, Smith, Thomas, 1639; Story, Andrew, Safford, Thomas, 1641; Scofield, Richard, 1642; Setchell, Theophilus, Smith, Richard, Silsbee, Henry, 1647; Smith, George, 1648; Story, William, Stacy, Thomas, Stone, Nathaniel, Scott, Thomas, Jr., Satchwell, Richard, Smith, Robert, Salter, Theophilus, Tuttle, John, 1635; Treadwell, ——, Mr., Treadwell, Edward, 1737; Turner, ——, Capt., Thornton, John, Treadwell, John, 1638; Treadwell, Thomas, Taylor, Samuel, Thomson, Simon, 1639; Tingley, Palmer, Varnum, George, 1635; Vincent, Mr. Humphrey, 1637; Ward, Mr. Nathaniel, 1634; Williamson, Paul, 1635; Wyatte, John, Wainwright, Francis, Wells, Thomas, Webster, John, White, William, said to be the first English settler at Chebaceo; Whityear, John, Wade, Mr. Jonathan, Woodmansee, ——, Mr., Wythe, Mr. Humphrey, Wilson, Mr. Theophilus, 1636; Wedgwood, John, 1637; Whitred, William, Williamson, Michael, Warren, William, Wattles, Richard, Whittingham, Mr. John, Whipple, Matthew, 1638; settled at the Hamlet; Whipple, John, Wilkinson, Henry, Whitman, Robert, Wallis, Robert, 1639; Warner, Daniel, 1642; Windall, Thomas, 1643; Wood, Daniel, Capt., 1644; Whittingham, Mr. Thomas, 1645; Woodman, John, 1648; Warren, Abraham, Walderne, Abraham, Ward, Doct. John, Whipple, John, Jr., Whitred, Thomas, Walderne, Edward, West, John, Wooddam, John, Warner, John, Wood, Obadiah, 1649; Walker, Henry, 1651; Younglove, Samuel, 1635.

The settlers of Ipswich were men of intelligence, and of sterling virtue. They were "of good rank & quality, many of them having had a considerable revenue from lands in England before they emigrated." Of the ten governor's assistants, no less than four of them,—Bellingham, Saltonstall, Symonds, and Bradstreet, at one time resided at Ipswich. Mrs. Anne (Dudley) Bradstreet, wife of the last-named assistant, and daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley, was a popular poetess in her day, and wrote the first volume of poems ever published in New England. It is entitled "The Tenth Muse, lately sprung up in Americe," &c. Her favorite authors were Sir Philip Sidney, and Du Bartas, and hence Nathaniel Ward says of her: —

"The Authoresse was a right Du Bartas girle." As a specimen of her poetry, her account of the flowers and the little bird in spring may be sufficient.

"The primrose pale and azure violet,
Among the verdurous grass hath nature set,
That when the sun [on's love] the earth doth shine,
These might, as love, set out her garments fine;
The fearful bird his little house now builds,
In trees, in walls, in cities and in fields;
The outside strong, the inside warm and neat,
A natural artificer complete."

Mrs. Bradstreet had eight children of whom she thus speaks: —

"I had eight birds hatched in the nest;
Four cocks there were, and hens the rest;
I nursed them up with pain and care,
For cost, nor labor did I spare,
Till at the last they felt their wing,
Mounted the trees, and learned to sing."

She died, Sept. 16, 1672, at the age of sixty years.

John Winthrop, Jr., the founder of the town, was born in Groton, Eng., Feb. 12, 1606, graduated at Dublin University, 1625, was, in 1627, in the expedition for the relief of the Huguenots at Rochelle, and came to New England in 1631, soon after which he was chosen a magistrate. He did not long remain at Ipswich. His wife dying, in 1634, he returned to England in the autumn of that year. In a letter dated Dec. 12, 1634, his father, Gov. John Winthrop, says to him, then in London: "Mr. Ward continues at your house this winter, and Mr. Clerk (to give him content) in his own. Mr. Cl. finds much fault with your servants John & Sarah, and tells me that they will not earn their bread, and that Ned is worth them all."

He returned the year following, and settled in Connecticut, of which State he was for several years the governor. He was a fine scholar, and one of the founders of the Royal Society of London. His death occurred at Boston, April 5, 1676.

The reasons assigned for settling this wilderness were: "that the ancient faith & true worship might be found inseparable companions in their practice & that their posterity might be undefiled in their religiou."

Giles Firmin and John Dane were the first two physicians in the place.

Increasing rapidly in numbers, the inhabitants of Agawam were incorporated as a town, under the name of Ipswich, Aug. 5, 1634, "in acknowledgment," says Winthrop, "of the great honor and kindness done to our people who took shipping there," i.e., Ipswich, Suffolk County, England.

The style of living of these early settlers may be inferred from the following stanza of an old song written by some poet of those days:

"If fresh meat be wanting to fill up our dish,
We have carrots and pumpkins and turnips and fish;
And if there's a mind for a delicate dish,
We haste to the clam banks and take what we wish."

A meeting-house was erected in 1634, of which Johnson says, in 1646, that it is "a very good prospect to a great part of the town & beautifully built." He also says: "The Church of Christ here consists of 160 souls, being exact in their conversation & free from epidemicall disease of all Reforming Churches which under Christ is procured by their pious & orthodox ministry."

The early settlers had, at least, one sermon from the governor, the record of which is April 3, 1634, "The governour [John Winthrop] went on foot to Agawam, and because the people there wanted a minister, spent the Sabbath with them, & exercised by way of prophesy and returned home the 10th."

The famous version of the Psalms, by Sternhold and Hopkins, was used in public worship, and fire-arms were carried to the church for defence against wild beasts and the savages. None but freemen were allowed to vote in civil affairs, or hold office; and none but members of the church could be made freemen. The lands were mostly what were called "common lands," which were held by freemen and the right of commonage, or use of such lands, was granted to settlers as their circumstances might require.

. "Their houses," says Johnson, in 1646, "are many of them very faire built with pleasant gardens." Robert Andrews was licensed, Sept. 3, 1635, "to keep an ordinary"; and, on the 12th of March, 1638, "Mr Samuel Symonds is appointed to sell 'strong water.'" A court is opened in town as early as 1636, and, in 1638, Mr. Samuel Symonds and Samuel Appleton were appointed to assist in it. It seems, also, that there was a jail here, as early as 1637, for, on the 28th of September of this year, John Williams was hanged in Boston for the murder of John Haddy near the great pond, both of whom had escaped from Ipswich prison.

In 1635, Richard Saltonstall had liberty from the town to set up a grist-mill, the toll being one-sixteenth of the grain.

The roads were then merely Indian trails or bridle-paths. "I came to Ipswich," says John Dane, in his diary, about 1638, "alone [from Roxbury] when there was no path but what the Indians had made. Sometimes I was in it, & sometimes out of it." The dwelling-houses were of wood, with gable roofs, the upper story jutting about one foot over the lower one. They were covered with thatch obtained from the marshes.

In 1634, a church was organized, it being the tenth established in New England, and the Rev. Nathaniel Ward, author of the "Simple Cobler of Aggawam," and whose life has been carefully written by John Ward Dean, M. A., became the first regular pastor. The Rev. Thomas Parker, whom Mr. Ward found on his arrival preaching here, was appointed teacher of the church; but, in the ensuing spring, he removed, with about 100 of his followers, to Newbury, where he was chosen pastor.

Of the 175 men raised by the Colony, April 18, 1637, for the second expedition against the Pequot Indians, Ipswich furnished a quota of 23, and Boston 26.

After the departure of the Rev. Thomas Parker from Ipswich, Mr. Ward had for his colleagues, successively, the Rev. Thomas Bracey and the Rev. John Norton; but, his health declining, he was soon obliged to resign his pastorate, "that being left to his liberty hee might Preach more seldom." He was, therefore, dismissed in 1636, but did not return to England until about ten years later. He was a man of sterling abilities, and died in Shenfield, Eng., about the year 1652.

Of the morality of the people among whom he lived in this country, he thus speaks: "I thank God that I have lived in a Colony of many thousand English, these twelve years, and am held a very sociable man. Yet I may considerately say, I never heard but one oathe nor never saw but one man drunke, nor ever heard of three women Adultresses, in all that time that I can call to minde. If these sinnes bee amongst us privily, the Lorde heale us. I would not bee understood to boast of our innocency; there is no cause I should, our hearts may be bad enough & our lives much better."

Mr. Ward had inscribed over his mantel-piece the Latin words, *Sobrie*, *Juste*, *Pie*, and *Loete*, and had, according to Cotton Mather, one godly speech that was worth all his witty speeches, which was: "I have only two comforts to Live upon: the one is the Perfections of Christ; the other is the Imperfections of Christians."

Mr. Ward preached the election sermon before the General Court, in 1641, and to him the Colony was indebted wholly or in part for the *Body of Liberties*, which was "the First Code of laws established in New England."

The "Simple Cobler of Aggawam" was a favorite of Robert Southey, and in an old copy of it, once owned by the poet laureate, many choice passages, as the following, are marked in pencil: "The least truth of God's kingdom doth in its place uphold the whole kingdom of his Truths; take away the least *vericulum* out of the world & it unworlds all potentially, and may unravel the whole texture actually, if it be not conserved by an arm of extraordinary power." So, in regard to the fashionable style of dress, he says: "When I consider how women have tripe-wifed themselves with their cladments, I have no heart to the voyage, lest their nauseous shapes and the sea should work too sorely on my stomach. I speak sadly; methinks it should break the hearts of Englishmen to see so many goodly English-women imprisoned in French cages, peering out of their hood-holes for some man of mercy to help them with a little wit, and nobody relieves them. . . . I honor the woman that can honor herself with her attire: a good text always deserves a fair margent."

Mr. Ward was something of a poet. He calls the following lines for King Charles, and appended to the "Simple Cobler of Aggawam," "Driving in a half a dozen plain country hob nails."

"There, lives cannot be good,
There, faith cannot be sure,
Where truth cannot be quiet
Nor ordinances pure.

No king can king it right,
Nor rightly sway his rod;
Who truly loves not Christ
And truly fears not God.

He cannot rule a land,
As lands should ruled been
That lets himself be rul'd
By a ruling Roman Queen.

No earthly man can be
True subject to his state;
Who makes the Pope his Christ,
An heretique his mate.

There peace will go to war
And silence make a noise:
When upper things will not
With nether equipoise.

The upper world shall rule,
While stars will run their race
The nether world obey
While people keep their place."

The Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, born in Haverhill, Eng., 1598, was ordained pastor of the church, Feb. 20, 1637–38, the Rev. Mr. Norton continuing to act as colleague. Mr. Rogers was eminent as a scholar and a preacher.

Mr. Rogers continued in his pastorate here until his death, July 3, 1665, and was beloved and respected by his people. He has been sometimes erroneously called a grandson of John Rogers, the martyr. He published, in 1644, "The Cause of God's wrath against the Nation," and left a Latin MS. concerning church government. His colleague, John Norton, born at Bishops Stortford, Herts, Eng., May 6, 1606, and possessing marked abilities, took an active part in the affairs of the infant Colony, and assisted in 1648 in forming the Cambridge Platform. He left Ipswich in 1652, and, ten years later, was sent with Simon Bradstreet to address King Charles II. He wrote the first book in Latin prose composed in this country, and encouraged the persecutions against the Quakers, which so exasperated them that, after his death, which occurred at Boston, April 5, 1663, they sent this message to the king and parliament: "John Norton, chief priest in Boston, by the immediate power of the Lord, was smitten & died."

The house in which Mr. Norton lived in Ipswich is still, or was until lately, standing.

Daniel Denison was, in 1637, appointed captain of the military company, which was to meet for drill eight times per annum. The meeting-house was used, as early as 1640, for a watch-house, and T. Howlett was allowed, in 1643, 5*s*. for two loads of wood to be used in watching.

On the 6th of September, 1638, William Foster is ordered, on account of his religious opinions, to leave the jurisdiction. Nicholas Easton, who subsequently became governor of Rhode Island, had previously followed Anne Hutchinson to Newport. Samuel Sherman and Mr. Foster had, in 1637, been deprived of fire-arms, for their adherence to the doctrines held by this woman. The days of religious toleration were long in coming, and the clergy were in the main to blame for it.

In 1641, Messrs. Bradstreet, Paine, Denison, Tuttle, Saltonstall, and Matthew and John Whipple, were appointed to set up buoys, and beacons, and to provide salt, cotton, sowing hempseed, flaxseed, and card-wire.

The town was in early times much infested with wolves, which not only made havoc of the sheep, but terrified the children, and it was ordered in 1642 that, "whosoever kills a wolf is to have —— and the skin, if he nail the head up at the meeting-house and give notice to the constables. Also for the better destroying, or fraying away wolves from the town, it is ordered that 1st day of 7th mo. every householder whose estate is rated £500, and upward, shall keep a sufficient mastive dog, or £100 to £500, shall provide a sufficient hound or beagle, to the intent that they be in readines, to hunt and be employed to the ends aforesaid."

The "Seven men" are ordered this year "to see that children, neglected by their parents, are employed, learned to read and understand the principles of religion and the capital laws of the country, and, if necessary, be bound out to service."

An order was issued for Ipswich, Rowley, and Newbury, to send forty men, Sept. 2, 1642, to disarm Passaconaway, sachem of the Pentucket Indians, who were suspected of hostile intentions towards the English. The soldiers were to receive one, and the officers two shillings per day. It does not appear that either Passaconaway or Masconomo ever cherished hostile intentions towards the English. They were noble specimens of the aboriginal race.

The first free school opened in the town was in 1642; it was also among the first of the kind in the country; perhaps in the world.

In the same year Dr. Samuel Bellingham, and the Rev. William Hubbard, of this town, graduated at Harvard College.

In 1644, five pounds, or a cow, is to be paid to Ipswich, by order of Mr. Richard Andrews, haberdasher, of London.

Nov. 7, 1645, the town was called to lament the death of its schoolmaster, Mr. Lionel Chute.

In 1646, the town had come to contain as many as 146 families.

John Whittingham died here in 1648, "a godly & faithful man." He was a grandson of John Calvin, of Geneva, and came to Ipswich as early as 1638.

How rigidly the people were brought up to the performance of religious duties, may be seen from the following record:—

"Sept. 1649, Thomas Scott upon his presentiment is fyned ten shillings unless he learn Mr Nortons chatechise by next Court."

"Jo: Lee, accused [the same year] for stealing of a Bible of the widow Haffield, is proved guilty; he shall returu 15*s* to the widow & pay x*s*. for lying."

Oct. 17, "Ipswich is allowed two fifths of Plum Island." Thatch for covering houses was obtained from it, or the marshes near it. The marshes also afforded an abundant supply of salt hay, which, prior to the introduction of what is called English hay, was very valuable.

The town, ever alive to the interests of education, granted to Robert Pain and others, for the support of the grammar school, all the neck of land beyond Chebacco River, as far as the line of Gloucester, and the grantees leased the same for the term of 1,000 years at £14 per annum. A grammar-school lot was also about the same time granted, together with several rights on Jeffrey's Neck, for the same purpose. Two years later Robert Paine gave the use of a dwelling-house and two acres of land to the teacher. The school in those days attained great celebrity, and sent forth many young men to Harvard College. From Dec. 30, 1650, to November, 1660, it was under the direction of Mr. Ezekiel Cheever, one of the most distinguished teachers of that period. He was born iu London, Jan. 25, 1616, and died in Boston, Aug. 21, 1708. He came to Boston in 1637, and iu the year following assisted in founding New Haven, Coun., where he wrote his famous "Accidence, a Short Introduction to the Latiu Tongue." This little book had, in 1785, passed through twenty editions, and guided thousands into the mysteries of that language. He was subsequently master of the Latin school in Boston. His son, Samuel, was the first minister of Marblehead. Mr. Cheever was succeeded in the grammar school by Thomas Andrews, 1662–1683; Noadiah Russel, 1683–1687; Daniel Rogers, — –1716; Ebenezer Gay, 1716–1717; Benjamin Crocker, 1717–1726, 1746–1753, 1759–1761; Henry Wise, 1726–1728; Thomas Norton, Jr., 1729–1740; Daniel Staniford, 1740–1746; John Dennis, 1753–1754; Samuel Wigglesworth, Jr., 1755–1759; Joseph How, 1761; Daniel Noyes, 1762, several years; Nathaniel Dodge, 1779–1780; Jacob Kimball, 1781–1783; John Treadwell, 1783–1785; Daniel Dane, 1792–1793; Joseph Dana, 1793–1794; Joseph McKean, 1794–1796; Samuel Dane, 1796–1800; Amos Choate, 1800–1806. The school was taught in the town house from about 1705 to 1794, and is now merged in the public high school.

On the 28th of September, 1652, a man was sentenced at Ipswich Court to pay 20*s*., or be whipped, for "having familiarity with the devil." It is not stated which punishment he preferred. In such proceeding we see the rim of that dark cloud which culminated in the witchcraft delusion of 1692. After the decease of the first settlers of this State the tendency was towards darkness for almost a century. There was, indeed, little or no improvement in the style of living, building, thinking, teaching, or worshipping visible until about the middle of the eighteenth century. Books were few and money hard to obtain. The means of earning a livelihood engrossed the attention of the people.

The Rev. Thomas Cobbett, born in Newbury, Eng., 1608, educated at Oxford University, and for many years a colleague of the Rev. Samuel Whiting, of Lynn, was settled over the church at Ipswich in 1656, and continued in pastorate until his death, which occurred Nov. 5, 1685. He was remarkable for his confidence in the result of prayer, and gives two instances of what he considered as answers to his petitious: "When Mr Moody by post sent hither, sent me the first news of his taking [that is, Mr Cobbett's son] by the Indians, and their further rage in those parts, calling out for further prayers—I presently caused one of our Deacons to call to my house that very day, as many godly men & theyr wives as were near us, to spend some hours in prayer about the same; about 30 met; several of them prayed; Capt Lord was with them in it & with me also who began & ended that service; and having beg'd some amends of our wasted son Eleazer at home as a pledge of the desired mercies to our captived son abroad as granted, my heart I must acknowledge to the Lord's praise was sweetly guided in the course of that service & I was even persuaded that the Lord had heard our prayers in that respect aud could not but express as much to some of our godly friends; so was one of our sisters (as since she informed my wife) as confidently persuaded that she could ere long see him returned, and that in comfortable plight as if he were already come." The son referred to as taken by the Indians was Thomas Cobbett, Jr., who, in 1676, was carried by them to Penobscot, and, after being detained several weeks, was liberated by the sachem, *Modokawando*, to whom a red coat was presented for this act of kindness. Mr. Cobbett says his son, Eleazer, soon begau to recover, "insomuch that he who heretofore could not walk up & down the town without staggering, could yet walk up that high hill (which you know of) that is by Mr Norton's, now our house." [Lewis's History of Lynn, p. 238.]

In 1666 he preached the election sermon, and he "wrote more books," it is said, "than any one of the early ministers of New England."

On the day after his decease it was "voted That some persons be appointed to look to the burning of the wine and the heating of the cider against the time appointed for the funeral." On this occasion there were used "one barrel of wine, £6 8*s*; two barrels of cider, 11*s*; 82 pounds of sugar, £2 1*s*; half a cord of wood, 4*s*; four dozen pairs of gloves, for men & women, £5 4*s*; with some spice & ginger for the cider."

Cotton Mather wrote his epitaph, which is very good:

"Sta viator; thesaurus hic jacet;
THOMAS COBBETTUS;
Cujus, nostri preces potentissimus, ac mores probatissimus,
Si es Nov-Anglus,
Mizare, se pietatem colas;
Sequere, si felicitatem optes."

The early settlers of Ipswich were intelligent, and exhibited wisdom in the selection of their ministers. The Rev. William Hubbard, born in England, 1621, and a member of the first class graduated at Harvard College 1642, was ordained as colleague of Mr. Cobbett, Nov. 17, 1658. According to Eliot, he "certainly was for many years the most eminent minister in the county of Essex; equal to any in the province for learning & candour, and superior to all his contemporaries as a writer."

John Dunton, who made him a visit in 1686, says: "The benefit of Nature & the Fatigue of Study, have equally contributed to his Eminence, neither are we less oblig'd to both than himself, for he freely communicates of his Learning to all who have the happiness to share in his converse.—In a word, he's learned without Ostentation & vanity, and gives all his Productions such a delicate Turn and Grace (as is seen in his Printed Sermons & History of the Indian Wars) that the Features and Lineaments of the Child, make a clear Distinction and Discovery of the Father; yet is he a Man of singular Modesty, of strict Morals, and has done as much for the Conversion of the Indians as most Men in New England."

He married, for his first wife, Margaret, only daughter of the Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, and in his seventy-third year, Mary, the widow of Samuel Pearce, which gave some dissatisfaction to his people, "for though she was a serious, worthy woman, she was rather in the lower scenes of life and not sufficiently fitted, as they though, for the station." On relinquishing his salary in 1703, sixty pounds was voted to him as a gratuity. The manner of his death is thus recorded: Thursday, 14th September, 1704, he "goes to ye Lecture, after to Col. Apleton's, goes home, sups, and dyes that night."

The expenses of his funeral were £32, to aid in paying which the town appropriated, Oct. 17, 1704, the £20 for which the old meeting-house was sold. Among other works, Mr. Hubbard wrote a valuable "History of New England," for which the General Court paid him £50; a second edition of it was printed by W. T. Harris, in 1848. His son, Nathaniel Hubbard, was appointed judge of the Superior Court.

The Rev. John Rogers, son of the Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, graduated at Harvard College in 1649, became an assistant of Mr. Hubbard in 1656, and on the 12th of August, 1683, was installed as president of his Alma Mater; but died on the day after commencement, of the same year. On the 5th of April, 1686, the Rev. John Denison (Harvard College, 1684), became the assistant of Mr. Hubbard, and so continued until his decease, Sept. 14, 1689, in the twenty-fourth year of his age.

A jail was built in Ipswich in 1652, and two years later a house of correction, the inmates being required to work on hemp and flax, as supplied by the selectmen.

It was customary in early times to announce the time of public service by the beating of a drum, or the blowing of a horn; but the church in Ipswich had a bell for this purpose, as early as 1659, since provision was then made to have it rung every evening at nine o'clock. In 1716, it was customary to ring the bell at five o'clock every morning.

How strict the supervision over the young people was at this period may be inferred from a record of the Ipswich court in September, 1660: "Daniel Blake is fined £.5, and respited for £.4, for making love to Edmund Burks daughter without her parents consent."

Here, as in other towns in the Colony, attendance on divine service was rigorously enforced. The General Court empowered the "seven men" of the town, in 1661, to sell the farm of a man, who, living at a distance, had absented himself from church, in order that living nearer the meeting-house he might more conveniently attend public worship.

In 1670, constables were instructed to prevent young people from being out late in the evening, especially on the evening of the Sabbath, and of the lecture and the training day. Two years later it was ordered that laborers should not use intoxicating drink. Roger and Lucretia Derby were fined, March 30, 1675, "for absence from meeting on the sabbath." In 1678, it was wisely ordered that all persons in town should have some employment. In 1681, David Waldron was required to return to his wife, according to law; and an inhabitant was complained of for not teaching a servant to read.

In their homes, the people of Ipswich were never much troubled by the Indians, but they were frequently called upon to furnish men for the defence of other places. Many soldiers were impressed for service during Philip's War, and several were killed. In 1675, Edward Coburn and Thomas Scott were killed at Squakeag. Thomas Manning, Jacob Wainwright, Caleb Kimball, Samuel Whittredge, John Hobbs, Thomas Hobbs, and Benjamin Roper were killed September 18th, at Muddy Brook. Benjamin Tappan was killed the next day. Freegrace Norton and John Pettis were killed at Hatfield, October 10th. On the 30th of November, twenty-eight men were impressed for the Narragansett expedition; and on December 2d eleven men were impressed as troopers for the same service; seven more also to serve under Maj. Appleton. In the battle at Narragansett John Taylor and two others were killed, and twenty-two were wounded. On the 22d of April, 1676, Lieut. R. Jacobs, of Ipswich, was ordered to take command at Marlborough, as Capt. Wadsworth and Capt. Brocklebank had been slain. On the 5th of May the town had to raise its quota of eighty Essex County men for an expedition of six days; and on the 11th of October, its quota of seventy men for an expedition eastward. Of these, James Ford, James Burbec, Samuel Porter, John Poland, and Thomas Burnham were killed, and Isaac Hunnewell was wounded. Defences were thrown up and garrisons established in different parts of the town. "Att Ipswich," says the report of the committee of the county (1676), "wee finde y^{t} there are soe many garrisons as may secure all ye out houses, and for ye towne a generall fortification which is almost compleated."

That section of Ipswich known as Chebacco was organized as the Second Parish Dec. 10, 1679, and became, by act of Legislature, the town of Essex Feb. 18, 1819. Under the head of this town its history may be read. It is sufficient here to say, that, attracted by rich meadows on Chebacco River, the opportunities afforded by the beautiful stream itself for ship-building, fishing, hunting, and for sawing and transporting lumber, many settlers, bearing such well-known names as Perkins, Burnham, Choate, Cogswell, Low, Andrews, Story, Giddings, and Russ, early established themselves in and around a village on the river. Increasing steadily, and finding it inconvenient to attend church far away at Ipswich they made application to the town for leave to build a church. The privilege was not granted, but during the contention, several women, with some assistance from the adjoining towns, raised a building, early in 1679, as a place of worship. For this they were arrested; and the case was finally settled by the General Court, which, having ordered them to make an acknowledgment for their indiscretion, took no farther notice of the matter. A church was formed in 1681, and the Rev. John Wise, eminent as a patriot, as well as preacher, was ordained over it Aug. 12, 1683. He was succeeded by the Rev. Theophilus Pickering, who continued in the pastorate until his death, Oct. 7, 1747. During his ministry Mr. Whitefield preached in Ipswich, and because of Mr. Pickering's opposition to the "New Lights," as the followers of the great pulpit orator were styled, a part of his society seceded and formed another church, over which the Rev. John Cleaveland was installed Feb. 25, 1747. Mr. Pickering was followed by the Rev. Nehemiah Porter, ordained Jan. 3, 1750, and dismissed in June, 1766. On the 26th of October, 1774, the two societies were united, Mr. Cleaveland continuing the pastor until his death, April 22, 1799. He was succeeded, November 13th of the same year, by the Rev. Josiah Webster, who remained in the pastorate until July 23, 1806. The Rev. Thomas Holt was the minister from Jan. 25, 1809, until April 20, 1813, and was followed Aug. 10, 1814, by the Rev. Robert Crowell, who was the pastor when the parish became a town. To the parish and people of Chebacco, Ipswich is indebted for many of the hardy seamen, brave soldiers, and eminent professional men whose lives and characters adorn its records.

The town was startled by a portent in the heavens on the evening of Christmas Day, 1682, of which the Rev. Thomas Cobbett thus wrote to Cotton Mather: "I longed for an opportunity to acquaint you with a portentous sight, like unto which I never read nor heard before, namely of a perfect crosse thorough ye moone, with a pretty long and broad & pale coloured streame like ye colour of ye late comet, though nothing so broad or long as yt was in ye late comet; which streame passed through ye moone from East to West, and from ye North to ye South. It was seene ye 25th of last December, a little afore nine of ye clock at night; seene by ten credible persons, who were occasionally at my house." Such intelligence was always most acceptable to the credulous author of the "Magnalia."

The town voted unanimously, Feb. 11, 1685, against the surrender of the charter which Edward Randolph was then endeavoring to persuade the people to give up; and also "that all those that were desirous to retain the privileges granted in the charter and conferred by his Royal Majesty [Charles II.] now reigning, should manifest the same by holding up their hands, which vote was unanimous in the affirmative."

The obnoxious measures of Sir Edmund Andros were also manfully resisted. When he attempted to levy a tax of 1*d.* on £1, the citizens of Ipswich voted Aug. 23, 1687, "That, as it was against the rights of Englishmen to have rates laid upon them without their consent in an assembly, or Parliament, they would petition the king before they complied with the treasurer's order." The leaders in this opposition to taxation without representation were the Rev. John Wise, of Chebacco, John Andrews, Sr., Robert Kinsman, William Goodhue, Jr., John Appleton, and Thomas French, who were arrested and imprisoned in jail at Boston, "for contempt & high misdemeanor," and there detained for trial. They were found guilty and sent back to prison, where they were held twenty-one days for judgment. This sentence then was given, Edward Randolph being one of the judges: "John Wise, suspended from the ministerial function, fine £50, pay cost, £1,000 bond; John Appleton, not to bear office, fine £50, £1,000 bond; John Andrews, not to bear office, fine £30, pay cost, £500 bond; Robert Kinsman, not to bear office, fine £20, pay cost, £500 bond; William Goodhue, the same; Thomas French, not to bear office, fine £15, pay cost, £500 bond." The bonds were for keeping the peace during one year. The expense for this trial of each man was estimated at £400 or more, and was subsequently paid by the town. The change in affairs in England soon relieved the Colony of Andros, and on the 9th of May, 1689, the Rev. John Wise, a man of energy, and Nehemiah Jewett met with other representatives to consult with the Council in Boston, in respect to measures which the new condition of things demanded.

During "King William's War," extending from 1690 to 1697, Ipswich raised her full quota of men for the defence of the country. The recruits in 1690 were under the command of Major Samuel Appleton; and Nathaniel Rust, of this place, was appointed quartermaster of the Canada expedition.

"Ipswich is still preserved," says Robert Hale, in a letter dated Nov. 25, 1691, "but, as most other towns in this colony, has lost many of its most warlike men by war & sickness."

Mrs. Elizabeth (Jackson) How, wife of James How, of the west part of the town, was tried for witchcraft June 30, 1692, and condemned to death. She was inhumanly executed on Gallows Hill, Salem, July 19th of the same year. She left two daughters, Mary and Abigail, to whom the Province subsequently paid £12 for damages arising from the trial of their mother. The spot where she lived may still be seen at Linebrook. On the 3d of August following, John Proctor, late of Ipswich, being condemned to death for witchcraft, sent in a petition for reprieve, signed by thirty-two of his old neighbors. "More blood!" was the watchword of the day, and he was executed. The jail at Ipswich held a part of the unfortunate victims of this sad delusion; but, before the year had closed, the magistrates themselves began to tremble for their friends and families, and so the tide slowly turned in favor of the prisoners.

In May of the year ensuing the superior court, sitting at Ipswich, cleared several persons accused of witchcraft, and in December following, the town was assessed £51 19*s.* for its part of the expenses incurred by the trial of those charged with witchcraft.

The Rev. John Rogers, who had for some time assisted Mr. Hubbard, was ordained pastor Oct. 12, 1692, and continued here in the work of the ministry until his decease, Dec. 28, 1745. The parish voted £200 (old tenor) to defray the expenses of his funeral. He was a man of strong mind and preached the election sermon, May 26, 1706. He also preached a sermon in September, 1739, on the death of John Appleton, which was printed.

William, son of Thomas and Elizabeth Wade, was killed at sea, April 3, 1797, in a battle with the French.

The third meeting-house was completed in 1700, sixty-six feet long and sixty feet wide, and two years afterwards a clock and dial were purchased for it. A committee was appointed by the town December, 1700, "To appoint all persons where they should sitt in ye new meetinghouse — and also to grant pues in ye places reserved joining to ye walls & sides of ye meeting-house — not to extend above 5 foot & ½ from ye sides of ye house into ye allies." Col. John Wainwright, Lieut. Col. John Appleton, Mr. Nehemiah Jewett, Dea. Nathaniel Knowlton, Sergt. Samuel Hart, Dr. Philemon Dean, and Mr. Daniel Rogers, formed this committee. The fourth meeting-house of the First Parish was raised April 19, 1749, sixty-three feet long and forty-seven feet wide. It was furnished with stoves in 1819.

Esther Rogers, of Newbury was hung and placed on a gibbet at Pingrey's Plain in Ipswich, July 17, 1701. Her crime was the murder of a child. Such deeds in those days were of rare occurrence; they usually drew forth pathetic ballads which were sung at the fireside in the winter evenings.

James How, freeman, 1637, of Linebrook, died May 17, 1702, aged 104 years. His descendants still live in Linebrook and in many other places.

The relative importance of Ipswich in 1703 may be seen from the fact that it then paid a higher State and county tax than any other town in Essex County. The Rev. Jabez Fitch (Harvard College, 1694) was ordained Oct. 24th of this year as colleague of Mr. Rogers. He remained here until Dec. 13, 1724, and was subsequently installed over the church in Portsmouth, N. H. He married Elizabeth, a daughter of Col. John Appleton, June 10, 1704, and died Nov. 22, 1746.

The town voted May 11, 1704, to erect a town-house with a schoolhouse under it, on Meeting-house Hill.

On Oct. 14, 1713, the south-western section of the town, known as "The Hamlet," was incorporated as a parish, and a meeting-house was built the same year. This parish was incorporated as the town of Hamilton, June 21, 1793, and under that head its history may be found. It is noted for its beautiful, rounded hills and ponds, and for the excellence of its soil. The early settlers bore the name of Whipple, Dodge, Poland, Brown, Goodhue, Knowlton, Patch, Safford, Lamson, Appleton, Annable, and Lummus. Many of the present citizens occupy and till the lands cleared up, fenced in, and planted by their remote progenitors. The pastorates of the first three ministers, the Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth, Dr. Manasseh Cutler, and Dr. Joseph B. Felt, alike eminent for their virtues and abilities, extended over a period of more than 115 years.

On the 27th of January, 1716, a committee was chosen by the proprietors of the common and undivided lands of the town, to divide these lands into eight parts, and this committee in their report say: "We have measured the said commons and find it to amount to 7,335 acres and we have divided it accordingly." One-eighth was laid out convenient for the proprietors of Chebacco.

"We are informed, from Ipswich," says the "N. E. Journal," Oct. 16, 1727, "that on Wednesday night last, a young woman of that place being more merry than wise, dressed herself in man's apparel, intending a frolic at some distance off; but as she was riding through a river or pond, her horse, in all likelihood, threw her into the water, where she was taken up the next day drowned."

The Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, son of the Rev. John Rogers, and born March 4, 1702 (Harvard College, 1721), was ordained pastor, Oct. 18, 1727. He was a man of marked ability, and after a successful pastorate died, May 10, 1775. His assistant was the Rev. Timothy Symmes (Harvard College, 1733), who began to preach in Ipswich in 1752, and died April 6, 1756, in his forty-first year.

A township, six miles square, was granted to Lieut. Abraham Tilton and others, of Ipswich, June 10, 1735. It was divided into sixty-three equal shares, three of them being for the support of the ministry and a school. The preference in the shares was given to the descendants of the soldiers who served in 1690, in the expedition against Canada. At first the place bore the name of Ipswich-Canada, but on being incorporated as a town, June 14, 1764, it took the name of Winchendon.

John Wainwright and John Choate received a grant of a township of land, Jan. 15, 1735, for the service of men from Ipswich in the expedition to Canada in 1690. Several families from this place removed thither, and the town was called, from that circumstance, New Ipswich. Its history has been well written by Frederick Kidder, Esq.

The celebrated George Whitefield visited Ipswich on the 30th of

September, 1740, and addressed the people in front of the First Congregational meeting-house. In his journal he says: —

"Preached at Ipswich about ten in the morning to many thousands. The Lord gave me freedom and there was great melting in the congregation."

This year, Maj. Ammi Ruhamah Wise, of Ipswich, commanded a company of troops in the unfortunate expedition against Cuba. He was a noted merchant, and died in Boston, July 6, 1749. The State furnished about 500 men for that ill-managed war, and but few of them ever returned.

Thomson, in his "Summer," touchingly alludes to the horrors of the disease by which so many brave men perished, in the lines commencing, —

"—— You, gallant Vernon, saw
The miserable scene; you, pitying saw
To infant weakness sunk the warrior's arm:
Saw the deep-racking pang, the ghastly form,
The lip pale quivering, and the beamless eye
No more with ardor bright; you heard the groans," &c.

In 1744, a meeting-house had been erected in the westerly part of the town, about four miles from the principal settlement, and public worship commenced. The parish was organized Jan. 27, 1747, under the name of Linebrook, and a church, consisting of sixteen male members, was formed Nov. 15, 1749, when the Rev. George Leslie was ordained pastor. He was the son of James Leslie, of Topsfield; was graduated at Harvard College, 1748, and was considered a good scholar. He fitted several young men for college, and also for the ministry. He attended, July 2, 1788, Ezra Ross, one of his parishioners, eighteen years of age, to the gallows, and prayed with him at his execution. He was hung at Worcester, for the murder, with others, of Joshua Spooner, of Brookfield. Mr. Leslie was dismissed, Nov. 30, 1779, and was succeeded by the Rev. Gilbert Tennant Williams (Dartmouth College, 1784), who was ordained in August, 1779. He continued in this pastorate until May 6, 1813, when, for want of adequate support, he was dismissed. From 1823 to 1830, the church was under the charge of the Rev. David Tullar, and on the 1st of January, 1831, the Rev. Moses Welsh was employed to preach here, his salary being $300. A second meeting-house was built in 1828. After a few years, Mr. Moses Welsh was followed by the Rev Francis Welsh, who was the pastor in 1840. The Rev. J. W. Neally was the pastor in 1856.

The Rev. Alvah M. Richardson was ordained Nov. 14, 1866, and dismissed Sept. 3, 1870. The Rev. Benjamin Howe, born in Ipswich, Nov. 7, 1807 (Amherst College, 1839), the present pastor, was installed May 3, 1871. This church has (1877) sixty-seven members.

John Choate was appointed, June 1, 1745, colonel of a regiment in the expedition against Louisburg, under Pepperell. Many soldiers from Ipswich were in this service.

The South Parish was organized Aug. 22, 1747, and the Rev. John Walley, of Boston, ordained as pastor. He had received an invitation to settle over the First Church; but the Rev. Mr. Rogers objected to him, because he had declined to exchange with a seceding minister in Boston. His friends, therefore, organized this new society, and his ordination took place on the 4th of November. Mr. Walley was the son of the Hon. John Walley, and was graduated at Harvard College in 1734. He was a good writer and speaker, and of a kindly disposition. He was opposed to the office of ruling elders, and prevented those who had been elected by his church from being ordained. His health was precarious; and for this reason he asked and obtained a dismission, which took place Feb. 22, 1764. He was subsequently settled in Bolton, and died in Roxbury, March 2, 1784. He married Elizabeth Appleton, and says, in his will: "I give, as a token of my love, to the South Parish in Ipswich, £13 6*s*. 8*d*., the yearly income to be by them given to such persons in the parish as they shall judge to be the fittest objects of such a charity." He was of light complexion, and bore the marks of the small-pox. A house of worship was erected by the South Parish during the first year of Mr. Walley's ministry, on the right bank of the Ipswich River, below the bridge. The environs are deeply shaded with ancient elm-trees.

An earthquake, Nov. 18, 1755, caused much alarm to the people. The Rev. Mr. Leslie, of Linebrook, made this note of it in the records of that parish: "Between the hours of four and five in the morning there happened a most surprizing shock of the earthquake which was afterwards succeeded by several others, tho' none equal to the first. In the town of Ipswich much damage was done to many houses; yet, through the goodness of God, no hurt was done, either to the lives or limbs of any persons." He adds: "Nov. 19, several shockes were heard, tho' but small compared to the first." It was on the first of this month, 1755, that the city of Lisbon was destroyed by one of the most terrible earthquakes of modern times.

Through the whole of the French war Ipswich was largely represented both by officers and privates, of whom we have space only for the following notices.

Dr. John Calef was surgeon under Gen. John Winslow in the expedition eastward, from June 3 to Sept. 30, 1754, at £5 6*s*. 8*d*. per month. Some of the privates had £1 14*s*. 11*d*. per month. Dr. Calef was ordered Jan. 22, 1755, to attend the sick at Fort Halifax on the Kennebec River. He rode to Falmouth (Portland) on horseback in three days, and made the rest of the journey on foot.

In the expedition against Crown Point in 1756, Benjamin Grant, John Davison, David Kilborn, and Joseph Lord lost their lives. In 1758 Nathaniel Knowlton and Caleb Kimball were taken prisoners, Lieuts. Burnham and Low were mortally wounded, and Capt. Stephen Whipple badly wounded at Lake George.

Capt. Gideon Parker and company went into the expedition against Canada in 1759.

The town voted Nov. 21, 1757, £20 for assisting the Acadians, twenty-three of whom had been sent to live here. They consisted of two families named Landry (Landeré) and Breau. They wore sabots, and had a priest with them, who used to sell wooden ware. They left the town in 1766. As described in "Evangeline," they were simple in manners, industrious, and devotional.

In 1762, a curricle or mail-chair, for the mail from Portsmouth to Boston, commenced running through the town. It was drawn by two fast horses, making the distance and returning in five days, and was the sensation of the period. The fare through and back again was $6.20.

It was voted by the First Parish, Jan. 5, 1764, that the pastor invite the congregation to consult with the church "about choosing some person or persons to set the psalm when Capt. Averill is absent," and on the 13th of March following, "Mr. Moses Perkins, and Mr. Jacob Kimball, were by the brethren of the church, and also by the congregation, chosen to set the psalm." They were to sit in the elder's seat.

The bridge over the Ipswich River was this year rebuilt at an expense of £1,000, half of which was paid by the town, and half by the county. It has two arches, and is well constructed. As the Hon. John Choate was one of the committee of construction, it still bears the name of "Choate's Bridge." In that day it was deemed a great achievement, and Mr. Choate was really the *pontifex maximus*, or the greatest bridge-builder of the town.

The small-pox was prevalent in 1764, and Nov. 13th of that year the town agreed to erect a pest-house, thirty feet long and twenty-four feet wide, and costing £82, on Wolfpen Plain.

The Rev. Mr. Walley was succeeded in the South Parish, Nov. 7, 1765, by the Rev. Joseph Dana, born at Pomfret, Conn., Nov. 13, 1742 (Yale College, 1760), and for some time preacher at the South Society in Boston. He continued in the pastorate until his death, Nov. 16, 1827, at the age of eighty-five years. His salary was £100, with £160 for his settlement. Dr. Dana was a good scholar, an able writer, and a faithful preacher. Few ministers ever had so long a pastorate. When a boy, in Pomfret, he saw the wolf which Israel Putnam dragged from its den. He cordially sustained the cause of American liberty, and left many publications, among which is one on the "Death of Washington" (1800), and another on the "Calamity at Richmond" (1812). He had three wives: first, Mary Staniford; second, Mary Turner; and third, Elizabeth, widow of the Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, of Rowley.

On the completion of the sixtieth year of his ministry, Nov. 6, 1825, he preached a sermon to his people, in which he says: — "Between May 1798 and May 1801, fifty were added to the communion; twenty-five since: and that the whole number of additions since 1765 is 121." He adds: "When I look around, I am struck with the absence of almost all, who were heads of families, at the commencement of this sacred relation: all except five, if I am correct, and of these, one man only. What numbers beside, have retired, of younger persons! Part of my minutes is mislaid: but 15 to a year, — which seems to have been our average number, — amount to 900. What a gloom this sheds on the state of society." Dr. Dana was something of a poet, and was fond of writing hymns, one of which was sung on this occasion; and the stanzas following will show his vein: —

"Ye lovely hills and plains,
And thou, soft-flowing stream,

Where God our lot ordains;
Where Jesus is our theme:
Be lovely still! and witness here
The parting sigh, the falling tear.

"Grant us, O God of love
To meet, and part no more:
May Christ and things above,
Till this frail life is o'er,
Employ our thoughts, our hearts refine,
And train us to a life divine."

The town had, in 1755, sixty-two slaves above the age of sixteen years. Bondage here, as elsewhere in New England, was always alleviated by a strong public sentiment against oppression, and, on the adoption of our State Constitution in 1780, which declares "that all men are born free and equal," the system of human servitude was entirely discontinued. The number of colored people in the town, in 1765, was 101; in 1790, 79; in 1800, 57; in 1810, 55; in 1820, 17; in 1830, 8; in 1840, 11; in 1850, 9; in 1860, 10, and in 1875, 7. They are now treated with the same civility as other citizens.

The lining out of the hymns in the public worship of the First Church was discontinued, and a choir formed about the year 1773. In that year two seats, "back on each side of the front alley," being set apart for the singers. The choir in 1781 began to sit in the gallery.

In the Revolutionary War, the town of Ipswich bore an honorable part. The number of its inhabitants in 1765 was 3,743; in 1775, 4,508. Of these a large fraction were engaged in active service.

When the vote was taken in the General Court, June 30, 1768, in respect to the circular inviting union among the Colonies, Dr. John Calef, representative from Ipswich, voted to rescind the resolution for the circular. On the 11th of August following, the town expressed its thanks to the ninety-two gentlemen who sustained the resolution; and Dr. Calef, making a public confession, regained the confidence of his townsmen. Michael Farley was then sent to represent the town in the convention for redress of grievances, which met in Boston on the 23d of September of the same year.

On the 19th of March, 1770, the town, "taking under consideration the excessive use of tea which has been such a bane to this country, voted, that we will abstain there from ourselves and recommend the disuse of it in our families until all the revenue acts are repealed."

The general sentiment then was that every kind of manufacture, for which they had hitherto been dependent on the mother country, must be encouraged. The deer must be protected, as their skins furnished clothing; the number of sheep must be increased, and the wool spun and woven in our families.

On the 28th of December, 1772, the town took decided measures against British aggression, and chose a committee of correspondence to communicate with that of Boston.

On the reception of the news in 1773 that the cargoes of tea in Boston Harbor had been thrown overboard, the town held a meeting, and, among other things, voted, "that every person who shall import tea while the Act for duty on it continues, shall be held as an enemy, and that no tea be sold in town while this act is in force."

On the 29th of August, 1774, the town generously voted £100 to the inhabitants of Boston, then suffering from British tyranny.

Oct. 3, 1774, Dr. John Calef gives the town permission to have it published in the "Essex Gazette," that "he regretted voting, June 30th 1768 in favor of the royalists." Minute-men were this year enrolled.

Michael Farley was chosen, Jan. 3, 1775, a delegate to the Provincial Congress, to be held in Cambridge.

Capt. Nathaniel Wade, with his company of minute-men, numbering fifty-one, Joseph Hodgkins being lieutenant, and Aaron Parker ensign, was hotly engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill. This company formed a part of the regiment of Col. Moses Little. Three companies, of which Capt. Wade's was one, came to the field before the action commenced. These companies divided, one fighting in the redoubt, another in the cartway south of it, and another at the rail-fence. Capt. Parker's company was at Ipswich at the time, awaiting orders. It is known that the following Ipswich men, under Capt. Wade, were engaged in the battle: Nathaniel Baker, who was wounded, John H. Boardman, Nehemiah Choate, Solomon Coleman, Jabez Farley, Nathaniel Farley, John Fowler, Isaac Giddings, Joseph Hodgkins, Abraham Knowlton, John Lakeman, Philip Lord, Jr., Abraham Perkins, Aaron Perkins, Moses Pindar, Benjamin Ross, Joseph Wise, and Jesse Story, who was killed by a cannon-ball.

A committee of correspondence was chosen March 11, 1776.

On the 10th of June, the town voted "that the representatives be instructed, if the Continental Congress should, for the safety of the Colonies declare themselves independent of Great Britain the inhabitants here will solemnly pledge their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

When the Declaration of Independence was received, it was read in all the churches and recorded in the town book.

Thomas E. Cole, Jonathan Cogswell, 3d, William Jones, David Goodhue, Joseph Marshall, Jr., and Joseph Lufkin, were killed, or died this year in the army.

About twenty-five friendly Indians were placed this year in and about Ipswich for their safety.

The whole amount of money paid by the town for soldiers, from June 17th to Jan. 21, 1777, was £1,737 5*s*. The town paid bounties (1777–78) to about 143 soldiers in service. It also furnished 152 pairs of shoes and stockings, and the same number of shirts, for the army. It also paid, in 1778, £800 to the families of soldiers.

June 8, 1779, the town was ordered to raise 22 men, and on the 29th, it voted £12,000 (old tenor), for recruits. In June, 1780, 110 recruits were called for, and 12 horses; and in December, 52 recruits and 61,058 lbs. of beef. In June, 1781, 42 recruits, 25,234 lbs. of beef, 105 pairs of shoes and stockings, as many shirts, and 53 blankets were required; and in March, 1782, 19 more men were raised. The sum of £440 was voted for the pay of soldiers and others. Almost every great battle-field of the Revolution witnessed the valor of soldiers from Ipswich; while many of her sons performed noble service on the sea. Capt. Moses Harris and William Rust died on board the prison-ship, in New York, in 1783.

The news of the proclamation of peace this year was received with universal delight, and from the depression caused by the war, the town slowly and steadily regained its wonted prosperity.

A post-office was established here, May 4, 1775, and a distillery for making rum was set up in 1778, which continued in operation until 1830.

The successor of Mr. Rogers was the Rev. Levi Frisbie (Dartmouth College, 1771), and for some time missionary to the Indians. He was installed at Ipswich, Feb. 7, 1776, and took an active part in the cause of liberty. On the declaration of peace, in 1783, he delivered an oration, which was published. He also published an eulogy on the death of Washington, and some other discourses. He died in the pastorate, Feb. 25, 1806. It is said of him that he "was of light complexion, above the common height and rather large;" and also, that "he had great tenderness of conscience."

For the suppression of the insurrection under Capt. Daniel Shays, the town furnished twenty-five men, who were absent sixty days.

For the preservation of fish in Ipswich River, a stringent Act was passed March 28, 1788, one section of which is, "That every person who shall after the 20th of April which will be in the year of our Lord 1788, presume to take any fish of any kind in the said river, or its branches, or any of the ponds emptying themselves into the same, with seines or drag nets of any kind, shall forfeit for every such offence the sum of twenty pounds to be recovered in any court of record proper to try the same, one moiety to him who shall sue for the same, the other moiety to the poor of the town where the offence is committed." The saw-mills on the river were also forbidden to cut any wood or timber from the last day of April to the first day of June, under the same penalty, as it was supposed that the sawdust floating on the water prevented the ascent of the fish. Many other later regulations on this subject have been made by the General Court.

As the town was, by reason of the war, at this time heavily involved in debt, the commoners generously made to it, June 9, 1788, "an absolute grant of all their interest, real and personal, as commoners, for the purpose of relieving it from embarrassment," and thus this corporation, if so it may be called, became extinct. The amount given was about six hundred pounds.

The town was honored by the presence of George Washington, Oct. 30, 1789. He remained about three hours, dining at Mrs. Homan's hotel, and reviewing a regiment of soldiers. Multitudes assembled to behold the Father of his country.

Ipswich had, in 1793, one brig, nine schooners, and three sloops, the tonnage of all being 1,344 tons. A new county house of correction was opened here at the close of the year.

At this period, large quantities of thread and silk lace were made here. Referring to Ipswich, in 1692, a writer says: "Silk and thread lace of an elegant & lasting texture are manufactured in large quantities by women and children & sold for use & exportation,"

Dr. John Manning set up a woollen manufactory here, for making coarse cloth, in 1794, which continued in operation about six years.

The number of inhabitants in 1800 was 3,305.

A Baptist Society was formed in February, 1806, and the first preacher was the Rev. H. Pottle. The society was dissolved in 1823.

Mr. Frisbie was followed, in the pastorate of the First Parish, by the Rev. David Tenney Kimbell, born in Bradford Nov. 23, 1782 (Harvard College, 1803), and was ordained here Oct. 8, 1806. He was a faithful and well-beloved pastor, magnifying, in every possible way, his office. He took a deep interest in the cause of education, and was punctilious and exact in the discharge of every duty. During his pastorate, a Sabbath school was established (1816) and a new and beautiful church erected.

In 1813, seventeen British prisoners were committed to the Ipswich jail. They were released at the close of this year, and in March of the year following.

A new probate office building, of brick, and fire-proof, costing the county $3,700, was completed Dec. 15, 1817. The records had been kept in the court-house from 1722 till 1815, after which they were preserved two years in the dwelling-house of Nathaniel Lord, Esq., register of probate. The office was subsequently removed to Salem, where it is now kept.

The population in 1820 was only 2,583. This great reduction in number arose from the loss of Chebacco, which was incorporated as the town of Essex, Feb. 18th of the year preceding. On the 16th of October, 1820, the Hon. John Heard and Mr. Nathaniel Wade were appointed as delegates to the convention for the revision of the State Constitution.

A Methodist society was formed in March, 1822, and it erected a meeting-house which was dedicated Dec. 22, 1824. The Rev. Aaron Wait was the preacher from 1822 to 1824. The society was formed, in part, of a Baptist society, which was commenced here in 1806. Among its pastors, have been the Revs. N. S. Spaulding, B. R. Gifford, Frederick Woods.

The Marquis de Lafayette visited the town Aug. 31, 1824, and was addressed in the church by Nathaniel Lord, Esq., to whom he made a brief, but pertinent reply. He spent the night at the inn of Nathaniel Treadwell, and was visited by several soldiers of the Revolution. When introduced to the venerable Col. Nathaniel Wade, the Marquis grasped his hand and said: "My dear sir, I am rejoiced to see you: it is just such a stormy night as we had when I met you in Rhode Island!"

The Rev. Daniel Fitz succeeded the Rev. Dr. Dana as pastor of the South Church; was ordained June 28, 1826, and continued in the pastorate until his death at Ipswich Sept. 2, 1869. He was the son of Currier and Sarah Fitz, and was born at Sandown, N. H., May 28, 1795 (Dartmouth College, 1818, and Andover Theological Seminary, 1825). He was a man of excellent spirit, greatly beloved by his people and all who knew him. His salary was $650 per annum. He was honored with the degree of doctor of divinity, and well deserved the title.

> "A man he was to all the country dear,
> And passing rich with forty pounds a year.
> Remote from towns he ran his godly race,
> Nor e'er had changed, or wished to change his place."

The Rev. William H. Pierson was installed over this church Jan. 1, 1868, and dismissed July 15, 1872.

He was followed by the Rev. Marshall B. Angier, a man of excellent qualities, and an eloquent speaker, who was installed Feb. 4, 1874, and resigned in 1878.

The first newspaper published in this town was commenced by Mr. John H. Harris, in July, 1827, and called "The Ipswich Journal." It was discontinued in August of the following year.

An academy building was erected in 1826, at a cost, including the land, of $4,000. The Rev. Hervey Wilbur taught in it one year, when he was followed by Mr. James H. Ward, who continued here till March, 1828, after which the building was used exclusively for the education of young ladies, and was known under the name of "The Ipswich Female Seminary."

It was organized April 23, 1828, by Misses Mary Lyon and Zilpah Z. Grant, who conducted it for several years with signal ability. It then (May, 1844) came under the care of the Rev. John P. Cowles (Yale College, 1826), and his estimable lady, who was graduated from the seminary in 1829. Having taught successfully here for thirty-two years, and prepared many pupils for extensive usefulness as missionaries, writers, and educators, they closed the seminary in 1876, and still reside in Ipswich. The following studies were pursued in 1836: mental and written arithmetic, English grammar and composition, history (ancient and modern), geography (ancient and modern), geometry, government of the United States, Watts on the Mind, botany, chemistry, astronomy, natural philosophy, intellectual philosophy, rhetoric, Butler's Analogy, evidences of Christianity, natural theology, calisthenics and vocal music. Board was $1.75 per week; tuition, $25 per annum.

The trustees at this time were, the Rev. David T. Kimball, the Rev. Daniel Fitz, the Rev. Joseph B. Felt, Charles Kimball, Nathaniel Lord, Jr, Samuel N. Baker, and Daniel Cogswell. Miss Lyon resigned in 1834, and, in 1837, became the principal of the Mount Holyoke Female Seminary, over which she presided for twelve years with great success. Miss Grant continued here until married to the Hon. William Bannister, of Newburyport. The reputation of the seminary was fully sustained by Mr. and Mrs. Cowles; and to it the country is indebted for many of its advanced ideas in respect to female education.

A cotton-mill, built of stone, on the Ipswich River, went into operation here in 1830, and, in 1832, it had sixty looms.

A Unitarian society was formed in 1830, and their meeting-house was dedicated Oct. 23, 1833. It is now used for other purposes, and the society no longer exists.

A bank was incorporated here, with a capital of $100,000, March 25, 1833. George W. Heard was the president, and Joseph Lord, Jr., the cashier.

A valuable history of Ipswich, Essex, and Hamilton, by the Rev. Joseph Barlow Felt, LL. D., was published in 1834, and to it the writer is much indebted for material in preparing the present sketches of these towns.

The town was, in 1839, delighted to witness, for the first time, the arrival of a locomotive engine, with a train of cars, on the Eastern Railroad, which was this year opened from Boston to this place. The road divides the township into sections nearly equal, well accommodating the principal village, and affording all needed facilities for travel and for trade. The opening of this road, the rapid growth of Lawrence, with other considerations, led the way to the removal of the courts from Ipswich. It had long been one of the three shire towns of the county, and reluctantly yielded this prestige to another place. The house of correction still remained, and the court-house and jail were appropriated to other uses.

In 1846, the First Congregational Society erected a handsome church edifice, on the site of the old meeting-house.

The Rev. Robert Southgate was installed pastor of the First Congregational church July 24, 1857, the Rev. William T. Dwight, D.D., of Portland, preaching the sermon. After a faithful ministry, he was dismissed Feb. 5, 1868, and died at Woodstock, Vt., Feb 5, 1873.

The town took an active part in the support of the government during the late war, sending as many as 348 men into the army and navy. To the memory of those who lost their lives, a handsome granite monument, costing $2,800, has been erected.

This is the roll of honor: Luther B. Andrews, Charles P. Bachelder, John A. Barker, Geolois F. and John O. Bridges, Henry A. and Jeremiah W. Brown, Pierce S. Butler, William Cash, Nathaniel Chambers, James A. Clarke, Henry A. Cowles, Charles H. Dowe, William A. Estes, James Gammon, James Gordon, William Gray, Nathaniel Hoyer, John H., John J., Lorenzo T., and William H. Jewett, Nathaniel A. Johnson, Samuel Laflaw, Thomas Lang, Pike N. and Philip C. Lavalette, Marcus Linburg, Caleb H. Lord, Parker and Alexander B. McGregor, George W. Morley, Patrick Murray, Cornelius O'Connell, Jr., William Patterson, Joseph and William P. Peatfield, Samuel R. Pickard, Daniel J. Potter, Alfred C. Richardson, Cornelius Schofield, William W. Shattuck, Daniel B. and John G. Skanks, John P. Smith, Timothy J. Thurston, John M. Tozer, Joshua Turner, David L. Wade, Samuel S. Wells, and Daniel M. Whipple. Total, 51.

An Episcopal church edifice was erected on County Street in 1868, it being a chapel of the Church of the Ascension in New York city, of which the Rev. John Cotton Smith is rector. The Rev. Reuben Kidner is now the acting curate.

The Rev. Thomas Morong was installed over the First Congregational Church in Ipswich, Feb. 5, 1868, and continued as pastor until Jan. 12, 1876. During his pastorate a revival occurred in town, and 100 persons were admitted to the church. He was born in Cahawba, Ala., April 15, 1827, graduated at Amherst College in 1848, and is now settled at Ashland. His ministry was attended with success, and his services to the town itself were valuable. His course of sermons on "Natural History" was very much admired.

The Heard Free Library was dedicated on the 9th of March, 1869.

It was built by Augustine Heard, Esq., a native of the town, at an expense of $18,000, to which he added books and funds, making the whole amount of his donation $50,000. The late Prof. Daniel Treadwell, of Cambridge, another native of Ipswich, gave his library, together with property amounting to $20,000, to this library. It now contains about 8,000 well-selected volumes, which are at the service of the citizens of the town.

"The Ipswich Chronicle," established 1872, is a well-conducted weekly journal. The present editor and proprietor is Lyman Daniels, Esq.

The Manning School-house, one of the finest buildings of the kind, was erected on Central Street in 1873–74, at a cost of $35,000. This was in part from funds devised by the late Thomas Manning, M. D., for sixty years the leading physician of the place. His nephew, Richard Henry Manning, Esq., of Brooklyn, N. Y., gave $15,000, and the late J. G. Cogswell, LL. D., Custodian of the Astor Library, New York city, $4,000, towards the building. Col. Luther Caldwell, of Elmira, N. Y., has given $1,000, the interest of which is to be applied to prizes. The town voted at the opening of the school, $2,000 per annum for ten years for its support. The building well accommodates the high school, of which Martin H. Fiske is the principal, and also the grammar schools of the town.

The Rev. Edwin B. Palmer, present pastor of the First Congregational Church (Bowdoin College, 1856; Bangor Theological Seminary, 1859), was ordained at New Castle, Me., Sept. 20, 1859, and installed at Ipswich, Jan. 12, 1876.

This town has the honor of producing the following men of note:—

Fitz John Winthrop, F. R. S., eldest son of Gov. John Winthrop, was born here, March 14, 1638, and died in Boston, Nov. 27, 1707. He went to England, and held a commission under Richard Cromwell in 1658, and returning served as a major in Philip's War. He became a magistrate of Connecticut in 1689; and in the year following was appointed major-general of the army raised for the expedition against Canada. He was noted not only for his skill in civil and military affairs, but also for his attainments in philosophy.

Nathaniel Appleton, D.D., an eminent divine, son of John Appleton, for twenty years judge of probate for Essex County, was born Dec. 9, 1693 (Harvard University, 1712), and ordained as successor of William Brattle, at Cambridge, Oct. 9. 1717, in which pastorate he continued sixty-six years. He died at Cambridge, Feb. 9, 1784. He published sermons on a great variety of subjects.

Michael Farley, an active leader in the Revolution, was born here in 1719, and died June 20, 1789. He was a delegate to the Provincial Congress, 1774–75, major-general of militia, and a delegate to the convention for the adoption of the National Constitution. He was also sheriff and treasurer of Essex County.

Dr. John Manning was born here in November, 1737, studied medicine, and practised in his native town. He served as a surgeon in the Revolutionary War, and died, highly respected, in 1824. Three of his sons were physicians.

Col. Edward Wigglesworth, son of the Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth, was born here Jan. 3, 1742 (Harvard College, 1761), and died in Newburyport, where he was collector, Dec. 8, 1826. He was commissioned a colonel June 24, 1776, and was the third in command of Arnold's flotilla on Lake Champlain, Sept. 5th of the same year.

Nathan Dane, an eminent statesman and jurist, was born here Dec. 27, 1752 (Harvard College, 1778), studied law and settled in Beverly, where he practised till his death, which occurred in that town Feb. 15, 1835. He was a member of Congress 1785-88, where he framed, in 1787, the celebrated ordinance which excluded slavery from the vast territory north-west of Ohio and secured it to freedom. In 1814 he was a member of the Hartford Convention, and in 1823-29 published his erudite and extensive work, in nine large volumes, entitled "A General Abridgment and Digest of American Law." He founded the Dane professorship of law in Harvard University, and also furnished funds for building the Dane Hall of the Law School. He was one of the most distinguished of the sons of Ipswich, and his character as a jurist received the highest encomium from Daniel Webster.

Col. Nathaniel Wade, son of Timothy Wade, was born in Ipswich in 1756, and died here Oct. 26, 1826, at the age of seventy-six years. He was a brave, intelligent, and patriotic Revolutionary officer, and held several important civil offices. At the head of his company of Ipswich minute-men he fought gallantly in the battle of Bunker Hill, and was in the battles at Long Island, Harlem, and White Plains. He served as colonel during the campaign, and was president of a court-martial at Providence, Dec. 23, 1777. He commanded a regiment raised for the suppression of the insurrection under Capt. Daniel Shays, in 1786-87. The confidence reposed in him by Washington may be seen from the following interesting letter:

"HEADQUARTERS ROBINSON HOUSE, 25 Sept. 1780.

"*Sir*,—General Arnold is gone to the enemy. I just now received a line from him, inclosing one to Mrs. Arnold, dated on board the Vulture. From this circumstance and Col. Lamb's being detached on some business, the command of the garrison, for the present, devolves on you. I request you will be as vigilant as possible; and, as the enemy may have it in contemplation to attempt some enterprise, even to-night, against these posts, I wish you to make, immediately after the receipt of this, the best disposition you can of your force, so as to have a proportion of men in each work on the west side of the river. You will see or hear from me further to-morrow.

"I am, Sir, your mo. obt. servt. GEO. WASHINGTON."

Nathaniel Howe, an original divine, celebrated for his remarkable "Century Sermon," Hopkinton, Dec. 24, 1815, and introduced as one of the characters of Mr. Longfellow's "Kavanagh," was the third son of Capt. Abraham and Lucy (Appleton) Howe, and was born at Linebrook, Oct. 6, 1764 (Harvard College, 1786), and was settled as pastor over the church in Hopkinton Oct. 5, 1791, where he continued a faithful minister until his death, Feb. 15, 1837.

Daniel Dana, D. D., son of the Rev. Joseph Dana, D. D., was born here July 24, 1771 (Dartmouth College, 1788), was pastor in Newburyport and Londonderry, also president of Dartmouth College, 1820-21, and published many sermons, essays, and discourses. He died in Newburyport Aug. 26, 1859. He was an able theologian of the Presbyterian order.

Joseph McKean, D. D., an eminent divine, was born here April 19, 1776 (Harvard University, 1794), was minister at Milton from Nov. 1, 1797, to Oct. 3, 1804, and Boylston professor of rhetoric in Harvard College from Oct. 31, 1809, till his death, March 17, 1818. He was also a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

Levi Frisbie, son of the Rev. Levi Frisbie, and an eminent scholar, was born here Sept. 15, 1783 (Harvard University, 1802), and died at Cambridge, where he was Alford professor of moral philosophy and political economy, July 9, 1822. His writings were collected, edited, and published by Prof. Andrews Norton. Mr. Frisbie wrote the beautiful hymn, commencing:

"Behold the western evening light."

Joseph Green Cogswell, LL. D., was born here Sept. 27, 1786 (Harvard University, 1806), and held a professorship in his alma mater 1820-23, after which he founded, with George Bancroft, the Round Hill School, at Northampton. He subsequently edited the "New York Review," and assisted in planning the great Astor Library, of which he was many years librarian. He presented many valuable specimens of plants and minerals to Harvard University. His death occurred Nov. 26, 1871.

Daniel Treadwell, A. A. S., an inventor, was born here in 1791. He invented a power press in 1820; in 1829 his machine for spinning hemp cordage. He was Rumford professor of technology in Harvard University from 1834 to 1845.

Jonathan Cogswell Perkins, lawyer and judge, was born here Nov. 21, 1809 (Amherst College, 1832), and was admitted to the bar in 1835. He became judge of Court of Common Pleas, and was State Senator in 1847. His legal writings are voluminous and valuable. He resided in Salem.

Otis Kimball, born here Sept. 17, 1816, died in Boston Aug. 1, 1878, was at the time of his decease the oldest railroad and transportation agent in New England. He early came to Boston, and evinced remarkable tact for business. Connecting himself with railroad management, he developed the system, now in vogue, of transporting freight from any point in bulk and unbroken. In 1850 he became one of the acknowledged leaders of the Whig party in Boston. He was for several years a member of the city council and a director of several of the public institutions. He spoke with ease and fluency, and was ever welcome in the social circle. Of him it was truly said: "His acts form his truest record, and his life his most fitting epitaph."

Ipswich is largely, honorably represented by her sons and daughters in almost every city in the Union, and the salutary instructions of her teachers, the good examples of her worthy men and women, will, in their influence, extend to many generations. Many in distant climes and distant times will speak her name with reverence, and probably claim a lineage from sires who settled or were born and bred within her borders.

LAWRENCE.

CHAPTER I.

A PRELIMINARY RECORD.

WHAT THE CITY IS AND IS NOT — LOCATION AND SURROUNDINGS — THE PARENT TOWNS. — OLD SETTLERS AND LANDMARKS — STATISTICS — INDIAN TRADITIONS AND RELICS.

Contrasted with records of older townships in Essex, the early history of Lawrence is anomalous. No ancient rural neighborhood here slowly widened into a village; the village expanding, in a century, to the proportions of a city. Growth was startlingly rapid; transition from dreamy quiet and isolation to bustle, activity, and mercantile importance, was sudden and notable.

Progress was *not* a natural growth, born of need for a new commercial centre; it was a bold push of the enterprising to establish a workshop for the world in this "sleepy hollow" of the Merrimae Valley. Enterprise and labor here joined hands; wealth supported both. The fruit of this union is a city, fair, young, and vigorous, standing where, but a generation ago, was a rural scene of most perfect quiet.

Naming no one man or body of men as singly entitled to the honor of founding or building the city, the simple record, as it follows, will do justice to those who, by shrewd forecast, intense personality, and persistent labor, have made their life-record a part of local history.

The city lies in a broad and open plain, has few visible marks of age, or charms for the antiquarian, has a population diverse in origin and industrious by habit.

The central and populous wards are upon the rolling swell of land on the north bank of Merrimae River, where that stream curves about the great mills. The southern district, more sparsely populated, is a wide plain extending westward from Shawsheen River, somewhat rolling and broken near the western limits. The highlands west of the city, known as Tower Hill, and the rolling ridge, Prospect Hill, eastward, are picturesque sites for residence, having an elevation of 80 to 150 feet above the dam. These heights command wide views, their southern slopes rising abruptly from the Merrimae bank. The valley enclosed by these ridges is nearly two miles broad, extending northerly and southerly to higher lands beyond city limits.

The generally dry, sandy, alluvial soil, or drift deposit, rests upon a base of secondary rock. This rock crops out in ledges in the southwestern part of the city, giving vast quantities of building-stone, solid and durable, though lacking the beauty of Quincy or Concord granites.

The city lies in latitude 42° 42′ 13″, and in longitude 71° 10′ 13″ west from Greenwich; has nearly seven square miles (4,435 acres) area, of which 2,135 acres are in the northern district, taken from the town of Methuen; 2,000 acres, south of Merrimae River, were taken from the town of Andover; and about 300 acres is the estimated water area. Excluding water surface, railway, public, and church lands exempted, 3,351 acres remain as taxable estates.

The population in 1875 was 34,916. The estimated population in 1878 is 38,000, inhabiting 4,638 dwellings. The assessors' moderate valuation of taxable estates is $23,744,017; of which value, $10,454,625 is the property, in real estate and machinery, of manufacturing corporations.

The idea has been advanced that the whole land within and about Lawrence was once covered by an immense lake; that Cochichewick, Mystic, Haggett's, and World's End ponds are but puddles remaining after subsidence of waters let loose from their bed by earthquakes or unusual convulsions of nature. Viewing the site from adjacent hilltops, and examining soil and rock, the theory seems plausible, which is all that can be said by the unscientific.

Less than two miles northward from the city proper is the busy village of Methuen, built upon ridges and in hollows about Spicket Falls. During two years following the founding of Lawrence, before the new settlement became a separate town, the bulk of inflowing population was within the limits of this staid township.

Southward, by a pleasant way of three miles, the charmingly-located institutions and residences of Andover crown the "Hill," on and about which cultivated communities dwell in prosperity and thrift, and leaders in conservative religions thought have their chosen home.

North Andover, a gem among New England towns, lies to the southeast. Cochichewick Pond, better known as Silver or Crystal Lake (650 acres area), and wide, fertile valleys and commanding hills, are features in the landscape of this ancient town. The first prospecting pioneers saw in these timber-forests, clear, rapid streams, waterfalls, and fertile lands, a place of settlement promising better rewards for labor than the sandy barrens of the coast.

These towns encircle the city, — a girdle of thrift. The history of Andover and Methuen is rich in traditional and romantic features. Lawrence, formed upon a rib of territory taken from each older township as they lay in sleepy quiet, claims modest inheritance in their old-time traditions.

The northern district of the city, including the larger corporations and bulk of population, was once a part of the great triangular township of Haverhill, and in Norfolk (north-folk) County. This township included the present Haverhill, nearly all of Methuen, the larger part of Salem and Plaistow, and all of Atkinson, N. H. From this tract Methuen, with added territory, was set off as a separate town in 1726.

Lands along the river-bank, immediately below North Lawrence, were occupied by whites about 1655. Pioneers named Messer, Frye, and Cross appear to have been the first comers. One of these, a German weaver, is said to have purchased a tract lying along the eastern boundary of Lawrence, which still remains in possession of descendants, having been transmitted from father to son since first settlement. Indian occupants claimed ownership in these lands, and, for a roll of cloth, the pioneer purchased of the red men their rights in all the lands he could surround in a day's travel through the forest. Commencing on the river, with his savage companions, he took a course north-westward over highlands about Spicket Falls, thence southward along the slopes of Tower Hill to the Merrimae and by the north bank to point of starting; thus compassing a favorite hunting-ground, and including the site of a future city. Though he took no written deed, the red men respected their verbal obligations, and peace was secured through fair dealing.

Indian sachems received, in 1642, for their rights in Haverhill lands, £3 10*s*. *Cutchamache* received for Andover territory £6 and a coat. Lawrence is but a speck in those great townships, and the proportionate valuation of its lands by Indian owners would not have exceeded five shillings.

It is not probable that many whites had permanent residence within Lawrence limits prior to the year 1700, though Shawsheen Fields (South Lawrence) were cultivated by residents of Andover Village, protected by block-houses, and Methuen intervales (North Lawrence) were mown by commoners, from the direction of Haverhill, for years before that date.

Though records are imperfect and traditions obscure, it is known that one Bodwell had a rude dwelling, probably the first permanent habitation, where Newbury Street unites with Essex; that he controlled a large area of land. One of the first frame-dwellings erected was just west of the mouth of Spicket River, upon the Merrimae bank. In this fertile and sheltered position a flourishing orchard grew from seed, bore fruit in abundance, and long since went to decay. An ancient house, known as the Swan House, stood on the west line of the common, just east of Central Congregational Church; the stones of the cellar underlie the much-travelled Haverhill Street.

Few old buildings remain, or old landmarks are noticeable, in the new city. The ancient dwelling on the corner of East Haverhill and Elm streets has a history going back into dim obscurity. A portion of the old house stood near the mouth of Spicket River. It was re-

moved to the present site when highways were laid out in the region; large additions have been made thereto, and it now stands beneath the great, shadowing elm (known to have been transplanted by a wandering soldier one hundred and forty years ago), almost the only relic deeply marked by time in the central wards of this city of to-day. Bricks have been taken from the huge chimney, marked 1688. They are laid in mortar, made by admixture of clay and chopped straw.

A few ancient homesteads are noticed in the outlying districts, but the work of enterprise has nearly overshadowed and obliterated all that is venerable. Obscure traditions locate a rude log fort, or refuge for settlers, in Jackson Terrace; by others it is said to have stood nearer the mouth of Spicket River. There was also a timber fort or stockade on the slopes of Tower Hill, overlooking this valley.

Early settlers were mainly from the agricultural districts of England, and appear to have chosen their new and isolated home with no wild expectation of riches, and to have led quiet lives of severest industry. They were neither adventurers, enthusiasts, or renegades, but practical, exemplary laborers, lured by no golden visions, deceived by no extravagant hopes.

The little that is known about primitive life hereabouts must be told in simple, not *glittering* generalities. Many obscure traditions of rude pioneer life grow dim with every passing year. Until some one shall weave these into pleasing narrative, the history of the frontiersman, who first made his home in this valley of labor, may be told in the simple lines: —

> "Here he hewed and dug, subduing the earth and his spirit;
> Here he built him a home in the forest,
> Here he had farmstead and cabin and fields of corn."

Lands along the Merrimac bank were the first chosen. Farmers obtained good yield at the outset; but the country grew poorer rather than richer, as a light soil, carelessly cultivated, must rapidly deteriorate. The grand harvest of fish came in spring-time and interfered with farming operations. Fish in hand were more tempting than corn in prospect.

Salmon were plentiful and of finest quality; shad were taken in immense numbers, and the eddies and pot-holes at the rapids were a sort of eel's paradise. Eels came in quantities so immense that they were dealt in, at times, neither by pound nor hundred weights, but by wagon-loads, or cubic measurement, at about the present price of cord-wood; often by the barrel; the price of a pound of steak, in our times, sometimes purchasing a barrel of this "Merrimac beef." If the modern theory that fish is peculiarly brain-food is correct, what hindered our predecessors from becoming intellectual giants?

Where population is now dense there were scarcely a dozen habitations; in all the city, less than 150 souls in less than threescore homes. No church dedicated to service of Almighty God stood within present city limits. There was, here and there, an ordinary farm-house, with rude surroundings. The long, roughly-built bridge, the fishers at the falls, a noble river in the foreground, the tumbling rapids, and a long reach of undulating, sandy plain, were the simple features in a scene peaceful and common-place. The plain is now dotted with spires and crowded with modern homes. The lawless rapid is changed to a uniform plunge of waters in unbroken fall over artificial barriers; colossal workshops, filled with busy laborers, now stand where there was near approach to solitude. That part of Andover now South Lawrence was generally known as the "Moose Country." There was rivalry of epithets. The "Shawsheen fields" were known as Sodom by those on the opposite bank; in retaliation the Andover people gave the name of Gomorrah to the north bank. The phrase "Out of the world into Methuen" was as common as "Taunton, good Lord." It *was* an isolated spot before the bridging of the Merrimac and the building of mills at Spicket Falls. World's End Pond was a sort of inland boundary of civilization, beyond which pioneers ventured with fear and trembling.

Indians.—In this modern city antiquarian research, if not a *lost*, is a neglected art. A new population, gathered out of homes separated by mountain chains and oceans, care little for genealogical records of the few old families they have overshadowed, and less for that nomadic race who once owned the soil before sweeping epidemics reduced their number to an insignificant remainder.

Pumpassonaway, alias "Old Will," had a "planting ground" in the old Haverhill township, "near Spicket river," perhaps the very site of Lawrence, or along the eastern limit. The locality of the city seems rather to have been a hunting-ground, or place of occasional resort, for the red men, than a permanent abode. On the south bank of the Merrimac, a mile above the dam, can be seen evidence of Indian occupancy, and many specimens of savage handiwork have been found hard by.

Just at the western limit of the city, on the south bank of the river, was an Indian burial-ground, and, near by, a smaller space set about with stones, enclosing graves of petty chieftains. Within the memory of men now living, wandering Indians, of the Penobscot tribe, have made pilgrimages to this rude sepulchre of savage kings. One, claiming to be a descendant of buried chiefs, might be seen, during his stay, standing on these ancient graves at early morning, statue-like and silent, with face to the eastward, watching for the rising of the sun; and, again, at sunset, looking westward upon fading lights, with stony indifference to all surroundings — a grim picture of sorrow. Indians stated that often their women came to this spot, after their custom, to grind the corn, and, in mournful cadence, chanted, while they labored, the death-song over graves of departed braves.

Further up river, in Andover, just below the steamer-landing at Laurel Grove, was an extensive Indian burial-ground, whether a battle-field, a burial site in the days of pestilence (when ninety per cent. of the savages died and Merrimac valley became a vast charnel-house), or a usual place of burial, is unknown. Opposite the mouth of the Shawsheen River, near the gas-works, have been found evidences that it was a place of resort for dusky fishers and arrow-makers.

It was on the extreme southern border of Lawrence that a band of northern savages were first discovered in their mischievous and bloody raid upon Andover settlements. As late as 1722, seventy-eight years after settlement of Andover, we find the town voting money to repair block-houses protecting "Shawsheen fields" (South Lawrence). The severest Indian raids upon Andover settlers were nearly fifty years after settlement.

There is a tradition that Tower Hill was an important outlook, or signal station, in Indian warfare, that from the summit smoke or fires signalled wandering bands, scattered over wide valleys. It is related that the pioneer Bodwell was a veteran Indian fighter; that, at one time, when a band were prowling about the south bank of the river, opposite his cabin, one of them made a defiant gesture to the veteran marksman, whereupon the old man drew a bead upon the redskin with his long-range English musket, and the savage fell in the long grass, shot through the head. Crossing next day, in a boat, he rolled the body into the river, preserving the fine wolf-skin robe of the Indian for his own comfort.

There is another tradition that a thieving Indian, seeking to enter one of the old dwellings upon the plain, was shot through the chinks of the timber wall, and buried beneath a great tree, standing near City Hall; also, that an early settler, seeing a movement in the grass or grain near the south canal, discovered a creeping savage working his way towards a pioneer's cabin. He shot the wily Indian, when three others, before unseen, broke from the cover and made good their retreat. A story is told of a young pioneer, who, returning from a courting visit to the fair daughter of an up-river settler, had his dream of bliss suddenly disturbed by the whizzing of a tomahawk past his head. Finding two Indians in chase, he saved himself by his knowledge of by-paths.

On Pine Island, four miles above Lawrence, was an Indian village in the olden time. Nancy Parker was the last of the Indians to remain in the region. She is remembered by the very old as a tall, wild-looking, but harmless and industrious Indian woman, making her rounds among the farmers of the present Lawrence and Andover, with her spinning-wheel strapped to her back, — the champion spinner of the region, — little dreaming that spinners would crowd to the valley by hundreds, and the noisy river-rapid be harnessed to the wheels at which they toiled. From Nancy Parker's spinning-wheel to the monster mill is a long step, and, by this water-fall, the importance of the step is apparent.

Illustrating the dreariness and isolation of the region, in early settlement, we are told that an aged pioneer, in an up-river neighborhood, died in midwinter. A furious snow-storm and high wind obliterated all rude pathways, and nothing but wastes of deep snow surrounded the lonely home for weeks. Sadly the two sons rigged the handsled, placing the body in a box thereon, and, by hard work during a whole day, reached and followed the river-bank to an open road, at Bodwell's Falls, leading to Andover village. Thus the hardy pioneer rode to his final rest.

At a point opposite Lawrence poor-farm, upon Cochichewick Brook, in Andover, the first mill-wheel turned in this valley, the first trip-hammer disturbed the quiet of the settlement, and the first woollen machinery, brought from England by stealth, the separate parts

packed among household goods (fearing the penalties of English law), was set up.

It is said that the first store in a wide region reaching from Haverhill to Dracut and from Derry to Andover, was started on the Howe road, in Methuen, but a few minutes' drive from Lawrence. The proprietors are credited with selling at "one per cent. profit"; that is, for every dollar of cost adding another dollar for profit!

Just outside of city limits, on Clover Hill, in Methuen, is the old burial-ground, laid out soon after settlement. The old church and minister's house stood hard by. Good Parson Sargent sleeps well in the old cemetery among the hardy parishioners, who, for fifty years, listened to his words of counsel and warning.

The pioneers of South Lawrence were: Barnard, Stevens, and Poor; later came the Parkers and other families. The first-named family trace back the title to lands nearly two hundred years. To North Lawrence came, as pioneer settlers, who remained, the Bodwells, Swans, Sargents, Barkers, Poors, and Marstons; possibly others whose descendants do not remain. The two important ferries were Marston's, below the city proper, and Bodwell's, above the dam. The former was first established, primarily to enable settlers to pursue northern Indian bands, who often appeared upon the north bank, doing much mischief, and escaping unpunished. Both ferries were discontinued when the bridge was built in 1793.

CHAPTER II.

THE SOURCES OF WATER-POWER.

MERRIMAC RIVER — SPICKET AND SHAWSHEEN RIVERS — PROJECTS FOR DEVELOPING POWER AT BODWELL'S FALLS.

"He sendeth the springs into the valleys, which run among the hills."—Ps. civ. 10.

The Merrimac, a living, rapid stream, was man's passive agent in a notable work of rapid transformation on this quiet plain. Receiving overflow from mountain-shadowed, northern lakes, the sparkling currents, in their journey to the sea, change the lawless dance of cascades into a round of prosaic service.

The great lake reservoirs, at and about Winnipesaukee, keep in reserve vast hydraulic power, receiving and holding a portion of the immense spring rise from melting snows and swollen streams, which might otherwise become an irresistible flood. Gathering its waters from mountain ravines and isolated forests, this one New England river supplies a vast system of mill-privileges, and "furnishes a more valuable water-power than all the rivers of France."

There is a plausible theory that the Merrimac once discharged its waters into the Atlantic, at a point near Lynn Harbor, continuing to the sea in the line of its general course, which, unlike the usual flow of rivers, turns sharply north-eastward at Chelmsford. There is also a theory that a chain of lakes once lay along the broad, low terraces that reach from the ocean to Winnipesaukee, connected by small streams; that floods and upheavals, in formative periods, burst, one by one, the barriers between contiguous lakes, until a continuous stream, the Merrimac, was the result.

This river drains about 4,100 square miles of territory before reaching Lawrence, one-eighth of that area being lakes, ponds, and streams. These natural storage-basins, around the sources of the river and tributaries, enable the water-power companies at Lowell and Lawrence, by the erection of dams and dikes at Winnipesaukee and adjacent lakes, to hold there a reserve of power for dryest seasons.

Navigation of the lower Merrimac, from Lawrence to the sea, has long been discussed as a feasible project, and much boating was done by pioneer navigation companies.

The vignette on one denomination of Bay State Bank bills, of the first issue (1848), represented the river and mills, and a steamboat prominent in the scene. The Pentucket Navigation Company was incorporated, a few years since, for the purpose of clearing and navigating the lower Merrimac. Efforts of leading men in this company secured appropriations from the general government, which have been expended, under the direction of United States engineers, in removing obstructions and deepening the channel.

Great freshets occurred in 1745, 1785, 1818, 1852, 1863, and 1870. The freshet of 1818 caused a sudden rise of the lower tributaries. Many bridges were swept away. A man and woman were drowned when crossing the bridge over Shawsheen River, near Den Rock.

The freshet of 1852 was a memorable one, testing the strength of the great dam, guard-gates, and protecting embankments at Lawrence and Lowell.

Spicket River, emptying into the Merrimac at the lower end of the city, has peculiar characteristics. Though small, short, and crooked, it drains no less than ten ponds. From these many reservoirs comes a supply of water reliable for continuous power, made available at the important cotton and woollen mills in Methuen village, where there is a picturesque natural fall of over thirty feet descent. At the Arlington Mills, in Lawrence, this stream gives a most valuable power, improved and increased by the construction of earth dikes, and a permanent stone dam. On the lower Spicket are worsted mills, and a leather-board mill.

The old log dam upon the lower Spicket was carried away the present summer (1878). It was an ancient affair; one of the few old landmarks. The current above this dam is sluggish, the course crooked. The breaking of this dam drained the usually deep river at this point, and revealed the foundations of a still older dam above it, of which there seems to be no account preserved either in records or traditions. It is known that long ago there was a furnace at that point for the smelting of iron.

Shawsheen River is a small stream, with sources in the meadows and ponds of central Middlesex County. It has a north-easterly course, uniting with the Merrimac opposite, and just below the outlet of Spicket River. The stream is sluggish, giving no water-power in Lawrence limits. The name, from *shaws* (a shade), and *sheen* (bright, sparkling), signifies a clear, shaded water. The eastern bank of this river is the boundary between Lawrence and North Andover.

The possibility of utilizing Deer Jump, Peter's, and Bodwell's falls (the latter at Lawrence, the others above), by developing a water-power available for extensive manufacturing, was apparent to the thoughtful long before actual steps were taken. The Merrimac Canal Company, incorporated in 1820, for the purpose of making navigable Merrimac River, from Haverhill to the foot of Hunt's Falls at Lowell, and improving and developing the water-power, made surveys showing clearly the amount of available power afterwards developed by others. The Act incorporating this company was extended in 1824, but the organization seems to have operated only as a "circumlocution office," where schemes revolved, but were never perfected or tested.

The only local resident who seems to have fully comprehended what it was possible to do at Lawrence, was Daniel Saunders, Esq., a farmer, who had also been a woollen manufacturer after the old-time style. Mr. Saunders set in operation forces that, eventually, were effectual in founding and building the city. Surveys of the river had also been made by George P. Baldwin, Esq., of Woburn, Capt. Phineas Stevens, of Nashua, N.H., and Benjamin F. Baldwin, accomplished engineers.

These surveys all demonstrated that, at Bodwell's Falls, by the erection of a permanent dam, a grand water-power, equal to that at Lowell, might be developed, and a manufacturing city established, the site favoring building. Mr. Saunders pushed the project energetically, interesting capitalists and manufacturers. Quietly, without exciting suspicion, lands were secured in important localities.

The fall, at the present dam, was a tumbling rapid, broken by projecting ledges, with a descent of four to five feet in the third of a mile westward from Pacific Mills outlet, the rocks worn in pot-holes by stones whirled in eddies. The stream below was rapid and unaffected by tides for several miles; the fall above, from the foot of Hunt's Falls, needed only to be used to be known as one of the great water-powers of New England. The locality was near to shipping ports, central, a goodly site for a town; what was needed to develop conditions so favorable? Men of courage, ability, and means; not rivals working for personal control, but, associated for a common purpose, combining resources for a definite end. This desirable association of courageous and enterprising men was formed, as appears hereafter. A distinguished French engineer and author, M. Charles Chevalier, visiting the new manufacturing cities of New England, was astonished to see the confidence and readiness with which men, trained in commercial and mercantile life, like the brothers Lawrence and the Lowells, undertook great enterprises involving mechanical and engineering skill, planned on a scale far beyond ordinary precedent. He deemed their courage and enterprise something sublime. The same French writer, looking upon the work-people employed in first New England mills, with the eyes and opinions of a Parisian, says, "Reading appears to be the only amusement of the people." He says further,

"The population was not born upon the spot; the half will die somewhere else, after founding other cities; the American of pure blood encamps, he does not settle."

CHAPTER III.

FOUNDING THE CITY.

MERRIMAC WATER-POWER ASSOCIATION — AN IMPORTANT EXCURSION — THE ESSEX COMPANY ORGANIZED — ACTIVE OPERATIONS — LEADING SPIRITS.

The Merrimac Water-Power Association was formed in 1843, with Samuel Lawrence as president and treasurer, and Daniel Saunders as agent. Associated with these active men were Judge J. G. Abbott, John Nesmith, Judge Thomas Hopkinson, and Jonathan Tyler, of Lowell, Nathaniel Stevens, John Tenney, Edmund Bartlett, Charles W. Saunders, Daniel Saunders, Jr., John Wright, Gayton P. Osgood, Joseph Kittredge, Josiah G. White, Joseph H. Billings, and Henry Poor. Perhaps others may have been more or less interested, financially, in the enterprise.

Samuel Lawrence, as treasurer and financial agent of Middlesex Mills, at Lowell, was enabled, by his position among manufacturers, and his business and family connections, to interest men of capacity and means in the plan of founding a new manufacturing city by the falls below Lowell. Enthusiastic and sanguine by nature, he championed the enterprise with zeal, persistence, and boldness.

Daniel Saunders, because of his knowledge and fitness, was appointed agent of the association, and quietly bonded or purchased land lying about Bodwell's Falls, and along the river bank above.

In the winter of 1844–45, these associates petitioned the Legislature for an Act granting them chartered rights, under the name of The Essex Company. The Act was approved in March, 1845. The rights obtained are shown in the following charter:—

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:

SECT. 1. Samuel Lawrence, John Nesmith, Daniel Saunders, and Edmund Bartlett, their associates and successors, are hereby made a corporation, by the name of the Essex Company, for the purpose of constructing a dam across Merrimack river, and constructing one or more locks and canals in connection with said dam, to remove obstructions in said river by falls and rapids, from Hunt's Falls to the mouth of Shawsheen river, and to create a water-power to use, or sell, or lease to other persons or corporations, to use for manufacturing and mechanical purposes. . . . .

SECT. 2. Said corporation may hold real estate not exceeding, exclusive of the expenditure for the dam and canals, three hundred thousand dollars, and the whole capital stock of said corporation shall not exceed one million dollars. . . . .

SECT. 3. The said corporation is hereby authorized and empowered to construct and maintain a dam across said river, either at Deer Jump Falls, or Bodwell's Falls, or some point in said river between said falls, and all such canals and locks as may be necessary for the purposes aforesaid.

Sections 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, and 10 provide for the building and maintenance of bridges, fishway, canals and locks, settlement of claims, tolls on freight (other than rafts and floats of wood and timber, masts and spars), and fixes limit of flowage. The Act was approved March 20, 1845.

March 18, 1846, an additional Act was passed, empowering the company to purchase property in the State of New Hampshire, by consent of said State; also extending the time for obstructing the passage of rafts.

An Important Excursion. — So thoroughly interested were the petitioners and others in the passage of the Act of incorporation, that they gathered on the morning following the final passage, witnessed the signing of the Act by Governor Briggs, and, that very hour, started on an excursion to the site of the future city, coming to North Andover by rail, thence by carriages to the falls.

This company of business men, on whose decision depended the immediate inauguration of important work, was made up as follows: Abbott Lawrence, William Lawrence, John A. Lowell, Samuel Lawrence, Francis C. Lowell, George W. Lyman, Nathan Appleton, Theodore Lyman, Patrick T. Jackson, William Sturgis, John Nesmith, Jonathan Tyler, James B. Francis, and Charles S. Storrow. Under the pilotage of Daniel Saunders, the party were shown, not the beauties of a charming landscape; rather was it a question of power, — how much attainable, and at what cost; a question of the adaptability of surrounding lands to the building of a town, — a matter to be dealt with by men of forecast, scientific attainments, and practical knowledge of heavy manufacturing and engineering operations. At that date these fourteen gentlemen were fit representatives of the great interest then so lately established — the manufacture of textile fabrics in New England.

Mr. Charles S. Storrow, at that time managing agent and engineer of the Boston and Lowell Railroad, acted as secretary for the prospecting band, here commencing his first entries and disbursements in aid of Lawrence enterprises. After closing their inspection of the locality, and discussing, on the spot, the feasibility of plans, the party were driven to Lowell, where, at a rather late hour, they sat down to an excellent dinner, at the Merrimac House, provided by landlord Larrabee. "A dinner lubricates business," says an old writer, and the saying proved true in this case. An after-dinner talk resulted in the commencement of enterprises that have wrought a transformation scene upon the quiet plain. Without the active aid of capitalists and leading manufacturers, possessed of boldness, skill, and capacity, to champion the project, preliminary and experimental work already done would have been unavailing. In that after-dinner hour was taken the first decisive step leading to permanent organization and effectual work. Abbott Lawrence and John A. Lowell retired for a few minutes' consultation, and, returning, offered the water-power association, as a fair equivalent for all their acquired rights and interest, the sum of $30,000, in addition to the re-imbursement of all expenses previously incurred; assuming also to carry out all agreements made by the associates for the purchase of lands and flowage rights already secured by bond, and to lead off in the organization of the Essex Company by large subscriptions to capital stock.

A proposition so definite, promising immediate organization of a powerful company, and commencement of active operations, with efficient leaders, was promptly accepted. Thus, on the day the Act was signed, before set of sun, steps had been taken by parties who harbored no fear of failure, and took no backward course, which resulted in immediate operations as vigorous and unremitting as the inception was energetic and novel. The excursionists returned home hardly realizing that a city had been born which would force products upon the world's markets, call laborers from among all civilized northern races, and work materials supplied from every quarter of the globe.

There may be no significance in the fact that this initial act in the founding of a city was done in the beatitude of an after-dinner rest, excepting that it might not have been done so promptly or so well, or done at all, before dinner. If, as a brilliant Frenchman once said, a plate of mushrooms, spoiling a king's digestion, changed the destinies of Europe, may not this excellent repast have hastened the founding of a "city of labor"?

Organization of the Essex Company. — Only two days after the passage of the Act of Incorporation, March 22, 1845, the Essex Company stockholders' subscription list was drawn up. Abbott Lawrence was the first subscriber, taking one thousand shares, at $100 each; this *bona fide* investment of $100,000 he never disturbed; not one share did he sell in the trial days that came in the company's fortune; the shares are now owned by his heirs, and the holding-on policy has richly paid in this instance. John A. Lowell, Nathan Appleton, and T. H. Perkins subscribed $50,000 each; Bryant & Sturgis, George W. Lyman, and Amos Lawrence, $40,000 each; Samuel Lawrence and John Nesmith, $32,000 each; William W. Stone and Theodore Lyman, $25,000 each; William Lawrence, John P. Cushing, I. W. Patterson, Charles S. Storrow, J. Huntington Wolcott, Samuel Batchelder, Charles Jackson, and Daniel Saunders, $20,000 each. In the $10,000 list, appeared the names of J. Wiley Edmands, Patrick T. Jackson, J. P. Putnam, Martin Brimmer, Josiah G. Abbott, Samuel Hooper, George C. Shattuck, and Samuel Appleton. Among other subscribers for varying amounts, appear the names of Daniel Saunders, Jr., Josiah G. White, Thomas B. Curtis, C. P. Curtis, D. R. Curtis, C. W. Saunders, John Tenney, Nathaniel Stevens, and George Motley. The aggregate capital of $1,000,000 appears to have been subscribed with no delay or halting; the work preliminary to organization, and securing titles to lands, went on without the loss of an hour.

On the 16th of April, 1845, stockholders of the Essex Company permanently organized by the choice of Abbott Lawrence, Nathan Appleton, Patrick T. Jackson, John A. Lowell, Ignatius Sargent, William Sturgis, and Charles S. Storrow, as directors; Abbott Lawrence became president, with Charles S. Storrow treasurer and general agent. These active officers promptly set themselves to the work they were chosen to do, with an eye to ultimate and continued success, rather than immediate realization of profit.

The summer of 1845 was a busy one. Deeds for some 2,300 acres of land, within the site of the projected town, were taken, nearly

equal areas in Andover and Methuen. Early in the year, Mr. Storrow, as engineer of the company, determined the location and prepared plans for the construction of the Great Dam, of the canal, its guard locks, and the location of principal streets and squares. These works were contracted for, and labor commenced in July, 1845. They were constructed in accordance with those plans, and the principal physical features of the city then first determined have remained unchanged. Those planning and executing the important primary works had large-hearted promptings, and designed in a broad and liberal spirit. Had it been otherwise, no beautiful central common would have been saved from sale with extensive suburban parks; aid to intellectual and moral forces, vital in the beginning, would have been less helpful; all operations less progressive and liberal.

Both the president and the agent of the new company were men of boldness, skill, and originality.

They also fully realized that they were founding a city and giving it abiding characteristics. Work done was intended to be permanent.

Mr. Storrow * acted both as engineer and general agent until the spring of 1846, when Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, who had been in charge of construction of forts in Boston Harbor, entered the company's service, and Mr. Storrow devoted himself more exclusively to duties of administration and finance, a work he has uninterruptedly continued to the present time; always with an eye to the development of a model manufacturing city, with the institutions and characteristics of a cultivated and refined community. Capt. Bigelow proceeded to carry forward to their completion the construction of works already in progress, and to plan and execute designs for the construction of large mills and machine-shops, built by the Essex Company for themselves and for other corporations.

The broad comprehension, unwavering faith, and large capacity of Abbott Lawrence should never be forgotten by dwellers in the city that bears his name. More than once, when vital interests were in peril, he came to the rescue with safe counsel and timely financial aid. He was born in Groton, Mass., Dec. 16, 1792, and died in Boston, Aug. 18, 1855. His early education was at the district school during the winter, and for a few months at the academy in his native village. To this was added only the hardy and wholesome discipline of a pious New England country household. He had a bright, active mind, and a sanguine, happy temperament. At the age of sixteen he entered Boston as an apprentice to his brother, Amos Lawrence. Five years later he formed a co-partnership with his brother, under the firm of A. & A. Lawrence. Their business was the importation and sale of foreign manufactures, in which they stood at the head of that class of merchants. It was not until the year 1830 that they became interested in the cotton mills at Lowell, with which they were ever after so closely identified. "As a man of business," says one of his biographers, "Mr. Lawrence possessed talents of the very first order. Prompt, energetic, with an intuitive insight into the characters of men, with sound judgment and an openness of character which won favor on the slightest acquaintance, he acquired the confidence of the community in the highest degree." But he was not merely the model merchant-prince, whose career honored the profession to which he belonged, nor was his mind confined to the numerous details and multiform pursuits of trade. He took a deep interest in politics, political economy, and finance, and both as a writer and a speaker exercised a commanding influence in all matters of public concern. Whatever tended to promote the moral and intellectual advancement of mankind, found in Mr. Lawrence a sympathizing and liberal benefactor. He showed the sincerity of the true Christian philanthropist in his unselfishness, his consideration for the rights and claims of others, and his ready and unfailing kindness to all, rich and poor, who approached him.

In 1834 he was elected a member of the twenty-fourth congress for the district of Suffolk. He declined a re-election at the end of the term, "nor," as his biographer states, as an evidence of his great personal popularity, "could he be induced to alter his purpose by the remarkable assurance given to him by the members of the opposite party, that if he would consent to stand, no candidate should be brought out against him." In 1839 he was again triumphantly elected.

In 1842 he was appointed one of the commissioners from Massachusetts to negotiate with Lord Ashburton the settlement of the North-eastern Boundary question then pending between the United States and England. In 1847 he founded the Scientific School at Cambridge — an enduring monument of his enlightened munificence. In 1848 he lacked only six votes of a nomination to the Vice-Presidency, an honor given to Fillmore and the State of New York. Thus, as events proved, he barely missed the Presidency. He declined a seat in President Taylor's cabinet, but accepted the appointment of minister to Great Britain, a station which he filled for three years with distinguished success.

His service in Lawrence as president and one of the principal owners in the Land and Water Power Company, and his later service as the president of the Pacific Mills, when the fortunes of that great enterprise were trembling in the balance, and were saved only by the skill, courage, and credit of himself and others, need not be told to residents of that time, but should be recorded for the benefit of generations to come.

* We are indebted to Mr. Storrow for valuable information, and access to important papers.

CHAPTER IV.

DEVELOPING POWER.

THE GREAT DAM AND CANALS — POWER OBTAINED — A SERIOUS ACCIDENT — FRESHETS — CAPT. PHINEAS STEVENS.

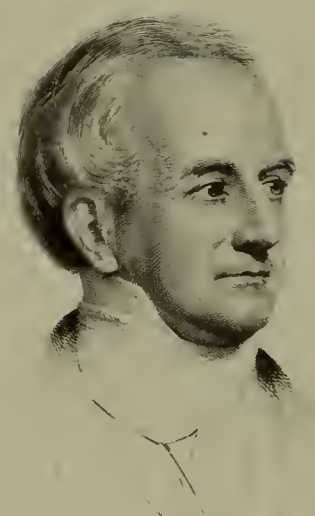
The Great Dam is built upon the solid rock of the river-bed. It is massive, symmetrical, and permanent, constructed of huge granite blocks, laid in hydraulic cement, firmly bedded and bolted upon the river bed-rock, with a thickness at the base of 35 feet, narrowed to 13 feet just below the crest-stone; the greatest height of masonry, above foundation bed, is 40½ feet; the average height of masonry from the bed is 32 feet; the average plunge of water is 25 to 26 feet, without flash-boards.

The masonry of this structure, — one of the most permanent dams on the continent, — is 1,629 feet entire length. The overflow falls in an unbroken sheet of water, 900 feet wide from wing to wing, curving slightly up stream. Though wanting the wild beauty of natural cascades, many come to view this grand triumph of labor skilfully directed. A solid filling of earth, backing this masonry, slopes one foot in six, and protects the structure. The south wing wall is 324 feet long, the north wing 405 feet, both extending far into the banks, the whole standing apparently as firm as natural masses of rock. This dam developes mill powers equivalent to about 10,000 horse powers, for use in ordinary working hours in dryest seasons. A mill power may be defined as the result of the fall of thirty cubic feet of water per second, where the head and fall is twenty-five feet, equivalent to about eighty horse power. About seven-tenths of the power at Lawrence has been brought into use by sale or lease,

The dam was exactly three years in building. On the first day of August, 1845, excavation commenced; and, on the 19th of September following, at five o'clock, P. M., the first stone of the structure was laid in the foundation, at a point near the centre of the river, by John A. Carpenter, of the firm of Gilmore & Carpenter, contractors. Sept. 19, 1848, the same day of the month and hour of the day that the first stone was laid three years before, the last stone was secured in place.

A Serious Accident. — After the completion of parts of the dam at either end, it became necessary, in October, 1847, to turn the current over the finished portion (some 500 feet) by coffer-dams, that the central part might be finished, and power furnished, to some extent, for mechanical operations at the new mills below. As the water was brought to maximum height, by planking upon huge timbers, just at the moment when success was achieved, and cheers of workmen went up over successful control of Merrimac River, a portion of the coffer-dam, about 250 feet from the north end, rose upon the swollen current, and was swept, a fearful ruin, upon rocks below. Capt. Bigelow, chief engineer, with L. M. Wright, his assistant, and thirteen helpers, were in a scow busily at work when the break occurred. The scow swung upon the rushing current, went over and struck upon the rocks, hurling twelve occupants, among flying tools, into the river below. Two men jumped, and clung in safety to a firm portion of the coffer-dam, one went safely over in the current. Of the twelve men in the boat, two were killed outright, five injured, two seriously. Capt. Bigelow — thanks to a faithful workman and his intrepid assistant — escaped with his life, but was temporarily disabled.

A freshet succeeded this break, sweeping away other portions of the temporary dam, but the immense current moved not a stone of the permanent work. This accident caused much excitement. Not only was there loss of life, always to be deplored: it was a temporary set-back in important work, creating a feeling of uneasiness among trouble-borrowers and croakers.



Abbott Lawrence

ALBERTYPE. FORBES & CO BOSTON

The great freshet of April, 1852, tested the strength and sufficiency of works controlling power upon the river. On the 23d of that month the swollen current stood at ten feet above the crest of Lawrence dam, overflowing large tracts in Ward Five, causing apprehension as to safety of portions of the town, and carrying away fishway, toll-house, and parts of old Andover Bridge. Wings of the dam have since been raised; the north dike (a broad public street — Winter Street) protects the city from overflow. By the raising and grading of streets, rise of freshets has been shut from lands liable to submergence. At Lowell there was actual peril from the rise, which was six inches greater than ever before known, five feet greater than since the establishment of mills. Under immense strain the old guard gates showed signs of weakness, and Lowell would have been partially inundated, had it not been for the new guard gates erected by the foresight of engineer James B. Francis.

Capt. Phineas Stevens, a practical and expert mechanic, who had been in charge of building the Bay State Mills, took charge of repairing the coffer-dam, and no serious accident occurred during further prosecution of this work.

Canals. — The North Canal is 5,330 feet in length. It is 100 feet wide at the beginning, narrowing to sixty feet at the outlet, and twelve feet deep between the bermes. The course of this canal is parallel with the river, at a distance of 400 feet therefrom. Between canal and river stand the large mills and workshops, noted for neatness of design, regularity of outline, ample spaces and liberal management. Water was admitted to the completed portion, to the depth of three feet, Nov. 29, 1847. The first appearance of Merrimac River at the mill feeders was Dec. 10th following, when water was raised to stand against the walls, and for the first time show the full width. This first filling was of the upper end, a temporary dam closing the channel near Union Street. The lower end was not filled until April 20, 1848. This lower section had been constructed over the great gulley, extending from Union Street eastward to the waste weir, requiring vast quantities of filling.

The first important application of power, was Feb. 24, 1848, when water was let upon the great wheel at Bay State Mills, and machinery was actually started in the river building. The pump-wheel at Atlantic Mills had been run for a short time previously, but the turbine-wheel was not started until May 10, 1849. Dec. 5, 1848, water was first let on the turbine at Essex Company's machine shop (now the Everett Mill).

The fall in this main canal from upper locks to waste weir (where surplus waters plunge over granite steps into Spicket River) is three and one-half inches. Locks of wood twenty feet wide, in three lifts of nine to ten feet each, give connection with the Merrimac. The locks at head of canal ninety-five feet long, twenty-one feet wide, are constructed of hammered granite laid in hydraulic cement.

From this north and principal canal the Pacific Mills (both main and central), Atlantic Mills, Washington Mills, Pemberton Company, Duck Company, Lawrence Woollen Company, and several smaller mills and workshops take supply of water for power through penstocks, wasting into the Merrimac. The Everett Mills and a part of the paper-mills take supply through pen-stocks discharging into Spicket River. The lower paper-mills are supplied from this canal by a penstock carried from the outlet of the canal over Spicket River upon a stone arch. Between this canal and the mills a branch line of railway (double track) leads from the railroad company's lines.

The south canal is a smaller but very permanent work projected to reach a point near Union Street; to be, when completed, three-fifths of a mile in length. It is sixty feet wide at beginning, decreasing slightly to outlet, with a uniform depth of ten feet throughout. The supply locks are of solid masonry. On the line of this canal are several small but flourishing mills and workshops. The entire cost of dam, canals, sluiceways and locks, was seven hundred thousand dollars, of which sum nearly two hundred thousand was expended on the south bank of Merrimac River.

CHAPTER V.

THE NEW TOWN AND ITS PEOPLE.

LOCALITIES — NAMES — PIONEERS — PECULIARITIES — FIRST BUILDINGS AND ENTERPRISES — LANDMARKS — NEEDS — THE OLD BRIDGE — VISIONARY SCHEMES.

Around the dam and upon lands first sold, in different sections of the city, grew up the new town. As operations extended, and the great mills and machine shop neared completion, labor was attracted to the place known as "Essex," sometimes as "Andover Bridge," afterwards as "Merrimack." The first post-office was opened on Broadway, near the corner of Common Street, September, 1846. In the same locality was the police court, several pioneer lawyers and physicians, leading traders, the single apothecary, and "Concert Hall." In the same building with the post-office was the police station. One criminal, just out of this lobby, secured employment by representing that he came from the Merrimac post-office. It was a standing threat among the boys that all offenders would be arrested and *put in the post-office.*

Active pioneers needed to be many-sided men. In addition to onerous and responsible labor, they were kept constantly on the *qui vive* to provide for the needs of incoming population.

The new town attracted a mixed population. The industrious and hard-working of all trades and professions came, were successful, and remain to this day, or, have died in harness and rest in honored graves; with them came unfortunates, speculators, quacks and pretenders, modern Micawbers who had learned to wait, but not to labor, and for whom nothing ever "turned up" in the busy community.

There was two years' experience of something like lawlessness which would have been dangerous in a community of idlers. In the memoranda of the pioneer company's agent is this entry under date of Dec. 27, 1846: "Soon after we began to collect here we found *law* wanting; next, churches and a school; next, the enforcement of law was wanted, and we had constables appointed. Now the law issues its warrant, the constables arrest, but the prisoner escapes for want of a jail." Under the same date he says: "The various trades are already well represented here. We have constant applications and correspondence relating to business openings; among others one wishes to know if he can have monopoly of the coffin trade in the new town."

The anomalous condition of things was a novelty in the staid region. Those lands best adapted for building were first sold. These tracts were in different sections, with wild intervening spaces, giving the town the appearance of a number of contiguous villages. Large areas of sandy soil were disturbed, by grading and constant travel of heavy teams on every roadway, bringing stone, bricks, and lumber, giving to the winds great clouds of dust, that penetrated to the wardrobes and parlors of dainty housewives.

For the first years, the town had all the peculiarities of a western pioneer city. The principal business street was built upon one side only, with great gaps of vacant land on the one business side. At first, everything centred about that first important structure, the Great Stone Dam.

"Stone Cutters' Square" was the noisy locality where a small army of workmen were bringing granite blocks, for the dam and locks, into form. The house now occupied by the gate-tender at Upper Guard Locks, was the first new building, other than temporary shops and storehouses, erected in the new settlement, and was used by the Essex Company as an office for a time. The boarding-house, No. 2 Turnpike, where Timothy Osgood and his excellent lady entertained crowds of new-comers, with the building adjoining, were the first dwellings of importance erected. The first public sale by the land company was April 29, 1846, when lands upon the lower portions of Essex and Common, and the upper end of Oak and Elm streets were offered, and brought good prices.

The second land sale was April 28, 1847, when lands upon Essex, Common and Oak streets were offered, with a like result.

The foundations and walls of the great mills went gradually up, the Atlantic, Bay State, and the Great Machine Shop buildings, rising like castles from the plain, with few surrounding structures to dwarf or harmonize their immense proportions.

Even after organization as a town, town-meetings were turbulent, methods of doing public business tedious, important subjects could not be properly considered, sanitary and police regulations were insufficient. A Sabbath without disorder in some locality was excep-

tional. Of sidewalks there were few, even upon Essex Street; walks of plank and boards spanned the most dangerous reaches of mud; streets were so many country roads taking a city's travel; sewerage was insufficient. The citizen venturing abroad on an inclement night, encountered a dim street-light, here and there, with Egyptian darkness between.

There was no uniform system of numbering streets for several years; the same street would have duplicate numbers in different sections. On the common, at one time, a thrifty gardener raised fine crops of Dutch cabbages. At another time, there was a good yield of buckwheat. There were several landmarks by which early residents took their bearings. These were the few large residences of the mill agents and leading citizens, the older church and school buildings, the Catholic church of Fathers Taaffe and French, on Chestnut Street, the old oak that gave the name to Oak Street, and, later, the City Hall, and Oliver school-house, both appearing like huge, overgrown, but shapely edifices, waiting for a city to come and reduce their solitary greatness into harmony with something.

Andover Bridge (the present Broadway Bridge) was a sort of wooden artery through which the city's circulation throbbed. It was a rough, narrow, rambling structure, built by a corporation in 1793, and reconstructed about as often as the human system renews its tissues, from that day to this. Gov. John Hancock signed the Act of incorporation. The first structure cost four thousand pounds.

When this bridge was opened, Sept. 19, 1793, there was an imposing civic and military display, and one boy, named Stevens, was killed, or died from injuries inflicted by the guard. The structure was frequently swept away by ice and floods. Over the spray of the rapids it went rapidly to decay; there was constant and fearful financial loss. This old bridge was strengthened and renovated for the sudden influx of travel poured upon it by the new town. Without footwalks, and crowded with heavy teams and foot-passengers, it was for a time the busiest spot in the valley. The bridge remained as a toll-bridge until 1868, when it was made free, as a public highway, the city paying the larger part of the value, and assuming care of the bridge under the county commissioners' award. At the same time, Lawrence Bridge, at Union Street, built ten years after the founding of the city, was made free in like manner by county commissioners' award.

As might be expected, many visionary schemes were proposed to founders of the city. An eminent educator insisted that the high and grammar school buildings should stand in the centre of the common. Another enthusiastic pioneer had a scheme for laying out a vast garden-city, a sort of "annex" to Lawrence, to be located east of Prospect Hill, upon the intervales, with streets eight to ten rods wide, and everything in proportion. The rapid rise of land bewildered the old-time landholders, one of whom proposed to purchase five acres directly north of the common, for a small dairy and milk farm, if the price could be made nominal; another had an ambition to dwell upon Essex Street, with a house-lot of twenty rods frontage. One gentleman avers that a visionary philanthropist urged him to plant his lowlands with "peat-seed," and thus raise fuel for the poor; practical jokers having imbued him with much philanthropy, and false ideas of growth. Castles in air were built by visionaries over and all about the veritable structures of brick and stone.

Citizens of the new town were noted for public spirit and enterprise in both private and public affairs. Churches, schools, and organized charities were promptly established and generously sustained. In February, 1847, in a community of laborers but a year established, nearly eleven hundred dollars were contributed to sufferers by famine, in Ireland, a further sum being contributed in the Catholic churches.

A large transient population centred here before a mill-wheel turned or a loom was set in place. The first incoming laborers were sturdy Irish emigrants, bringing nothing but strong arms and cheerful spirits. Coming to the bare plain for shelter, they built shanties on the south bank of the Merrimac, near the dam, and on Water Street, above the fall. This cheapest form of dwelling, all their means allowed, served some for many years; but, when the land occupied by these shanties was offered for sale, many of the occupants had accumulated means sufficient to purchase the ground, and replace the humble shanty by a comfortable, spacious, sometimes a tasty dwelling. The Water Street cabins were all removed after the completion of the dam.

In the old time, little, even of rough mechanical work was done here. Abiel Stevens commenced, nearly twenty years before the founding of the city, the making of pianoforte cases (then a new enterprise) in a small building, without power, adjoining the Shawsheen House, in South Lawrence (then Andover). Having ill-success, he lost his little fortune, but secured aid, purchased and improved the mill-site and privilege (now the site of Arlington Mills) on Spicket River. Here Mr. Stevens made wood-work and cases for musical instruments, supplying Boston makers. In 1857–58, he improved the water-power by building dikes and dams, having secured flowage rights above.

The making of paper was commenced by Adolphus Durant, Esq., as early as 1826, in very small mills, on the lower Spicket bank; also on a smaller scale, by one Richardson. Besides these small mills, and the district grist-mill, on the lower Spicket, there were none other than simplest trades before the year 1845.

CHAPTER VI.

THE MUNICIPAL RECORD.

POLITICAL HISTORY — TOWN AND CITY — GROWTH AND POPULATION — FIRE AND POLICE DEPARTMENTS — FIRES — POLICE COURT.

Progressive action was impossible, while the settlement remained a part of two staid townships, where public business had run in well-worn ruts for a century. Naturally the people clamored for a town organization. April 17, 1847, just two years and one day after forming the Essex Company, the Act incorporating the new town of Lawrence was signed by Gov. George N. Briggs.

In first town-meeting, April 26, 1847, held in Merrimack Hall, organization under the Act was effected. Within nine days after incorporation, the machinery of town government was in operation. The boundaries of the new town were shown by the following: —

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by authority of same, as follows:

SECTION 1. All the territory now within the towns of Methuen and Andover, in the county of Essex, comprised within the following limits — that is to say, by a line beginning at the mouth of Shawsheen River, at its easterly bank; thence running southerly by said easterly bank to a stake at the bend in said river, a few rods westerly of the bridge, where it is crossed by the Salem Turnpike; thence in a straight line westerly to a marked stone in the wall at the easterly corner of the intersection of roads, by Jacob Barnard's house; thence northerly in a straight line across Merrimack River, to a stake about 2,150 feet northerly from where the line crosses Tower Hill Road; thence north-easterly to a monument on Londonderry Turnpike; thence easterly in a straight line to a monument at the intersection of Lawrence street with the old road; thence in a straight line easterly, through a monument about 400 feet south of the intersection of the roads near Wm. Swan's house, to the line of the town of Andover, in Merrimack River; thence running by the said line westerly, to the easterly bank of Shawsheen River; — is hereby incorporated into a town by the name of Lawrence.

April 4, 1854, a small wedge-shaped section of land, with but few inhabitants, lying upon the north-easterly side of the town, was set off from Methuen, and annexed to Lawrence, thus making the only change in original boundary lines, as above stated.

The succeeding sections contained provisions for the organization of the town, adjustment of taxes and indebtedness with the parent townships, and maintenance of bridges over Shawsheen River.

The first town-officers had no light duty. The people wanted protection, material improvements, and educational advantages. Four days after the first town-meeting, a second was held for general town business, making appropriations, appointing minor officers, &c. May 17th and 24th, steps were taken to secure fire-engines and apparatus; a jury list of fifty-five names was accepted, and a great amount of necessary business done. June 19th following, a code of well-considered by-laws was reported and adopted.

The year 1847 was a year of town-meetings, and minutest details of expenditure were authorized by vote of citizens. The first few acres of the cemetery were purchased, land and buildings for a poor-farm leased, and the machinery of government set in motion.

During the year 1848, after many a stormy session, was settled the question of building and locating a town-house. School accommodations, including "a brick school-house on Haverhill Street to accommodate four hundred scholars," were needs that could not be ignored. The character of the new town was virtually fixed by the liberal and progressive action of citizens and town officials during this and the succeeding year.

Unabated activity in town affairs continued during the year 1849. Important public works, set on foot the preceding year, were carried out. The three following years, 1850–51–52, and a part of 1853, were eventful ones, not only for town officials, but for business men, mechanics, and every active member of the community.

In the six years of town organization, the population increased from 3,577 to nearly 13,000, the valuation of estates from one and three-fourths millions to seven millions of dollars; but frequent and turbulent town-meetings were tedious and annoying. A new era of prosperity seemed about to dawn with the starting of the Pacific Mills and smaller new corporations, promising great increase of population and wealth. A city government seemed a necessity. A city charter was granted by the Legislature, and signed by Gov. John H. Clifford, March 21, 1853. The charter was accepted by the people, 659 voting yea, to 143 nays, on the 29th of the same month.

The city charter divides the city into six wards: Wards One, Two, Three, and Four are north of Merrimac River, and east of Broadway (the old Turnpike); Ward Five is north of the river, and west of the Turnpike; Ward Six (more sparsely populated) includes all south of Merrimac River—nearly half the area of the city. The city council includes one alderman and three councilmen from each ward. No compensation is paid to these officers. The first rules and orders adopted were those of the city council of Newburyport. The first ordinances passed were similar to those of that *then* recently incorporated city, which it is understood were drawn by Hon. Caleb Cushing.

The first election of city officers was held April 18, 1853. The political parties drew strict lines in their nominations for municipal offices. For the office of mayor, Charles S. Storrow was the Whig nominee; Enoch Bartlett, a young and popular attorney, was presented by the Democrats; James K. Barker, a civil engineer, by the Free-Soil or Anti-Slavery voters. Mr. Storrow lacked thirty-five votes of an election. Ten days later, at a second trial, William R. Page was the Whig nominee, Mr. Bartlett of the Democrats, and sixty-four scattered widely in manifesting their preferences. Mr. Page lacked nine votes of an election. At the third trial, Charles S. Storrow was again a candidate, Dana Sargent, the Democratic nominee, and only twenty-one scattering votes were cast. Mr. Storrow was elected by thirty-five majority.

On the tenth day of May, 1853, was inaugurated the first city government, and the first mayor delivered his address.

The first city government was a strong one. In the upper board with Mr. Storrow, the mayor, were George D. Cabot, for years agent of the Lawrence Gas Company, Albert Warren (mayor in 1855–56), E. B. Herrick, Alvah Bennett, Walker Flanders, and S. S. Valpey, all practical and safe men. In the common council board were Josiah Osgood (the president), Nathaniel G. White (now president of the Boston and Maine Railroad), Dana Sargent (since mayor of Nashua, N. H.), Capt. William R. Spaulding, E. F. Bean, Daniel Hardy, Isaac K. Gage, and others of prominence in city and business affairs since that day.

The second municipal election resulted in the choice of Enoch Bartlett, the Democratic nominee, as mayor, a Democratic board of aldermen, and a common council divided between the two parties. During this year grew up that political organization, the Know-Nothing order. Lawrence was one of the strongholds of the order for a time. A few matter-of-fact and conservative citizens adhered to old parties, but the mass were swept into the new party and rode the topmost wave of excitement. The municipal administrations of 1855–56 were elected by those who had passed the wicket. Since that time the two prominent political parties have each had frequent experience of victory and defeat.

The city is within the Seventh Congressional District, which sent as representative in the Forty-Fourth Congress (1875–76) Hon. John K. Tarbox, a native of Lawrence, who ran largely ahead of other candidates of the Democratic party, securing the election over Dr. James C. Ayer, of Lowell, although his party was in the minority. In the contest for the Forty-Sixth Congress, both the prominent parties nominated citizens of Lawrence; Hon. William A. Russell, the well-known paper manufacturer, being the nominee of Republicans; Hon. J. K. Tarbox, of the Democracy. There was a sharp but friendly contest, Mr. Russell being elected by a plurality of 5,460 votes. Hon. Daniel Appleton White, also a native of the town of Methuen, born in that section now the heart of Lawrence, was for one term in Congress, so long since that the fact is generally forgotten.

To the Massachusetts Senate the district has sent Hon. Daniel Saunders, Jr., Thomas Wright (four terms), Ben. Osgood, Judge Nathan W. Harmon, Hon. John K. Tarbox, Horace C. Bacon, and Byron Truell, all citizens of Lawrence. The city has been directly represented in the State Legislature by Morris Knowles, George D. Lund, James K. Barker, Thomas Wright, Charles Stark Newell, Josiah Osgood, Ebenezer B. Currier, Enoch Bartlett, David Wentworth, Enoch Pratt, Amasa Bryant, Thomas A. Parsons, John A. Goodwin, Timothy V. Coburn, Benjamin Harding, John Gale, the Rev. J. R. Johnson, Thomas W. Floyd, Walker Flanders, William Hardy, Nathan W. Harmon, Cyrus Williams, John C. Hoadley, Alfred J. French, George W. Benson, Harrison D. Clement, John J. Doland, Lemuel A. Bishop, Edgar J. Sherman, William H. P. Wright, Albert Blood, Henry M. McIntire, William A. Russell, Frederick Butler, George E. Davis, John K. Tarbox, Robert Bower, Patrick Sweeney, Henry J. Couch, William S. Knox, Patrick Murphy, Horace C. Bacon, Byron Truell, Edwin Ayer, Melvin Beal, Levi Emery, John C. Sanborn, Michael Rinn, Abel Webster, Jesse Moulton, and John J. Nichols.

In early years immediate need of streets, sewerage, paving, lighting, and public buildings crowded work, done in older townships in a century, into a busy decade. Unusual responsibility devolved upon these early officials, also upon those in power in the hard times of 1857, in 1860 (the year of the Pemberton calamity), in the years of the war (1861 to 1865 inclusive), and during the erection of important public works; all of whom have mention under appropriate heads. The following tabular statements show, better than pages of explanation, changes in local governments and increase of population and property:—

Town Officers for the Six Years Lawrence remained a Town.

1847.

Selectmen.	School Committees.	Town Clerks and Treasurers.
William Swan. Charles F. Abbott. Nathan Wells. James Stevens. Lorenzo D. Brown.	James D. Herrick. William D. Lamb. Dan. Weed.	E. W. Morse, Clerk. Daniel Saunders, Treasurer. Bailey Bartlett, Collector.

1848.

David J. Clark. Charles F. Abbott. William D. Joplin. Levi Sprague. John M. Smith.	The Rev. George Packard. The Rev. Lyman Whiting. The Rev. H. F. Harrington. Nathan W. Harmon. James D. Herrick.	E. W. Morse, Clerk. Nathaniel White, Treasurer. Parker Smith, Collector.

1849.

Charles F. Abbott. Levi Sprague. Isaac Fletcher.	The Rev. George Packard. Henry K. Oliver. The Rev. H. F. Harrington. James D. Herrick. The Rev. Lyman Whiting.	E. W. Morse, Clerk. Daniel Saunders, Treasurer N. G. White, Collector.

1850.

Artemas Parker, Jr. William Gile. William R. Page.	The Rev. H. F. Harrington. The Rev. Geo. H. Clark. The Rev. J. G. Richardson. The Rev. Lyman Whiting. The Rev. George Packard.	George W. Benson, Clerk. George W. Sanborn, Treasurer. N. G. White, Collector.

1851.

William R. Page. Levi Sprague. Joseph Norris.	Charles S. Storrow. Nathan W. Harmon. The Rev. George Packard. James D. Herrick. Dr. M. L. Atkinson.	George W. Benson, Clerk. George W. Sanborn, Treasurer and Collector.

1852.

William R. Page. Levi Sprague. Joseph Norris.	The Rev. George Packard. A. D. Blanchard. The Rev. Samuel Kelley. Nathan W. Harmon. John A. Goodwin.	George W. Benson, Clerk. George W. Sanborn, Treasurer and Collector. Ivan Stevens, Auditor, during town organization.

Municipal Officers since Organization of the City in 1853.

[See Fire, Police, and School Departments.]

Year.	Mayors.	City Clerks.	Treasurer and Collector.
1853.	Charles S. Storrow.	George W. Benson.	Bracket H. Clark.
1854.	Enoch Bartlett.	Benjamin Bordman.	Nicholas Chapman.
1855.	Albert Warren.	William Morse.	Nathaniel Wilson.
1856.	" "	" "	" "
1857.	John R. Rollins.	George R. Rowe.	" "
1858.	" "	" "	" "
1859.	Henry K. Oliver.	" "	" "
1860.	Daniel Saunders, Jr.	" "	" "
1861.	James K. Barker.	" "	" "
1862.	William H. P. Wright.	" "	" "
1863.	" " "	" "	" "
1864.	Alfred J. French.	" "	Robert H. Tewksbury.
1865.	Milton Bonney.	" "	" "
1866.	Pardon Armington.	" "	" "
1867.	Nathaniel P. H. Melvin.	" "	" "
1868.	" " "	" "	" "
1869.	Frank Davis.	" "	" "
1870.	Nathaniel P. H. Melvin.	" "	" "
1871.	S. B. W. Davis.	" "	" "
1872.	" "	" "	" "
1873.	John K. Tarbox.	" "	" "
1874.	" "	" "	Elihu W. Colcord.
1875.	Robert H. Tewksbury.	Walter R. Rowe.	Albert V. Bugbee.
1876.	Edmund R. Hayden.	" "	" "
1877.	Caleb Saunders.	James E. Shepard.	" "
1878.	James R. Simpson.	" "	" "

Sylvester A. Furbush (died 1870) served thirteen years as an assessor of taxes; Edward P. Poor, when his term expires, will have served fifteen years with industry and ability. Gen. Michael P. Merrill and D. C. O'Sullivan are also veteran assessors. As auditors, Artemas Harmon, Henry N. Butman, L. E. Rice, Elbridge B. Osgood, and John E. Cushing have had prolonged service, the last two for many years.

Changes in Population, Valuation, and Taxation of Town and City.

Year.	Population.	Valuation.	School Children.	Polls.	Tax on $1,000.	Year.	Population.	Valuation.	School Children	Polls.	Tax on $1,000.
1845,*	150	-	51	33	-	1863,	19,750	$10,939,450	3,384	3,282	$11.20
1847,	3,577	$1,719,240	403	497	$3.50	1864	20,500	11,074,430	3,495	3,692	11.60
1848,	5,949	3,814,426	620	1,321	4 20	1865,	21,698	12,783,273	3,613	4,147	13 50
1849,	7,225	5,730,710	1,089	2,318	3 90	1866,	23,750	13,748,285	4,026	5,250	13 50
1850,	8,282	5,902,741	1,308	2,249	4.90	1867,	26,000	14,684,000	4,462	5,714	17 20
1851,	9,000	6,497,926	1,593	2,542	5 90	1868,	26,500	15,570,000	4,359	5,960	13.50
1852,	10,500	6,374,355	1,660	2,514	5 30	1869,	28,000	16,647,000	4,665	6,346	13 50
1853,	12,147	6,937,160	1,869	3,066	7.00	1870,	28,932	17,912,507	4,846	6,506	17.20
1854,	14,951	8,842,915	2,167	3,366	7.00	1871,	29,000	18,552,000	4,856	6,625	16 80
1855,	16,081	9,954,041	2,508	3,559	7.80	1872,	31,000	20,763,693	4,847	7,000	15 80
1856,	16,800	10,483,725	2,792	3,525	7 60	1873,	33,000	21,687,732	5,141	7,557	16.00
1857,	17,800	10,228,400	3,021	3,898	8 20	1874,	33,800	22,918,775	5,385	7,728	16.20
1858,	15,300	10,249,089	2,610	2,962	8 40	1875,	34,916	24,117,373	5,648	8,120	17.60
1859,	16,000	10,022,947	2,702	3,057	7 20	1876,	35,000	23,905,598	5,634	8,026	19.00
1860,	17,630	10,584,023	3,171	3,609	8 40	1877,	36,000	23,902,537	6,088	8,139	16 60
1861,	18,400	10,769,613	3,210	3,906	8 80	1878,	37,500	23,744,017	6,668	8,542	15.00
1862,	18,500	10,777,920	3,310	3,378	9.00						

* A part of Methuen and Andover.

In 1850, about sixty-five per cent. of the aggregate tax was laid upon the property of corporations, only thirty-five per cent. upon estates of individuals and firms. In 1870, corporations and private citizens paid equal amounts. In 1878, the proportion is reversed; individuals paying fifty-six per cent., corporations forty-four per cent. of the total tax. In 1875, the number of females in the city exceeded the number of males by 3,296. In 1847, there were 2,289 males, and but 1,118 females. Of the entire population for 1875 (34,916), those of American birth numbered 19,370. Those born in Great Britain, Ireland, and England's Provinces, numbered 14,421. The German element is rapidly increasing; already numbering, in 1878, about 2,600 people. Nearly 13,000, or one-third of the entire population, are employed in mills and workshops.

In 1854, the population was 14.951. Of that number, over 9,000, or sixty per cent., resided in wards two and three! Ward three, the smallest in area, then had a population of 5,174. The now populous ward five had then less than 900 residents; the whole region south of Merrimac, less than 1,000 souls.

School, fire, and police department matters, have peculiar interest to the whole people. The schools are fully considered in a separate chapter.

The Fire Department was established, or foreshadowed, only four days after town organization. Having no special Act authorizing appointment of engineers, fire wards (William M. Kimball, Josiah Johnson, Nathaniel Wilson, Charles Smith, and Samuel I. Thompson) were appointed; also a committee (William M. Kimball, Nathaniel Wilson, and Caleb M. Marvel) to purchase engines and apparatus, and erect a house for same. In 1848, an Act of the Legislature established "a Fire Department in the town of Lawrence," and authorized the appointment of fire engineers. Previous to any action by the town, "Essex" hand-engine was owned by Essex Company, run by its employees, and housed in a small building on the site of Brechin Block.

November, 1847, "Rough and Ready," No. 2, and "Syphon," No. 3, engines were purchased by the town. No. 2 was housed on Newbury Street, near Essex; No. 3 on Oak Street (for a short time on Elm). Rough and Ready Engine Company, No. 2, was first organized Aug. 26, 1847. A Hook and Ladder Company, and a Hose Company were formed the year following (1848), and the same year, an Association — "The Lawrence Fire Protection Company," — composed of staid members, who did not care to run with the boys, saved and protected movable property exposed at fires. This company lived but three or four years. The exemplary members were accused of looking placidly on while the stock of a liquor seller was consumed. It was said that one extreme moralist smilingly watched the blue flames rise from bursting gin bottles, singing softly,

"Believing we rejoice to see the curse removed."

"Tiger" hand-engine, No. 4, was purchased in 1850, and stationed at South Lawrence. In the old hand-engine days, it was fun to be a fireman. The several "tubs" came from their houses with sixty men and boys at the ropes of each; there was noise, life, and commotion, spirited rivalry, and earnest work. Competitive trials were no dull tests of rival steamers, but grand exercise of muscular force, vitality, and endurance. Over 250 active men were connected with the department.

William M. Kimball was first chief of fire engineers in 1847, and in several after years. James D. Herrick succeeded him in 1848. Samuel I. Thompson served for a time. In other years of town government, there was a board of six engineers, the clerk having extra compensation; Moses Perkins and Dr. Seneca Sargent acting as clerks. Luther Ladd was an efficient fireman from the first, and has been chief of engineers for seventeen different years since 1854. Col. L. D. Sargent was chief in 1858–59. Benjamin Booth had a long experience of many years, and made a good record. George K. Wiggin, Albert R. Brewster, and Col. Melvin Beal have each had two years' service as chief engineer, and many years as firemen. Dennis Wholley and William E. Heald are the latest incumbents.

In 1860, the first steam fire-engine, "Pacific," was purchased, and radical changes began. "Atlantic" and "Tiger" steamers were purchased in 1862, the "Essex" in 1864, and the "Washington" in 1871. There are now five powerful steamers, the oldest used as a relief steamer, in case of breakage or repairs, with a full complement of hose, and a hook and ladder company, all housed in buildings convenient and permanent, in most cases heated by steam. The Garden Street brick engine-house was built in 1871–72, "Tiger" brick engine-house (South Lawrence) in 1868, Washington steamer house and headquarters of engineers and fire alarm was rebuilt and refitted in 1875, the brick hook and ladder house, Franklin Street, was built in 1876. The automatic fire-alarm telegraph was introduced in 1869. Pipes from the Prospect Hill reservoir gave the only permanent head of water, to corporations and the business streets, until, in 1875, water from the public water-works was first used in hydrants. These hydrants are located at all important street intersections in populous districts.

No sweeping fires, consuming whole squares, have occurred. Burning of the Merrimack House, in 1849, was one of the first serious fires. The building (on Broadway, near Tremont Street) was totally consumed. Lawrence Hall (now Music Hall) was burned in July, 1851, and rebuilt by insurance companies. Boston and Maine Railroad repair shops have been consumed; the freight house was burned in 1854. Essex Yard and Lowell Street, near railroad, headquarters of lumber trade and manufacture, have been visited with destructive fires, notably at the yard in 1866 and 1871, and on Lowell Street in 1870, and the great planing-mill fire of ten years before. The year 1866 was a year of fires; Arlington Mills, Railroad repair shops, Essex Yard buildings, and Bacon's paper-mills were either wholly or partially consumed. The total loss for the year was $353,000. The great fire of August, 1859, originated in

the unfinished United States Hotel, on Essex Street, west of Jackson, and, for a time, threatened to destroy the business portion of the city. The court house, Central Congregational Church, and several stores were consumed. The frail front wall of the hotel, heavily loaded with iron finish, fell outward, burying three citizens in the ruin. George Stanley, a young printer; Frank Henry, an auctioneer; and Lyman H. Larkin, a mill-hand, — were the persons killed by falling walls. Flying cinders caught in the lofty wooden spire of the Unitarian Church, alarming that thickly populated section. The spire was consumed, and rebuilt in firmer but more modest style.

The appalling fire in the ruins of Pemberton Mill, in 1860, is described elsewhere. The corporations have an elaborate system of water-pipes of their own, connected with and supplied by city waterworks. The larger mills have such ample supply of hose and fire apparatus, that, in ordinary danger on their premises, the city fire department is not called upon.

For several years, the city has had rare exemption from severe fires. In most cases, losses are partial. Mention must be made of "Jim Syphon," the four-footed fireman, who ran with the old Syphon Engine Company, and kept guard at their house. He was one of the historic animals of the town. Jim considered a man who was not a fireman as beneath his notice. He would drop a juicy beefsteak to answer the fire-alarm. If shut in a room, he would dash through, crashing glass, and be first to report. He leaped from a second story window at the sound of the fire-bell. Woe to the rival fireman that worried the Syphon's adopted dog. He loved the boys, and they loved him. Jim died about the time steam robbed the fireman's life of its noisy pomp, and left little of the old-time parade for a proud old animal to delight in.

The Mutual Relief Association of the Lawrence Fire Department has lately been formed and incorporated. Members contribute to a fund for the relief of injured firemen, and pay a small gratuity to families of members dying while connected with the department.

Twice have calls for assistance from cities suffering by calamitous fires been answered by direct public aid, and voluntary gifts by citizens; viz., at the time when Portland and Chicago were devastated by flames.

The Police Department.—During working hours in the early days, nearly every male member of the community was busy at hard labor, and quiet reigned. At night, in some localities, frequent fights and disturbances occurred. The Sunday that passed without an excited crowd, gathered by some disorderly proceeding, was exceptional. There were all the elements of tumult in a community, largely strangers, loosely governed. Generally no serious damage came from these noisy gatherings. Crimes were, in the main, petty offences.

During town organization the number of police varied from ten to twenty-two, the appointees doing such duty as could be done in addition to other employments. Gilman F. Sanborn, James D. Herrick, and Nathaniel Ambrose were successively in command of town police. Since organization of the city government the force has been in charge of a marshal and assistants, the following named serving as marshal: Harvey L. Fuller, Chandler Bailey, Leonard Stoddard, Joseph H. Keyes, John S. Perkins, George W. Potter, John W. Porter, Edmund R. Hayden, Noah Parkman, Chase Philbrick, James E. Shepard, Lyman Prescott, James M. Currier, James T. O'Sullivan, and Moulton Batchelder.

Several of these have had years of service. Col. Philbrick had longest experience, and has since been a member of the State detective force. Messrs. Perkins, Porter, O'Sullivan, and Batchelder have had great experience in various positions of police duty and management. Hon. E. R. Hayden advanced from patrolman to the marshalship and the mayor's chair.

General excitement prevailed at the time of the Know-Nothing disturbance in 1854, during the administration of Mayor Enoch Bartlett. There was bitterness of feeling between native and foreign elements, engendered by political excitement. The sight of a small flag, *union down*, upon the dwelling of an ignorant citizen (who probably knew not what the flag symbolized, or its proper position), stirred the multitude to extravagant action. Hot-headed enthusiasts in the new order procured a band, the few grew to hundreds following in procession, the unthinking joining in as they would have joined any mass of excited men. Naturally there was collision; missiles were thrown and fire-arms discharged. Damage was done to a building on Common Street, near Newbury. The riot act was read and the crowd finally dispersed. Excitement was intense. Serious outbreak was feared. Nearly three hundred special police were sworn for duty, including preachers, doctors, lawyers, and business men. There was no further disturbance; even that wordy adventurer, Orr, known as the "Angel Gabriel," haranguing crowds with passionate and foolish abuse of whole classes and sects without disturbance.

In 1875 a thoughtless crowd, not to be considered as representing any considerable element of the city's population, harassed a small band of Orangemen, returning from the celebration of the anniversary of the battle of the Boyne, at a quiet up-river picnic, on the 12th of July. There was collision and excitement, resulting in the throwing of stones, discharge of fire-arms, and the slight wounding of two persons. With these noted exceptions, unusual quiet and good order have been preserved.

The Act establishing a police court in the new town of Lawrence was passed April 5, 1848. A court had previously been held in a building near the corner of Turnpike and Common streets, Attorney Joseph Couch acting as trial justice. Afterwards, for many years, the court was held in what is now Needham Hall, corner of Essex and Appleton streets, and temporarily in other halls. Judge William Stevens, of Andover, was the first judge appointed under the Act. For twenty-eight years he held court, being active in season and out, always with a leaning towards mercy for the criminal, pity for the erring, and a firm endeavor to be just. In 1876, total blindness rendered his retirement necessary. He died January, 1878, aged seventy-eight years. This venerable man was as loyal and true as he was kind-hearted and genial. His disregard of arbitrary rules, laid down by exclusives, sometimes excited smiles, but are remembered to his credit now the good man has gone where good acts and intentions, not position or apparel, are passports to favor. He was original and positive in methods and action. His venerable appearance and urbane manner will be remembered by all with whom he came in contact. During the war he mourned the loss of two sons, given to defend the nation's honor; yet his loyalty never wavered in the dark hours of defeat and loss.

In 1867 the commodious rooms and offices in the new police station building were occupied by the police court, and became the police headquarters. For years before this the small wooden lobby on Common Street, east of the court house, and another on Elm Street, had been used, the marshal and assistants having an office at city hall.

Clerks of the police court have, of late years, been elected by the people, for a term of years. William H. Parsons, William H. P. Wright, Edgar J. Sherman, Henry L. Sherman, Charles E. Briggs, Jesse G. Gould, and Henry F. Hopkins have all had long service. The police as a body have been noted for efficiency, though sweeping changes follow each turn of political fortune.

One case that puzzled officers and alarmed citizens, a few years since, will be remembered. In 1871, a series of burglaries were committed in this region. The bold operators baffled the most skilful detectives. The robberies proved to be the act of one man — Carroll Sanborn, of Bristol, N. H., a criminal of peculiar characteristics. The "New York Times" sketched this exceptional character thus:

"There are peculiarities about this man's career that render it worthy of note. No confederate was admitted to share booty or betray confidence. He worked upon certain inflexible principles. All his operations were conducted by night. During the day he was concealed. In summer he slept in the woods. In winter he found some out-of-the-way, deserted house wherein he could take up his quarters. He pursued housebreaking as a fine art. On one memorable night, he committed seven robberies, — four at Methuen, and three at Haverhill, — each of the latter involving the forcible entry of a house, and got off in safety."

He was a skilled mechanic, an excellent workman. How he was captured by Patrolman Jeremiah F. Donnovan, and seriously wounded in the encounter; how he died in Lawrence jail, a few months after, is well remembered. Guided by his revelations, Marshal Chase Philbrick visited Albany, N. Y., and found secreted, under the pulpit of a city church, a museum of stolen articles, hidden there by this infatuated and erratic man. His rendezvous in this city was in an unoccupied cottage on West Haverhill Street.

The robbery of the dry-goods store of William A. Balcom, in the winter of 1866, of a large quantity of silk, and the arrest of William H. Chase and wife, old citizens, with other parties, nearly a year after the theft, in Vineland, N. J., where he had removed, caused much excitement and a wide-spread interest, the principal being fully convicted.

CHAPTER VII.

PUBLIC WORKS AND PUBLIC PROPERTY.

BUILDINGS — PARKS — WATER-WORKS — CEMETERIES — STREETS — SHADE-TREES — SANITARY PROVISIONS.

Action was taken, in 1848, for the erection of both the city hall and the old high-school building. There was unanimity regarding the location of the school-house; but contention, even to bitterness, regarding the city hall. It was once voted to build on the south-east corner of Common and Lawrence streets, but it was finally voted, "That the town house be located on the west side of Appleton Street." Many citizens favored Jackson Terrace as a better site. Hezekiah Plummer, William M. Kimball, Charles H. Bigelow, and J. M. Stone were the committee in charge of building. Charles Bean was employed as the mechanic in charge.

The plans of Ammi B. Young, of Boston, were accepted. In committee, it was voted "That the architect be required to give bonds in the sum of three thousand dollars that the total cost of the building shall not exceed $30,000, including bell and clock," that sum being raised by loan. The contemplated arrangement at one time was a basement of brick. The granite foundation-story adopted, was raised some two and one-half feet higher than the first design.

Proposals for building were opened Aug. 12, 1848. Cook, Stetson & Mair, of Boston, were awarded the contract for $27,385. The completed hall was dedicated Dec. 10, 1849, and there was a brilliant opening ball. The hall has been a place for political gatherings, lectures, concerts, theatrical performances, fairs, dancing parties, and the cradle of newly-formed churches, it being the only spacious hall in the city for years. The county courts were also held here for a time before the erection of the court-house. In 1860, a gale of wind threatened to demolish the great tower of wood, moving it bodily upon the brick walls. It was set back, strengthened, and secured in position. The great gilt eagle, surmounting the tower, was designed and made by John M. Smith, one of the selectmen for 1848. The spread of wings from tip to tip is 17½ feet, length in line from end of beak to end of tail, 10 feet 2 inches, diameter of body, 2 feet 2 inches. The bell cost $1,000. There was not a church-bell in the city for years, and this rang the hour of church service for all sects and orders. It called the children to school, and, until completion of the fire-alarm, in 1869, it was rung for alarms of fire. It has tolled the finished years of many an old resident, and voiced the patriotism of a generation on jubilation days.

There was a wonderful echo in the hall, in early days, tossing the words of a sharp-voiced speaker, or singer, in upper air, like lost spirits compelled to wander in space. A thoughtful mayor at last smothered the echo in drapery, hanging the walls with damask, thus deadening reverberations and relieving the dismal barrenness of the walls by bits of color. In 1872, the hall was renovated, frescoed, galleries built, new stage, scenery, method of lighting, &c., provided. In 1877, stairways and entrances were improved and fire-escapes provided.

The court-house was erected in 1858–59, after natural opposition from the older parts of the county. The Essex Company gave the land, the city building the foundations, the county erecting the building. Hon. James K. Barker was the architect. Ebenezer B. Currier, as a representative and one of the board of county commissioners, was instrumental in removing the criminal court from Ipswich to Lawrence and in securing permanent county buildings against opposition. In the great fire of 1859, this building, just completed, was burned, the blackened brick walls only standing. It was rebuilt in 1860.

The jail and house of correction was built in 1853, and has since been very much enlarged by additions and improvements. The original structure cost about $100,000, and large appropriations have been expended for enlargement and changes. The location is nearly a mile distant from other public buildings, on the banks of Spicket River. The town purchased the site for the sum of $2,000; and also an acre of land, fronting the buildings, laid out as a park, for the sum of $1,280. This reserve is enclosed by a permanent iron fence. Horatio G. Herrick, the gentlemanly and efficient high sheriff, has charge of the prison, which is deemed a model of neatness, and the management is conceded to be careful and judicious. James Cary, Esq., and Thomas E. Payson (deceased), were the predecessors of Sheriff Herrick, and are credited with faithful service.

Parks.—The common, at the very heart of the city, is an enclosed area of seventeen and one-half acres, slightly elevated, and rolling, crossed by scores of permanent walks. A circular pond, surrounded by a cemented granite wall, supplied with water from the water-works, and hundreds of gold-fish thriving wondrously, adds greatly to the beauty of this reserve.

Ground was broken for this pond August, 1857, all classes turning out to assist. Preacher, teacher, physician, and laborer handled the spade with equal zeal, if not with equal effect. City hall, court-house, high and grammar school buildings, seven Protestant churches, with the dwellings of prominent wealthy citizens, make up a most attractive surrounding for this public ground. The Essex Company proffered this reserve to the city in October, 1848, a gift for public use as a pleasure-ground, subject to wise conditions as to management and enclosure, requiring an outlay of $300 each year for a term of twenty years. Sept. 23, 1848, the inhabitants, in town-meeting, refused to accept the gift with conditions imposed; but sober second thought was best, and, October 7th following, the people voted nearly unanimously to accept it upon the conditions named. In 1874–75, old fences were removed, and this common was surrounded by a granite base, durable and neat, but inexpensive.

In ward one, on the highlands of Prospect Hill, is the reserve of ten acres known as Storrow Park, likewise the gift of the Essex Company. The deed bears date Dec. 3, 1853. Much of this reserve is covered with a natural growth of oak. The site overlooks the city.

By deed of Nov. 19, 1873, the Essex Company made a still further gift of the tract of seven acres, enclosed on three sides by low ridges, lying in ward five, south of Bodwell Street, and known as "The Amphitheatre." The conditions of the grant require the city to appropriate at least $200 per year, for the term of ten years, in improving and embellishing the grounds, and forever to keep the same as a public park. Added to these, the Essex Company have Union Park (11¼ acres), in ward six, south of Merrimac, covered with a natural growth of forest trees. It will soon be surrounded by fine residences. There is also a public reserve of an acre by Lawrence jail.

Water-Works.—The "Lawrence Aqueduct Company" was chartered in 1848. John Tenney, of Methuen, Alfred Kittredge, of Haverhill, and Daniel Saunders, of Lawrence, with associates, forming the corporation. Their project of bringing water from Haggett's Pond was found impracticable. The authorized capital of the company was only $50,000. The projectors based calculations upon the estimated use of eighteen gallons per day by each consumer. Experience shows that a supply of three and four times that quantity must be provided to cover use, waste, and leakage.

In 1851, Bay State Mills and Essex Company, sharing expenses, built a reservoir of 1,000,000 gallons capacity, on Prospect Hill.

Water, in this reservoir, raised by pumping through tested iron pipes, has been kept at a level of about 152 feet above crest of the dam. The property was afterwards owned and operated by associated corporations — forming the Lawrence Reservoir Association, each company having its own system of distribution pipes.

For twenty-four years, pipes and hydrants in corporation yards and principal business streets were supplied from this reservoir. The common pond was also filled from this source.

In 1871–72, the project of building public water-works was agitated. A petition signed by Henry Barton and eighteen leading citizens was presented to the city council, asking for immediate action. The result was that a joint special committee reported as their mature conclusions, that supply must be taken from Merrimac River, rather than from any pond in adjacent towns.

The city council petitioned the Legislature for the passage of "An Act to supply the City of Lawrence with water." This Act was approved March 8, 1872, by Gov. William B. Washburn. The Act provided for the appointment of three commissioners to be elected by the city council in convention, each for three years' service. They were to execute, superintend, and direct work done by authority of the Act, or subsequent Acts.

Legal voters approved of this Act, May, 1872, by 1,298 yeas to 830 nays. In June, 1872, a joint special committee on water was appointed, viz., James Payne and James A. Treat, aldermen, and Lorenzo D. Sargent, Henry J. Couch, and George W. Russell, from the common council. James Payne, Esq., was chairman, and L. Fred. Rice, of Boston, was the engineer consulted. An exhaustive report was made, and April 18, 1873, an ordinance providing for the election and defining the duties of water commissioners was passed.

On the 8th of May following, William Barbour (chairman), Patrick Murphy (clerk), and Morris Knowles were elected commissioners. Walter F. McConnell acted as chief engineer, James P. Kirkwood, Esq., of Brooklyn, N. Y., was consulting engineer.

The permanent brick pumping-station is three-quarters of a mile above Essex Company's dam. Two pumping engines, Leavitt's patent, made by I. P. Morris & Co., Philadelphia — overhead beam engines with compound cylinders and capacity of 200,000 gallons per hour each (run at a speed of sixteen revolutions per minute), massive machines, symmetrical in design — force the water from Merrimac River to the Reservoir on Bodwell's Hill, a little more than a mile from the business centre, through a force main pipe of thirty inches diameter, five thousand feet long.

The reservoir has a capacity of 39,000,000 gallons, is constructed in two divisions, admitting of draining off either basin for repairs or cleansing, using the other meanwhile.

Distribution is entirely through cast-iron pipes. The main pipe laid in Haverhill Street is thirty inches interior diameter at commencement, decreasing gradually to ten inches until it joins the ten-inch main in Prospect Street, nearly two miles distant from the reservoir.

From this distributing main, running nearly due east, pipes diverge laterally, of eight inches diameter, connected by pipes of six inches diameter in cross streets. Broadway, Salem, Prospect, Springfield, Union, and Oxford streets, have each twelve-inch distribution pipes. Canal, Shattuck, and Lawrence streets have twelve-inch mains in part. The Oxford Street pipe is extended with flexible socket-joints across Merrimac River by sinking pipes in still waters above the dam. The Water Street main (twenty-inch) pipe, may be used for supplying the city direct.

For the extinguishing of fires about 450 hydrants of the Lowry patent are in use, protecting all important points, excepting highest hills. With the efficient fire department, the city now has unsurpassed protection against fire, especially for great manufacturing establishments, where immense values are crowded upon small areas.

In the fall of 1875, the ordinance establishing rates and regulating permanent management of water-works was passed. The five members of the board, Milton Bonney, Robert H. Tewksbury, Nathaniel P. H. Melvin, William Barbour, and James Payne, assumed control May 8, 1876. Mr. Melvin was chairman in 1876; he resigning, Mr. Bonney succeeded him. One member retires each year. Albert R. Field and David T. Porter are the new members. Henry W. Rogers is superintendent of the works, and George G. Durrell, registrar.

The bonded debt incurred for the building of the works is $1,300,000. The interest on these and other claims paid or payable from tax and revenues, increases the cost to nearly one million and a half of dollars. The length of pipe laid to date (1878) is about thirty-eight miles; the number of families supplied about five thousand, averaging five persons for each family. Supply is also given to corporations and small manufacturers, at reasonable prices.

Cemeteries. — Bellevue Cemetery comprised at first but five acres. This nucleus was purchased in 1847. Additions have been made from time to time, until some thirty-five acres are enclosed. At a town-meeting, May 24, 1847, the selectmen were authorized "to fence and lay out the cemetery land, and put iron rings and staples in the fence for tying of horses." Soon after this it was voted "to authorize the selectmen to purchase a burial cloth." Smallest details of expenditure seem to have been authorized by vote of the people.

John M. Smith, one of the selectmen in 1848, laid out the first lots; R. M. Copeland and Baldwin Coolidge made subsequent surveys. A family burial-lot was at first sold as low as three dollars. So rapidly have lots been disposed of at greatly advanced prices that, in 1877, a tract of $89\frac{59}{100}$ acres, lying in North Andover, just beyond city limits on Salem Turnpike, was purchased at a cost of $6,000, for burial purposes. The land surrounds Den Rock (a peculiar ledge), and may be made very attractive. The cemeteries of the Catholic churches have been purchased and beautified at their own cost. That of the Church of the Immaculate Conception lies mostly in Methuen, on May Street. The cemeteries of St. Mary's Church (old and new) lie west of Bellevue Cemetery, and comprise an extensive tract where general improvements have been made and projected.

Streets. — The streets are very regular in direction, mainly of fifty feet width. Broadway and South Union, with Salem Turnpike, are sixty-six feet wide. Essex Street, and a part of Salem Street, are eighty feet wide; Common, West Essex, Haverhill, Lawrence, Appleton, Parker, and parts of Jackson, Osgood, and Exeter streets, are sixty feet wide.

On streets about the common, the larger part of Essex Street, and some other localities, restrictions as to use of lands have saved those sections to buildings of a substantial class, both permanent and ornamental.

For paving, small granite blocks are exclusively used. Lack of good road-building material is a serious want. The streets are under the care of a street commissioner and a committee of the city government. The commissioners have been Harrison G. Howe, Phineas M. Gage, James M. Floyd, Amos Piersons, Levi H. Carter, John L. Hutchinson, William L. Carter, Lorenzo F. Smith, Chase Philbrick, Simon Blakelin, Humphrey Desmond, Frederick Gilman, Charles E. Hall.

Shade-Trees. — The luxuriant growth of elms and maples on the common and principal streets is a subject of remark. Twenty-five years ago the plain was as bare of shade as it could well be. Many of the elms on the common were planted under the direction of Levi Sprague, Esq., in 1851–52. It was thought by some to be labor lost, that the soil would not mature forest-trees, but they now arch the wide paths with green. The Essex Company set trees upon most of the streets. Trees upon Lawrence Street were set in 1856. Gen. Henry K. Oliver, as one of the managers of the common, was instrumental in setting many of the trees. Lindens proved a failure upon the common, and have been replaced by rock maples. With the general planting, and the unlooked-for thrift of hardiest forest-trees, another quarter century will make the city a rival, in that respect, of the "forest cities," — New Haven and Portland.

Sanitary Provisions. — The most advanced policy for securing cleanliness, and for sanitary care, was adopted by pioneer corporations. Great expense was incurred for sewerage. The report of the State sanitary commission, 1852, states that $30,000 was expended by the Bay State Mills for sewerage alone. The Pioneer Land Company built expensive sewers for central wards. The other companies adopted the same policy as the Bay State Mills. A head of pure water constantly flows through the corporation drains, carrying every impurity at once to the rapidly flowing river. Strict rules regarding late hours, improper habits, ventilation, care of sick, and prevention of fire, are enforced. Stagnant water in ungraded sections, and lack of definite municipal action, in the early years, left some localities, outside of corporation limits, like Cologne of old, where —

> "Two and seventy stenches
> All well defined"

might be detected, with "several smells," but, gradually, the sanitary condition has been improved, sewerage extended, salutary rules adopted, and a board of health established. The city will now compare favorably with towns of the same class as regards cleanliness and sanitary care.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE INDUSTRIAL RECORD.

CORPORATIONS AND MILLS — SUCCESSFUL AND UNSUCCESSFUL ENTERPRISES — SPECIALTIES OF MANUFACTURE — GENERAL INDUSTRIES — PAPER MAKING.

> "With cotton, wool, flax, iron, and clay, time, intellect, and exertion, are wrought in fabrics, cast in moulds, modelled in forms of beauty, and sold in markets. The substantial and the intangible are both represented in products of looms and creations of art."

The city is eminently an industrial centre. The specialties in manufacture are textile fabrics of nearly every grade made from wool and cotton. There is virtually no leisure or non-producing class. Citizens boast rather of the industrious habit than of the hoarded wealth of the people. The leading industries of the city were established by a few prominent corporations. The pioneer was

The Essex Company. — There was a vast amount of labor performed and expense incurred by this corporation, beyond the work and cost of building the dam, canals, and streets, or fitting lands for habitation. In connection with the proprietors of locks and canals at Lowell, this company purchased rights and built dams at Winnipesaukee and surrounding lakes, in New Hampshire, designing to secure the average, instead of minimum power, at cost, divided between the two companies, of more than half a million of dollars.

Others could not be expected to invest heavily in the new city, unless the Water Power Company showed their faith by their works;

and they built, equipped, and for three years operated the Great Machine Shop, with the foundry and forge shops, all of stone; also built fifty brick dwellings, a large boarding-house, superintendent's and engineer's houses, and expensive improvements in deepening and straightening Spicket River from Machine-shop raceway to its mouth. Protection from fire must be guaranteed, and at the joint cost of this company and Bay State Mills the Prospect Hill reservoir was built and connected with a system of pipage. Andover Bridge was purchased and repaired; a fine brick hotel, the Franklin House, was erected; gas-works were needed, and this company, joining with the Bay State Mills, built the first works; the lumber dock, on Water Street, was excavated, and lumber manufactured at their steam saw-mills in Essex Yard and sold in immense quantities. In the loft of the machine-shop a full set of worsted machinery was set, and operated experimentally — the first attempt to develop that since important and growing industry in this city. Flumes, raceways, wheel-pits, and protecting walls were built, at great cost, at the central mill-site, which formed a part of the location purchased by the Atlantic Cotton Mills. In consequence of the change of plans by the Atlantic Company, hereafter mentioned, this portion of their site was no longer needed for their purposes. It was resumed by the Essex Company, and was eventually sold to the Pacific Mills, by whom it is now occupied.

The Essex Company also engineered and built for owners, and, in some cases, built and sold to their present owners, the Atlantic Cotton Mills, the Upper Pacific Mills, the Pemberton, Duck, and Machine-shop buildings. Much of the work of first years was bread cast upon the waters. Profits were prospective. The Lawrence of the future, not the city of that day, was to be the paying customer. Time, patience, and unbounded faith were needed to work steadily on to success.

The capital of this company was at first $1,000,000; subsequently, it was increased to $1,500,000, and borrowed capital was temporarily used to the extent of nearly $1,000,000 more. After the first and most costly works had been completed and paid for, and the company had been largely re-imbursed by sale of land, water-power, mills, and other products, so large a capital was no longer needed for their operations. The capital was first reduced to $1,000,000 by cancelling shares of stock which had been received in payment for lands; and subsequently to $500,000, by repayment of $500,000 in cash to stockholders.

Abbott Lawrence was president of the company from its organization until his death, in 1855, with the exception of the interval when he was in England as minister of the United States, when the office was filled by J. Wiley Edmands, Mr. Lawrence still remaining a director. Charles S. Storrow has served continuously as treasurer and agent from the first organization to the present time. Since December, 1869, Hiram F. Mills has held the office of chief engineer of the company, with entire charge of all hydraulic and other engineering. The cashiers have been George D. Cabot, John R. Rollins, Henry H. Hall, and Robert H. Tewksbury.

The Bay State Mills. — The extensive buildings of this pioneer company (now the property of Washington Mills) were very thoroughly built, under the superintendence of Capt. Phineas Stevens, of Nashua, N. H., a veteran engineer and builder of more ability than culture. Messrs. Reed & Powers were the contracting masons. The river and wing buildings combined were 1,480 feet long, and from three to five stories high. There were, at first, three central or main mills; the westerly, or No. 3 mill, being the last erected. The No. 4 mill and dye-house are still later works. As now completed by the Washington Mills there are three woollen mills, one mill for worsted and one for cotton manufacture, and the dye-house, with spacious storehouses, repair shops, and packing rooms.

The works were laid out April 11, 1846. Building actually commenced upon the massive foundations June 7, 1846. The water-wheel of the river mill first turned, by power from the canal, Feb. 24, 1848. Active operations in cloth production began June 9th, following, though machinery was run, in the river mill, as early as March 19th, preceding. The third of the three central mills was not finished until 1850. The mill was first lighted by gas Jan. 16, 1849. Samuel Lawrence was treasurer and general manager. At the commencement, M. D. Ross, still active as a Boston merchant, was local agent. Samuel Webber afterwards acted as agent for a short time, when Capt. Oliver H. Perry became permanently the local manager in charge, remaining several years; when he was succeeded by Capt. Gustavus V. Fox, afterwards Assistant Secretary of the Navy. Alfred P. Clark was paymaster and book-keeper through all changes in the company's fortune, from near the first, and now has the position of cashier for the Washington Mills. Edmund B. Herrick, who died Nov. 9, 1878, was continuously in charge of yards and storehouses from the beginning of the older company. Benjamin Hodgman was another veteran mechanic who had long service, and died in harness.

Lines of woollen goods now in constant and increasing demand, then new in American manufacture, had their origin with this company. A lavish use of capital was made, stimulating inventive genius to design, perfect, and establish demand for staple products in woollen manufacture, and a class of all-wool dress fabrics formerly obtained exclusively from France. The all-wool plaid shawls, of American make and moderate price, were here first successfully woven in America, and have come to be known as the "Bay State Shawl," the mill introducing them in 1848, and, in the year 1850, manufacturing no less than 315,000 in number. The exhibit of shawls by these mills at the first International Exposition (1852), and at the Paris Exposition, was extensive, and the articles highly commended. The home production by American mills is now immense, excluding foreign goods of the kind from home markets.

Making of felt carpets was early attempted, but not successfully established. The machine-shop of these mills was extensive. Albert Marshall, Esq., was in charge, and much new machinery was built for the mills in their own shops, and many experiments tried with new inventions and designs. The business of the Bay State Mills was the making of fine woollens, cassimeres, plaids, and shawls, and a general line of woollens new in American manufacture. The industry became a vital one in the city; its apparent success a source of local and national pride. The failure of the company in 1857, and the disturbance caused thereby, is elsewhere mentioned. Two years of inactivity followed failure, when mill buildings, machinery, dwellings, and rights passed into possession of the Washington Mills, a new corporation formed largely by creditors of the former company, who capitalized their debts in the new stock and contributed such further amounts as were necessary to start and operate the works.

The Washington Mills. — This company was chartered by the Legislature, session of 1858, and organized with a capital of $1,650,000, and Joseph S. Fay as treasurer and agent. The corporation rose out of the mercantile ruin of the Bay State Mills, and securely re-established a vital industry; the managers displaying the energy of their predecessors with more of wisdom and balance. The new company commenced operations in 1859. In the general depression of the woollen interest a part of the works were changed and run as cotton-mills.

Perhaps the noticeable, distinctive product has been worsted goods, superseding, to a great extent, fancy cassimeres for men's wear. These worsted coatings, made of combed wool, were originally a French manufacture. Hon. E. R. Mudge, of Boston, was instrumental in first making these goods in American mills, importing, when managing director in 1868–69, the requisite machinery for making these fabrics. Twilled blue flannel coatings, indigo and wool dyed, are also a distinct American product, this company leading in the manufacture; the fabric has a cloth finish, yet retains the lightness and flexibility of flannels. These mills also introduced the widely used opera flannels.

The company is now (1878) replacing the old-style breast wheels, constantly used for thirty years, by turbines of the Boyden patent made by the Ames Manufacturing Company of Chicopee. A renovating process goes on continually, old machinery being replaced by new, of approved patterns. In 1877, the mill operated with 1,380 looms (543 worsted), 2,100 work-people, 1,000 of the number males. Robert S. Scott is now superintendent. The treasurers have been Joseph S. Fay, Joshua Stetson, and the present incumbent, Henry F. Coe. Former local agents have been Gustavus V. Fox, Edward D. Thayer, and William H. Salisbury; superintendents, Parker C. Kirk and John H. Needham. Granville M. Stoddard is superintendent of the worsted department.

The Atlantic Cotton Mills. — This company was incorporated Feb. 3, 1846, with an authorized capital of $1,800,000. The great mill was constructed in three divisions. Ground was broken for the first, June 9, 1846; commenced foundations June 28, the same year; wheels started in the west wing, or No. 1 mill, May 10, 1849. The first cloth was woven in May, 1849. The No. 2 mill started wheels Sept. 4, 1849, and commenced actual manufacture October 1, following. Jan. 12, 1849, the first cotton for a Lawrence mill arrived, consigned to the Atlantic Cotton Mills. Feb. 15, 1850, ground was broken for the central or No. 3 mill. The Essex Company built the machinery for this central mill at their new machine-shop. It was

originally the intention of this company to erect four separate mills, occupying the space between the Upper Pacific and the Washington Mills entire. The building of the central mill, uniting the two first detached buildings in one great structure, gave substantially the producing capacity sought, on a smaller area, and building of the two projected easterly mills was abandoned.

The buildings, with the wheel-pits, water-ways, and all the appurtenances, were constructed by the Essex Company, their engineer, Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, furnishing all the plans and directing the execution. The carpenter work was by Morris Knowles, and the brick-work by Levi Sprague. No 1 of this company's boarding-houses was the first brick dwelling erected in the city, and was opened as a boarding-house, Jan. 4, 1847.

Abbott Lawrence was the first president of this company, and Charles S. Storrow, treasurer for the first year. William Gray then became treasurer and financial agent, holding the place continuously for thirty years, until his resignation in 1877, when, after a short interval, he was succeeded by his son, William Gray, Jr.

Gen. Henry K. Oliver was local agent for the first decade. Joseph P. Battles, the former superintendent, succeeded him, and still remains. Within the last eight years the mill buildings have been greatly changed in appearance, and space obtained by the addition of a mansard roof.

The managers have kept the property in excellent condition, whatever the outlook; but so heavy was the cost of repairs and changes, and so sharp the fall in prices previous to 1876, that it was found necessary to reorganize the company. The capital stock, which was then $1,500,000, was reduced to $1,000,000, the stockholders surrendering five shares of the old stock for one share of new, virtually reducing the old stock to $300,000, but adding $700,000 in cash, actually paid in, to secure the new capital of $1,000,000. This was radical action, so promptly done as to start the company in what is believed to be a new era of prosperity.

The mill is a model of neatness and method, running 90,000 spindles, 1,800 looms, and employing 1,000 people, 300 of whom are males, and producing nearly 500,000 yards per week of sheetings and shirtings. A large new mill, known as No. 4, in rear of No. 1, was started as a worsted mill for the manufacture of worsted braids. This attempt to diversify the product was abandoned, and only white cotton goods are made. A library was maintained by work-people in these mills until the free library was established.

The Lawrence Machine-Shop.—The machine-shop of the Essex Company, built and operated by that corporation on its own account until the year 1852, was then conveyed to a new company, the Lawrence Machine-Shop, and thereafter run as a separate establishment. The capital of this company was $750,000,—15,000 shares, at $50 per share. The buildings were all constructed of stone, even to the immense circular chimney. Work was begun on the foundry building July 10, 1846. The race-way for the great shop was commenced November 13th of the same year. December 5, 1848, water was let upon the turbines.

Anything in iron-work, from a spindle to a locomotive, was made. Soon after starting, the construction of locomotives was made a specialty. The first one sent out was the "Essex," running from Lawrence to Boston; the second, of the same name, ran from Lowell to Boston; the "Welland" and "Trent" went to Ogdensburg; several others to the Erie Railway. Perhaps no company, at the outset, brought to the new city so many families of industrious people, so likely to permanently establish themselves as enterprising citizens, as did this machine-shop, in the palmy days when skilled labor centred there from all quarters.

The portable engine, known as the "Hoadley Engine," was first made at this shop. Some of the best mechanics and manufacturing firms had early training here. The steam fire-engine was perfected by employees in the form soon after brought into general use. That wonder in mechanics and exceptional mechanical success,—the McKay Sewing-machine,—was invented, perfected, and manufacture of the same established, by a former agent of this company. In the business depression of 1857, and immediately thereafter, railway and mill interests being depressed, this company went down, disturbing greatly the business community.

While operated by the Essex Company, Caleb M. Marvel was superintendent; afterwards the officers of the Lawrence Machine-Shop were Samuel Batchelder, president; J. H. W. Page, treasurer; Gordon McKay, agent; John C. Hoadley, superintendent (the latter succeeding McKay as agent).

Standing idle for two years or more, the buildings and lands of this company were sold for a nominal sum, and the Everett Mills took possession of the premises. After thorough reconstruction of the interior, the new company started in 1861, changing entirely the line of manufacture, the great stone mill being filled with cloth-producing machinery. Thus the one great industry of the city became still more completely paramount.

The Pemberton Company.—Vicissitudes of fortune, almost unprecedented, fell to the lot of this company. First incorporated in 1853, and known as the "Pemberton Mill," the works were started with John E. Chase as agent. Operating at a loss, on a falling and depressed market, the year 1857 was the date of its financial ruin. The mill was idle for two years. David Nevins, and George Howe, of Boston, purchased in February, 1859, the entire property, including machinery and stock, for $325,000. The new firm operated under the name of the "Pemberton Manufacturing Company." John E. Chase was local agent as before. Fred. E. Clark (now agent of the mill) was paymaster. On the 10th of January, 1860, without a moment's warning, the whole structure fell, burying 600 operatives in ruin as instantaneous and complete as man has ever looked upon, resulting from no outward cause! The calamity is elsewhere fully described.

The "Pemberton Company," in which those veteran manufacturers, David Nevins, George Blackburn, and Eben Sutton,* have been controlling owners and directors, rebuilt the mill, on the old foundations, in 1860, going into operation in 1861. The capital is $450,000. The goods manufactured are cotton and woollen in variety, both fancy and plain. David Nevins is president, Henry S. Shaw is treasurer, Fred. E. Clark agent, and Samuel M. Newhall cashier. Six hundred and fifty operatives are employed, producing, with modern machinery, what nine hundred accomplished at the time of the disaster in 1860.

Pacific Mills.—These mills are the largest, most important, most successful, though not the oldest, of Lawrence corporations. The buildings of the main mills were erected by the Essex Company; but large additions and great alterations have been made. Ground was broken for the foundation May 24, 1852, at five o'clock, morning. The first stone was laid June 1st, at two o'clock, afternoon, at the south-east corner of the first main mill. Work upon the main building (the easterly end, from the tower, was added in 1860), and upon the print works, or river and wing buildings, progressed rapidly, under the direction of Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, Morris Knowles being the mechanic in charge of wood-work.

The company was incorporated in 1853, the original capital being $2,000,000 (since increased to $2,500,000). The company contemplated the manufacture of ladies' dress goods, "from wool wholly, from cotton wholly, and from wool and cotton combined."

The buildings and machinery were intended to combine, in approved and novel form, all the appliances for such manufacture, including print and dye works.

The building and setting in operation of so important an industry stimulated business in every department of private industry, brought great increase of population and wealth, and gave to the local manufacturing interest its second grand advance towards undisputed permanence.

Construction of the works and supplying machinery on so large a scale exhausted the capital and created a debt. Adding the cost of starting, and furnishing raw material, the great mill was, at the beginning, embarrassed by indebtedness, with no very flattering outlook.

In this emergency, Abbott Lawrence, president of the company, proved himself a bold, far-seeing, and spirited leader, in the enterprise which has in fact been the one marked and distinctive success in Lawrence manufactures. He had not undertaken to lead with any intention of shirking responsibility. On his own name he raised large sums to carry the enterprise through the day of trial.

Jeremiah S. Young was the first treasurer and agent of the mills. He had been lessee, from 1850 to 1853, of the Ballardvale Mills, at Andover, Mass., a company incorporated in 1836, which introduced in this country the manufacture of fine flannels, making the first piece of fine white flannel woven by power in the United States, in 1836. The mill, at first very small, was extended from time to time. This same Andover mill, John Marland, agent, introduced the manufacture of delaines in this country in 1844, combing wool by hand and printing from blocks. Much of the skilled help of this mill was transferred to the Pacific Mills at starting. Mr. Young had also been connected with Portsmouth, N. H., mills. He labored faithfully to establish the company upon a firm basis. So diligently did he apply himself, and so completely identify himself with the interests of the

* Deceased.

company, that failure to realize expectations was to him a personal sorrow and trial. There may have been a want of training for so great an enterprise, of which he was painfully conscious. A cloud rested upon his later life. He was tried by physical weakness, and shadowed by mental disturbance.

Mr. Lawrence, the president, died in August, 1855. Mr. Young died in 1857.

After a short service by George H. Kuhn, Esq., J. Wiley Edmands succeeded Mr. Young as treasurer and the responsible active manager of the mills. In 1853 Mr. William C. Chapin, from the Globe Print Works, Providence, R. I., came to superintend the Pacific Print Works. He soon became the local agent and manager, resigning in 1871, after eighteen years of service.

Mr. John Fallon took charge of the print works, as a chemist and designer, skilled in that branch of manufacture; and when Mr. Chapin retired from the agency, in 1871, Mr. Fallon became acting agent, and has since continued as such, giving most faithful and intelligent service.

J. Wiley Edmands, the treasurer, died in 1877, having served faithfully and continuously for twenty-two years. He had been educated in the house of Mr. Lawrence, and he gave the labor of his ripest years to lifting this struggling enterprise out of danger and threatened failure to established permanence. Success was not alone due to Mr. Edmands, though his guiding hand and active brain were powerful. There were willing hands and active brains among workmen specially skilled in the several departments of labor, design and control, who worked faithfully, shrewdly, and cautiously to improve, perfect, and economize, in processes new to American workmen. Mr. Edmands and local agents justly appreciated valuable service, by whoever rendered. The wages of employees in these mills have always been among the highest paid for like labor, and the company owns nearly three hundred dwellings, leased to overseers, workmen, and keepers of boarding-houses, at low rents.

The selling agents for this corporation, Messrs. James L. Little & Co., merchants of the highest character and standing, contributed largely to its success, which seems to have resulted from a combination of the three prime requisites; viz., financial and administrative ability in the treasurer, skill in manufacture at the mills, and forecast, intelligence, and sagacity in the mercantile department.

At the outset many alterations and additions were needed to bring so extensive an establishment into harmonious operation. Though the mills were worked at a small profit, not sufficient income was netted to wipe out indebtedness, compensate wear and waste, and furnish any amount of quick capital. In the dark days of 1857, many shares of stock were sold at from $75 to $200 per share (par value $1,000); but it rallied, and $500,000 additional capital was paid in, mostly by old stockholders. Since then the shares have frequently commanded $2,000 in open market.

From 1862 the remarkable prosperity of this corporation seems to date. Active and progressive management, with increased facilities, secured a constantly increasing product, reaching (including cloth purchased for printing) 65,000,000 yards in 1877. Sixty per cent. of this product was stuff or worsted goods.

In 1864 the central Pacific mill was erected on central mill-site, separated from the upper Pacific by the Atlantic cotton mills. These central mills are of modern construction, low, wide, and extremely well lighted. So prosperous has been this branch enterprise that frequent alterations and large additions have been made from time to time.

At this writing (1878) the corporation has twelve mill buildings, 5,393 operatives, of whom 3,093 are women and girls, 2,300 men and boys. There are 4,472 looms, 156,000 spindles, forty-one acres of flooring. The fleeces of 1,000 sheep give a week's supply of wool. Of dyestuffs $400,000 worth are annually used. It is calculated that each operative supports and feeds two others; thus this one mill would draw around it a city of 15,000 inhabitants. Beyond these immediate dependents upon one great industry, those engaged in gathering and transporting raw material, and distributing and selling manufactured goods, may be added, and we see the force of the remark of Centennial judges, from whose statistics many of these particulars are taken. They say: "How vast is the wave of production set in motion by the wheels of a single mill! how broadly extended are its enlarging circles. The productive stimulus of this industrial centre moves labor, not only in fields of the South and pastures of the West, but on the plains of India, in the forests of Brazil, and on the islands of the equator."

A library of 7,000 volumes, for the use of the employed, is well selected, comprising both standard and miscellaneous works. Both library and the reading-room, heated, lighted, and opened, day and evening, are well patronized by operatives. A Relief Society, for work-people, temporarily ill, or injured at their work, is a beneficent provision, managed and sustained by the employed.

The Paris Exposition of 1868 awarded managers of this mill 10,000 francs, for "accomplishing most, in a series of years, to secure harmony between employers and their work-people, and most successfully advancing the material, intellectual and moral welfare of employees," — the only award of the kind to American manufacturers.

Ex-Mayor John R. Rollins has been cashier of these mills since 1866. Albert R. Field is superintendent of the cotton department. Waldo L. Abbott, the superintendent of yards and stores, has been in the company's service from boyhood. J. Clinton White is foreman of wood repairs. The special products are fine worsted dress-goods and fine cambrics. We smile now to find on the records of another corporation a peremptory order of stockholders to sell Pacific Mills stock at the ruinous prices it commanded in the trial days of 1858–59.

The Lawrence Duck Company. — The mill of this company is next east of the Pemberton. The Act of incorporation passed in 1852, and the mill was erected the same year. Commenced running in 1853. Albert Fearing (deceased), Isaac Thatcher, and David Whiton were the original owners, all of Boston. Isaac Hayden has been local agent from the first; and Willard B. Hayden, cashier and superintendent for several years. The capital is $300,000, in 300 shares of $1,000 each. The product is cotton sail-duck and twine, of unusual strength, sought after by navigators, who know its value.

The Lawrence Woollen Company. — The plain but substantial mill buildings of this company are east of Union Street, the most easterly of the permanent brick mills for the making of cloths. The yards and out-buildings are patterns of neatness. Capt. Oliver H. Perry * was a principal owner and sole manager since operations commenced in 1864. The line of product is fancy woollens, cloakings, suitings, opera flannels, shawls, &c. George P. Upham is treasurer. Perry, Wendell, Fay & Co. are the selling agents. The capital is $150,000, in 1,500 shares, of $100 each. The company has been very successful and the management judicious.

The Everett Mills. — June 1, 1861, this company, incorporated the previous year, commenced the manufacture of dress-goods, ginghams, and a general variety of colored cotton fabrics. The mill is located north of the canal, the raceway discharging into the Spicket River; the buildings occupied are the substantial granite buildings formerly of the Lawrence Machine-Shop. The company has the largest landed property of the manufacturing companies, the spacious yard enclosing about fifteen acres of available lands, abutting upon Union, Canal, and Garden streets, and upon Spicket River.

The company was formed under the auspices and direction of Samuel Batchelder, long known as the able manager of the York Mills, who, now at the age of 93 years, can look back with clear recollection to the first starting of manufactures at Lowell, in which he took part. The capital is now $800,000, number of employees nearly 1,000, of which about one-third are males. George C. Richardson & Co., Boston, are the selling agents; Eugene H. Sampson is treasurer; Charles D. McDuffee is the present efficient agent. He gives his personal attention to every detail of management. William A. Barrell is cashier and superintendent. D. D. Crombie, John R. Perry, and D. M. Ayer have, in the past, held the position of agent of this mill. Mr. Crombie for several years was treasurer of the company.

The Arlington Mills. — A mile distant from the line of mills upon the Merrimac, this company have a valuable water-power on the Spicket River, the lands fronting on Broadway. These are the only cloth-making mills not located along the line of Essex Company's canals by Merrimac River. The privilege was partially developed by Abial Stevens, Esq., nearly fifty years ago; and in 1857–58 was greatly improved by him, a dike being constructed along the east bank of Spicket River, from his mill to the Ingalls Mill above, and the dam raised, thus creating a lovely sheet of water of several acres

* Oliver Hazard Perry died at Andover, Mass., Aug. 30, 1878, aged 63 years; was the third son of Commodore Oliver Hazard Perry. He entered the navy as midshipman at fourteen years of age, and passed examination at the head of a class of fifty-nine. He served in the Wilkes exploring expedition, and was wrecked in the "Peacock." He also served on the coast survey, and commanded a battery during the bombardment of Vera Cruz. He resigned while a lieutenant in the navy, and became a manufacturer; was agent of the Middlesex Mills at Lowell in 1848–49, and of the Bay State Mills at Lawrence from 1850–57, residing for several years in Lawrence. In 1864, he built, for himself and his business partners, the Lawrence Woollen Company's Mill, better known as the "Perry Mill," and was sole manager of the concern until his death. His personal honor and fidelity were never questioned. His business was conducted with such quiet nicety of method that he found time to devote to modern progress in science and the arts.

area. The dam was permanently rebuilt with granite, laid in cement, in 1867.

After the sale of this property by Mr. Stevens, the mill went through the not unusual transition period of a manufacturing interest. At one time it was used as a hat factory, at another time the Fibrilla or "Flax Cotton" Manufacturing Company made hemp carpets and rugs, printed in colors by electrotype process. The Berkley Mills operated for a time. Again, a batting mill operated, and lost heavily by fire. In 1865, the Arlington Woollen Mills were incorporated, with a capital of $200,000. In October, 1866, a destructive fire totally consumed the mill buildings. The mill was soon reconstructed and was ready for operation in the spring of 1867. The capital was increased to $240,000, and the company made costly changes in machinery and the line of goods produced, making women's worsted and cotton goods. Reorganization was decided on in the fall of 1869, shareholders paying in the full amount of capital, $240,000, to make it good. In 1875, the name of the company was changed to "Arlington Mills." In July, 1876, the capital was increased to $320,000; since that time to $500,000. The specialties of manufacture are ladies' worsted and cotton dress-goods. This company was the first to *profitably* make black alpacas, mohairs, and brilliantines in the United States. Up to 1872, it was supposed such goods could only be successfully made in Bradford, England. Over six hundred operatives are employed. Samuel Smith is local agent, and Charles Wainwright, paymaster and cashier. William Whitman is the treasurer and general manager. A powerful Corliss engine is used in addition to the water-power. In July, 1868, Arlington mill-pond, formerly known as Stevens's Pond, was drained by the undermining and total ruin of the dam which was built by Abiel. Stevens many years ago, and the machinery of the mills was idle for a time in consequence.

The Lawrence Gas Company. — This company was incorporated in 1849, with a small capital, since gradually increased, to meet growing needs, to $400,000. The original works were built by the Essex Company and the Bay State Mills, at their joint expense. There was an immense demand at once for gas in lighting the large mills then going into operation; the hours of labor, at that time, commencing and ending by artificial light. The gas supplied from these works has been of excellent quality and sold at prices a shade below the average charge in other cities. The gasometers at the works on Marston Street, and one upon Valley Street, are substantial structures.

The generating works and the distributing system of mains are ample and permanent. More than half the product was formerly used by the mills, but general consumption increased very fast, while shortened hours of labor reduced the amount required in mills.

George D. Cabot has been agent for nearly the whole period of active operations; Henry G. Webber having charge for a time at the commencement. Richard R. Harriman was for years a faithful superintendent of the works on Marston Street. He died in 1876, and was succeeded by Hannibal H. Church. Rufus Childs was for many years in charge of piping and out-door work, and was succeeded by Micah M. Rutter. James J. Storrow is president of the company, which seems to have been uniformly prosperous from the start.

Paper-Making. — Soon after the Great Machine-Shop started, experiments were there made in the building of paper machinery, John L. Seaverns,* having superintendence of the work. A building was erected by the Essex Company in Machine-Shop yard, and the Charter Paper Company was organized, several directors of the Essex Company forming the association. This company did not *make*, but *printed* and embossed papers. William B. Hurd was the local agent, — the principal direction being in the hands of Samuel H. Gregory. The capital was $50,000. The mill furnished a line of fancy velvet, cloth, gold-leaf, bronze, and silver-leaf papers; paper-hangings, from 6¼ cents to $7 per roll, and bordering of every grade, seeking to excel other American products. This enterprise was not profitable; and, when paper-making was established on the lower Spicket, this printing enterprise was abandoned, the building moved and used for other purposes.

A. & A. Norton seem to have been pioneers in paper-making, purchasing power for that purpose in April, 1853, taking what is now one of the Russell Paper Company's mills. The Lawrence Paper Company purchased, a year later, the site of J. A. Bacon's mill. Samuel S. Crocker purchased, in the fall of 1854, what has since been known as the Wilder Mill site. William Russell purchased power and lands February, 1854. Crocker had operated here, on a limited scale, before the above dates, running a small mill erected by Dan Weed.

* Murdered in Newburg, N. Y., September, 1870.

The capital of the Russell Paper Company is $100,000. William A. Russell is treasurer. William Russell & Son also do a heavy business in mills located elsewhere. The specialties in manufacture have been news, book, cap, and manilla papers, also cartridge and postal papers for government use. This company and firm have absorbed in turn, by purchase, the mills run for a time by Partridge & Curtis, the Norton Mills, and the Merrimack Paper Mills of Salmon W. Wilder, until the village of mills about Spicket mouth is one of the busiest spots in the county.

The use of wood pulp from poplar and resinous woods, as an important ingredient of paper-stock, has also been a specialty, — patents protecting such use being held by these owners. The business of the company and firm extends into several States. At Bellows Falls, Vt. (where the parties own a valuable water-power), at Franklin, N. H., and at several points in Maine, where cheap water-power is available, this company, or members of it, have extensive mills.

S. S. Crocker, Daniel P. Crocker, Salmon W. Wilder, and others have been enterprising paper-makers, who have disposed of their interests and gone elsewhere. Jerome A. Bacon has for many years had a profitable business in the making of news and book papers. J. S. Munroe has also made papers of many grades, including roofing and covering papers, using for the latter purpose coarse material. He organized the Munroe Paper Company, with a capital of $120,000, and built extensive brick mills on the south canal. In the disturbance of business in 1876 and 1877, work was suspended, and the Lawrence Paper Company purchased the property, succeeding to the business. This company in turn met with severe reverses.

So nearly like the making of paper is the production of leather-board — a board made from scraps of waste leather and waste textile material, reduced to a pulp, and given a firm, hard surface by immense pressure — that it may be classed therewith. This business has been followed by enterprising makers. Clegg & Fisher have a fine mill, producing this board, upon the south canal. The article has largely supplanted the use of straw-board, and is exported in large quantities.

Worsted Braids.—There were many unsuccessful attempts to establish the manufacture of worsted braids as a permanent industry. The difficulties were many, and it was only when shrewd financial management, and the most competent and practical mechanical supervision, were united in one company — the Wright Manufacturing Company — that permanent success was attained. Mr. Algernon S. Wright is the manager of the mill. Artemas W. Stearns is treasurer, financial manager, and selling agent of the company. This concern has absorbed the other establishments which attempted this line of work. The company's goods find a market beside those of foreign makers, who, until recently, had a monopoly in this line. The capital is $60,000.

Card Clothing. — The making of card clothing for machine cards, so extensively used in cotton and woollen mills, has been an important business — delicate and complicated automatic machinery being used in the process. During the war, and before business was overdone, this was a most important and profitable industry in the city. Stedman & Fuller, and Robinson & Perkins, are leading manufacturers, enterprising and honorable, industrious and persevering.

Loom Harness and Reed Making. — Another delicate process, involving the use of intricate machinery, protected by valuable patents, is the making of power-loom harnesses and reeds. Thomas A. Emmons has extensive works on May Street, and Thomas Clegg is a veteran inventor and maker, located upon the south canal. There is a continuous demand for articles so intimately connected with cloth manufacture.

General Industries. — That beautiful and successful mechanical invention — the McKay Sewing-Machine — has been once mentioned. The permanent brick shops of the company are models of order and adaptation to the business done. There are few better instances of success crowning an inventor's labors than the signal favor with which the sewing, heeling, channelling, and metallic-wire fastening machines of McKay and associates have been received by mechanics and manufacturers. The association was organized in 1864. Machines are leased, and there is a royalty on the machine-made goods. Thomas Scott is local superintendent.

Packing boxes, in a city where immense quantities of goods are shipped in cases, are used in great numbers. The business, though close, is an important one. Col. Lorenzo D. Sargent, an enterprising private manufacturer on May Street, does a heavy business, and it is an important branch of the Lawrence Lumber Company's trade.

The first complete success in making the steam fire-engine of the pattern now generally in use in Northern cities was attained in the Lawrence Machine Shop. The first engine made bore the name of

the city. It was submitted to severer tests than ordinarily try the worth of an invention, before it was purchased by the city of Boston. The introduction of these or similar fire-engines following this marked success, worked revolution in fire departments, and vastly simplified the control and prevention of fires. Amoskeag Manufacturing Company, Manchester, N. H., purchased this invention of N. S. Bean and Thomas Scott, the patentees.

Lawrence Flier and Spindle Works are on the lower north canal. The company has a capital of $50,000, in 500 shares, used in the manufacture of spindles, spindle tubes, spinning fliers, and sundry protected attachments to cloth-producing machinery. Their specialties were, for a time, the invention of Oliver Pearl, of the Atlantic Cotton Mill, whose constant study for a lifetime in bringing spinning machinery to perfection bids fair to be lavishly rewarded. Joseph P. Battles is treasurer, and Henry P. Chandler, superintendent.

The making of fish and chalk lines, seine twine, silk, linen, and cotton lines and banding, also covered wire for telegraphic apparatus, is a snug business, demanding much skill in operating, successfully conducted by B. S. Hale & Son, in the Essex Company's mill, on the south canal.

Felt linings for rubber boots and shoes, skirtings, and other kinds of felt goods are made in the same building with the Messrs. Hale by the Lawrence Felting Company.

The Prospect Worsted Mills, Robinson & Butler, proprietors, are located on the lower Spicket River. Their specialty is the making of fine worsted yarns, suited to use for braids and nice articles in worsted goods. They have a high reputation, and sell their own goods.

A bleachery is one of the latest of the enterprises developed — N. W. Farwell & Son completing a fine brick building on the south canal, and commencing operations Jan. 1, 1878.

Iron founding, brass founding, and general machine work is done by several established companies and firms. Edmund Davis & Son have permanent iron foundries and shops on the north canal, managed by George E. Davis, and have won an enviable reputation for good work. The Merrimac Iron Foundry was founded by Alvah Bennett and Elbridge Josslyn in the early days, when a heavy business was done in mill, railway, and general castings. Webster & Josselyn also have a snug business, increasing even now. Merrimac Machine-Shop is widely known, as is the proprietor, Albert Blood, who for many years has done a general business in iron work, mill shafting, and portable engines. Mr. Blood superintended building of spinning machinery for woollen mills, in the old Essex Company's machine-shop. Webster & Dustin are thorough machinists, enterprising and upright, with large experience in general mill-work. Williams & Willson also have been well known for years as reliable and skilful machinists.

In brass founding, James Byrom and James A. Fogg both do excellent work, and have liberal patronage.

Gen. John Gale was the pioneer carriage-builder, and a leading business man in the very beginning of operations in the new town. Moses B. Ames has been an enterprising partner.

A new enterprise has lately been started by two local mechanics, Pardon Armington and Gardner C. Sims,—the making of a portable engine, perfected by them, known as the Lawrence Engine.

The Archibald Wheel Company construct iron-hub wheels, put together by a process invented by Edwin A. Archibald. These wheels are largely used on heavy wagons, portable engines, and wherever immense weight is carried and great change in temperature withstood. The capital of the company is $60,000.

Leather belting is, of necessity, largely used, and the making of it has been a thriving branch of trade. Edward Page is a veteran maker, who established the business here, and, with his associates, from the very outset, has had a heavy business, doing excellent work. There are other enterprising makers worthy of mention, did space permit.

It will be seen that textile fabrics (plain, colored, and printed), paper, and felt-goods, are the chief mechanical products of the city. Excepting the arts connected with these lines of manufacture, other industries have not, as a rule, thrived. A cotton-mill supplanted the Great Machine-Shop. The "Hundred Associates" failed to establish shoe-manufacture. There were ninety-nine too many associates, no doubt, and Lawrence was not a "shoe-town."

Abandoned Charters. — The corporations chartered, and failing to operate at Lawrence, were the Methuen Bleaching and Dyeing Company, chartered for the production of cotton and woollen goods, bleaching, dyeing, calendering, and printing. The authorized capital was $500,000.

The Union Mills were also chartered for the purpose of making cotton, woollen, or flax goods, with a capital of $1,000,000. This company was never heard of as even attempting actual operations.

The Page Mills were incorporated with intent to use the Central Mill site, but never organized under the charter.

The actual success of prominent companies has been varied. Trial times came to all; yet, in these days of depression, all are operating near to limit of capacity. The very magnitude of interests has prevented abandonment of any corporate enterprise, and secured nearly continuous operation of every large establishment, either by original companies or enterprising successors.

An old author has said, that "the bent of civilization is to make good things cheap, and rare things common." Textile fabrics have, indeed, become cheap in comparison with prices fifty years ago, and so common that statistics of cloth-manufacture are bewildering, illustrating startling changes, and almost fabulous progress.

CHAPTER IX.

THE RELIGIOUS INTEREST — CITY MISSION — CHURCHES — CHARITABLE SOCIETIES — CLERGYMEN — CHURCH BUILDINGS.

"Beside the workshop and warehouse, they builded the chapel: forming the business corporation, they also organized the church: thrift, industry, and worldly wisdom were apparent, with charity, reverence, and regard for God's claims."

Christians of leading denominations did much pioneer work in Lawrence in 1846, though there was no church building in the settlement. Little bands of worshippers naturally sought those of like belief, meeting in private dwellings and the small school buildings.

There is no ancient local church record to be transcribed. The deacon's seat and sounding-board never existed within town limits. But pioneer preachers in the new city did not come to rich livings. They came, strangers among a people strange to each other, *all* burdened with the duty of making homes on this naked plain. There was need of preachers; not merely book-men, but many-sided, shrewd observers, with knowledge of human nature, and little expectation of pecuniary reward — pastors in the best and fullest sense.

Congregationalists, Episcopalians, Catholics, Free Baptists, Unitarians, and Universalists all gathered societies and held worship in the first two years of settlement (1846–47). The first-named made the first formal organization. Episcopalians first completed and occupied a church building. Free Baptists first held service. A characteristic of religious work here has been virtual Christian union of sects in general religious and charitable work. A noble outgrowth of this union has been the Lawrence City Mission, — non-sectarian in origin and management.

Some organization outside of municipal boards was needed to prevent suffering in community. To meet the apparent want, the Provident Association was formed, in 1854, by prominent citizens. It was the outgrowth of benevolent impulses, rather than the work of churches. There were visitors or advisers in each ward, familiar with every section, and with cases of need therein.

During the first year, William D. Joplin — who died August, 1870, at the age of sixty-one, and was an active and public-spirited pioneer citizen — was general agent of this association; collecting and distributing funds, clothing, and supplies, reporting monthly to the board. For two years and three months thereafter Henry Withington served as general agent; giving his entire time in winter months, and constant attention at other seasons. Neither of these gentlemen accepted any payment for services arduous and perplexing. John C. Hoadley, Benjamin Coolidge, Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, Dr. George Packard, and Dr. W. D. Lamb were also active workers in this pioneer benevolent society. George P. Wilson became general agent in 1857–58. In those two years of business depression and suffering, the agent became in fact a local missionary, and was paid a salary, the board of advice often contributing most liberally towards the amount. Aid was solicited in churches, and the local press advocated the permanent establishment of a mission. Organization of the City Mission, March 23, 1859, seems to have been very simple. A committee representing city churches and the Provident Association, reported a plan providing for a non-sectarian board of advice, and the election of a City Missionary, with permanent headquarters and a fixed salary.

George P. Wilson was appointed missionary, and, hampered by no arbitrary rules, set at once about work with which he was familiar. He had quarters at city hall, and sought advice from and reported to the board. Some fifty gentlemen, headed by corporation agents, paid the first year's salary. Mr. Wilson was a layman, young, ardent, persevering, loved, and trusted. His work grew, eventually embracing care of evening schools, sewing schools, Band of Hope, and general visitation on merciful errands. He was the trustee and adviser of the soldier and his family, a leader in benevolent and public-spirited enterprises. He was personally magnetic, sunny-hearted, hopeful, and inspiring. For thirteen years he served, sometimes also acting as clerk and agent of the overseers of the poor and chaplain at the house of correction. In April, 1872, he left the city, going to Boston in service of the Boston Missionary and Church Extension Society. He died in Boston, July, 1873, and was buried in Bellevue Cemetery. The plain monument is thus inscribed: —

To the memory of
GEORGE P. WILSON,
City Missionary of Lawrence for thirteen years.
Born January 29th, 1830.
Died July 10th, 1873.
He lived for others.

Commencing his work as a layman, Mr. Wilson was afterwards ordained an elder in the Methodist Church. In all his labors, his devoted wife was a faithful helper and a wise adviser.

The Rev. Charles U. Dunning succeeded Mr. Wilson, and, with his excellent wife, has faithfully labored for the good of all since 1872, conducting the affairs of the mission on business principles. This society was reorganized as a corporation, under General Statutes, in July, 1876. The Rev. George Packard was president of the Society until his death, in 1876. So practically useful is the work of the mission that the corporations of the city assume payment of the missionary's salary.

Churches. — In May, 1846, land was offered by the Essex Company for a Protestant Episcopal church. Founders of Grace Church selected the lot at the corner of Jackson and Common streets.

A chapel of wood, the first building dedicated to religious worship in the city, was there erected. Divine service was held in this new building, Oct. 14, 1846. It was consecrated by Bishop Eastburn, Nov. 19th following. This first church building was removed to Garden Street, and used as a vestry until 1878, when it was torn down to make room for the new and elegant brick chapel of the parish just erected. The simple but permanent church edifice of stone, erected in 1851, took the place of the old building. When consecrated by the bishop, May, 1852, this substantial house, with the help of friends outside the parish, had been wholly paid for. Several years since, the interior was renovated and beautified.

From the first gathering of this pioneer church until his death, the Rev. George Packard was rector of the church and parish. He was born in Wiscasset, Me., studied and practised medicine for several years in early life, graduated at Bowdoin College in the class of 1821, was ordained deacon in Richmond, Va., in May, 1843, and a priest in May, 1844, in Boston. He was for a time at Salem and Andover, Mass , as rector, and was appointed missionary for the counties of Essex and Middlesex, and his attention directed to the projected manufacturing town on the banks of Merrimac River.

The record of his exemplary and active life of Christian labor is noteworthy. He was known no less for broad philanthropy than for practical wisdom and business exactness and method. On school boards almost continuously, and as superintendent of public schools, he was foremost in judicious movements. There was nothing uncertain in his action. He was either an enthusiastic helper or a declared opponent. He died Thanksgiving night, 1876, honored and lamented by all, having completed and reviewed his thirty years' pastorate.

The Rev. William Lawrence, of Boston, became the associate of Dr. Packard shortly before his death, and succeeded him as rector of the parish, worthily following in the steps of so exemplary a predecessor. He is young, enthusiastic, talented, and faithful.

St. John's Episcopal Church first held public meetings in Essex Engine-House, ward five, accommodating residents of the westerly section of the city. The members soon gathered in numbers sufficient to warrant the erection of a neat church on Morton Street, seating some 450 persons. This house was first opened for service the last Sabbath in May, 1866. Three years afterward the house was removed to the present central location on Bradford Street. The Rev. A. V. G. Allen was rector for a time; the Rev. James H. Lee, and the Rev. Charles C. Harris, succeeded. The Rev. Belno A. Brown, rector for several years, was succeeded, in 1878, by the Rev. William G. Wells.

St. Thomas Episcopal Church, though located in Methuen, near the line of division, is attended largely by Lawrence citizens. The Rev. Belno A. Brown is rector. The form of worship is ritualistic.

The Lawrence Street Congregational Church, one of the largest Protestant churches, is the outgrowth of the first religious society here formed. June 12, 1846, petitioners addressed John Tenney, Esq., of Methuen, calling for a warrant to organize "a Religious Society at Essex City, so called, in Methuen." August 8th following, at the house of Nathaniel B. Gordon, "The Merrimack Congregational Society" was legally formed, and steps taken "to build or hire a place of public worship." Aug. 15, 1846, the society voted to erect a building forty feet by fifty feet. Building commenced Oct. 16, 1846. The little chapel cost $1,000, and seated, when crowded, 275 hearers. It stood just at the rear of the present church. Abbott Lawrence gave $100; friends in Boston, $335. Jan. 10, 1847, this building was dedicated, the Rev. S. C. Jackson preaching: text, "*For mine house shall be called an house of prayer for all people.*" On the third Sabbath of January, 1847, the Rev. Lyman Whiting preached to the society. Feb. 17, 1847, initial steps were taken for the formation of a church. April 9, 1847, a council convened at Methuen, resulting in the forming of the church, called, and since known, as the "Lawrence Street Congregational Church." May 7th, following, the Rev. Mr. Whiting was called to the pastorate. June 16th next, he was installed as pastor, the Rev. Dr. N. Adams preaching. In May, 1848, the last Sabbath-service was held in the little chapel, and the vestry, in the new building, was occupied. Oct. 11, 1848, the new house was completed and dedicated.

The original cost of the building was about $13,000. There was nothing for ornament; it was simply spacious and convenient. Judicious improvements have been made, from time to time, and it remains a sort of half-way covenant between the ancient marvel of plainness and the overwrought modern mixture of styles. During construction of this house, a heavy gale destroyed the unfinished steeple, depositing it in ruins upon the vacant lot where the dwelling of Dr. French now stands.

The Rev. Mr. Whiting resigned in 1849, which was a year of some disturbance in the new church. There was not perfect union between pastor, attendants, and members. There was discord in the choir. Since the healing of those misunderstandings, there has been unbroken harmony. The Rev. Samuel Harris, of Conway, and the Rev. E. N. Hidden, of Milford, were called to succeed Mr. Whiting, but neither accepted the call. In November, 1851, the Rev. Henry M. Storrs, a talented young man, then only twenty-four years of age, a graduate of Amherst College, just from the theological school at Andover, accepted a call from this church, and was ordained Jan. 15, 1852. In him Christian graces, business punctuality, with scholarly tastes and habits, were happily united. He remained with the church until 1855, a faithful laborer, when he was called to a wider field at Cincinnati, in Ohio, his native State. The Rev. A. H. Clapp, and the Rev. Charles Beecher supplied the pulpit for a time; the first-named was invited to assume the relation of pastor, but declined. The Rev. G. B. Willcox, of Fitchburg, was settled in September, 1856, and remained three years, — a useful pastor, beloved by his people.

In 1859, the Rev. Caleb E. Fisher, of the Free Church in Andover, was installed, and for fourteen years was a plain, earnest, and devoted pastor. His pulpit manner was impressive, his preaching direct and practical. Among his own people and elsewhere, he was a welcome guest. He devised and organized methods for freeing the church from debt, and was active as a member of committees in charge of public schools. He resigned the pastorate in 1873, and died in Minnesota three years thereafter.

The Rev. Joshua Coit became pastor in 1874, and still remains. His relations with the people are most cordial. Neglecting no duty, and using sensible argument and direct appeal, instead of sensational declamation, his influence is healthful and lasting. Account of work done through the years, in different sections outside of church walls, and of new churches aided, would make a goodly volume by itself, if fully recited. At one time the Sabbath school of this church, and of the missions sustained, was second in numbers and importance in the whole State. It is creditable to the older religious societies in the city, that they have generously aided struggling churches, without particular regard to sectarian lines.

The Central Congregational Church was organized Christmas Day,

1849. The first step was a meeting Oct. 24, 1849, at the house of Hervey Kent, 25 Atlantic Corporation. Dec. 25, 1849, a council assembled in the vestry of the Lawrence Street Church, and the church was formed.

The next Sabbath, the Rev. Mr. Dexter, of Boston, preached to the new congregation, in city hall, where they worshipped until 1854. The Rev. Lyman Whiting preached about eight months in 1850. The Rev. E. Whittlesey also preached for a time. He was afterwards prominent in military affairs and the Freedman's Bureau. The Rev. Henry M. Storrs supplied for three months. The Rev. William Cowper Foster was installed first pastor Jan. 16, 1852. One hundred members were added in the first year of his pastorate. The pastor was fervid in manner, enthusiastic, and unbending. He is well remembered for his vehement opposition to slavery extension, and sturdy advocacy of anti-slavery opinions. His connection with the church ceased Feb. 17, 1857.

In 1853, land was bought corner of Essex and Appleton streets as a site for a church. The building fund had a nucleus in penny contributions, by families, in tin savings-boxes.

The new church was dedicated Aug. 6, 1854. It is remembered as the only church in the city built upon a basement of business houses, and for the disastrous fire, August, 1859, completely consuming the church building, little but the pulpit Bible and movable furniture being saved.

The society returned to their old home, the city hall, but set about erecting a permanent building, the present church, which is of rough stone, quarried from blue-stone ledges of the city.

The Rev. Daniel Tenney, of Brighton, Mass., was installed as pastor Sept. 2, 1857, and continued to serve for five years. The new church was dedicated June 8, 1860. In May, 1862, Mr. Tenney left to assume the pastorate of Springfield Street Church, Boston.

In October, 1862, the Rev. Christopher M. Cordley, from West Brookfield, Mass., became pastor, and remained with the church until his death, June 26, 1866. His firmness of character, intense earnestness, and liberal culture made him prominent in the denomination. A plain granite monument in Bellevue Cemetery, with only his simple name inscribed, marks his resting-place.

The Rev. William E. Park became pastor in 1866, and continued until 1875, when he resigned and removed to Gloversville, N. Y. He was a man of much intellectual power, with a rare faculty of composition and true Christian manliness and independence.

In the fall of 1876, the Rev. George M. Ide, formerly of Hopkinton, Mass., became pastor, and continues with the church until the present time, an active pastor and an eloquent and forcible preacher.

The Eliot Congregational Church was formed Sept. 28, 1865. October 1st following, first public service was held at city hall. On the 4th of the same month, the church was recognized by a council of churches. On the 8th of the same month, first service as an organized church was held in Grace Episcopal Chapel, and a Sabbath school of thirty-seven members organized. In February, 1866, the Rev. William Franklin Snow came to this church. In June following, he accepted the call of the society, and commenced his work as pastor. The brick church building was dedicated Sept. 6, 1866; seven days thereafter, Mr. Snow was installed as pastor.

In his five years of service, Mr. Snow endeared himself to every member of his flock, and won the respect of all citizens. He was indefatigable in study and labor, a finished scholar, unassuming, yet earnest, independent, and entirely devoted to a pastor's work; a man gentle and courteous, strong in faith, and loyal to duty and right. On the 11th of January, 1871, this sincere man died in the midst of his labor, yet a young man.

The Rev. Theodore T. Munger was installed pastor June 14, 1871. He remained until February, 1875, when failing health led him to the Pacific coast for a few years' residence. The sermons of Mr. Munger were models of original and eloquent composition. Few preachers have his nicety of literary culture and intellectual keenness.

The Rev. John H. Barrows was ordained pastor April 29, 1875. He is a severe student, active in reforms, and, like his predecessors, critical as a writer, also forcible and eloquent as a speaker. The increase in membership has been gradual and steady. The original thirty-two members were mostly from the Lawrence Street and Central churches in the city.

The South Congregational Church had its beginning in a small gathering of residents of South Lawrence, meeting in the school-house many years before the formation of a church. In the spring of 1858, the society met in the railroad depot. The convenient chapel was erected in 1867, and dedicated December 25th of that year. The land was given by the Essex Company. George A. Fuller, Esq., a generous resident, Peter and John Smith, of Andover, and the Hon. William A. Russell, of the city, with other public-spirited citizens, materially aided in the erection of the chapel, and firmly establishing the society. Until October, 1865, there was no stated preaching. Prof. Edwards A. Park, of Andover, preached to the people in this church for nearly a year. The Rev. L. V. Ferris was settled permanently for a time, and, on his departure, the Rev. Clark Carter succeeded him, and still remains patiently and faithfully laboring, having the confidence of his flock.

The First Presbyterian Church was organized in 1868, occupying the new meeting-house on Concord Street, Christmas Day, 1870. The Rev. John Hogg was pastor for many years, and was a preacher of talent and culture. His successor, the Rev. John A. Burns, died in 1878. He won the love of his parishioners and the respect of citizens for his sincerity and worth.

The denomination was represented in the city more than twelve years before this, having a church organization, and erecting, in 1856, a simple church building, on Oak Street.

A Free Congregational Church, so called, was established in 1871. The society erected a chapel on Lowell Street. The Rev. Albert Watson was pastor for a time. This interest languished, and the church became merged in others. A part of this band now worship on Lowell Street, in ward five.

Riverside Congregational Church is an outgrowth of the Riverside Mission, sustained for years by the older churches. The worshippers were organized as a Congregational church, March 9, 1878. The modest chapel is on Water Street.

The First Baptist Church: The Rev. Mr. Fitz preached to a congregation of Baptists gathered in the new city, at the Old Essex Company's school-house, Sunday, Feb. 14, 1847. A consultation held at the house of Samuel Easter resulted in securing occasional preaching by ministers of that denomination. March 11, 1847, a meeting was held to consider the propriety of forming a Baptist church, and taking steps for the erection of a house of worship.

The first church lot selected was at the corner of Amesbury and Valley streets. By safer afterthought the present site was chosen. A temporary building, forty by twenty-five feet, was erected, and occupied April 14, 1847; this was enlarged in the fall of the same year. Population and religious interest outgrew accommodations, and, June 12, 1849, ground was broken for the present edifice, on land given by the Essex Company. The basement was occupied in January, 1850.

Organization of this church was effected Aug. 24, 1847. In December, 1847, the Rev. John G. Richardson was installed as pastor. He remained five and one-half years, during which time membership increased from thirty-nine to 183. He resigned in the summer of 1853, leaving a stainless record. The Rev. Artemas Sawyer succeeded him as pastor. He was ordained Dec. 27, 1853. He remained two years and three months, when he accepted a professorship in Arcadia College, a position for which his scholarly tastes fitted him.

The Rev. Frank Remington came to the church as pastor in the summer of 1856, and for three years gave all the energy of a nature intensely active and forcible to the work in hand. During that time the society and church were greatly prospered, the attendance and membership being largely increased during a powerful revival, and churches at Andover, and Salem, N. H., materially aided. Mr. Remington resigned Aug. 1, 1859, going to New York city. He afterwards did good service in permanently establishing the Second Baptist Church in Lawrence. He now resides in Cleveland, O.

The Rev. Henry F. Lane, of Dorchester, Mass, accepted a call to the pastorate, as successor to Mr. Remington. He was young, energetic, and thoroughly absorbed in the legitimate work of a Christian minister. In November, 1862, he accepted the chaplaincy of the 41st (three years) Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers. The Rev. George Knox was settled during the permanent absence of Mr. Lane. He remained only a year, when (in 1864) he became chaplain of his old regiment, the 29th Maine. Only one month after his departure this sincere and patriotic man was killed in Washington, D. C., by a fall from his horse, while in the discharge of his duty.

The Rev. George W. Bosworth, D.D., from Portland, Me., became pastor, Sept. 1, 1865. In the same year the house of worship was completely renovated, and the long-standing debt paid. Dr. Bosworth was strong, stable, cultured, and of mature age. He remained a most faithful pastor for nearly three and one-half years. The Rev. J. B. G. Pidge, a young, ardent, and talented student from Newton Theological Seminary, accepted an invitation to become pastor of the

church, and was ordained Sept. 8, 1869. Under his pastoral care there has been large increase in numbers, general prosperity of the church and society, and so perfect a union of pastor and people that attempts of metropolitan churches to induce a separation have been futile.

The Rev. J. Sella Martin, formerly a slave, afterwards of some note in Louisiana politics (since deceased), preached for several months after the resignation of Mr. Remington in 1859.

The Second Baptist Church was organized in 1860. The sixty-seven members were all from the older church, not separating because of schism or disagreement, but as Christians desiring to extend gospel influences. Under the pastorate of the Rev. Frank Remington the new church worshipped in city hall. Afterwards the society purchased the small church building erected by the Christian Society, on Common Street, west of the common. This building they occupied for a time, removed, enlarged, and renovated it in 1865, and, eleven years later (1874), rebuilt, enlarged, and further improved the building. The Rev. Cyrus F. Tolman, the Rev. Henry A. Cooke, the Rev. L. L. Wood, and the Rev. George W. Gile have been the successive pastors of this church, the latter still remaining. The Rev. Mr. Cooke and the Rev. Mr. Wood have both been prominent pastors of city churches in Boston since their departure. The membership, in this community of changes, reaches nearly 700 residents.

The Free Baptist Church may truly be termed a pioneer society. Jan. 7, 1847, twelve citizens from widely separated districts, thrown together in the chaotic social condition of that time, finding themselves accustomed to the same denominational form of worship and doctrinal belief, by a council consisting of the Rev. Silas Curtis, the Rev. D. P. Cilley, and the Rev. D. S. Frost, were organized under the name of the First Freewill Baptist Church of Lawrence, with the Rev. Jarius E. Davis as pastor. During his pastorate of three years sixty-four members were added. The Rev. Silas Curtis had preached to a few worshippers of this sect, in the first boarding-house erected on Broadway, when there was little but these new dwellings and the beginning of the dam and locks. In private houses, in a school-house on Haverhill Street, long since removed, and in hired halls, the little band worshipped until, on a lot given by the Essex Company, corner of Haverhill and White streets, they erected a modest church. While worshipping in the school-house the congregation was startled by the bursting of fire through the floor. The building stood upon posts, and some mischievous person or careless smoker set fire to lumber beneath; the congregation turned out and saved the building.

On the 1st of Oct., 1849, the Rev. Jonathan Woodman, prominent, active, and influential in the denomination, assumed pastoral charge, and labored for three years, during which time sixty-six members were added. From December, 1852, the Rev. G. P. Ramsey continued laboring for two and a half years. Under his charge sixty-seven were added. At this time, and for years, the society maintained a continual struggle against poverty. There were no wealthy members and the business reverses following in 1857 were severely felt. A call was extended to the Rev. A. D. Williams, in the spring of 1855. He received into the church 180 members. An extensive revival interest sprung up, the Rev. Stephen Coffin, one of the fathers, spending some time with the church. In the spring of 1857, the new house, corner of Common and Pemberton streets, was dedicated. Mr. Williams, after two years and a half, found his health declining and resigned his charge. The Rev. E. M. Tappan came to the church in September, 1857. In the summer of 1860, Mr. Tappan's health completely failed him. On the 12th of Dec., 1860, after a long and painful sickness, his pilgrimage closed. A more humble, patient, and exemplary pastor never labored faithfully and prayerfully for a struggling church. He had welcomed to the church one hundred members. In May, 1861, the Rev. J. Burnham Davis came. He was a young man, coming to his first settlement. One hundred and twenty-four members were added under him. Mr. Davis resigned, and closed his labors on the 1st of Jan., 1866. On the 22d of the same month, a call was extended to the Rev. E. G. Chaddock. Mr. Chaddock was a young man, an earnest laborer. His change of views and after connection with another denomination is well remembered. In the fall of 1870, the Rev. John A. Lowell became pastor, and remained a year and a half. The Rev. Alphonso L Houghton has been pastor for the last six years. He is cultured, earnest, and sincere. Under his care the membership has nearly doubled. Few pastors have more completely won the love of their people and the respect of the entire community. Mr. Davis (first pastor) died in Michigan several years ago. Mr. Ramsey died in Maine a few years since.

The First Unitarian Church was organized Aug. 30, 1847. The Rev. Henry F. Harrington, a most earnest, enthusiastic man, was the first pastor. Holding service at first in Odd Fellows' Hall, a chapel was soon erected, near the site of the present church, and occupied for a time. May 12, 1850, the church, corner of Haverhill and Jackson streets, was dedicated. Mr. Harrington resigned the pastorate in 1854. The Rev. S. S. Hunting was called as his successor, but he declined the call. The Rev. William L. Jenkins came to the society in 1855. He was a sincere, able, and devoted pastor for nearly ten years. The Rev. James H. Wiggin was settled in 1865, but remained only one year. The Rev. James B. Moore was a preacher remarkable for his impressive delivery and rare facility in forcible composition. Disease contracted in active military service finally resulted in his death, after a useful pastoral relation of several years. The Rev. Charles A. Hayden remained three years, resigning in 1876. The Rev. Edmund R. Sanborn is the present pastor. Shortly after coming, by his energy he raised several thousand dollars to liquidate a long-standing church debt. He is a ready and forcible speaker, public-spirited, independent, and energetic.

The Rev. Mr. Harrington, the first pastor, was a positive, radical, yet judicious organizer and advocate of reform and progressive measures in the early years, and a leader in organizing the public schools. He had advanced practical ideas regarding systematic care of the deserving poor.

The First Universalist Society, now known as the Church of the Good Shepherd, was organized Nov. 15, 1847. The Rev. George H. Clark was the first pastor. He died in Lawrence, after three years faithful service, December, 1851. Mr. Clark came here from Lockport, N. Y., was active and public-spirited, though never physically strong. The Rev. J. R. Johnson succeeded him, and during his stay of nearly four years there was large increase in attendance.

Previous to the erection of the church on Haverhill Street, in 1853, the society seems to have had no permanent home; meeting for a time in a school-house, and in Bridgman's Hall and Lyceum Hall, for a longer time in Lawrence Hall; the burning of that hall cast them adrift, but they found quarters in city hall, and other halls; afterwards in new Lawrence Hall, going from thence to the vestry of the new church, which was finished and dedicated June 30, 1853. Mr. Johnson left in 1855. The society was organized as a church in 1859. The succeeding pastors were the Rev. J. J. Brayton, the Rev. Martin J. Steere (Mr. Steere died a few years since), and the Rev. George S. Weaver. The last-named had the longest stay, twelve years, coming in 1861. He was able, enthusiastic, and liberal. Under his care, the church had most substantial growth. The Rev. George W. Perry remained three years, resigning in the fall of 1877. He was indefatigable, punctual, and exact. The church building was entirely remodelled in 1866, and rededicated February, 1867. The Rev. E. A. White was settled in 1878, and remains as pastor. The Rev. Mr. Jewell preached for a short time after the death of the first pastor, before Mr. Johnson's coming.

Haverhill Street Methodist Episcopal Church was organized September, 1847, with but twenty-three members. Here, as elsewhere, the Methodists were pioneers. Their first public services appear to have been held at the house of Charles Barnes, No. 5 Broadway, afterwards at Bridgman's Hall, on Oak Street, and in Odd Fellows' Hall, and Concert Hall. The Rev. Lorenzo D. Barrows (since deceased) was the first settled pastor, and was again settled over the same church in 1872–74. The church building on Haverhill Street was commenced in December, 1847; the vestry dedicated March 26, 1848. The house was reconstructed in 1859. The church seems to have been continuously prosperous. The successive pastors have been: the Rev. James Pike, the Rev. Moses How, the Rev. Samuel Kelley, the Rev. R. S. Rust, the Rev. Jonathan Hall, the Rev. W. A. McDonald, the Rev. T. A. Hughes, the Rev. Wilbur F. Watkins, the Rev. J. H. McCarty, D. D., the Rev. Sullivan Holman, the Rev. R. S. Stubbs, the Rev. George S. Dearborn, the Rev. Linville J. Hall, the Rev. D. C. Knowles, the Rev. E. F. Pitcher, and the Rev. Daniel Stevenson, D. D. The Rev. Mr. Knowles, coming for the second time, is the present pastor. The Rev. James L. Gleason preached to the little band first drawn together, for several months prior to settlement of the first pastor.

The Garden Street Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1853, by residents of the easterly section of the city, and others, mostly young men and women. For a time, they worshipped in Pantheon Hall, Newbury Street. In 1855, the plain brick church building, on the corner of Garden and Newbury streets, was erected. Few men of wealth were connected with the society, and it was not

without a long-continued struggle that the building was erected, and the church firmly established. George P. Wilson, then a hard-working layman, was a devoted member, who did much to prevent the disbanding of the society in trial days; for the little band were few in numbers, and poor in purse.

The Rev. A. C. Manson was the first settled preacher. Since then, the church has been under the pastoral care of the Rev. Sullivan Holman, the Rev. J. McLaughlan, the Rev. Warren F. Evans, the Rev. A. P. Hatch, the Rev. H. H. Hartwell, the Rev. Charles U. Dunning, the Rev. C. M. Dinsmore, the Rev. Trueman Carter, the Rev. Lewis P. Cushman, the Rev. E. W. Norris, the Rev. William E. Bennett, and the Rev. E. A. Drew.

A commodious parsonage adjoining the church was erected a few years since.

Parker Street Methodist Episcopal Church is attended mostly by residents of South Lawrence. The Haverhill Street Society seems to have aided the little band that first met in the engine-house in ward six, in the day of small things. At first, it was only a Bible class; with larger numbers they erected a small building on Blanchard Street. A commodious house of worship was erected on Parker Street in 1873. The Rev. W. J. Parkinson, the Rev. Garrett Beekman, the Rev. Allen J. Hall, the Rev. Converse L. McCurdy, the Rev. T. J. Abbott, and the Rev. W. A. Braman have been the pastors.

Trinity Methodist Episcopal Church accommodates those residing at the western limits of the city. The society has a modest structure on Haverhill Street, west of Broadway. Organized early in 1873, the church has since enjoyed the ministrations of the Rev. William Hewes, the Rev. Charles W. Taylor, and the Rev. C. D. Smith. The First Methodist Church also fostered the interests of this struggling band.

The Arlington Young Men's Christian Association is a working organization growing out of the Arlington Christian Association, which was formed Oct. 12, 1876; the name was changed January, 1878. A small chapel was erected on Park Street, near Broadway, in the fall of 1876. This society is an incorporated band of earnest and active young men, associated for the purpose of extending interest in evangelical religion, especially among young people. Mr. Charles Wainwright is the president. Especially has this society been of great benefit to the northern section of the city, sustaining, at one time, a reading-room, evening schools, evening religious services, lectures, and proper entertainments; but never losing sight of the grand purpose in view.

The Second Advent societies have maintained an organization, and sometimes have supported several interests. The Pilgrim Church, worshipping in Band of Hope Hall, the Rev. W. J. Halse, pastor, is quite numerously attended.

A society, known as the Christian Church, existed for several years, and erected a small church building on Common Street, near the common. The church was organized in 1853. The Rev. Timothy Cole, the Rev. Austin Damon, and the Rev. Charles Henry Plummer were the pastors. Finally, the building was sold to the Second Baptist Society.

German citizens, Methodists and Lutherans, have a modest church building on East Haverhill Street. Service conducted mostly by laymen.

Catholic churches in Lawrence are among the most important in eastern Massachusetts.

The beginning was exceeding humble; Father Charles D. French, at that time an old man, came very early to the city, gathered a small church, and erected a modest chapel on the corner of Chestnut and White streets. Father French died Jan. 6, 1851.

The Rev. James Henry Dominic Taaffe came to America and to this city in 1850. He came to visit the aged Father French, a member of the Dominican Order like himself. Not long after his arrival, his venerable host died, and Father Taaffe became his successor, laboring without cessation in his work, until his death, March 29, 1868. He was born in the year 1800, the heir to titles, social position, and wealth, — to a prospective life of ease. He renounced all for humble service in the priesthood. He pursued collegiate studies for a time in the island of Mauritius, in the Indian Ocean, going there with an uncle holding position in the British army. From the religious orders, he chose the renowned order of St. Dominic. His fortune went to his order, and he became Prior of the Monastery of Boula.

Until 1865, his residence was the plainest of wooden dwellings; it was then supplanted by a commodious structure. A large and imposing brick church was erected in 1853, on the site of the modest wooden building, the church afterwards taking the name of The Church of the Immaculate Conception.

In 1856, Father Taaffe organized the Catholic Friends' Society, which has come to number twelve hundred members, he being president of the society from the founding until his death. He also founded a Catholic school for boys. The dominant idea of his life was a practical charity. In the destitution that pressed hard upon many in 1857, he instituted a regular system of aid to the suffering, taking personal charge of the distribution of food. The Catholic Orphan Asylum was his special care, and he lived to see it firmly established.

Father Taaffe was social, jolly, gentlemanly, and humane, caring more for the right than for arbitrary rules and social distinctions. He would organize literary and dramatic clubs, or a musical band, to draw young men from evil ways, and turn them from idleness to commendable pursuits. He could tell a good story with the jolliest, and laugh as heartily as the lightest-hearted boy in his flock.

Ten thousand people sought to gain admittance to the church at the time of his burial; the charitable orders and societies attended in full numbers; forty-three clergymen were present; thousands followed in reverent grief to his last resting-place in the cemetery of the church. The inscription over his coffin, "The Orphan's Friend," was no misnomer. In the burial-ground of the church, on May Street, in a circular vault and a granite monument and cross inscribed thus: —

In memory of the deceased priests of
The Church of the Immaculate Conception.
Rev. Charles Daniel French,
First resident pastor of Lawrence,
Died January 6th, 1851.

Rev. James Henry Dominic Taaffe,
First pastor of the Church of the Immaculate Conception,
Born 1800. Died March 29th, 1867. Æ. 67 years.

Rev. James Quinlan,
Died 1872.
Requiescat in pace.
Amen.

As the early history of the older Catholic church is largely told in the life of Father Taaffe, so the incidents in the life of the Rev. James O'Donnell, if fully recited, would furnish an account of the organization and growth of St. Mary's Catholic Church. The Rev. James O'Donnell came to Lawrence, Dec. 8, 1848. He first offered sacrifice of mass in the old Lawrence Hall, and continued to gather the people there until the building of a temporary wooden chapel, on Haverhill Street, where the older St. Mary's Church building now stands. In this chapel, mass was first celebrated, on Christmas Day, 1848. The frame was not even entirely covered, and the falling snow came down upon the unsheltered congregation. The temporary altar was constructed of shingles, and it was upon some bundles of shingles that Father O'Donnell stood when he first spoke to the people in a church erected by the worshippers.

From these small beginnings, and as the result of labors by Father O'Donnell, his successors, and many zealous helpers, has grown one of the largest religious organizations of this section of New England. The old St. Mary's Church building, a plain structure of stone, was commenced in the spring of 1852. Eight years after (1860), the size of this church was doubled, filling the entire space from Haverhill to Oak Street. Lack of space prevents a full account of the coming of the Sisters of Notre Dame, and the origin and growth of the Catholic schools and charitable and religious fraternities.

Father O'Donnell's death occurred April 7, 1861, in the fifty-sixth year of his age, after a very brief illness.

He fully identified himself, not only with the history of the Catholic church, but with the material interests of the town. He was a born leader of men, practical as a business man, of good judgment and untiring industry. His zeal, force, and self-reliance gave him unbounded influence, and marked him as one of the positive minds in the new city.

The funeral services, on Tuesday following his death, brought an immense concourse of people; the ceremonies were most impressive. The remains were deposited in a grave made in the churchyard. Eleven years after (April, 1872), the body was disinterred (at night-time, to avoid undue publicity), and removed to the church, preparatory to re-interment in the ground reserved for the burial of priests in

the St. Mary's cemetery. The following day solemn service was held in the new church. An immense audience attended, following, on an inclement day, to the cemetery grounds.

The successor of Father O'Donnell was the Rev. Ambrose A. Mullen, who remained in charge about five years; assisted, at different times, by the Rev. Fathers Gallagher, Daley, Edward Mullen, and Donnelly. Father Mullen was called to the Presidency of St. Thomas's College, Villanova, Penn.; and, in August, 1865, the Rev. Louis M. Edge came as pastor. He conceived the idea of building the massive, spacious, and beautiful church building known as the new St. Mary's Church. This imposing structure is 210 feet long, 80 feet wide (102 feet wide in transept). It was several years in building. The stone was quarried at Westford, Mass., Salem, N. H., and Hallowell, Me. The chime of sixteen bells cost nearly $10,000.

Father Edge was assisted by Fathers William Hartnett, J. P. Gilmore, and M. E. Gallagher, and for a time, by Father Peter Crane. Father Gallagher also had charge of a church in Andover.

On Christmas Day, 1865, over $3,000 was raised towards the foundation of the new church. The corner-stone was laid on Sunday, Aug. 19, 1866.

In 1870, Feb. 25th, occurred the death of Father Edge, at the St. Augustine parsonage, in Philadelphia. The funeral occurred in Lawrence, three days after, in the church his energy had so materially aided. The ceremonies were solemn and imposing, and a vast assemblage manifested their sorrow. About this time the church had the benefit of the counsel and labor of the Very Rev. Thomas Galberry (died in Hartford, Conn., October, 1878), superior of the Order of St. Augustine, a thorough scholar and unassuming gentleman, Fathers Gilmore, Hartnett, and Field assisting. On the departure of Father Galberry, Father John P. Gilmore, a man of learning, activity, and zeal, became pastor. Space prevents mention of the able assistants who from time to time have made up the number of the Augustinian Fathers. In St. Mary's Cemetery are the following headstones, commemorative of those who have died in pious service:

"Rev. James O'Donnell, Died April 7th 1861. Æ. 56. Rev. A. A. Mullen, Died July 7th 1876. Æ. 49. Rev. G. A. Marsden, Died Septem. 23rd 1877. Æ. 31. Rev. M. E. Gallagher, Died August 25. 1869. Æ. 66. Rev. T A. Hayes, Died Nov. 14, 1869. Æ. 25. Rev. T. Donnovan, Died Jan. 25, 1875. Æ. 37. Rev. Louis M. Edge, Died Feb'y 24, 1870. Æ. 44."

The French Catholic, or St. Ann's Church, located on Haverhill Street, is a commodious brick building, erected in 1875. It is attended largely by citizens of French descent. The pastor is the Rev. Oliver Boucher. The Rev. J. E. Michaud, and the Rev. Alphonzo Casgren were former pastors.

St. Patrick's Church is located at South Lawrence. The Rev. James Murphy is in charge of this church and a church at Andover.

St. Laurence Church is located at the corner of Essex and Union streets, and is under the care of the Augustinian Fathers. A small church building has also been erected on Water Street, near the head of Doyle Street.

CHAPTER X.

THE EDUCATIONAL INTEREST.

SCHOOLS — LIBRARIES — LECTURES — THE WHITE FUND — NEWSPAPERS — POST-OFFICE.

"It is no less the duty than the privilege of those who possess influence in creating towns and cities, to lay the foundations deep and strong. Let the standard be high in religious, moral and intellectual culture and there can be no well grounded fear for the result."—*Abbott Lawrence, to Trustees Franklin Library*, 1847.

How to give each child its "share in the heritage of knowledge and thought" puzzled town committees. Children came by hundreds clamoring for accommodations. The Methuen committee, in 1846,—Dr. Stephen Huse, James D. Herrick, and Rev. Willard Spaulding,—were called upon to provide for the van of a coming host. In November of that year, a school was opened, with Nathaniel Ambrose (died Sept. 30, 1878, aged 67) as teacher, in a new school-house of modest proportions, just west of Haverhill Street Methodist Church. Opening with twenty-five scholars, the number rapidly increased to one hundred and fifty, all crowded within a space for only a third of the number, his wife assisting in the management.

April 17, 1847, at the first town-meeting, William D. Lamb, James D. Herrick, and Dan Weed were elected members of the first town committee. Mr. Ambrose, for a time the only male teacher, continued his school. Misses Robinson, Ford, Brown, Abbott, and Odel taught in the other school buildings, two of which were the old district houses, the other, a small church vestry. There was a continual arrival of new pupils, and demand for more and better school accommodations. On the site of the Unitarian church was the Central Grammar School, for a time. Here, in April, 1848, Prof. George A. Walton commenced a service which lasted for sixteen years. He resigned in 1864. During long service he was faithful, judicious, efficient, and magnetic, doing much to establish schools in which citizens have had a just pride, and to practically educate a generation.

In 1848, the school committee consisted of five members: the Rev. Henry F. Harrington, Nathan W. Harmon, James D. Herrick, the Rev. Lyman Whiting, and Dr. George Packard. Under this and the preceding committee, the system of graded schools was arranged and put in operation.

Mention of grades is made, Lawrence being one of the first towns where this was the system at the start. Hon. Horace Mann was consulted by early committees regarding methods for this new city of limited area, and his advice followed in the main. He took great interest in this favorable opportunity to test a system where there was no established course to be uprooted or overborne.

The brick building, designed to accommodate a high school solely, was erected in 1848. The grammar school soon overflowed into it, and the higher grade took the name of "Oliver High School," as a compliment to Gen. Henry K. Oliver, who, from time to time, made valuable donations of apparatus, statuary, and books. This house was enlarged only three years after first building (in 1851), by the addition of a three-story transverse section in the rear, and, in 1872, the front was raised to three stories, and the internal arrangement of rooms and stairways changed.

Feb. 5, 1868, the new High-school house was dedicated. Within ten years, there is clamor for enlargement and re-arrangement of rooms, not originally planned with great wisdom.

The two schools are known as the "Lawrence High School" and the "Oliver Grammar School."

Since 1853, the public schools have been under the immediate supervision of a superintendent, who is secretary of the school committee: viz., John A. Goodwin served from 1853 to '54; Henry F. Harrington, 1854 to '55; George Packard, 1855 to '56, and 1859 to '61; A. D. Williams, 1856 to '57; Henry K. Oliver, 1857 to '59; Joseph L. Partridge, 1861 to '64; John R. Rollins, Jan. to June '64; Gilbert E. Hood, June 1864 to '76; Harrison Hume succeeded Mr. Hood in 1876. James H. Eaton and Albert F. Scruton, as sub-masters in the Grammar School, were valuable assistants of Mr. Walton. Mr. Eaton gave nine years of earnest service, and both, for a time, had charge of the school as principals. Mr. Scruton engaged in the practice of medicine, but died on the threshold of a useful career. John L. Brewster was principal of the school for eight years, resigning in 1873, when James S. Barrell was in charge for a year. Park S. Warren is his successor. The South Grammar School has been in charge of Isaiah W. Ayer, Jonathan Tenney, John B. Fairfield, Wilbur Fiske Gile, John Orne, Jr., J. Henry Root, Jefferson K. Cole, and Edward P. Shute, the latter taking the school in 1877. R. E. Harmon and Nathan Sargent had temporary service.

The Lawrence High School has been under the charge of accomplished and efficient teachers. Thomas W. T. Curtis was the pioneer, serving for two years. C. S. Pennell also served two years, resigning to take a professorship in Antioch College, Ohio. Samuel John Pike, a tutor from Bowdoin College, rendered three years' service. Mr. William H. Farrar served as principal for a part of the year 1857, resigning to take charge of the high school at Great Falls, N. H. For four and one-half years thereafter, William J. Rolfe gave efficient and able service, going hence to Cambridge. For two years, 1861 to '63, Henry L. Boltwood was principal of the school. He resigned for a business opening. Prof. Albert C. Perkins, since principal of Phillips Exeter Academy, gave ten years of efficient service. Charles T. Lazelle was principal for two years: failing health caused his resignation in 1875. Horace E. Bartlett succeeded, and still remains. Gen. Henry K. Oliver, the Rev. Henry F. Harrington, Gilbert E. Hood, Thomas G. Valpey, and I. H. Ward have temporarily been in charge, in short intervals, when changes have been made.

Industrious lady assistants in high and grammar schools, and other grades, have been and are deserving of grateful remembrance. It is easy to call to mind a score of them, of each of whom we might say, as of Lady Hastings, that "to love her was a liberal education." Marked success has been won in the schools, and it is largely due to

the faithful labor of a corps of female teachers, many of them graduates of the early classes. In the light of experience, the vote at an early town-meeting, "to employ male teachers in all schools with over fifty scholars," excites a smile, as does another foolish proposition made "to establish separate schools for Irish children."

The private schools have not been many. The Rev. Silas Blaisdale and his wife, Mrs. A. P. Blaisdale, had a school for many years on Newbury Street. Mrs. B. was a veteran teacher of half a century's experience, and is remembered by many as well for vigorous punishment administered (for cause no doubt), as for sound instruction given. Ephraim Ward, Jr., was one of the first who came to the new city on teaching intent. Before the opening of the public high school he had a flourishing private school of a high grade. No permanent institution of learning, outside of the public schools and Catholic schools, has been founded in the city. There are no notable works of art. The people have little of what is called elegant leisure. The arts fostered are the useful ones. The moneyed time-killer does not seek the city as a place for residence. Nearly every resident is busy about some useful employment.

Evening Schools.—Under the superintendence and care of the City Missionary, evening schools were established in 1859. These schools had been advocated by the Rev. H. F. Harrington as early as 1854. They were taught by volunteers, and gathered in Odd Fellows' Hall until quarters were provided in the basement of city hall. Here the school grew in importance, the city giving a partial support. Latterly the city assumes full control and care of these schools.

To the hard-working young mechanic and operative, burdened by ordinary wants, the public rightly gives this opportunity to acquire the rudiments of common education, and skill in penmanship and drawing.

Libraries.—With books that are valuable, the Free Public Library and libraries of the larger mills are well supplied; but there is no immense collection, disturbed only by the bibliomaniac or the antiquarian.

The Franklin Library was incorporated in April, 1847, "for the purpose of maintaining a library and reading-room, advancing useful arts and sciences, and promoting public instruction, by lectures or otherwise." In July following, Capt. Charles H. Bigelow, first president of the association, received the following:—

BOSTON, July 5, 1847.

MY DEAR SIR:—I was gratified to notice an Act, passed by the last General Court, incorporating the Franklin Library Association in the new town. . . . I offer, through you, for the acceptance and benefit of the Association, the sum of one thousand dollars, which the government of the institution will please invest in such scientific and other works as will tend to create good mechanics, good Christians, and good patriots.

Accept the assurances with which I remain your friend,

ABBOTT LAWRENCE.

At his death, in 1855, Mr. Lawrence left the sum of five thousand dollars for the purpose of increasing the value and utility of the library.

This association was the solitary literary society in the busy town and city for many years. The "Lawrence Athenæum" sustained a course of lectures for two seasons; the "Lawrence Lyceum," for one or two seasons. Both finally were merged in the Franklin Library Association. A course of lectures (twelve each season) was sustained for several years by this organization. Tickets for an entire course were seventy-five cents; ladies at a lower rate.

Shareholders and officers labored to extend the benefits of this library and reading-room to the general public; but there was need of miscellaneous books, open doors, and the magic word *free*, in full force and meaning.

In 1872 the library and funds of the association were turned over to the city by definite arrangement, and the Free Public Library, aided by the White Fund, more fully mentioned hereafter, was successfully established. Library and reading-room, now open to all, found immediate favor with the people. Circulation of books reached an almost unprecedented average; patronage outgrew accommodations, and, in three years from first opening, the library was removed to spacious rooms in the new Odd Fellows' Block. The mayor and president of the common council, with three trustees of the White Fund, are members, *ex officio*, of the board of trustees. The six citizen members are elected by the city council, two vacancies occurring each year. The booksellers' circulating libraries were absorbed or supplanted by the free library; but the Pacific Mills collection, of seven thousand volumes, is still patronized, and from time to time judiciously enlarged.

The White Fund Lectures.—These lectures are sustained by a fund given for the purpose of establishing a course of free lectures, on vital topics, for the benefit of the industrial classes, particularly the young. From this fund material aid is also given to the Free Public Library. The philanthropic purpose of founding this lecture course originated with Judge Daniel Appleton White, of Salem (a native of that part of Methuen now Lawrence), the Essex Company joining with him in necessary measures to carry this design into effect, and in maturing plans that would make the benefits continuous and cumulative.

Judge White was born in June, 1776, in the old farm-house standing in the fields at a point now the north-east corner of Haverhill and Lawrence streets. He graduated at Harvard College in 1797. For many years he was judge of probate for the county of Essex, residing in Salem, where he was first president of the Essex Institute, and a representative in Congress for one term. His old homestead, with the lands lying between Merrimac and Spicket rivers and Appleton and Franklin streets, was first conveyed in January, 1845, by a conditional deed, to the Water-Power Association. The first conveyance by Judge White embraced the whole, without any restriction. He soon afterwards became aware that provisions in old deeds required that part of the lands should be reserved as a family burial-ground. In consequence of this, at his earnest solicitation, the associates, in taking their absolute deed, dated March 28, 1845, relinquished their claims to a lot of about six acres, nearly in the centre of the tract they had purchased. It was provided, however, that the six acres excepted and reserved should be restricted as to use or reserved as a public or private burial-ground. Immediately after the organization of the Essex Company, the associates conveyed to that company all lands they had purchased, consequently their deed contained the reservations and restrictions.

Judge White seems to have had little enjoyment of this property, yet, being in possession, constantly increasing taxes became a burden. There was no income from the property; sanitary considerations prevented its use for a cemetery; no one would purchase any part of it in the condition in which the title then stood. It became evident that the lands could only be utilized by the joint action of both Judge White and the Essex Company. There were upon the land but three graves (now undisturbed, surrounded by dwellings), occupying together a space not larger than a burial-lot. This left nearly six acres of unoccupied land in the heart of the city. Joint action of the two parties might give to this land a value of many thousands, to be divided between them. Happily, at the suggestion of Judge White, cordially acceded to by the Essex Company, both joined in devoting this property to a purpose which would benefit, not a class or a single generation, but all who might dwell here in time to come. The indenture conveying the lands to trustees, with power to sell and invest proceeds in a fund, for a purpose clearly stated, is a model of precise wording and clearness of detail; so far as it relates to the character of the lectures and use of the fund for that purpose, the language is that of Judge White.

The original proposition of Mr. White, as explained in his letter of June 19, 1852, to Mr. Storrow, treasurer of the Essex Company, which first opened the subject, proposed simply the establishment of an annual course of lectures, the special subjects being those first specified in the indenture or deed of trust. Being confident that the value of the lands, and the sum eventually derived from them would far exceed the expectations of Mr. White, Mr. Storrow suggested that, while the original object which he had in mind should first be fully provided for, precisely as Mr. White intended, it might be well to allow the trustees to select other methods for promoting morality and education, especially to authorize liberal appropriations from the income in aid of a free public library, and provide for the gift of a building-site for such an institution. Judge White readily assented, and the indenture, dated Aug. 23, 1852, is intended to carry into effect the original and enlarged purposes of the trust. This indenture is signed by Daniel A. White of the first part, the Essex Company of the second part, and Charles S. Storrow, Nathaniel G. White, and Henry K. Oliver, as trustees accepting the trust. Messrs. Storrow and Oliver removed from Lawrence in after years, and George D. Cabot and James H. Eaton succeeded them as trustees. Coming in full possession, the trustees were authorized to sell lands from time to time and allow proceeds to accumulate. The income from investments was to be applied to specified purposes; briefly stated, these:

First. To establish an annual course of not less than six lectures on specified subjects; viz.: "On the importance of good character to success in life;" "On the unsurpassable value of the riches of character to the young of both sexes;" "On the virtues, habits and princi-

ples most essential to good character;" "On the best means of intellectual and moral improvement." The lectures to be free to all industrial classes, especially to the young.

Second. An amount not exceeding one-half of net income may be expended for the purchase of books for the establishment and increase of a public library, to be open and free of access to inhabitants of the town of Lawrence.

Third. The trustees are given general power to expend accumulated surplus, according to their judgment and discretion, for the advancement and instruction of inhabitants of the town of Lawrence, keeping in mind the great object of educating and training the young in habits of industry, morality, and piety.

The lands have been sold, excepting a lot on the corner of Haverhill and Hampshire streets, reserved for a library and lecture hall (should the public ever deem it wise to erect such a building), and the small enclosure for the three ancient graves before mentioned.

The deed of trust directs that the trustees shall make, annually, a report to the president of the Essex Company, with a full account of all their receipts and expenditures, the state of the trust fund, and all their doings in the premises; and, in case of a vacancy in the board, the approval of that officer is also required in the appointment of a new trustee.

The amount of the trust fund on the 1st of July, 1878, was $64,069.83, all safely invested. One thousand dollars from the income has been annually paid for the last six years for the purchase of books for the free public library.

Trustees have secured greatest variety of talent, and infused an amount of life and sparkle into the lectures that has, of late years, brought crowded audiences and unbounded interest. Tickets are distributed to employees in mills and workshops, and a limited number to the general public by lot.

It was a fortunate thought that accomplished so noble a purpose by actual deed, and arranged details of management in the lifetime of donors, leaving nothing to chances of litigation.

The Press. — The local press is represented by four established weeklies and two dailies. J. F. C. Hayes * was the pioneer editor and first established job printer. His paper, the "Lawrence Weekly Courier" (first issued as the "Merrimack Courier"), was valuable in the matter of statistics, though somewhat partisan in character. The editor was a champion rider of hobby-horses, riding such horses to their death. The paper lived for many years as a weekly, and, for a time, as a tri-weekly.

The "Lawrence Sentinel" has a history going back to the early years of the township, the publishers having a steady circulation, issuing a neatly printed and carefully edited paper, advocating democratic measures. B. Frank Watson, Hon. John K. Tarbox, and Abiel Morrison have been connected therewith as either editors, publishers, or both. Patrick Murphy has had long connection with this paper as printer and manager. The original issue was known as the "Vanguard."

The "Lawrence American and Andover Advertiser" originated in the days of the Native American movement, and was known as the "True American," published originally by George W. Sargent and A. S. Bunker, afterwards by Sargent and George S. Merrill; the latter eventually obtained, and has since held full, control. The paper has a large circulation, though devoted almost exclusively to local affairs. The record of local events is full and minute. In politics it advocates Republican principles.

The "Essex Eagle" was first published in 1867, by Merrill & Wadsworth, afterwards by Horace A. Wadsworth, again by D. H. Patterson & Co., and later, by Hammon Reed. The paper advocates Republican principles in politics, and aims to be a family newspaper.

The "Lawrence Journal" was first started by Robert Bower, as the organ of workingmen. Mr. Patrick Sweeney, an enterprising citizen, purchased it in 1877. It advocates Democratic doctrines, with a tendency to independent action.

The "Daily American" (an evening paper), and the "Lawrence Daily Eagle" (morning), are the surviving dailies, published in connection with weeklies, before noticed. Lack of space prevents notice of a score of enterprises of publishers who failed to attain permanent success.

The post-office may be appropriately mentioned in connection with schools, churches, lectures, and newspapers. A writer has called the post-office the "metre of civilization." Only five incumbents have held the office since first established: — George A. Waldo, for three years; William Pierce, of Andover, for six months; Nathaniel Wilson four years, under Taylor and Fillmore; B. Frank Watson, eight years, under Pierce and Buchanan; and George S. Merrill, appointed by Lincoln in 1861, has since retained the office through all changes, and has faithfully served the public. The office was first opened on the Old Turnpike, near Common Street, thence removed to Lawrence Hall, afterwards to Bay State Bank Building, Lawrence Street; next, to Appleton Street, adjoining city hall; and, in 1869, to the present quarters.

* Mr. Hayes's small History of Lawrence, issued in 1868, contained much valuable information, which all that follow him must use and should acknowledge.

CHAPTER XI.

THE FRATERNAL RECORD.

SECRET, BENEVOLENT, SOCIAL, AND PROTECTIVE ORDERS AND ORGANIZATIONS.

The Masonic order has the following organizations in the city, viz.: Grecian Lodge, chartered Dec. 10, 1825, and instituted at Methuen. It languished in that quiet town in anti-Masonic days, but was revived in Lawrence, February, 1848, and has been continuously prosperous. Tuscan Lodge was chartered, Dec. 10, 1863; Phœnician Lodge, Nov. 5, 1870. Mount Sinai Royal Arch Chapter R. A. M., was chartered Oct. 1, 1861; Lawrence Council R. and S. M., Dec. 9, 1868. Bethany Commandery, Knights' Templars, was chartered Dec. 29, 1864. The Lawrence Masonic Association was formed November, 1871; the Lawrence Masonic Mutual Relief Association, July 20, 1874. The Masonic bodies have elegantly furnished quarters for meetings, social occasions, and banquets.

Odd-fellowship is represented in the city by the following lodges: United Brothers Lodge, established, 1847. Monadnock Lodge, No. 150, organized, 1867. Kearsarge Encampment No. 36, instituted Sept. 11, 1868. Lawrence Encampment, No. 31, instituted in 1852, and re-instituted October, 1874. Lawrence Odd Fellows' Hall Association, — a building society, — in 1874 and 1875, erected the Odd Fellows building, sometimes known as the Free Library Building, a fine structure, surmounted by an illuminated clock. The basement is for business houses. Above is the public library; in the third and fourth stories, elegant lodge and banquet rooms for Divisions of the order.

Quindaro Lodge, Knights of Pythias, was established April 4, 1870.

Citizens of long residence, have a local historical society and social organization, — the Old Residents' Association, — holding monthly meetings in the winter season.

There is remarkable loss of memory on the part of members of a lodge of the Sons of Malta, existing here some twenty years ago. Each "son" remembers the experience of his brother members, but is silent as to his own. If you care to raise a smile upon the placid visage of staid citizens, inquire regarding this short-lived order.

Temperance societies, both secret and open, have thrived from the very first years. Space only forbids enumeration.

The Knights of Honor have two lodges — Merrimack Lodge and Adelphic Lodge. A lodge of Knights of the Golden Cross and a Council of the Royal Arcanum are similar to the Knights of Honor in the insurance and relief afforded members. This protective feature is a common and vital principle in all these lodges.

The Relief Society, connected with the fire department, is elsewhere mentioned.

The Home Club is a social organization, in active operation for several years. Members are from all political parties, sects, and orders. The elegantly fitted rooms have become popular as a resort for members: their purpose seems to be the cultivation of sociability and good cheer under circumstances pleasant and unobjectionable.

The German population have a lodge of the Order of Harugari, known as Schiller Lodge, and two lodges of the Order of Red Men, known as Merrimac Lodge and Caughnawaga Lodge, all with Masonic features and benefits. They have also an organization of the Turnverein of the North American Turnerbund, mainly for gymnastic practice, with benefits to members, without the ritual and secrecy of Masonic bodies. A singing-band — the Lyra — is sustained by musicians of that nationality. They have also a school, sustained by volunteers, where children born in this country are taught the German language in hours when not otherwise employed.

CHAPTER XII.

THE MERCANTILE INTEREST.

BANKS — INSURANCE — RAILROADS — HOTELS — DELUSIVE VENTURES — GENERAL TRADE.

Banks. — The Bay State Bank (now Bay State National) was incorporated Feb. 10, 1847. It opened for business in the new bank building, Oct. 26th of that year. The capital, at first $200,000, was increased to $500,000; when rival institutions multiplied, capital was reduced to $375,000, and shares from $100 to $75 each. Charles S. Storrow was president and Nathaniel White, cashier, — the former for twenty years, the latter for eighteen years. George L. Davis succeeded Mr. Storrow, in 1867. Charles A. Colby, connected with the bank for years as teller, succeeded Mr. White as cashier. Mr. Colby resigned after three years' service, removing to New York city. Samuel White succeeded him, and still remains. The first president and cashier were patterns of neatness, order, and method. Mr. White was wary and conservative, deemed by some over-exacting and careful; yet his nicety, precision, and care laid firmly the foundations of both the Bay State and Essex Savings banks, to both of which his services were eminently useful. In 1857, a year of wide-spread financial disaster, a volatile population made a run upon this bank for specie. Every call was promptly met.

The Essex Savings Bank was incorporated March 12th, and organized Sept. 20, 1847. Books were opened for deposit in October, 1847, at the office of Caleb M. Marvel, No. 1 Turnpike. The business was done for years at the Bay State banking rooms, the president and cashier of the latter bank being the active managers and responsible officers of the savings bank. For years deposits were received only on Wednesday. Seven thousand dollars was placed on deposit the first six months. Growth was slow, investments safe and sure. James H. Eaton took the position of assistant-treasurer in May, 1865. He succeeded to the treasurership on the decease of Mr. White, in September, 1866. George D. Cabot succeeded Mr. Storrow as president, and Joseph Shattuck succeeded him. In 1876, the fine new bank building of this institution was occupied. The late severe test of savings banks showed the exceptional soundness of this institution for deposits.

The Pemberton Bank (now the National Pemberton) commenced business in 1854. Levi Sprague has been president from the first; James M. Coburn is cashier; Samuel C. Woodward and William H. Jaquith also acted, for a time, as cashiers, the latter having a long service. Capital, $150,000. Management has been shrewd but liberal, and dividends satisfactory.

The Lawrence National Bank; capital, $300,000; commenced business in 1872. P. G. Pillsbury is cashier; Artemas W. Stearns succeeds Alfred J. French as president. The bank has rooms in Brechin Block.

The Lawrence Savings Bank was organized in 1868; Milton Bonney is president; William R. Spalding, treasurer.

The Broadway Savings Bank opened for business in 1872; John Fallon is president; Gilbert E. Hood, treasurer; James Payne and John L. Brewster have each, for a time, acted as treasurer.

Railroads. — At the founding of the city (1845), no railway line entered any portion of city territory. The Boston and Maine Railroad was opened for travel eastward in 1843; there being no Lawrence then in existence, the route ran east of Shawsheen River, through North Andover, by a steeper grade than now. After the commencement of important works here, for a time passengers and freight came no nearer than North Andover; soon a switch-back line ran from that point to South Lawrence.

Not until Feb. 28, 1848, was the Boston and Maine Railroad opened, directly via Lawrence, with permanent bridges over Merrimac River and canal, trains running to the old wooden passenger-station, just north of Water Street crossing. This line also built the road from Lawrence to Methuen, known as the Methuen Branch, now operated as a part of northern lines. For the first years after opening, the Boston and Maine road ran upon the Boston and Lowell line to Wilmington; a short branch was built from that point to Andover, known as the Wilmington and Andover Railroad. It was afterwards extended to Haverhill, next to Exeter, finally connecting through to Portland. The independent line from Boston was completed July 1, 1845, running through Malden, Reading, &c., with the Boston terminus in Haymarket Square, — "the commercial heart of Boston," as was claimed.

The Wilmington and Andover line was abandoned with the opening of this direct route, and a few years since the new Eastern extension gave an independent line from Boston to Portland. The north passenger-station of wood served a good purpose from 1850 to 1878, when the elegant new brick structure fronting Depot Square was erected. Though not extravagantly costly, it is a most creditable building, novel in the style of architecture and arrangement. The brick passenger-station at South Lawrence was built in 1871, replacing the rambling wooden structure which stood north of the new building. The road has a line to Lowell via Wilmington Junction, and branch feeders on the eastern route. For several years the railway statistics showed heavier passenger travel on this line than on any other Massachusetts railroad. Before building extensions and feeders, it was a railroad without a bonded or floating debt.*

The Lowell and Lawrence Railroad was opened for travel July 2, 1848. There was a jubilant inauguration; thousands took a free ride to the older city of spindles, and there was a crowd of visitors to the new city.

The Essex Railroad, from Lawrence to Salem, first ran passenger trains to Lawrence Sept. 4, 1848. Business over this line was somewhat limited for years, and the company was not financially successful. For several years the line has been run with constantly increasing business, by the Eastern Railroad. For a time, some years since, considerable travel went by this route to Boston, there being sharp competition with the Boston and Maine road. Fares were reduced to less than one cent per mile temporarily, and travel was consequently heavy.

In 1872, the Boston and Lawrence Railroad Company was organized, by the choice of the Hon. John K. Tarbox as president, and a board of four new directors (Milton Bonney, Alfred A. Lamprey, John K. Tarbox, and Charles R. Mason), with the directors of the Boston, Lowell, and Nashua road. This organization never built a road, but, under a general railroad law, allowing the building of branch roads of certain length, short connecting tracks were laid, by the Lowell and Lawrence Railroad Company, uniting their line with the Salem and Lowell line, and the last with the Boston and Lowell. The purpose of the new company was thus accomplished, and their rights transferred to the Lowell and Lawrence road. Thus by laying less than five miles of new track, a portion of that upon the graded embankment abandoned by the Wilmington and Andover road, thirty years before, an independent line was established, operated by the Boston, Lowell, and Nashua road, and opened for travel Dec. 1, 1874. All the roads have used the Boston and Maine north station for entrance and transfer, but permanent iron bridges have been constructed, by the Lowell and Lawrence Railroad Company, over Merrimac River and canals, and lands secured on Essex and Methuen streets, for a central passenger station in the heart of the city.

In October, 1849, through connection north was formed by completion of the Manchester and Lawrence Railroad.† This road is run under lease to the Concord road, and proves a most valuable trunk line.

The Merrimack Valley Horse Railroad Company was incorporated in 1863; the charter was renewed in 1866. In the fall of 1867, the track was laid from the foot of canal at Paper Mills to Methuen Post-office. Stockholders celebrated the opening by a most spirited meeting and supper at Exchange Hotel, Methuen. North Andover extension was laid in 1868; the South Lawrence extension, in 1876. Paying expenses of operating and extending the line, stockholders have been content to see the value of their stock constantly enhanced, their line completed, extended, and paid for without assessments, and to wait for the first dividend until ten years after commencement. William A. Russell has been president, and James H. Eaton, treasurer of the company from the first, and there has been but one change in the board of directors. George P. Trickey was, for a long time, superintendent of the line. Stevens Dockham was the builder of the main line.

* The strike of the entire force of locomotive engineers on this road, in the spring of 1876, and the failure of the attempt of strikers to force the management into compliance with their demands, is well remembered. It was a determined effort, under the direction of the Brotherhood of Engineers, and was met by resistance as determined. No concession was made by the road, though re-organization of the important corps was effected only by great labor, amid much excitement. The affair interested railway managers and employees throughout the entire country.

† In two days from the time of opening subscription books of the Manchester and Lawrence Railroad, enough to build had been subscribed. In one month MORE THAN TWO MILLIONS EIGHT HUNDRED THOUSAND DOLLARS had been obtained, and there was contention for assignment of shares. — *Lawrence Courier.*

Hotels.—The Franklin House, fronting Depot Square, was erected by the Essex Company, and opened as a hotel by Major T. J. Coburn, of Boston, Nov. 1, 1847. The property was afterwards sold to Col. Gardner Towle and associates. There have been frequent changes in management. Capt. J. L. Huntress, Charles B. Melvin, Capt. Jefford M. Decker, and Col Larrabee,* were courteous and faithful successors of Major Coburn. Thomas W. Huse,* of Lowell, finally purchased the property, of Towle and others, and took personal charge. He was a wide-awake and obliging landlord. He renovated and rebuilt the house in 1870.

The Merrimac House was an imposing brick hotel, erected at the corner of Turnpike and Tremont streets, by Page & Fish, and opened by Oliver King to the traveling public. The house was totally consumed by fire in 1849, and was not rebuilt.

The United States Hotel never sheltered a guest or opened its doors for patronage. One Philip Ulmer engineered the enterprise, which was a joint-stock affair. It stood upon Essex Street, just west of Jackson. The heavy iron front was showy, the dome conspicuous, the supports and partitions flimsy and insufficient. The great fire of August, 1859, had made but little headway in this building when the front fell outward, as has been told in another chapter, with loss of life and ruin to the builders.

Insurance, &c.—Local insurance companies never thrived in Lawrence. Effort has not been largely applied in such enterprises, or conspicuous for success when so directed.

Lawrence Mutual Fire Insurance Company, organized in 1848; Dan Weed president, and Charles Stark Newell secretary. W. D. Joplin finally wound up the concern by re-insuring the risks in larger companies, and there was no loss.

Fayette Mutual Fire Insurance Company was incorporated in 1855. The company did a limited business for several years, but the mutually interested did not become a mutual-admiration society. The final division was of liabilities.

Pemberton Mutual Insurance Company was organized in 1873. The name was unwisely chosen, associated as it was with a structure that fell and was *burned*. Permanent success was not achieved, and the company ceased to exist.

Loan and Fund Associations were at one time supposed to be progressive, elastic, and prolific savings-banks. Both the City Loan Fund and Lawrence Loan Fund Association went out of existence after a struggle for success. There seems to have been nothing mischievous in management, excepting the general idea of members, at starting, that each was to be favored and benefited, while the associated whole waxed fat upon the profit of doing business with each other.

There came, a few years since, a wonderful mechanical invention, the "Abel Weft Loom." The only motive power was a remarkably small boy at the crank. He produced immense quantities of cloth before the eyes of the people. It seemed possible to girdle the earth in forty minutes with a band of flannel. Smallest investors were magnanimously allowed to share profits. A local company was organized, and there the matter rests. Manufacturing goes on in the good old way. The small boy has not supplanted the waterfall or the mammoth engine for the driving of cloth-making machinery, nor the ingenious knitting-machine taken the place of the loom.

The oil fever had its run here, and, though fatal in no case, some were depleted thereby. One or more local companies were formed to tap the oily currents waiting to fill with fortunes the coffers of the enterprising. The net result, in most cases, was the worthless soil, worn-out derricks, several holes in the ground smelling of petroleum, and a floating debt. Not more satisfactory, as a whole, has been the experience of investors in coal-mining in the Old Dominion, and gold-mining in the mineral regions of the West. Plodders in legitimate business have succeeded best. Lack of space alone prevents the addition of pages rendering due tribute to the reliable merchants who have labored for a lifetime in the community, as honorable as they have been enterprising. Among such, who have had long-continued or unusual prominence, may be named: The Shattuck Brothers, Artemas W. Stearns, D. S. Swan (deceased), James A. Treat, Henry Barton, Byron Truell, Simpson & Oswald, Alfred A. Lamprey, James R. Simpson, Hezekiah Plummer, Luther Ladd, Rufus Reed, Charles A. Brown, Joseph Norris (deceased), Edmund R. Hayden, Ebenezer L. Chapman, J. Merrill Currier, Milton Bonney, William P. Clark, Peter Holihan, Stanley Brothers, Patrick Sweeney, James D. Herrick, Henry M. Whitney, George W. Hills, John C. Dow, Capt. Wm. R. Spalding, Jordan Brothers, John F. Cogswell, James G. Abbott, Carney Brothers, J. P. Kent (deceased), William H. Bridgman (deceased), John F. Bingham, Martin Brothers, Aaron Ordway, Albin Yeaw, Lurandus Beach, L. Beach, Jr., Charles R. and E. J. Mason, and William E. Gowing. A score of other younger men are establishing a reputation for enterprise and reliability in trade.

* Since deceased.

CHAPTER XIII.

EVENTS AND EPISODES IN LOCAL HISTORY.

THE FALL OF PEMBERTON MILL — DAYS OF GLOOM — VISITORS — FENIANISM — SLAVERY.

Had the reader been passing down the line of the north canal just before five o'clock, P. M., on the 10th of January, 1860, he would have looked for one moment upon the great main mill building of the Pemberton Manufacturing Company, standing in perfect outline; within, each busy worker in place, the great lines of machinery moving with nicest precision. Another moment and he would have seen, in place of this apparently model workshop, a mound of broken timbers, fallen walls, crushed masses of machinery, and wounded and bewildered workmen. The fall commenced near the southerly end, and extended northerly about as fast as a person could run. So total a wreck, with no bolt from heaven, no sweeping tornado or overwhelming flood as a visible cause, is rarely seen on earth.

The mill was a wide departure from old models,—of uncommon width, with five high stories, lighted by large windows, and a nearly flat roof. The heavy floors (six inches thickness of plank, boards, and sheathing), and the roof, were supported by two parallel rows of cast-iron pillars through the centre of the building. Upon these rigid pillars much of the weight of machinery and heavy flooring rested; upon them fell the shock of vibration. These wide floors lay twisted, bent, and broken, upon intermediate piles of machinery.

Crowds rushed to the scene; friends of operatives, wild with grief and apprehension, hundreds of citizens proffering aid. A great calamity had fallen upon the city; there was sorrow and dismay in many homes, disturbance and dread in all.

Business, other than that of rescuing and caring for those in peril, was at a standstill. Action was prompt. Volunteers, ranging themselves under proper leadership, worked nobly for the safety of those buried in the ruin. Great progress had been made, and many liberated, when, near midnight, probably from a breaking lantern, flames burst from the débris. Floors saturated with oil, cotton, and combustible material, fed the fires. A draught through the ruin drove fierce flames among broken machinery. An immense quantity of water was thrown upon the mass, from hydrants in Washington Mills yards, engines of the city fire department, and an engine from Manchester. But the reaches of warped and broken floor shed water like roofs; the speed of the fire was terrific, wrapping the whole mass in a sheet of flame. Fire was master; men impotent to stay its pitiless work.

City hall was converted into a hospital and morgue, where the dead, and wounded having no homes in the city, were received. Before one o'clock at night, rows of mattresses had been arranged on three sides of the hall. Fifty-four wounded were here cared for, and scores, scattered at their homes in the city, had tender care at their firesides. Ladies volunteered as nurses. Physicians of the city and surrounding towns worked faithfully and humanely to alleviate suffering.

Some of the unfortunate had internal injuries, not apparent, yet actually fatal; others, frightful wounds, from which they recovered. The dead-room was removed to an office below. Friends came from great distances, eager to learn the fate of kindred. Sometimes, among those mutilated past recognition, only a shred of garment, a keepsake, or a ring served to identify, so terrible was the work of fire. By every country road and every railway train, hundreds of people came to visit the scene of the tragedy. It was estimated that over 50,000 people visited city hall during the day following the disaster.

So unprecedented a case called out sympathy and aid from the generous and public-spirited, far and near. Philanthropic gentlemen met on the day following the fall, at the rooms of Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, in Boston. A subscription was set on foot, reaching, in the aggregate, over $19,000, which sum was forwarded by the New England Society for Promotion of Manufactures and

Mechanic Arts. The Suffolk Club, of Boston, sent $2,000; citizens of Fall River, nearly $2,000. Providence, R. I.; Salem and Lowell, Mass.; New York and Philadelphia Corn Exchanges, and merchants of both cities, with citizens of Pittsburg, Penn., made heavy contributions. John G. Whittier and Horace Greeley, both collected and transmitted funds. Ex-President Franklin Pierce sent fifty dollars. Remittances, many in small amounts, came from every New England State; New York, Pennsylvania, New Jersey, Delaware, Virginia, Indiana, Kentucky, North Carolina, Alabama, Georgia, and District of Columbia.

A board of trustees, for the management of the relief fund, was promptly organized, consisting of the following gentlemen: D. Saunders, Jr., Mayor; Charles S. Storrow, Henry K. Oliver, John C. Hoadley, and William C. Chapin. A competent clerk was employed, and most exact methods of accountability and distribution instituted. S. A. Furbush, John Q. A. Bachelder, William D. Joplin, Henry Withington, Elbridge Weston, and Daniel Saunders, were an inspecting or visiting committee in the six wards, each keeping almost daily contact with the injured, thus preventing aid to the unworthy or neglect of the deserving. Thirteen days after the catastrophe, the trustees issued an address to the public, gratefully acknowledging receipts, which amounted to $65,559.30, and assured the public that the sum already pledged would answer probable needs.

Charles S. Storrow was treasurer of the committee, and patiently heard and investigated claims. Aid was given only in case of injury to the person, or suffering caused by the fall. The record of Mayor Saunders, and other public servants, in that trying time, was that of whole-souled, faithful public officials. Clergymen, in the duties of their office and as public-spirited citizens, were active helpers. On the following Sabbath, in five city churches, the sermons of the several pastors were from the same words, Luke xiii. 4, 5; and all held solemn service appropriate in view of so startling a calamity.

In the minutes of George P. Wilson, City Missionary, made at the time, is the following: "About 10 o'clock, after the fall, a person engaged in rescuing sufferers, lowered a glass lantern among the ruins. This lantern was broken, and fire, fed by waste, cotton, and oil, spread beneath the floors." * He also says: "Coffee and wine were lowered to some who could not be liberated"; also, "It is said that a party of girls, for whom there was no possibility of safety, were heard singing together a familiar and pathetic hymn, until their voices were drowned by the roar of fire."

Nine hundred and eighteen persons were in the employ of the company at the time of this disaster. About 600 went down in the ruins of the falling building. The remaining 300 were employed in yards and out-buildings, or escaped from the building at first alarm: 305 escaped unhurt. The final report of trustees of the Relief Fund, made Feb. 11, 1861, thirteen months after the fall, shows that eighty-six were killed or had died of injuries; forty-three cases are reported of survivors having severe injuries. Two of the latter were hopelessly bedridden, and annuities were purchased for their benefit. Thirteen of the dead were mutilated past recognition; for their burial a lot was secured in Bellevue Cemetery, and Sunday, March 4, 1860, the unknown were buried, Rev. George Packard and Rev. C. E. Fisher conducting solemn service. A plain granite monument marks their resting-place, with this inscription:

"In memory of the unrecognized dead
Who were killed by the fall of Pemberton Mill,
January 10th, 1860."

This event caused, as it should, earnest inquiry as to the cause of the disaster, and the persons upon whom the responsibility for its occurrence might justly fall. After a very full investigation, and examination after the ruins were removed, it seems to have been conceded, on all sides, that it arose, not from failure of the foundation, which was left in perfectly firm and unchanged condition, not from failure or defect in the masonry, which was sound and well put together, but from the insufficiency and breakage of the iron columns,† of which two parallel rows ran from end to end in the interior of the building, supporting the floors and roof, which were over eighty feet in width; the building being 284 feet long and 84 feet wide, outside measurement.

For the defects and want of strength in these columns, the verdict of the coroner's jury threw the chief responsibility upon the constructing engineer. A more general verdict, however, placed the responsibility fully as much upon the owners of the foundry from whom the columns were bought, and the agent of the mill who contracted for, purchased, and sent them to the builder, as upon the engineer, who received and used what was thus sent him, without such thorough examination and test as might have revealed dangerous defects.

But the great mill fell, by reason of a vital defect, whoever was responsible. It was a terrible lesson, calling universal attention to floor supports in mills and warehouses. Many a frail pillar was strengthened, and plan changed to give undoubted margin of safety, in consequence of this terrible warning.

Days of Gloom. — The year 1857 brought shadows upon many communities. There are few sadder sights than to see the industrious and frugal, whose capital is their muscular strength and skill in labor, who have just become rooted in new homes, suddenly turned adrift, through mercantile failure or business calamity. Such misfortune fell upon many citizens in 1857; the Bay State Mills, the Lawrence Machine Shop, the Pemberton Mills, and minor operators reducing work to minimum of production, or stopping altogether.

There was a decrease in population, in eighteen months, of nearly 3,000 souls, more than fifteen per cent. For four years there was little increase in valuation. Recovery was slow, effects of misfortune visible on every side. Old citizens will recollect how consternation fell upon the people when, almost without warning, the Bay State Mills, together with the selling agents of the mills (the treasurer of the mill being at the head of the selling firm of Lawrence, Stone & Co.), became bankrupt, and news spread that this company, considered one of the most stable, as it was one of the most important of Lawrence enterprises, was insolvent, the stock a drug, confidence gone, hope of recovery lost, financial ruin unavoidable; a great industry, the pride and support of thousands, paralyzed. What wonder there was foreboding, distrust, and bitterness. The poor suffered; the well-to-do were crippled; all watched the fortune of the great mills, elated by any rumor of renewed activity, cast down by every word of discouragement or sign of ill-omen.

Collapse was sudden; recovery gradual. But after two discouraging years of waiting, the great company was re-organized; the wheels moved once more, and, during early years of the war, when disaster came to many manufacturing cities, local mills were profitably run, furnishing immense quantities of goods demanded for army and general use.

During the depression of 1857 and 1858, the generosity of citizens was put to severest test. The city government employed the destitute in turn for short periods on public works. The Provident Association relieved many. Churches had abundant opportunity to practise the prime virtue. Many, in after prosperity, remember that season of trouble as a far-off dream. Examining files of local papers, we find items reluctantly stating that Pemberton Mills were closing up and discharging help; contradicting reports of failure of the Atlantic Mills, announcing that there was a possibility of the Pacific Mills continuing by the favor of creditors.

A Tornado. — From flood and tempest the city has received small injury. In August, 1856, the beginning of a tornado left its mark in the city: "The storm was preceded by a heavy continuous roaring sound resembling distant thunder, for more than an hour. The force of the tornado fell only upon a small area. Its first appearance seemed to be on the mill-pond above the factory of Messrs. Stevens & Sons. The water from the pond was blown in sheets completely over the dike. A small shop was entirely demolished, and a large building, two stories high, was pushed some twelve feet from its foundations. Little other serious damage was done in the city; but, it will be remembered, from the pond in North Andover to the village of Boxford it left fearful footprints in the demolition of buildings, prostration of fences, and uprooting of trees. People waiting in the north passenger depot were startled to see a visible chain of lightning following the rail through the building, during the tempest."

Distinguished Visitors. — Citizens have not been given to hero-worship or lavish praise of celebrities, but have had opportunity to honor the eminent and deserving. Sept. 8, 1849, Theobald Mathew, the distinguished Irish temperance reformer, visited the city and received enthusiastic welcome. Officials, citizens, the public schools and temperance organizations formed in procession on the turnpike from the depot to Canal Street and along the line of the canal.

* It may be cited as a singular fact that, at the time of the fall, the gas-burners were lighted, and nearly one hundred tons of cotton in that condition most liable to be ignited, yet no fire originated from the gas-lights. It is supposed a draught of air through the pipes extinguished all lights, or that pipe-connection was broken at the outset. — *Journal Franklin Institute.*

† In a building so wide, any settling or breaking of centre-supports left the long floor timbers to act as levers upon the walls and remaining supports, and brought them down in the general ruin.

Through the long procession the good man rode, escorted by an imposing cavalcade. He was welcomed by the Rev. Mr. Harrington and made an eloquent response. Hundreds, both Protestant and Catholic, took the pledge.

Thomas Francis Meagher, the Irish patriot, had a most enthusiastic greeting at city hall, in February, 1853. Gen. Henry K. Oliver delivered an address of welcome, and Gen. Meagher a brilliant lecture to a crowded audience.

Col. Thomas H. Benton, for thirty years in the United States Senate, visited the city in December, 1856, addressing citizens at city hall and the scholars at Oliver School. Said Col. Benton, in a public address shortly after this: "All my ideas of New England manufacturers and operatives are reversed by actual visit and inspection." His remedy for the growing tendency to disunion was to send the Northern congressman South, and the Southern congressman North for a part of the year, that they might act from knowledge, not from sectional prejudice.

Gen. George B. McClellan, with his wife, visited the city in the spring of 1863. He was enthusiastically received, and a collation was served in a large hall of the Pacific Mills, where a goodly company collected.

Gen. U. S. Grant, in his Northern tour, August, 1865, accompanied by his family and staff, had an entirely informal but enthusiastic greeting, and a collation at city hall, in the common council room. The company spent the forenoon in inspecting the mills, and left for the east by the Boston and Maine Railroad, refusing to make or hear speeches.

The Chinese Embassy, under direction of Anson Burlingame, a Japanese Embassy, and Russian representatives have also paid visits to the city, and inspected the mills with great interest.

Fenianism in Lawrence. — In 1865 66, active effort, as sincere no doubt as it proved hopeless, was made in aid of the cause of Irish independence by many citizens whose line of descent and unquestioned patriotism make them loyal to the cause of liberty for Ireland, wherever their lot may be cast. The sympathy of many was with these ardent men, the genuineness of whose patriotic zeal was proved in many a battle for their adopted country. Like the crusaders of old, they win our admiration for their spirit and motives, however much we distrust their methods. James Stevens, chief organizer of the Irish Republic, Gen. Halpine, Col. O'Mahoney, and other prominent leaders, addressed monster meetings in city hall, and a fair, attended by thousands, aided the cause. Bonds of the Irish Republic were sold, quite a sum of money raised, and citizens of prominence identified themselves by actual service, and with voice and purse, with the effort. "The Fenians of Lawrence," said Col. O'Mahoney, "are second to none in the whole country for their zeal." The operations, failures, and dissensions of the order, we need not discuss, but note the movement as an event in local history. Two prominent citizens were imprisoned by the English government for their action, and only gained their liberty after romantic and hazardous experiences.

Startling Occurrences. — In November, 1856, the locomotive "Gov. Weare" was in use on the Manchester and Lawrence Railroad. It had been run for several years by Mr. Judkins, engineer. He was assisted, at this time, by young Berry, of Manchester, as fireman. As this engine slowly moved out from the fuel station, just above Haverhill Street, after taking wood and water, the boiler exploded, lifting the locomotive bodily from the track, and leaving it a total ruin. Fragments were thrown for many rods, and both engineer and fireman, inhaling escaping steam, lived but a few days. The engineer was an old and careful mechanic, the accident resulting from corroded iron and from no want of care.

In the fall of 1852, during the Pierce and Scott campaign, while a grand Whig ratification meeting was in progress at city hall, there was a premature discharge of a cannon planted on the blue ledge, rear of the present post-office site. Henry Nelson was almost directly in front of the gun; both hands were blown off, and amputation performed above the elbow. His breast, neck, and face were burned and filled with powder and splinters, yet, strange to say, he rapidly and permanently recovered. J. L. Stevenson lost two fingers from one hand by the same discharge.

In 1865, on the Fourth of July, citizens celebrated, with much enthusiasm, the closing of the war. While firing a salute upon the common, William Sharrock, an experienced young artillery-man, lost both arms by a premature discharge from an imperfect gun. Mr. S. rapidly recovered, and is now in active business, using artificial hands, and writing with his mouth with much neatness.

The phenomenon of "smoke rings," mentioned in late scientific journals, was beautifully illustrated in 1854. A wood-burning locomotive, leaving the Haverhill Street wood and water station, gave off, with sudden puffs and great force, large volumes of black smoke. In the heavy, moist atmosphere, the smoke formed in many distinct rings, which floated slowly away into space, until lost to sight in the distance — a beautiful and an unusual sight.

Feb. 3, 1869, midwinter, there was a violent thunder-storm, of short duration, with very sharp lightning and heavy thunder! House No. 1, Duck Corporation, was damaged by a bolt descending the chimney, startling the people in the lower section of the city. Large balls of lightning were seen in Summer Street a few years since, during a heavy shower, and a house was much damaged by one of them.

Slavery in Lawrence. — A few negroes were held to servitude in Massachusetts, in that dim past, which, when mentioned in story, is spoken of as "once upon a time"; so suffice it to say that "once upon a time," a sturdy farmer's wife, living in that part of Andover now Lawrence, made a journey to Salem on horseback. Salem was then the market, and once or twice each year, the husband, or wife, or both, went shopping to "the port." This good lady astonished the family by bringing, among other purchases, a fine negro boy-baby that she had bought for a trifle, and brought in her arms all the way, over plains and through woods. When the young African cried, she set the family nag into an easy canter, and the little waif went off into dreamland, perhaps the only young resident known to have been rocked to sleep by horse-power. He had not even a name, but the men called him Salem, and the lady's name was Poor, so "Salem Poor" became his name, and Shawsheen fields his habitation. Like "Topsy," he had no knowledge of his birth or ancestry, but he *grew* to stalwart manhood. In the Revolution his master was drafted, or in some way chosen for the army. He sent Salem as a substitute. In one of the closely-drawn battles, the British soldiers seemed likely to overthrow the Yankee forces, and the red-coated commander led a charge, waving his sword, and cheering on the men. Salem, from a shelter, where he was fighting on his own hook, drew a bead upon him, and he fell a corpse, causing confusion among his followers! Salem returned to peaceful life a hero, fell in love with a half-breed Indian woman, was married, and the fruit of union was one son named Jonah. This Jonah became insane, and there were no palaces for insane people in those days, so he was a sort of wanderer in the region. He persisted in swimming the Merrimac again and again, and was seen to stop, throw up his hands, and sink, never more to be seen! Whether swallowed by a great fish, like the older Jonah, or taken with cramp, is not known; but in an old English book, published in 1625, we read that "sturgeon in Merrimac river are sometimes eighteen feet long!" So the former might not be impossible if the old author did not allow distance to lend enchantment to his view, and length to the Merrimac sturgeon.

Old Boise was a full-blooded African, who spent his years of final freedom in South Lawrence. The bridge over the old ferry-road crossing the Shawsheen was known as "Boise's Bridge." He would grow wild when recounting the history of his capture by slavers; and, drawing a huge knife, would make furious attacks upon the trees, thus taking revenge upon an imaginary foe. Cæsar Frye, a negro of American birth, also spent his years of jubilee in the same locality.

In this connection all old citizens will remember the case of the "Slave Betty," brought here by a Southern family in 1856, and Judge Shaw's decision that she was free to return with her master, or claim her freedom, as she might elect. Betty chose to return to the South. The affair caused some excitement at the time. Gov. Andrew appeared as counsel for Betty, or rather for her abolition friends, who longed to pluck one ebony idol from the hand of the Southerner.

CHAPTER XIV.

THE PATRIOTIC RECORD.

MILITARY ORGANIZATIONS — LAWRENCE SOLDIERS IN THE REBELLION — PRESENT HOME ORGANIZATIONS.

"Did you find no hero graves
When your violets bloomed last May—
Prouder than those of Marathon,
Or 'old Platea's day'?"

The ancient record of bravery and patriotic service, so prized in older townships, is meagre in our modern city. Yet, out of the hundred settlers in Lawrence limits, many gave themselves to the cause of liberty in the Revolution and the later war.

As soon as the new settlement grew to the proportions of a town, the Lawrence Light Infantry Company was organized, with Samuel C. Oliver as captain. Made up of active business men in the new town, it was a spirited corps. We cannot follow the history of this company through years of peace. At the outbreak of Rebellion, the organization was known as Company I, 6th Regiment, Massachusetts Volunteers. It is said that some forty officers who served in the war took their first drill in the ranks of this company, including a brigadier-general, and several in important commands.

The Warren Light Guard was a live, well-drilled body of men, formed in 1855. Capt. Jefford M. Decker, a thorough disciplinarian, was first in command, with Col. Jeremiah D. Drew as first lieutenant, and it was afterwards known as Company F, 6th Massachusetts Regiment.

The Lawrence Brass Band, the oldest surviving musical organization of the city, was formed in February, 1849. It is noticeable for the patriotism of its members. Out of eighteen members, in 1861, twelve enlisted in the Union army; and members were in campaigns in Virginia, the Carolinas, Louisiana, and with Sherman on his grand march. D. F. Robinson was for many years leader, and a chief supporter of this band.

The Mechanics Rifles and Bay State Guards were companies having shorter existence, but popular in their time.

As early as January, 1861, officers of the 6th Regiment met at Lowell, and, on motion of a Lawrence officer (Maj. B. Frank Watson), the services of the regiment were tendered to government in case of need, threats of rebellion having startled the patriotic even then. The official order, mustering the regiment on Boston common, was issued April 15, 1861, and, received at night; the two companies were ready to march early the following day, going to Lowell, thence to Boston, and, via New York, Philadelphia, and Baltimore, to Washington. Company I was commanded by Capt. John Pickering, Company F by Capt. B. F. Chadbourne. Lieut. Cate, of Company F, built and took charge of the eight army-ovens in the basement of the Capitol, from which, in the years of the war, immense quantities of bread were supplied to troops. They left Lawrence on a dismal spring day, in a storm of sleet, followed by hundreds to the cars. Their bloody march through Baltimore on the 19th of April; the mortal wounding, and subsequent death in a Baltimore hospital, of a well-known Lawrence volunteer (the first to fall in that first encounter); the wounding of others, and peril of all, made this opening dramatic scene in the war one of irresistible influence, electrifying patriots throughout the entire North. Public feeling was stirred to its depths, excitement was intense, sad and sympathetic interest universal, when Sumner H. Needham, mortally wounded in the streets of Baltimore, lay in city hall, on the 2d and 3d of May following, his lifeless form wrapped in the flag he died defending. The funeral occurred May 3, 1861. The city hall was appropriately draped; hundreds crowded to the doors, when filled to utmost limit. State and city officials attended. Military and civic organizations formed the imposing procession, marching to solemn dirges, as this first victim to rebellion thus went to his rest. Clergymen of the city joined in the impressive service. The Rev. George S. Weaver, of the Church of the Good Shepherd, preached from the words (Heb. xi. 4) *He being dead yet speaketh.*

The blood of this martyr proved "the seed of a harvest." The entire section was aroused; thereafter there was no lack of patriotism. Before any system of State aid to families of volunteers had been devised, the city voted and disbursed needed sums. Promptness and patriotic work characterized municipal and individual action. The number of volunteers and soldiers enrolled as of Lawrence was 2,620, counting re-enlistments. The city paid $83,675 in local bounties, and was exceptionally prompt and liberal in organizing systems of relief for soldiers, sailors, and their families. The Ladies' Soldiers' Aid Society was formed April 7, 1862, and was an efficient auxiliary to the Sanitary and Christian commissions, disbursing, through those societies, and the city missionary, nearly six thousand dollars in money, and large quantities of hospital stores and clothing.

Citizens in public meetings, at the very outset, before more sluggish communities woke to the emergency, took radical action. In the administrations of mayors, — James K. Barker, in 1861; William H. P. Wright, in 1862–63; Alfred J. French, in 1864; and Milton Bonney, in 1865, — the public record was not allowed to be marred by a single tardy response to the nation's call for men or means.

The horrors of rebel prison life were experienced by many. It is believed the record of volunteers, who went forth at their country's call, is a stainless one. Graves of brave men who died that the country might live, are kept green in the cemeteries of the city, and here, as elsewhere, surviving comrades visit them each year, laden with flowers, which they tenderly strew upon graves where

"Under the sod and the dew,
Waiting the judgment day—"

the martyrs rest from march and strife and battle storm.

Needham Post, No. 49, Grand Army of the Republic, is a flourishing organization, succeeding the Needham Army and Navy Union. At spirited "camp-fires," comrades keep alive memories of struggle and hardship in days of strife, and material and timely aid is given to sick and disabled comrades from an accumulated fund. Lawrence Light Infantry (Company I, 6th Regiment, Capt. Daniel F. Dolan), and the Sherman Cadets (Company K, 6th Regiment, Capt. L. N. Duchesney) are finely drilled military companies. The headquarters of the 6th Regiment (Col. Melvin Beal), and of the 1st Battalion of Light Artillery (Major George S. Merrill) are established at Lawrence. Some future historian, in space more ample than that allotted here for all the phases of Lawrence life, will do justice to the memory of the brave volunteers who died at posts of peril, and render an eloquent tribute to the living soldier who risked all for his country, and returned to quiet pursuits, often with wounds and physical weakness, the result of long marches and perilous exposure. The allotted pages are full. Our parting with the reader is by the dead soldier's grave and in the living soldier's presence.

L Y N N .

The city of Lynn, though now one of the largest municipalities of Essex County, only represents a fraction of the territory originally settled and bearing this name. It does, however, include most of the points of early settlement, and a large share of what antiquities it has are found within the present incorporation.

The original territory bearing the name of Lynn certainly embraced all that now forms the several townships of Lynnfield, Saugus, Swampscott, and Nahant, besides all of the present city. These towns have been successively divided from it. By a supplementary grant, also, made Sept. 9, 1639, the territory now forming Reading, North Reading, and Wakefield, was added to the first township, under the name of Lynn Village. It embraced a tract four miles square. But March 17, 1653, the first authorized division of Lynn seems to have been made, resulting in the separation of this same territory, to form a new town, called Reading; and as nearly as can now be known, the line of this division coincided closely with the present boundary of Wakefield and Lynnfield.

The time of first settlement of Lynn is fixed by Lewis in his history, partly from private records, and partly from "Danforth's Almanac," 1647. These agree on the year 1629 as that of first occupation, and there seems no doubt on the point. This was one year later than Salem, and one year earlier than Boston, and places our town among the very oldest of the settlements of Massachusetts. But of what the settlement consisted, we have a less definite idea. So far as can be determined, it was made by five men, with their families, who, arriving at Salem in the spring of 1629, made application to Endicott for a grant of lands, and were given "leave to go where they would." These five were Edmund Ingalls, Francis Ingalls, John Wood, William Wood, and William Dixey. The last-named testified to these facts July 1, 1657.

Coming then to a territory only tenanted by the Indians, these five pioneers found nothing ready, but all things to be supplied. They selected what one of them called "a fayre playne," not half a mile broad, and thereon set up their temporary dwellings. Where this spot was cannot be told: one such may now be pointed out about the crossing of Essex and Empire streets, nearly equidistant from what we know to have been the subsequent homes of these men, and this may have been the place; but no one will ever know. The sagamores of Saugus, as the Indians here were known, patronized the settlers kindly, and, granting them whatever lands they desired, added the privilege of pasturage on Nahant, which was thus enjoyed for many years, and even, in fact, to this day.

Even in this very small band of emigrants, there was the usual diversity. Edmund Ingalls and John Wood were farmers — men of the soil. William Dixey was a laborer. Francis Ingalls, who alone seems to have had a trade, was a tanner. And William Wood, who had some education, was decidedly literary in his tastes, and wrote a book about the settlement before he had been five years in it. This work, which he published in London in 1634, covered one hundred pages, and was called "New England's Prospect." It was a favorable account of the settlements — one of the best and fairest of that time. It was a creditable thing indeed, and has remained good quotable authority till this day, showing the advantage of having a share of culture, at least, to go with every enterprise.

The settlers did not remain very long on their little plain. Supposing it to have been the place we have indicated, John Wood pushed westward about a mile, and fixed his permanent homestead near the present intersection of Essex and Chestnut streets. William Wood is conjectured to have been his son; if so, he probably lived with him. At any rate, he had no family of his own then with him, as Aug. 15, 1633, he returned to England, and afterward, Sept. 11, 1635, again repaired to Lynn, then being but twenty-seven years old, and bringing Elizabeth, his wife, aged twenty-four. At a later date, in 1637, he removed, with another larger colony, and settled at Sandwich, after which we lose sight of him. His father, John Wood, gives no sign of being a man of adventure. He evidently stayed quietly at work on his land, of which he had acquired one hundred acres in his own right by the allotment of 1638. He is believed to have been a man of substance and character, since his influence served to impress his name on that section of the town which, even to-day, is known as "Woodend."

Edmund Ingalls turned to the south-west, and, at a distance also of about a mile, selected a situation remarkable for its undulating surface. Immediately before him lay a small natural pond, known at present as the "Goldfish Pond," and the distance to the farmstead of the Woods was only a mile, or something less. He lived on this estate a number of years, or until 1648, when, riding over the ruinous bridge at what is now East Saugus, horse and man fell through, and the venerable settler was drowned. Under a law then existing, his heirs recovered £100 from the General Court for this bereavement and damage. He left many descendants; and these, with those of his brother, form one of the most worthy families of Lynn at the present day.

Francis Ingalls, the tanner, was attracted by the pleasant streams of water that ran south-eastward from the little plain; and hence, going in that direction rather less than a mile, he planted his feet where the brook now crosses Burrill Street in Swampscott. Here he not only improved his land, but established a tannery as well, which was the first one ever undertaken in the country, or, at least, in New England. It is very probable that he carried on this business quite steadily, and others after him; for Lewis assures us that the vats lasted till 1825, when the remnants were taken up, and he himself saw and examined them. This brother also left a large family, of whom many yet remain.

William Dixey, the remaining man of the party, appears not to have located anywhere in a permanent way. Indeed, he did not long remain with the Lynn settlers; but having been previously a servant, or employee, of Isaac Johnson, of Salem, he in a few years returned thither, and obtained the keeping of the ferry-boat across the North River. He finally died in Salem in 1690, aged eighty-two.

This will suffice to identify the nucleus of the settlement that afterward grew so favorably. Around the homestead of each of these three was destined to arise a prosperous and populous neighborhood, doing continual honor in later times to the good judgment of those who at first chose out so fit and comely a location. We will pursue the personal list somewhat further, with a view to exhibit the origin of those families that are now prominent in the place. This will be sufficient; for there were, of course, many persons found in the settlement, from time to time, who soon disappeared, and of whom no present trace remains. Such will not be noticed.

In 1630, the next year after the Woods and Ingallses arrived, a large number of new settlers appeared. Eleven ships had cleared at Southampton, with 1,700 passengers for New England. It would have been strange, indeed, if none had been received at Lynn. Among those who did come, we remark the following: —

Joseph Armitage, said to have located on North Common Street, between Park and Mall. He was a tailor, and seems not to have held much land; but he soon interested himself in other things of use, and owned some time after a corn-mill on Saugus River. He also has the distinction of establishing the first public house in town, which he opened in a capacious dwelling on the western border of the present village of East Saugus, near the head of Lincoln Avenue. It was called the Anchor, and remained as an open tavern for two centuries, or more. For these and similar reasons he is to be well remembered, though his family have long since wholly disappeared.

Allen Breed is to be noticed for a different reason. He took up his habitation still further west, and settled near the present crossing of Summer Street and Western Avenue. Being, like most of the others, a farmer, he found the lands of that vicinity highly favorable to his use, and he stayed and ended his days upon them. He must have been energetic, since the allotment of 1638 gave him 200 acres, which was, very likely, in addition to what he had already improved, as was certainly the method of distribution practised more lately. At any rate Mr. Breed was a man of thrift, who, like John Wood, could stamp his

image on the very neighborhood; for in his honor, too, has this section borne the name of "Breed's End" from that day to this. His immediate family consisted of but four sons; yet the descendants beyond them became extremely numerous, so that in 1825 there were more of this name in Lynn than of any other, with one single exception.

George Burrill selected a situation yet more to the west, locating on the western declivity of Tower Hill, not far from the opening of Summer Street. If the family of Allen Breed has been distinguished here for numbers, the descendants of George Burrill have held a leading position in many other important respects. He was one of the richest of the first men, and we may almost reverse this, and say he was the first rich man here. He had but three children; yet from them descended so able and enterprising a progeny, that the Burrills long went by the name of the royal family of Lynn. The third son of George, named John, had two sons who attained to important dignities in the State. The first was also called John, and became, perhaps, the most eminent man in the settlement. He was twenty-two years a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, ten years the highly honored Speaker of the same, two years or more in the Governor's Council, and thirty-one years town clerk of Lynn. His younger brother, Ebenezer, was very eminent at a rather later day, and was generally known as "Hon. Ebenezer." His residence, according to Judge Newhall, was in Swampscott, on the present grounds of Enoch R. Mudge, Esq. Other offspring of George Burrill betrayed the like tendency to elevation, a daughter being the grandmother of Hon. Timothy Pickering, the friend of Washington. James Burrill, LL. D., of Rhode Island, who was chief justice of the Supreme Court in 1816, and also United States Senator, was another worthy descendant. A limited number of this family still remain in Lynn; but none seem to keep up the prominence and distinction that belonged to their ancestors.

John Bancroft did not dwell very long in Lynn, dying in 1637; yet he left two sons, from whom has sprung a continuous lineage, discoverable in almost all parts of the old township to-day. The principal seat of the Bancrofts has always been in Lynnfield; yet one or more branches have passed down, and mingled in the diverse multitude of the city proper, where many of the name may be found. Hon. George Bancroft, the historian, is from this stock. Another, less illustrious, but, perhaps, not less worthy, Thomas F. Bancroft, Esq., of Lynn, fell a victim in the terrible railroad slaughter at Revere, Mass., Aug. 26, 1871.

Thomas Chadwell was a farmer, and set himself down on what is now Summer Street, somewhat to the eastward of the homestead of Allen Breed. His family are yet well represented in the same section, and have always distinguished themselves for patriotic disposition. Harris Chadwell was a lieutenant of militia in 1775, shared in the battle of Lexington, and afterwards commanded a force of minute-men for home defence. William Chadwell was a deputy-sheriff for Essex about 1830, and performed various difficult and trying duties. Harris O. Chadwell, Esq., still living, has filled a great variety of municipal offices, and been one or more times a member of the Legislature.

Thomas Dexter was also a farmer, and rich. He dwelt in what is now Saugus Centre, where he built a mill, and made other improvements. There is a famous story of his buying Nahant from the Indians for a suit of clothes, which may or may not be authentic. At all events his enterprises cost the town many lawsuits, and he was esteemed more active than agreeable. He was concerned in a new settlement at Sandwich in 1637, and finally removed to that place, or some other, and the family wholly disappeared from Lynn.

Samuel Graves has the honor of planting one of the pleasantest villages of Lynn; namely, that lying on the southerly border of Flax Pond. His homestead was probably just where the village church now stands, at the corner of Chestnut and Maple streets. His liberality is mentioned, he having made a donation to the Colony, in 1635, of £300. From him the village was for two centuries called Gravesend, and this name should never be changed, though latterly an effort has been made to do so.

Adam Hawkes established himself in the north-western part of the township, originating what is now the north ward of Saugus. Personally, he is chiefly known as having owned the land on which the ore for the iron-works was mined. He left several children, from whom have descended an abundant progeny, who are met with in various walks of life in Lynn. Nathan Mortimer Hawkes, Esq., has long been one of the justices of police court, and has filled other important places. Others, residents of the town of Saugus, where the family has mostly remained, have stood before their fellows in many honorable ways.

Edward Holyoke was another of the early farmers, owning 500 acres; besides which, probably, he had all the western side of Sagamore Hill, where Beach, Newhall, and Sagamore streets now run. He died May 4, 1660, and his descendents appear to have all left Lynn very early, none being here now. But they have proved a notable family. Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, of Salem, died March 31, 1830, more than a hundred years of age. The only son of this first Edward, named Elizur, became a very enterprising and useful man. He explored the wilds of the Connecticut River, and from him were named, first, the charming mountain on its east side, and, second, the township in its vicinity. A son of this Elizur was president of Harvard College. But a retired street in Lynn, with a fine spring near by, are the only mementoes of the first settler.

Thomas Newhall, another farmer, had his possession near the Common, with the entire frontage on the east side of Federal Street, which was one of the earliest opened ways. The spot of the old homestead can yet be identified. To him were born two sons: John, native of England, and Thomas, whose birth was within a year of arrival, and who was notable as the first white child born in Lynn. This second Thomas was married in 1652, and buried April 1, 1687, having buried his wife February 22d, preceding. This man, in his not very long life, laid the foundation of the most numerous, and perhaps important, family in Lynn. Certainly, until within a few years, they have exceeded in number every other name among us, if, indeed, they be not thus distinguished even now. They have always been active, thrifty, and aspiring. A few of the more eminent among the descendants may be named here; but the extensive list cannot be far pursued. Jacob, known as "Landlord Newhall," kept the Armitage Tavern, in Saugus, for many years, entertaining many people of distinction, Washington included. Of his offspring were Benjamin F. Newhall, a learned and wealthy man, who was the historian of his town, and filled many important offices. So was the Rev. Fales H. Newhall, one of the brightest minds in the Methodist connection. In Lynnfield, we remark Hon. Asa T. Newhall, member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, and Gen. Josiah Newhall, a man of fine cultivation, and noted patron of agricultural science. For the city proper, we have had Hons. Josiah Newhall and Francis S. Newhall, State Senators; Isaac Newhall, author of a work on the identity of Junius; Hon. Thomas B. Newhall, first justice of police court here; Hon. James R. Newhall, his successor in that office, and also re-editor of Lewis's History of Lynn, as well as author of many other works.

John Ramsdell is to be named among the first farmers, and as having founded an extensive family, which still remains.

Edward Richards is similarly remembered. He owned the eastern side of Sagamore Hill, as Edward Holyoke did the western. But his house was on Essex Street, much further to the east. He has worthy progeny in Lynn at the present day.

Edward Tomlins, a carpenter by his calling, and a captain and military man by his taste, was one of the most important men who ever dwelt in Lynn, yet no descendant stands as his memorial here to-day. He six times represented the town in the General Court; and eight years after his arrival was to be found in the ranks of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. Lewis asserts that he built the first mill in Lynn, in 1633, and that it stood at the mouth of Strawberry Brook. But Judge Newhall controverts this opinion at length, averring that the Tomlins Mill was on Water Hill, and the other was not built till 1655. Hereafter we shall somewhat farther speak of this matter. Capt. Tomlins is mentioned here in 1643 as clerk of the writs; but as to his later days little or nothing seems to be known. He had a brother, Timothy, who was a noted man in the settlement; thirteen times in the General Court, and still commemorated in an important water source among the hills, called Tomlins's Swamp.

Thomas Willis should not be passed unnoticed. He settled on the eminence now called Tower Hill, near where the city almshouse at present stands; the spot was some time known as Willis's Hill, from him. Judge Newhall cannot understand why the hill should have been so named; but there seems no difficulty about it. Mr. Willis was a man of consequence, to be sent with Capt. Tomlins and Capt. Turner in the first representative delegation to the General Court, in 1634; and in 1638, he had 500 acres of land granted him, being first named on the list, with a larger share than any other, save Edward Holyoke and Edward Howell. The disposition to localize the names of prominent men was very strong in those days; and there is every probability that Lewis has stated this thing correctly. There is

ground for the belief that this Thomas was ancestor of John Willis, who was a soldier of the Revolution, and lived on the street now called North Bend. If so, he was, likewise as is understood, of Nathaniel Willis, the publisher, of Boston, and thence of N. P. Willis and "Fanny Fern."

At the close of 1630, the settlement at Lynn (which, however, had not then been so called, but was known as Saugus) contained, probably, not far from one hundred persons. They had located very variously, just as people naturally would who sought the interests of agriculture before all other considerations. As to distance, it was, in a straight line from Francis Ingalls, northwesterly, to Adam Hawkes, nearly six miles; and this was the greatest expanse of the settlement, unless, possibly, the Bancrofts had then a place at Lynnfield. All the others were nearer together. It will have been noticed that they were almost exclusively farmers; only a very few tradesmen appearing, and no attempt being made to provide any market-place, or create any particular centre for the town. They, like the majority of the early New Englanders, occupied themselves with getting a living, and thought it quite enough if they could succeed. They were exceedingly primitive in their arrangements, contenting themselves for some time with houses that were only pits in the earth, six or seven feet deep, lined up with split logs, and roofed with poles covered with bark. Suitable openings were left to admit light and allow the escape of smoke. Afterward, and among the abler class, frame houses came to be built, of which a few have lasted till within a few years. But it is doubtful if there was a good substantial house in Lynn before 1650, or perhaps even later.

No definite allotment of land was made till 1638. Prior to this, each man took what he could improve, and it became his own. At the back of the settlement lay unexplored forests, and from these the fuel was cut by all the townsmen in common; but for the grass, which grew spontaneously on the meadows and marshes, Lewis asserts that a different method was taken, and that the hay was distributed by lot. It is not quite clear how this is to be understood, nor is any authority given for the statement. There must have been, certainly at first, plenty of hay for all; but no doubt it differed in quality, and they may have been in the habit of drawing for choice of parcels. The domestic life of these early people was, moreover, of the plainest sort, resembling, doubtless, in general, what they had led in England; but always, it seems, with strict watchfulness for the exemplifying and inculcating of what they held for the greatest of truth, and meant that their children should do so after them. It would, however, be wrong to attribute any excess of moral purity to the little population. Very soon, after the needs of hunger are provided against, and the danger from enemies found to be only small, we see the common vices of that day cropping out here and there as readily as among others; though with this difference, that the public sentiment and discipline of the time dragged all such forth and punished them openly.

Some controversy has been had as to the real time of incorporation of the planters of Lynn. Lewis makes the very pertinent observation, that inasmuch as no special acts were passed for the incorporation of any of the early towns, the admission of the freemen of any place to sit in the General Court was itself an acknowledgment of the same thing. He further asserts that this was done for Lynn (Saugus) in 1630. But in all his preceding enumeration, which may be supposed complete for this purpose, he fails to show more than a single freeman admitted till 1631, and then, only two or three. John Taylor, of whom we know little further, is said to have been admitted Oct. 19, 1630. There may have been others, but certainly all we know as prominent townsmen were admitted later. Perhaps, however, one was as good as more, and Saugus became an embodied reality in the person of John Taylor.

At this stage, then, we perceive a small town, or rather village, of about a hundred scattered inhabitants, established about the open lands that bordered the courses of Saugus River and Strawberry and Stacy's brooks. Forests were everywhere. All the present Highlands, all the common but a part of the north side, the whole of Boston Street, or nearly so, all but a little of Saugus and Swampscott, and everything south of the common but a bit of Summer Street — all these were included in the densest woods. There is the best of reason for supposing that much that is now salt marsh was then low upland, and covered with heavy trees. But where the principal watercourses ran, more or less open meadow was found; and this, with the natural glades in the forest, and the clearings effected by the immigrants, constituted what farms there were at this date.

But of neighbors there was no lack. In this, as in all like cases, a great deal has been said and written of the Indians, both in praise and discredit. It is most probable that the early authors were more censorious of the unfortunate race than they should have been, while it is even more certain that the moderns have exaggerated more grossly the other way. Lewis has devoted himself to the immortalizing of the Indians about Lynn in terms more befitting a work of romance than a veracious history; and Judge Newhall has very properly and pointedly reproved the poetic style of some of his warm expressions by clear and well-put suggestions. As to the Indians themselves, it would seem that they were much as all others of that race, neither better nor worse. For the most part, they seem to have been not ill-disposed towards the settlers, yet there were exceptions to this. The more influential appear to have been quite accommodating; yet it is always a fair question whether this temper was not largely traceable to natural indolence, and an ignorant hope of valuable favor to be received in return.

The substance of all the Indian history that concerns the present sketch may be stated as follows: A certain chief, called Nanapashemet, was found by the first settlers dwelling near Mystic River, and holding a dominant influence over the tribes as far east as the Merrimac. He had three sons, variously located, and acting in some sense as his viceroys. The oldest dwelt at Medford; was called Wonohaquaham, or, in English, John, and is described as good and gentle, which, probably, meant little more than lazy. The second, established on Sagamore Hill, was named Montowampate, or James, by the whites, and was considered less well-disposed. The third bore the name of Wenepoykin, alias George, and was at first at Salem. Afterward, his brothers both dying in 1633, he succeeded to the whole dominion; and thus is the man in nearest relation to the new-comers from beyond sea. From him, or his family, in later days, were obtained nearly all the grants, rights, and concessions that our fathers ever procured from the Indians. The following family, however, were of intimate connection and consequence: —

At Nahant lived an old Indian, recognized as under-chief, or "sachem," of that locality. He was called Poquanum, conceived to mean "Dark Skin," and having gained from the first settlers the nickname "Duke William," soon found it shortened and lowered to "Black Will." He is supposed to have been the Indian in English clothes who boarded the vessel of Gosnold in 1602, and he is surely the one who traded all Nahant to Thomas Dexter for a suit of a similar pattern. The chief had a daughter, Ahawayet, or Joan, who at length married Wenepoykin, above named, and had one son and three daughters. The son was named Manatahqua, and the daughters, waiving their shocking Indian titles, came respectively to be called Cicely, Sarah, and Susanna. The son ultimately married, and, dying, left two sons, called David and Samuel.

Not far from 1675, the settlers had too fully occupied the seaboard to leave much room or comfort for the Indians, and the family of Wenepoykin, who had just been taken prisoner in the war with the Wampanoags, emigrated to the Merrimac Valley, and settled near Lowell. In 1684, the captive, Wenepoykin, finally died, and as he, from his scant friendship for the whites, had always been a bar to negotiations, so they were now only too ready to act on his departure, and secure conveyances and releases from his family of all the territory they were then occupying.

Accordingly, Sept. 16, 1684, the people of Marblehead obtained a deed of quitclaim from the Indians of all their township. Their example was followed by the Salem men, Oct. 11, 1686, they being somewhat more deliberate. Lynn went and did likewise, selecting a middle position in time, and effecting their purchase on the 4th of September previous. Judge Newhall gives the entire text of the deed, — a paper of immense length and barbarous construction. The small practical value of such a document will appear from a few considerations. First, all the Indians, or nearly so, had been totally dispossessed of these same lands, and could not have re-occupied them if they would. Second, they had never been other than a wandering people, not well located, and really recognizing no such title as they were asked to convey. Third, they had no defined boundaries, and not an Indian knew where his land ended, and another's began, nor, by consequence, how much or what he could sell. Add to this, that they had no conscience in these things; and any one of them, for a quart of rum, or a showy blanket, could be brought to sign any deed, or any other paper. The same disabilities apply to those who were cited as parol witnesses to prove the right of the grantors to convey. Thus, it easily appears that, while the Indian deeds may have been the best thing obtainable, their intrinsic value as conveyances was in no way comparable to that of ours.

The deed of Lynn, executed Sept. 4, 1686, was signed by David,

grandson of Wenepoykin, by his father's sister, Cicely, and by James Quonopahit, who was first cousin of Cicely, being the son of her father's sister, Yawata. The wives of David and James also joined to convey, probably because they were so directed. Certain other Indians; viz., Queakussen, brother of Wenepoykin's wife, also Nahanton, and Waboquin, of whom we know little, made depositions to the effect that the others were true relatives and heirs of Wenepoykin, and fully entitled to sell and convey, both as to the lands of Lynn and those of Salem. And this, in short, is the story of the bargain and sale of this township from the degraded savages, who held it by occupation. The consideration in the deed was about seventy-three dollars.

It is neither necessary nor useful to say more of the relations of the Indians to the early settlers. They were a people who claimed attention only by their presence and the immediate work of their hands. They left nothing behind them to commemorate either their ingenuity or their industry. When the Indian himself was gone, all evidence of him was gone likewise, save the possible fragments of his weapons, a few valueless trinkets, or, here and there, a shallow grave, too easily robbed of the bones of some ancestor. Now, after two centuries, the only knowledge we have of them, save history, is comprised in a moderate-sized "shell-bed," or camp-ground, in the Highlands, near Bay View Avenue, one skeleton exhumed in Liberty Street, one in Lowell Street, and two or three elsewhere, and a scanty parcel of arrow-heads and bits of wampum, collected near Cliftondale, at Bass Rock, about Swampscott, and elsewhere. No city-wall, no fort nor earthwork, no stone nor monument nor inscription, — nothing that may endure as a work of their creative art is left on the face of all this broad country to attest the former might and being of that strange people of whom history tells, but whose visible signs have all forever vanished.

LYNN AS TOWN, 1630 TO 1850.

The settlement at "Saugus" being now wholly in view, in both its elements of native and immigrant population, it remains to recall the progress of its development from this forward, as it gradually grew from a scattered hamlet of a hundred up to whatever it may have been at any subsequent time. Such a panoramic view may, of course, be taken in many different lights, — the religion, the industry, agriculture, and education of a place all deserve consideration. But, as the most prominent and demanding of these aspects, though not perhaps the most important, the political advancement is entitled to, and will receive, first notice.

It has already been admitted that, probably, one or more freemen of Lynn sat in the General Court of 1630, giving the place an equal standing with others in the Colony. But the average course of human life is well illustrated in the next fact that appears, which is, that in 1633, the inevitable element of taxation was introduced, and, out of a levy of £384 on the eight towns of the Colony, Lynn was set down for £36, or almost ten per cent. of the whole. Salem paid but £28, and in several cases afterward came off more lightly than her neighbor. The same shrewdness on one side, and want of it on the other, has been often since apparent. This seems the first tax for general purposes; but Lynn had paid, in 1631, toward an assessment to open a canal from Charles River to Cambridge.

In the next year, a remarkable change was effected in the form of government, in which Lynn had a prominent share. The General Court had been almost a democracy, all freemen, or constituted voters, being entitled to place. But this drew off every season more and more of the best men from the plantation, leaving it in more or less danger, and, besides, made a Legislature of increasing bulk and cumbrousness. It was, therefore, decided to depart still further from the pure democratic plan, and a government of purely representative form was organized in 1634. The delegation from Lynn to this first Legislature included three members; and the names thus primarily honored were those of Nathaniel Turner, Edward Tomlins, and Thomas Willis.

From this decisive beginning, the outgrowth of what we now call American ideas was both natural and rapid. The new General Court having resolved, March 3, 1636, that each town should have power to regulate its own affairs, thus carrying the Republic, in spirit, down to the very hearths of the people; it was also resolved that each town should choose not more than seven "prudential men," to manage municipal business. Here we find the origin of the board of selectmen, since adopted as the universal form of town government throughout New England. Lynn kept up to the maximum number of seven till 1755. After this, the number varied, three, five, or seven, as it happened. The peculiar office of tythingman was created about this time. It seems to have had nothing to do with the collection of tithes or religious offerings, but to have been named from the supervision of each being over ten families, whom they were directed to hold to good behavior. Lynn has always appointed these latter officers till within a very few years.

The next movement we notice is in the judicial department. The quarterly court was created, located in Salem, and empowered with the jurisdiction of cases too small to engage the attention of the General Court. This court had a chief justice, and several associates, commissioned by the General Court, from the freemen of the towns. Here, again, we find Nathaniel Turner and John Humfrey. By this time, the town had been increased by the arrival of some thirty new families, mostly arriving in 1635. The population must now have been rather more than 200.

Naturally, again, beyond all these peaceful deliberations and contrivances, comes war. These settlements had been spared this affliction hitherto, though they might have known they could not always be so; yet now, June 16, 1636, Gov. Vane issued his proclamation against the Pequots, in retaliation for outrages committed. Nathaniel Turner again took the lead, in a new character this time, and from being representative and county judge, passed on to a captaincy of volunteers, of which four companies formed the expedition. These having returned in September without subduing the enemy, a second expedition was raised the next spring, April 18, 1637, of 175 men, of which Lynn contributed twenty-one, a larger quota than any other town save Boston, which sent twenty-six. This was the force commanded by Stoughton, and who arrived, three days too late, when the fort of Sassacus had been stormed by the Connecticut soldiers, and more than 600 Indians put to the sword in cold blood. The Lynn troops returned August 26th. By this time, the fear of the Indians had seriously grown upon the settlers, the Tarratines, or eastern Indians, having actually made some hostile approaches in 1631; and now John Humfrey, Esq., wrote a letter of counsel to Gov. Winthrop, couched in the unmanly court dialect, advising as to further and better defences against the savages.

The year 1637 is one of mark in this history, as being the time when the town, by authority, received its present name.

The first definite "town meeting," save one, hardly identifiable, in 1633, is noted in 1637, when a committee were chosen to "lay out ffarmes." Whether such assemblies had been regularly had before is uncertain. Lewis says something of the kind was held every three months, but this is probably more traditionary than of record. At this time, the affairs of the settlement were apparently very flourishing, and there were more accessions to its numbers than at any other date for many years. Between this and the close of 1640, we hear of sixty or seventy new families, some being of the greatest consequence to the young town, and commemorated in a large posterity to-day.

In 1641–42, very much alarm spread about, lest the Indians should fall upon the settlement unawares, and carry out their threat of extermination. The meeting-house was voted to be used for a watch-house, and it also seems that several other buildings were similarly devoted. In 1642, especially, the watch was kept all night, and no blacksmith had liberty to do any other work till all the arms were put in repair. A place in the forest, about eighty rods west of the present boundary of Lynn and Saugus, was selected, and a "garrison-house" of two buildings erected, one for the soldiers, and the other for non-combatants. The place is yet easily identified; a chimney-bottom appears, also a vestige of a cellar, and the remains of what may have been a considerable earthwork, with a trench in front. But it hardly seems as if these quarters were ever occupied.

After this, the enterprise of the town very much diminished, though not from any apparent cause. A large number of the more wealthy and influential moved away, and left the plantation so much enfeebled that the selectmen petitioned the General Court for an abatement of taxes. The matter was considered, and the share of Lynn comfortably reduced. This was in 1645. From this time, very little of note appears in regard to the place, till 1675, when, with all the rest of New England, the people of Lynn were stirred by the great war, which Philip of the Wampanoags brought that year, for the death and destruction of everything that could be called white. There was then one company of militia at Lynn, with Thomas Marshall, captain, Oliver Purchis, lieutenant, and John Fuller, ensign. It would seem that this company did duty in the campaign; at any rate, a re-enforcement, or new draft, was made here, Nov. 13, 1675, by which fifteen men were impressed for service against Philip. These were as follows: Thomas

Baker, Robert Driver, Job Farrington, Samuel Graves, Isaac Hart, Daniel Hitchens, Nicholas Hitchens, John Lindsey, Jonathan Loeke, Charles Phillips, Samuel Rhodes, Henry Stacey, Samuel Tarbox, Andrew Townsend, Isaac Wellman.

In the fight at Bloody Brook, by Lothrop's command, Lynn had two men killed; viz., Solomon Alley and Benjamin Farwell. In the subsequent engagement at South Kingston, R. I., Dec. 19, 1675, and known as the "Great Swamp Fight," we had Ephraim Newhall, killed, and Andrew Townsend, wounded. The war continued through 1676 and 1677, as we have local proof in the record that Teague, or Thaddeus, Braun, was impressed, at Lynn, June 22, 1677, and killed in the fight at Black Point, just seven days after.

In 1680, the military spirit accomplished the formation of a new troop, which may have been cavalry. The officers were Richard Walker, captain, Ralph King, lieutenant, John Lewis, cornet, and William Basset, quartermaster. Five years later than this, twenty-five inhabitants of Lynn, joining with some from elsewhere, memorialized the General Court that they had been soldiers in Philip's war, and rendered service, thus far unrewarded. They asked for a compensation in land, somewhere in the conquered region. They gained good audience, and obtained a tract eight miles square, in Worcester County, "on condition that thirty families, and an orthodox minister, should settle there within four years." This was about the conclusion of the Wampanoag War, so far as Lynn was concerned.

It has already been stated, that in the next year, 1686, a final deed was procured from the Indians, of the whole territory of the town. It seems the money was not exactly ready to pay for it when delivered, and the method taken to raise it was rather curious. Next year, Feb. 15, 1687, the selectmen were ordered to look up all encroachments by the inhabitants upon lands of the town, and make the people pay for all they had thus "squatted" upon, so that the money might be raised to pay to the first proprietors for the same land. Thus the town commenced acquaintance with debt very early.

But no sooner had the settlers seen Philip, Sassacus, and the Indians of the south-west comfortably disposed of, than danger to them broke out from fresh quarters. It would have been enough, had the new war with the Indians at the East been all which broke out in 1688, under the fomenting influence of Castine and his followers; for a company was impressed directly at Lynn, and sent into the eastern wilderness in the middle of winter, where they had a long and painful service, and one of them, Joseph Ramsdell, was killed at Casco Bay, in 1690. This would have been enough for the not very vigorous town; but the outrages of Andros, the English Governor of Massachusetts, had precipitated that very war, and his like atrocity of spirit soon grew to a greater danger to liberty, even here at home. Lynn was destined to have rather a close encounter. Feb. 3, 1688, Edward Randolph, secretary to Andros, having petitioned the governor and council for a grant of Nahant to him, personally, an order of notice was issued, appointing a hearing on the 7th of March. The town met on the 5th, and remonstrated. It was done by the best men we had; Thomas Laughton, Ralph King, John Lewis, Oliver Purchis, John Burrill, Edward Richards, and John Fuller; and they appear to have made a good case for the rights of the town. But Randolph persisted, and the town rejoined by a memorial, signed by seventy-four chief inhabitants, in which they made a counter application for a patent of Nahant to themselves, instead of Randolph. What the issue of the curious controversy might have been will never appear; for the collateral abuses and usurpations of Andros had already so exasperated the people of Boston, that April 19, 1689, they rose up and put the tyrannical governor in prison, where they kept him till they sent him back to England. In such a demonstration, Lynn could hardly have been spared. Her men were there in force, about eleven o'clock, A.M., with Parson Jeremiah Shepard at their head, "like so many wild bears," says a paper of the time, probably written by Randolph himself. The government of Andros was practically broken up, and the possession of Nahant remained safe enough thereafter; but the people responded more than readily to the invitation of the Committee of Safety for Essex County, and filed a long official statement of their grievances, under the hand of Oliver Purchis, town clerk. The document was fortified by a deposition, forcibly drawn, to the same effect, and signed by Jeremiah Shepard and John Burrill. This seems about the last of the matter.

All this time, we notice the same vigilance in the internal police of the place that prompted the resistance to a despotic governor. The town directed that every freeman who did not attend town-meeting should be prosecuted; that every stranger should be "warned out of town," lest he might become poor, and chargeable; and that nobody should molest the wild-fowl in the harbor, with a score of other such regulations. Thus things went quietly on, at least so far as political conditions were affected, till 1704, when "Queen Anne's War" with the French and Indians called out more soldiers from Lynn, several of whom were taken prisoners. But we are told of no deaths among them.

The year 1703 is notable for the last great division of all the common lands belonging to the town. April 15th, the town created a commission; viz., Samuel Gardner, of Salem, John Greenland, of Malden, and Joseph Hasey, of Chelsea (then called Rumneymarsh), and empowered them to survey, divide, and apportion all the public lands, except the present common, among the inhabitants who already had lands of their own under cultivation. Who these men were, or what record of their work may have disappeared, we cannot tell; but their report to the town, made Jan. 1, 1706–07, consists merely of a recitation of the rules under which the division was made, and under which the lands were to be held, together with a full list of proprietors, and the quantity allotted to each. But there is no plan, no reference to bearing and distance, no mention of monuments, nor indication of any survey of any description. The whole, since that time, has rested on tradition, except so far as quantity is concerned, and this tradition has gradually narrowed, till no one man knows the whole scheme; and only one survives, now very old, who has any considerable knowledge of these original and very important locations. Yet thousands of acres of valuable lands here are to-day held by no better title, the whole of Nahant being thus included.

The troubles with the eastern Indians were not yet over. In 1724, 17th of April, a sloop from Lynn was attacked at Kennebunk, at the mouth of the river. The captain, John Felt, and his two men, William Wormwood and Ebenezer Lewis, were all killed. Such things continued at intervals till 1744, when, 14th of June, a company was impressed at Lynn and sent to the frontier with other troops. The town received a supply of powder, and stored it under the parish pulpit. Later, in 1755, the governor of Nova Scotia sent hither fourteen French Catholic neutrals, and they were quartered about town. They were part of a flight of some two thousand, extending over two years. May 23, 1758, another company marched for Canada, out of whom Edmund Ingalls and Samuel Mudge were killed.

About 1766, we find the town first taking notice of the difficulties that bred the Revolution. On the repeal of the Stamp Act, they made great rejoicing, with bells and bonfires. Four years after, May 24, 1770, the town passed strong resolves against the duty on tea, corresponding to the action of the whole country. December 16, 1773, other yet stronger resolves were passed, in the same spirit. One James Bowler, having been charged with storing a quantity of tea at his bake-house on Water Hill, a company of women went thither, demanded and captured the tea, and destroyed it openly.

In 1774, more energetic action appears, the people taking part in all the patriotic movements of the day. In the famous assembly at Salem, convened by Gage as a General Court, but which organized as a Provincial Congress, Oct. 7, 1774, Lynn was represented by Ebenezer Burrill and John Mansfield. Next year, the battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775, called out the highest enthusiasm of the people of this town. No organized company went from Lynn, but many of her men hurried thither in hot haste, some of whom never returned alive. Four fell in Lexington; viz., Daniel Townsend, William Flint, Thomas Hadley, and Abednego Ramsdell. The last is famous in tradition, as having run, in his stocking-feet, from the marsh, where he was gunning, all the way to Saugus, wild with excitement. He reached Lexington near noon, faced the British in the middle of the road, fired at them once and fell, riddled with balls. Daniel Townsend was killed in escaping from a house, where he hid with Timothy Munroe. The latter was wounded; so was Joshua Felt, and Josiah Breed taken prisoner, and kept for some time. April 23, by choice of the town, the Rev. John Treadwell, of the First Parish, the Rev. Joseph Roby, of the Third Parish, and Dea. Daniel Mansfield, were made a committee of safety. There was an alarm company, under Lieut. Harris Chadwell. A watch stood nightly at Sagamore Hill, at the foot of Shepard Street, and the landing on Saugus River. No one left town without leave. The Rev. Mr. Treadwell set the example, by carrying his gun into the pulpit, which all the people imitated. June 17 came the second actual engagement, at Bunker Hill. The Lynn men who fought there are called a "regiment" by Lewis; but it hardly could have been a full one, though Col. John Mansfield commanded. At this time an "alarm post" was made of the old tavern on Federal Street, corner of Marion, then kept by Increase Newhall, and since in possession of the Orcutt family. Once only we hear of a sudden

rally made there, at a report that the British were landing at King's Beach, one dark midnight. There was no cause; but some good courage was exhibited. In 1777, John and Benjamin Lewis, brothers, perished of hardship on board the "Jersey" prison-ship. By the arrival of 1780, the violence of the war having past, the gravest question arose on paying the expenses. Lynn voted, that year, the sum of $2,700, silver, for soldiers' pay, and Lewis adds that, in two years, they ran it up to £70,000 (old tenor), which was a liberal sum for a place never considered rich.

Slaves had been held here, more or fewer of them, from the first. There were still twenty-six when the Revolution began; but when, in 1780, the people felt that they themselves were free, they made their servants free also. They were all liberated.

John Hancock, first governor of Massachusetts, under the United States, issued three commissions to justices of the peace in Lynn, Sept. 20, 1781, being the first directed to Essex County. These were granted to Abner Cheever, Esq., James Newhall, Esq., and Dr. John Flagg, Esq. This, to us, terminated the old order of things; to set aside which, Lynn had sent to the field 168 men, "of whom fifty two were lost, beside the four killed at Lexington."

From this time, there was little to disturb the current of events at Lynn for many years. A company went to help suppress the rebellion of Shays, in 1786. In 1788, they came out *en masse* to pay their greetings to the beloved Washington, as he passed over Boston Street, going to Salem. In 1793, a post-office was first established here, through the influence of that public-spirited man, Ebenezer Breed, then of Philadelphia. The first postmaster was Col. James Robinson.

On account of the threatened war with France, in 1794, Lynn enlisted seventy-five men for service, voting them $10 per month. Whether they ever served at all does not appear. But there was no lack of feeling here on the French relations. The town-meeting adopted an address, full of poetry and patriotism, which was forwarded to Pres. John Adams. He noticed it by a gracious reply, which, while it complimented the patriotic disposition of the people, seems rather to quietly satirize the magniloquence of the Rev. Mr. Thacher's address. This was in 1798.

Two years later, Jan. 13, 1800, the whole people again came forth for funeral services for the same Washington they had so warmly greeted twelve years before. A procession of military, school children, and citizens, marched solemnly through the streets, and afterwards listened to eulogies on the deceased, at the two principal churches.

It is to be noted of the year 1804, that the town then first celebrated the National Independence. It took place after the more ancient and classic style, by procession, ode, oration, &c. The Rev. Peter Jayne was the orator, and the Rev. Enoch Mudge furnished the poetry. The observance indeed survives, but the exercises have mostly disappeared before balloons and tub-races. After skipping a year, the celebration was more than repeated in 1806, when the two political parties hated each other too much to unite, and the "Feds" halted their procession at the First Church, heard an oration by Master Hosea Hildreth of the Academy, and finally dined in the academy hall; while the Democrats had their oratory at the Methodist Church, and their dinner at the hotel. But in 1810 a better spirit prevailed. There had been a notable collision of parties at the town-meeting in 1808, when in May the Federalists "barred out" the Democrats and captured the meeting for themselves. Their proceedings were plainly illegal, and they would probably have been punished, but for the interesting discovery, soon after, that none of the town-meetings were lawful, not having been called by a constable's warrant. So they had all united to petition the General Court for an establishment of their doings; and, having obtained such a resolve, felt less like quarrelling than for some time. In 1810, both parties joined to celebrate Independence, had a procession from the Lynn Hotel, and an oration at the First Church by Dr. Peter G. Robbins. This, certainly, was better than before.

The next development in public affairs that affected Lynn materially, was the second declaration of war with England, in 1812. Beyond sharing in the general disturbance of business, the town seems to have had no remarkable experiences for some time. There was, indeed, one privateer fitted out here — a schooner, called the "Industry." She was commanded by Joseph Mudge, and cleared from Long Wharf, now Lamper's. Before the end of the war, she sent in three British prizes, — two brigs and one ship. The people had also, June 1, 1813, run in crowds to all the available heights to see the memorable engagement of the "Chesapeake" and "Shannon," just outside Nahant. The whole fight was plainly visible, and deep was the sadness when they saw the American vessel lower her colors, and the two together move away slowly down the coast for Halifax.

But next year they had rather more to engage them. More apprehension of danger was felt; and when, in July, a coast-guard of seventy-eight men for Essex County was formed, Lynn furnished fifteen of them, including the captain, Samuel Mudge. Sept. 28, 1814, an alarm, still remembered, was spread at midnight from Beverly, where the enemy was thought to be landing. The Salem regiment was paraded in thirty minutes; that from Lynn about as quickly; for in less than an hour, they were on the march for Salem, under Col. Samuel Brimblecom, who was ready, as he said, to "show the British some nice Yankee play." They took their route over the turnpike; but, on reaching a point near the present head of Maple Street, received news that the alarm only arose from some fishermen drawing their nets. So they quietly returned.

Another new experience began with Lynn this year. The "District" of Lynnfield, which had had a partial independence since 1782, was finally incorporated as a new town, Feb. 28, 1814. The parent town had opposed it, but at length gave way, at a meeting held January 31, and by adjournment, February 7, at the "Hall of Paul & Ellis Newhall." This was the building at the corner of Market and Essex streets, just opposite the present city hall, occupied for many past years as an apothecary store by Warren Tapley. It had been known as the "War Office," from the meeting there of the Democrats who promoted the national conflict. It is yet in good preservation, and remarkable as the only existing edifice in which a meeting of the town of Lynn was ever held.

History abounds in repetitions. Having brought forth her daughter, Lynnfield, in the midst of war, the maternal Lynn now added at her side another daughter, named of peace. The treaty that ended the struggle was ratified by Congress, Feb. 13, 1815. On the same day, the "West Parish" received her credentials as an established municipality, and became the Town of Saugus. The division separated Lynn, visibly, from some of her choicest spots and dearest memories; but the parting seems to have been made in good feeling, and no discord has ever yet grown out of it. Such, indeed, was then the prevailing spirit through the country.

Pres. Monroe passed through the town in 1817; and, though neither of our historians more than simply notice the fact, it appears really to have called forth a great deal of well-ordered patriotism, that testified how pleasantly all felt toward the man who was the exponent of a kindly and beneficent national policy.

This sort of public temper had a yet finer opportunity, Aug. 31, 1724. Then the delightful old hero of two national struggles, Gen. Marquis de La Fayette, came to us on his triumphal tour eastward. Received by a military escort at Fox Hill Bridge, he was conducted to Lynn Hotel and greeted with a speech of welcome from Capt. John White. Afterwards, his carriage passed between double lines of school-children on the common, who saluted him with flowers and every possible offering of love, and then, passing eastward to Marblehead, he left us amid the din of the heavy guns, the same as he had entered the town. Seven splendid arches spanned his route, and banners and inscriptions were everywhere.

The year 1829 is to be noted as that in which commenced the "Anti-Masonic War." This contest, which more disturbed Lynn politics than they had been for years, begun by an exhibition at Liberty Hall (the old "War Office"), of what was claimed to be an exposure of Masonic secrets and proceedings, by Jacob Allen, of Braintree. This was April 1. April 6, the town-meeting voted Masonry "a great moral evil" and "dangerous to free governments." Mr. Allen had liberty of the town hall for his exhibitions. The Lynn "Record," published by Jonathan Buffum, and printed by John B. Tolman, was powerfully devoted to the Anti-Masonic interest, and spoke forth very fearlessly, though there was bitter opposition and not a little danger of violence. This, however, did not occur; for the Anti-Masons were so strong, numerically, as to make matters stand much as they would. Mount Carmel Lodge was closed, and held no known meetings for many years.

In 1846, the sound of the war-drum was heard by many for the first time. Massachusetts was called on for one regiment for the Mexican War, and the quota of Lynn was twenty men. Judge Newhall gives the whole list of names; but they were mostly persons little known, and their movement excited no feeling at all. The truth was, that the seed of anti-slavery had been pushing in the soil of Lynn for a long time, indeed it was now grown to a flourishing tree. There was too much hatred toward the slave-power to allow any approbation for Pres. Polk's Southern war; and it only required a little more growth,

till, in 1848, the "Free Soilers" bore down all opposition in town-meeting, and elected their own special nominees. The next spring, 1849, they went further, even to displace the old town clerk, Thomas Bowler, who, save one year, had held fast to his place since 1831. It was an accomplished fact, that Lynn had declared on the side of the broadest liberty and the completest equality.

This period, terminating with the year 1849, brings us to the incorporation of the place as a city. At this point we leave the history of her political development, separately considered, proposing to resume her story as a whole, after the change in municipal form. At present we return to the condition of the town in 1630, for the purpose of tracing her industrial progress in the same succeeding period of 220 years.

With the exception of Francis Ingalls, whose tannery was probably from the first located at Swampscott, agriculture seems to have been the exclusive occupation of all for years. Except, then, this tannery, only three men seem to have had any mechanical calling whatever. Joseph Armitage, the tailor; Edward Tomlins and Samuel Bennet, the carpenters; Edward Richards, the joiner—these offered the only variations from the regular farmer's life, among the fields and stock-yards. Later, of course, other tradesmen appeared; but, all through the years of her infancy, all minor enterprises of construction and repair were accomplished within the ingenuity of the home circle.

Perhaps the first industry that engaged our people, outside the corn-field and hay-lot, was a lesser form of the fishery business. Thomas Dexter, in 1632, built a weir across Saugus River, very near the head of tide-water, under liberty of the General Court. This was for the taking of bass and alewives, with which, at proper seasons, the stream abounded. The multitude of these fish, more than the settlers wanted, found ready market for shipment after drying and smoking. For the business of all New England, after their own living, was understood to be fishing, "the Apostles' own trade," as King James called it; and perhaps Lynn was as good a place as any for the starting of this branch of it. In this first year, says William Wood, they cured 150 barrels.

Edward Tomlins, who seems to have been one of the most enterprising and sagacious men in the Colony, now made a movement, in 1633, the plain effect of which is yet seen and felt in our affairs. Observing the need of a corn-mill here, he obtained a grant from the town of a perpetual privilege in the water of Strawberry Brook, for the carrying of a mill to be built by him on that stream. Afterward this grant was extended so as to allow the construction of a dam at what was called the "old sluice," now Wyoma Village, for a better storage and supply of water.

In the time of this early undertaking, everything about it was no doubt very plain and well understood; but very meagre records only were kept of anything, and the question in later years has been one of the greatest difficulty, to settle which of the present mills in town possesses the "Tomlins grant." It has been stoutly maintained by the owner of the mill on Waterhill Street, that he has it by direct succession of title; but, in a leading case brought by him in defence of this right,* the point was conceded as immaterial by the opposing counsel, and thus received no decision from the court.

In 1635, we note the first beginning of that industry here that has grown to be the anxiety, if not the pride, of all the modern municipality. This is the manufacture, in one style or another, of ladies' shoes. It has its first possible budding-out in the shop of one Philip Kertland, who came to Lynn in the above year, from Sherrington, in Buckinghamshire. That he was a shoemaker, and the first one here, appears certain; also, that he dwelt very near the present crossing of Summer and South streets. But his family all disappeared from Lynn at a date comparatively early, and there is no evidence that he was unusually skilful, or that he attempted anything in the shape of extended or established manufacture. Very much posthumous attention and regard have been lavished on this probably worthy man, but there seems no evidence that the place ever derived any consequence or emolument from his being here, nor even that he had any influence in making his own calling popular with others. And the street, the brick block, and the hotel which to-day bear his name, merely commemorate him who was the first shoemaker in Lynn.

At every turn, we see that all through this early time the land had the chief attention. In 1637, it is said, there were "but thirty seven plows in the Colony, most of which were at Lynn." In fact, the people minded their fields more than their roads; for in 1639 the General Court fined Lynn 10*s.* for "bad ways," and bade her see them mended. Yet even then, as ever since, the ways of Lynn were enormously long in proportion to the population, and the keeping of such lengths in good order was no little work. There was, at that time, and much later, a ferry somewhere here, kept by Garrett Spenser. Judge Newhall thinks it was from Ballard's Landing, East Saugus, to Needham's Landing, near River Street, Lynn, which seems very probable.

We may here note the peculiar restlessness of the early people of this place, who are seen acting, for a long time, very much as if they had been enticed here under false pretences. Six new towns were settled from Lynn in the first ten years, and another soon after, to say nothing of the numbers who were continually leaving individually. First and last, it is said that Lynn people settled New Haven, in Connecticut; Sandwich, in Massachusetts; and Southampton, Flushing, Gravesend, Jamaica, Hempstead, and Oyster Bay, all on Long Island. Perhaps some others. Still the old town grew, though slowly.

It seems that in 1642, the fear of savage invasion led to the encouragement of a manufacture very singular for such a community. This was "the breeding of salt-peeter." Sergeant Tomlins had charge of the business in Lynn, and every house was ordered to aid. What for is not so plain: it would at first seem to be for the making of gunpowder, but we remember no powder-mill in the Colony then, and it is hardly a domestic manufacture. It may have been sent over and exchanged for powder in England. Still we hear nothing of it afterward, and probably it never found much success.

We now arrive at perhaps the most significant point in the industrial development of the town; yet it was not that it advanced the town so much as dated an era in the business of the country. It may not be everywhere known, that what is now the vast, incalculable iron manufacture of the United States found its first and humble origin in Lynn, on the banks of the Saugus River, in the year 1642. In that year, the ever-busy Thomas Dexter, perhaps while drying alewives at his weir, by the pole-bridge above Round Hill, got a notion of the existence of good bog-ore in the upper meadows, belonging mostly to Adam Hawkes. He soon joined himself to Hon. Robert Bridges, a much better and more prudent man than himself, and soon with others, to explore and work the matter up. Bridges carried specimens of the ore to London this year, and directly made up a stock-company, ready for business. Adventurous old John Smith, sailing to Virginia, had, thirty-eight years before, in 1614, declared, speaking of these shores, that "who will undertake the rectifying of an Iron Forge, in my opinion cannot lose." But he probably saw nothing but the black, massive hornblende of Nahant, which has since deceived wiser heads than that of John Smith. But this time they had iron, sure. Eleven wealthy Englishmen engaged, a son of Gov. Winthrop also took stock, and the enterprise grew into shape rapidly. The first issue of capital stock was £1,000; the first purchase of land was of Thomas Hudson, and the forge buildings were at once erected on the west bank of the river, just at the last fall of the stream, and only a few rods above Dexter's fish-weir and bridge. A little village sprang up immediately around, and the spot, naturally full of romantic beauty, became invested with the charm of a new picturesqueness.

The iron business brought over a fresh importation of people, and quite new they were, in style and manner. We hear of Richard Leader, a talented man, who really became leader and agent for the works. He was afterward connected with the second effort of the kind among us, which was at Braintree. Then there were the Leonards, Henry and James, men of great enterprise, always in the business, and with their descendants following the same line to-day. Henry Styche, an old man, who lived to be still older, and died in 1654, aged 104 years. Arzbell (perhaps Archibald) Anderson and MacCallum More Downing, two canny Scotchmen, who stayed and ended their days here, the first in about twenty years, and the other after more than forty. Last and greatest of all, a man whose monumental bronze ought to stand to-day to call up his revered memory, under the fine old elms that now shade the spot of his industry. This man was Joseph Jenks. He was the first man of real mechanical genius ever seen here, or perhaps in the Colony. His hand left its mark as an originating power, on a great many of the most important of present American industries. When, much later, the Court wanted dies made for coining the "pine-tree shilling" and other Colonial money, the maker of those dies was Joseph Jenks. When a fire-engine was wanted, he made one; though they were not common then in Europe, and he may never have seen one. He made the first patterns and models, cast the first iron and brass, and conducted the first machine-shop ever seen on this continent. More than this, he was an

* Berry *v.* Raddin, 11 Allen.

inventor; and while he obtained several patents for valuable improvements in working (the first American patents, be it remembered), one of his inventions still remains a public blessing, in the light, strong, and sweeping scythe for grass, now so universal, but before his day wholly unknown. He died here, in 1683, after a long and useful life. He came from England a widower, leaving two sons in that country; afterward marrying here, he brought up a numerous family, whose continuance is yet with us, almost invariably worthy and useful, and often proving eminent. And this Joseph Jenks is thus seen to have been almost in himself the beginner and beginning of the iron manufacture in North America, having himself given it a wholesome start in most of its active departments.

The first operation after smelting a charge was, naturally, casting; and the first article of use that was cast is yet preserved, and we hope will be for ages to come. It is a very small iron dinner-pot, stout and thick, with a heavy bail and three short legs, one being now broken off and replaced with a leaden one. It holds about a quart, is smooth and well-made, and proves that the workmen were no bunglers. When the foundry started, this first job was done for Thomas Hudson, former owner of the land. It remained in his family; and by and by was passed down to Mary Hudson, his descendant, who was the mother of Alonzo Lewis, the poet and historian of Lynn. She left it to her daughters, Irene and Mary; the latter of whom, surviving till 1878, left it again to Llewellyn Lewis, oldest surviving son of Alonzo, in whose possession it now remains.

In thus speaking of the iron-works, we do not overlook the fact that common blacksmithing had been done here for some time before. The first workman of this calling was John Deacon, who arrived in 1635, and was alloted twenty acres of land in 1638.

These works, having so good a commencement, were made the subject of several applications to the General Court for privileges during the next few years. They seem to have been favorably considered every time: in 1644 they, with their stock and workmen, were exempted from taxes for ten years, with land privileges for ten more. Later in the same year, the stock was opened to all buyers, more privileges were granted, and the workmen exempted from military duty. In 1645 more land was bought, this time of Thomas Dexter; and the privileges before granted were obtained in documentary form, after the manner of a patent from the Court. In 1646 a better water-power was desired. The dam, which had been not far from the present one of Scott's Mill, was given up, and an agreement made with Dexter for a new one, pretty near or perhaps the same as the existing one of Pranker's Mill. More land was bought; and Dexter agreed for the passage of the canal near his house: the company making bridges and fences as wanted, and keeping water enough in the natural channel for the passage of the alewives; for Dexter meant to preserve his fishery, iron or no iron. This agreement gives color to the idea that his bridge and weir may have been above the works, rather than below, as has been supposed, or he may have had more than one. The pond was raised, flowing some of Adam Hawkes's meadow. The canal was dug, and may be seen to-day; the upper end still holding water, but most of it a green furrow in the earth. This energetic course was not without expense, and the company again applied to the Court for help. It seems that money was the thing most wanted, and they decided not to sell save for cash. But the Court answered, that autumn, that they could promise no pay other than what the people had to give, which was not often silver; and, as to getting iron, they could buy elsewhere for their "corne and pipe-staves." Probably this was the beginning of the end. The next year, 1647, Jenks thought best to work on his own account; so, buying a right for a forge, he set up the making of scythes. A year later, Aug. 4, 1648, Winthrop wrote cheerfully about the works, but leaked out several suspicious things. The company had sent one Dawes from England, to oversee Leader and set things right; but Winthrop and the rest upheld Leader, instead, and Dawes retired and went home. Again, he says they had begun to find what they "conceived" to be silver; a poor statement for that juncture, too much like a sensation contrived to get popularity. They must have been ignorant or designing; since silver is so easy of detection, and, besides, does not belong with that ore at all. They were now making eight tons per week, and their bars and shapes were thought as good as the Spanish.

In the same year, the authorities of Lynn, considering how important to them would be the taxes on all this manufactory, applied to the Court to know what were the "public taxes" from which they had been exempted. The Court responded that the privilege only covered levies of the Commonwealth, and not of the town or church. Directly, it would seem, some effort was made to collect town rates about the premises; but the fancied privilege for so long had made itself almost as good as the real would have been. The iron-people would naturally resist, dangerous as it was to do so; and at last, May 7, 1651, Richard Leader, whose ascendency had seriously declined, going home to England, let his tongue loose in mid-ocean (where he thought he surely might), and stated what he thought of the whole matter. This coming to the ear of Endicott, he had him brought back, arraigned before the Court, and fined £200 for contempt and slander of everybody here, from the Governor down to the Lynn constable. By and by they cooled down, and reduced the fine to £50, which they bound him in £100 more to pay, and to be of good behavior till next Court. What became of him afterward we know not. They had succeeded in wiping him out, and John Gifford became agent in his stead.

Mr. Gifford did not come with much of triumph. He was already deep in debt; for which he was, afterward, nearly starved to death in prison. He is supposed to have come from the other or second forge, at Braintree, where he had not found it wholly plain sailing. His first job here was to raise the dam, and flow six acres of Adam Hawkes's cornfield. This involved a new expense of £8 for damages, of which they seem to have paid enough already.

To give the iron-works a moment's rest, we turn to the infant shoe-trade, that was growing in its cradle, even to threatening to drive out all else before it. So soon as 1651, we are told by Johnson, of Woburn, the shoemakers of Lynn had become a corporation, "and were enriching themselves very much." He further explains that a good understanding with the tanners helped this very much, so that together they kept up the price of shoes to almost double that in England. Yet they succeeded in exporting all their surplus. Lewis, however, denies that it was yet a principal business; and says but few were in it, and they only sold in Boston. Little but calf-skin was wrought; for cloth was expensive, morocco was not introduced, and the keeping and raising of goats had been almost given over. The industrial aspect of the place must now have resembled that of an English town. They had corporations for the shoemakers and coopers; which latter were then an important class in Lynn, founded, no doubt, by Joseph Rednap, a London wine-cooper, who arrived in 1630, among the first settlers. He lived to a great age, dying in 1686. This fact explains the allusion of the Court to "pipe-staves," a little way back. They probably, with timber all round them, made large quantities of casks, which were taken down, packed, and exported as "shooks," or staves in bundles. We also notice, November, 1646, that the people had obtained a market, to be kept here "every third day of the week," which made them equivalent to an English town, or very near it. Edward Randolph was therefore very wrong, as well as spiteful, when, in 1688, he declared the town of Lynn to be "equal to a village in England & no otherwise."

Returning now to the great industry at "Hammersmith," as the village at the iron-works was called, we find John Gifford, the new agent, in 1652, again raising the dam. This time he flowed ten acres more for Adam Hawkes, and the cost began to get serious. The first agreement was sixteen loads of hay every year, and 200 cords of wood beside. They finally toned it down to a money value of £7 for all, and ten shillings annual royalty afterward.

A pleasant episode occurs here, in the fact of the first dies for minting having been made at these works, in this same year, by Joseph Jenks, for the government at Boston. The money coined is generally spoken of as "pine-tree shillings," but was really sixpences and threepences as well. And though the execution was terribly poor, and we have several workmen in Lynn to-day who could do a hundred times better, yet it is pleasant to think that at that time no man could be found to do such work in all the Colony but the curious artificer of the Lynn Iron-Works.

Then fell the heavy hand of law on the once-promising enterprise. Thomas Savage and Henry Webb, of Boston, by the former, sued and attached the iron-works for debts due and owing to them both. This was in 1653, and in September of that year, he (Savage) recovered for himself £894 2*s*., and for Webb £1,351 6*s*. 9*d*. It is not hard to guess the embarrassment that may have arisen under an execution for £2,245. The old controversy with the town was not over, either; but the Court, in May, allowed £10 per annum to the town as long as the iron-works should be continued. Whether this was in recompense for the exemption before given we do not learn, but it looks much like hoping they would not last very much longer.

The genius of the spot was not idle, however. Within the next year, 1654, Jenks had agreed to build for the selectmen of Boston

"an Ingine to carry water in Case of fire," and it is understood that he did it, rightly and well. There was not another in America, nor many in the world, we presume. But Jenks meant and did still more. The General Court had, June 10, 1646, granted him a patent for fourteen years' exclusive control of his improvements in mill-work, and though such a grant was rather an assumption of power by them, yet he liked it so as to try again. May 23, 1655, he obtained from them a patent for seven years, for an improved scythe "for the more speedy cutting of grass." This was just the tool we see used all round us; for it at once displaced the old clumsy Dutch scythe, which was no better for grass-cutting than a butcher's knife, and only survives in the emblematic pictures of Death and Time.

But if he was fortunate, his old associates were not. The same year, 1655, Gifford, the agent, was arrested and imprisoned for the company's debts. This brought a petition from London to deliver him, signed by several stockholders. Its fate we do not know; but by 1660 Gifford had retired from the management, and we find his place occupied by Oliver Purchis, in some respects the greatest man yet intrusted with it. But lawsuits had grown customary, and Purchis was at once sued by Adam Hawkes for damage by the flowing of his land, just the old story of every mill-site. Yet it seems that Purchis kept the water as low as it could be worked with.

In 1667, Joseph Jenks, still contriving, proposed to set up the manufacture of wire, and petitioned the Court about it, but they had grown cautious and would not help him. Still he seemed to manage with fair success, but the company's men were not so fortunate. Poor Gifford, 1671, was sued by Samuel Bennet, carpenter and contractor, for labor done at the works, amounting to £400. Then others came down on the stricken enterprise, and finally a fellow was hired to go and cut down the dam in the night. The pond was full; the works were nearly washed away and many lives imperilled, though none lost. The villain fled and escaped. Afterward, a reduced form of manufacture went on there, but the suits continued for twenty years, depleting the enterprise and at last destroying it. It is suspected that the people about were afraid the furnaces would consume all the wood of the forests, and so stifled the business betimes, lest it should cause scarcity of fuel. Such prejudices are met with in later times. The works finally and gradually disappeared, ceasing wholly about 1688, when the entire property was taken by James Taylor, of Boston, and now the beautiful spot of their location only shows portions of the long canal, and an immense heap of slag and scoria, from which the boys pick bits of cast-iron, and tell their mates they came out of the "Cinder Banks."

By and by Jenks made another application to the Court. He would take the whole contract for coining the pine-tree money. But the Court, perhaps thinking there was risk enough about it already, again said no.

The ancient delusion about iron ore being on Nahant was ever and anon revived and rejected. The black ledge on the east side is nothing but massive hornblende, with no appreciable amount of iron about it; yet they must needs smelt some at Saugus, and in 1691 the town voted that Mr. Hubbard of the Braintree furnace might have some of it at three shillings a ton, but only what the town "sees convenient." He probably never pressed the thing far.

A rather important branch of industry here in those days was the making of lime. The product of the kilns of Rhode Island and Maine had not made its appearance then, and all the lime they had was made from shells. It was quite a business to gather the shells of "great clams" and the like, and burn them. The lime was good and all the old work was done with it. A great quantity was made in 1696.

By 1704, it was found, as it might have been before, that the clearing of Nahant had gone too far. There was now "no shade for the creatures," and further cutting was forbidden. But the forest was effectually destroyed and never grew again.

We note, about 1718, as a very interesting fact in husbandry, that the first potatoes ever known in the town were then introduced. Tradition points, not very exactly, but nearly enough, to one John Newhall as having the first of them, and when he had raised a couple of bushels knew not what to do with them. But there is a suspicion that Lynn was only so much behind the age, for they are certainly mentioned in the Colony Records in 1628. This even antedates the introduction into England by Hawkins, generally placed in 1653. They were very slow in coming into general use, partly, perhaps, from being most used by the Scotch-Irish.

An establishment was started in the year 1723 that has proved important for later times. This was the large grist-mill at what was called the "Great Bridge," now East Saugus. The privilege was first granted to Benjamin Potter, Jacob Newhall, and William Curtis, Oct. 27, 1721, but they did not accomplish anything. A new grant was made, Oct. 8, 1722, to Thomas Cheever and Ebenezer Merriam, who soon built the mill. Merriam sold to Cheever in 1729, Cheever to Joseph Gould, in 1738, and he died, leaving the mill in bad condition, about 1774. Finally, George Makepeace bought and repaired the establishment, putting in machinery for making snuff, grinding spices, and making chocolate. The concern passed to Amariah Childs, June 6, 1812; again, to Charles Sweetser in 1844; and finally to Herbert B. Newhall, the present owner.

A word is pertinent here on the chocolate manufacture. It is said to have first begun at Milton Lower Mills, but it surely was in Lynn at a very early time. Either Thomas Newhall or his ancestor, or some lessee under them, had a small mill of this kind on Boston Street, at the mouth of Mower's or Beaver Brook, as early as 1782. The building was finally moved to Shepard Street, by Matthew Breed, and has only recently been demolished. Mr. Makepeace, and Childs after him, made great quantities at East Saugus, and at some time not far from 1830 Hezekiah Chase fitted up a section of his mill on Summer Street, and manufactured very extensively for a long time. The business ceased not far from 1860, and seems to have departed from among us.

Ship-building, as a business, was not one that early engaged the efforts of the men of Lynn, for they were neither sailors nor fishermen. But, in 1726, a yard was opened at what has since been known as the "Town Landing," at Liberty Square. Zaccheus Collins, to whose journal Lewis acknowledges obligation, says that from this year to 1741 two brigs and sixteen schooners were built here; but, strangely enough, nobody gives the name of the proprietor, nor tells us what the vessels were for.

About the same time the first attempt was made at another business, which has been tried several times since, but never yet successfully. This was the making of linen. Flax had always been a favorite crop here, and the soaking of it had given name to the Flax Pond; but now the making of cloth in a business way was undertaken. This year, 1726, Nathaniel Potter took a prize from the Salem Court of £13 15*s*., for three pieces of these goods made here.

Water communication with Boston became desirable, and in 1746, Capt. Hugh Alley began running a schooner thither. It ran for a long period. In this and other ways business seemed encouraged; but not so the farmers. In 1749, every green thing was eaten by the grasshoppers, or burned by drouth. Hay had to be imported. By 1753 wolves and foxes were so destructive that the whole population took to the woods to kill them, and the same year the Court ordered the barberry bushes extirpated, as they were held to blight the grain.

We must now resume consideration of the shoe manufacture, which had been advancing, though slowly, since the days of Philip Kertland. With the year 1750, arrived in Lynn a skilful shoemaker from Wales, named John Adam Dagyr. Only three manufacturers then had journeymen, John Mansfield, Benjamin Newhall, and William Gray. Mr. Dagyr settled and married at Lynn, and in a few years wrought a complete revolution in the business. He drew every one to him for instruction, and reduced their loose methods to such system that he was soon known as "the Celebrated Shoemaker of Essex." His wife was Susanna Newhall, and his dwelling near the foot of Mall Street, where he brought up three children. But, like most of those who are of real service to any place, he was ill-paid in life, neglected in age, and, though of the best habits and proverbially honest, he was suffered to go to the almhouse, where he died in 1808, after all the imperishable service he had rendered the town.

The shoe trade of Lynn was by this time an accomplished fact. The Boston "Gazette" praised the manufacture, and gave the town a leading reputation in this regard. The Boston "Palladium" stated the number of shoes made here in 1767 at 80,000 pairs.

On arriving at the year 1795, after the coming in of the new order of things, we find the people at Swampscott contemplating a branch of trade not before largely followed in Lynn. Farming seems to have grown out of favor, and these men decided to try the ocean fishery. The schooner "Dove," of twenty tons, was fitted out for this trade, by James Phillips and others; but in two years she was wrecked and totally lost. Then they bought the "Lark" schooner, of sixteen tons. She went about two years, sprung a leak, and sunk at her moorings. Then they procured another, and so on, till in latter years the Swampscott fleet has been quite numerous, the catch of fish often very large, and more than one skipper and owner have laid up money from the proceeds.

Another important industry now appears. The making of morocco and kid upper leather was a new thing in the town; but in 1800 one William Rose, an Englishman, set up a factory on the south side of the common, near the head of Blossom Street. Since then the business has grown larger every year, though the tanning of sole leather has declined and finally disappeared. The last tanner of sole leather was Winthrop Newhall, who operated on Market Street, west side, just below State Street. There were six in 1820, but all stopped work before 1833.

Watching the appearance of the successive industries of the place, we note, in 1808, that two very diverse branches were begun that year, both which still remain, large capital being invested in them. One was the trapping of lobsters, really commenced at Swampscott, by Ebenezer Thorndike, with twelve pots. Eventually this trade mostly passed to Nahant, where it has been a staple business for a long time. The other was the manufacture of tobacco and cigars, in Saugus, at the village of Cliftondale. The first manufacturer was Samuel Copp; after him, the Sweetsers, Raddins, Howletts, and others. Nearly all have been successful.

A fresh effort was made in 1811 to establish the wire manufacture. The "Lynn Wire and Screw Manufacturing Company" was incorporated, built a dam and factory on Saugus River, and for a time had good prospects; but cheap importation presently undermined the enterprise, and it failed and disappeared.

Also it must be remarked that next year, in 1812, William Jackson commenced the pottery business, in Cliftondale, Saugus. The clay was fine and the work good, but the industry did not long survive. Another attempt was made by John Raddin, about 1850, near "Bass Rock."

In 1814, a definite undertaking of the linen business was made. This, too, was in Saugus, by the "Lynn Linen Spinning Factory Company." They built a capacious mill and began making sail duck. But they soon fared in the same way as the wire company. Nathaniel Perry tried the same in 1816, at the same place or near it, intending to make fine goods; but he had no better success.

But the water-power of Saugus River was always tempting; and, in 1829, Messrs. Brierly & Whitehead attempted the making of flannel, at a point just below the old dam of the iron-works. They seemed not to encounter the same competition, and notably succeeded. Indeed, wool-weaving could always be done in this country to profit. The business afterward passed to Edward Pranker, and Francis Scott started a second mill a little lower on the stream. All have well succeeded, and still go on.

A new tide-mill was built in 1831, by John Alley (father of Hon. John B. Alley), at the foot of Pleasant Street. The old mill, at the mouth of Strawberry Brook, originally undershot, had been moved down the stream, and run by the tide for many years.

The year 1832 witnessed the birth here of a new enterprise; to wit, the whaling business. A company was formed by Hezekiah Chase, Andrews Breed, and others, and the business set in order, from the wharves that they built at Foxhill Bridge, up to the offices at Chase's Mill. A ship-yard was opened between the two, at Needham's Landing, where the old ferry had been. Great activity prevailed for a time. Lewis says they had five ships, of which they built three; Judge Newhall, correcting, says they built nothing larger than a schooner. Rightly stated, they had six ships, only a part of which ever discharged here, and only five ever came up Saugus River. They built only two vessels: a brig of some 180 tons, named the "Chase," after the owner, and a smaller schooner, called the "Berry," for his partner. But they brought many new people here, mostly from Sag Harbor, L. I. Such are among us yet: the Cones, Wooleys, Jaggers, Hands, Harlows, and Schellingers, all owe their residence in Lynn to the old whaling enterprise. But whaling was a declining business, and there was powerful competition in many places. They did not manage well, their money slipped away, their business all failed, and the crash of 1837 beat them utterly to powder. Many relics of the old industry remain, but indicate little of what they once were.

The year 1836, with its wide-spread spirit of inflation, caused several efforts at new business to sprout forth in Lynn. Henry A. Breed, always a willing helper of enterprise, having secured the right of the old mills on Water Hill, made improvements and built a large brick factory for silk and calico printing. It was a costly experiment, and soon met an ill fate. The business was subsequently revived, though feebly, and the whole establishment was burned, Aug. 9, 1846. The same kind of work had been done at the factories in Wyoma Village, and was afterward practised by a smaller concern — that located on the brook at Strawberry Avenue. The enterprise at Water Hill really grew out of the "morus multicaulis" excitement, then widely raging. Acres of the mulberry were planted here.

Photography, as a remunerative art, has long been successful in this place. The first pictures ever taken in Lynn were by Judge James R. Newhall, the historian, then a printer. News and job printing began here Sept. 3, 1825, when Charles F. Lummus opened the office of the Lynn "Mirror." Beautiful work in both these callings has been, and still is, done here.

A prominent enterprise was entered on in 1842, when the mills on Oak Street were started, by Theophilus N. Breed. He had previously made shoe tools, on South Common Street, corner of Pleasant; but, seeing good power in the issue of Pine Hill Swamp, he purchased and built, raising a pond of some fifty-three acres. Many branches were carried on here. The second iron foundry in Lynn was here, operated by John and George Knowles. A grist-mill ran awhile, the roasting and grinding of coffee was done, and especially the making of finished grindstones, since a profitable business, was here commenced. Mr. Breed was not finally successful, and the property passed to other hands, lay idle very long, and seemed abandoned. In 1863 the estate was bought by Enoch T. Kent and Stephen R. Marvin, who fitted it up for the preparing of upholstery and felting hair. This trade, too, declined, after some time, and the premises were taken by parties who attempted the making of worsted goods. The spot was busy enough for a few years, but the same destiny was upon it always; the proprietors failed, and the old mills were forsaken again. But, in 1870, Hon. Edwin Walden, then mayor, conceived the idea of utilizing the pond as a public water-source; and this was put into execution within another year. Since then the whole has been city property, and no manufactures have been had there.

Agriculture, in the large way, had been steadily giving way before manufactures for many years. At last a strong effort was made by the remaining farmers, and the annual exhibition of the Essex Agricultural Society was brought here in 1846. It seemed so successful that it was repeated in 1847, and, by the activity of some parties high in interest, was even brought a third time, in 1848. But it was presently seen that this was forced, and agriculture really had no such prosperity here as this would show. Since then it has gone down more and more, till hardly a farmer of any tolerable scope is found in Lynn.

We have passed several interesting manufactures, introduced and temporarily successful. The making of salt was one of these. It was probably, thus far, the only attempt on the north shore of the bay, and was located very near the junction of Beach and Suffolk streets. Estes Newhall, James Breed, and others, were engaged, and it did well for some years, finally ceasing in the spring of 1830.

The working of rubber fabrics was undertaken, about 1836, by a company, among whom David Taylor was prominent. A large factory was built on Strawberry Brook, with other buildings, and great hopes indulged; but the panic of 1837 ruined this, with everything else. After many years the premises were purchased by Joseph M. Barrey and Joshua R. Bigelow, and the business of paper-hangings established, with great ultimate success. The same business was afterward removed to Roxbury.

The magnificent trade in ice that belongs to this country should be credited to Lynn, since Frederic Tudor, Esq., the acknowledged pioneer in the business, was at first a resident of Saugus, and later of Nahant, where he continued to live, and finally died. Vast quantities of ice have, since his efforts introduced it, been cut here, for home use and export.

Having now brought the industrial history of Lynn down to the same point as the political, we leave it at the incorporation of the city, with only a few words more relative to the great enterprise of the place, the shoe trade. Looking back to 1810, we find an estimate that 1,000,000 pairs were made that year, and the women earned at least $50,000 at binding them. By 1855, this production had gone up to 9,275,593 pairs, and every other vocation bowed down before this. Yet, strangely enough, there were no corporations, and only a few large partnerships, at work. Nor had they, at that time, either the effectual division of labor since adopted, nor any of the remarkable helps by machinery now employed. Neither the sewing-machine, the McKay bottoming-machine, nor any of the minor contrivances, were then known; and the leather was all cut and sorted in the same shop where the uppers were cut, and all the sales and other business done. This has all passed away. The city of Lynn is full of indus-

tries of all sorts and kinds; but over and above the whole towers the gigantic shoe trade, a leading enterprise of the country, and a most notable example of the development of a place in a single direction, by its own intrinsic energies.

We now return to the days of 1630, in order to bring down the history of the place in its

Religious Movements.

It is hardly necessary to say that the faith of the first settlers was almost uniform, and corresponded closely to that of the whole Colony. Yet on one hand there were large exceptions to be remarked, both in religion and morals, while on the other the government was well sustained by public sentiment, in the proposition that there could be no offence against morals without offence against society. In the letting down of this cardinal doctrine consists all the depression of general morality that has happened or come to exist from that time to this. The order of the Court, in 1630, for seizing "Rich: Clonghe's stronge water," on account of certain injudicious sales, was only a single example of that "eminent domain" which society at that time professed to hold in the behavior of men, as well in the beginning as in the ripeness of their immorality.

As regarded definite religious meetings and worship, the first settlers were variously served. Some went to Salem on Sunday; others, not well placed for this, resorted to social meetings at the farm-houses. But this was only for a time; for the Rev. Stephen Bachiler arrived at Boston, June 5, 1632, and at once came to Lynn, where his daughter lived. She had married Christopher Hussey, and the second white child born in Lynn was her son Stephen, named, apparently, for his grandfather. Mr. Bachiler was a man of decision. He had brought six church members with him; to these he admitted additions of such as desired, and gathered the First Church in Lynn, June 8, 1632, just three days after he landed. There was no council nor installation, no asking anybody's leave; he came and went to work. Very soon,—within the year, probably,—the first meeting-house was built, very near the north-easterly corner of Shepard and Summer streets, where stands the house formerly of James M. Ward. It was certainly small, as all the early churches seem to have been, that of Salem being only about twenty feet square. Edward Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence," writes of it, in 1651, that it was "undefended from the cold northwest wind, and therefore made with steps descending into the earth." But such as it was it lasted and did service for fifty round years, and, in point of fact, is known to be still in existence, after almost two and a half centuries. More of this presently.

When Mr. Bachiler had been preaching about four months, some complaints arose about his ways and manners, so that he was cited before the Court for investigation, and at last forbidden to preach any more in public, "within our Patent, until some scandals be removed." But they were so well removed by March 4, 1633, that the Court took off the injunction.

At this early day, ministers' meetings were begun to be held at each other's houses, for study and discussion. The ministers, from stations west of us, united with Lynn; but those eastward objected, thinking it was not good Congregationalism. But presently they were called to meet, for good reason. Mr. Bachiler's difficulties again came to the surface, and some of his people withdrew, having doubts "whether they were a church or not." A quarrel with the pastor began at once, and a Ministers' Council assembled to put the matter right. They decided, after three days' deliberation, that the church was not, indeed, properly constituted, "yet the mutual exercise of religious duties had supplied the defect." This was like bidding the tempest cease, but it kept raging, and finally Mr. Bachiler asked his dismission, and obtained it. His six first members went with him.

The Lynn church had now no minister, and they looked about only to find one man that pleased them. This was the celebrated Hugh Peters, then preaching at Salem, and later, one of the Regicides, and executed for that high crime in London, Oct. 16, 1660. Mr. Peters received an invitation to settle at Lynn, but it was too small a field to attract him. He preferred Salem while he stayed, and all England afterward.

Mr. Bachiler, after dismission, undertook to stay in Lynn and keep up church relations, with his few retainers. The people objected to this, but as they could do nothing, they went to that absolute power, the Court, who, right or wrong, sent him out of town within three months. For these and other things, difficulties gradually gathered between the churches of Salem and Lynn; till Feb. 21, 1636, they proclaimed a fast for the clearing of their mental and spiritual horizon. It is to be hoped it produced good; yet it was said to be partly brought about by scarcity of provisions.

At any rate, the good time was coming. The Rev. Samuel Whiting arrived in June, but, not so hasty as his predecessor, waited till Nov. 8, 1636, when he was properly installed as pastor of the church at Lynn. But the church was almost a myth, only six persons accepting membership. It was just the counterpart of Mr. Bachiler's, six of one, half a dozen of the other. But this new arrangement was better made; the covenant was definitely drawn, and distinctly accepted, so that members knew what they were doing. Some have said that the "half-way covenant" was adopted, and used in the New England churches at this date, but others place it much later.

Next year the Antinomian troubles, generally ascribed to Anne Hutchinson, became grievous, and another fast was held June 20, 1637, to help get rid of this evil also. But now, apparently, having had two churches with one pastor, they thought best to try two ministers, and one church, if possible. The Rev. Thomas Cobbett arrived May 26, 1637, and was made a colleague with Mr. Whiting. After this, as the two proved worthy yoke-fellows, there was no trouble in religious matters for a good while. The only speck of difficulty was with Lady Deborah Moody, who came here in 1640, but only stayed three years. She owned all the Humfrey farm, called Swampscott, and including nearly all the present town of that name. But she adopted views against the baptism of infants; and the church at Salem, where she belonged, "dealt with her," no doubt with all aid and sympathy from the Lynn pastors. But rather than give up her conscience she went to Long Island.

Mr. Whiting appears to have been generally liked; but his colleague could not please every one, and William Hewes, and John his son, were fined heavily for disrespectful language respecting both the ministers. The forfeitures for such offences must have reckoned up handsomely; in 1644, two townsmen had to pay 2*s.* 6*d.* each for sleeping in meeting. At that time, as often since, the drinking of liquor made trouble; but the people and magistrates all believed too thoroughly in its use for any temperance measures, and used the means instead now termed "stringent license." A few retailers were thus privileged, but there was constant difficulty with them. But by far the greatest share of controversy was about the baptism of children. Feb. 18, 1646, William Witter comes up again, having said that "they who stay while a child is baptized, do worship the Devil." The Court said he should make public confession to the congregation, next Lord's Day, *if the weather were fair.* We do not hear whether it was done. As an example of punishment of a different vice, we find, Sept. 7, 1650, Nicholas Pinion fined by the Court, being heard to "swear that all his pumpkins were turned to squashes." In the same year, under a new law operating in that behalf, Matthew Stanley was also fined for winning the affections of John Tarbox's daughter, without her parents' consent. He should have gone to the Court first, as they had power to grant permission in such cases, on "general principles," probably.

The ministers did not think themselves utterly bound by their installations, any more than some of their successors. Mr. Whiting, Mr. Cobbett, and four more wrote to Cromwell, Dec. 31, 1650, professing their readiness to go and preach in Ireland, if he so chose to direct. He probably was not as ready as they were.

We have reached the era of the first denominational oppression in Lynn. Sunday, July 20, 1651, John Clarke, John Crandall, and Obadiah Holmes, all from Newport, R. I., went to Swampscott, and had a Baptist meeting at the house of an already-known dissenter, William Witter. Mr. Clarke preached, held communion, and re-baptized Witter. The bold transgression was quickly known at Lynn; Hon. Robert Bridges sent two constables down, arrested the whole company, and took them to hear Mr. Whiting in the afternoon. They refused to uncover, and sought to speak, which was not allowed, though one did offer remarks after service. Then they were guarded over night at Joseph Armitage's "Blue Anchor" tavern, and sent to prison in Boston next morning. Being afterward sentenced, Clarke and Crandall paid their fines; but Holmes, refusing, was kept a time in prison, and then barbarously flogged. As regards Witter, it appears that the business cost him another presentment at Salem Court, but the result is not stated.

In 1656, Mr. Cobbett concluded not to stay in Lynn, and so removed to Ipswich. He had been nineteen years in Lynn, and he stayed at his new station twenty-nine, dying there Nov. 5, 1685. As to the cause of his leaving Lynn, we get a hint from Cotton Mather that comes very near the principles of our own day. He says: "The ungrateful inhabitants of Lynn one year passed a town vote that they

could not allow their ministers above thirty pounds apiece that year, for their salary; and behold, the God who will not be mocked, immediately caused the town to lose three hundred pounds in that one specie of their cattle, in one disaster." And they lost Mr. Cobbett, besides.

The second denominational collision was with the Quakers, and took place in 1659. The strict law of the Court, that none should admit a Quaker into his house, had been infringed by one Zaccheus Gould, of Lynn. He made his defence before the Court, and succeeded so well that they concluded to remit his fine, if the magistrates would consent. But the magistrates refused, and he would have been three pounds worse off, but happening to suffer by fire, it was thought best to let him go without paying.

The practice of religious fasting was in the height of its vogue. The whole General Court fasted on May 22, 1672, and Mr. Whiting was one of the officiating clergymen at the State House. It was not so called, but there were feelings of independence, even as early as this. We doubt if the General Court, as such, has fasted very often since, for any cause.

A second church was near being formed in Lynn, about this time. It was attempted by Salem parties, who wished to settle one Charles Nicholet over it. The council was held at Lynn, Dec. 11, 1674; Boston, Woburn, and Malden being represented, and Gov. Leverett being present also. After debate (but no sermon) they agreed to constitute the new church; but just then the delegates of Ipswich, Salem, and Rowley entered, and took seats, not being specially welcome. The above vote was then reconsidered, and passed in the negative; so the project fell through. Is not this an earlier instance of a reconsideration than any recognized by Judge Cushing?

The Quakers were still made to suffer. They would pay no parish taxes, and George Oaks, one of the first Friends here, had a cow taken in consequence, "for the priest," as he said. But the doctrine of Fox had gotten a pretty firm foothold here already, and the Quakers were rapidly coming to do much as they would. Their earliest meetings are supposed to have been at or near the spot of the present residence of John L. Shorey, Esq., on Boston Street; but, in 1678, they built a meeting-house on "Wolf Hill." It was the same site occupied for many years on Washington Square. And now "the priest," who had ranked them as "sinners and atheists," and troubled them always, was taken away. The Rev. Mr. Whiting died Dec. 11, 1679, aged 82, after a ministry in Lynn of forty-three years.

The church was untended for about nine or ten months, and then the Rev. Jeremiah Shepard was installed as pastor. It was thought that there should be an associate, and the Rev. Joseph Whiting, son of the old pastor, was set in this useful place. He did not stay long, but removed to Southampton, L. I. But he was hardly needed, for they had a man in the pastorate who carried force enough for about all occasions, and proved it too in more cases than one. Under his energetic lead, they soon determined on a better house, for the old one was small, and not centrally situated. Lewis says, therefore, that in 1682, "the meeting-house was removed to the center of the Common and rebuilt." This statement is not clear, to begin with; nor true, to end with. The fact is, that the old house was disposed of to some ancestor of the late Timothy Alley, and removed to make the westerly half of a house at the head of Sea Street, in which Mr. Alley lived and died. This house was afterward removed to Harbor Street, where it now stands in the same position, the westerly half being the old church, with little transformation. The church on the Common, known as the "Old Tunnel," was a new edifice entirely. Nor did it stand, as Judge Newhall states, opposite Whiting Street, but about a hundred feet to the west, just in front of the present residence of Daniel A. Caldwell. It was a great improvement, being fifty by forty-four feet, with pulpit to seat ten persons, galleries, cupola, and bell.

These were the days of the dreariest superstitions of New England. In 1680 Dr. Philip Read complained that Margaret, wife of John Gifford, of the iron-works, was a witch. But she was a very respectable woman, and neither she nor the Court took notice of the folly. So Parson Shepard wrote of a strange thunderstorm that happened March 26, 1682, when one Handford, at Lynn, saw an apparition of a man in the clouds, and afterwards of a ship, causing much trepidation. Both the historians of Lynn suspect it may have been mirage or atmospheric refraction; but this is taxing science for the benefit of credulity.

The Quakers continued to thrive. They now invited the monthly meeting to Lynn, where it was held for the first time July 18, 1690. Lewis says, at the house of Samuel Collins; but, if they did not use the meeting-house, it is certainly singular. Mr. Collins was, more probably, the chief entertainer. There were only five Lynn men present. In 1692 the town voted how the people should sit in the new church; for, strange as it seems to us, this was matter of public decision then. So we have votes on record as to who should sit in the pulpit, being eight "honorable men"; who in the deacons' seat, three more; and who at the table, twelve more, and chiefly military men. A committee arranged the remaining seats and appointed the sitters for each.

Now began the persecution of the witches, the darkest page of our colonial history. The story need not here be recited; but the comparatively small share of Lynn in the general misfortune will justify some detail. We had the following sufferers: Thomas Farrar, an old man living in Nahant Street, arraigned May 18th, and imprisoned at Boston till Nov. 2d. Sarah Bassett, wife of William, of Nahant Street, and daughter of Richard Hood, tried May 23d, imprisoned at Boston till Dec. 3d. She took with her her babe of twenty-two months old; and another, born soon after liberation, she named Deliverance. Mary Derick, sister of the above William Bassett, and widow of Michael Derick, imprisoned at Boston seven months from May 23d. Elizabeth Hart, wife of Isaac, imprisoned at Boston from May 18th to Dec. 7th; she was quite old, yet was probably released principally on account of the intercession of her son, Thomas. Sarah Cole, wife of John, tried at Charlestown Feb. 1, 1693, and acquitted. Elizabeth Proctor, wife of John, and daughter of William Bassett; she lived in Danvers but was of the Lynn family. She was sentenced to death, but, her condition making the brutality of the judgment evident, she was finally released, but her husband suffered the dread penalty.

The testimony against these persons was such as would not now convict a school-boy of stealing an apple. Some recompense was made to the survivors afterward, such as it was: Mary Derick had £19 in all, and Sarah Bassett, £9. Mr. Shepard himself was at one time "cried out against," but nobody was so foolish as to proceed in the case. So the thing gradually passed away, like a horrible pestilence.

But the growth of the Quakers was probably, in Mr. Shepard's eyes, more threatening than the curse of witchcraft. He appointed a fast-day, July 19, 1694, to stop the "spiritual plague." Cotton Mather says he accomplished very much by it, more than by any "coercion of the civil magistrate." One can easily believe the last statement to be wholly true. He, and perhaps others, thought that Quakerism took severe hurt that day; but the deadly wound was so far healed that, in 1696, two Quakers, — one of them the alleged wizard, Thomas Farrar,—refused to pay parish taxes, as before, and were imprisoned near a month in Salem jail.

Presently Mr. Shepard found a new ally. The Revs. George Keith and John Talbot arrived from England, as missionaries, not for the established church so much as against these same troublesome Quakers. What moved these men in this direction is not clear, but Keith was himself a renegade from the faith of the Friends, which may account for it in part. Mr. Shepard joined with them on their coming to Lynn, and they went to the peaceable church on Wolf Hill, stopping at Samuel Collins's on the way. In both places they met, not only the usual worshippers, but a pretty capable and combative preacher of theirs, one John Richardson, also from England. Violent disputes occurred at both places, and, as in their recorded accounts both claim the best of it, we naturally conclude there was no victory on either side.

In 1703 the Quakers responded to the demand of Gov. Dudley for a list of their names, and reported, by signature, seventeen men. These were probably heads of families or householders. The same year one of them, Walter Phillips, refused to do military duty, and a lot of his land was seized for his fine.

There had been much talk of a second church, and now it was at hand. The people of the north farms had not liked to come so far as the common to meeting, and now, in 1715, they obliged the town to allow them a meeting of their own, and built them a church accordingly. At the first of 1718, Mr. Shepard being feeble, one Mr. Townsend preached for him a while. But the aged pastor continued to decline, and finally, at the age of 72, he died, June 3, 1720. He had preached here forty years.

By the ensuing December the church had made an arrangement with the Rev. Nathaniel Henchman to take their vacant pulpit. He had been invited before, as Mr. Shepard's colleague, and was doubtless well known. He was ordained before the end of the year, receiving £160 at first, and £115 yearly afterward. The new church at "Lynnfield District" had succeeded in settling a minister in August previous, and were enjoying the care of the Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk, and paying him £70 per year. And here was seen the first symptom

of a fair religious toleration. Twenty persons, being Quakers, were, by definite order, fully or partly exempted from parish taxes. In fact, the Friends had now the best of it, or very near. They moved away their old meeting-house, which has since been lost sight of, and built another and better near the same spot. This seems to have been done about 1723. Meantime the old parish moved heavily. They could not promise to pay Mr. Henchman his £115, so at their instance he gave it up and trusted to contribution. But this proved a good move, for he received over £143 in the year. The Lynnfield Parish were not so blessed: they differed with Mr. Sparhawk and finally dismissed him, July 1, 1731. He had preached eleven years, and, being disappointed, he refused to deliver his church records; took his bed and died May 7, 1732; that is, in less than a year. He was succeeded by the Rev. Stephen Chase, Nov. 24, 1731.

And now, seeing that the Lynnfield farmers could sustain a church and parish rates, their brethren west of the river felt like inclinations. They carried their point for a separation, and built a house for the Third Parish in 1736, but we hear of no ordination till 1739, when the Rev. Edward Cheever took charge, Dec. 5. All these things tended to weaken the old parish, and they told Mr. Henchman they could not pay all he wished for. He would not take less, but offered to preach lectures in addition to his sermons. On this they made considerable increase of his pay, and he probably, on the whole, made quite a gain.

Another epoch in the church history had now arrived. The Rev. George Whitefield had made great stir in the adjoining towns by his powerful sensational preaching; and now, July 3, 1745, he came to Lynn and applied to Mr. Henchman for the use of the church. This was flatly refused; so some of the people, desiring to hear the new-comer, built him a platform on the common, using the barn-doors of Benjamin Newhall for that purpose. Here Mr. Whitefield preached, and afterward from the platform round the whipping-post, very near the old church. But we see no evidence that he succeeded in making any deep impression, as indeed he never did anywhere. Mr. Henchman soon after attacked him, in a pamphlet-letter addressed to Mr. Chase, of Lynnfield; and to this the Rev. William Hobby, minister at Reading, replied, opening a warm controversy that reached far and lasted long, but probably was not worth the ink used in it. Mr. Cheever, of the Saugus Parish, resigned his pastorate, after eight years' service, and removed to Eastham. The church worked its way along till August, 1752, when they succeeded in settling the Rev. Joseph Roby. The spirit of change seems, indeed, to have come over the whole people. Mr. Chase decided not to stay at Lynnfield, and left, in 1755, for Newcastle, N. H. But the people did not wait long, but installed the Rev. Benjamin Adams in November of the same year. The next mutation was in order for the First Parish, whose fourth pastor was now to be taken away. Mr. Henchman was not a very old man, being but sixty-one, but sickness fell upon him, after forty-one years of service, and he died at his house on North Common Street, Dec. 23, 1761. Two years were allowed to pass, and then choice was made of the Rev. John Treadwell, who was ordained over the old church March 2, 1763.

Nothing of moment appears from this till May 4, 1777, when Mr. Adams, of Lynnfield, died, 58 years old, after twenty-one years' ministry. There had, indeed, been all the greatness of the American Revolution in this interval; but it affected only in a very slight degree the social and religious condition of the people. Mr. Treadwell was a patriot of the warmest kind, and always carried his musket and trappings into the pulpit on Sundays. The Old Tunnel, for those long, troublous years, must, on meeting-days, have resembled a military station as much as anything. But it all passed happily away. The Lynnfield pulpit was vacant till Sept. 24, 1780, when the Rev. Joseph Mottey was ordained to its care. But these things were never long at rest. Mr. Treadwell, for some cause, grew tired of his charge, concluded to resign it, and, having done so, returned to Ipswich, where he was born. This was in 1782, nineteen years after his settlement. And now followed a vacancy of near three years, after which the church succeeded in settling the Rev. Obadiah Parsons, Feb. 4, 1784, as Sparhawk's memorandum says, "in peace, harmony, and concord." Yet so blessed a condition cannot have long endured, for Mr. Parsons had been charged with sad irregularities at Squam, and barely obtained an acquittal before the council, while the parish rejected that verdict and unanimously dismissed him. He was not successful at Lynn, many would have nothing to do with him, and the church never prospered.

The last era worthy of remark, as noted in the religious history of Lynn, is found in 1790. That year dates the incoming of a new sect; to wit, the Methodists. The Rev. Jesse Lee, the "Methodist Apostle," having arrived here Dec. 14, and receiving, perhaps asking, no favor at the hands of the "Standing Order," had organized his meetings at the house of Benjamin Johnson, on the spot now occupied by Exchange Hall, Market Street. He had such success that he proceeded, Feb. 20, 1791, to form a society, which went into immediate activity. Next, a church was needed, and a spot at the east end of the common, now Park Square, was secured, and a house was raised there, June 21, 1791. Mr. Lee worked on it with his own hands; and in less than one week it was so well advanced that he held in it the services of its dedication. This was the third religious society in Lynn proper, the Friends being the second. A number left the old parish and joined the Methodists: both the deacons went, and, worst of all, carried the communion-plate, so that the First Parish had to borrow from their friends, the church at Saugus. The deacons were threatened with prosecution, and finally gave up the plate; and the old church, though reduced to three male members at one time, showed such mildness toward the seceding parties as to invite them, in 1794, to reunite, without discipline of any kind; and many did return, Dea. Farrington among them. It was a very trying time; and other churches finally fared worse, in other places, than this at Lynn, considering all their causes of sorrow, without and within.

After Mr. Lee chose to retire, the Rev. Amos G. Thomson was stationed here by the conference, being the first regularly installed minister of that faith in Massachusetts. At length, July 16, 1792, Mr. Parsons resigned, after being here eight years, and went back to Gloucester. With his retirement, certainly, if not that of his predecessor, was closed what Dr. Cooke has called the "Century of Puritanism." From this out there was a decided diversion toward a laxer faith, almost reaching Unitarianism. But Aug. 13, 1794, the Rev. Thomas C. Thatcher was installed. He was highly educated, graduated at nineteen, and was now only twenty-three. The old parish thought themselves fortunate for this time at least.

And now the wheel turned again, and Mr. Roby, of Saugus, passed away, Jan. 31, 1803. This venerable man, one of the best and holiest we ever had among us, had preached to this people fifty-one years, and reached his seventy-ninth birthday. Probably no name abides more tenderly in the memory of the inhabitants of Saugus than that of the pious, genial, good old "Parson Roby." He was followed by the Rev. William Frothingham, ordained Sept. 26, 1804.

A crisis that must be noticed happened in 1805, when, as the inhabitants of the town had become so much divided among different denominations, the members of the First Church and Parish came to think the "Old Tunnel" was not a town-house, but a church, and their own. They therefore refused to have the town-meetings held in it any more. Sharp controversy arose, but the town finally retired, and engaged the Methodist church for the purpose. No wonder they felt the expulsion, for they had met in the old church, first and last, for a hundred and seventy-three years.

The ancient faith of the settlers had now lost its potency. The town had no responsibility to protect it; it was left wholly to its God. Other tenets were accepted all around it, other houses of worship sprung up on either hand; for there was no more any king, and people felt their freedom in their thoughts of heaven, as well as earth. The Rev. Josiah Flagg, of Salem, came in 1811, preaching the gospel of Universalism. The Methodist society had grown by the same time, so that a second went out from it, built a new church on the site of the present St. Paul's, on Union Street, and dedicated it November 27th, with the Rev. Epaphras Kibbey, first in charge. And so far from being depleted was the original society of Lee, that they moved away their old house, in May, 1813, having commenced in the year before a new and more capacious edifice for worship, on a lot just south of where the old one stood; the street was after opened over the exact spot.

It was time now for another movement in the old parish. Mr. Thatcher concluded, in 1813, to apply his talent elsewhere, to which there seemed not enough objection to overrule him; so he resigned and went to Cambridge, having preached here nineteen years. The people appear to have esteemed him well, and, at his departure, gave him a present of $800. Let us here remark, that with all their changes and laxities, the people had by no means lost their love for Christian institutions. It was still considered wrong to break the Sabbath by needless travel, and the town now (1813) chose thirty-nine tythingmen to make all due effort to prevent it being done. It prob-

ably amounted to nothing but an expression of sentiment. By this time, a new pastor for the old parish was found. The Rev. Isaac Hurd received their call, and was ordained Sept. 15, 1813; but, if we do not err, he was found too much inclined to Unitarian views, and hardly ever gained decided favor with the descendants of those who were taught of Whiting and Shepard. He only stayed some two and a half years, and resigned his charge May 22, 1816. Meanwhile the Baptists, children of the sufferers of old, rallied, and claimed a share of religious attention. They formed a vigorous society March 17, 1815, and, in May, purchased the old house of the Methodists, and commenced their meetings therein. Next year they were incorporated April 15, 1816, and September 15 the Rev. George Phippen was settled over them. There was prosperity in other churches. The Quakers thought their house too narrow, removed it to the corner of Broad and Beach streets, where it yet stands, and built another, more than twice as large, on the same ground. It stood there till 1852, when it was moved to a new lot on Silsbee Street, where it is at present. In 1817, Mr. Frothingham was dismissed from the church at Saugus.

After a space of two years and more, the First Parish found a shepherd, in the person of the Rev. Otis Rockwood. He was ordained to the vacant pulpit July 1, 1818, and manifestly to the relief of those who had deplored the late near approaches of heterodoxy to this ancient fold. Mr. Rockwood was undoubtedly free from Unitarian affections, and, as a proof of this, may be cited the attachment that his people speedily conceived for him. But new societies kept forming round them. An Episcopal church was gathered Jan. 27, 1819, and made their tabernacle in the Lynn Academy. Mr. Mottey, of Lynnfield, died July 9, 1821, at the age of sixty-five, after a ministry of forty-one years.

There can hardly be a religious body without dissension. It was now the Quakers who were to attract the notice of every one. Early in 1822, or perhaps the year before, a worthy female member came to imagine herself in a manner inspired, and, among other predictions, announced the day of her own approaching death. She obtained a number of adherents in the society, and their belief, with others' opposition, grew rapidly into a violent controversy between the two. The deluded sister did not die at all as announced, to the disappointment of many; but the debate that had arisen would not be settled so readily. Finally, the party representing the "New Light" determined to possess themselves of the honors of the meeting; and, on Sunday, Feb. 17, 1822, one of these, a wealthy citizen, not necessary here to be named, with others, entered the house and sought to take position in the "minister's seat." The leader above mentioned was equipped with a sword, which did not help make him welcome. The party were expelled, but renewed the effort in the afternoon, attracting so much attention that the sheriff came and dispersed the crowd. Some were arrested, the leader among them, imprisoned till March 16th, and, after trial, two were acquitted and the rest fined; but the spirit of quarrel was so rife in the society that the boys had a saying, "Let's go and see the Quakers fight!"

As there was now no prospect that the First Church would ever adopt or consider the Unitarian faith, those who preferred that belief formed a society for themselves, and were incorporated June 15, 1822. November 25th following, they began the building of the church still occupied by them, South Common Street, corner of Church. It was dedicated April 30, 1823. June 21, 1824, the Lynnfield church passed into the charge of the Rev. Joseph Searl. The Methodists had already a society and meeting-house there. The new Unitarian society settled their first pastor, the Rev. James D. Greene, Nov. 3, 1824. It was now the turn of the old parish to tire of their old-fashioned temple. It had served in all weathers for one hundred and forty-five years; it was well and honorably worn, and its people decided to build afresh. Therefore, pulling the old edifice in pieces, they selected the best portions, took them to the corner of South Common and Commercial streets, and constructed the house that yet stands there. This was done April 11, 1827; and the new house was dedicated October 17th following. Mr. Greene left the Unitarian society Aug. 4, 1828; and Dec. 9, 1829, the Rev. David H. Barlow succeeded to the place. In 1830, the Methodists, more and more numerous, formed their third society, and built a house in South Street, dedicated August 3d, the Rev. Rufus Spaulding being the first minister.

Mr. Rockwood at length thought best to leave the First Church, where he had gained a popularity only excelled by that of Shepard, Henchman, or Thatcher. He was dismissed May 12, 1832, and the Rev. David Peabody, receiving a call soon after, was ordained pastor November 15th ensuing. By this time the ancient character of Lynn for conservatism in religious thought was all gone, and every fanatic and innovator thought this a promising field. The Mormons made an effort in 1832, and then, as well as in the ten years after, made and carried off some converts. The established churches kept on. Mr. Barlow left the Unitarian, Feb. 2, 1833, succeeded by the Rev. Samuel D. Robbins, November 13th, same year; February 14th, the Baptists dedicated their house on North Common, corner of Park Street; March 25th, the first Universalist society was formed, meeting in the town hall; April 22, 1835, Mr. Peabody gave up the charge of the First Parish; a wholly new candidate for attention appeared in a "Christian" society, which was gathered, and built a house in Silsbee Street, November 5th, same year; while, December 10th, the Universalists dedicated their house, just finished, on Union Street. But those of them who lived in the westerly section, disliking the new location, formed a second society, and finally bought the house of the First Church, corner of Commercial Street. They first had for minister, the Rev. Dunbar B. Harris. They organized March 9, 1836. The Episcopalians tried their hand again, and formed a very small church of three members, January 7th, same year, taking the name of Christ Church; November 5th, they had a house begun on North Common Street, just above Hanover. It is now called St. Stephen's.

In this year, 1836, the First Church made another selection of a pastor, and succeeded in installing perhaps the most remarkable man who ever had charge of their pulpit. The Rev. Parsons Cooke, then of Portsmouth, N. H., was placed in the desk of Cobbett and Whiting May 4th, and continued active in its duties till his death, only a little while after his last discourse, Feb. 12, 1864. The society felt stimulated to fresh exertion, and at once begun a new house of worship on South Common Street, corner of Vine. It was dedicated Feb. 1, 1837. The new Episcopal church was dedicated July 20th, same year, and, June 7, 1839, Mr. Robbins left the Unitarian society, to be succeeded by the Rev. William G. Swett, Jan. 1, 1840.

The year 1841 is to be remembered in Lynn as the time of a fresh efflux of "free" thought, exhibited by what became widely known as the "Comeouters." The case deserves a brief consideration. These people were primarily Garrisonian abolitionists, starting with the unimpeachable doctrine of human "equality before the law." But, not finding the cause of the slave well espoused by most of the religious bodies of that day, they unwisely pronounced all the churches in league with slavery; and called for good men and true to "come out" and testify against them. Hence the name. They were not confined to Lynn; but had a strong position here, being upheld by such men as Christopher Robinson, Jonathan Buffum, and others, men of private and public excellence, apart from the delusion here sustained. The real mischief was from without, as will appear. Finally, on a Sunday, in 1841, they rallied here in force, determined to try a bold though foolish movement. The people in general knew nothing of it; but there were in town Stephen S. Foster, Nathaniel P. Rogers, Parker Pillsbury, Thomas P. Beach, Henry Clapp, Jr., and many others, full of bitter words and martyr spirit. Dividing into parties, they repaired to several of the churches of largest congregations, entered without ceremony, and interrupted the services with excited harangues.

Foster led off at the First Church. Dr. Cooke commanded him to "sit down"; but as he paid no heed, half a dozen muscular men quietly seized him and carried him out passive as a log, and set him on the sidewalk, his mates following. Pillsbury, at the same time, headed an attack on the Baptists; and, proving more troublesome, was shut up in a closet, and detained till the end of service. Afternoon, nothing daunted, Beach entered the First Methodist Church alone, leaped the altar-rail during the last prayer, and began to talk. No questions were asked, for the thing was well noised about, and Methodist blood is not given to hesitation. In a minute he was going "neck and heels," and struggling smartly, down the aisle and down the steps, more being willing to help than could get a chance. He claimed that his thumb was broken in the affray; but it was not credited. Some of the others had visited the Quaker meeting in the morning, and, finding opportunity without interrupting others, had spoken and been sharply rebuked in turn; but no conflict happened there. About six o'clock, P. M., Lyceum Hall was opened, and they made a demonstration of their own; where, probably, more harshness, more invective, and more unreason were poured out within an hour than most ever hear in a lifetime. But there was no more disturbance. Foster ranted to small crowds about the streets for a few days, not much noticed, and then disappeared. Others made some trouble for themselves elsewhere, and their

printed effusions were abundant in Lynn; but their strength was all gone in that one effort.

Mr. Swett, of the Unitarian society, died Feb. 15, 1843. We cannot find space, nor is it necessary, to chronicle further the various changes of the now numerous religious bodies recognized in Lynn. Many different pastors, of diversified talents and graces, had filled the score or so of pulpits that opened to the people every week. Within their own denominations, several of these afterward proved to be eminent and influential; but none are remembered as having made such impression on public attention as to call for larger notice here. Thus, therefore, we close the consideration of the religious annals of Lynn, in which it has been sought to show the growth of its spirit and ideas through the long period of its town history.

This sketch would remain very incomplete without some little account of the town in respect, particularly, to its

Educational Development.

The method of the early Puritans, as is well known, was not specially favorable to the establishment of town schools. They believed in education, and valued learning more, perhaps, than most other people; but they also believed, most religiously, in the pre-eminence of parental instruction. They acted accordingly. Harvard would found his college, and Dummer his academy, as soon as there were any young men for students; but those young men should be catechised and taught the elements at home, and afterwards "fitted" at the minister's, with little or no reference to any professional teacher intervening. Perhaps the remark of Gov. Dudley, in 1642, when writing to his son, "There is a want of schoolmasters hereabout," may indicate about the earliest attraction of public notice to the subject. But this want naturally grew to be more and more felt and understood; and at length, in October, 1647, every town was ordered to have a school for reading and writing where there were fifty families, and a grammar school where there were a hundred. There seems a probability that both the ministers, Whiting and Cobbett, did something in Lynn in compliance with the above, as they are both called "teaching elders" in papers of that day; but there is no better evidence on the point than that the town was liable to a fine if the school was not kept, and we find no sign of their being complained of. We find, further, that on the accession of Mr. Shepard to the pastorship, Mr. Joseph Whiting was selected as "teacher"; but the fact of his being "ordained" to the office shows that it was rather a religious than literary calling. It hardly seems that he did much in either capacity; and, in 1687, we find the Rev. Mr. Shepard keeping the school, as says Lewis, "several months this winter." Probably he so continued; for, Dec. 21, 1691, the selectmen appointed him schoolmaster for the year ensuing "with his consent." There is reason to think that this consent was not readily obtained very long; for in 1696, the town hired Abraham Normenton to teach for the next year, giving him five pounds, and hiring Nathaniel Newhall's house for a school-room. Newhall had twenty-five shillings. But things did not remain quiet then, any more than now, for, June 7, 1700, they went back to Mr. Shepard, and engaged him to keep a grammar school, giving him thirty pounds for it. They had, plainly, either grown richer than formerly, or else discriminated forcibly between the candidates. By 1702, a more complete arrangement had been digested; and the grammar master was voted, December 14th, ten pounds for his maintenance; beside which, he was to have a graduated pay of two, three, or six pence per week from each parent, according to the branch of study pursued by the pupil.

The next teacher heard of here was John Merriam, who came in 1713. He taught both Latin and the English branches, though not English grammar, no text-book of that kind then existing. Neither, says Lewis, was there any spelling-book nor arithmetic: but all "sums" were set upon the slate, and spelling went wholly by fancy. A teacher of that day would be staggered by the breadth and exactness of the present. In 1716, Mr. Merriam was succeeded by one Bishop. A little later, 1720, the school passed into the care of John Lewis. The statements on record leave some question whether Lynn had then four separate schools, or whether one which opened in succession on the common, at Woodend, in Saugus, and Lynnfield. Certainly one Samuel Dexter, of Malden, taught somewhere here about the whole of 1720, as he very distinctly states in his diary. And as to the circuit method, if they then kept a three months' school in each district, they must soon have modified the plan; for, in 1728, a new school-house was built in "Laighton's Lane," which is the same as Franklin Street, and similar movements soon after must have brought any such itinerancy to a close. This new house is supposed to be the one now standing on the rear of the lot of Mr. Thomas J. Lummus, nearly opposite the Cobbett School. We find that, in 1738, Richard Mower was schoolmaster: but yet discover nothing as to which district employed him. Very likely there had been sharp controversies; for, Aug. 3, 1731, the westend people had succeeded in getting a vote, and removing the new school-house to Water Hill, — Federal Street, probably. They kept it there, too, for the next seventeen years; but, in 1752, the others overpowered them, and the school-house travelled back to Franklin Street.

We remark, in 1784, the occurrence of a kind of era in the educational concerns of the town. The Friends had always been proportionately numerous in Lynn, as well as wealthy; and though they would neither pay taxes to support the old church, nor perform or recognize military duty, they had paid their part toward common schools, even while maintaining a separate school of their own. But in the above year they felt yet stronger pulses of sectarian blood, and demanded that part of the town tax should be spent on their own school. It was not wholly equitable, nor a policy safe or sound; yet they had influence enough to prevail with the town, and they obtained an allowance for several years after.

In connection with this part of our history, there naturally runs some inquiry as to the mental habits and disposition of the people. This is amusingly, yet very characteristically, satisfied by a record of instructions voted in town-meeting, May 8, 1786, to John Carnes, Esq., one of the first representatives under the constitution. In this, he was taught to "endeavor to bring about another mode of proceeding in our law matters, and to put it out of the power of the Gentlemen of the law to take such advantage of their clients as they have often done. *And if it cannot be done in any other way, that you endeavor to bring about an annihilation of the office.*" This was only a gentle showing of the strong disposition that grew here so early and so vigorously against all professional and otherwise eminent characters. They were as good as resolved that no one should be greater than another, and something of the feeling yet remains.

The multiplication of schools had fairly commenced, and the method of succeeding in local plans and purposes by "pressure" on the town-meeting. A few person clubbed together in 1794, and built a new school-house where they chose. Then bringing their forces properly to bear, they succeeded in selling it to the town, though probably no amount of effort could have obtained the building of one by public vote. We do not learn where this was.

It was in the next year, 1795, that Nathaniel Massey, a respectable and worthy townsman of West Lynn, often prominent and enterprising in public matters, built an edifice on Boston Street, exactly opposite the old mill, the like of which had never appeared in Lynn. This was a public hall, the first place of public assembly, save the churches, and long known as "Massey's Hall." It yet stands in good condition, having been altered into a dwelling, now owned by Mr. A. Judson Fuller. Five years after, in 1800, the first dancing-school was opened here in this same hall.

It may have been so throughout New England or not; but hitherto the school privileges of Lynn had only been conceded to males. Girls never went to school, with few exceptions. Benjamin Mudge, Esq., writes, that up to 1801, when he left school, he never saw but three girls in the public schools, and they only in the afternoon, to learn to write. It is indeed sixteen years after this when females are first mentioned in the school reports.

What may be distinctly mentioned as liberal education commenced, perhaps, in 1805, when the "Lynn Academy," then just built on the south side of the common, was opened for attendance. It was on the first day of May, according to some, though Lewis says 5th April, there being snow enough in the morning for sleighing, but all gone by noon. The bell was a gift from James Robinson, Esq., and the first master, Mr. William Ballard. It continued a school of some consequence, though gradually declining, under a variety of masters, till 1849. None of its keepers were persons otherwise celebrated, except Alonzo Lewis, the first historian of Lynn. It closed with Jacob Batchelder, a man of much culture, and largely known in local circles.

The style of popular feeling and social temper was again exhibited in 1808. Benjamin Merrill, Esq., a lawyer of unimpeachable character and eminent talent, anything and everything but a pettifogger, thinking an opening for business appeared in Lynn, took rooms in the house of Elijah Downing, North Common, corner of Park Street, and invited clients. He did not obtain many, but soon came to him a committee of citizens much troubled. "We fear that evil and strife will be encouraged among us by the presence of a lawyer. We wish

you would leave the town." He was sagacious, and understood the greater by the less. There was no good for him in Lynn. He went to Salem, had high success, earned money, and died with the love and honor of all. But another effort was made, in 1812, by Reuben P. Washburn, Esq., who opened an office in "Wiley's Store," corner Western Avenue and Federal Street. Yet he could have no encouragement. He managed to stay till 1817, and then retreated. He went to Vermont, and had excellent success.

By this time the inhabitants of Nahant had much increased, and in 1818, by the influence of Boston parties, a school-house was built there, with a library connected. The Boston people donated books freely, and it became a good local institution. The element of library influence, as concerned in the educational advance of a people, must not be overlooked; and we notice here the formation, or rather incorporation, this same year, of the "Lynn Social Library." There had been one or more social libraries in town at earlier dates; but they had all disappeared, and this was the first that obtained a name upon record. It was located in a small building or office owned by the company, on the east side of Market Street, exactly at the southern end of Exchange Hall. The Franklin Building, or Cadet Hall, now covers the spot. Circulating libraries began here considerably later. Lewis says he himself opened the first in 1822, but it is thought to have been a very small collection. There was another kept by Charles F. Lummus, from 1827 to 1832, into which that of Lewis probably passed. Akin to this form of culture is that of the lyceum, the first of which was organized Dec. 23, 1828. It lasted in operation twelve or fourteen years.

When we reach the period beginning with 1830, we meet the time when the intellectual forces of Lynn were more active, perhaps, than ever before or since. Lewis had just before, in 1829, published the first numbers of his history of the town, with his quaint little map, twelve or fifteen inches square, on which he approximately located the old roads and early settlers. Jan. 23, 1830, he began publishing a newspaper. The first one has been already mentioned as the "Lynn Mirror," started by Charles F. Lummus in 1825. Mr. Lewis's was the second, and was called the "Lynn Record." He did not continue in it more than six weeks, when it passed into the hands of Jonathan Buffum, and became the organ of the Anti-Masonic party. By 1833, at furthest, it was in the editorial charge of Daniel Henshaw, under whom it continued an able, clear-sighted, and readable sheet, till it ceased in 1841. In national politics, it was steadily Democratic.

Meanwhile, Benjamin Mudge established the third paper, called the "Essex Democrat." It was wholly a political sheet, full of the sharp discussion of that partisan period. One or two years after, the material was carried to Salem, and the concern merged in the "Commercial Advertiser." The fourth paper was the "Weekly Messenger," commenced April 14, 1832, by Judge James R. Newhall. This was a large and good-looking paper, literary in style, but was not long continued. But some time after, Nov. 10, 1838, the Whig party feeling need of a vehicle for their special sentiments, the "Lynn Freeman" was founded by David Taylor and Charles Coolidge, and edited and printed by Judge Newhall. This paper, destined to a longer existence than any before it, passed, in 1840, into the editorial hands of Eugene F. W. Gray, who was succeeded in about a year by Richard I. Attwill. With 1844 came another change, Messrs. Taylor and Coolidge selling out to a new firm, Messrs. Josiah F. Kimball and Horace J. Butterfield. The first partner became editor, and the paper took the added title of "Essex County Whig." Some two years later, the firm dissolved, and Mr. Kimball, continuing the journal, changed its name to the "Lynn News." In this form it endured till 1861, when it definitely passed out of being. It was always of mild Whig principles, and a very influential, creditable paper.

The year 1840 saw the birth of another paper in Lynn, a religious print in the interest of strict orthodoxy. It was edited by the Rev. Parsons Cooke, assisted by Judge Newhall, but did not long remain in Lynn. It was transferred to Boston, and merged in the "Boston Recorder." This was a very vigorous, but controversial paper. Again, in 1842, the press of the old "Lynn Record," since run as a job-office by John B. Tolman, was re-opened for a new paper devoted to temperance. This was the "Essex County Washingtonian." It first issued March 16, 1842, with Christopher Robinson, publisher, and David H. Barlow, editor. But, a change becoming advisable before long, Mr. Barlow retired, and was succeeded by Henry Clapp, Jr., since so widely known, in and out of New York, as "king of the Bohemians." At the same time the name of the paper was changed to the "Pioneer." Mr. Clapp left in 1848, to be followed in the editorship by George Bradburn, formerly of Nantucket. This arrangement lasted only a year or so; and the office and good-will were sold and transferred to Lewis Josselyn. This gentleman laid aside all the radical ideas that had been cherished in the office for years, reduced the issue to a plain Democratic basis, and substituted the title of the "Bay State" for all the foregoing. This paper first appeared Oct. 11, 1849, and continued for a time, when it stopped, and the old "Record" office found its limit of existence.

Returning, after this digression, to the more strictly educational portion of this history, we remark that in 1830 the system of schools in separate wards, or districts, was already in operation. The division had really been made, when eight wards were thus formed, with one or more schools in each. Single small schools were kept in the four lesser wards, at Dye House Village (now Wyoma), at Gravesend, at Tower Hill, and Nahant; while grammar schools, with one or more primaries, existed in Swampscott, in Woodend, near the Central Railroad Station, and at each end of the common. The little old structure used at Tower Hill (formerly Willis's Hill) is yet standing, a diminutive affair enough. That at Market Square stood rather on South Common Street, and was in fact the old meeting-house of Jesse Lee, slightly altered. A primary was on the second floor, and another primary house stood in Federal Street, not always occupied. The grammar school in Franklin Street was where it has been described; but a new house had been built, and the old one stood near for the primary classes. The "Blackmarsh" school was, formerly, in Exchange, then called Pine Street, but later took position near Silsbee Street, at the head of Mount Vernon Street; the "Woodend" one stood for a period on Chestnut Street, near the head of Union; but a brick-house was built on Howard Street, where it stayed for many years.

But the size of the schools, the spread of the inhabitants, and the advance of style, made new accommodations necessary before long. Two very large wooden houses (for the time) were built from plans drawn by the Rev. George Bowler (son of Thomas Bowler, the town clerk), one in Centre Street, the other in Franklin Street, just opposite the old location. The latter was dedicated Dec. 29, 1848, and the former Jan. 3, 1849. They were thought even extravagant for the time, costing some $5,000 each. The central wards being thus provided, the extremes clamored for a share; and two more, of lesser expense, were erected, one in Swampscott, situated on Redington Street, a little east of King's Beach, and dedicated Dec. 20, 1849, and the other on Boston Street, just west of the Almshouse, and dedicated about the same time.

And here we take leave of those movements and enterprises of the town that belong strictly to its instruction and intelligence. Yet a single paragraph may be given here, as no better place presents, for a subject not distantly related, for the charities of a place are part and parcel of its highest sociality. Neither Lewis nor Judge Newhall make any reference to the first almshouse in Lynn. The omission is singular, as it was an establishment of considerable size and was kept for many years. Prior to its erection, the paupers had been boarded out after the usual custom of New England; but an arrangement was made by which a house was either built or bought, standing in the rear of the house now on the corner of Essex and Chestnut streets in "Woodend," and almost on the site of John Wood's first dwelling. Here the poor were almost all kept up to 1819. Then the town bought the fifty-acre farm on Willis's Hill, Boston Street, and built thereon the first portions of the present large almshouse concern. At a later period, a stone building was added as a wing of the main building, for the reception of convicted offenders. Out of this use of the premises, it is suspected, grew the change of name from "Willis's" to "Tower" Hill, a not unnatural reflection suggesting the famous place of old English confinement and execution. A hospital-building has since been added, another for contagious diseases, a large barn, and many other improvements. But the greater portion of assistance to the poor here has always been in a partial form, by "Out-Door Relief," for the independent spirit of the people will prefer much acute suffering to an abode in any almshouse, or a visible reliance on public charity of any description.

Lynn as a City, — 1850 to 1876.

Our sketch, thus far, has only been one of events. No attempt has been made to depict the natural situation, surface, or scenery of the place, or in any particular to identify it with the present time. This remains as the second part of our duty.

In the year 1876, the city of Lynn possessed a territory somewhat pentagonal in form, having a coast line, accurately followed, of some four or four and a half miles, but which, considered as rectilinear, would

be about three miles and a quarter. A line at right angles to this, from the boundary of Nahant, or Long Beach, to the most northern point on that of Lynnfield, gave very closely five miles as the inland extent. The cross width at this northern boundary was something more than a mile and two-fifths, and the total area differed little from eleven and one-third square miles. It stood, as regards the northerly shore of Massachusetts Bay, as the fourth township east of Boston, the second in Essex County, and the first of any large size. It had on the south, Nahant; on the east and north-east, Swampscott, Salem, and Peabody; on the north-west, Lynnfield; and Saugus on the west. The southernmost third of the last-named boundary was made by the Saugus River, which, for all that distance and something more, was a mere estuary, broad and crooked, flowing through extensive, level marshes covered with salt grass, and regularly drenched by every tide. Such marshes also extended eastward in front of the city along the whole western half of the shore line, limiting all convenient access to the sea to a small middle section, as the eastern portion was formed of low bluffs or banks, with no protection from the ocean. The marshes found their natural extension in broad and impassable flats, bare at low tides, that filled the whole space between Pines Point on the west and Nahant on the east, where the harbor of Lynn, good or bad, must needs be found. In these flats ran numerous channels, in which the low-water depth varied from five to ten feet, though a few deep holes were known, measuring from fifteen to seventeen feet. As the tide-range here is about ten feet, there was accommodation in the harbor, on a full sea, for a great variety of coastwise and other light craft, such often discharging at the wharf even without lightering; but for large vessels, no access whatever existed, unless the very doubtful sort found in Saugus River, the lower channel of which was narrow, and obstructed by bridges at three points. From a point nearly in the middle of the shore line ran out the singular beach that only furnished land-passage to Nahant. This was now only a ridge of sand and pebbles, two miles in length, and about a thousand feet wide; but, by somewhat dim tradition, had once had attached on the west or harbor side a considerable strip of marsh, similar to that beyond the harbor. No adequate cause appeared for its origin or continuance; but the heavy surf always running on the outer side made the people of Lynn always believe it a natural barrier against inundation, and great pains had therefore been taken to preserve it, especially as some storms had succeeded in washing over it in a few places. A simple but effective earthwork, devised by Lewis (the historian), had been built along it in 1851, composed of red-cedar trees bedded in a sloping position, so as to catch and hold the drifting sand. By 1876, the trees had all disappeared; but the sand wall had become firm, fully as high as they were, and densely covered with strong beach-grass. Little more fear was felt for the safety of the beach, or the excellent road that ran along the west side of the earthwork. Such was the character of Lynn, as contemplated from the sea. The harbor, from the deep water of Broad Sound to the wharves, measured not less than three and a half to four miles; and viewed at this distance the appearance of the city was not imposing, as it presented in all but its eastern division only a very flat and monotonous extension.

Passing inland from the shore, at a distance of two or two and a half miles, one reached the solid base of a range of rocky hills, crossing the township from east to west, and rising in a few cases to about two hundred feet elevation. North of these, as a rule, there was no settlement; but the rear country, through which the hilly figure still continued, was left to solitary and poorly-known woodlands and pastures, threaded with numberless cartways and paths, and termed, in a word, "Lynn Woods." In front of these hills, that stood for a background, lay the whole inhabited district. Westward, it showed an almost flat plain, from Saugus River nearly half across; but here a ridge of the hills, leaving the general parallelism to the shore, ran down almost southerly to the coast, undulating in the successive eminences of White's Hill, the Highlands, and Sagamore Hill. The most noted point in this ridge was High Rock, just in the centre of habitation, and 185 feet in height. On the east of this ridge ran, north and south, a long valley, reaching inward the whole depth of the township, and occupied, northerly, by a chain of ponds, sometimes called the "Lakes of Lynn," and southerly, by the stream of Stacy's Brook, which drained one of them. Little of the domain of Lynn remained beyond this; but the hilly character continued till long after reaching the boundary of Swampscott.

The inhabited district of Lynn is crossed from west to east by three great lines of travel and communication, to which two subordinate ones may be added. The first and most northerly is known as Boston Street, which is also the most ancient of all. It was not, very probably, the original road from Boston to Salem; for there are scraps and vestiges of an older way, now otherwise obliterated, which evidently ran by a very crooked route much further to the northward. But Boston Street is certainly ancient; for the "Great Bridge," as it was formerly called, at East Saugus, was built in 1639, and was connected with a travelled way leading to Lynn, certainly in 1648, when Edmund Ingalls was drowned there. The house of Andrew Mansfield, the first town clerk, was built on Boston Street in 1666; that of John Carnes had a probable date in 1646; the Burchstead house, anciently, perhaps, that of Robert Potter, was apparently erected in 1650; and there were others pointing to an equal antiquity. Boston Street, then, was long the only line of travel from the capital. Leaving the Great Bridge, it runs, with many deviations, and a little in front of the hills, by a general course almost due north-east to the line of Peabody. On its way it crosses the "Highland" ridge by the northern and most easy pass, at the morocco factories of Pevear & Co., where Strawberry Brook also finds room, though the notch is only some three hundred feet wide. A small rock-cutting had here to be made, but no other on the route; and the grade secured was without perceptible inclination, though the hills on either side rise a hundred feet and more.

The second of these lines was the product of that new enterprise that sprang up after the Revolution, and is that known for many years as the Salem Turnpike. It was opened in 1803, having been chartered and built in defiance of a very strong opposition. The Ballards, of Saugus, and others whose interests lay along Boston Street, contested it in every way; and it was declared that no road could be built across the marshes that would not wholly sink out of sight in a short time. All the sections that were thus situated were provided with a foundation after the Dutch method; no excavation being made, but a thick layer of brushwood faggots being laid in the marsh, and then spread with the sods from the side cuttings, after which the gravel was laid on to the depth required. No sinkage of any consequence took place, or, if any, it lasted only a little while. A little gravel hillock by the bank of Saugus River bore the name of "Fox Hill." A bridge was here made, and the hillock levelled for material. Hence, it has always been called "Fox Hill Bridge." From this it runs almost exactly north-east, and as straight as a road could well be made, almost a mile, to "Breed's End," where it passed, until recently, under the two great elms planted by Ezra Breed, which remained as notable landmarks, each a hundred feet high, till one blew down in the gale of Sept. 8, 1869, and the other was given to needless destruction in 1876. Going on a short half mile, the turnpike passes the important point where the common joins its western end with Federal Street, formerly "Goose Lane."

At somewhat less than a mile further, the turnpike crosses the old "Laighton's Lane," now long called Franklin Street; and almost immediately begins an up-grade, by which it surmounts the "Highland" ridge through the second pass, between Farrington's Hill and the "Highlands" proper, or what was long known as "Rocks Pasture." This pass gives a long level at the summit, at about ninety feet altitude, from which the road descends rapidly, still perfectly straight, and crosses the old "Fresh-marsh Lane," now Chestnut Street, in a half mile further. Then passing on, it reaches, in about three-fourths of another mile, the southernmost of the "Lakes," the same from which Stacy's Brook takes origin. This lake, or pond, though small, was found so remarkably deep as to render an ordinary bridge impracticable. There was therefore devised what cannot, probably, be found elsewhere in New England, a bridge without piers, lying afloat on the water. The breadth of the pond is 456 feet, but the distance was successfully spanned in this way, and a solid bridge built that has borne all the heavy travel of the route for three-quarters of a century, with need of no repairs but surface planking, the low timbers being ascertained to be still perfectly sound. Lewis aptly compares it to the Persian bridge of boats over the Hellespont. Of course, any pontoon bridge furnishes the type of this; but occurrences in actual practice must be rare. The water has since been always known as "Floating-bridge Pond;" whatever earlier name it had is not now known. By this time the road has entered the irregular granitic country, and presents nothing peculiar till it crosses the line of Salem, as it soon does, at a point about thirty rods north of the corner bound of Swampscott.

In 1868, this rather remarkable way became free of toll by the limitation of its charter. The maintenance of the track was divided between the several including towns, and allowances were made, pro and con, for final settlement. The portion thus falling to Lynn received

the name of Western Avenue, was soon greatly improved, and became one of the finest drives in the city.

The third of the great lines of travel across the township is the Eastern Railroad. This was chartered in 1837, opened in 1838, and has been steadily increasing in business and magnitude since that time. It enters the territory over Saugus River by a bridge 1,550 feet long, and, after passing the creek and dock at Commercial Street, runs on with a gentle up-grade, and at length strikes the "Highland" ridge at Central Square. Here is the principal station, beyond which, the ridge being found to consist of gravel, with a very little rock-cutting the road was carried through the ridge, instead of over it, the cut averaging eighteen feet in depth. This required the maintenance of four bridges, in Silsbee, Green, Chestnut, and Fayette streets. After coming to grade again, the valley of Stacy's Brook had to be crossed by a filling quite as high, though not as long, as the cut had been before it.

Parties at West Lynn and in Saugus, who did not feel satisfied with the movements of the Eastern Railroad, formed a new company and obtained a charter, under which the Saugus Branch Railroad was opened for travel Feb. 1, 1853. It ran for a time independently; and then, by certain obscure proceedings among the stockholders, the Eastern Railroad Company were found in possession of a controlling share. As a result, the road was soon transferred to them; and they, having built about a mile of connection, have continued to run numerous daily trains to Boston over it with success, though the circuitousness of the route has earned it the name of "round the Horn." Thus the business of the railroad in Lynn has been augmented, till now, some hundred and twenty-five trains arrive and depart daily, each of them two or three times larger than the first made use of.

The two secondary lines are yet to be mentioned. One, and the most northerly, diverges from the turnpike, or Western Avenue, at the Lynn Hotel, on Market Square, and running almost due east over the common and park, continues eastward with less directness by the way of Essex Street, once famous as "Marblehead Lane." In this way it gets a tolerably easy, though not natural, pass over the ridge at the very base of High Rock, making there a summit at seventy-five feet; and keeping on ground little less elevated almost two miles further, and passing the ancient homestead of John Wood, it at last enters Swampscott over the rear of "Proctor's Mountain," and continues to Salem and Marblehead. It is usually termed the "Forest River Road." The second subordinate route, which hardly exists separately in West Lynn, passes the ridge at the most southern comfortable point, on the rear of Sagamore Hill. It gathered, as one may say, from Broad, Market, and Exchange streets, and runs eastward by the old site of the Quaker meeting-house on "Wolf Hill," afterward "Pudding Hill," and now Washington Square. Its summit is at the corner of Broad and Chestnut streets, at about sixty-one feet altitude. This, following eastward close to the shore, forms the usual passage to the principal parts of Swampscott, and thence to Marblehead; and up to about 1840 it also, by diversion from Broad Street, gave the only access to Nahant, by the street of that name. At present this peninsula is approached by other and more commodious routes.

On these five ways, as a framework, are built the very extensive nettings of the streets of Lynn. In 1844, Lewis reckoned the aggregate at rather over forty-two miles. Later, it was stated at sixty, and by 1876 was almost exactly one hundred miles. It will probably appear that this is in a greater proportion to the population than in most other cities.

Near High Rock, and almost directly west, lies Park Square, the most remarkable of all the public openings of the city. It is formed by the junction of North and South Common, Franklin, Market, and Essex streets.

Around it have always been the historic waymarks of the town, in peculiar number and significance. The ancient Johnson House, lately demolished, stood here, built doubtless long before 1700. The Methodist church of Jesse Lee was here, at first just at the east end of the square. When his people set up a new house of worship, they placed it on the south side, just over against the old location, where it stands to-day. At the east end, corner of Market and Essex streets, is yet standing the "War Office" of 1812, then called "Paul and Ellis's Hall," from the two brothers Newhall, who owned it. This has been spoken of as the place where the town consented to the separation of Lynnfield. It was also the scene of more and noisier Democratic junketings, in those old days, than most now can remember, or wish to. On the south side, between the Methodist church and the house of Ellis Newhall, above named, was built in 1814 the first brick building in Lynn, so far as is now known. This was the banking-house of the Lynn Mechanics' Bank, set in operation that year. Originally, it only comprised the western half of the present structure, as the different bricklaying shows. The vault was laid most ponderously, of blocks of granite, with cannon-shot bedded in the joints. The bank remained in operation here till 1834, when it was removed to the new house on Broad Street, opposite Exchange. It was the only bank in town till 1836. The house, much enlarged, was afterward the residence of William Prescott, M.D., the fine student of natural history, later of Concord, N. H.; and since then, of the Hon. Roland G. Usher, present United States marshal of Massachusetts District. On the east of the church, yet stands, with no great alteration, the brick residence formerly of the Rev. Enoch Mudge, an eminent and faithful preacher of Methodist truth, member of the Constitutional Convention of 1820, and father of the Hon. E. Redington Mudge, of Swampscott. Somewhat further west than the house of Ellis Newhall, stands that which was long the residence of Goold Brown, the eminent grammarian, a genial Quaker, full of kindness for everything but false syntax. Nearly opposite, on the north side, is seen the house of the Hon. Josiah Newhall, a prosperous manufacturer, and senator in 1832 and '33. Between the houses of Goold Brown and Ellis Newhall, appears the St. Mary's Catholic Church, a fine Gothic structure, standing some distance from the street. It was built in 1861 (the old church of Jesse Lee, sold by the city to the Catholics in 1855, or thereabout, having been burned May 28, 1859), was the first brick church in Lynn, and long considered the finest public edifice here. The city hall, the next structure in order of time, situated exactly opposite the Methodist church, occupies the site of the old residence of John Legree Johnson, who was the best remembered of all our town treasurers. A narrow lot adjoining was also added in the purchase. It had on it a house of great age, belonging to a family of the same name, and known as the "Long Johnson House." The city hall was begun in the laying of the corner-stone by the Hon. Peter M. Neal, mayor, Nov. 28, 1865, and finished in its dedication, Nov. 30, 1867, in presence of all the people its walls could hold, being probably not less than three thousand. Seventy of the oldest men in the city sat round the main gallery, and listened to an address by Mayor R. G. Usher, a poem by C. M. Tracy, Esq., and an historical sketch by James R. Newhall, Esq. The building is of brick and freestone, built by Edwin Adams, from plans by Bryant & Gilman, of Boston, and has always been much admired. It accommodates all departments of government, with the Free Public Library, and cost about $312,000. The great alarm-bell is in the tower, weighing five thousand pounds. Park Square is further rendered notable by the beautiful and classical bronze monument erected by the city to the memory of her fallen heroes. It stands in the widest part of the area, and attracts instant attention as we approach from any side. A massive granite pedestal of several members supports, on the southern side, a sitting figure of Minerva, and on the northern, a similar one of Nemesis. The latter appears as Justice, but with open eyes; the former is armed, according to the classic model, but holds, beside, a victor's wreath. A central figure, raised several feet higher, and erect, personifies the City of Lynn, in a Greek drapery, wearing the civic coronet, and leaning the left elbow on a shield emblazoned with the municipal arms. The right arm, extended, reaches forth a wreath of laurel; the head correspondingly inclines, and the expression of the face, though strikingly beautiful, is very serious and tender. The inscription is simple: —

"Lynn, to the Memory of her Sons,
Slain in Defence of the Nation."

The figures are above life-size, and the central one may be called colossal. The work is that of John A. Jackson, an American artist, of Florence, Italy, the bronzes having been cast at Munich. It was unveiled Sept. 17, 1873, in presence of the greatest concourse, beyond doubt, that ever filled the streets of Lynn. Thirty thousand was the common estimate; and it was a thing of pleasant remembrance, that neither accident nor misdemeanor was anywhere seen, and the police made no arrest for the whole day. The expense was borne by the city, the artist's contract being $30,000.

We should not do full justice to the objects about Park Square, did we not, at the risk of confusing our time a little, make brief mention of the most magnificent of all, begun in the autumn of 1877, and not yet finished. This is the new house of the First Methodist Church, who, finding themselves straitened in the old edifice, and assisted by several encouraging bequests, decided in 1876 to provide fresh accommodations. The house stands on the north side of the square, just at the entrance of Franklin Street, and, beside being very large, is remarked for its lofty spire, rising about 210 feet from the ground.

The whole is of faced brick, and intended for a first-class building, as it will no doubt appear to be when completed. It is proposed to place a chime of bells in the tower, which will be the first of the kind here.

The transition from Park Square to the park and the common is so natural as to be inevitable. Few places boast of an open public ground of larger dimensions, or superior in simple attractiveness. What is termed "the park" is only the narrow eastern end of the common, separately and differently fenced, and with a larger proportion of trees. The whole is an elongated oval; being 230 rods in length from Lynn Hotel to the head of Market Street, according to Lewis, and its greatest width, on the Park and Vine Street walk, only 244 feet.

Beyond the brook was a homestead, last owned and occupied by the Atwill family. The house stood in the middle of the common, facing the north, with tall Lombardy poplars about it, a small orchard to the east, and one or two subordinate buildings, one of which, especially, was said to have been a "garrison-house" in the days of Indian wars. It yet remains, and appears to have been immensely strong in its frame, with loop-hole windows round the upper story. Its age must be great, but is not known; and it may perhaps be rightly called the oldest building we have. Still eastward were some other buildings of a public sort, among them a "gun-house" for cannon, a school-house, &c., and especially the town-house, built in 1814, and standing nearly opposite the head of Church Street. Some slight attempt at improvement had sometime been made, by planting a few trees east of the town-house, but without much design or success.

An effort was really made in 1835 to have the common fenced, and an Act obtained for the purpose; but no result followed till Aug. 2, 1847, when an appropriation was gained, provided the citizens would double it, for the purpose desired. It was slow work, however, till next year, when determined exertions were made. The ladies opened a "Grand Fair" on the three last days of September, 1848, in aid of the object, which netted some $1,400. The fence was immediately contracted for, the stone posts were set in December, there being no frost at all, and the rails were put in early next spring. Since then, the only further improvements have been, first, the setting of a large sun-dial in the centre, just opposite Blossom Street, where it stood for the regulation of time till 1878, when, the dial having been destroyed by gradual mischief, the granite pillar was also removed; second, the making of cross-walks, and of malls round the margin, which has been gradually done; third, the planting of many trees, and erection of music-stands. A large locust is to be mentioned, standing near the pond, and being the last of a half dozen or so, planted by the venerable Thomas Bowler, for many years the honored town clerk, and nominee for the first mayorship. Much effort had been made, at sundry times, to bring water from some source, enough to supply a fountain in the pond. Nothing could be effected, however, till the introduction of water in 1870.

Some few objects around the common merit description. Beginning on the south side, at Park Square, and going west, we pass seven incoming streets before reaching Market Square. Returning on the north, we find an equal number there entering. On the way we note, first, the church of the Second Congregational Society, on the corner of Church Street. It is a plain, unpretending structure, with no tower. Its origin has been mentioned, it being the first Unitarian church gathered here. No other public building, or private one of importance, appears till we reach the widely dissimilar successor of the "Old Tunnel," the new house of the First Church, on the corner of Vine Street. This also succeeds the wooden one built in 1837, which accidentally took fire during service, on Dec. 25, 1870, and was totally destroyed. It is an elegant structure, of brick, large, airy, and commodious, and considered one of the finest in the region. A very excellent bell is here, of more than two thousand pounds weight, which is larger than any other in the city, save that on the City Hall.

As we go on, we soon find, on the corner of Commercial Street, the church of the Second Universalist Society, which has been so often spoken of. Some of the great timbers of the "Old Tunnel" may be seen by exploring under its roof inside; the "sound-board," that was over the heads of Shepard, Henchman, and Treadwell, is built into the ceiling, right over the organ; and the pulpit, at least that in the old house when demolished, stands unaltered in the vestry. A few steps further stands the Masonic Building, in which Mount Carmel Lodge had all its early experiences. Then, turning round the western end of the common, one faces the building erected for the Nahant Bank in 1832. That institution came to a very unhappy end in 1836, involving a great many people in its failure. It is said that on the day of its crash, J. C. Stickney, Esq., whose office was close by, made forty-two court writs against parties affected, before night. After the removal of the bank, though their rooms were left undisturbed, the building was variously occupied as a dwelling, until September, 1854, when the City Bank began business, and selected this for its location. Another room was soon taken for the Lynn Five Cents Savings Bank; and both institutions remained there until the building, by the latter one, of the present elegant banking-house in Market Street. Then the building was occupied by different parties, till Jan. 1, 1877, when the premises were purchased and opened as a Home for Aged Women, for which purpose they seem remarkably well adapted.

Passing eastward, the next spot of interest is that now occupied by the residence formerly of Hon. Andrews Breed, but now of the Lovejoy family. It is believed to be the location of Joseph Armitage, the first tailor in Lynn, in 1630, and the place where he first opened his house as the "Blue Anchor Tavern," before he concluded to establish it west of Saugus River. It is certainly the place where the Rev. Mr. Henchman erected his mansion, about 1721, a fine house for that day, in which he lived and died. The house yet exists, having been removed to Park Street, No. 27. Next comes a point of peculiar interest, identified by a common-looking dwelling, which is the transformed store of Henry B. Newhall, who, from about 1840 to 1850, carried on the grocery business there very heavily, and almost exclusively on the "order system" of that day, accepting, for his goods, orders drawn by almost all the shoe manufacturers of West Lynn. This plan was in use all over town for a long period, nearly every grocer doing something at it, and the workmen having no alternative but to buy where the employer chose to draw. Mr. Newhall accumulated a fine property in this business, but lost much of it afterward.

On the eastern corner of Park Street is the First Baptist Church, a spacious structure of wood, erected in 1869, to replace the old one of 1833, which was removed to Washington Street, between Munroe and Oxford, and made into a shoe manufactory. The new house was intended to be the pride of the city, but met with a severe misfortune in the great gale of Sept. 8, 1869, which toppled the tall, heavy spire from its position, and cast it lengthwise on the west wing, crushing all to a ruinous heap. The bell was cracked, though slightly at first, and the expense of a new spire beside fell heavily on the society. In the days of its staunch Dea. Jonathan Bacheller, it had been reputed richer than any other in town; but his loss, with that of some other large patrons, did not affect it favorably.

Only two other objects of interest claim notice; one being St. Stephen's Episcopal Church, just east of Hanover Street, a building hardly larger than a chapel, built of wood, and having a colonnade front, but no tower. The other is the house, two doors to the east, where resided Henry Hallowell, for many years town clerk, and a man of plain, good common-sense, every way worthy and honorable, but not highly educated. He was the man more experienced in the War of the Revolution than any other from Lynn; he was in service in and about New York all through the earlier campaign, and witnessed many of the scenes that now live only in history.

This much will pass for an outline description of the common. It is a pleasant spot, green and flourishing, with hundreds of trees, mostly set about 1850, and now affording delightful shade. The sidewalks of the bordering streets were formerly rich in old and magnificent elms, and some indeed remain, as before the Episcopal church, and elsewhere. But others, as the two great ones before Goold Brown's residence, have been killed by gas leakage; others still, as before the house of S. S. Ireson, have gone down at the command of business; but the greatest number fell in the gale of 1869. Then along North Common Street, there lay next morning, four of the largest elms (with a heavy balm-of-Gilead poplar, ninety-five feet high, at the house of Philip Chase, Esq., and a great silver poplar at that of George D. Whittle, Esq.), thrown over on the houses and fences, with abundant breakage, but no harm to life or limb. No such thing appeared on the south side, the roots being strongest toward the wind; but twigs and leaves, with branches large as the wrist, littered the common from end to end.

Lynn is a place remarkable for the scantiness of its waters naturally, and for the abundance to which they have been raised by artificial means. Originally there could have been only two ponds in the town of any size, saving what there may have been of Flax Pond, which, no doubt, was something. Cedar (better called Spruce) Pond is wholly natural, and so is Floating-Bridge Pond; but by accounts, Flax Pond can be more than half drawn off, showing that so much is

formed by the dam; and Sluice Pond is known, by record and otherwise, to have been in the beginning only a narrow channel through a deep valley. Both are now beautiful sheets of water.

By further extending this principle of artificial raising, Lynn has been able to supply herself with at least four other sheets of water, two of which are of large size and remarkable excellence, though raised upon the site of most forbidding and unpromising swamps. About September, 1851, Elijah Holmes built a mill on Stony Brook, at Walnut Street, for the manufacture of light hardwares. He first placed a dam some twenty-five rods up the stream, raising a pond of about half an acre. A few years after, desiring a better storage of the water above, he made such arrangements with Nathaniel Holder, owner of the land, for building a second dam above Linwood Street, and flowing a reserve pond on the swamp known as "Rail-Hill Pond-hole," which is really the source of the brook, being full of enduring springs. This was done, resulting in what is now called Holder's Pond, a pretty expanse, attractive to skaters in winter, and a real ornament to the rude woodlands around it.

A half mile or so to the west lies Breed's Pond, the most remarkable example in the world of unexpected celebrity. It was, as has been stated, raised in 1842, a year earlier than Lewis says, and was afterward enlarged by various parties till it reached its present size of 58,448 acres. Its bottom was an almost impassable swamp, with few springs, but gathering waters from about a square mile of territory. The utmost skepticism prevailed in Lynn as to the possibility of making this pond, yet it succeeded fairly at first and completely afterward. A pretty island lies in the middle, on which are two of the pits anciently dug for the trapping of wolves. They are quite deep, and stoned up with much skill; being yet perfectly preserved. The remains of a third were formerly to be seen.

As early as 1867 public attention began to be drawn to the larger provision of water, particularly for use at fires. Among possible sources, Suntaug Lake in Lynnfield and Flax Pond in Lynn were most largely discussed, the latter getting general preference.

Before dismissing the subject of water, a single word may be said for the water-privilege of the township. Several such places exist, but none of great magnitude and not all in present use. The oldest and most enduring of these is that of Berry's Mill, Waterhill Street. The vexed question of its antiquity has already been mentioned; it depends on the water of Strawberry Brook, of which in dry seasons it monopolizes the whole, and which is employed for various uses, chiefly the grinding of grain, spices, coffee, &c.

The pond above the mill lies on the most porous gravel that can be found, yet is tight, as is the canal. The whole must be one of the very oldest pieces of water-work in the country. In 1836 and later, efforts were made to enlarge the pond, but no skill could prevent disastrous leakage. How it was originally done is a riddle.

The second privilege is supposed to be that at the old "Dye House," at Wyoma Village. This was a dyeing and printing company, going on as such for many years, but the old buildings were burned, and those built in their place were devoted to wool cleaning, and later to the manufacture of certain hardware. The water-supply is ample, drawn from Sluice Pond; and the privilege is peculiar in having no visible overflow or waste, the whole passing through the flume, driving a breast-wheel.

The third privilege is one now disused, first utilized by James Hill and Oliver B. Coolidge on Stacy's Brook, where it crosses Essex Street. A large building stood here for many years, known as the "Sash and Blind Factory," but latterly devoted to the making of bedsteads. The whole available fall of the stream is here, and was employed by two small wheels, one above the other. The whole concern has disappeared, the factory having been burned Feb. 12, 1863.

The fourth, being that at Breed's Mills, has been described. It gives twenty-eight feet fall, and was enjoyed by an overshot wheel of very satisfactory power. The manufactures have been mentioned; the buildings remain.

The fifth is on Stony Brook, and has been mentioned as that of Elijah Holmes. The fall here is remarkable, having been at first employed upon two successive wheels of twelve and eighteen feet respectively, one backshot and the other overshot, and later upon one overshot of thirty feet, the largest wheel ever seen near here. But the water-supply is small, and steam is now chiefly used.

The list closes with a privilege of which little or nothing is now known, lying between Cedar and Sluice ponds, at what is called Wood's Pond. A dam is there, and remains of an ancient flume, but no trace of a canal, or of foundations to any building. A very good chance exists here, but tradition and record are both silent about it.

The topography in our sketch must end with some little further notice of the chief eminences about the city.

High Rock always challenges first attention, on account of its prominence, though it is not the highest. It is very conspicuous, rising in the midst of the city, with a clear, bald summit, 180 feet above high water, or 190 from the city base. It has been the object of poetry and romance for years, bearing them both with very successful endurance. Indeed, this is one of the two "charmed heights" round which hang almost all the legends of the place. The first of these is the story of "Moll Pitcher." It is a circumstance alike to be confessed and regretted, that the history of Lynn has always been treated as much in the light of imagination as in that of simple and honest fact. This rather sadly appears in the case of this too-celebrated fortune-teller.

The second romance of High Rock relates to the celebrated Hutchinson family. This, as a company of singers, has for years been widely known on both sides of the ocean, and the story has had extensive circulation that they were all natives of Lynn, and that their homestead was near "Old High Rock." This, however, is wholly an error, as the family belong in Milford, N. H., and were none of them in Lynn till probably about 1835.

The third romance of High Rock is equally modern, and much more misty, but as baseless as the others. At one time the Stone Cottage was a chosen resort of Spiritualists of all grades, who in this elevated spot found retirement enough for their most exalted developings. Here, at a date not far from 1852, but which will hardly pay for great exactness, an attempt was made by these people to build a machine and endow it with a real life and pure human intelligence! John M. Spear, in his work entitled "The Educator," gives a minute description of its parts and workings. It was called the "Electric Motor." The basis of its plan was electrical, in which sense it was made with the extremest delicacy; afterward, it received its vital endowment by being peculiarly connected, electrically and otherwise, with a pure and vigorous man, and subsequently with an unblamable, healthy woman. What remarkable individuals were found to play these miraculous parts is not now known; but such models must be rare.

The proper eminence bearing this name is flanked east and west by two others of lesser height, all looking squarely down on the line of Essex Street below. A fourth, still lower, lies in the same line, more westerly, at the corner of High Rock Avenue, and is called "Magazine Hill," from having for years had the town's powder-house on its summit. These are all tall cliffs, of solid, purple porphyry, smoothed and covered on the north, but southward very abrupt and precipitous. High Rock itself drops thus: first, about sixty feet sheer; then, crossing the little plateau by the Stone Cottage, you stand upon the lower ledge, and look down some thirty feet more to the street.

The statement has been published, that a remarkable well exists near the summit of High Rock. This is not well stated at all. The well is a natural spring, issuing from a cliff about 1,000 feet west of the eminence, and wholly distinct from it. It has a probable altitude of 100 feet, and, being a constant spring, is somewhat remarkable at that elevation. It is included in land late of Phineas W. Butler, but now of Lyman B. Frazier, and is made to play a pretty fountain near the house. From this spring logs were laid for an aqueduct as far as Park Square, by some of the residents there and on Market Street, to gain a supply for their houses. But as it sometimes broke loose and flooded them,—once in the middle of the night,—and as no very good mode of piping was then known, it was finally abandoned.

The elevated district of the "Highlands" stretches north to the pass occupied by Western Avenue, rising, generally, while so doing, and finding its greatest height in "Lamb Rock," which is of the same level as High Rock, but otherwise not worth notice, save that an old Indian camp, or "shell-bed" exists under its south wall. But, crossing the avenue, the next hill to the north, about the same height, and variously known as Farrington's, White's, or Hathorne's Hill, according to successive owners, has a darker and more terrible celebrity.

The next eminence of any note is the one called Lover's Leap. It is a fine bastion-like cliff of gray felsite, standing at the northern end of Grove Street, projecting from the front of the hill, now called Linwood, but formerly Robert's Hill, by the people, and Poquanum Hill by Lewis. According to him the rock rises 100 feet from the plain, having a complete altitude of 133 feet, or 143 above city base.

Behind Robert's Hill runs Stony Brook, and beyond rises Pine Hill, perhaps the grandest eminence we have. It consists of gray and

banded felsites, with many dikes of trap and porphyritie diorite. Its figure is long, lying almost north and south, with Walnut Street (a relic of the most ancient "old road") at its southern base. Its greatest height is midway of the length, near the residence of Thomas Woodfall, and reaches 224 feet, or 234 from city base. The hill is covered on all sides with woods, traversed by delightful paths, and redolent of flowers. The city reservoir is on the north-western slope.

Southerly, Pine Hill terminates in a bold cliff, much like Lover's Leap, but less perpendicular. It is 166 feet high, says Lewis, which is 176 from city base.

We thus complete a kind of circuit round the amphitheatre behind the city, in which the points mentioned are all conspicuously in front.

From the western shore of Sluice Pond begins the most remarkable range of hills in the township. It runs almost due west, with little interruption, to the valley of Saugus River. On its immediate north is an equally remarkable groove, that, eastward, almost taps the embankment of Sluice Pond. A continuous swamp occupies it, which from its ancient proprietor perhaps, is called Blood's Swamp, and the great range on its south is thence termed the Blood's Swamp Hills, as the elevated tract northward is denominated the Ox Pasture.

On the southerly declivity of the Blood's Swamp Hills, only a little to the south-west of the eminence just described, is that remarkable one which of all the hills of Lynn has alone disputed with High Rock the palm of supernatural inhabitation. This is "Dungeon Rock." The two are the Olympus and Ida of our local mythology.

Half a mile north of Lynn Hotel the stroller enters Linwood Street, and pursuing it by variable courses over hill and valley, generally north-westerly, at a mile and a half distance, in the deep woods, after ascending a sharp acclivity, he suddenly finds himself on a little plateau in front of Dungeon Rock. As he looks up he sees only a great, black, beetling crag, that looks too common, cropping out naturally from the hillside, to have anything very strange about it. The owner has a plain house at its foot, and a little garden. There are steps leading up the hill, a barn, and a floor for dancers, and some other common things. Then he will like to sit down and study the story of the place.

Returning now to the people themselves, we make some effort to trace their advancement, under the new form of municipal being, for the twenty-six years in question.

Very determined opposition was met by those who endeavored to bring the town into the enjoyment of a higher style of incorporation. The dominant party had for long years been Democratic, and that not only in the national or Jacksonian sense, but down to the very bosoms and business of the people. They believed in no distinctions that looked at all like rank; they tolerated no notions that singled out any man and bade the rest honor him. A board of selectmen would answer, but the idea of a mayor was hateful.

Inflammatory bills flared out on all sides, quarrels were getting frequent, and well-meaning people wished it were well through with. Mr. Hood was supported by such men as Hiram N. Breed (mayor in 1855), Leonard B. Usher, Esq., of the sixth ward, Caleb M. Long, Esq., of the fourth, and Thomas Raddin, Esq., of the seventh, with others not now remembered, while Lewis Josselyn, of the "Bay State" newspaper, placed his office and influence at their disposal. The support of the charter was enforced by Hon. Daniel C. Baker (mayor, 1853), Hon. B. F. Mudge (mayor, 1852), William Bassett, Esq., Charles Merritt, Esq., and many more, with the Lynn "News," conducted by J. F. Kimball, and the "Reporter," by P. L. Cox, and almost the whole people of the fourth, fifth, eighth, and ninth wards, and about half the third and sixth. All day long the battle raged at the old town hall, people getting to hate each other with great rapidity. William Bassett, the town clerk, falling sick, the anti-charter party succeeded in replacing him with Thomas Bowler, his venerable predecessor, whom the charterists had themselves displaced two years before. This was fuel for more animosity, and every possible voter was rallied for the contest. But the hour of destiny had really come, and when the moderator stood up to declare the result all Lynn felt a new sensation to hear the words: "Nays, 987; Yeas, 1,047; and the city charter is accepted!"

The first election under the charter was held in the several wards April 4, 1850, after another sharp conflict of some weeks, when appeared the curious fact that Mr. Hood, though his project of a grand town hall, with every voter numbered and seated therein, could not be approved, could nevertheless be elected the first mayor, with almost the whole of his ticket, and that by a strong vote. But the common council, chosen in wards, was largely from the charter side, and thus the new form was secured a pretty fair trial. The inauguration was held May 14, 1850, in Lyceum Hall, then the largest place of assembly in the city, on the corner of Market and Summer streets.

The common council chose Hon. Daniel C. Baker president, and Joseph Breed, 2d, clerk; and William Bassett was made city clerk, his aptitude and decided genius for the place having compelled from the strongest anti-charter men an engagement of their support beforehand.

Thus the town of Lynn passed in the long list of things that were, and the days of the old town-meeting, with its speeches and fracases, its constables, moderators, and candy-boys, were numbered and finished. Lynn stood as the fourth of the cities of Essex, as she had been the second of her towns. Her first recorded census, in 1765, gave her 2,198 inhabitants; by 1800 she had only 2,837. She had begun to add largely to her numbers by 1830, when she reckoned 6,138; but ten years more gave her 9,367, in 1840; and, when incorporated, in 1850, she had run rapidly up to 14,257. She had a total valuation of $4,834,843, of which near three-fourths was real estate; and on this she was taxing ninety cents and raising $50,000. She owed a non-funded debt of $56,960.55, and rated 3,251 polls. Thirty-four public schools were taught within her borders, employing the same number of female teachers and nine of the other sex; and under them sat 3,379 pupils. Her almshouse had but forty inmates, her firemen were managers of six powerful engines, and two or three partly out of use.

The peculiar industry of the place had gone on vigorously. Hitherto everything about the shoe had been done by hand. There was no machinery used from first to last. As the business grew, and workmen were too few in Lynn to finish all the work, a plan of country employment was brought into use, and soon attained huge development. People in Maine and New Hampshire, who never saw Lynn in their lives, sent here for work. It was packed and sent; it might be to bind, or to make, or both in one. After a time it would return, finished. All this was done through a new and special class of carriers, who were called "freighters." They amounted to agents with full power: they made terms, hired workmen, carried funds, and managed the whole business at both ends of the route. In this way the shoe-business was fast getting to have only its head in Lynn, and its limbs spread all over New England. But it was not a good way. It secured the doing of a great deal of work, but generally at reduced rates — rates that Lynn workmen were not satisfied with; and they who sat at home and paid taxes soon complained that they were often left short of employment, while the best "seats of work" went "down east" to somebody who knew nothing of Lynn, but would do the labor at a more tempting figure.

The time now came for the Lynn shoe to be attacked by machinery. The attack was made from below, for the simplest of the problems was to cut a sole. Heels were added in some cases, but not commonly. Worsted goods were largely cut for boots, and more so as the fashion led more decidedly to high-cut forms; prunella and lastings came first, and afterwards gave place to serges of all grades, from "eleven-thread" — the essence of wretchedness — up to the finest and nicest. Brussels fancy patterns came into use for slippers soon after 1850, and still remain popular; and canvas has long had place for several particular lines of work. The "congress boot" came into vogue in 1846, under the invention and patent of Charles Winslow. It had a gore of elastic cloth inserted in the ankle. From this the use of rubber goods rapidly penetrated into all the business.

The remarkable changes that have since taken place cannot be precisely located in time, but the best approximations will be given. The first symptom of revolution appeared in the sewing-machine. This came to the front about 1852, but it is hardly known whether the "Singer" or "Grover & Baker" was earliest.

It may be impossible to ascertain exactly the time or the place of the first introduction of this powerful machine into Lynn. Priority has been claimed for William Porter, of Exchange Street; and it is true that the first machine, actually sold in Lynn, stands charged to his name, date June 17, 1862. It is certain that Stephen Oliver, Jr., had a machine in that same month running, without power, at his manufactory on Shepard Street, near the common; that it was a great novelty, many coming to see it; and one of the foremen declared that "it would take fifty men to keep out of the way of it," — that is, it would stitch for that number of finishers. It was one of the first three sent to Lynn, and was taken on trial. Porter's was in the same lot. But whether this was the first or not, it was soon followed by more of its kind, and very soon that manufactory was considered small that did not keep going more than one of them.

And now, once on the way, the incoming of machinery was like a flood. Machines for almost every separate act in the making of a shoe appeared, from the cutting of the stiffenings to the burnishing of the heels. Machinery demanded room; and large factories took the place of little shops. It demanded power; and heavy steam-engines were put in service, enough, in some cases, to move the wheels of half a dozen separate manufactories. The revival of heeled work had fully arrived in 1855; and now no fine or strong styles appeared without these attachments. They were not of wood, as in the older times, though this was at first proposed and tried; but economy had decided for a heel of leather. And now, also, arose the day of "pancake" or "pasted stock;" a fabric of thin scraps of leather, laid together in stiff paste, and consolidated by pressure. From this the heels were punched at a stroke, though the better sorts were more carefully put together.

The effect of this quick production was to send work out of town for finishing, with such rapidity that the home operatives found themselves falling short of employment, even sooner than the proverbial fluctuation of the business demanded. They complained loudly; and, as usually happens with such, they sought to regulate the thing by force, and thus brought on the "Great Strike" of 1860. Intimately connected in the case was the question of better wages; yet the war-cry of the whole disturbance from the first was, "No more work sent out of Lynn!" Feb. 22, 1860, the whole force (it almost seemed) of all the workmen and workwomen turned out in an immense procession, wearing badges and carrying banners, and marched with music all over the city in the worst and muddiest of weather, full of faith in their ability to wear out the manufacturers. A squad of experienced policemen were loaned the city from Boston, whom the rioters hated, but dared not attack; for it was known that one or more companies of military, in citizen's dress, were silently waiting at their armories. Gradually the excitement subsided. There had been no outbreak beside the one noticed, beyond a little hustling of police in Central Square on one occasion, for which the leaders were promptly arrested, and all that happened afterward was confined to haranguing and discontented talk, which did little harm. The only permanent results appeared in a slightly improved rate of wages, which probably could have been obtained without disturbance, and a decline of the practice of sending away work, which was certain to happen before long, any way.

By a transition not difficult at this point, our history slides from the business of the city to the progress of its people, noting, by the way, that two important waymarks in the path of a better sociality appear just at the date of the incorporation. A desire for a higher opportunity of home education than the grammar schools afforded, led, in 1849, to the establishment of a high school, with facilities for a very advanced course of instruction. Almost at the very same time, an effort had been going forward for the establishment of a suburban cemetery; and a company having been formed and extensive subscription obtained, a tract of woodland was purchased of John Alley, 3d, on Boston Street, and laid out by Gen. H. A. S. Dearborn, of Roxbury. The place was consecrated July 24, 1850, with an oration by the Rev. C. C. Shackford, and original odes by approved writers. After conducting its affairs through many difficulties, the corporation conveyed their whole property to the city of Lynn, Jan. 2, 1854.

Obeying the order of time, we naturally now arrive at the memorable year, 1861. Lynn had shared with the whole country the terrible anxieties of the opening of that year, with fears for her homes, her sons, and her industries. And when, on Sunday, April 14, the news was carried into all the churches, afternoon, in the hurried whisper, "Anderson has surrendered!" the blood of 1776 and 1812 boiled up hotly in the veins of every citizen. Monday was spent in hurried consultation, till in the afternoon the President's proclamation arrived, and then nobody consulted any further. Two companies were ready in five hours after the orders were received, equipped, and waiting. These were the "Lynn Light Infantry," Company D, and the "Lynn City Guards," Company F, 8th Regiment. Of the first, George T. Newhall, captain, with twelve under-officers and sixty men; of the second, James Hudson, Jr., captain, with twelve under-officers and seventy-six men. It was on Monday evening that Capt. Hudson sent to Boston the ever-famous telegram: "*We have more men than guns! What shall we do?*"

But the men were ordered forward without waiting for equipment, and next morning, Tuesday, 16th, the infantry moved from their armory on Market Street, corner of Liberty, and joined the guards at Central Square. A train stood ready for them; and during a slight delay, amid leave-takings and benedictions, another train shot through, bearing one or two companies from glorious old Marblehead, waving their hats, and cheering, — the first of Massachusetts blood to take the field in this grapple for human liberty. Subscriptions were quickly opened, and before the companies left they had the pleasant information that six hundred dollars had been raised for the benefit of each of them. From this time, Lynn stood square up to her duty in the case, both as to money and men.

The entire number of men enlisted during the continuance of the struggle was 3,274, or 230 more than her quota. The whole amount of money will probably never be known, but it must have been great. Throughout the trouble, she was sensitive, quick, enthusiastic. Twice, or more, she covered her common with mass-meetings of citizens, listening to stirring speeches in behalf of the army. Once, on a Sabbath afternoon, when ministers suspended their services all over the city, and Orthodox, Methodist, Baptist, and Universalist preachers united to awaken new zeal for the final marches against rebellion; once, when an appeal came northward on a sudden for a quick supply of hospital-stores for the wounded, her people rushed from the churches (for that, too, was on Sunday), and for the rest of that day, and the week after, made the common-council chamber one storehouse of linen, sick-food, and comforts of all sorts. When the illustrious Lincoln went to the dead, it fell on her like a palsy; she draped almost every house in mourning, and sat down in her civic robes to weep; yet we had hot blood even then, and one or two foolish ones, who dared mock at the great departed, fared roughly for the time, and only found their safety in a prudent concealment. But when the story came that Vicksburg had fallen, July 7, 1863, her joy was almost madness. From the heights behind the city, one looked over the expanse of her streets, and saw every open square, and prominent point, ablaze with a bonfire. Probably there were some hundreds of them; every loose combustible was seized, even to some ruinous buildings, and the glow was like a conflagration. Or, again, when came news of Lee's surrender, and we knew the arm of the Rebellion was broken, no man could have predicted the clangor that followed. Every bell that could ring, rung; every sonorous contrivance went into full and continuous duty. Many of the steam-whistles on the factories screamed at full pressure all day long. Men stood in the churches waiting, and when one was tired at the bell-rope, another was quickly in his place, all ready, and more than willing. There were guns, indeed, and heavy firing; but it seemed as if that were too gross, and something more vocal was wanted. Men rode through the streets with hand-bells, shouting and ringing as they went. And when it came night, and rest must come, they yielded, as it were, reluctantly, and left the joyful clangor as if they would gladly renew it on the morrow. Yet there was no disturbance. One individual, well known in the phrase of the day as a "copperhead," refused to display the American flag from his house on the corner of South Common and Pleasant streets, and even flew into a passion, and trod the banner under his feet. But a rally of smart youngsters drove him into his house, where he locked himself in, while they took possession, and decorated his piazza with all the flags they chose. And when, from time to time, the field-worn veterans came marching home with thinner ranks and larger memories, no lack was there of civic welcome or private hospitality; for Lynn knew only too well that Gettysburg and Antietam were only New York and Boston in the emblem, and the brave ones that had broken there the lance of insurrection, had no less turned away its point from her own bosom. And when, in years afterward, she went out on the Day of Memorial to lay the wreaths of May on the graves of the fallen, she freshened the petals with her own tears, and said to her children that they should never forget that these were they who truly served their country.

We are about to take leave, historically, of this interesting city. And as we seem to retire, viewing her more in the distance, we naturally cast her fair proportions into facts of interest and importance, and reckon up her features as on the morning of the glad day of the American Centennial.

She then had 32,600 people dwelling within her borders. The fluctuating character of the shoe-business caused a large share of her population to be floating, and her best maximum might not improbably be placed as high as 40,000. The thirty-four schools that she had at her incorporation had increased to fifty-nine, and in them were found 4,788 pupils, for the education of each of which she was expending, per annum, $16.87. She had in her almshouse sixty inmates, and she employed twenty-five policemen and eighty-nine firemen. She had spent in the year previous $619,772; she owed $1,824,927; her whole valuation was $28,077,803, and upon it she was taxing $1.74 on the $100. She had almost a hundred miles of excellent streets, and

an electric fire-alarm that worked to perfection. Two prosperous lines of horse-cars traversed her breadth hourly; and the bankrupt, but strangely vitalized Eastern Railroad, had been supplied with an ally, or a rival, as might prove, in the narrow-gauge road running from Market Street to Boston over Revere Beach. She had lines of coaches running every few hours to almost every near point of any importance. A gas company, from their works at Axey's Point, lighted almost every street, and had done so since Jan. 13, 1853. Four or five weekly newspapers were regularly issued, and the newsboys' cry was as common as in the metropolis.

The comforts of the old city were more than these. She had her free public library, managed by the city, and kept in the city hall, where she could read any of the 24,982 volumes without charge or hindrance. She had several circulating libraries beside, and private ones, from 6,000 volumes down. A public hospital stood on Waterhill Street, formed of the fine old Phillips mansion, where the sick were tenderly cared for. Numerous lodges of Masons, Odd Fellows, Temperance brotherhoods, and mutual-benefit associations, supplied the reciproeal and fraternal element wherever wanted. A "Choral Union" was in active practice, which could produce 120 voices in its chorus, and habitually presented the best oratorios now in use. Three military bands, of some twenty members each, could serve all purposes of the street, and as many small orchestras awaited orders for the dance or concert. Music Hall could receive nearly 1,500 persons; had a good stage, and could be worked finely as a theatre. Odd Fellows' Hall, on the site of the old Lyceum Hall, was the model of a lecture-room, with splendid entrances, and capable of seating 1,000. Beside it, on Market Street, was the Academy of Music, well designed for a small theatre, and accommodating 800. In addition to these principals were found Exchange Hall, the best of its kind for assemblies and receptions, Concert Hall, Cadet, Market, Templars, and Lincoln halls; and thence to the smaller, — Pleasant, Kossuth, Essex, and Liberty halls, giving abundant accommodation of this kind. Or, in places of sacred use, were reckoned, seven Methodist, five Baptist, four Orthodox, two Episcopalian, two Catholic, two Universalist, one Unitarian, one Quaker, and one Christian church, — making twenty-five in all.

Among institutions purely of money, there were the First National Bank, on Exchange Street, the Central National Bank, on Market Street, corner of Summer, and the National City Bank, just opposite, — all of large capital and business. The "Lynn Institution for Savings" had $1,878,825 of deposits, and owned a splending banking-house on Exchange Street, while the "Five Cents Saving Bank," with $1,705,-122 deposits, had a block on Market Street almost as large.

Science was not greatly pursued in any social form; but the "Lynn Natural History Society," composed of young men, had valuable cabinets and collections on Broad Street, and the "Houghton Horticultural Society" gave remarkably attractive exhibitions annually at Odd Fellows' Hall.

For the close employment of her capital, Lynn has long been remarkable. In 1875, she had $4,560,700 invested, on which she was doing $17,917,487 worth of business. She employed 10,838 people, and paid them $5,287,165. During the year ending Sept. 1, 1864, she made 10,000,000 pairs of shoes, worth $14,000,000. She has few or no large fortunes among her people, and very few abject poor, indeed. The largest estate ever left to inheritance was that of Philip P. Tapley, Esq., and was not quite half a million, while there are thousands of families who own, free and clear, a small, well-finished house, on a quarter-acre lot, with garden and yard-room on all sides of it. She has none of what is called "society"; family pride is at a minimum; caste, and the spirit of "ring," are almost wholly abjured. The honorable and well-behaved may associate where he will, for he will pass upon his merits only, and his origin or circumstances will hardly be inquired for. Her record in the public councils might be brighter and nobler than it is; but the peace of her homes and families, the quiet of her streets, and the order of her assemblies, could hardly become more remarkable, or more attractive, than they are.

LYNNFIELD.

This town, up to the date given in the sketch of Lynn (which see), Feb. 28, 1814, was a part of the proper territory and municipal being of Lynn; yet it had had a partial separation as a "district," July 3, 1782, by which it acquired some home rights of importance, but continued to vote with Lynn for representatives. There was an original grant to Lynn of a tract "four miles square," Sept. 9, 1639, "for an inland plantation." Lewis says it only included the Readings; but Judge Newhall says it covered Lynnfield also. The point may be difficult of settlement at this day.

The present township is elongated in form, lying with its greatest length nearly north-west and south-east. In these directions it extends about six miles, while the width varies from two to three miles. Northerly and westerly, it is bounded by Reading; south-westerly, by Wakefield; southerly, by Saugus and Lynn; and north-easterly, by Peabody — the enclosed area being not far from ten square miles. Its northerly line is upon the Ipswich River, flowing easterly; while the whole boundary, with Wakefield, is marked by the Saugus River, which flows, at first, easterly for about two miles, and then southerly for about the same distance. Two bodies of water only of considerable size are found here: a third is small, but quite remarkable. The first, called "Suntang Lake," or, more simply, "Lynnfield Pond," lies with only half its surface in this town, the rest being in Peabody. The whole area of the lake is not far from half a square mile. It discharges by Noyes's Brook, northward to Ipswich River.

This lake, or pond, forms part of a grant made to John Humfrey, Esq., May 6, 1635, by the General Court; and by this grant it became private property, and as such was exempted from the operation of the ordinance that made free forever all "greate pondes" above ten acres in extent, in 1641. It has been in possession of different parties since then — latterly in that of the family of Saltonstall. The most remarkable feature of this lake, after its great beauty and purity, is its curiously small watershed. It has been compared to water lying in a bowl; for the "divide," or limiting ridge of its watershed is within rifle-shot of the shore on every side.

The second pond lies to the west of the lake, and is known as Pillings's Pond. It is very irregular in outline, and probably of only moderate depth. Little or no natural collection of water would seem to have been here, as the whole is now restrained by the dam at the old "Hawkes's Mill," which is thus furnished with power. A short stream affords subsequent exit into Saugus River.

The third pond in magnitude, called "Nell's Pond," lies in the extreme southern part of the township, and might, either as to geology or topography, be reckoned to Lynn or Lynnfield. It is nothing more than a mountain-spring of large dimensions, from which one stream nearly always flows, usually two, and sometimes three, in as many different directions. The easterly and steadiest stream is the original source of the waters of the "Lakes of Lynn," going soon to the south and entering Cedar (or Spruce) Pond. The southern, and most unusual stream is only an overflow of excess, and goes first to the south, then to the east, entering Cedar Pond also, on the west side, by the "Straits Bridge." But the northern current, that flows out tardily in all but the driest of weather, tends pretty steadily to the north and north-west, under the name of "Hawkes Brook," till within a fourth of a mile of Suntaug Lake, when, making a sudden turn, it assumes a southerly course, and continues it, falling into Saugus River quite a distance beyond the town boundary. Nell's Pond is manifestly higher in altitude than any other body of water in the region: accurate figures are not at hand, but a safe estimate would place it one hundred feet above tide-water. By all appearance, it has formerly been much larger than now; the present shores are wholly inaccessible, save on the ice, and consist of peat-moss, dense, luxuriant, and deceptive, that sinks under the too-adventurous foot, and hints at unknown deeps, over which it is gradually spreading. In the far future, no doubt, the whole may become bridged by this floating verdure, and the present small expanse of open water may dwindle in breadth and disappear entirely. But the issuing streams are probably unaffected.

The remaining water-system of the town is made up by two moderate brooks, one rising near the centre of the territory and flowing south into Saugus River, and the other, hardly as large, rising very near the first, but getting a north-westerly course, and finally entering Ipswich River somewhat to the west of the paper-mills in Middleton.

The hills, which in Lynn Woods have reached a considerable elevation, fall away gradually as we pass through Lynnfield northward, till at its further limit the stream of Ipswich River is arrived at, running eastward through a broad, flat valley. A tolerably rapid fall may be seen in that part of the river that comes under this notice, so that the Middleton Mills enjoy a comfortable power; but the general character of the stream is that of sluggishness, and beyond this point it barely discharges its waters at high tide. It is a current larger than any other in the county, perhaps, save the Merrimac: accurate figures of its average volume are not at hand, but it may be nearly estimated at 900,000,000 gallons per day.

Saugus River, which makes so large a part of the western boundary, is very much less in dimension where it enters the town; but receiving on its way the waters of Pillings's Pond and some other affluents, and enjoying a large independent watershed of its own, it becomes a very considerable stream before leaving the boundary. Yet it is far less than the other, though it may deliver some 300,000,000 gallons daily.

The gradual softening out of the high hills of the southern part is marked, as is usual, by the frequent occurrence of meadow and intervale lands, that furnish delightful openings to the view, and tempt the agriculturist with fine mowings and fields for all kinds of husbandry. Indeed, the surface is rather to be called undulating than hilly; and the only eminences of any note whatever seem to be "Robin Rock," close on the west of Nell's Pond, which gives a fine view of the country toward Boston, and "Pine Hill," in the northern section, which is a moderate elevation covered with forests.

In geological features, the town offers a good deal of variety. Hitchcock located it chiefly on the "hornblende slate"; but the rejection of this name from modern lithology excuses us from a dubious inquiry as to what he intended by it in the present instance. The southern portion of the township laps upon the belt of sienite which occupies the northerly section of Lynn; but the northern edge of this formation is apparently reached by one arriving at the middle of the town, and thenceforth we see no more of it. The northerly half of the territory affords a rock of rather equivocal constitution, and of many forms, but which may perhaps be reckoned as a slaty hornblende, since it has too much quartz for a diorite, and too little of either quartz or felspar for a sienite. It shows a strong sublamellar structure, often nearly vertical, and forming numerous low, craggy hills, but rarely with any features of interest. About a mile north-west from the principal village, the ledge was breached for copper in this rock by one Kingsford, from Lynn, about 1845. There could have been little or no indications; for, though a large driftway was opened into the hill for some distance, no ore ever appeared. The adventurers were probably misled by pyrite, as the débris weathers out in a highly ferruginous condition.

Between the hornblende rock and the sienite below it, occurs a development of serpentine, that has attracted much attention. It is wholly amorphous, varying in color from olive to pistachio green, traversed by small seams of magnesite, and capable of fine polish, though soft. About 1838, this rock was approached for the manufacture of epsom salts, under the advice of Dr. Charles T. Jackson. The then high price of this drug induced the Roxbury Chemical Works to undertake operations on a considerable quantity, which was found to yield a superior article, nearly free from tendency to efflorescence. But in a few years the state of the market changed, and the new manufacture was not found to be remunerative.

It has been already stated that this town existed as a district of Lynn for some time anterior to its incorporation as a separate town. The date of this early division seems not well settled. Mason, and perhaps some other writers, give that above cited, July 3, 1782; but Lewis, writing of Lynn, places it as early as Nov. 17, 1712. We will

not here attempt to decide on the real facts; yet there were certainly many things done prior to 1782 that indicate some such independent condition. It is added, that the separation was to free the inhabitants from parish taxes in Lynn, so soon as they had built a meeting-house and settled a minister for themselves. In those days of hardship and narrow means, however, this was by no means an easy condition, and it was not till 1715 that the first part of it reached accomplishment. But having in that year succeeded in building their church, the Lynnfield people looked about for some time longer before they found any one statedly to occupy it. We do not find any one so placed till Aug. 17, 1720, when the Rev. Nathaniel Sparhawk took the position, at a salary of £70. He remained eleven years, and was finally dismissed, July 1, 1731. It is said that he only asked his dismission at the instance of his friends, thinking to produce a quieter condition in the parish; and, when it was unexpectedly granted, he was so disappointed that he refused to give up the parish records to a successor. Mr. Sparhawk was a liberally educated man, a Harvard graduate of 1715, and a person of more than average habits of observation. His diaries and almanacs, full of notes and memoranda as to passing events of interest, have always been a valued source of local information to the historiographer. Thus, in 1772, he gives careful measurements of the snow that fell in six successive storms in March, occurring respectively on the 5th, when there fell sixteen inches; the 9th, nine inches; the 11th, eight inches; the 13th, seven inches; the 16th, four inches, and the 20th, fifteen inches: being fifty-nine inches, or almost five feet on a level, in sixteen days. We give this as a sample of Mr. Sparhawk's careful notings. Others might be cited, relating to the new or Federal currency, the circumstances of church matters and ordinations, or the vicissitudes of drouths and summer showers. It is, however, rather amusing, as coming from a Christian minister, and betrays the strong tendency of classical learning to shake up to the surface, to hear him say that, in a certain dry time, "Jove thundered to y^e^ left and all Olympus trembled att hys nod. A beautiful refreshing shower." It is to be hoped he did not forget to return due thanks to Jove for his timely intervention.

The successors of Mr. Sparhawk, the Revs. Stephen Chase, Benjamin Adams, Joseph Mottey, and Joseph Searl, furnish little that may engage the pen of any historian. But a serious change had bred itself in the very bosom of their people, and with the retirement of Mr. Searl, Sept. 17, 1827, the whole, or the influential part, lapsed from the faith of the fathers, and decided for no further entertainment of Orthodox doctrine. A supply was determined on, and this was made Unitarian, continuing thus till 1849, when further progress in the same direction brought them to a definite recognition of the Universalist belief. A supply still went on, till 1854, when they finally concluded to settle a minister of the new persuasion, and the Rev. Luther Walcott was favored with the position. Since then, we hear of no further mutations in the old parish.

Meanwhile, Sept. 27, 1832, a Trinitarian Congregational Society had been formed, as it were to replace the defection in the old one. It was located, as the other had always been, in the Centre Village, about two miles north-west of Suntaug Lake. The Rev. Josiah Hill was first settled, remaining about four years. He was succeeded, at intervals, by the Revs. Henry S. Greene, Uzal W. Condit, Edwin R. Hodgman, and William C. Whitcomb; at least, up to 1859. A society of the same persuasion was also formed, somewhat later, at the South Village, on the banks of the lake, and the Rev. Ariel P. Chute became its first pastor, but retired in 1858, and was followed by the Rev. Allen Gannett. A Methodist society was likewise originated at the Centre, as early as 1816, and continued to sustain preaching till 1834, having erected a house of worship in 1823. Meetings were at length discontinued. This constitutes, substantially, the religious history of the place.

Lynnfield has all its industries, other than agricultural, located in the two villages mentioned above. Naturally, there is considerable settlement connecting the two; and the manufacture of dyewoods, at the "Hawkes Mill," lies midway between them, but not strictly in either. The wood here prepared, is chiefly the root of the indigenous barberry, which affords an abundant and useful yellow. The grinding of grain is also carried on here, and there are several saw-mills in other parts of the town.

The village of South Lynnfield had its origin about 1800, when the peculiarly bold and unsuccessful enterprise of the Newburyport Turnpike was carried forward through the very centre of Essex County. Perhaps the vicinity of the beautiful lake decided the location, as favorable to boating, bathing, and the like; but the agreeable evenness of the small plain over which the road here passes was certainly a strong reason in the case. A large hotel was built, with its rear grounds commanding the water; and, in the immediate neighborhood, the road for some half mile or so was widened to a sufficient breadth for a trotting-ground. But the utter failure of the turnpike as a thoroughfare included that of the "Hotel Village," and for many years it was a place of great quietness. After a time, the "South Reading Branch Railroad," one of the earliest of this class of ways, was chartered, April 26, 1848, and built through the village, being opened for travel, Aug. 31, 1850. Either as a partial cause, or a natural effect, the then-increasing trade in ice connected itself with the new transit; and large storing-houses were built on the south margin of the lake, with a spur-track for shipment. The railroad is still in active operation, affording much facility and encouragement to the village; but the ice-trade is understood to be much declined. Since this first railroad, the town has found access to the world by two others; the Danvers Railroad crossing it very near the Centre Village, and the Salem and Lowell Railroad near the northern boundary.

A more recent industry appears to be that of the granite quarries. As in most other cases in Essex County, the term granite is made to include all the more workable sienites, such as are found of fine quality in the hill at the South Village, which is capped by Robin Rock. A vigorous effort was made, on the eastern side of this hill, as early as 1855, by a company who carried on business for some time, but finally failed. Some years later, a second quarry was opened, on the south side, at a higher point; and this we believe is still being worked. Both afford fine stone, light-colored, and very cleavable; and the facilities for transportation and shipment are quite good.

In the immediate neighborhood of these quarries exists a curious example of the drift-ridges, so notable in other sections, supposed to be ancient glacial moraines. This, which is called Bow Ridge, is a thick dike of porous gravel, some five hundred feet long, and twenty feet high, on the rear slope, with a flat, pathlike top, not more than ten feet wide. It lies in a semi-oval form, with its convexity toward the north-west, whither the front slopes down thirty or forty feet to an open meadow. Its rear obstructs, as a dam, the northerly outlet of Nell's Pond; and this, till lately, only found a slow percolation through its base, issuing in sweet springs lower down in the meadow, and there forming, as already stated, the source of Hawkes's Brook.

Lynnfield is much resorted to by invalids, on account of the rather peculiar salubrity of its air. Perhaps no very evident reason can be assigned for this; yet medical men and others assert that a residence in this town, in its peaceful and cleanly villages, or on one of its well-kept farms, will do as much for the relief of chronic affections as a voyage abroad, in very many cases. For such, the larger accommodations perhaps, are found in the South Village, and a greater or less number are found every season enjoying them. But the South Village is memorable for a sadder reason, as being the scene of a gloomy casualty, Aug. 15, 1850. A party of ladies and gentlemen from Lynn were holding a picnic by the lakeside, and a large flat boat was in service to furnish trips on the water. Some twenty-five were on board, when, by careless movement, the boat was careened, and then upset completely, in very deep water, and with no help anywhere at hand. Thirteen of the number, mostly females, were drowned before they could be rescued.

In a small country town like this, with only a few inhabitants of profession or leisure, we hardly look for many men of distinction. Yet a few lines may be afforded to the memory of Dr. John Perkins, who died at his residence in Lynnfield, in 1781, aged eighty-five years. Of him, Lewis writes: "He was a very eminent physician in his time, had studied two years in London, and practised physic forty years in Boston. In 1755, he published a tract on earthquakes; and also an Essay on the Small Pox, in the 'London Magazine.' He left a manuscript of 368 pages, containing an account of his life and experience, which is preserved in the library of the American Antiquarian Society."

We close the account of Lynnfield by a citation of a few of her more important statistics. Her population, by the census of 1875, was 769, having materially fallen off since 1865, when it was 806. She reckoned 224 ratable polls, of whom she admitted a total of 186 voters. The value of carriages made within the year was $2,800, and other different manufactures ran up in value to $6,187. As an illustration of her agricultural activity, a department in which she has always evinced a commendable zeal, we mention that her total value of field products was $69,721, in which the quantity of 764 tons of hay stood for $15,676; that of 1,892 pounds of butter, for $794; 114,325 gallons of milk, for $19,408; and 15,450 pounds of pork, for $1,577. The total valuation of the town was $758,780.

MARBLEHEAD.

Marblehead was originally a part of Salem, and is situated fourteen miles north-east of Boston, on a rocky peninsula, bounded on the north, south, and east, by the waters of the Atlantic Ocean; and, on the west, by the city of Salem and town of Swampscott. It embraces within its territorial limits about 3,600 acres, including several valuable and productive farms. It presents an irregular shore line, seven miles in length, marked with fine beaches, sheltered coves, and rocky bluffs, with a commodious harbor, one mile long, and nearly half a mile wide, easy of access at all tides, while numerous hills near the shore line afford unrivalled views of land and ocean scenery. The few Englishmen who first sought these rugged shores for a home found but few Indians to dispute or even witness their landing. The earliest writers of New England history represent that a large tribe of Indians, called the "Naumkeags," once occupied the territory between "Ipswich and Mystic" rivers, but that a fatal "plague or pestilence" which visited them in 1618, or the year after, nearly exterminated the tribe. The chief of this tribe, whose name was "Nanapashemet," was killed in battle, in 1619. In 1630, his son "Montowompate," was recognized as the "Sagamore of Lynn and Marblehead," at the same time claiming authority over the Indians at Salem and Ipswich as tributaries; but, in 1633, another pestilence, in the form of small-pox, raged among their wigwams, and the young chief, with the most of his weakened tribe, became its victims. One son alone of the numerous family left by the warrior, Nanapashemet, now remained to assume the dignities and authority of the chieftain. His Indian name was "Winnapurkit," and he was also called "George Rumney Marsh" and "No Nose." With but few subjects, and therefore with limited power and influence, but little is known of his subsequent career; but Mr. Eliot, the "Indian Apostle," charged him with defeating the object of his mission among the Indians at Lynn. In the terrible and bloody crusade against the English raised by Philip, the Indian king, it was charged that he acted with his race; that he was captured and transported to the West Indies, and sold as a slave; that he was afterwards released, and, returning to his native country, found a home during the remainder of his life with a relative at Natick, where he died in 1684, at the age of sixty-eight. During his whole life, he claimed the lands once occupied by the members of his tribe, and, dying, earnestly directed his kindred to prosecute the claim till their rights were acknowledged. He had been dead but a few months when the town of Marblehead satisfied the claim, by the payment of fourteen pounds and thirteen shillings, and received a deed duly signed by his descendants. The remains of a rude fortification adjoining the "gravel pit," near the western limits of the town, is all that is left to remind the present generation of the powerful tribe that here gathered about Nanapashemet to defend their lands and rights against their ancient foes.

As early as 1629, a rude fortification was constructed at "Naugus Head," and called "Darby Fort," as a place of refuge for the little colony on the other side of the harbor, in case of attack by the Indians.

The early records, however, fail to give us either the exact year of settlement, or the names of those who first selected Marblehead for their habitations. Thomas Gray, who is mentioned as having been the owner of Nantasket in 1622, by purchase from the Indians, was a follower of Conant when he came to "Naumkeag," in 1626, and founded that Colony. During the month of October, 1631, the "General Court," holding its session at Boston, directed "that Thomas Grayes howse at Marbleharbor be pulled down, & that no Englishman shall hereafter give howse room to him, or entertain him, under such penaltie as the Court shall think meet to inflict." The offence that provoked this cruel judgment of the public authorities is not recorded, nor does it appear that the judgment was ever executed, for his name is frequently mentioned in connection with the place subsequently, and more than thirty years after he and his wife were reported as "two aged people," requiring support at the public charge.

Isaac Allerton, who was a "Mayflower Pilgrim," and who had been a deputy governor of the Plymouth Colony, was represented to have severed his connection with that Colony as early as 1631, and, during the fall of that year, sailed from Marblehead for England, but there is nothing to show that he was a resident of the place till two or three years after. John Deveraux received a grant of land in 1631, covering the farm near the "Deveraux Station," on the Swampscott Branch of the Eastern Railroad, and this farm remained in the family of the original proprietor for more than two hundred years. Moses Maverick, who married a daughter of Isaac Allerton, is first mentioned as a resident of the place, in 1633. In 1637, the names of twenty-four male inhabitants of Marblehead are given; viz., Moses Maverick, William Stevens, Archibald Thompson, William Charles, John Heart, John Peach, John Lyon, Anthony Thatcher, John Gaite, Richard Seeres, Richard Greenway, John Gatchall, Samuel Gatchall, John Bennett, John Wakefield, Erasmus James, Thomas Gray, John Deveraux, Nicholas Merriott, Abraham Whitehaire, George Vicary, John Russell, Nicholas Listen, Thomas Beare.

The Rev. Francis Higginson, writing from Naumkeag, in 1629, to friends in England, wrote, "that here is plentie of marble stone in such store that we have great rocks of it and a harbour hard by: our plantation is from thence called Marbleharbour." During that very year the name of Salem was suggested and adopted; but some, it appears, adhered to the earlier name, and the territory on the southern side of Salem Harbor was never designated by any other, till 1633, when, by general consent, it was changed to Marblehead.

The place at this time was called a "Plantation," and its affairs were directed by the authorities of Salem. In 1636, it was voted, "that the rights of fishermen to land at Marblehead should be limited to a house lot and garden lot, or ground for the placing of their flakes, according to the number belonging to their families, and the largest families were to be limited to lots not exceeding two acres, with the common rights to the woods adjoining for their Goats and Cattle." It was further ordered, that no one should establish a residence here without "the authority of the General Court or two of the Magistrates." Mr. Isaac Allerton, an active and enterprising merchant, who had finally settled here, and, with five sail of fishing vessels, was prosecuting the business with great energy and success, was banished from the place by a vote of the General Court, in March, 1635, and, two months after, conveying "all his houses buildings and fishing stages" to Moses Maverick, he obeyed the mandate of the authorities. The offence that provoked this resentment of the General Court is not mentioned; four years after, he petitioned for the privilege of returning; and, as his name appears in the records some years after, it is probable that his prayer was finally granted.

The adjacent waters were teeming with cod, haddock, mackerel, herring, bass, and other varieties of fish; and in a letter written in 1629, it was stated, "that sixteen hundred bass were taken in one draught, while the schools of mackerel were so numerous as to extort exclamations of astonishment from all beholders." Statements like these attracted the attention of enterprising merchants in England, and Matthew Cradock, the governor of the Massachusetts Company, and others, had houses and fishing stages at Marblehead, as early as 1633, and annually sent their vessels and men to catch and cure the fish here during the summer months, and return with their cargoes later in the season.

In the early records, that part of the town situated near the coves and harbor was designated as the "Main"; between "Naugus Head" and "Peach's Point" was called "John Peach's Neck"; from the junction of the Lynn and Salem roads to Forest River and the western limits of the town was mentioned as the "Neck," or "Plains," while the peninsula now designated by that name was called the "Great Neck"; and from "Naugus Head" to the "Lead Mills" was known as the "Forest Side."

A knowledge of these geographical divisions at that time, aids us somewhat in locating the habitations of the earlier settlers.

In 1638, the following grants of land were made or confirmed to inhabitants of the "Plantation":—

On the "Main": William Walton, eight acres; Moses Maverick, ten acres; Rosamond James, four acres.

On "John Peach's Neck": William Keene, three acres; Nicholas Listen, five acres; and John Bennett, number of acres not stated.

On the "Neck": John Gatchall, six acres; Samuel Gatchall, six acres; John Coit, three acres; John Wakefield, four acres; Thomas Sans, three acres; Widow Blanchor, six acres; George Ching, three acres; Ralph Warren, two acres.

Location not designated: Richard Seeres, four acres; John Lyon, four acres; Phillip Beare, three acres; Robert Wheadon, ten acres.

The year before these grants were made (1637), George Wright was granted "half an acre on the Neck for a house lot, and five acres on the Forest Side for planting, and to keep a ferry 'twixt Bull Point and Darby Fort."

By a vote of the Salem authorities, a portion of the land now embraced within the limits of Marblehead was selected as a site for the future seat of learning, which the founders of the Commonwealth had resolved to establish. Mr. John Humphrey, one of the patentees, and a gentleman of distinction and influence, had joined the colonists, and in 1636 had received a grant of land of 300 acres, on what was then designated as the "Neck," near Forest River. It was this land that the authorities desired to reserve for college purposes, and for this object Mr. Humphrey was induced to surrender his title and receive a grant in some other locality. This grant was located in the western part of the town, and embraced some of the most productive farming lands in the county. The death of John Harvard, at Charlestown, in 1638, and his generous bequest, fixed the location at Cambridge, and thus defeated the purpose of Endicott and his associates. One of the conditions of the charter issued to the "Massachusetts Company" provided that Englishmen should have all necessary facilities for taking fish in adjacent waters, and for curing them, and obtaining water and provisions. Marblehead was most favorably situated for the prosecution of this business, and its rapid increase secured the importation of a cargo of salt in a "Dutch ship," as early as 1635. This event was considered of so much importance that the General Court appointed a person to superintend the discharge of the cargo, with authority to "impress the services of others" if necessary. With a view to encourage this branch of industry, the General Court, in 1639, ordered that vessels, stock, and fish should be free from all taxation, and that the men employed should be exempt from military duty. As early as 1646, the value of fish taken by vessels at Marblehead was estimated at a sum equal to $20,000; but the larger part of this was secured by those who came here during the summer months, and returned to England on the approach of winter.

The extravagant consumption of wood by these visitors finally became a subject of complaint by the inhabitants, and the General Court, in 1639, ordered that no wood or timber should be taken by these fishermen at Marblehead without compensation to the legal proprietors, and the owners were authorized "to oppose such encroachments with forcible resistance if necessary."

The officials of the company in England encouraged the colonists to construct their own vessels from the abundance of timber at their command, and at an early day secured the emigration of a few shipwrights to promote this object. Two small vessels were built: one at Salem, in 1631, and another at Boston, in 1633; but the third was built and launched at Marblehead, in 1636. This vessel was named the "Desire," and was 120 tons burden, but the particular place of her construction in the town is unknown. Employed for two years in the fishing business, she was despatched, in 1638, to the West Indies on a commercial voyage, and, returning, brought "Salt, Cotton Tobacco and Negroes"; the last item of the manifest is supposed to have been slaves, and the first that were brought to the New England Colonies. This vessel, the achievement of the early colonial shipwrights, appears to have proved creditable to their genius and skill, for it is claimed, that in 1640, she made the voyage from Marblehead to England in *twenty-three days*.

The time when religious worship and instruction commenced in Marblehead cannot be fixed with certainty. In 1635 (the very year of his banishment from the Colony), Mr. Allerton sent one of his vessels to Ipswich, to convey the Rev. John Avery "to Marblehead to dwell with the people" and become their religious teacher. With his wife, and family, consisting of eight children, he embarked, accompanied by Anthonie Thatcher, with his wife and nine children; but during the passage, the vessel was wrecked on an island near the coast, in a severe storm, and all perished except Mr. Thatcher and his wife. The next year the General Court granted the island to the mourning survivor of this terrible disaster, and it has since been known by his name.

Deprived by this sad event of a religious teacher, the want was not supplied till William Walton became a resident and householder in 1638, or the year following. It is a matter of record, that in 1648 he was preaching regularly, and that provision was made annually for his support. One of the early historians states in 1642, "that though the people of Marblehead had prophesying" the church members partook of the sacrament at the church in Salem. Possibly it may have been as early as 1640 that the foundations of a plain little church were laid on the bleak, barren hill that tradition indicates as its site.

Offences against temperance and morality, like drunkenness and its kindred vices, were considered, and penalties pronounced against individuals by the General Court, but the *day* on which the offence was perpetrated had considerable influence with the magistrates in fixing a proper penalty. This discrimination is noticed at a session of that august body, held at Boston, July 20, 1633, when it imposed a fine of *ten shillings* on John Bennett for being drunk at Marblehead, while James White for committing the same offence at the same place on the *Sabbath* day was ordered to pay a fine of *thirty shillings*.

The personal tastes, habits, and fashions of individual members of society were often made the subjects of severe criticism, and when a case was peculiarly offensive, the general indignation would find expression in some public manner. This was the case with John Gatchall of Marblehead, who was accused of *wearing long hair*. On the twenty-first day of June, 1637, at Salem town-meeting he was charged with building on town lands without authority, and a fine of ten shillings imposed for the offence, but it was agreed to abate *one-half of the fine* in case "he shall cutt off his long hair off his head." It is feared that he paid his fine, and adhered to his own fashion of wearing his hair, while others followed his example; for twelve years after this event, Gov. Endicott and others protested against the custom "as detestable, uncivil and unmannerly, whereby men deform themselves, offend sober and modest men, and do corrupt good manners."

The statement has been made that a grant of land was made to George Wright in 1637, as an inducement for him to establish a ferry between Marblehead and Salem, and it is probable that regular communication was thus established between the two places about that time. The landings were fixed at what is now known as the termination of the "Ferry-road" in Marblehead, and the lower end of "Turner Street" in Salem. In March, 1643, the General Court ordered the deputy governor to appoint "some able and honest man" among the inhabitants of Marblehead to act as constable, and the next year ordered the inhabitants to choose some person "to exercise them in martial discipline that they may be ready on special occasions."

With a population now of about 200 inhabitants, composed mostly of fishermen, whose unpretending homes were built near the coves and beaches of the northern part of the town, Marblehead was still recognized as a "Plantation." Without a church organization, yet they had erected a plain barn-like structure on the crown of the hill where the "Seaman's Monument" now stands, and they gathered there on each returning Sabbath to listen to the prayers and exhortations of William Walton. Remembering that near the village churches, where they had worshipped in their native country, the bodies of their ancestors now mingled with the dust, they reverently adhered to the ancient custom, and with loving care made the graves of those they mourned in the shadows of the little church. Thus, as they followed the rugged path that led to the house of prayer, the sweet memories that clustered around the dead were recalled to banish earthly thoughts and cares, and bring their souls in close communion with God and heaven.

With about forty families in 1647, the question of a separate town organization was earnestly agitated. On the 12th of March, 1648, a "general town meeting" was held at Salem to consider the subject, and it was voted that "Marblehead, with allowance of General Court be a towne, and the bounds to be the utmost extent of that land which was Mr. Humphries farme and solde to Marblehead, and so all the neck to the sea reserving the disposing of the ferry and appointing of the ferryman to Salem."

Thus authorized to act, the inhabitants assembled at an early day to "make provision for Mr. Walton the minister," by an equal rate of taxation, and appropriated forty pounds for that purpose. At a subsequent meeting an annual tax of ten shillings per man was imposed on "all strangers obtaining wood, flake stuff and other conveniences for the prosecution of their business." At the same meeting "John Stacie the elder and John Bartoll the younger" were appointed as "herdsmen" for the ensuing season of seven months, commencing on the first day of April. At sunrise of each morning they were to be at "Chillson's crossing" and blowing a horn as a signal, the inhabitants

were to deliver their cattle to them at that place, within half an hour; they were charged "to be with the herd beyond first bridge before the sun was an hour high;" to return with them to the same place an hour before sunset; give prompt notice to those whose cattle were missing, assist to recover them, and "exercise a special care in wet weather." For this service Stacie was to receive a weekly compensation of six shillings and Bartoll four shillings. "Way wardens" were also appointed, and all persons who neglected the "careful warning" of these officers, to labor on the highways (unless sickness should prevent), were to be fined ten shillings each, and the fines were to be expended for refreshments, for the benefit of those who performed the labor.

The plantation at this time contained forty-four families, and it was claimed that the common lands would not furnish pasturage for more than fifty cows. In view of this statement it was deemed advisable to fix the rights of each family, estimating "one horse as being equal to two cows, two yearlings as one cow, and four goats or sheep as one cow." The division was made as follows: James Smith and Rowland, 1 cow; Mr. Walton, 2 cows; Abra. Whitehaire, 1 cow; Samuel Doliber, 1 cow; John Lyon, 2 cows; John Peach, 1 cow; John Gatehall, 1½ cows; Edmund Nicholson, 1½ cows; Henry Stacie, ½ cow; John Bartoll, 1 cow; William Barber, 1 cow; David Thomas, ½ cow; Will Chichester, ½ cow; Joseph Doliber, 1 cow; John Legg, 1 cow; Sam. Carwithen, ½ cow; Robert Knight, ½ cow; Peter Pettford, ½ cow; David Carwithen, 1 cow; John Bennett, 1 cow; Erasmus James, 1 cow; Thomas Bowinge, ½ cow; Thomas Gray, 1 cow; Francis Johnson, ½ cow; John Stacie, 1 cow; Richard Norman, 1 cow; John Normau, 1 cow; George Chine, 1 cow; John Northey, 1 cow; John Peach, Jr., 1 cow; William Suckis, 1 cow: Nicholas Merret, 2 cows; Rich. Curtice, 1 cow; Walsingham Chillson, ½ cow; Thomas Pitman, 1 cow; Timothy Allen, 1 cow; John Hart, 2 cows; Cris Salmon, – cow; Thomas Lane, 1 cow; Arthur Sauden, 1½ cows; William Charles, 2 cows; for Jona. Goyt, 1 cow; Isaac Allerton, 2 cows; Moses Maverick, 3 cows; John Deveraux, 2 cows.

Doubtless these names, or the most of them, were attached to the petition presented to the General Court, requesting the separation of Marblehead from Salem, and its incorporation as a town. This prayer was granted May 2, 1649, in the following language:

"Upon the petition of the inhabitants of Marblehead for them to be a town of themselves, Salem having granted them to be a town of themselves, and the bounds of their town, which the Court doth grant."

For six or seven years after this important event, no record has been preserved of the transactions of the town, with the exception of an occasional grant of land to new settlers.

In 1653, Francis Johnson, who had served as the first constable for a few years, was appointed as a lieutenant by the General Court, and the male inhabitants were urged to study and drill for military proficiency.

The few officers charged with the administration of public affairs up to this time had been designated as "Townsmen," and an examination of the accounts in 1656 showed that the town's indebtedness amounted to nearly thirty-seven pounds. The statement that the town was in debt moved the citizens to promptly provide the means to meet every obligation, and Lieut. Francis Johnson was instructed "to collect the taxes and satisfy all debts against the town up to date." Changing name of their principal board of town officers from that of "Townsmen" to selectmen, they voted with a remarkable confidence in official discretion and integrity, that "the Selectmen should not be limited in anything that is for the good of the town"; but it was also ordered that a strict account "be kept of all receipts and expenses." Francis Linford was employed to "warn the town, ring the bell and keep the meeting house clean," at an annual salary of forty shillings; and the next year Edward Read became his successor, for the same compensation, with the additional duty of "findiug nails for the glass of the meetiug house."

Mr. Walton had now performed the duties of minister for several years at an annual salary of forty pounds, and the fidelity with which he had discharged the service moved some of his friends at this time to propose an increase to his salary of twenty pounds, but the proposition would have been defeated, had not several of his friends subscribed the amount in open meeting, which was to be levied and collected of them as tax-payers. And yet the good minister saw but few and handled less of the gold and silver coins of his native country. An investigation at this time, covering a period of four years, showed that he had received as portions of his salary during that time, "half of a cow," valued at two pounds two shillings and sixpence; "half ton of mackerel," valued at five pounds; a "quantity of pork," at two pounds; a "quantity of cheese," at two shillings; and "a quantity of liquor at fifteen shillings."

With matters of importance now coming before the town for consideration, it was regarded as the duty of every one qualified to vote in town affairs, to be present; and when, on one occasion, it was found that twenty-two men were absent from the meeting, a fine of two shillings was imposed on each of the absentees.

The little meeting-house was the only public building in the place, and as the town increased in population, propositions to improve the structure, for the better accommodation of the public, were readily adopted. When first erected, it was doubtless a plain building, with a huge fire-place on one side, rough, and uncomfortable benches, a small platform, and a table for the accommodation of the minister, and a few small windows, the glass of which was kept in place with nails, which made a merry clatter with every passing breeze. The first improvement ordered was to seal the walls inside, which Richard Norman agreed to do for nineteen pounds.

The next year, a committee was appointed to see that seats were provided for the accommodation "of all the inhabitants of the town both men and women," and soon after twenty-seven pounds were paid for the construction of a gallery. At a later period, a contract was made "to board the western end of the meeting house and the fireside of the same," and still moved by the spirit of public improvement, three years after, a contract was made with Robert Knight, Francis Collings, and Jeremiah Neal, "to build a gallery in the north-east end of the meeting house, with five seats, with columns, a board at the bottom and to be arched sufficient to strengthen the house; with stairs and all other neccssaries similar to the other gallery"; and they were to receive twenty-seven pounds for the fulfilment of the contract.

The fishing business steadily increased, and its production for home consumption and foreign commerce was so considerable as to now require laws for its proper regulation, and officers for their execution. Samuel Ward and Samuel Morgan were appointed "Packers and Gaugers," and Christopher Lattimore and John Bartoll were chosen "Cullers of Fish," while the "master of every boat" was ordered "to brand his name on every barrel or cask of mackerel he packed," and a penalty of twenty shillings was fixed as a fine for neglecting to comply with this regulation.

The forest-trees were rapidly disappearing, to supply the wants of the inhabitants, and those who came here annually to prosecute the fishing business. With a view to prevent the prodigal waste of what was so necessary for the comfort of the inhabitants during many months of the year, the town ordered "that no trees should be sold for fencing or building unless authority should be first obtained of the Selectmen, and that no trees should be felled for firewood until the old wood should be burnt, under a penalty of five shillings for each offence."

The scarcity of money to facilitate public and private transactions has been mentioned; and town taxes, private contracts, the salaries of the minister and public officials, were paid in fish, the produce of the farms, or other forms of merchandise. Benjamin Parmeuter was employed as herdsman, at the annual salary of seventeen pounds, and he was to receive his compensation "in money, corn, butter or necessary clothing." A few years later the General Court adopted the most stringent measures to prevent the exportation of coin, and officers were appointed, with authority "to break open any chest, trunk, box, cabin, truss or any other suspected place or thing, where they may conceive money to be concealed, and to seize and hold moneys thus taken, subject to the decision and judgment of the Courts." Unable to procure money, the inhabitants paid their public taxes in fish, and the selectmen, who were charged with the duty of collecting and disbursing the public funds, were compelled, in their annual statement of receipts and expenses, to enter one item as "loss on fish," to balance their accounts.

These officials, however, were not always successful in their efforts to make it appear that they conducted the financial affairs of the town with entire fidelity to the public interests, and, like scores of unfortunate successors, who have trod the same thorny path for the last two centuries, they learned that in the eye of the public, sometimes, private worth, integrity, and sagacity, were elements of character not inconsistent with inefficiency and rascality, when engaged in the public service.

The annual expenses of the town had now reached the sum of £150, including the minister's salary, but the selectmen presented the account of receipts and expenses in a form not at all satisfactory to the public. Their refusal to make a more definite statement provoked the

indignation of the inhabitants, and they instructed a committee of three, who were appointed for the purpose, "to make *one more* demand," and if they still refused to comply, they were ordered to *sue* the disgraced officials "before the next Court at Ipswich," and the committee were threatened with "a fine of thirty pounds and the costs of prosecution" if they neglected to perform this duty.

During the early autumn days of that same year, an event occurred that silenced all further controversies and contentions. The good minister, William Walton, after years of faithful service, closed his earthly labors, strong in the faith and hope he had so earnestly commended to others.

Samuel Cheever, son of the minister at Manchester, became the successor of Mr. Walton. A graduate of Harvard College at the age of twenty, he came to Marblehead nine years after, and commenced the duties of his chosen profession with zeal and ability.

The population appeared to increase more rapidly from this time, and numerous grants of land were made to new settlers, and duly recorded. Less than four years after the settlement of Mr. Cheever, it was found necessary to build a "lean-to" or addition "on the back side of the meeting house forty feet long and twenty feet wide with three gable ends."

The minister's salary was fixed at eighty pounds, but soon after his settlement he was authorized "to use the land on the back side of the meeting house during his life, for a pasture," and subsequently it was ordered "that a horse pasture be laid out for him on the common lands, and that it be fenced at the expense of the town."

To encourage the inhabitants to erect a suitable fortification for the defence of the harbor, the town was released from the obligation to pay the county tax, and "two or three guns" were promised when the works were in a proper condition to receive them. This liberal action of the General Court secured the object desired, and during that year the works were erected and the guns mounted. As a further encouragement, the county tax was abated for another year; and, two years after the commencement of the work, "sixty great shot" were ordered to be furnished "for the guns in the fort at Marblehead."

At this time provision was first made for public education, when, by a vote of the town, a small lot of land was granted to a Mr. Leach, on condition "that he should teach five of the poor children to be chosen by the Selectmen." A few years after this, Mr. Edward Humphreys opened a school, and the town voted him "five pounds for his encouragement." From the first settlement of the place, the people had depended on the physicians located at Salem for medical advice and skill; but finally Richard Knott, a young physician, was induced to make his home here, the town granting him a lot of land, "to him and his heirs forever on condition that he live and die in the town and follow his profession as a doctor."

The highway between Marblehead and Salem had been laid out and built, but not entirely completed, till this time, when the town voted four pounds and five shillings, as its proportion of the cost for the bridge across Forest River.

For several years an exciting controversy had been maintained in relation to the rights of the inhabitants to the "common lands." While the town was a part of Salem, the authorities of that place made several grants of land to different individuals in Marblehead; and when the town was incorporated, all the lands not included in these grants were designated as "common lands." In 1648, the value of these lands was estimated for pasturage, and the rights of each family fixed by mutual agreement. At that time the rights were divided among forty-four families. Twelve years after, only fifteen or sixteen families had joined their fortunes with the original settlers; but during the next twelve years the population increased rapidly, and with this increase the controversy waxed warmer, exciting discord and contention between families, and dividing the community into hostile factions. Those who were inhabitants of the town at the time of its incorporation, together with their heirs, claimed the *exclusive right* to all the common lands, and styled themselves "commoners"; while those who became residents of the place *after* that event insisted with equal pertinacity on *their* right to use these lands for pasturage, but were designated as "non-commoners." This controversy finally became so violent that an appeal was made to the General Court to settle the conflicting claims; and this was done with apparent satisfaction to all parties. The decision, as recorded, divided the inhabitants into *three* classes; confirming certain rights to those who became residents from 1660 to 1674, but more important privileges to those who became inhabitants between the years 1648 and 1660, and still more important rights to those whose claims were derived from the residents of 1648. In this settlement the names of one hundred and seventeen householders and heads of families are recorded, indicating a population of about 500 at that time.

Greater care was now observed in the management of town affairs; moderators were chosen to preside at town-meetings, and a fine of twelvepence fixed as a penalty for offensive and disorderly conduct at such meetings. The services of a herdsman, to take charge of the cattle, were dispensed with; Nicholas Marritt was appointed as measurer of salt, and John Legg as sealer of leather; while a more liberal provision was made for Mr. Humphreys, the school-master. Persons in needy circumstances were not permitted to become inhabitants of the town, unless satisfactory bonds were given that they would not become paupers; and "Phillip Welsh formerly of Topsfield" was notified that this requirement must be observed in his case, or he could not remain in town. A "great gun was mounted on the Fort," and a watch-house built.

A committee was appointed, with authority to lay out and sell house-lots from the common lands; and their transactions, as recorded, describing boundary lines, were often indefinite, and gave hopeful promise for future disputes and trouble. Thus, before the first year of their official service had closed, they described a lot sold to Thomas Candish as being "bound on the east with William Wood's wall, with two briar bushes at the westward and two briar bushes at the southward and from that briar bush eastward to William Woods wall."

Ensign Norman and John Brimblecom were chosen "to look after the youth and boys on the Lords day and see that they behave themselves well and orderly."

A highway was laid out between Marblehead and Lynn.

The salary of Mr. Humphreys, the school-master, made up of the small appropriation provided by the town and the income derived from private tuition, was doubtless insufficient to meet his necessary wants; and so, when the inhabitants voted to have the little church bell signalize the evening hour of nine o'clock, he promptly accepted the situation of public bell-ringer, at an annual compensation of forty shillings.

The annual expenses of the town at this time were one hundred and thirty-nine pounds and sixteen shillings, of which Mr. Cheever received seventy pounds and six shillings. But the good minister, like his predecessor, received the larger part of his salary in merchandise; and it was finally resolved that he should be paid "seventy pounds in money." Those refusing to pay the tax for the support of the minister in coin, were to have twenty-five per cent. added to their tax, which was to be paid in good merchandise, and the value thereof fixed by two impartial persons.

It has already been noticed that, in the earlier days of our local history, drunkenness was severely punished, as a gross immorality and crime; and yet few, doubtless, had reflected on the evils of intemperance sufficiently to recommend total abstinence as a wiser rule of life. Exposed to uncommon perils and peculiar hardships in the prosecution of their business, every man considered the use of intoxicating liquors as absolutely necessary, and it was universally held that no occasion of public or private joy could be properly celebrated without a little indulgence in this direction. For some years public sentiment sanctioned the custom of providing *brandy*, at the expense of the town, for use on town-meeting days. The cost of this article for this purpose, as recorded in the financial accounts for 1677, was *eleven shillings*, and as brandy was then sold for about seven shillings per gallon, the quantity used to refresh and inspire the freemen engaged in public affairs that year was about six quarts.

At this time, also, the last vote is found in the public records designed to protect and save the forest-trees.

It has been mentioned that a contract was made, in 1668, with Robert Knight and two others, to build a gallery in the meeting-house. The work had been completed, and Robert Knight appears to have been the architect, under whose direction it had been performed. Other changes and improvements had been made in the little church, but none seems to have given the pleasure afforded by the gallery, which the genius of Knight had designed and executed. For ten years they had admired this structure as the grandest achievement of his workmanship and skill; and, grateful to the man whose triumph had extorted the praise of citizen and stranger alike, it finally found expression in a vote of the town "that Robert Knight shall be released from paying his town rates during his life for his workmanship done in the meeting house in building the gallery."

Encouraged by this recognition of his services, Knight soon after erected a grist-mill. At the north-east part of the town a brook crosses the highway, and during the early spring, when the snow is

melting on the hill-sides, a rapid stream follows its ancient channel across the beach to the ocean beyond. When the extensive swamps west of this locality were covered with trees and brushwood, the flow of water was doubtless considerable during a large portion of the year. Near the highway at this point Knight erected his mill, and the town authorized him "to overflow the ferry swamps for the benifit of his mill, and this right to continue during the town's pleasure." Four years after, the mill and privileges had passed into the possession of John Pearll, who was authorized "to pen the water which flows into the great swamp called Wolf Swamp, and that swamp which lyeth going to the ferry for seven years, provided the said Pearll keeps a water mill in repair when he hath water to grind the towns corn and in case he shall see cause to lay down his mill then the privileges of said swamp shall return to the town."

Moses Maverick, Ambrose Gale, and Samuel Ward were appointed as the first magistrates of the town "to hear and end small causes according to law," and Mr. Maverick was authorized to "administer oaths in both civil and criminal cases, and to join persons in marriage where no legal impediment appears." Samuel Ward was, soon after, commissioned as a captain, and elected the same year as the first representative of the town in the General Court. At this time he was also authorized, with John Legg, to meet the town officials of Salem and Lynn and establish a boundary line for the town. He again represented the town in the General Court the following year, and for three weeks' service in that office was paid three pounds from the town treasury.

After sixteen years of patient service, Mr. Cheever was enabled to organize the First Congregational Church of Marblehead, and secure his own ordination as a minister of the gospel. We have only a brief notice of the occurrences of that eventful day; but the ministers who were present and officiated on that occasion were Messrs. Higginson, Hale, and Hubbard, and the leading members of the church were Samuel Ward, Erasmus James, Christopher Lattimore, and Ambrose Gale, the latter the most enterprising merchant in the place at that time. The church was organized with fifty-four members,—fifteen males and thirty-nine females.

The town steadily but slowly increased in population, and while the industry of the fisherman and farmer secured the substantial comforts of life for his family, and the busy hum of the good-wife's spinning-wheel proclaimed the nature of her service for the common good, yet neither manly energy nor womanly skill could provide for every requisite comfort, and many articles of necessity could only be procured from stores beyond the sea. London merchants readily supplied such articles on credit till the close of the fishing season, when it was agreed that the surplus fish not required for their own use should be sold in England, and the proceeds applied to cancel debts thus contracted. This was the practice when an event occurred that excited the alarm of the whole population. Sir William Phipps, then governor of the Province, planned and organized an expedition against the French Provinces; and among the ships seized for this service by the ambitious leader was the armed vessel commanded by Andrew Caty, then at Marblehead and preparing to take on board a cargo of fish for London. The ship was well manned, and, being armed with ten guns, was an important acquisition to the expedition; but the selectmen, with seven of the most influential citizens, earnestly petitioned the General Court to release the vessel. They represented that the fish ready for transportation was "the accumulation of nine months' labor and expense; that it was perrishable as an article of commerce," and, if left on their hands, would become worthless; that their creditors would thus be prevented from receiving their just dues, and their credit would thus be destroyed; that their families would suffer for the necessaries and comforts of life; that their credit as citizens at home would be impaired, because it would deprive them of the means to pay their public taxes; and that the ship was not only requisite for their wants, but the "armament she carried" also, as this was necessary to secure insurance on their merchandise against the perils of the seas. The result of this petition is unknown, but the facts are instructive as showing the manner in which the inhabitants procured such supplies as could not be purchased in the country at that time.

Intelligence was now received that the good people of a neighboring town were threatened with a peril that filled every home with indescribable fear and dread. Long before the settlement of the country, the statutes of England had recognized the possibility of individual compacts with Satan, by which supernatural powers were acquired; and the penalty for such offences was death by the public hangman. The children of a Salem clergyman were now suffering from some mysterious affliction, and this was attributed to the wicked influence of an old Indian woman living in the family. Charges of a similar character were soon made against others, and in a few months the jail was full of men and women accused of this imaginary crime.

It is a matter of pride to record the fact that only one inhabitant of Marblehead was charged with this wickedness, and in the final jail-delivery found relief and liberty.

It is not claimed, however, that the inhabitants of this town were entirely free from peculiar superstitions; and one, which held the public confidence for more than a century, demands notice in this connection. A traditional story represents that when the place was a small fishing hamlet, and the commerce of maritime nations was ravaged by the "Free Rovers of the Ocean," a vessel bearing the black flag of the pirate entered Marblehead harbor. Soon after a boat was observed approaching the shore, containing the boat's crew and a female, who was evidently a prisoner, and landed on the beach of a small inlet, now designated as "Lovis' Cove." A swamp adjoining the cove, and covered then with small forest-trees and brushwood, prevented any further observation of the movements of the party; but, shortly after, the appalling screams of the helpless victim were heard, and earnest appeals, in the language of the terrified listeners, in the words: "O mercy! mercy! Lord Jesus Christ, save me! save me!" Her cries finally ceased, and the monsters, leaving their murdered victim where the cruel outrage had been perpetrated, hastily embarked for the vessel, which soon after left the harbor. As time rolled on, it is claimed that, for a period of a hundred years or more, the cries of despair uttered by this woman in her dying hour would be heard nearly every year on the anniversary of her violent death. The screams were heard apparently from the same spot, near the margin of the swamp, during the silent hours of night, and were described as being "so superhuman and superlatively dreadful as to excite indescribable feelings of horror." In later years, when men of education and courage, free from the superstitious fears of earlier generations, heard the cries and diligently searched for the cause, they were unable to discover any human agency in their production, and the long-continued screams of the "Screeching Woman" were therefore pronounced to be a strange and solemn mystery.

A community largely composed of fishermen, and following a business often subjected to such reverses as to require an abatement of the province and county taxes, could only make limited provision for public education, and yet a resolution had been recorded some years before to secure the services of a teacher "competent to teach the Latin language." This design does not appear to have been accomplished till Mr. Josiah Cotton, a young graduate of Harvard College, was engaged for this office. The grandson of John Cotton, an eloquent minister in Boston, and nephew of Increase Mather, the president of Harvard College, he assumed the responsible duties of school-master in Marblehead when he was only nineteen years of age. With a salary of fifteen pounds from the treasury of the town, and with a school that "sometimes numbered seventy three pupils," for which he received, from parents and others, "a sixpence and a groat per week for each scholar," his annual income amounted to "fifty pounds in silver money." He remained in the town six years, following his profession with credit to himself and satisfaction to the inhabitants, making his home in the school-house at times, and occasionally boarding with the minister or other prominent residents of the place. He became warmly attached to some of his young pupils; and one of these, whose early death filled a home with grief, extorted the following pathetic lines from his pen, as a tribute to his memory, and which were doubtless designed for the headstone of the young man's grave:—

"Death is a tribute which by nature we
Are bound to pay unto mortality:
A lovely plant cropt in his tender years
Lyes here: a subject not of prayers but tears:
A youth who promist much, but awful death
Hath snatcht him from us & hath stopt his breath:
And he's gone: you'll scarce his equal find,
On all accounts few equals left behind."

The town was described at the time "as not much bigger than a large farm and very rocky," while the fishing business almost exclusively engaged the attention of the inhabitants, being prosecuted with great industry during the entire year.

The ferry continued to be the principal means of communication between Marblehead and Salem. In 1678 it was leased by the Salem authorities for an annual rent of five shillings; in 1699, for eighteen

shillings; in 1704, for three pounds, and, after that time, for five pounds. The fare for inhabitants of Salem was fixed at twopence, and for others "what the Court of Sessions" may designate. The boat was of sufficient capacity for the safe transportation of horses and carriages, and the income derived from the lease was given to the grammar school-master at Salem.

The population of the town at this time was about one thousand, and the principal public house was located on the eastern slope of the hill now known as "Bailey's Fort," near the corner of Beacon and Orne streets, and was called "The Fountain Tavern."

The greater portion of the houses of the inhabitants were built near the coves, along the sea-shore, from "Peach's Point" to the "Upper Wharves," and on the public ways now known as Beacon, Orne, Franklin, Washington, and Front streets. The cove now occupied by the "Upper Wharves" was called "Nick's Cove," and that where the "Lower Wharves" are built was "Codnar's Cove." On the shores of these coves were several "fishing stages," or structures for the landing of fish. Josiah Codnar occupied the north side of the cove bearing his name, while a man named Northey had a "fishing stage" on the south side. The beach at the foot of the public way, now known as State Street, was given to the town by a vote of the "Commoners" in 1662, as a public landing-place for the free use of the inhabitants. Very few mechanics or tradesmen were located in the town, and the inhabitants depended mainly on Salem to supply calls for skilful workmen in the different departments of human labor.

For more than thirty years, Mr. Cheever had served as the ordained minister of the "First Church," and for nearly fifty years he had faithfully labored among the people as their pastor. The church had been removed from the "Old Burying Hill" to a lot opposite the lower end of Washington Street, and the population had so increased as to render the duties of the minister too exacting for his strength and years. It was therefore resolved to secure a colleague for Mr. Cheever, and among the candidates who sought for the position were two young men, even then distinguished for piety, zeal, and eloquence, and both giving promise of that great distinction which each attained.

John Barnard was thirty-three years of age; had visited Europe, and had served as a chaplain in the English army; was clear, logical, and forcible as a speaker; a close observer of men, eminently practical in his suggestions and investigations, and earnest in his devotion to the great work to which he had consecrated his life.

Edward Holyoke was twenty-six years of age; was a graduate from Harvard College ten years before, and had prosecuted his studies with great industry while serving as a tutor. He was distinguished for his love of literature and mathematics, was personally attractive, and remarkably eloquent as a preacher.

Both earnestly desired to win the office, bringing into requisition all the powers of their genius and learning, to secure success, and each won zealous friends among their listeners; but Barnard secured a majority of the votes and promptly accepted the invitation.

The minority were disappointed, and, resolving to withdraw, organized another church and invited the defeated candidate to become their pastor. The invitation was accepted, and thus was the "Second Congregational Church" established in Marblehead. Both were ordained and commenced their labors at nearly the same time, a new house being erected for the church of Mr. Holyoke on the site now occupied by that of the present society.

While the controversy raged between the rival factions in the old church, Mr. Francis Nicholson, a temporary resident of the town and a gentleman of wealth and education, being a zealous member of the "Church of England," circulated a paper for subscriptions to a fund to be used for the erection of a church for the accommodation of those who adhered to that form of worship. Mr. Nicholson secured £173 in this manner, and, contributing £25 from his own means, the church was erected and the Rev. William Shaw installed as the first rector.

The choice of John Barnard, as the colleague of Mr. Cheever, proved a wise step, not only for the church, but for the town also. His practical mind was constantly seeking for knowledge, and suggesting measures to improve the material prospects and fortunes of the inhabitants, as well as to elevate the moral and spiritual condition of the people under his charge. Winning the friendship of foreign captains visiting the town for cargoes of fish, he learned the secrets of their traffic, the markets they sought, and the profits that rewarded their enterprise. These facts he communicated to some of his friends and neighbors, and he labored earnestly to induce them to export their merchandise in their own vessels. He was unsuccessful for a time, but at last Joseph Swett, "a young man of strict justice, great industry, enterprising genius, quick apprehension and firm resolution, but of small fortune," listened to his statements and resolved to follow his advice. He was successful beyond his most sanguine expectations, and the prosperity that attended his enterprises induced others to follow his example, till a trade with foreign countries was established that, in a few years, made the town one of the most enterprising and successful commercial ports in the New England Provinces.

The popularity of Mr. Barnard soon attracted a congregation that filled his church, and, in a few years, it was found necessary to build an addition to the south-east end of the "old meeting-house." It was designated by this name to distinguish it from the "new meeting-house" occupied by Mr. Holyoke and his parishioners.

Full of years and honors, Mr. Cheever was at last called upon to separate from his loving people and gifted colleague, and receive the rich inheritance his years of faithfulness had so justly won. Blessed with a vigorous and enduring constitution, which a long life of active and laborious duty hardly impaired, he preached for fifty years *without the loss of a single Sabbath;* and when, at last, weary and exhausted, he lay upon his dying bed, strong in the faith he had commended to others, the spirit passed away without a single sign of grief or pain. Near the site of the ancient church, they made his grave, where now a time-worn slab of slate briefly tells the story of his virtues and Christian service.

The eloquence, learning, and zeal of Mr. Holyoke soon attracted a large and admiring congregation, and his fame as a preacher steadily increased with his years of faithful service. After twenty-one years of devoted labor with his first and only parish, he was elected president of Harvard College, and, accepting the high trust, performed its responsible duties with honor and distinction for more than thirty years.

While Mr. Cheever was the only minister in the place, every family was taxed for his support; but, with the division of the ancient Congregational Church, the town was divided into two parishes, the inhabitants making their own choice of parish and pastor for the purposes of taxation, while it was agreed, by a vote of the selectmen, to exempt those who worshipped at the Episcopal church.

All three churches were provided with bells, and the clock in the tower of the "new meeting-house" noted the passing hours with a fair degree of accuracy. With the increase of population and business, more liberal provision was made for the education of the young.

Mr. John Coit was engaged to teach the children "to write and cypher and to read the English language and the Latin tongue," at an annual salary of sixty pounds; but three months demonstrated his inability to meet the public wants, and Mr. Stephen Sewall became his successor. This gentleman held the position three years, when Mr. Richard Dana accepted the trust, at a salary of eighty pounds, and performed its duties acceptably for eight years. Mr. Samuel Stacey became the successor of Mr. Dana, and after four years of service the admiration of his fellow-citizens found expression in a vote to present him "fifty pounds over and above his regular salary." The generosity of this gift will be better appreciated when it is stated, that, only the year before, the impoverished condition of the town, resulting from one or two years of unsuccessful business, moved the inhabitants in public meeting to petition the General Court for relief, by an abatement of the public taxes.

The establishment of a grammar school, managed by the best talent to be found in the Province, appears to have been a special object of public concern at this time, and although a petition to the General Court for a grant of unappropriated public lands in aid of this worthy object did not meet with the favor it deserved, yet the inhabitants resolved to sustain it with liberality, in spite of private misfortune and public distress.

No form of disease that afflicts humanity excited more dread and horror than small-pox, previous to the discovery of Jenner; and the intelligence that this form of pestilence had appeared in some neighboring town would secure the public sanction of the most arbitrary measures for non-intercourse with the afflicted community. As a measure of prevention against its terrible ravages, inoculation had been advised in hospitals located at a distance from inhabited sections of the country; but so great was the fear of the people, in view of the bare possibility of infection, that public sentiment condemned the proposition as a dangerous and desperate expedient. At one time several persons designed to offer themselves as patients for such treatment in a distant hospital, but a vote of the town threatened banishment for six months against all who should leave the town for such a purpose.

But few of the people had ever been afflicted with the loathsome disease, when intelligence was received that it had made its appear-

ance in Boston. A fence was immediately built across the street, near the entrance of the town, with a gate, securely locked, and four men appointed to watch, night and day, with instructions to "restrain strangers from entering the town from Boston," and three months after the guard was increased. During the month of October the rumor spread from house to house that a young girl named Hannah Waters was suffering with symptoms of the disease, and, a public meeting being called, it was voted, that if these suspicions should be confirmed, she was "to be removed from the house of her mother to the house of William Jones," and a committee of five was chosen to assist the selectmen, "with power to remove persons infected from their homes and act in the emergency for the best interests of the town." Their worst fears were realized; in defiance of gates and locks and guards, the pestilence now knocked at their doors; and, while many sought safety in flight, those who remained adopted every measure that wisdom or experience could suggest, to provide against the common danger. Nurses attending cases were forbidden "to walk the streets," and all persons were authorized "to kill dogs running at large." But no measure of prevention could stay the rapid march of the pestilence through the town, and all who could claim exemption from the contagion devoted themselves to the care of the sick and the burial of the dead. The stores were closed and business generally suspended; all communication with Salem and other county towns was forbidden; and, finally, but two members of the board of selectmen remained to discharge the duties of their official position. Under the warrant of a justice of the peace, a meeting was called, and the vacancies filled, and the justices entreated, by a vote of the town, to assist the authorities in their labors.

For nearly one year the pestilence raged with unabated fury, for it was not till September of the year following that the town was declared to be free from the scourge and the inhabitants resumed their usual avocations.

The influence of such men as Barnard and Holyoke was now manifest in public affairs, exciting a more general interest in measures of public improvement, and securing the adoption of laws for the better government of the town. It was resolved to build "a Town House where the Goal and Cage now stand," and during the following year the building was finished, being fifty feet long, twenty feet wide, and twenty-three feet stud. The first public meeting was held in the new building Aug. 1, 1728.

A severe and destructive storm at this time made several breaches in the beach at the head of the harbor, and, its entire destruction being threatened, the General Court was petitioned to adopt measures for its protection. This body, however, failed to respond promptly, and the town finally appropriated two hundred and fifty pounds to make the necessary repairs. During the same year the General Court granted "a sum not exceeding two thirds of 2000 pounds" for the same purpose, and a "sea wall" was built, "about eighty rods in length, six to ten feet wide and six to eight feet high," at an expense of seven hundred and fifty pounds.

A small almshouse had been erected near Pond Street, and all persons requiring public support were ordered to be removed there; but the vote excited so much indignation that it was reconsidered at an early day, and the selectmen authorized "to grant relief according to their discretion."

Petitions were presented to the General Court, asking for appropriations to repair the fort; but the appeals were unheeded, and the citizens finally instructed a committee to make such repairs at the expense of the town, and one hundred and fifty pounds was appropriated to purchase ammunition.

Town by-laws were adopted at different public meetings, forbidding the removal of ballast from the beach at the head of the harbor, or throwing ballast into the harbor from vessels; requiring that all chimneys should be cleaned once every three months, as a protection against fire; forbidding "all Negroes, Indians or Mulatto slaves" the privilege of the streets after nine o'clock in the evening; forbidding "the gambleing game called pitch-penny or any other game in the streets, highways lanes or alleys"; and prohibiting the practice of "sliding down hill on sleds during the winter."

In 1721, the selectmen laid out the highway to the ferry, and, twelve years after, a committee was chosen to meet a similar committee from Salem, and establish a boundary line between the two places.

In 1721, the province loaned £50,000 to the several towns, and Marblehead received £1,130 of this loan. Trustees were appointed to receive it, and were instructed to loan it to individuals who could furnish good security "at not less than six per cent annual interest." The income derived from this loan was two years after appropriated to Mr. Cheever as a portion of his salary. The trustees retained one hundred pounds of this fund as compensation for their services, but this unauthorized act excited so much controversy and indignation that they finally submitted their claims to arbitration, and were allowed sixty pounds.

In 1727, the Province made another loan of £60,000 in "bills of credit" to the several towns, and the first meeting held in the new town-house in 1728 was to appoint a committee to receive the town's proportion of this loan. Trustees were chosen to take charge of this fund, and they were instructed to loan the money to individuals, "no person to have more than fifty or less than twenty pounds, and borrowers to give two good and sufficient sureties."

The duties of town clerk had been performed with fidelity and ability for several years, and yet without reward; but finally the services of this official were recognized as worthy of compensation, and the sum of ten pounds was appropriated for his salary.

Benjamin Boden had filled this important position for a few years when this action took place; and his knowledge and experience in town affairs was fully appreciated by his fellow-citizens.

The selectmen had performed the duties of assessors from the early history of the town; but it was finally resolved to create a separate board of officers to discharge this duty, and three assessors were therefore duly chosen. The number selected did not appear to give general satisfaction, and at the adjourned meeting it was voted to increase the number to six, and three additional members of the board were chosen. When the choice of the town had been declared, Mr. Boden, the clerk, deliberately walked out of the meeting, taking the town records with him. A messenger was despatched to request his return, but he positively refused to do so, and the citizens, unwilling to proceed without the presence of their accomplished and efficient clerk, voted to adjourn. The difficulty was afterwards compromised by one of the assessors elect declining to serve, and the election of the indignant clerk to the vacancy thus created.

Mr. Isaac Mansfield became the successor of Mr. Samuel Stacey as school-master, at a salary of seventy-five pounds, and three years after the selectmen were authorized "to treat with Mr. Peter Frye respecting the lower part of the town house to keep a school on such conditions as the Selectmen shall see fit."

The salary of Mr. Mansfield was increased to one hundred pounds, and a few years after reduced to sixty pounds, when he resigned.

Mr. Samuel Ashton became his successor, with an increase of twenty pounds to the salary, and the selectmen were authorized "to employ an Usher during the three winter months" if necessary. This school was located in the upper part of the town-house.

The selectmen at this time recommended Mr. Peter Jayne as a gentleman "of sober conversation and well fitted to use and exercise the employment of teacher of children and youth to write and cypher," and, thus commended, he did good service as an educator of youth for several years in the lower part of the town-house.

A Mr. Williams was also recommended as a teacher, "to keep school in the house of Joseph Roads in the upper part of the town." The private schools of Jayne and Williams flourished from patronage bestowed by those whose means commanded especial attention to the educational wants of their children, and the generous provision frequently made by gentlemen of wealth for the education of the promising sons of the poor. The names of Robert Hooper, an eminent merchant, and John Barnard, the distinguished pastor of the First Church, are mentioned as applying a portion of their income to this noble and praiseworthy object.

The large fishing interest of the town, its increasing commerce, and the exposed condition of its harbor, at a time when war was seriously threatened between England and France, moved the inhabitants to take prompt measures for the better protection of the place. An appropriation was made by the town "to build a platform and provide carriages for the guns in the fort," and the next year the Province appropriated £550, to strengthen and perfect the defences of the place. Joshua Orne, Joseph Swett, and Giles Russell were appointed to receive the fund, and, with a view to protect the treasure against the possibility of private embezzlement, it was voted "that the trustees deposit the money in one chest, with two different locks and keys, the chest to be left in the charge of one, and the keys to be held by each of the others; and the chest not to be opened except in the presence of all three gentlemen." Orne and Swett declined to serve, and Thomas Gerry and Nathan Bowen were elected to fill the vacancies. A special committee was appointed to receive the fund, and, having done so, for some unexplained reason, refused to transfer it to the trustees. For nearly two years

it was the subject of contention, when it was finally paid to the town treasurer, with an additional sum of £166, voted by the Province for the same object. A committee of three was appointed to secure the services of a "competent Engineer, to purchase necessary materials, and exercise all other powers requisite" for the prompt completion of a fortification of sufficient strength for the protection of the town. War having been declared between England and France, Thomas Gerry was commissioned as the first commander of the fortification. During the next year, an additional appropriation of £225 was made by the General Court, for the purchase of cannon and ammunition.

Capt. Gerry proved to be an able and efficient commander, but he was often sadly in want of the necessary means for a successful defence of the place, in case of attack. With the guns badly mounted, the platforms decaying, no military stores, and insufficient ammunition, he earnestly appealed to the town for appropriations to meet his wants, but the destruction of taxable property, the general stagnation of business, increase of paupers, and heavy taxation denied the aid he solicited.

A petition for aid was prepared and sent to the General Court, in which it was claimed that Marblehead, "as the chief seat of the fisheries, and important as a nursery for seamen had a right to demand the consideration and protection of the Provincial government"; that its business was "the basis of a large export trade and largely consumed the productions of the farmer and home manufacturer"; that it "was prosecuted with great uncertainty and risk, especially in time of war, often entailing great loss of life and property, leaving widows and fatherless children dependent on the bounty and charity of their more fortunate neighbors"; that "the French had already captured many fishing vessels belonging to the place"; that "the town was limited in territory, being a little more than two miles square, and so rocky and barren that it was utterly impossible to employ its inhabitants in agriculture"; that "its harbor was well situated and commodious for navigation or the fisheries, yet open and easy of access thereby exposing the vessels and other property of the inhabitants to the ravages of the meanest invader."

While the petition did not receive the consideration it deserved, and the old fort was neglected, ignorance by the enemy of its defenceless condition served as a protection to the town, and the war finally closed, permitting the citizens to again pursue their uncertain and hazardous business. A town with narrow streets, crowded with wooden houses, with unsafe chimneys and large open fire-places, in which wood alone was used as fuel for all purposes, was constantly exposed to destruction by fire, and while the utmost vigilance of the entire population was in continual requisition to prevent such a calamity, many of the citizens favored the introduction of improved machinery for its better protection. The question of purchasing a fire-engine now began to be agitated, and a vote was finally passed to make the purchase, but another meeting was soon called, the vote was reconsidered, and the proposition finally defeated. The agitation of the subject continued, however, and for six annual town-meetings the question was warmly discussed, gradually gaining favor, till at last the selectmen were instructed to purchase "a Fire Engine in London with the necessary pipes and a dozen leather buckets at the expense of the town."

Before this engine was received, Robert Hooper, a wealthy merchant, purchased a small engine, and presented it to the town, so that the first fire-engine owned by the town of Marblehead was the gift of a public-spirited citizen. The fire-wards were instructed to organize companies for both engines; but neither company was to exceed *nine* men, and members were to be exempt from military duty and public service, as hogreeves, constables, or tythingmen. The regulation limiting the number of men was afterwards modified so as to permit an increase of three men "for the larger Engine purchased by the town," and another regulation was adopted, imposing a fine of two shillings for neglect of duty, or absence from meetings, to be divided equally between the town and the company. These regulations were again modified, authorizing the fire-wards to exercise their own discretion in relation to the number attached to each engine, and they were instructed to agree with the members to serve for five years, the men to be exempt from other public duties, as had been specified at a former meeting.

In accordance with these regulations, companies were promptly secured, and the fire department of the town, thus organized, commenced that long career of usefulness which has distinguished it for more than a century.

A town with large fishing and commercial interests, and with a rapidly increasing population, afforded a ready and profitable market for the provisions and farm produce of traders from the neighboring towns, and with a view to protect the inhabitants from the impositions of unscrupulous dealers, it was resolved to prepare the lower part of the town-house for a public market. Under the direction of the selectmen, the necessary improvements were made, and Maj. Richard Reed was appointed clerk, and a salary of ten pounds was allowed as a compensation for his services the first year. Suitable rules were adopted for its government, and the regulations of trade by "Hucksters" during market-days.

"In view of the large number of poor and destitute and vagrant and disorderly" in the place, it was voted to erect an almshouse "on that piece of ground called the negroes' burying place, on the back side thereof and that said house be 111 feet long, 22 feet wide, two stories high and each story to be not over 7½ feet with all necessary appartments and accommodations for that use with suitable yards fences &c."

This building was erected at an expense of five hundred pounds, and was located on Back Street, near the head of Pearl Street. The selectmen were instructed to divide the town into five wards, each ward to be under the supervision of a member of the board of overseers. It was also voted "to set apart a portion of the new almshouse, as a house of Correction for the restraint and punishment of criminal offenders."

The careful observer could not fail to notice, at this time, the many evidences of public improvement and individual enterprise which marked it as one of the most thriving towns in the Province, and yet its fisheries and commerce had so often suffered from the calamities of war and the perils of the ocean as to excite, at one time, the earnest protest of the inhabitants against increased taxation by the Province authorities. From this petition, the information is derived that, during the years 1755 and 1756, eleven fishing vessels, valued at £5,000, with their crews of seventy men and boys, were lost at sea; that, in 1757, an Embargo Act denied them all access to the best markets of the world for the products of their toil and enterprise; that unsuccessful voyages and large losses of cables and anchors in 1758 marked it as a disastrous year for the fishing business; and that these successive years of misfortune were followed by another, in which eleven vessels, valued at £5,500, were lost, with their crews of seventy men, and eleven boys, leaving thirty-seven widows, and eighty-five fatherless children. By these disasters, it was claimed that more than one-fifth of the whole fishing fleet belonging to the place had been lost, and that their crews represented "nearly one fifth of the rateable polls belonging to the town." These calamities, besides filling homes throughout the town with grief and mourning, and reducing men of substantial fortune to a condition of poverty, imposed additional burdens on the tax-payers; for the numbers demanding support from the town, through its public charities, were so largely increased as to finally require £200 to meet this want, or one-fifth of the whole appropriation.

But there had been years of prosperity preceding these, and a steady improvement in the progress and condition of the town was manifest. During these years, town scales were purchased, and "placed in a situation favorable to those making sales of hay to the inhabitants"; a boundary line was established between Marblehead and Salem; by-laws were adopted to prevent gaming in the streets and highways, and compelling house owners to keep their chimneys clean; provision was made for the erection of a powder-house at the expense of the town; swine were denied the freedom of the streets, a liberty the hogs had enjoyed from the earliest settlement of the town; repairs on the highways were made, without special demands for this service by delinquent tax-payers; an unsuccessful attempt was made "to name the streets, lanes and allies"; the first town-pump was established in one of the public wells, the town paying a part of the cost; nine highways were laid out and duly recorded, and Pearl, Pond, and Darling streets are recognized as among the public ways accepted at that time. Among the curious and amusing public acts of the town, was one appropriating thirty shillings "to be spent for a treat to the Constables at the house of Capt. John Stacey," and another directing that "no person shall keep or possess any dog or dog kind, that shall measure more than twelve inches high from the ground to the top of his shoulders." The penalty for violation of this law was twenty shillings for each offence.

Rapidly recovering from the losses sustained by war and ocean disasters, the town fairly rivalled all others in the Province in the prosecution of commercial enterprises, and the acquisition of wealth and population. Where, fifty years before, there was hardly a family of intelligence and refinement, but few mechanical trades represented,

and a "rude swearing population," the reproach of religion and morality, now there was a numerous body of enterprising merchants, the owners of more than one hundred sail of fishing vessels, and forty merchant vessels, manned with a thousand seamen, engaged in profitable commerce with England, France, Spain, Portugal, and the West Indies; every mechanical trade necessary for the comfort and convenience of the inhabitants, largely represented and profitably employed; stores with full assortments of merchandise, inviting the attention and patronage of purchasers from all the neighboring towns; public and private schools, superintended by teachers distinguished in their profession; clergymen, physicians, and lawyers honored and respected by the most eminent men of the day; well-graded streets and avenues, reaching to the adjoining towns; private residences that rivalled the most imposing structures of the Province in architecture and design, furnished with taste and elegance; comfortable homes for the prudent and industrious; and a population with comparatively few "to imitate the general rudeness, improvidence and intemperance of a former generation."

Patriotism was cherished and honored as a sacred sentiment by the humblest citizen, and it found expression in loyalty to the British throne whenever and wherever the rights and honor of the "Mother Country" were assailed. The sacrifice of commerce and business, and the increased taxation imposed, as a consequence of wars between England and France, were cheerfully accepted and endured, and when William Pepperrell, the Kittery merchant, called for volunteers to follow him to the walls of Louisburg, hundreds of Marblehead fishermen responded to the call, and participated in the glory of that important achievement.

No questions of political importance had engaged the attention of the people up to this time, for the American Colonies, while recognized as a portion of the British Empire, had been left in a great degree to manage their own affairs, and this had been done without much controversy among those charged with the duty of making laws for the different Provinces.

With a view to secure a revenue from these prosperous Provinces, the British ministry finally secured the enactment of a law which provided that all important documents and papers authorized by the statutes should be written or printed on paper bearing the government stamp, and this law was designated as the "Stamp Act." This "Act" was to be enforced on or after the 1st of November, 1765, and the representatives to the General Court were instructed, at a meeting of the citizens of Marblehead, held in September of that year, "to readily join in such dutiful remonstrances and humble petitions to the King and Parliament as shall have a tendency to repeal the Stamp Act and secure the alleviation of the heavy burdens thereby imposed on the British American Colonies: and that you do not give your assent to any act of the Assembly that shall imply the willingness of your constituents to submit to any internal taxes that are imposed otherwise, than by the Great and General Court of the Province according to the Constitution of this government."

The firm and united action of the Colonies in opposition to this measure of taxation secured its repeal the next year, and the intelligence was received with every manifestation of joy and gratitude; but the passage of a new measure the year following, imposing a tax on tea and other articles, and involving the same principle so obnoxious in the "Stamp Act," again excited the resentment and hostility of the people. The agitation for organized opposition to this measure was commenced by the adoption of a "Circular Letter" by the General Court, addressed to the Provincial Legislatures of the several Colonies, inviting a general convention of delegates for consultation and co-operation. The adoption of this "Letter" was denounced by the friends of the ministry, as "a measure inflammatory in its character, tending to create unwarrantable combinations and to excite unjustifiable opposition to the constitutional authority of Parliament: calculated to revive unhappy divisions between Great Britain and the American Colonies, and the treasonable work of a desperate faction misrepresenting the opinions and judgment of the people." The government demanded that the vote adopting the measure "be rescinded," but this was refused by a vote nearly unanimous, there being but 17 yeas in a vote of 109. The citizens of Marblehead were prompt to repel the slanderous charges against the Assembly; and, in town-meeting assembled, they declared it "to be their duty as a people who would not tamely part with their rights and liberties, to let the world know their sentiments" in regard to this measure of the General Court, and they voted without a dissenting voice "to return their sincerest thanks to the worthy 92 members of the late Honorable House of Representatives of this Province, for their steady resolution in adhering to the just rights and liberties of the subject, when required to rescind the resolution of a former House relating to the Circular Letter sent to the other Provinces desiring them to join in a dutiful petition to His Majesty." Secretly advised by Gov. Hutchinson that the presence of troops was necessary to enforce the claims and demands of the government, a regiment of soldiers was landed in Boston. The presence of these soldiers only excited a more determined resistance to the laws and measures of the British government, and when Joshua Orne and John Gallison were elected as representatives to the General Court, their fellow-citizens gave them very clear instructions for the regulation of their political conduct.

They were charged "to exercise their best powers to remove every cause that tended to awe or control the freedom of debate in the House of Representatives: to promote every measure designed to restore the confidence that formerly existed between the colonies and Mother Country: to use their best exertion to refute the misrepresentations made against this Province to the government at home: to use all legal measures to have the authors of these calumnies brought to shame and punishment: to resist all demands requiring provision for expenses incurred by bringing troops into this Province, as the cause of Justice has never been impeded nor the civil magistrate deprived of the full and free exercise of his authority: to avoid every act tending to weaken the Union existing between the several British Colonies, and to promote every measure calculated to strengthen and increase it: to secure the appointment of some man of honor and integrity, well acquainted with the interests of the Colonies to act as Provincial Agent, and to be careful that he is provided with such compensation at the public expense as shall be ample to sustain the dignity of his office and render him independent of the favors of the Court: that their support must be given to every rational scheme designed to employ the labor of the poor in every part of the Province in manufactures or in any other way that may be useful to the public: to secure the payment of the Governor's Salary in monthly or quarterly instalments: to oppose any measure designed to impose an Excise duty on spiritous liquors, as the general trade of the Province will thereby be injured, but failing in this design, seek to exempt all that may be used or consumed in the Fishery: to make a strict inquiry into the conduct of the officers of the Crown and see if the impartial administration has not been greatly obstructed, and the authority of the Prince and the right of the subject, has not been in many cases trampled upon with impunity by high handed offenders through their venality and corruption: not to allow by vote or resolution the claim of any power on earth to levy taxes on the people of this Province for the purposes of revenue except the General Assembly of the Province: and finally to embrace every opportunity of manifesting our allegiance to our rightful Sovereign King George the Third: acknowledging the Supreme legislative authority of the British Parliament over the whole Empire, except the power of levying taxes on the Province for the purpose of Revenue: and endeavour to wipe off that reproach for disloyalty and disobedience which has been liberally cast upon us by malicious and malevolent persons at the same time vindicating the just rights and privileges of your country from the insults and designs of wicked and arbitrary men."

The duties on all other articles except tea had been repealed; but the people resolved neither to purchase nor use it while it was burdened with the hated tax, and those who were not equal to the patriotic demands of the hour were denounced as unworthy of respect and confidence.

A chest of the condemned merchandise had been refused transportation by water from Boston, but the purchaser had secured a private conveyance to bring it to the town. The fact was made known on the evening that it was received, and the indignant citizens demanded its removal to Boston on the following day, to which the owner gave a reluctant consent. A person was employed to execute the will of the people, and the contraband package, well covered with patriotic mottoes, was placed on an open wagon, and, having been escorted through the streets by large numbers of men and boys, was finally returned to Boston.

Marblehead, at this time, had nearly sixty merchants engaged in foreign trade, and they assembled at the "Bunch of Grapes Tavern," and signed a non-importation agreement, "to be observed untill the American Revenue Acts should be repealed." Four business firms, however, refused to sign, and they were condemned in the public newspaper as "sordidly preferring their own interest to that of the public good." Resenting the reproaches of their fellow-citizens, they replied indignantly, and a sharp correspondence was continued

between the two parties for three or four weeks, till finally the patriotic merchants again assembled at the same famous tavern, and voted, that "they be looked upon as blindly preferring the chains of slavery to our most valuable inheritance, English Liberty."

Soon after, a town-meeting was held to consider this matter, and voted, "that the determination of the merchants of Marblehead to unite with those of Boston, and the other maritime towns of the Province in an agreement of non-importation was a praiseworthy act and well calculated to sustain the measures of that Assembly which had so gloriously distinguished itself as the watchful guardian of invaluable rights and liberties: that inasmuch as other measures had failed to procure the repeal of the acts complained of, it was the duty of the citizens of the town as friends of their country and as freemen to sustain the merchants of Marblehead, and to prevent by every legal means the importation of British goods into the town, except those not prohibited till a general importation should be permitted: that any person wilfully disregarding the agreement of the merchants and the remonstrances of their fellow citizens should be regarded as an enemy to his country, and unworthy of public patronage or private association: and that the recent lawless act of an ignorant and bloody soldiery in shooting down peaceable citizens in the town of Boston provoked the resentment and indignation of the citizens of this town, and they were ready with their lives and interest at all times to support the civil authority of the Province in bringing to justice all such high-handed offenders against the wholesome laws of the land." At the same meeting, a committee was appointed "to draw up an agreement against the use of India tea and to present the same to the inhabitants of the town for their signatures," and all persons refusing to sign the agreement were to be regarded "as unfriendly to the community," and their names were to be reported for record in the office of the town clerk. The town was faithfully canvassed in obedience to this vote, and the entire adult population signed the agreement, with the exception of "six males and four females."

The few merchants in Marblehead who had refused to sign the "non-importation agreement" respected the wishes of their fellow-citizens so far as to import only such merchandise as was permitted by the terms of the "agreement"; but in Boston, where the royal authority was protected by the bayonets of British soldiers, a few were found engaged in mercantile pursuits who safely defied the public sentiment of the whole Province. One of these, named McMasters, on one occasion came to Marblehead, but within an hour from the time of his arrival he was served with a written notice, signed by Elbridge Gerry, informing him that his "base conduct" was known to the inhabitants of the town, and a speedy retreat would alone save him from "the just resentment of the people." It was eight o'clock in the evening when McMasters read this significant notice, and he left the town without further delay. During the wars between France and England, the able-bodied men of the town had been organized, under competent military authority, into companies for defence, and some of these had seen active service in expeditions against the enemy. These companies were formed into a regimental organization, under the command of Jacob Fowle, a distinguished merchant, and, the last time it paraded with him as its commander, was said to have "a thousand men in the ranks and present a handsome appearance." He died before the close of the year, after serving as its commander for eighteen years, and was buried with military honors.

In no place were public measures affecting the trade and government of the Colonies now watched with greater vigilance than in Marblehead; and acts conflicting in the smallest degree with chartered privileges as well as constitutional rights, and which under other circumstances may have been accepted without opposition, were freely discussed and boldly denounced. Thus, a government measure designed to make the judges of the "Superior Court" independent of colonial appropriations, and to provide for their salaries directly from the treasury of the British Government, provoked a meeting of the citizens; and in a long series of bold and manly resolutions, they protested most eloquently against this and other political wrongs. Before the close of the meeting, it was resolved, "in response to the invitation of the patriotic citizens of Boston to appoint a Committee of Grievances," and Azor Orne, Elbridge Gerry, Joshua Orne, Thomas Gerry, John Nutt, John Glover, and William Doliber, were chosen as that committee. The sentiments expressed in the resolutions adopted at this meeting excited the fears of a few, and a protest, signed by twenty-nine merchants and prominent citizens of the town, appeared in the columns of the "Salem Gazette," ten days after, in which it was declared that "the charges against the King are rash and inconsiderate; that not more than twenty persons voted on the propositions; that the action did not fairly express the sentiments of the citizens; and that some of those who voted did not fully realize the danger of the sentiments to which they had subscribed." The action of the meeting was ably defended in a subsequent issue of the paper, and at the adjourned meeting of the town a proposition, that "the resolves and proceedings of the previous session be confirmed," was passed, with only five dissenting votes.

At this time the first report of the "Committee of Grievances" was submitted, approving a pamphlet entitled the "State of Rights of the Colonies." The committee reported, "that the record of violated rights which it contained was in accordance with the public sentiment of the town, and with a view that every one qualified to vote in town affairs should have a correct understanding of the tendency of these violations in their relations to himself and family, it is recommended that one of these Pamphlets be preserved by the Town Clerk and that it be read annually at the commencement of each March meeting till their grievances are redressed, not only for the purpose mentioned, but to inform posterity (should our rights and liberties be preserved) how much it is indebted to many eminent patriots of the present day; and also that the names of the Honorable John Hancock, who was Moderator of the meeting which originated the State of Rights; of the Honorable James Otis, Mr. Adams and Doctor Warren and other members of the committee which reported then, be recorded in the Books of this town as great Supporters of the Rights and Liberties of this Province, and gentlemen who do much honor and service to their country." A circular letter was also adopted, addressed to the citizens of Boston, thanking them for their wisdom and courage, "which merits and receives the respect and gratitude of the town of Marblehead," and closes with the eloquent declaration "that a determined resolution to support the Rights confirmed to us by the Great King of the Universe, engages the minds of this people, and we apprehend that all who attempt to infringe upon them are wickedly violating the sacred statutes of Heaven; and for the honor and glory of our Supreme Benefactor, for our own welfare and the welfare of posterity we desire to use the blessings of Liberty and Property with prudence and thankfulness, and to defend them with intrepedity and steadiness."

The consignment of cargoes of tea by the East India Company to certain Boston merchants moved the citizens to assemble again in town-meeting; and opening the meeting with prayer by the Rev. William Whitwell, the popular pastor of the "North Church," they again considered their political rights, and recorded a noble protest against this new device of the government and its agents to compel them to accept an article of merchandise universally rejected by the people. An attested copy of these proceedings, as expressing the public sentiment of the town, was directed to be sent to the authorities of Boston, and, nine days after, the tea was taken from the vessels and thrown into the waters of Boston Harbor.

Other subjects, however, had a share of the public attention during these years of political agitation. The public schools had been under the supervision of the selectmen since the town had first taken action in regard to this important matter; but finally a committee was chosen, and designated as "School Trustees," with authority to inquire into the condition of the schools, to ascertain the probable number required for the proper education of the youth belonging to the town; to determine what children should be educated at the public expense, and to adopt such regulations as may be deemed expedient for the government of the schools. At the adjourned meeting it was voted to establish three additional schools, "for the purpose of teaching reading writing and arithmetic," and the sum of £330 was appropriated for educational purposes. A few months after this, the trustees reported, "that in obedience to the vote of the town, three new schools had been established," and the gentlemen selected as teachers were mentioned as "Messrs Jayne, Phippen and Ashton"; that these schools each contained "about 80 males and nearly as many females," as pupils; that "Mr. Jayne's school was in good order being accommodated with a suitable room," but that the other schools were so badly crowded as to peril the health of the scholars, and defeat the educational system contemplated by its friends. A meeting of the legal voters was called to consider the subject, but failing to make the necessary provision for the better accommodations of the public schools, the trustees resigned, and a new board was elected. The public schools, thus neglected, languished; while private schools in all parts of the town flourished, three having been successfully established within one year after this unfortunate action of the town. The subject was, however, persistently agitated, till finally a vote was secured appropriating two hundred pounds for the erection of "two school houses." Up to this time, a regulation had been en-

forced, requiring that "children should read from the Testament," as a qualification for admission to the public schools; and an investigation made during that year revealed the fact that 122 children, the offspring of the poor, were denied access to the schools by the regulation. The town promptly voted that these, and all other children, whose parents or guardians were unable to provide for the necessary primary education, should be taught at the public expense, and one hundred pounds was appropriated for this special purpose. Thus were the public primary schools founded, and have continued, with brief interruptions, till the present time, as a part of our system of public education.

The town clock, which had been procured by private subscription, and had been placed in the tower of the "New Meeting-House," where, under the care of Mr. Nathan Bowen, it had measured time with a fair degree of accuracy for several years, was not favorably located for the convenience of many of the inhabitants, and an unsuccessful effort was made for its removal. A few years after, another clock was purchased and placed in the tower of the Episcopal church.

The First Parish and Church, founded by Walton and organized by Cheever, was now called upon to part with its third pastor. Few of its members remembered the controversy which resulted in his settlement and the division of the ancient parish; and now that John Barnard was dead, the universal grief, that found expression in the homes of affluence and poverty alike, was a fitting tribute to the services and worth of a great and good man. When he assumed the duties of his office the place was little more than a fishing village, with a rude and unlettered population, when the misfortunes of a single season often threatened every home with the severest trials of poverty; while now, the evidences of wealth and refinement were to be seen on every hand, in the midst of a large population honorably and usefully employed, and the wondrous change could be justly attributed to his active influence more than any other inhabitant of the town. To wisely minister to the wants of the poor he studied the science of medicine, and practised successfully without fee or reward; to develop the resources of the town he learned the secrets of commercial traffic, and encouraged his friends and neighbors to engage in enterprises that were prosecuted with great success and profit; interested in naval architecture, he studied its principles and produced models that were the admiration of master shipwrights; a steady and consistent friend of education, he for many years annually provided for the schooling of two or three children of the poor from his own limited means; recognized as a preacher of learning and eloquence among the churches of New England, he delivered the first "Dudleian lecture" at Cambridge which was ever published; free from the spirit of intolerance and bigotry, and true to the teachings of the "Golden Rule," the objects of his Christian love and charity were to be found in every walk and condition of life; of tall and commanding presence, he moved among the people in his daily walks loved and honored by all, and, dying at the ripe age of fourscore years and eight, he was universally lamented by a people he had faithfully served for more than half a century.

At a time when it was said that "more than five thousand" of the population of the town had never been exposed to the contagion of the small-pox, the inhabitants were greatly excited with the intelligence that "two persons in one house were recovering from the dreaded disease who had been freely visited by others." The most efficient measures were taken to prevent the spread of the pestilence; all dogs in the town were ordered to be killed, and the selectmen were authorized to seize whatever buildings might be required for hospital purposes. The prompt and efficient measures taken by the authorities to prevent its spread appear to have been effectual; and soon after, the people of the neighboring towns were officially notified, through the columns of the county newspaper, that those disposed to visit the town could do so safely, as "the disease was confined to the house where it originated, and all other cases had been removed to the back side of the town about a mile from the Market House."

Rejoicing in their escape, this sudden and unexpected visitation was not without its lessons of warning. It had been demonstrated that inoculation was the only reliable measure of precaution, and that cases thus treated, under the direction of competent physicians and the care of experienced nurses, in nearly every instance recovered. At a meeting of the town a proposition was made to build a hospital for the treatment of cases in this manner, and, although the proposition was defeated as a public measure, consent was voted that a private company may establish such an institution "on Cat Island," providing that the General Court and town of Salem should grant permission. Salem readily granted its consent; and the General Court, in response to a petition numerously signed by citizens of Marblehead, Salem, and Beverly, granted the requisite authority. An attempt was made to organize a large company, but, proving unsuccessful, Elbridge Gerry, Azor Orne, John Glover and Jonathan Glover, concluded to engage in the enterprise, and purchased the island and necessary materials for the erection of the hospital. Probably no equal number of citizens in the town possessed so large a share of public confidence or exercised a greater personal influence at this time than those named; but they were unable to allay the fears or silence the criticism which their action excited, and a town-meeting voted to "rescind" the vote whereby the consent of the town was given to erect the building. Another meeting was called, at which the proprietors proposed to abandon the contemplated enterprise, providing the town would purchase the building materials; but this proposition was refused, and they then resolved to go on with their work. A large two-story building was erected, with accommodation for one hundred patients, and Bartholomew Jackson, a skilful and popular physician in the town, was appointed as superintendent. One hundred and three patients soon after entered the hospital for treatment, and in due time were all returned in safety to their homes. A second and third body of patients, each quite as large as the first, and representing some of the most respectable families in the town, were treated with the same result; and the success of the institution was so well established as to influence the citizens of Salem to establish another hospital in a different locality.

The opposition, however, continued to increase, and the "boatman" having violated one of the town regulations for landing patients, an angry crowd drove him from the shore, compelling him to land his passengers at a point remote from the houses; soon after this, the boat was destroyed. At the same time, articles of clothing had been stolen from the island, and the night-watchmen who were employed at the hospital discovered four men in the act of stealing; the thieves made all haste for their boat, but were so hotly pursued on land and water as to throw away the greater part of their plunder to facilitate their escape; but their identity was fixed beyond question. The next day the four thieves were secured and taken to Market Square, were each well covered with tar and feathers, placed in a rude cart, "facing each other," a mob numbering at least one thousand men and boys, with five drums and a fife escorted them to Salem, where a large body of the citizens met the strange procession, and accompanied it through the streets of that town for an hour or more. The four objects of public indignation, it was said, "presented a comic and ludicrous appearance." They returned in a few hours, and the mob dispersed.

During the treatment of the third body of patients at the hospital, it was discovered that twenty-two persons had taken the disease, and such public indignation was excited by this calamity that the proprietors agreed to close the place, and receive no more patients. A committee was appointed by the town to visit the island, and carefully disinfect all articles; but, one of the proprietors being present, and objecting to any interference with the beds, excited the suspicion that the place would again be used as a hospital after the excitement had ceased. The building was now occupied by the steward and his family, and the town committee, eleven persons in all, and on the night of Jan. 26, 1774, the inmates were aroused by the cry of fire, and found the hospital in flames. The building, with its contents, and a barn adjoining, were totally destroyed, at an estimated loss of £2,000. Twenty men, completely disguised, were said to be the perpetrators of the outrage. The proprietors and their friends were indignant, and so were the people on the other side of the question, and such threats of violence made as to call for the appointment of a committee by the General Court to try and reconcile matters. Two men were finally arrested, charged with being concerned in the destruction of the property, and were conveyed to the jail in Salem by the sheriff, for safe-keeping. Soon after their imprisonment, small bodies of men from Marblehead reached the vicinity of the prison, and the numbers constantly increasing, excited apprehensions that a rescue would be attempted, and the magistrates appealed to the military for aid to preserve the peace. "The drum beat to arms," when the crowd, understanding the signal, with such implements as could be found, commenced a furious assault on the prison. In a few minutes the doors were broken down, the prisoners rescued, and escorted back to Marblehead by five hundred of their fellow-townsmen. Reaching the town, the mob dispersed, but re-assembled in the evening, and extorted an unwilling promise from the proprietors that they would abandon all further prosecutions. The sheriff, however, resolved that he would secure his prisoners, and, through his deputies, ordered four or five hundred citizens of Salem to assemble in "School Street," with arms

and ammunition, on the following Monday, and accompany him to Marblehead to secure the rescued prisoners, and the leaders of the mob. In the mean time, the sheriff was notified that large numbers of the citizens of Marblehead were arming, and that six or eight hundred resolute men had resolved to defend their fellow-townsmen with their lives. In this critical situation of affairs, the proprietors were induced to relinquish all claims on the sheriff or county, and peace was finally restored.

The "Committee of Grievances," or "of Correspondence," as it was sometimes called, and the committee at Boston charged with the same duties, established the most intimate relations between the two towns. As the merchants of both places were among the most determined to import no merchandise from Great Britain burdened with a tax, so, at a later day, they resolved "to suspend *all* commercial relations with the Mother Country if the public good required." The agents of the government officials were sometimes exceedingly adroit in devising plans and measures to excite discord among the patriotic colonists, and commit good men to sentiments inconsistent with their previous declarations and action. The resignation of Gov. Hutchinson was an event which was improved for such a purpose. A few friends prepared a flattering address to the retiring official, and had it circulated through the Province for signatures. This declared "that the public good was the mark" which the governor "had ever arrived at in his administration," and that this judgment was sustained by the opinions "of dispassionate thinking men," and that the exemption of fishermen from the hospital-tax was alone due to his friendly representations and efforts.

This address was signed by thirty-three citizens of Marblehead, and its publication in the county newspaper excited public indignation, and a call was issued for a town-meeting to take the matter into consideration. The resolves adopted at the meeting declared "that the Address was injudicious, unwise and insulting to the General Court of the Province, and to those who were the fellow citizens and neighbors of the signers; that it was designed to destroy the harmony of the town in its public affairs; that it needlessly agitated questions which may lead to the imposition of additional burdens; that it was false as it was malicious"; and that its signers should only be forgiven and restored to the confidence of their fellow-citizens by a "public re-cantation of the sentiments contained in the address." One of the offenders requested forgiveness at the meeting, while all but ten publicly "recanted" within a few weeks, either in town-meeting, or through the columns of the newspaper. Two of them wished "that the address had been to the devil before he had either seen it or signed it."

Thomas Gage, an able and efficient officer, who was in chief command of the British forces in America, became the successor of Hutchinson.

Col. John Gallison, the successor of Fowle as commander of the Marblehead regiment, was chosen as representative to the General Court, and the meeting which honored him with its choice passed instructions for his direction and counsel, in which the revenue measures of the British government are again ably discussed, and aggressive measures, like the "Boston port bill," are warmly denounced. They close with the sentiment, "that no man on earth can pronounce these measures right, and Heaven itself, that Grand Court to which all earthly ones must be subservient, will, we confidently hope, forbid their execution. Do the minions of power tell us that not to submit, is death? We reply that in our opinion *to* submit is infinitely worse than death."

The "Committee of Correspondence" was now largely increased, and active measures taken to defeat, as far as possible, the operations of the "Boston port bill," which closed that port against all foreign commerce, and permitted only the entrance of coasters, after having been searched, and placed in charge of a government official at Marblehead. The public and private property of the town, the town-house, and other public buildings, the wharves and storehouses of the merchants, were generously offered for the free use of the merchants of Boston in this emergency. A committee of six citizens was appointed to solicit subscriptions and contributions to relieve the necessities of the poor in Boston, and, at one time, "eleven cart loads of Jamaica fish and a cask of oil were sent."

A committee was appointed by the town to consult with the clergymen, and advise them, with the consent of their churches, "to appoint a day of Fasting and Prayer," in view of the "grievious situation of affairs throughout America." The government authorities now resolved "to suppress town meetings and the citizens were forbidden to assemble except for the choice of Town officers in March and to provide for necessary town expenses without a special license from the Governor." The "Committee of Correspondence" were instructed to notify other towns in the county, and advise the establishment of county delegate conventions, to devise and adopt such measures as may be deemed expedient for the common welfare.

A company of "British Regulars" were stationed on the Neck, to enforce compliance with this and other arbitrary regulations; but their presence was ineffectual either to prevent public meetings or silence the patriotic utterance of the citizens. The officers of the militia were notified, by town authority, that the public good required that every man in their different commands should be properly equipped, according to the requirements of the Province laws, and that four times each week the men should be mustered for a two hours' drill in the manual of arms, and military movements. The week following this action, the selectmen were instructed "to deposit the town's stock of powder in a place of safety where it would be secure for future use."

Azor Orne and Jeremiah Lee had been appointed by the town to represent its interests in the "Old Continental Congress," called to meet in Philadelphia during the month of September, 1774, and Elbridge Gerry was afterwards chosen as an additional delegate; but each represented that the condition of their private affairs would prevent their acceptance of the important trust confided to them by their fellow-citizens. They were then requested to select one of their number for this important service, and were authorized to draw on the town treasury for all necessary expenses. Elbridge Gerry was finally prevailed upon to accept the office, and was thus authorized to act in the most important convention that had ever assembled to consider the difficulties between the Colonies and the mother country. With the public mind constantly agitated by numerous and continued acts of aggression against the chartered privileges of the Province and the constitutional rights of the people, and a company of "regulars" stationed within a mile of the "Town House" to enforce these acts, it was impossible to preserve the public peace at all times, and prevent personal altercations between the citizens and solders; and when it was announced that Capt. Merritt, a valued and respected citizen, had been dangerously wounded by a soldier during one of these disputes, the desire to exterminate the hated regulars was almost universal. The citizens were hastily assembled to express their indignation; but the public resentment was somewhat modified by the official declaration, that the act of the soldier was condemned by the officers in command, and the promise that the offender should be punished with "five hundred lashes," as a penalty for the outrage. Still, the presence of British soldiers was regarded as a menace to their cherished rights, and measures designed to drive them from the town were promptly adopted. With this object, a committee was appointed to correspond with similar committees to be chosen by other towns, to prevent, if possible, the sale of supplies to the soldiers: such as "lumber, spars, pickets, straw, bricks or any other material whatever, except such as may be absolutely required to sustain life." Members of the regiment had been advised to drill frequently, to acquire proficiency in the manual of arms, and battalion movements; and it was now recommended by a vote of the town, that each member secure "a good fire arm and bayonet, a pouch and knapsack and thirty rounds of ball cartridge," and select such persons for officers "as were known to be friends to their country." The officers had received their commissions from Hutchinson or Gage, and it was declared, that those who considered it a duty to execute the orders of the governor, "while he was seeking the ruin and slavery of the Province," would be regarded as committing "acts of hostility against the Liberties of America," and the town therefore requested all such officers to publish "their resignations in the public newspaper." The inhabitants of the town were earnestly entreated "to preserve their ammunition, and not to expend the same, except in defence of their King and Country's Liberties"; and it was also advised that "no kind of wild fowl, or other game, be purchased which has been obtained at the expense of powder," and every one was urged "to discontinue its unnecessary use."

The officers of the regiment promptly complied with the expressed wish of their fellow-citizens, and the thanks of the town were voted to "Samuel Trevett, Nathaniel Lindsey, Ebenezer Graves, Capt. John Glover, Capt. Thomas Pedrick, Capt. John Prince, Richard Pedrick, Nathaniel Holder, Valentine Tedder, Joshua Prentice, John Stimpson, James Doake, William Bartoll, and James Merritt," for their compliance with the wish of the town.

It was not the intention of the citizens, however, to permit the regiment to disband, and, in the absence of all other recognized authority, the town deliberately voted *to issue the necessary commissions to officers*, and thus preserve the organization.

Convinced that the regiment would be required at an early day "to assist in defending the Charter and Constitution of the Province as well as the Rights and Liberties of America," it was deemed important that the organization "should be properly disciplined and instructed in the arts of war," and considering that those who should be called as "the first to take the field" would be required to devote their time to this preparation without delay, it was resolved as "both just and reasonable that they should be rewarded for their services." The sum of £800 was therefore "cheerfully granted," as an appropriation to meet this expense, and Capt. James Mugford was appointed as "Paymaster for the detached Militia or Minute Men," with instructions to honor all drafts for the purpose named, authorized by a committee of the town, consisting of Thomas Gerry, Joshua Orne, and Richard Harris. The committee was instructed to allow a compensation of "2 shillings per day to each private, to Sargents, Clerks Drummers and Fifers 4 shillings, First-Lieutenants 4 shillings 8 pence and Captains 6 shillings"; a service of four hours each day was required, but compensation was only to be allowed for three days in each week.

These measures excited the astonishment and anger of "tory sympathizers," and although their numbers were small, yet, relying on the power of the government to crush all attempts at armed resistance, they ridiculed the bold action of their neighbors, or entreated them to discountenance conduct that could only end in disaster to their cause, and the ignominious death of every leader. But this only provoked the warm resentment of their fellow-townsmen, for they publicly denounced them as "foes to American Liberty, the minions and creatures of power," attempting "to ruin and enslave their country, because they were lost to Justice Truth and Humanity"; that they were "Ministerial tools and Jacobites"; that it was "criminal to indulge them in their wickedness"; and a committee was instructed "to report their names to the town, that it may take effectual measures for either silencing them, or expelling them from the community."

In the mean time, the company of "British Regulars" had been withdrawn from the town, but the resolute conduct of its citizens, in the enforcement of patriotic measures, influenced Gov. Gage to send the "Sloop of War Lively mounting 20 guns," to the harbor, to restrain the inhabitants from action which was denounced as treasonable. This vessel remained in the harbor about two months, and the officers were instructed to search all vessels coming into the harbor, and seize all arms and ammunition which might be discovered.

In the performance of this duty, a vessel containing "a chest of arms, had been compelled to anchor near the Lively," and although a vigilant watch was kept on the prize, yet six young men, led by Richard R. Trevett, conceived and executed the bold plan of boarding the vessel on a very dark night, and securing the muskets. The captain of the "Lively" called on the town authorities for the return of the property, and although a meeting was called, and search made, yet the muskets could not be found.

Soon after this event, on a quiet Sabbath day, a vessel sailed into the harbor, and landed "246 British Regulars on Homan's beach." Having "loaded their guns," they marched through the town, and out on the road to Salem, accompanied by hundreds of young men, curious to learn the purpose of this untimely visit. The story of the expedition, and the defeat of its purpose at North Bridge in Salem, needs no repetition here; but when, in the early shadows of the evening, the disappointed commander led his soldiers back through the town, and was obliged to march by the Marblehead regiment, "drawn up in line and fully armed," he fully realized that if the conflict had commenced at the "North Bridge," but few of the officers and men would have ever reached the vessel again in safety.

In view of the threatening condition of public affairs, the owners of fishing vessels were advised, by vote of the town, to delay preparations for the usual "spring fares." The stirring events which soon followed confirmed the wisdom of this advice, for on Saturday, the 20th of April, the town was agitated as it had never been before, by the exciting news of the fight at Lexington, and the inglorious retreat of the British regulars along the country roads from Concord to Boston. The company of artillery commanded by Richard R. Trevett marched to "the old meeting house" on the following day, and listened to a sermon from the Rev. William Whitwell, whose text for the occasion "was the 15th verse of the 28th Chapter of the Second Book of Chronicles."

The next day recruiting officers marched through the streets, with drums and fifes, inviting enlistments for the "Continental Army," and four days afterwards orders were received directing the return of the "Sloop of War Lively to Boston."

During these exciting events, the town and Province suffered a loss in the death of Jeremiah Lee, which was universally deplored as a public misfortune.

He early became distinguished among the merchants of the Province as a gentleman of rare business sagacity and energy, and his business enterprises, prosecuted with great perseverance and industry, soon won for him a princely fortune. It was during these days of prosperity that the imposing structure now owned and occupied by the Marblehead National Bank Corporation was erected by him as a private mansion. It was doubtless one of the most costly and attractive homes at that time in the whole Province; and the graceful proportions of the building, its capacious hall, the mahogany staircase, the ingenious carvings, its historical paper-hangings, and spacious parlors, were the pride and admiration of that time, as they are the wonder of our own. The earliest measures adopted by his fellow-citizens to resist the unjust claims of the mother country found in him a warm and earnest supporter; and, with the large majority of his countrymen, he believed that these measures would finally secure the repeal of the acts they condemned and resisted. With a business demanding the larger share of his time and attention, he probably gave but little time to the consideration of politics, and when these measures had not only proved ineffectual, but had provoked a harsh and cruel policy towards the Province, and his fellow-townsmen not only denounced the British Ministry, but charged the King himself with weakness, he hesitated, and protested against the expression of such sentiments as treasonable and revolutionary.

This separation from the great majority of his fellow-citizens was brief, however; for in a short time he engaged in the controversy with renewed zeal, and nobly sustained every measure designed to vindicate the claims of the Colonies. As the moderator of important town meetings, as a town officer in various capacities, as a representative from the town in the General Court, and as a member of the Province "Committee of Safety and Supplies," he rendered faithful public service. His distinguished townsmen, Azor Orne and Elbridge Gerry, were also members of the same important committee, and all three being detained at Cambridge by public business, on the night of April 18, 1775, they only escaped capture by the British force sent to Concord on that memorable occasion, by hastily leaving their quarters, partially dressed, and remaining concealed, till the search was over and the troops had passed on. It is said that Mr. Lee never recovered from the illness contracted by the exposure on that night, and only three weeks after died at his "country seat" in Newbury.

On the last day of April the "Lively" left the harbor, and the "Merlin," another sloop of war, took her place.

The authorities zealously labored to encourage enlistments, and the town promptly furnished means to purchase necessary war materials. A large "Committee of Safety" was chosen to assist the selectmen in providing "arms, blankets, &c.," for such persons belonging to the town as may enlist in the service of the Province.

The battle of Bunker Hill, in which Samuel R. Trevett and his company of artillery were engaged during the latter part of the action, was the final signal for a general uprising; and, four days after that event, orders were received directing the Marblehead regiment to march to Cambridge. The companies promptly mustered; and on the next day, under the command of Col. John Glover, left the town, to engage in that long contest which finally secured the political liberties of our country.

The "Merlin" still continued in the harbor during these events, and her officers not only established regulations for the search of inward-bound merchant vessels, but fishing-boats also; and yet while these British naval officers were vigorously enforcing these petty regulations, John Manly returned from Cambridge, and with a company of volunteers, on board the "Schooner Lee," belonging to Col. John Glover, safely escaped from the harbor, and commenced that glorious career, as a naval commander, which has immortalized his name in the annals of our country.

The presence of the "Merlin," however, did not deter the inhabitants from making the most efficient preparations for the defence of the town, and "every able bodied man" remaining in the town commenced repairing the "old Fort," working every day, "Sundays included," till the work was completed. During the progress of this work, a merchant vessel arrived from the "West Indies during the evening," but her owners had the vessel quietly taken into Salem harbor, where the cargo was hurriedly discharged and landed on the "Ferry shore."

During the following month, Nicholas Broughton and John Selman were commissioned by Washington to proceed in two armed vessels to the entrance of the St. Lawrence River, and capture, if possible,

certain British vessels, laden with military stores, then known to be crossing the ocean, and bound for Quebec. After an absence of two months the expedition returned, having been unsuccessful. Military stores of every description were sadly needed by the American army, and Congress could do but little in response to the urgent appeals of Washington for the necessary supplies. People residing in the commercial towns felt that the country in this extremity depended largely on their vigilance and patriotism to secure such stores. Any enterprise, no matter how hazardous or desperate, that promised the capture of cannon, muskets, powder, and other military property found ready and willing volunteers. Thus James Mugford, a young fisherman, and the son of a distinguished citizen, resolved to capture a ship loaded with powder, and then known to be approaching our shores, bound for Boston. The British fleet then lay in Nantasket Roads, having been driven from Boston by the American army, under Washington, only a short time before.

Volunteers, as brave and daring as the young leader, promptly responded to his call for a crew; and on board the same vessel which Selman had commanded in the St. Lawrence expedition, Mugford sailed out into the bay to watch for the coming stranger. Finally, when a few leagues from the shore, a merchant ship was observed slowly approaching, and the hopes then excited were afterwards confirmed, when the customary hail of the ocean mariner had been given and returned. Mugford, exposing but few of his men, and offering the services of a pilot, was permitted to approach, till a collision was inevitable, when the welcome order was given "to board," and, after a brief struggle, the ship and cargo was the prize of the Yankee crew. Ordering both vessels into Boston, Mugford boldly and successfully passed the British fleet, and delivered his prize to the public authorities. Soon after, while returning to Marblehead, his vessel was grounded near the entrance of Boston harbor, where he was soon after discovered, and a large boat expedition despatched from the fleet to effect his capture. In the darkness of the night, he and his crew made a most heroic and successful resistance, suffering the loss of only one man, but that man proved to be the bold young leader himself, who was shot during the struggle, while encouraging his men. The rising tide soon floated the vessel from her perilous situation, and the next morning she arrived at Marblehead, where her brave commander was buried with military honors.

Reconciliation with the "mother country" had always been cherished by the people as a probability of the future, till the conflicts at Lexington, Concord, and Bunker Hill, and the intelligence received frequently of the warlike preparations being made by the "home government" for their complete subjection, convinced every thoughtful patriot that the contest must finally end either in the political slavery or freedom of their country. With this conviction, the citizens of Marblehead assembled on the first anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill, and solemnly declared "that if the Continental Congress think it for the interest of the United Colonies to declare themselves independent of Great Britain, and should publish such a declaration, the inhabitants of this town will support them in maintaining such independence *with their lives and fortunes*." The representatives of the town in the General Court were instructed "to make this vote known as the determination of the town."

During the following month, printed copies of the "Declaration of Independence" were received, with the recommendation that it be read to every church congregation, and that it be entered on the public records of the town. In accordance with this recommendation, it was placed in the records of Marblehead, in the plain but elegant handwriting of Benjamin Boden, then filling the office of town clerk.

The disasters that befell the American army under Washington during the first year of the struggle are known to every reader; but the citizens of Marblehead, in town-meeting, resolved to raise a sufficient sum of money by taxation to provide such bounties as should secure "at least one-seventh of the male adults" for the Continental army.

"Tories" had been tolerated with much forbearance from the beginning of the conflict; but Thomas Gerry was finally instructed, at a town-meeting, to ascertain and report the names of all who were found "inimical to the rights of the American states." He reported the names of seven citizens. The "Articles of Confederation," which had been prepared to secure a more perfect union of the Colonies, were accepted by the town without a dissenting vote, and the representatives to the General Court, Azor Orne, Jonathan Glover, and Joshua Orne, were instructed "to sustain the articles in the Assembly of the State."

The continued issues of paper money by Congress and the Provinces had driven gold and silver from the channels of trade, and rapidly increased the value of all labor and merchandise when measured by the new currency. The families of soldiers, furnished with these paper promises, found it impossible to live, as the so-called money would purchase but little that was necessary to sustain life, and the town was obliged to provide for their necessary wants.

At the next March meeting, $24,000 were voted to defray the ordinary expenses of the town; but, before the year had closed, it was found necessary to make an additional appropriation of $40,000. Thus matters grew worse with every new issue, till at last a committee of forty citizens was appointed to regulate the value of "merchandise, the charges of tavern keepers, laborers and teamsters and the price of manufactures." Speculation in gold and silver was forbidden, and any person demanding coin for rent was denounced as "an enemy to the country." The price of "tallow" was fixed by town vote at "nine shillings per pound; wood, eighteen pounds per cord; hay, forty-four shillings per hundred; candles, eighteen shillings per pound; men's shoes, eight pounds per pair, and other shoes in proportion."

On Monday, the 4th of September, 1780, the first meeting was held in the town to receive votes for governor, lieutenant-governor, and senators. The meeting was opened with prayer, by the Rev. Isaac Story. Sixty-six votes only were cast, John Hancock receiving sixty-three for the first office, and Benjamin Lincoln the unanimous vote for the second office. At this time there were reported to be "831 men belonging to the town," 477 being represented as "engaged in business or some industrial occupation," 166 held as prisoners by the British, and the balance were "in the service of their country or missing." There were "1,069 women, and 2,242 children."

The resolution of the people to continue the struggle and sustain the army appeared to be as determined as when the conflict commenced; but men could not be induced to enlist, with the almost worthless paper currency as compensation for services. Near the "old neck road" the town owned a lot of land, measuring about five acres, and this was sold for £217 18*s.* in gold, and the money appropriated to encourage enlistments. Not being required for this purpose, it was used to pay loans made to the town by individuals, at different times during the war.

The surrender of Cornwallis and the British army at Yorktown, during the month of October, 1781, virtually closed the war, and secured the independence of the Colonies. As the people of Marblehead had engaged in the contest with rare unanimity and zeal, so, through all the weary years of the conflict, had they, on land and water, sacrificed life and property with unrivalled devotion.

In 1772, over 200 sail of merchant and fishing vessels were owned in Marblehead, embracing a tonnage of more than 12,000, with 1,203 polls enrolled on its public records, while in wealth, population, and commerce, it was claimed as the second town in the Province. When the independence of the Colonies was recognized, only 1,509 tons of its shipping remained, the number of its polls was reduced to 544, while 458 widows and 966 fatherless children mainly depended on public charity for the necessaries of life.

A town debt of £2,700 had accumulated, nearly one-half of it being due to Jonathan Glover, who had served as town treasurer from the commencement of the war; and the wharf property belonging to the town was sold, and one-third of the debt was paid from the proceeds of the sale.

The Marblehead regiment had done good service in the long struggle which had ended so gloriously. With full ranks, and fully armed and equipped, it had left the town, on the 22d of June, 1775, under the command of Glover, to join the American forces at Cambridge. The uniform was "a blue round jacket, and trowsers, trimmed with leather buttons," and it was designated as the 21st Regiment, and was also called the "Marine Regiment." Ten days after it reached Cambridge, Washington arrived to take command of the American army; and during the autumn of that year it was ordered to Beverly, and several vessels were furnished with crews from its ranks, to engage in expeditions for the capture of military stores. It remained in this service till the British were driven from Boston, and Washington, with the army, had left for New York. In obedience to orders, it left Beverly, and reached New York City at about the time the American army was defeated in the battle on Long Island, and was employed in the management of the boats for the transportation of the army across East River, during the night following that disaster. Glover was now placed in command of a brigade, consisting of his own and two other regiments, and was charged with the removal of the sick and disabled, as Washington had resolved to evacuate the city. Having discharged this duty successfully, the brigade followed the

retreating army, and, encountering a superior force of the enemy, behaved with such gallantry as to win the warmest praises of Generals Washington and Lee. The series of disasters that quickly followed these events need not be repeated here; but the regiment was either with Washington or Lee during the weary days of that eventful autumn and winter, and when Washington encamped on the banks of the Delaware, it composed a portion of that little army, which, in spite of its successive reverses, was then preparing to strike an effective blow at the enemy. Of the service rendered by the regiment on that December night, General Knox, in a speech delivered in the Massachusetts Legislature several years after, testified in words of burning eloquence. "I wish," said the brave old General, "I wish the members of this body knew the people of Marblehead as well as I do. I could wish that they had stood on the banks of the Delaware River in 1776, on that bitter night when the Commander-in-Chief had drawn up his little army to cross it, and had seen the powerful current, bearing onward the floating masses of ice, which threatened destruction to whosoever should venture upon its bosom; I wish that when this occurrence threatened to defeat the enterprise, they could have heard that distinguished warrior demand, *who will lead us on?* and seen the men of Marblehead, and Marblehead alone, stand forth to lead the army along the perilous path to unfading glories and honors in the achievements of Trenton. There, sir, went the fishermen of Marblehead, alike at home on land or water, alike ardent, patriotic, and unflinching, whenever they unfurled the flag of their country."

Soon after this event, the term for which the regiment had enlisted having expired, a large proportion of the surviving officers and men returned to their homes.

The limits of this work will not permit the full record of patriotic service, on land and sea, by sons of Marblehead, in this great conflict. Glover, Lee, and Trevett are names still honored for their gallant devotion to the cause, as army officers; while Samuel Tucker, John Manly, Richard Cowell, Robert Wormsted, and a score of others, won the applause and gratitude of their countrymen for brilliant achievements on the ocean.

With a population reduced at least one-third since the war commenced; with the public buildings "in a ruinous condition," and the almshouse crowded with paupers subsisting on scanty rations; and with less than a score of vessels left as the remnant of that splendid fleet that had made the port a busy scene for many years, Marblehead had suffered from the calamities of the war more severely than any other town in the Province. But, as in former times, the ocean had furnished the treasure on which her commercial enterprises had been founded and had prospered; so now, the people, with hopeful expectation, turned to that same source of wealth again, and appealed to Congress to refuse its sanction to any treaty that should fail to protect them in their former rights to the ancient fishing-grounds. Their petition was respected; for it was confided to John Adams, a son of their own Province, who knew the people and the story of their patriotic services; and so faithfully did he discharge his duty in this matter that he won the public thanks of the town on his return to his native country, and was requested to receive as "a present, six quintals of table fish," as a small token of the respect and gratitude of the citizens of Marblehead for his faithful service in their behalf.

At last, peace was officially declared, and the news was received "with the ringing of bells, firing of guns and other demonstrations of joy," while large tubs of rum-punch were prepared at the town-house for the free indulgence of a joyful crowd.

The conclusion of the war and the final declaration of peace moved Washington to send a special invitation to Lafayette to again visit the country. On the cessation of hostilities by the surrender of Cornwallis, this distinguished young Frenchman had returned to his native country to organize a new expedition, if needed, for the patriotic cause he had so heartily volunteered to defend. During the summer of the next year he landed at New York, and late in the fall was received "on the Salem road" by a cavalcade of gentlemen as escort, and, approaching the town, was greeted with a salute of cannon, from a hill near the highway, known as "Workhouse Rocks." As the procession moved slowly down the main street, the bells rang merrily, and the doors and windows were filled with the fair daughters of the town, who warmly welcomed the brave defender of their country. When "Training-Field Hill" was reached, a large concourse of citizens was found there "who opened to the right and left, giving three cheers as the company passed and proclaimed Long live the Marquis de Lafayette." Gracefully accepting this public greeting, the honored guest was escorted to "the residence of a prominent citizen," where he was formally welcomed with the following address: —

"*Sir*, — The citizens of Marblehead, with open arms and affectionate hearts, welcome your return to these United States. Your early attachment to the cause of America, the *cause of mankind;* your unremitted exertion and eminent services therein, all conspire to animate our breasts with that superlative esteem and respect we have long entertained for the Marquis de Lafayette.

"Our loss of men and property in the glorious conflict may deprive us of the pleasure of fully manifesting the principles of hospitality on this occasion; but, sir, we are happy in the assurance that your magnanimity will consider our circumstances a *misfortune*, and not a fault.

"We assure you, sir, with the utmost sincerity, that we are deeply interested in your welfare, and happy when honored by your company; and we flatter ourselves that the present interview is only a prelude to similar favors, from yourself and friends, who accompany you."

To this address the distinguished guest made the following reply:

"*Gentlemen*, — While I have the satisfaction once more to enter a town which so early fought and so freely bled in the great contest, admiration mingles with the tender concerns of a sympathetic heart. But amidst our regrets of brave men, who had the honor to fall in their country's cause, I rejoice in the virtuous spirit, and animated industry, so remarkable in the remaining sons of Marblehead.

"May your losses be a hundred-fold repaired by the blessings of peace and plenty, and may your numerous posterity, in the preservation of that liberty, so gloriously purchased, ever venerate the memory of their ancestors.

"Equally proud of your esteem, and happy in your friendship, gentlemen, I heartily thank you for your kind wishes and honorable welcome, and will most pleasingly anticipate every opportunity to greet you with the affectionate tribute of my respect and gratitude."

An entertainment was provided by the citizens at a "genteel house," and after the dinner "numerous toasts were offered of a patriotic character," the sentiment of Lafayette being, "The town of Marblehead, and unbounded success to its fisheries."

It was the purpose of the citizens to retain their distinguished guest till the following day, and arrangements had been made for a "ball" for his entertainment and pleasure; but other engagements compelled him to leave, and at an early evening hour he departed, followed by the benedictions of a grateful people.

The public schools had been closed during the latter part of the war, from the inability of the town to pay the salaries of the teachers, and a few private schools had been maintained, with but little income however to their principals.

A few citizens of the town resolved to secure the establishment of a school, with a course of study that should properly fit pupils for a college education; and being successful in securing a grant of land from the State for its support, founded the Marblehead Academy, which was maintained for many years as a flourishing and successful institution.

Probably in no town in the country was the character of Washington loved and honored more fully than by the people of Marblehead; and when, a few months after his inauguration as the first president of the United States, he visited the town, he was received with the heartiest manifestation of public joy and gratitude. The details of the events on that happy day have not been preserved; but it is safe to say that they were quite equal, and probably excelled, the demonstrations that marked the visit of Lafayette five years before.

On general subjects considered and decided at this time, it may be well to mention that the headland, designated as the "Fort," was formally voted to the United States; that permission was granted to certain parties to "enclose Training-Field Hill at their own expense"; that the first financial record appears computed in "dollars and cents," instead of pounds, shillings, and pence; that a committee was authorized "to purchase a suitable lot of land for a common burying ground," and the land for the Green-Street Cemetery was soon after purchased; that the purchase of a "good Fire Engine" was authorized; and that the sum of ten dollars was received "for the use of the Town House for three days for the exhibition of an Elephant."

The death of Col. Azor Orne, at this time, recalled the record of a public service in civil life rarely equalled by men with his limited opportunities in early life. Born in Marblehead, July 22, 1731, he acquired a moderate fortune in mercantile pursuits, and when the agitation of measures designed to defeat the revenue acts of the British government called for able and persistent defenders, he was recognized as one of the boldest and most eloquent leaders of the colonial patriots. As the chairman of various important committees, and as an active member of the General Court for several years, he served the public with such fidelity as to win the rare compliment of a special vote of thanks from the town for his faithful public service. As a member of the "Province Committee of Safety and Supplies," he was associated with some of the ablest leaders of the colonial cause, and earnest in the prosecution and defence of his convictions. With great

gifts as a public speaker, his services were in frequent requisition to reconcile differences constantly arising in the ranks of the undisciplined army gathered at Cambridge, before the arrival of Washington. During the conflict he freely contributed money from his private fortune for the public service; and when the liberties of his country had been secured, he still continued to serve his fellow-citizens in various positions of public trust. He was a member of the convention called to frame the first State Constitution, of the convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States, and a member of the Governor's Council for several years. Faithfully devoted to the interests of his native town, he was among the foremost in advocating all measures designed to promote those interests, and especially in those favorable to public education. He died in the 65th year of his age, universally lamented.

Gen. John Glover, the life-long friend of Orne, soon followed him to "the spirit-land." Born in Salem, Nov. 5, 1732, he followed the example of his two older brothers, and removed to Marblehead in his youth, to follow the humble trade of a cordwainer. With habits of prudence and industry, he saved sufficient means to invest judiciously in mercantile pursuits, and when the war commenced was a prosperous merchant. With an ardent love for military service, he joined the Marblehead regiment at an early age, and was promoted, step by step, from the ranks, till he became its commander in 1775. To equip it properly for military service he made large drafts on his private fortune. Joining the army with his regiment in 1775, he was placed in command of a brigade the next year, and a few months after was appointed as a brigadier-general by Congress. His family and private affairs requiring his attention, he declined the honor, but, at the earnest solicitation of Washington, was induced to accept. He was in service under Gen. Putnam, at Peekskill, N. Y., and was afterwards with Gen. Gates, at Saratoga, in the several engagements which resulted in the capture of Gen. Burgoyne and his army. He was charged with the delicate duty of superintending this large body of prisoners, in their removal from Albany to Cambridge, a service which he performed acceptably. He was with Sullivan's Rhode Island expedition in 1778, and afterwards at Providence, R. I. When André was captured he was in service on the Hudson River, was appointed as a member of the court-martial which condemned that officer as a spy, and was officer of the day when he was executed. He remained in the service till 1782, when Congress permitted him to retire on half-pay. He had the fullest confidence of Washington, and through his urgent entreaties remained in active service even after his constitution and health were completely broken down. He died universally lamented, at Marblehead, Jan. 30, 1797, in the 64th year of his age.

The first legacy received by Marblehead was the bequest of John Marchant, a respected shipmaster, who died in Batavia, in the East Indies. Before leaving his native country on what proved to be his last voyage, he left the promissory note of a Dorchester merchant in the hands of a friend, with instructions to transfer it to the town (in the event of his death) for collection, the proceeds to be applied to the establishment of a perpetual fund, the income of which was to be annually applied to the relief of the worthy poor in the town, under the supervision of the selectmen and clergymen of the various churches. The proceeds of the note amounted to $1,036.17, and being placed in the hands of the board of overseers, with instructions to invest the same, they reported, after a year's delay, that they were unable to do so. It was finally voted to build two school-houses with the fund, but it was also agreed that the town would execute a bond to the board of overseers, with the condition that the interest should be paid annually, in order that the wishes of the testator may be fully carried out.

The school-houses were built for the use of the north and south grammar schools; but there is nothing to show that the bond was executed, or that the bequest was ever reserved as a special fund given for a special purpose.

George Washington, loved and revered as the "Father of his Country," died at Mount Vernon, Dec. 14, 1799, and the second day of the new year was set apart by the citizens for appropriate services in commemoration of this sad event. All business was suspended; flags from vessels in the harbor, and on public and private buildings, were floating at half-mast; the citizens assembled at the town-house, soon after the noon hour, each wearing black crape on the left arm, as a badge of mourning; at one o'clock minute-guns began firing on the "Common," and the bells commenced tolling slowly and solemnly. While these sounds of mourning were heard throughout the town, a procession of the citizens was formed, and escorted by the "Masonic Lodge and Marine Society," marched "down the Main street to the Eastern square," and thence to the "New Meeting House," where the services were held. A large number of ladies had assembled there, each wearing a badge of black ribbon as a mourning emblem. The church was heavily draped with black cloth. "A solemn funeral hymn was sung as the procession entered, which was followed by prayer, the Farewell Address of Washington read by one of the clergymen, and the Eulogy pronounced by Joseph Story, in later years Chief Justice of the United States, and then a little more than *twenty years of age.*" At the close of these services, the procession returned to the town-house, and the citizens, choosing Isaac Mansfield for moderator, then passed votes of thanks to all who had rendered any service for the occasion; and not only thanked the young orator of the day for his effort, but requested the eulogy for publication, and voted "to print a thousand copies at the expense of the town."

The father of Joseph Story was a respected and popular physician, who had removed from Boston to Marblehead to practise his profession thirty years before. Having read some accounts of the wonderful discovery of Jenner, he procured from Europe what was represented to be a small quantity of the "Kine Pox Matter," and proceeded at once to inoculate children in his own family, and some others belonging to families of his most intimate friends. The children became quite ill in a few days, and soon the rumor spread through the town that these children had been inoculated for the *small-pox.* The excitement produced by this rumor was fearful, and, at a hasty meeting of the citizens, "the Doctors were charged to proceed no further in this business without the authority of the town." The next day another meeting was held, and a committee chosen to investigate the whole subject. This was the 7th of November, and on the tenth day of that month another meeting was convened, and the number of citizens was so large as to require an adjournment to the "New Meeting House," when the committee submitted a report, which confirmed their worst fears; the confidence of the good doctor had been betrayed, and he had innocently inoculated his own and his neighbor's children with the small-pox. A general inoculation of the whole population was ordered, "to continue till the expiration of fifteen days." On the 17th of November, it was voted to provide accommodation at the public expense for those whose means were limited, and to hire *four hundred nurses* at the expense of the town. A general inoculation took place, and by the last of December the town was declared to be free from the pestilence, and all excitement had ceased. In a little less than four years after this distressing event, so mortifying to his professional pride and reputation, the good doctor died.

The inhabitants of the town were now prosecuting their business with industry and energy, and were gradually recovering some of their old-time prosperity, when an event occurred which the popular lines of an unknown local rhymester and the genius of Whittier have done more to perpetuate than its importance as a local incident justified. It is possible that the daughters of Marblehead at that time may have been wanting in some degree the grace and refinement of their sisters in more favored communities, but they were not so rude and coarse as to forget the proprieties of womanhood, and become the leaders of a noisy and lawless mob.

Benjamin Ireson was the young skipper of a fishing vessel on her homeward passage late in the fall with a cargo of fish. He had left the Grand Banks of Newfoundland with "a strong easterly breeze," and on the evening of the fourth day, about nine o'clock, the watch announced that the vessel had passed a wreck, from which cries for help were heard. The course of the vessel was changed to the direction where the wreck was supposed to be, but, no further discovery being made, the skipper resolved to remain as near that locality as possible till morning. With the morning light, the low sandy shores of Cape Cod were discovered in the distance, and far in towards the shore the wreck was seen. A consultation was held, and while one of the crew urged that every risk should be taken when human life was in peril, others said "that their own lives were precious to them, and they did not care to die with a mouthfull of Cape Cod sand." It was still blowing "a stiff breeze," and the skipper, too easily influenced by the majority of his crew, and sharing with them probably the fear and dread of the Cape Cod shore, shaped his course for his port of destination, and anchored in Marblehead harbor the following day. Soon after his arrival, some of the crew told the story of the wreck, and, doubtless terrified at the fierce indignation which it provoked, charged the skipper as entirely responsible for the cowardice and inhumanity shown in the desertion of the ship-wrecked

mariners. As the story was repeated, the indignation of the fishermen increased, and finally it was resolved that he should be punished as a former generation of their townsmen had disciplined four culprits who had been guilty of a crime not recorded in the written laws of the land. Ireson, as was the custom at that time, went to the "old town landing," near the foot of State Street, where the fishermen, in large numbers, were wont to gather after the evening meal, and relate the stories of their ocean voyages. Without a word or note of warning, in accordance with a plan previously considered and adopted, he was suddenly seized, and the larger part of his clothing being removed, the coat of tar and feathers was applied, and, placing their victim in a dory, with one of their number to hold him there, the indignant crowd, with noisy shouts, dragged the strange vehicle through the public streets, and over the road to Salem and back again, and then dispersed without any further demonstration. *Not a woman was engaged in this rash and terrible act of vengeance.* It was the lawless deed of a mob of men, moved to indignation by the misrepresentations of noisy babblers, disgracing a community, as hundreds of others have been, by similar disreputable scenes. Yet there is some excuse for the indignation of the men. They were fishermen, and during the greater part of the year were exposed to perils which might place them in the same terrible strait of the shipwrecked mariners seen by Ireson and his crew, and the base cowardice which shrunk from the performance of a manly duty in such an hour was a crime to them more terrible than many the law punished with the service of the public hangman. The sober judgment of later years condemned the rash act of the hasty mob; but the manhood of Ireson was blighted, and although he lived in the very community where the outrage was perpetrated for more than fifty years after, yet he moved among his fellow-men a silent, spiritless, dejected man, earning his daily bread for many years as a dory fisherman, catching his fish in the early morning hours, and later in the day pushing his wheelbarrow from door to door along the public streets soliciting patronage.

The confidence of the town in the wisdom and political sagacity of Elbridge Gerry had never abated, and when, in the organization of political parties in the country, that distinguished man became the leader in his native state of the Jeffersonian or Democratic party, the citizens almost unanimously followed the political fortunes of their able townsman. At the election in 1808, Sullivan for governor received 733 votes, and Gore 57.

In the conflict raging in Europe between Napoleon and his adversaries, the commerce of the United States had been profitably employed as that of a neutral power, but the "Berlin decree" by one party, and "orders in council" by the other, coupled with the claim of "right of search" by Great Britain, and the impressment of American seamen, provoked the American Congress to pass an "Embargo Act," which forbade American vessels from leaving the ports of the United States. This Act excited great indignation in nearly all the commercial towns of Massachusetts; but in Marblehead, although the product of her fisheries was the only form of merchandise suitable for profitable export, and perishable in a short time if retained, yet the citizens resolutely stood by the measure as a patriotic act; and voted "to borrow $2,000 on the credit of the town for the benefit of those who were distressed by the operations of the Embargo Act." Merchants in the place at this time owned a fleet of eighty-seven fishing vessels, averaging about eighty tons each.

The next year a series of bold and patriotic resolutions were passed expressing confidence in the administration, for its fidelity to the Union and Constitution; denouncing the men who from factious and mercenary motives could see no wrong in the outrages perpetrated by the British government; commending by name the statesmen, scholars, and merchants whose love of country was superior to their love of party; and finally declaring "that the inheritance transmitted to us by the sages and patriots of the Revolution shall be maintained, and that our resolution is to die freemen, and never live slaves."

The subject of public education had not been neglected during these years of political controversy. For ten years previous to 1810, an annual appropriation of $2,200 had been made for this purpose out of an appropriation of $7,400 for general town expenses.

The almshouse that had been erected on Back Street many years before, was finally destroyed by fire, and it was voted "to purchase the farm of Mr. Aaron Waitt, near the entrance of the town, and containing about 15 acres, for a sum not exceeding $3,200, and to build upon the same a Brick Alms House and House of Correction three stories high, and to borrow a sum not exceeding $7,000 for this purpose." During that year the house was built.

After the Revolutionary conflict, the town had been divided into two wards, and an artillery company had been organized in each. These companies were not uniformed, but usually paraded with the two brass cannon which belonged to each company, and with swords or sabres of various odd designs and shapes. A few young men finally resolved to organize an infantry company of uniformed militia, the members of which should acquire a fair degree of proficiency in the manual of arms and military evolutions by frequent drills. With this purpose, the Marblehead Light Infantry was organized, and made its first appearance in a new and tasty uniform.

War was finally declared against Great Britain, and the town, assembled in public meeting, voted, "that we view the late solemn act declaring war against Great Britain as the last resort of a much injured people, fully persuaded that its justice and necessity will be acknowledged by all who candidly pass in review the atrocities of our Enemy; and nothing short of base submission could have prolonged peace: that whatever sacrifices may result we pledge ourselves to support the Government, our Laws and Liberties through the present arduous conflict. We also pledge ourselves to support and protect the Union of the States as the Ark of our political safety, and we view all those who dare intimate a wish for the separation of the Union as the worst enemies of our peace, prosperity and happiness: that the love of our country ought to be paramount to every other consideration, and the time has now arrived when all distinction of party must cease, and the language of Scripture, 'They who are not for us are against us,' will be verified, and public execration will infallibly attach to those who oppose the government, violate the laws or betray our liberties: that we consider those who entertain inimical attachment and sympathy for our Enemy, as unworthy to breathe the air or tread the soil of our beloved country, and the only nominal distinction that we will recognize shall be Americans and Tories."

The Federal government had authorized a draft, and the town voted to grant ten dollars per month in addition to the government pay, to those who should be drafted from Marblehead. Active measures were taken for the defence of the town; the citizens exempt from military service by law were organized into companies, and "breastworks" ordered to be erected "on Twisden's Hill, Goodwin's Head, Hewitt's Head, and on the neck, south-east of Coombs's House." The selectmen were instructed "to petition the Secretary of War for a supply of cartridge-boxes, bayonets, belts, scabbards, and flints to accompany the three hundred stand of arms sent for the use of the town," and to petition the governor for "a sufficient quantity of ammunition for the artillery in town as a deposit for immediate exigency." The selectmen, with four prominent citizens, were appointed as a "Committee of Safety" to take all proper measures for the protection of the town and its inhabitants, and every adult male person was requested "to furnish himself with arms and accoutrements." The men belonging to the town were mostly seamen, engaged in commercial pursuits or the fisheries, and, being driven by the war from their usual calling, readily enlisted in the navy of their country, or manned the numerous privateers engaged in depredations on the commerce of the enemy. The frigate "Constitution," so renowned in the naval annals of the country, was said to be largely manned by Marblehead seamen. When the conflict closed, more than five hundred Marblehead sailors were released from Dartmoor prison in England. The limits of this work will not permit the record of distinguished service by sons of Marblehead during this second war with Great Britain, but it is proper to state that no town on the New England coast sustained the principles involved in the contest with more zeal or determination, or rejoiced more heartily when the news was confirmed that "Free Trade and Sailors' Rights" had been triumphantly vindicated. During the war, however, the town lost one of her most distinguished sons, and the country, a patriot, sage, and statesman, in the death of Elbridge Gerry. Born in Marblehead, July 17, 1744, he graduated at Harvard College in 1762, and soon after entered his father's counting-room to prepare for that mercantile career which in a few years marked him as one of the most enterprising merchants in the town. When the "Stamp Act" became a law, he was only twenty-one years of age, but soon after this was recognized as a leader by his fellow townsmen, and was made a member of the most important committees appointed by the town to express the indignation and hostility of its inhabitants against the Revenue Acts of Great Britain. Elected as a member of the General Court in 1772, his great abilities were promptly recognized by the members of that body, and he became the intimate associate of Samuel Adams, Hancock, and Warren. He was elected as committeeman on the most vital questions brought before the Legislature for its adjudication, and was appointed judge of the Court of Admiralty, but declined the office. Elected a delegate

to the Continental Congress in January, 1776, he was chosen to fill the most responsible offices in the several congressional committees, and signed the Declaration of Independence adopted by that body on the 4th of July of that year. He was made chairman of the committee of the treasury, till the organization of the treasury board in 1780, of which he became presiding officer. He retired from Congress in that year, but became a member again in 1783, and was elected a delegate to the convention which met in Philadelphia in 1787, to revise the articles of confederation. After the adoption of the Federal Constitution he served four successive years in Congress, but in 1795 retired to private life, and changed his residence to Cambridge, Mass. He was appointed as a special commissioner to France in 1797, and on his return the next year was unsuccessfully supported by the Democratic party as its candidate for governor of the State. He was again nominated and defeated in 1801, but after a bitter canvass, in 1810, he was elected governor, and the next year was re-elected to the same high position. In 1812 he was elected Vice-President of the United States, and died in the second year of his term. Three or four years of unprofitable business following directly after the losses occasioned by the war prevented that generous provision for public education contemplated by the citizens when peace had been declared. The primary schools had been re-opened and a school had been established in the "farms" the following year, but the appropriations for the schools were insufficient even to pay in full the salaries of the teachers.

The outstanding town notes bearing interest now amounted to $12,-283.33, and a committee was appointed to advise practical measures of retrenchment. That duty was performed, and it was recommended "to discontinue ringing one of the bells; to receive proposals for regulating and cleaning the clock and giving it to the person who shall offer the lowest; to reduce the salaries of the school masters $100 each, and the expense of fuel to be collected of the scholars; Assessors to be allowed $40 each instead of $50; Keeper of the Poor House to be allowed $120 and 75 cents per day when employed on the roads; limit the use of ardent spirits in the Poor House to the infirm from old age, invalids, and laborers while at work; Physician for the poor in and out of the House allowed $60 annually; and coffins for the poor, buried by the town to be made at the House." These recommendations were adopted, except that relating to teachers' salaries, which were reduced $50 instead of $100, and that relating to the scholars providing fuel was rejected. The next year the town voted that "the school-masters each have a salary of $450 annually."

Town officers were now directed to prepare their annual reports in season for the auditing committee "to consolidate the same and have the report printed for the use of the town."

A hearse for the burial of the dead had been owned for some time by private parties, but it was now resolved to purchase one at the public expense.

The streets had, up to this time, been designated as the "Main Street, Ferry Road, Darling's Lane, Academy Lane, Wharf Lane, New Meeting House Lane," &c., but it was now voted to designate them by the names they are known by at the present day.

Lafayette made his final visit to the country in 1825, and, on visiting Marblehead, was received with every mark of respect, love, and gratitude. At this time the second uniformed company of volunteer militia was organized, and, assuming the name of Lafayette Guards, made its first public parade, as a part of the escort, on this interesting occasion.

The "Overseers' Department" had become a heavy burden on the tax-payers, and the almshouse had been governed with so little regard to the proper restraint of the paupers as to excite public indignation. The institution contained 112 inmates, thirty-six of the number being men; and the sleeping-chambers were so arranged "as to permit the promiscuous intercourse of the depraved of both sexes," while "a barrel of ardent spirits" was distributed monthly among the subjects in the form of regular rations. The necessary alterations in the house were promptly made and the use of intoxicating liquors prohibited, except as a medicine, under the direction of a physician.

Gen. Jackson, while president of the United States, visited New England, and came to Marblehead, on the invitation of the citizens, where he was welcomed with every mark of respect and confidence.

An appropriation had been made by Congress to build a light-house at some point near the entrance of Marblehead harbor, and, at a town-meeting, a vote was passed demanding that the structure be located on "Point Neck."

Some other point was seriously considered as a better location, and Mr. Henshaw, the collector of Boston at that time, appears to have exercised the controlling influence in the matter; he was notified, by the unanimous vote of the town, that its wishes in regard to location must be observed, or an appeal to the secretary of the treasury would be made. The location selected and urged by the town was finally accepted by the authorities and the light-house erected on the "Point Neck."

It has already been mentioned that the town voted to purchase a fire-engine, about the middle of the previous century, and that a public-spirited citizen had presented one to the town before any purchase had been made. This first engine was a small machine, for which a crew of six men was at first considered sufficient, and, in fact, but very few more could stand at the brakes and play. It was named the "Friend," and was sheltered in a small house near the court leading to "Goodwin's Head." The engine purchased by the town in London, at that time, was probably the one named the "Endeavour," and located, in later years, near "Newtown bridge," on the corner of School and Washington streets. The next machine purchased, in 1798, was the "Union," which for many years was located at the foot of Washington Street, at its junction with Orne Street. The records fail to give us the exact time when the "Liberty" was purchased, but tradition fixes it about the year 1808. It was about that time that two engines were purchased by private parties,—one being placed on High Street, in the rear of the "Stone Church," which was called the "Torrent," and the other, called the "Relief," was located in the place now occupied by the "Mugford." These engines were only provided with *force*-pumps; the plan of operations being, when a fire occurred, to run the machine to a well or pump, fill the tub with water, run it to the fire, "play it out," then back again to refill, and repeat the same operation. Each of the machines were furnished with leather buckets.

It was now resolved "to thoroughly re-organize the Fire Department," and an appropriation of $3,500 was made to build two houses, and to purchase two new engines, and also repair the "Liberty" in accordance with recent improvements, and provide suitable accommodations for the last-named engine. In accordance with this vote, the "Marblehead" and "Essex," two new suction-engines, with a supply of hose, were purchased, and new houses, on "Franklin" and "Bassett" streets, were built for their accommodation. The "Liberty" was also reconstructed and changed to a suction-engine. Not long after this the proprietors of the "Torrent" and "Relief" presented those engines to the town, and they were placed in the fire department and did good service for some years.

The determination to improve the school system of the town was made manifest, from year to year, till the appropriations finally reached $3,500, divided as follows: $450 for each of the three male grammar schools; $600 for the high school for males; $400 for the high school for females; $150 for each of the six primary schools; $200 for the farm-school, and $50 for contingent expenses. The whole appropriation that year for town expenses was $10,000, which *included* the appropriation for public schools. The high schools for males and females had been established in 1835, being two separate schools, and the building formerly owned and occupied by the "Philanthropic Lodge of Masons," at the head of Mason Street, had been rented for their accommodation. In 1836 the town offered $1,600 for this building, but the offer was declined.

A large amount of surplus funds having accumulated in the United States treasury, an Act of Congress provided for its distribution among the several States, with the condition that the money was to be returned if the wants of the general government should require it at any future time.

The State of Massachusetts distributed its proportion of this fund among the different towns, and in due time the town treasurer of Marblehead received about thirteen thousand dollars, the fund being designated as "surplus revenue."

On the recommendation of a committee appointed to report to the town the most useful purpose to which the money could be applied, it was voted to "appropriate the same for the purchase of a large, fertile, and convenient town farm, of not less than one hundred acres, and for erecting upon it a convenient and durable building for the poor." A committee of seven citizens was appointed to carry this vote into effect, but this action was not secured without an earnest debate and much opposition. Eleven days after this the town voted to reconsider its previous action, and finally voted "to divide the money among the inhabitants per capita," by a vote of 172 in the affirmative and 144 in the negative. John Hooper had been elected town treasurer at the annual March meeting, but declined to serve

when the town voted to purchase a farm, and Frederick Robinson had been elected to fill the vacaney. As one of the results of this action of the town, anthorizing a division of the fund among the inhabitants, Mr. Robinson declined to serve as treasurer, and Mr. Hooper was re-eleeted. The meeting then adjourned till the afternoon, when the friends of the farm purchase rallied their forces and seenred the re-eonsideration and defeat of the distribution scheme by eight majority in a vote of 316. A "Building Comunittee" had been eleeted previously, aud were now instructed "to sell so much of the town's land as will be necessary to meet the expense of taking down the present poor-honse, removing the materials, and ereeting a new house on the Deveraux farm." Frederick Robinsou and William B. Adams, two members of the "Building Committee," requested to be excused from that service, but the town refnsed to grant their request. Mr. Hooper again declined serving as town treasurer, and, on the 8th of May, Richard Girdler was chosen; he deelined, and Andrew Laekey was chosen the following week; he also declined, and John Nutting was elected, and aecepted the office. Four members of the building eommittee now declined serving, and, the matter of filling the vacaneies being nnder eonsideration, the whole snbject was indefinitely postponed by a majority of forty-one iu a vote of sixty-seven. During the following month it was voted to caneel outstanding town orders with the fund, bnt against this aetion Capt. William B. Adams gave notice that he should "enter his protest." This aetion was eonfirmed by another vote in January, 1838, bnt it was fouud that the eommittee elected in April, 1837, had been authorized to buy a farm, and their aetion nnder that authority had legally eommitted the town to the purchase of the farm belonging to Humphrey Deveraux, Esq., for $13,000. In view of this faet it was voted to confirm the purchase at that priee, aud a eommittee was chosen with instructions to sell the farm, providing that a fair priee eould be obtained. The farm remained in possession of the town for one or two years, and was finally sold for $11,000; the "surplus revenue" was thus returned to the treasury of the town, with a loss of two thousand dollars, and applied to the legitimate expenses of the town.

In 1839, the selectmen were notified that the last will of Mr. A. S. Courtiss, who had died recently, contained a elause which bequeathed $5,000 to the town, providing the town should pay three of his heirs annuities amonnting to $250 while they lived, from the interest of the legacy, and should apply the balance, if any remained, to the purchase of sehool-books for children of the poor. The town voted to release all claims on the estate, on the payment of $500 to the town treasurer.

Regular stage-coaeh eommunication was established between Marblehead and Boston in 1768, and with Salem in 1794. These coaeh lines continued, with brief interruptions, till the completion of the Eastern Railroad, which finished its branch from Salem to Marblehead in 1840.

From the first settlement of the town, its inhabitants had depended mainly on the fisheries for the employment of their eapital and labor, and this business was the basis of that eommereial prosperity whieh distinguished the town before the Revolutionary War. With the close of that conflict, the business was resumed with such means and eredit as was left to the enterprising men of the plaee, and was prosecuted with a fair degree of sueeess, till the seeond war with Great Britain prevented the further proseeution of the industry during the eontest. With the proclamation of peace between the two eountries, it was again resumed; but the two wars had nearly exterminated the foreign commerce of the town, and what little remained was gradually removed to the port of Boston, or eontinued till the few vessels engaged were found nnseaworthy.

The fishing business, however, was still proseeuted with perseverance and energy, steadily increasing till a fleet of a hundred vessels or more were again engaged in this time-honored iudustry.

Other enterprises had, in a degree, diverted capital and labor to new pnrsuits; but the business was still pursued with moderate snccess, till the terrible disasters experienced in a tremendous gale of wind on the banks of Newfoundland inflicted a blow from which it has never reeovered. At that time, thirteen vessels, with sixty-five men and boys, were lost; and from that year the business has steadily decreased, till it is now redneed to a fleet of less than twenty sail of vessels.

Marblehead had been for nearly two eenturies a prosperous field of labor for those who had learned the eordwainer's trade. Employment was not only derived from the wants of the inhabitants for boots aud shoes, bnt in furnishing the fishermen and seamen with leather jackets and tronsers, and heavy sea-boots, all made exclusively of sole-leather. Many who had acquired wealth and distinction dnring the previous century, had commenced life in this humble calling, and it eontinued to employ no inconsiderable number of the population, till the heavy cotton-cloth, satnrated with oil, and made iuto elothing, was generally aecepted as a cheaper, and yet a very good, substitute for the leather jackets and trousers, as a protection for the fisherman in wet weather. This reduced the demand for the eordwainer's skill, and he was obliged to seek employment in other directions.

A few enterprising men in the neighboring town of Lynn, had, for many years, been gradnally developing a new industry by the manufacture of ladies' and children's shoes for distant markets; and many of the Marblehead cordwainers either removed to this new field of labor, or had the stock sent to them all prepared for making into shoes, and, the price of their labor being fixed by the skill and amount of labor performed, industrions men eould earn very fair wages. From the very beginning, children's shoes appeared to be the special product of the shoemakers of Marblehead, and the number inereased so rapidly that, in a few years, hundreds were employed by the Lynn manufacturers, maintaining a daily express betweeu the two places, for the transportation of boxes of shoes, made and unmade, while a few enterprising men commeneed the manufaetnre of the eheaper grades of ehildren's shoes in the town. One of the earliest to engage in this business in Marblehead was Mr. Thomas Wooldredge, whose house and place of business was loeated on Orne Street. Other young men soon engaged in this braneh of industry, nearly all being practical shoemakers, among whom may be mentioned A. C. Orne, Benjamin Hawkes, Thomas Garney, Samuel and Peter Sparhawk, and Joseph R. Bassett. With the completion of the railroad connection with Boston, the business increased more rapidly, attracting men of enterprise and industry, bnt with very little capital, till, finally, the manufacturers of Marblehead were employing the larger proportion of the workmen residing in the town. With the introduetion of machinery for the production of shoes, large and commodious factories were ereeted in different parts of the town; hundreds of eottages were built by industrions and provident workmen, and the reputation of the place established as the principal seat for the manufacture of ehildren's sewed shoes in New England.

For several years, an odd, eccentric man, regarded as mean and miserly by his neighbors, resided with his aged wife and sister in a plain two-story house on Franklin Street. One small room in the house had been fitted up for a store, and here he proseeuted a small business with great industry, dealing in window-glass, paints, and paint-oils, putty, and small groceries. Thus he lived and plodded along in his quiet way for several years, and his aged eompanions, the wife and sister, passed away, leaving him to pursue his quiet life alone. In the year 1853, his death was announced, and a few neighbors followed the lifeless form to its last resting-plaee; bnt the astonishment of the people ean hardly be described, when the statement was made, and confirmed by official authority, that the moderate fortnne which had belonged to this man was given to his uative town as a fund for the benefit of poor and worthy widows. Of the $13,500 which his prudenee had thus saved for this purpose, every dollar was found to be wisely invested in profitable corporations. His will also provided that the old mansion which had been his home for so many years should be fitted with such eonveniences as were necessary, and should be nsed as a home for sneh worthy widows as the board of overseers may select, at a low rent. Even if this intelligenee had failed to reverse the publie judgment in regard to the charaeter of this man, the information which soon followed the announcement of his public bequest would certainly have done it; the proprietors of stores where the necessaries of life were sold, — the wood and eoal dealer, the baker, and others eugaged in local business, — testified that, for several years, they had been the almoners of this man's charities; that, furnished with a list of deserviug cases, they were instructed to deliver the goods to these persons, and bring the bills to him for settlement; and they were charged that his uame must never be mentioned in connection with these charities, and that his patronage depended on their faithful complianee with this request. This was sufficient, aud their lips had been sealed while he lived.

Thus lived and died Moses A. Pickett, who for many years submitted to the unjust reproaehes of his fellow-men, with noble patience and fortitude, confident that when death should release him from earthly eares and trials the public would do justice to his memory, and behold the graee aud beauty of that charity which the Saviour of mankind so graciously eommended.

The first attempt to number the population of the town was made in 1765, when a Province census was taken, and the population found to number 4,594. A colonial census was taken in 1776, when the population was reported as numbering 4,386; but an official statement, recorded in the town records two years before, in reference to small-pox, reported that *five thousand* of the resident population had never been exposed to the contagion of that dreaded disease. This indicates that Marblehead had a much larger population at that time than was reported by the official canvassers, and it is possible that in this report the absent soldiers and sailors may have been omitted. A census taken under the authority of the town, in 1780, showed a population of only 4,142. It is a well-established fact that, soon after the Revolutionary conflict commenced, many families removed from the place to the interior towns, and returned when peace was proclaimed. The United States census for 1790 reported a population of 5,661. From that year till 1840, a period of fifty years, there was very little change in the population of the town, the largest number being reported in 1810, when there was 5,900, and the smallest in 1830, when there was 5,149. The population in 1840 was reported in the census as 5,575, or eighty-six *less* than it was fifty years before. With the completion of the railroad, in 1840, the business enterprises of the place were prosecuted with greater energy and perseverance, and during the next twenty years the population increased over 2,000, the number reported in 1860 being 7,646. During this period the town showed greater activity and more enterprise, and made greater progress in every department of local administration, than had been shown since the commencement of the Revolutionary War.

Efforts were made to establish other kinds of business in addition to those already in existence. A wealthy citizen introduced shipbuilding, and this was so successful for a time as to attract hundreds of new residents from the British Provinces and other New England States, and several vessels, from one hundred to twelve hundred tons each, were built and successfully launched. This business, however, failed to be profitable after four or five years, and was finally abandoned as one of the local industries. The shoe business, however, was prosecuted with greater energy and success, and new manufacturers, springing from the ranks of the workmen themselves, were rapidly diminishing the number of local shoemakers depending on the Lynn manufacturers for employment. Commodious and convenient factories were erected, nearly twenty streets and courts laid out and graded, and hundreds of new houses erected. A new almshouse was built, and the poor depending on public charity for support were furnished with a clean, comfortable, and healthy home; ten acres of land were purchased, and Waterside Cemetery was established; the fire department made more efficient by the purchase of the "Gerry," "Mugford," and "Gen. Glover" suction engines, and "Washington" hook and ladder truck, and the erection of three new houses, and the improvement of others for the accommodation of the different companies.

The high school, which had been commenced in 1835 and discontinued in 1838, was re-established permanently. Previous to 1840 the town had only built the Farms School-house, with a public appropriation, and two school-houses with the "Marchant Fund." The town primary schools were mostly accommodated in private dwelling-houses; no intermediate or female grammar schools were in existence, and females had only limited privileges for public education beyond the primary school. During the twenty years that followed, eleven new school-houses were erected and occupied, and the schools gradually graded, until the complete system of public education now in existence was firmly established.

This was the prosperous condition of the town when the people were startled with the intelligence that the first gun had been fired in the American Civil War.

The political events which led to this great conflict between the free and slave States are too well known to be mentioned here. Marblehead had supported for some years three military companies, designated as the "Marblehead Sutton Light Infantry," organized in 1809; the "Lafayette Guards," organized in 1825; and the "Glover Guards," organized in 1852. These belonged to the 8th Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, which then embraced eight companies. During the afternoon of April 15, 1861, the captains of these companies received orders to report, with their commands, on "Boston Common," the following day, duly armed and equipped for active service. The summons was sudden and unexpected, for it found the men engaged in their usual occupations; but these were promptly laid aside, and, repairing to the respective armories, active preparations were made to respond to the order. All that night the town was the scene of a great excitement, for nearly two hundred young men were suddenly called to leave home and friends, with, in many cases, small families dependent on them for their daily bread, to accept the privations and face the terrible perils of war. The morning of the 16th of April was cold, gloomy, and cheerless, and the "minute-men" of 1861 marched to the railroad station in the midst of a driving storm of sleet and rain. At the station thousands were assembled,—wives, mothers, daughters, and sweethearts, parting with those they loved, in grief and tears, and fathers, brothers, and friends cheering them with words of encouragement. Amid the shouts of thousands the train finally moved from the station, and while a soldier could be seen on the moving cars, a thousand handkerchiefs were waving wildly, as signs of loving recognition or farewell benedictions.

Only two companies were ready for the early morning train, but the other followed an hour later, and all were accompanied by large delegations of citizens as far as Boston. At nine o'clock in the morning the first two companies arrived at the Boston station, and *three minutes* after, the "Old Infantry," as many loved to call the oldest company organization, was marching up Friend Street, to the music of drum and fife, under the command of Knott V. Martin, *and was the first company in the State to report for duty on that eventful morning;* the "Glover Guards," commanded by Capt. Francis A. Boardman, reported a few minutes later, and the "Lafayette Guards," under the command of Capt. Richard Phillips, a little more than an hour after. The 8th Regiment left Boston for Washington on the 18th of April, 1861, late in the afternoon; but the limits of this work will not permit the record of faithful service performed by this first detachment of the "minute-men" of the war, nor of those which afterwards engaged in the long and bloody conflict.

"Your families shall be cared for," so the citizens promised when the young men went away; and, four days after their departure, the town appropriated $5,000 for this purpose. The meeting was large and enthusiastic, and closed with ringing cheers for the Union.

Shortly after the departure of these companies measures were taken to recruit another company, to be designated as the "Mugford Guards," and the town, at a public meeting, appropriated $400 for purchase of necessary clothing for the new recruits in this company. The ranks were finally filled, and commanded by Capt. Benjamin Day; it was mustered into the service for three years, and became a part of the 14th Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, and left the State for active service July 7, 1861.

The Legislature being in session while these events were transpiring, passed a general State law authoring "State aid" for families dependent on the absent soldiers for subsistence. At a town meeting held soon after this, it was voted to appropriate $10,000 for this purpose. As this law provided that the board of selectmen should be the distributing committee of "State aid," the committee charged with that service at a previous meeting, reported that $495 had been distributed among several families, embracing seventy adults and 100 children, and that patriotic citizens had furnished all the funds necessary for this purpose.

On the first day of August, 1861, the "minute-men" who had done three months' faithful service returned, and were received with enthusiastic manifestations of joy and gratitude by the public authorities and the whole population of the town.

Soon after the return of these companies, Capt. Martin was authorized to recruit a company for the 23d Regiment, and, having accomplished his purpose, the regiment left for the seat of war during the month of November, 1861.

A call being made by the authorities for a body of troops to serve nine months, the 8th Regiment volunteered, including two of the Marblehead companies. The "Glover Guard" had lost many men from its ranks, who had joined the three years' regiments, and two of its most efficient officers, Lieut. Thomas Russell and Lieut. John Goodwin, had accepted commissions under Capt. Martin in the 23d Regiment: thus weakened, the company was unable to rally under this new call, and the organization was abandoned.

The "Lafayette Guards" went into service in accordance with this call under its old commander, Capt. Richard Phillips, while "the old Infantry" were under the command of Capt. Samuel C. Graves, who had served as a lieutenant under Capt. Martin during the three months' service.

The exploits of rebel cruisers near the coast, and the fears that a war with Great Britain might possibly result from the many unfriendly acts charged against that government, moved the citizens of the town to appeal to the governor and council for aid to place the town and harbor in a proper state of defence. The government price for labor was $1.25 per day; but it was urged that men would not work for this

price, in view of the high cost of all articles of merchandise, measured by a depreciated currency, and the town finally appropriated $4,000, as a fund to increase the daily wages of laborers on the fortifications, to $1.75 per day. With this provision made by the town, laborers were secured, and, under the supervision of government engineers, Fort Sewall was enlarged and reconstructed, and two new fortifications were erected, one near the head of the harbor, called "Fort Glover," and the other near Naugus Head called "Fort Miller," and after their completion were garrisoned by soldiers from other parts of the State during the remainder of the war.

As the war continued, further calls for troops were made by the government, and each town being assigned a quota to raise for the service, or submit to a draft from the able-bodied men, between the ages of eighteen and forty-five, every effort was made by the town authorities to avoid the threatened conscription, and $15,000 was appropriated to provide $125 for each recruit that may be obtained on the quota of the town.

The 8th Regiment having returned to the State after serving nine months, again responded to another call for a body of troops to serve one hundred days. To this last call of the regiment for active service, the "Lafayette Guards" failed to respond in time, but was finally recruited to the requisite number by its veteran commander, and was mustered into the service for one year as an unattached company. While in Virginia, a few weeks later, it was attached to a regiment of heavy artillery, and when its term of service closed, the company had lost its charter as one of the local military organizations. Marblehead had furnished at the close of the war, 1,440 men, on the several calls of the government: but as many of them had enlisted more than once, on different terms of service, it has been estimated that the number was about 950 soldiers for three years' service recorded on the quotas of the town, while at least 150 men enlisted for the same term of service on the quotas of other towns; making the whole number of soldiers engaged in the war, belonging to the place, as 1,100. Of this number, the names of 129 soldiers and nine sailors are recorded on the country's "roll of honor," and a granite monument has been erected to their memory, which was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies on the Fourth of July, 1876.

During the time of "Jefferson's Embargo," in the early part of the century, a poor boy, the son of a fisherman, left the town to serve an apprenticeship with a master-cooper in the neighboring town of Salem. Master of his trade, at the age of twenty-one he went to the West Indies with a young companion, where he was employed two years by a Boston firm extensively engaged in trade with those islands. Returning to Boston on the death of his companion, he opened a cooper's shop in that city, where, after several years of indifferent success, his perseverance and industry established a prosperous and lucrative business. He was married at the age of thirty-three, and, although no children blessed the union, he lived a happy and peaceful life with his companion for more than forty years. He was a man of plain and frugal habits, great integrity, untiring industry, and sagacious judgment, and his savings, from year to year, were wisely invested for safe and profitable returns. In 1870, his wife, who had been his faithful and trusted companion so many years, departed from this life, and two years after he closed his long career of usefulness at the age of seventy-seven. This in brief is the story of the life of Benjamin Abbot. A few months before he died, he executed his last will and testament, giving $14,800 to the missionary and educational institutions of his religious faith; $70,000 to his relatives and friends, embracing legacies to sixty-two different persons; and the balance of his large property, amounting to nearly $100,000 at the time of his death, to the town of Marblehead; because, as he briefly but eloquently declared, "it was my birth-place." With this generous gift he imposed no conditions, but modestly expressed the wish that it might be applied to "the erection of a building for the use of the inhabitants," and that his name might be attached to the object on which the fund should be expended.

In due time the executors of the will notified the selectmen that they had settled all claims against the estate, and the balance, amounting to over $100,000, safely invested, remained in their hands for the benefit of the town. On Thursday evening, February 9th, a town-meeting was held, and resolutions adopted by a unanimous vote, accepting the bequest, declaring it as the purpose of the town to observe his wish in regard to a public building, to which his name should be attached, and expressing the gratitude of the people for the man who, by his life of industry and integrity, had conferred honor on his native town, and by his generous gift at the close of his earthly career had won the honor of being its noblest benefactor. The town treasurer, with the board of selectmen, were appointed as trustees to accept and take charge of the fund in behalf of the town.

The "Common," or "training-field hill," as it was often called, had been mentioned by many as a suitable place for the contemplated building; but, there being some doubts as to the legal right of the town to appropriate that place for such a purpose, a committee was appointed to secure, if possible, a special Act from the Legislature granting this right. A minority of the citizens opposed this location, and the legislative committee charged with the consideration of the petition of the town reported against the project. At the same meeting which appointed this committee, it was voted "to erect a brick building, with stone trimmings, to be designated as Abbot Hall, of such dimensions as will secure an audience hall that will seat at least 1,200 persons, a hall for a public reading-room and library that will accommodate not less than 20,000 volumes, a fire-proof vault for the storage and security of the records and other important papers belonging to the town, and such rooms as may be necessary for the convenient use of the different boards for the transaction of public business." Eleven different places had been suggested as suitable places for the location of the building, and it was finally resolved to select the location by ballot, on Saturday, May 22, 1875. Considerable interest was manifested in the subject, and when the polls were closed it was found that the "Common" had received 380 votes to 331 votes for all other places. A building committee of five citizens were balloted for and elected at that and subsequent meetings, consisting of Simeon Dodge, J. J. H. Gregory, Moses Gilbert, Henry F. Pitman, and Thomas Appleton. The selectmen were instructed to secure the best legal advice possible as to the right of the town to use the "Common" for this purpose; but the citizens, finally convinced that no reliable legal opinion could be obtained except by proceedings that would secure the judgment of the supreme court, instructed the "building committee" to proceed to excavate earth on the Common, preparatory to erecting the building, "at an expense not exceeding fifty dollars."

Another meeting was called, Dec. 13, 1875, and propositions made to "rescind" the previous action of the town in regard to location, and the vote whereby the employment of legal counsel was authorized to defend the action of the town; but both propositions were defeated by large majorities.

Twelve days after, another meeting was held, and $75,000 appropriated from the "Abbot fund" for the use of the building committee in carrying out the vote of the town.

The committee organized, and appointed a sub-committee, consisting of Messrs. Dodge and Gilbert, to visit various public buildings; and these gentlemen finally submitted a "ground plan" for the structure, which was adopted by the committee. Sketches of the proposed building, based on the plan adopted, were solicited from different architects; and, three different sketches having been submitted, the committee finally made a contract with Lord & Fuller, of Boston, to make all the necessary plans and specifications.

The site of the structure having been established, work on the foundations was commenced and continued without interruption.

The opponents of the "Common" as a site for the building were not idle, however, and now petitioned the supreme court, through eminent legal counsel, for a "preliminary injunction." The committee employed the Hon. Samuel Hoar as counsel to defend the action of the town, and, after numerous delays, the hearing was held, and the prayer of the petitioners refused.

Contracts were now made, and the work proceeded rapidly; and on the 26th of July, 1876, the corner-stone was laid, with appropriate ceremonies. Before the next annual town-meeting it was ascertained that the committee would complete the work assigned to them within the appropriation made, and, at the adjourned annual meeting for 1877, the sum of $20,000 was appropriated to establish and maintain a public reading-room and library, to be called "The Abbot Library." The balance of the fund was directed to be reserved, and the interest applied to the necessary expenses of the building.

At a subsequent meeting, five "Trustees of the Abbot Library" were chosen, by ballot, who, with the chairman of the board of selectmen, were constituted a board of trustees to manage the reading-room and library.

On the 25th of December, 1877 (Christmas Day), the reading-room was opened, and on the 17th of April, 1878, the library was opened to the public, then containing about 3,000 volumes.

The building committee surrendered the charge of the structure to the selectmen on the 8th of December, 1877. Nine days after, under the direction of a special committee appointed by the town, the hall

was publicly dedicated; when the Hon. Edward Avery, of Braintree, a native of Marblehead, delivered an eloquent and instructive address.

As the building neared completion, gentlemen of means, native residents and non-residents of the town, exhibited a noble public spirit, by presenting various gifts of value, for the use or adornment of the structure. The Hon. James J. H. Gregory presented the clock and bell in the tower, and a valuable oil painting for the reading-room; Henry F. Pitman, Esq., a large pianoforte; Thomas Appleton, Esq., a fine oil painting for the reading-room; Joel Goldthwait, Esq., of Boston, a valuable carpet for the stage; Nathaniel Brimblecom, Esq., of Boston, a large hall clock; and William F. Joy, Esq., of Boston, a valuable book-case.

By a recent vote of the town, a large portrait of Benjamin Abbot, by one of the most distinguished artists of New England, has been ordered, and marble tablets, with appropriate inscriptions, have been placed in conspicuous places in the building.

This noble and stately structure, occupying one of the most commanding sites in Marblehead, stands as a splendid monument to the memory of Benjamin Abbot; and while the inhabitants remember his thoughtful generosity with pride and gratitude, they are no less grateful for the faithful services of Simeon Dodge and Moses Gilbert, the sub-committee of the building committee, who, without fee or reward, gave their time and personal attention to the work, and executed the important trusts committed to their charge with a zeal, courage, and fidelity rare in public servants.

Mention has been made of the earlier church organizations, and their places of worship.

The First Congregational Church, after having occupied the structure at the foot of Washington Street for more than a century, built a stone church, in 1824, which is now used by the society for its religious meetings.

The "Second Congregational Church" (now Unitarian) occupied the first edifice built by the parish till 1833, when it was demolished, and the building now used by the society was erected.

The "Episcopal Church" remains the same as when built, in 1714, with a few unimportant alterations, and is consequently one of the oldest church buildings in New England.

During the year 1790, the Rev. Jesse Lee, of Virginia, mentioned as "the Apostle of Methodism in New England," visited Marblehead, and, in the "old Bowler House," on Lee Street, organized a Methodist church, with seven members. Soon after, a small, plain church edifice, without tower or ornament, was erected on a small hill near Pleasant Street, which was designated for many years as "the Methodist rocks." This building was occupied by the society till 1832, when the church now occupied by the people of this faith was erected, on Summer Street. The old building was changed into a large dwelling-house, one-half of which is owned by the parish, and is occupied as the church parsonage.

The Baptist denomination had gained a few members, from year to year, till twenty-one residents of Marblehead had united with one of the Baptist churches in Salem. In 1811 these, having received letters of dismission from the church in Salem, were organized as the "First Baptist Church of Marblehead"; and a plain building, without a tower, was erected as a place of worship, on Watson Street. This was occupied by the society till 1832, or the year after, when a new church edifice was erected on Pleasant Street. This building was destroyed by fire in 1867; but before the year had closed a new church was erected on the same site, and is now occupied by the society. The first church building on Watson Street was sold soon after it was vacated as a place for religious worship, and, being changed into a dwelling-house, is now occupied for that purpose.

In 1836, a few "Universalists" formed a society for religious worship, and held meetings for several months in a small hall on the corner of Washington and Darling streets. The society increased rapidly, and a lot having been purchased, on the corner of Pleasant and Watson streets, a church edifice was built, and dedicated in the early part of 1837. During the year 1870, repairs on the building being necessary, it was raised one story, securing a large and commodious vestry, and other important improvements.

For many years the few Catholics in Marblehead worshipped with the people of their faith in Salem; but in 1857, their numbers having largely increased, a small church was erected on the corner of Prospect and Rowland streets. In 1870, a larger and more commodious building was erected on Gregory Street, but before it was ready for dedication it was destroyed by fire. During the year 1874, the first church building was enlarged and improved, and made one of the most attractive and commodious buildings for religious worship in the town.

During the past few years a few families have become believers in the doctrines of the "Second Adventists," and now hold regular meetings for public worship in a small hall on Pleasant Street.

In 1859, several members of the "First Congregational Church" received letters of dismission from that organization, and formed the "Third Congregational Church" in Marblehead. The next year a convenient and attractive church edifice was erected on the corner of Essex and School streets, where the new society worshipped till 1877, when the building was destroyed by fire. No attempt to rebuild was made, and the members finally sold the remaining property and worship at other churches.

The oldest benevolent society in Marblehead is the "Female Humane Society," organized in 1816. It has invested funds amounting to nearly one thousand dollars, and, besides expending the income of this, has an annual address, at which a collection is taken for the benefit of its funds. Its officers are elected annually, and monthly meetings are held for business purposes; and although its membership has never been large, yet it has done a noble work for the benefit of the poor and needy.

The "Seamen's Charitable Society" was organized in 1831, at a time when hundreds of men were employed in the fisheries, and realized the need of an organization of this kind. It was a large and flourishing society for many years, and its funds increased rapidly. A marble monument was erected on the "old Burying Hill" in 1847, to the memory of its deceased members, and to commemorate the terrible disaster of September, 1846, when so many Marblehead seamen perished on the Grand Banks of Newfoundland, among which were several members of this society. It still continues to hold annual meetings, and judiciously dispenses the income of its funds for the benefit of those for whose assistance the society was organized.

Of the secret benevolent societies, "Philanthropic Lodge" of the Masonic order is the oldest, having been chartered in 1760. It prospered for many years, and erected the building opposite the head of Mason Street, now occupied as a dwelling-house, to secure a hall properly fitted for its meetings. During the popular excitement against this order, commencing in 1826, the meetings were suspended, and the lodge ceased working for several years. With the institution of modern secret societies a greater interest was manifested in the more ancient institution, and the lodge, being re-established, gained largely in membership, and held meetings regularly till very recently.

"Samaritan Tent of Rechabites" was instituted in 1844, and has continued a prosperous organization from that year. For the benefit of its members in sickness, and the assistance of families of deceased members, it has expended nearly twenty thousand dollars, and holds property and funds at the present time valued at seven thousand dollars.

"Atlantic Lodge of Odd Fellows" was instituted in 1844, and from the day of its organization has been a flourishing institution. For many years its membership has been large, and many prominent citizens of the town are contributing members to its funds. It has expended a large amount of money for the charitable purposes set forth in its laws, and owns real estate and other property valued at several thousand dollars.

"Washington Division Sons of Temperance" was instituted in 1856, and has continued to do good service for the temperance reform since its organization.

Within a few years the "Knights of Pythias" and the "Improved Order of Red Men" have each established branches of those organizations in the town, and both are in a prosperous condition.

The "Ancient Order of Hibernians" has gathered a goodly number under the banners of that organization, who prosecute a charitable work under the laws of that institution.

The "Marblehead Mutual Benefit Society" has a membership of over three hundred, each contributing one dollar on the death of a member, for funeral expenses and the assistance of those who have been dependent on the deceased for support.

The "Marblehead Reform Club" was organized in 1875, and has done a noble work in winning men from habits of dissipation and intemperance to paths of sobriety and usefulness. With over two hundred members, it maintains regular meetings, and supports cheerful and attractive rooms, supplied liberally with papers and instructive books.

"The Independent Associates," another branch of the temperance reform movement, is a prosperous organization, laboring zealously for the freedom of men suffering in the bonds of appetite and indulgence.

Every fire company in the town has adopted a plan, first introduced and applied by the "Mugford Fire Association," of collecting funds, by regular assessment, and the annual amount of compensation allowed by the town for services, to provide for the support and care of sick members and the decent burial of the dead. Nearly every company in the fire department has accumulated a substantial fund for these purposes, and scores of poor men have been made comfortable through months of lingering sickness, by this wise and excellent provision.

The first local newspaper and printing-office in the town was established in 1830, when the "Marblehead Register" was issued. It was discontinued after one or two years, as a failure in a business point of view. Since the first unsuccessful experiment, other enterprises of the same character have been commenced at various times, and during these years the public have been enlightened more or less by the "Marblehead Gazette," "Marblehead Mercury," "Essex County Times," "Marblehead Advocate," and "Marblehead Ledger;" but each, after a brief existence, was abandoned for want of sufficient patronage. The "Marblehead Messenger" was established in 1871, and although the enterprise has changed hands twice since that time, yet it has always been fairly patronized by the people. The enterprising young men who now own and manage the paper have met with severe reverses since becoming proprietors; but they have persevered with manly courage and great industry, and now have one of the best steam-printing establishments in Essex County, and a paper managed with ability and discretion, fairly patronized, and popularly regarded as one of the permanent institutions of the town.

On the 26th of May, 1874, the Hon. James J. H. Gregory, a prosperous farmer and seedsman, and one of the most public-spirited citizens in the place, offered, in open town-meeting, a donation of two thousand dollars, to be held in trust by the town, and invested in New England State or city bonds, the income of which was to be applied, once in four years, "to promote the moral, mental, and physical welfare of the inhabitants of the town." A committee, consisting of "the chairman of the board of selectmen, the chairman of the board of school committee, and all the ministers of the gospel of the town, of every denomination, who are settled over religious societies," was designated to receive the income from this fund and apply it in accordance with the conditions of the benefaction. He made an additional offer, that if some other person would make the same contribution to the fund, it should be designated by the name of the person making such gift. The generous donation was accepted, and the thanks of the town unanimously voted to Mr. Gregory for his benefaction. As no other person has yet been found ambitious to secure the distinction contemplated by the proposition of the founder, the fund has very properly been designated as the "Gregory Fund."

The buildings in Marblehead are mostly constructed of wood, and in the older part of the town the houses are crowded together almost as compactly as the habitations of a large city; that it has been recognized as a large town for two centuries, and during all that time has escaped any very great loss from fire, has been the wonder of many thoughtful and reflecting men. There have been dangerous fires during these years, which sometimes placed the property of the town in great peril; but the activity of the people, the efficiency of the fire department, and other favorable circumstances, confined the loss on these occasions to a very few buildings. It was often predicted, however, that the time would come when the town would suffer severely from fire; and this prediction was finally verified.

On the morning of June 25, 1877, at 2 o'clock, with the atmosphere clear and calm, in the bright light of a full moon, an alarm aroused the people from their slumbers, and it was found that a small barn, attached to a large, three-story building called the "Marblehead Hotel," situated on Pleasant Street, was on fire, and burning furiously. It was discovered by the neighbors, who were awakened by the roar and noise of the crackling flames, and who promptly gave the alarm. The owner of the building occupied the first story as a flour and grain store, while the tenant of the hotel premises had removed nearly all of his furniture the week before, and with his wife occupied one room in the building during that and the previous night, at the solicitation of the owner. The hotel was soon in flames; and this building was unfortunately within twenty feet of an engine-house, which sheltered two fire-engines, and which covered in part the only reservoir of water in that part of the town. The two engines were promptly placed in position; but, before any water could be obtained, the engine house was in flames, and the men with the engines driven from the reservoir. Closely packed, east of the burning building, were three large, four-story buildings; and, before any considerable amount of water could be obtained, these, with three or four smaller buildings, were all on fire, and the flames beyond the possible control of a small fire department. Assistance was now solicited from the neighboring cities of Salem and Lynn, and even from Boston; and, although the response was prompt, yet the time required for the travel of messengers over four or five miles of highway, and the return, was time that the devouring element improved with a fearful destruction of property. Assistance from Salem finally reached the scene, followed soon after with aid from Lynn; and these, with the Marblehead department, stopped the further spread of the flames at about sunrise. The fire department of Boston responded to the call, and sent engines by a special train; but the flames were under control when the train reached the town. The morning sun shone on a scene of smoking ruins and dreary desolation, that filled the hearts of the people with despair; for the stately factories which in that three hours' conflagration had disappeared, leaving only ashes behind, were the workshops of hundreds who depended on their daily earnings for their daily bread. From the reservoir to the Mugford monument on Pleasant Street, every building on both sides of the street, save one, had disappeared; every building on School Street, except one; on Sewall Street, from the corner of School to Spring Street, on both sides, only two buildings remained, and one of these was badly injured; all on Spring Street, except a school-house, were destroyed; all buildings on both sides of Essex Street, and a few on Bassett Street, were in ashes. A church, hotel, large boarding-house, engine-house, printing-office, railroad station, four passenger-cars, fifteen shoe factories and business blocks, two large stables, thirty-two dwelling-houses occupied by over forty families, and other buildings, in all numbering seventy-five structures, had been destroyed. Fourteen shoe manufacturers, two leather dealers, one grain store, two machine-shops, two hardware dealers, one boot-and-shoe store, three grocers, one provision dealer, one marble-worker, one apothecary, three halls, and two saloons had been burned out, and very little of the property had been saved. Many families were homeless, and had lost everything; while hundreds of mechanics whose homes had not been scorched by the flames looked on the scene of desolation with heavy hearts, for it proclaimed to them no work and no wages for many months to come. In this extremity, the citizens of Salem, Lynn, Boston, and other places, nobly responded, and placed in the hands of a committee appointed by the citizens of Marblehead funds to assist all those requiring help, till employment could be secured. With the money thus so nobly and generously contributed, hundreds of worthy people were saved the mortification of appealing to the last resource of poverty; and small business enterprises were judiciously assisted where lack of insurance had left a few good men utterly ruined. The citizens of Marblehead can never forget this noble contribution from kind-hearted strangers, in the day of their great calamity; and, while gratitude is recognized as a public or private virtue, the remembrance of the deed will be cherished with a grateful sense of obligation which no words can properly express, or service can possibly cancel. A detailed statement of the merchandise and cash received, and the communities or individuals from which such assistance came, together with the expenditure of every dollar and for whose individual benefit it was applied, was carefully prepared, and placed in the hands of the public authorities. With this event we finish the story of a town and people who accepted the lessons of political self-government proclaimed in the cabin of the "Mayflower," and for more than two centuries have maintained them with unfaltering faith and courage.

MANCHESTER.

This town, delightfully situated on the sea-shore in the easterly section of the county, is about four and one-half miles long, by two and one-fourth miles wide, and contains about 5,134 acres of land and water. It has for its boundaries, Hamilton and Essex on the north, Gloucester on the east, Massachusetts Bay on the south, and Beverly and Wenham on the west. By the Gloucester Branch Railroad which runs along the shore, it is seven miles west of Gloucester, nine miles north-east of Salem, and twenty-five miles north-east of Boston. The Congregational Church is in north latitude 42° 34′ 30.41″, and in west longitude 70° 44′ 24.43″. The underlying rock is sienite, which appears in extensive ledges in the northerly part of the town, and in bold, projecting headlands on the coast. These ledges are sometimes covered with huge bowlders, which impart a wild and romantic aspect to the scenery. One of these bowlders on Beaver Dam Hill, and near the line of Essex, is called "Agassiz's Rock." It rests upon the point of another rock, inclines a little towards the west, and bears upon its summit a thrifty pine tree. These bowlders all bear the marks of glacial action, and must have been borne hither in times of old by the force of the waters of the sea.

Broken into rocky hills and ravines, diversified with woodland, meadow, and glade, with headlands on the sea, Manchester presents, at almost every point of view, peculiar and delightful scenery. Bold and picturesque eminences alternate with clean sandy beaches all along the shore, and the inlet to the harbor, flanked by natural walls of rifted rock, some fifty feet in height, forms one of the most remarkable scenic features of the town. The harbor itself, spreading out into many little creeks, and intersected by the railroad, is capacious, but only vessels of small burden can come up to the wharves. The northerly section of the town is hilly, and almost entirely covered with a natural growth of oak, maple, birch, and pine. Millstone Hill is conspicuous in this section. A line of isolated rocky eminences extends from east to west, nearly through the centre of the town, of which the most remarkable are, beginning at the east, Long Hill, Sheep-pasture Hill, Leach's Mountain, and Moses's Hill. On the rocky headlands of the coast many elegant summer residences have been constructed, so that from the sea it seems to be a populous city. Among the owners are Messrs. J. B. Booth, Alanson Bigelow, R. H. Dana, Jr., Joseph Proctor, Esq., Maj. Russell Sturgis, James T. Fields, and the Rev. Dr. C. A. Bartol. The most conspicuous building is "The Masconomo House," of 240 feet frontage, recently constructed by J. B. Booth, the actor. Many little islands lie along the shore, imparting beauty and variety to ocean view. Among them, commencing at the east, are Kettle Island, Great Egg Rock, Little Egg Rock, Salt Rock, House Island, Ram Island, Little Ram Island, and Half-Tide Rock. On one of the beaches, near "Eagle Head," there is a peculiar kind of sand, called "The Singing Sand," which, when struck by the foot or by the wave, emits a musical tone. It seems to be produced by some peculiarity in the angles of the grains of sand. The same phenomenon is observable at Salisbury Beach.

The town is very well watered by Wolf-trap Brook and Clay Brook in the easterly section, and by Saw-mill Brook, a clear and devious stream of sparkling water, which nearly bisects the town, furnishes some motive power, and empties into the harbor at the central village. Its tributaries are Cat Brook and Causeway Brook, and by it are formed Beaver Dam Pond, Baker's Pond, and also another mill-pond at the centre. The estuary made by Saw-mill Brook and an arm of the sea is known as Jeffrey's Creek, or the harbor. The soil of the town consists of loam, intermixed more or less with sand, or gravel, or clay. It is well adapted to the growth of timber, grain, hay, and vegetables.

In a swamp near the line of Gloucester is found the Magnolia or Sweet Bay tree (*Magnolia glauca*), which attains the height of some dozen feet, and has a beautiful green leaf, with large white fragrant flowers.

It comes into blossom during the month of June, and is seldom found so far away from its Virginian home. The northern flower, called *Linæa borealis*, also appears among the ledges of this beautiful town. In these two flowers the northern and the southern climes seem to meet, and to display their beauty side by side.

The population in 1875 was 1,560, of whom 774 were males, and 786 females. The oldest person had attained the age of eighty-eight years. There was no person of color in town. The number of ratable polls was 443, and of voters 402. The town had 335 dwelling-houses, and 418 families. Of the males, 3 were clergymen, 3 physicians, 9 clerks, 3 master-mariners, 14 mariners, 23 merchants and traders, 32 farmers, 20 farm laborers, 17 fishermen, 103 cabinet-makers, 29 carpenters, 7 chair-makers, 14 curriers, 13 painters, 33 shoemakers, 54 laborers, and 1 retired. Of the females, 9 were teachers, 366 housewives, 32 housekeepers, 33 domestic servants, 7 dressmakers, 7 seamstresses, and 7 shoemakers.

The number of farms was 29; of horses, 114; and of milch cows, 91. The capital invested in manufactures was; for cabinet-work, $81,000; leather, $15,000; essences and extracts, $4,000; shoes, $3,000; bread and crackers, $3,000; buildings (wooden), $2,000; and newspapers, $200. The value of goods produced for the year ending May 1, 1875, was $179,581; the number of barrels of mackerel taken was 1,800, valued at $18,000. The town had five vessels engaged in coastwise commerce, with a tonnage of 1,267, valued at $70,800. The town valuation was $1,739,216. The town has six public schools, one of which is a high school, and the roads and bridges are kept in good repair. There are three villages, — Newport, Manchester Centre, and Kettle Cove in the south-easterly section. The central village, built on both sides of Jeffrey's Creek, has an air of thrift and neatness, and is very well shaded with ancient trees. Here are three churches, — Congregational, Baptist, and Roman Catholic, a town hall, with a well-selected public library; a good hotel, post-office, Post of the G. A. R., and an Odd Fellows' Lodge. This village is partially surrounded by wooded hills, on one of which stands an old powder-house, and the commingling of the land and water scenery renders a view from almost any elevated point delightful. The rides along the shore, commanding views of the islands and the open sea, together with the deep green forests of the interior, are as enjoyable as any to be had upon the Cape, and, for this and other reasons, Manchester has now become a favorite summer resort. In respect to healthfulness, as well as beauty and variety, it stands in the front rank of all our seaboard villages. Well has the Rev. Mr. Tenney, in his "Coronation" said of it: "Woods as well as sea conspire to make Manchester the most delightful resort on the whole New England coast."

The settlement of Manchester was among the earliest of the State. Attracted by the beauty of the spot, and the abundance of fish its coves and creeks afforded, William Jeffrey, whose name Jeffrey's Creek perpetuates, fixed, with some other hardy men, his residence here, as early as 1628. The land then belonged to Salem, and was known as "Jeffrey's Creek."

William Allen and Goodman Norman, with his son, are said to have been the first actual settlers, and were here as early as 1626. Other early settlers were Samuel Archer, 1630; Robert Leach, 1636; William Bennett, 1637; George Norton, 1640; Richard Norman, John Black, James Standish, John Friend, the Rev. Ralph Smith, William Walton, John Norman, William Dixy, John Pickworth, John Gally, Benjamin Parmenter, Robert Allen, Edmena Prover, Robert Leach, 1642; John Kettle, 1650. The earliest recorded calamity of the place is, that in 1631 six men were drowned near Kettle Island, in a boat.

The settlement rapidly increased in numbers, and in 1635, the Rev. Ralph Smith, the first ordained minister at Plymouth, came to preach to the people. He probably officiated in a log-house of one of the settlers, or, in pleasant weather, under the branches of some ancient oak-tree. He was graduated at Cambridge, Eng., 1613, and settled over the Plymouth Church in 1629, where he was assisted by the celebrated Roger Williams. "He was," says Mr. Neal, "a learned man of good abilities; but of an unsettled head. He was for refining upon the Brownists' scheme, and at last declared for the principles of the

Baptists; upon this, he left Amsterdam and settled with his disciples at Ley, where being at a loss for a proper administrator of the ordinance of baptism, he plunged himself, and then performed the ceremony upon others which gained him the name of Se-Baptist," that is, Self Baptist. He died at Boston, in 1662. It does not appear that he was installed at Jeffrey's Creek, or indeed that any church was organized there during the seventeenth century; but the support of a minister, or the promise to that effect, was then necessary to secure the organization of a township. The land was originally granted by Salem to the following persons; viz., William Allen, Samuel Archer, John Black, Sergeant Dixie, John Morse, the Widow Morse, John Sibley, George Williams, and Sergeant Wolf. It was named by William Allen, either from the Duke of Manchester, or from the town of Manchester, Eng., and was incorporated May 14, 1645, it being then the twenty ninth town formed in the Massachusetts Colony. Winthrop, in his journal, says that on the "5th, 9th mo. 1645, the village at Jeffrey's neck was incorporated and called Manchester. Not being in a church state, they have procured Mr. Smith, sometime minister at Plymouth, to preach to them." The people were then engaged in the fisheries, which branch of business they profitably pursued for almost two hundred years.

It does not appear that the inhabitants were ever molested by the Indians, or that there were ever many of them in the place; yet a few of their implements, both of peace and war, have been discovered in the town. Some Indian skeletons, gouges, tomahawks, and fireplaces have been exhumed. Several Indian mounds have also been discovered. The land belonged originally to Maseonomo, the noted sagamore of Agawam.

On the early Salem records the following grants appear: —

"28 of ye 6th moneth 1637, John Pieworth requesteth for a peel [parcel] of land at Jeffries Creeke." "8, 9th mo. Jno: Pikwod, Jno: Gally, Jno: Norman & W^m^ Bennitt have alowed these power eyther of them 25 acres a man att Jefferyes Creeke."

"There is granted to Richard Graves half an acre of land vpon the neck for the setting of his howse, he promising to follow fishinge 5. 10 mo, 1637."

"26, 9 mo. 1638 Graunted to Samuell Archer one neck of Land lying out against the sea neere vnto Jeffry Creeke Iland conteyning twentie acres of meadow to be layed him out in Kettle Island Cove."

"27. 11 mo, 1628, Seargent Dixy desires some hay ground about Jefferyes Creeke."

"4 12 mo [same year] Graunted to Robert Allyn 25 acres of land: lyinge betweene the land of W^m^ Bennett and Samuel Areher [their land] at Jeffrys Creeke."

"16. 7 mo. 1639 James Standish is graunted 40 acres of land neere Jeffry Creeke."

"21, 11 mo 1640 Granted Beniamin Parminster 10 acres of land at Jeff[ryes] Creeke where the former grants are made good."

There was granted, "4, 1 mo, 1643," by the "seven men" of Salem to Richard Gardner "at Jefferyes Creeke 20 twentie acres of land: to be layd out by the Town."

"Graunted to Robert ffuller 20 acres of land at Jeffryes Creeke to be layd out by the Towne, if hee dwell there, otherwise to desert the land."

"29. 4 mo 1646, Ordered that William Woodburie & Richard Brackenburie, Ensigne Dixy, Mr Conant, & Lieutenant Lothrop & Lawrence Leech shall forthw^th^ lay out a way betweene the fferry at Salem & the head of Jeffryes Creeke and that it be such a way as men may trauell on horseback & drive cattle & if such a way may not be found then to take speedy Course to sett up a foote-bridge at Mackrell Cove." This was probably the first road opened in the new town, and very likely followed the present main road from Manchester to Beverly.

It does not appear that William Jeffreys, from whom Jeffrey's Creek received its name, resided long in the place, or what became of him. He owned the tract of land called Jeffrey's Neck, in Ipswich, and, in 1642, was one of the proprietors of Weymouth. As early as 1634, Winthrop styles him "an old planter," and in 1666, he claimed his lands in Ipswich.

In 1636, four hundred acres of land, embracing the central village, were granted to the settlers, William Allen, Samuel Archer, Sergeant Dixy, John Sibley, Lieut. More, and the Widow More. It was then covered with a fine growth of walnut-trees.

The bounds were settled in 1642, between Jeffrey's Creek and Gloucester, and the town was then represented as much engaged in the fishery. Kettle Island was granted to John Kettle in 1649.

The early town records are for the most part illegible; but a few such items as the following appear:

"Ye 2^d^ of ye 12^th^ mo. 1656, it was agreed that a meeting house should be built 18 feet long with two gable ends to be set near the landing place & the planters are to come & cut the timber this day fortnight, William Bennett, John Pickworth, & Samuel Friend to oversee the getting of timber."

Dec. 13, 1658, the inhabitants order "all rates that are behind to be gathered by Abraham Whittier who hath full power from the plantation. Pasco Fote, John Sibley, Robert Leach, Henry Lee, Samuel Friend, William Jones, William Bennett, John Pickworth, James Standish." On the "6^th^ of the 10^th^ mo. 1658, It is ordered and agreed at a town meeting that all orders formerly made and herein expressed in writing shall stand good concerning masts, trees, hogsheads and barrels. For masts for banks and trees, for each mast £0 5*s* 6*d*. All bowsprits and other yards as Goodman Bennett shall Judge who is appointed by the town. For shallops mast £0 1*s* 0, for spikeshaft £0 1*s* 0. For trees for Hogsheads and barrels £0 2*s* 6*d*. And it is ordered that no posts or rails shall be cut from our commons and transplanted out of the town."

In 1662, there were twenty-one landholders, among whom were Samuel Friend, William Allen, James Standish, Robert Leach, John Norman, Nicholas Vincent, Widow Lee, William Bennett, Pitts, Maverie, Chubb, Palmiter, Blackledge Pickworth, Isaac Whichar, and Ambrose Gale.

Three years later, Thomas West was sent as the first representative to the General Court.

"Dec. 14, 1660, John Blackleach sen^r^ of Boston sold to John West planter his land in Manchester which was granted him by the town of Salem."

The Dutch, in 1677, came and plundered some of the vessels here, and the loss sustained by John Norman was made up by the town.

Samuel Friend had the Island Wharf, where his house stood, granted to him in 1668; and in 1672, Robert Leach was appointed as a grand juror. On the breaking out of Philip's War, in 1675, two garrisons were established in the town, and doubtless some of the citizens were impressed into the service; and John Allen, Joshua Carter, and Charles Bennett, were slain at Bloody Brook, on the 18th of September. This company, under Capt. Thomas Lothrop, of Beverly, was called "the very FLOWER OF ESSEX COUNTY." They were ambuscaded by about 700 Indians, and their captain, with seventy-six men, was killed. A monument was erected over their remains in 1838.

The selectmen, in 1680, were Robert Leach, John Lee, and Isaac Witcher [Whittier (?)].

Before the organization of the church, Nov. 7, 1716, professors of religion here communed with the First, or Mr. Higginson's church, in Salem, till 1667; and after that, with the First, or Mr. Hale's church, in Beverly. Although no records of early ecclesiastical affairs have been preserved, it is known that the Rev. John Windborn came to preach here in 1680, and was to have £13 10*s*., and his firewood, for his salary.

Mr. Windborn resigned his charge in 1689. The Colony tax for Manchester this year was £3 7*s*. 6*d*., and seventy men were drafted from the Essex County regiment, to fight against the Indians, at the eastward. The troops from Manchester served under Maj. B. Gedney, of that regiment.

In the year following, the town voted to build a new meeting-house, thirty feet long, and twenty-five feet wide, with three galleries, and a place for a bell of 100 lbs. or more. The Rev. John Eveleth (Harvard College, 1689), came to preach here about this time, and remained till 1695. He subsequently preached in Stow and in Kennebunk, Me., and died Aug. 1, 1734. He was followed here by the Rev. John Emerson, in 1695, and by the Rev. Nicholas Webster, in 1699.

Thomas Tewksbury represented the town in the General Court, in 1693, and received of it £5 4*s*. "for 35 days serving his country."

In 1694, the old saw-mill was sold, and a grist-mill was to be set up the same year by John Knowlton. The mill, the blacksmith's shop, and the church, were, at this period, the places of general rendezvous, where the affairs of the town and Province were discussed, and the plans for the public good projected.

A bell, in 1695, was presented to the town by Mr. George Norton, which was to be hung as soon as possible.

John Sibley, Robert Leach and Thomas West were chosen as the first school committee, and money was appropriated for ammunition, and for building a watch-house.

The town, having extensive forests, was much infested with wolves at this period, and May 6, 1696, it voted twenty shillings for an old,

and five shillings for a young, wolf's head. The number of people taxed this year was fifty, and Samuel Leach and John Lee were the owners of slaves.

In accordance with the custom of those times, a committee was appointed, in 1697, to seat all persons in the meeting-house, according to the part they paid for the support of the minister, excepting "any antient, grave & sober persons of good conversation." The salary of the Rev. Mr. Webster, for the year ensuing, was £58.

In 1699, a large quantity of the common land was sold, and the proceeds appropriated to the building of a parsonage.

The town paid, in 1700, Samuel English, grandson of Maseonomo, £4 5*s*. 8*d*. for the title to the lands of the township. The next year the rate of the town was £23 19*s*. 11*d*.

A burial-place was early selected, and the graves of its tenants marked with rude granite headstones. The earliest one bearing an inscription is that of Joseph Woodbury, who died in 1714. The stones need to be retouched by the hand of some "Old Mortality" to render the inscriptions legible.

At the formation of the church, Nov. 7, 1716, the Rev. Ames Cheever, son of the Rev. Samuel Cheever, of Marblehead, and born Oct. 24, 1686 (Harvard College, 1707), was ordained as its first pastor. He celebrated the first sacrament ever held in the place on the 6th of January, 1717, and was dismissed Feb. 21, 1744. The church adopted the Assembly's Catechism as the basis of its creed, "being persuaded in Matters of faith according to ye Catechisme of the Assembly of Divines, unto the Substance of w^c^ we do consent & submitt."

The church then consisted of nine males and ten females. Benjamin Allen and Samuel Lee were then, or soon afterwards, chosen deacons.

John Pierce was, this year, murdered on board a vessel in Manchester harbor.

Every pupil in school was taxed fivepence per week for the support, in part, of the teacher.

A committee, consisting of Samuel Lee, Aaron Bennett, John Foster, Richard Leach, Benjamin Allen and John Dodge, were chosen in December, 1719, to build a new meeting-house, which was to be forty-nine feet long and thirty-five feet wide; and the next year the old church was sold for the sum of £12. "All pin money was to be for the building of the minister's pew."

Jabez Dodge was chosen school-master in 1721, and was not to have more than £20 per annum. Among the votes of the town the next year one was that "geese must not run on the common."

In 1723, a new school-house was built on the common near the church, and the sum of £10 was voted for the school, which was to be "for reading & writing English and cyphering." The church and the school then occupied the chief attention of the people, and to the benign influence of these institutions the town was largely indebted for its prosperity.

On the 29th of October, 1727, the town was startled by an earthquake, which made a lasting impression upon the minds of the people, leading many to change their course of life. During the twelve months that followed, as many as forty persons united with the church. The cause of an earthquake was not then understood by the people, and they looked upon it as a direct admonition from the Deity.

In 1731, Mr. Holden, of London, presented to the town and church a copy of Richard Baxter's Practical Works, for binding which it raised the sum of £8. The sad news came, in 1734, that Mr. Ezekiel Knowlton had been shipwrecked on Sable Island. Engaged as the people were in the fisheries, such disasters were not infrequent, and more were thus made widows and orphans here than in the frontier settlements by encounters with the Indians.

March, 1735–36, Dea. Benjamin Allen, John Foster, Sr., and Thomas Lee were chosen selectmen; at the same time, it was voted to have "4 Schoole Dams to keepe a free schoole, one at (the centre), one at Nuport and one at the plains." The town also voted "not to divide the county of Essex." These "schoole Dams" taught spelling, reading and writing, using "the horn book" and psalter for reading, and the "goose quill pen" grown in the place, for writing. The use of the twigs of the grey birch was also not infrequent.

The sum of £15 was ordered in 1737 for a stock of ammunition, and in 1740 John Driver was killed by the Indians at Cape Sable. The next year a bridge was built over the river near the grist-mill. "Mareh 16 1741–2 John Hill sen^r^ was chosen A Inspector of Killing & Hunting of Dears." They were then very plentiful in the forests of Cape Ann. The wildcat or lynx was not uncommon, and the beaver still built his dam across the streams. Feb. 21, 1743, the Rev. Ames Cheever asked for a dismission, which was granted. Samuel Lee was commissioned as justice of the peace in 1744, an office which, at that period, gave to its possessor great consideration. The public school was well sustained, the town raising, in 1745, £22 for its support. John Chandler was then, or certainly the next year, employed as teacher.

David Allen was at the capture of Louisburg by the troops under Col. William Pepperrell, June 16th of this year, and wrote a journal of the expedition. John Hassam was killed.

Aug. 19, 1746, the town paid to Benjamin Jewett, for "Ringing the Bel in ye year 1745 £1. 5s.; to Mr Joseph Tuck for making Mary Leaches Coffen 6s 3d & to Samuel Allen Jun^r^ for killing one Will Cat, 6s." Mr. Tappan's salary was £65, and John Chandler's, the teacher, £20 per annum, both of which were paid by the town. The yearly rent of the school land was 13*s*. 9*d*. Feb. 25, 1746–47, the town paid John Lee, Sr., 11*s*. 3*d*. for six feet of wood "for ye watch house." A pound and school-house is then mentioned. The town was also provided with stocks for the evil-doers. They probably stood on the common near the meeting-house.

The second regular pastor, the Rev. Benjamin Tappan, son of Samuel and Abigail Tappan, of Newbury, and born there, Feb. 28, 1721 (Harvard College, 1742), was settled over the church, Sept. 11, 1745.

The committee, chosen to agree with Mr. Tappan, consisted of John Edwards, Benjamin Lee, Jonathan Allen, Jr., Andrew Hooper, Richard Coye, John Lee, Robert Herrick, John Lee, Jr., Samuel Allen, Jr., and Jonathan Herrick.

The hardy fishermen suffered frequently from the barbarity of the Indians at the eastward. Capt. Amos Hilton, with his son and crew, were killed by the savages near Sheepscot, Me., Aug. 17, 1747. They were engaged in fishing, had probably landed for provisions and were thus beset by the wily foe, and massacred. One lad, named Aaron Lee, was made captive, but, soon effecting his escape, returned home and served as town clerk for many years.

The throat distemper prevailed here greatly in 1748, and by it many children died. It was probably the diphtheria of the present day.

Sept. 15, 1750, Capt. John Lee was paid 5*s*. 4*d*., "for a Journey after a School Master." Ames Cheever, Jr., was paid Aug. 24, 1751, "for Keeping 2 months schoole, £4 13s 4d."

June 4, 1751, "A man of Manchester for passing counterfiet money is sentenced at Ipswich to stand in the pellory one hour, receive 20 stripes, to labor hard in the house of correction 12 months & pay costs of prosecution."*

Josiah Allen, Dec. 16th, of this year, was chosen to serve as a grand juror.

It was voted, March, 16, 1752, "to tax the town one hundred pounds to defray the charge of building a steeple to the meeting house."

In June of this year, Aaron Bennett, Jr., and wife, widow Abiel Hosham, widow Abigail Leach, and one other person, of Manchester, were admitted to the Rev. John Cleaveland's church, of Chebacco. They were what were then called "New Lights," or believers in the doctrines taught by Mr. Whitefield.

Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth was paid Nov. 13, 1753, "for Keeping schoole five sixth of one quarter year £5. 11s 1½d."

In the second book of the church records occurs the following entry:—

"N. B. Doctor Watts version of the Psalms of David was introduced by the Church of Christ in Manchester in June 1753: and his Hymns to be sung at the Lord's table." Some churches greatly objected to the use of this new manual of hymnology, but it does not appear to have had to fight its way into the church at Manchester. Only about a dozen psalm tunes, as "Hackney," "New Commandment Tune," "Windsor," and "The Old Hundredth," were sung at this period.

The town voted, Sept. 7, 1754, to draw from the treasury money needful in conjunction with other towns "to Destroy those Devouring Wolves, which are in, or may be found in the woods between Ipswich, Gloucester, Manchester, Beverly, and Wenham."

The town this year paid £7 10s. 8d. for a weather-cock, the same which is still in use.

Col. Benjamin Marston died in this place in 1754, and this equivocal inscription marks his monument: — "Col^l^. Benj^a^ Marston lies here, who died, May 22 1754, being 57 years & 3 mo. old. Art thou curious, reader, to know what sort of a man he was? Wait till the final day of Retribution & then thou mayest be satisfied."

* History of Ipswich, p. 318.

The number of deaths in 1755 was twenty-four, and in the year following, seven men were lost at sea. The most notable event in 1756 was the death of the Rev. Ames Cheever, who passed away on the 15th of January. Ames Cheever, his son, was the school-master in 1758, and this year Capt. Samuel Leach, Josiah Allen, Robert Bean, and Jacob Crowell were killed by the Indians in Casco Bay, where they were fishing in a schooner of fifty tons. Two boys, James Allen and Nathaniel Masters, who were with them, escaped. John Hassam, a soldier, was killed at the eastward in 1759.

The punishment of petty offenders was by flagellation and by public exposure in the stocks, as may be seen by the following entry in the town records in 1760. "Thomas Lee received for making the Whipping Post & a pair of Stocks, 13s. 4d. and 4s 8d for stock irons." The fine for profanity was paid in money, as it is recorded in 1762, that John Lee received 5s. from a person "for swearing."

In 1760 Capt. John Foster, Joseph Whipple, Andrew Woodbury, Jacob Hooper, Jeremiah Allen, Jr., Thomas Lee, Jr., John Tewksbury, Abraham Masters, Jr., Samuel Carter, Solomon Call, and Thomas Poland agreed to pay their proportion in support of a grammar school.

During the revival at Chebacco, in 1763, several of the Manchester people united with the Rev. John Cleaveland's church in that place, much to the displeasure of Mr. Tappan, who had but little sympathy with the Whitefieldian movement. Among the number was Edward Lee, "The Apostolic Fisherman," of whom Mr. Cleaveland gives an interesting account in his "Plain Narrative," published at Boston in 1767.

In 1764 Benjamin Andrew, Charles Leach, and David Foster were lost in the "Mayflower," coming from the West Indies. The town for a long period had furnished a large number of hardy seamen to vessels from Salem, Newbury, and Boston. The population in 1765 was 732, of whom twenty-four were colored. This year John Lee, Sr., died, and in 1766 Robert Warren, at the remarkable age of 100 years. In 1767 ten men from Manchester were lost at sea. In 1769 there were 210 taxable persons in town; in 1772 a windmill was erected, and singing seats were provided for the choir in the gallery of the church. The singers had then begun to sing by note, and to sit apart from the congregation. The tune was started by a wooden pitch-pipe about one foot in length, on which the letters of the scale were cut. The tones were produced by blowing into one end of the instrument, and the pitch was obtained by sliding the rod that filled the cavity of the pipe up or down.

March 18, 1773, the town agreed with Mr. Joseph Killam "to ring the bell and sweep the meeting house, one year from the date hereof, for £1 6s. 8d., and further ring said bell at nine at night for 40s."

Though there were many royalists here during the great struggle for independence, the majority of the people pledged "their lives their fortunes, and their sacred honor," to sustain the cause of liberty. Early action was taken by the town to second the measures of the leaders against the aggressions of the mother country. A committee was chosen, May 18, 1774, to report on the letter of the Boston Committee of Correspondence. This committee, consisting of Dr. Joseph Whipple, Capt. Andrew Masters, Capt. Samuel Foster, Mr. Andrew Woodbury, John Edwards, and John Tewksbury were empowered to act as a committee of safety. On the 16th of September Andrew Woodbury was sent to the General Court with the direction, that in the event of its dissolution, he should attend as a delegate the Provincial Congress.

In December, the town voted that its money in the hands of the constable, instead of being paid to the treasurer of the Province, should be put into the hands of Henry Gardner, Esq., of Stow. Thus "the sinews of war" were devoted to the popular cause. In order to lessen importations, it was voted "to give no scarfs or gloves at funerals."

Minute-men were appointed, and two barrels of powder provided. The militia company, of which Capt. Andrew Masters, Lieut. Samuel Foster, and Eleazer Crafts were the officers, was frequently drilled upon the common, in front of the meeting-house.

To the county convention, held in August, Dr. Joseph Whipple and Col. John Lee were sent as delegates; and to the convention held at Ipswich, in September, John Lee, Esq., Capt. Andrew Masters, and Andrew Woodbury were the delegates.

Early in 1775 the small-pox appeared in town, to the consternation of the people, and a pest-house, with its attendant, a smoke-house, was erected. Four watch-houses were also erected, two in May and two in July, in order to observe the movements of the British cruisers off the coast. John Lee, Esq., Jonathan Herrick, Samuel Foster, Jacob Hooper, Aaron Lee, John Edwards, Isaac Lee, Isaac Proctor, and Eleazer Crafts were chosen a committee of correspondence.

On the arrival of the news of the battle of Lexington, Capt. Andrew Masters, at the head of his company, marched as far as Lynn, when he received orders to return. A half company of militia was formed under Capt. Whipple. The second company in it was of Manchester, the officers being Andrew Masters, captain; Samuel Foster, first lieutenant; Eleazer Crafts, second lieutenant; and Jonathan Brown, sergeant.

In October, 1776, entrenchments were thrown up at Norton's Point. The committee of correspondence then consisted of Dea. John Allen, Dr. Joseph Whipple, Azariah Norton, and Jacob Tewksbury. A bounty of £68 was raised for soldiers, and one hundred bushels of corn were provided for the poor.

In 1777, Eleazer Crafts was chosen first major of Cape Ann and Manchester brigade, and a privateer was lost off Gloucester, with Dr. Joseph Whipple, an ardent patriot, Daniel Ober, and seventeen other men from Manchester. There was much excitement in town this year in respect to the Tories, and Nathaniel Lee, Obed Carter, and Thomas Stevens were appointed a committee to make inquiries respecting them. The number of male inhabitants over fifteen years of age was, this year, 224. The town agrees to support the families of the soldiers.

Liberty was reluctantly granted in 1778 to inoculate for the small-pox, and in the year ensuing this liberty was revoked. Several mills were at this period erected for grinding corn-stalks for the manufacture of molasses. It was a very poor substitute for the genuine article, and the business was soon abandoned.

In 1779, £41 5*s.* were paid for soldiers' shoes, and other sums were raised for the prosecution of the war.

In 1780, the town offered £12 for recruits, and in October voted not to raise the sum of £7,000, its proportion to purchase beef for the army. James Lee died this year a prisoner at Halifax, N. S.

The next year the town was called upon to draft eight men, and to furnish 8,266 pounds of beef for the army, both of which it declined to do. For this it was fined £1,027 6*s.*; but the fine was in part abated on the presentation of a petition setting forth the poverty of the people. In November, it however voted to raise £1,000 for hiring soldiers, and to offer £25 as a bounty to such as might enlist. The service done to the country by the privateers of Manchester was highly commended.

The news of peace in 1783 was received with acclamations of joy, and the town gradually revived from the depressing influence of the war.

The school-house was rebuilt in 1785, and in 1788 it was voted to have a grammar school. The town was called to deplore the loss by death of its minister, the Rev. Benjamin Tappan, May 6, 1790. He married Abigail Wigglesworth, and had twelve children, two of whom, David and Amos, were graduates of Harvard College. His epitaph is: —

"In memory of Benjamin Tappan, late pastor of the church in Manchester, who expired May 6, 1790, in the 70th year of his age, and 45th year of his ministry. He was a sincere and exemplary Christian, a tender husband and parent, a judicious and sound divine, a prudent and faithful minister."

Mr. Tappan was succeeded by the Rev. Ariel Parish, son of Elijah and Eunice Parish, born in Lebanon, Conn., Nov. 29, 1764 (Dartmouth College, 1788), and ordained at Manchester, April 12, 1792, his brother, Dr. Elijah Parish, of Byfield, preaching the sermon. His ministry was brief. He died May 30, 1794, a victim of the malignant fever which proved fatal to about seventy of the inhabitants.

Edward Kitfield, aged forty-seven years, and his wife, Elizabeth, were killed in consequence of a fall out of a chaise, with which the horse was running away. He died May 19, and she May 24, 1798.

The town provided a powder-house in 1799, and ten cartridges of powder were granted to each member of the militia.

After hearing some forty candidates, the Rev. Abraham Randall, son of Abraham and Elizabeth Randall, of Stow, born Oct. 28, 1771 (Harvard College, 1798), was ordained here Sept. 2, 1801, and dismissed Aug. 17, 1808.

The population of the town at the beginning of the present century was 1,082, of whom three were colored persons. A post-office was established in 1803, and D. L. Brigham was appointed postmaster. The fishery was then carried on extensively in vessels belonging to Boston and other towns. A social library was established in 1804.

A new pound, costing $120, was built in 1806, and school districts were the next year established. To the embargo in 1808 there was

strong opposition, and the town petitioned Congress for its removal. This feeling against the embargo was common to all the seaboard towns of the State, inasmuch as by its operation trade and commerce everywhere became stagnant. The town this year lost two of its valuable citizens by death, Capt. Samuel Prince and Dr. David Norwood. The former died on the first day of January, and the latter on the twenty-sixth day of May.

The Rev. James Thurston succeeded Mr. Randall April 19, 1809, Dr. Joseph Buckminster, of Portsmouth, preaching the installation sermon. Mr. Thurston was dismissed June 17, 1819, and died in Exeter, N. H., Dec. 12, 1835.

Soon after the settlement of Mr. Thurston, a new meeting-house was erected, at a cost of $8,000. The next year a powder-house was built on Powder-House Hill, which still remains just peering from the grove above the central village.

In the war of 1812, the town, from its exposure to the sea, underwent great anxiety. Watches were set, and signal-flags were placed on elevated situations. June 13, 1814, the town petitioned for powder; but the place was not molested by the enemy. A Sabbath school was opened in 1818.

The population of the town in 1820 was 1,201; and on the 12th of September, 1821, the Rev. Samuel Moody Emerson, born Nov. 17, 1785 (Williams College, 1810), was installed pastor of the church, the Rev. J. Edwards, D. D., preaching the sermon. Capt. William Babcock was, in 1823, murdered by pirates at sea.

The following entry on the town records is an instance of the calamities to which many of the citizens of the town were constantly exposed: "Jonathan Lull, Benjamin Jones, and Asa Woodbury lost at sea. They sailed from Salem for the Southern States; but a violent storm the next day after they sailed overwhelmed and sunk them in a watery grave, December 1834, as they never have been heard from since."

Rachel Lee, widow of Capt. Isaac Lee, died Dec. 14, 1835, aged ninety-seven years and nine months.

Ezekiel Walter Leach wrote a history of Manchester this year, the manuscript of which was presented to the town. It is hoped that measures will be taken for its revision and publication.

About 150 men were engaged in the fisheries in 1835, and the town had then seven fish-yards and flakes, and ten houses for storage. As many as eighteen schooners and two sloops sailed from the place. A high school was opened that year, in which the ancient languages were taught. William Long was the instructor.

Manchester had, in 1837, twelve cabinet manufactories, in which about 120 men were employed; it had also fourteen vessels engaged in the cod and mackerel fishery, employing about sixty-five men. This latter business declining, the town gave its attention more directly to the manufacture of cabinet ware, for the excellence of which it enjoys an enviable reputation.

Dea. Delucena L. Bingham died here, Oct. 24, 1837, at the age of seventy-three years. He was very highly esteemed by all who knew him, and at the time of his death was clerk of the town and a justice of the peace.

The Rev. Mr. Moody was dismissed by council in September, 1839, and was subsequently settled in Heath, where he died, July 20, 1841. He published a discourse "On Redeeming the Time," delivered at Manchester in January, 1825.

The Rev. Oliver Alden Taylor was installed here, Sept. 18, 1839, and continued in the pastorate until his decease, Dec. 18, 1851. He was born in Yarmouth, August, 1801 (Union College, 1825), and was somewhat noted as a scholar and a writer on sacred subjects. His brother, the Rev. T. A. Taylor, published a memoir of him in 1853.

The population in 1840 had increased to 1,355.

The Christian Baptist Society built a church in the central village in 1843, and the Rev. Orin J. Wait was the first pastor. It is now a Calvinistic Baptist church.

In 1845, Manchester had eighteen vessels employed in the cod and mackerel fisheries, and the value of fares for the year ending April 1, 1845, was $21,435. The manufactures were chairs, upholstery, cabinet ware, boots, shoes, bricks, and wheels for ships. After that period the fishing business decreased, while more attention was given to the manufacture of cabinet ware.

The town had, in 1850, 1,638 inhabitants.

The Rev. Rufus Taylor, brother of the Rev. Oliver A. Taylor, was installed pastor of the Congregational church, May 6, 1852, and went on prosperously until September, 1856, when he made, for the sake of his health, a voyage to Russia. On his return he was cordially received, and a purse of some $125 was made up for him by the society. But as there was a slight dissatisfaction in respect to his exchanges, the parish voted, April 1, 1857, "That it would be gratifying to the members of the First Parish, assembled at their annual meeting, if the Rev. Mr. Taylor would enlarge the circle of his exchanges." To this resolution Mr. Taylor sent in a sharp and rather petulant reply, which he closed by resigning his charge.

His resignation was accepted by the parish; he still, however, continued to preach in the meeting-house until late in the autumn, when, with a minority of the church and society, he began to hold services in another building; they claiming to be the First Congregational Church.

A council, Dec. 16, 1857, decided that neither party without the other had a claim to be the Congregational church, and dismissed Mr. Taylor "from all his church and parish relations." The number of church members who worshipped with Mr. Taylor was seventy-nine; of those who opposed him, one hundred. Mr. Taylor accepted the decision of the council and left the town.

The minority then secured the services of the Rev. Francis V. Tenney, late of Byfield, who was installed as pastor, Aug. 15, 1858, the Rev. Milton P. Braman, D. D., preaching the sermon, and a small chapel was soon constructed by this seceding church and society. In the meantime the Rev. George E. Freeman, of the Bangor Theological Seminary, was invited to become the pastor of the regular church, and was ordained over it October 5th of the same year. He was dismissed Nov. 18, 1862, and is now pastor of the church at Abington. It may be added here, that a reunion between the two churches was happily consummated, March 23, 1869; and the chapel was generously presented by Mrs. A. H. Trask to the original society which now uses it for social worship.

The Congregational church, erected in 1809, was remodelled and rededicated April 9, 1856. An organ donated by Capt. Richard Trask and Mrs. Sarah Allen, and costing $1,200, was first used on that occasion.

The population in 1860 was 1,698.

The Rev. Edward P. Tenney, author of "Coronation" and other works, commenced preaching to the First Congregational Church Nov. 3, 1862, and continued here until Sept. 30, 1867. He is now president at Colorado College.

In the War of the Rebellion, this town performed an honorable part, sending as many as 159 men into the service, and raising money cheerfully to sustain the government.

The Rev. George L. Gleason, the present pastor, was installed here April 7, 1869. The church membership is 186, of whom 136 are females. The average attendance on the Sabbath school is 125. "The Songs of the Sanctuary" were introduced into public worship in 1870, and are still used. This work took the place of "Watts and Select Hymns" by Dr. Worcester.

Mr. Julius A. Rabardy, postmaster, established here, in 1875, a monthly journal, devoted to the "rights of men," and called the "Beetle and Wedge," which was ably conducted, and was continued until the present year. Its columns were enriched by many articles from the pen of John Lee, Esq., town clerk, in regard to the early history of Manchester.

The town officers of Manchester, in 1878, are: John Lee, clerk; Albert E. Low, treasurer; Aaron Bennett, collector; John Lee, John H. Cheever, William A. Stone, selectmen, assessors, and overseers of the poor; A. S. Jewett, school committee, for three years; Edward Flint, Henry S. Chase, and James M. Lucas, constables. John Lee, Nathan P. Meldram, Francis H. Morgan, and John Price, are justices of the peace. Julius A. Rabardy is the postmaster, and George A. Priest, M. D., is the practising physician.

Although Manchester has not furnished any men remarkable for literary or scientific attainments to the world, "no town on the American coast, of its population, has furnished more able shipmasters and sailors," and its people have always been noted for industry, probity, honest dealing, and obedience to the laws.

MERRIMAC.

The history of the origin of this town is so recent as to be familiar to all; yet, in future days, some one may inquire how the town had its birth. The question of division and separation had interested the people of the parent town of Amesbury, and the villages of West Amesbury (now Merrimac) for several years; but nothing of organized or definite action had been taken until the winter of 1875–76.

The first public meeting, for effecting the object of separation, was held in Coliseum Hall, January 18th. January 26th, a meeting was held at the South Village (now Merrimacport), and, on the following day, at the "West End," to adjust all differences of opinion, and to unite in petitioning the Legislature for an Act of incorporation as a town. On Saturday, February 12th, a town-meeting was called to vote on the question of division, and the result was 419 yeas and 210 nays. A committee of the Massachusetts Legislature visited the town on the second day of March, and gave an opinion favoring the new town. Several meetings were held by the Committee on Towns in the State House, at which decided opposition was expressed against division of the town, by prominent citizens of the eastern section. Notwithstanding this opposition, the Committee on Towns presented a favorable report, and Merrimac was incorporated as a town, by Act of the Legislature, on Monday, April 10, 1876.

The event was made the occasion of much rejoicing by the citizens. It was felt that all the material interests which had prospered the people as a community and parish in the old town would be strengthened and perpetuated under the new organization. The business interests and growth of the village, for many years, had indicated that a new town was being reared for full fellowship, under statute law, with sister towns in the State; and hence it was that less of opposition preceded its Act of incorporation in the Legislature than had been known in the creation of a new town.

The first meeting for the election of town officers was held April 20, 1876. Officers elected:—Selectmen: William H. Haskell, S. S. Blodgett, Alexander Smart. School Committee: C. M. Dinsmore, O. F. Leavy, W. H. Hubbard. Treasurer and Collector and Town Clerk: Bailey Sargent.

The town is three miles wide, and two and a half miles long. As a parish, its history dates to 1726, when the "Second Church" was organized, which has continued its existence as a strong and influential body up to the present time.

Its early settlers were the direct descendants of Willie Sargent, Willie Barnes, and John Hoyt. Willie Sargent's son, Thomas, married the youngest daughter of Willie Barnes, — Rachael. The three first settled in Ipswich in 1633; removed from Ipswich to Newbury, and, with Thomas Parker and others, settled on Parker River. In 1638, removed to Salisbury, and were of the number who rank as the first settlers of Amesbury in 1654–55. The old families of Salisbury, Amesbury, and Merrimac are united by ties of consanguinity. The most remarkable of the family names is that of the Sargents, who compose a large proportion of the families, as well as the wealth and business of the town of Merrimac. Willie Sargent, the founder of the family name in Merrimac, died 1675, aged seventy-five years. Children: Thomas, William, Mary, and Elizabeth.

William P. Sargent — through whose efforts, and the generous gift of a town-house, the new town is mainly indebted for its existence — is the eldest son of the Hon. Patten Sargent, Esq. He was born on the twenty-fourth day of November, 1819, and received his early education in the public schools of the town. He was active in business with his father, and, when twenty-one years of age, entered into partnership with William H. Haskell. In 1848, William Gunnison was added to the firm. Mr. Sargent attended to the business of the firm in Boston. After ten years, the partnership was dissolved, and Mr. Sargent continued the business, until Charles W. Bradstreet was taken into the firm, and later, F. F. French and Horace M. Sargent. In 1875, Mr. Bradstreet withdrew. Mr. Sargent has always been an ambitious, active, and a self-reliant man. He has accumulated a large property, and the citizens of Merrimac praise the spirit which has actuated him in making so magnificent a gift to his native town.

Business Interests of the Town.—So interwoven with the history of Amesbury is that of Merrimac, that all reliable data must appear in the account of the settlement of the former place. It is evident that the early settlers were tillers of the soil, and had their saw-mills and grist-mills on the little stream which now furnishes power, in part, for the felt-shoe factory and wheel factory. Among the early branches of mechanical employment was the making of silver buckles by Jacob Little, Payne Wingate, Mr. Nichols, Mr. Morse, and others, for the shoe and harness makers of Salem, Mass. The abandoning of silver buckles for shoes led Mr. Little to look about for other means of employment, and carriage-making was suggested. This was accordingly entered upon. The village blacksmith, the carpenter, wheelwright, painter, harness-maker, and silver-platers found new employment, and the little village began a career of prosperity, which, amid all adverse influences and opposing obstacles, made it at one time the chief manufacturing town for carriages in the State. The first carriage built to go out of the State was sold to Gov. Joseph Whipple, of Rhode Island. This was previous to the Dorr rebellion. Thirty years ago, carriages were sold here, and shipped to New Orleans, Cincinnati, Ohio, and many other States. West Amesbury built carriages that were known in the markets of the world for their superior make and finish. At the American Institute Fair, the carriages built here received the first premium; and at the Centennial Exhibition they suffered none in comparison with those of other States.

At the present time there are thirteen firms, giving employment to 364 persons, and the yearly value of the carriages made is estimated at $800,000 in prosperous times.

The West Amesbury Manufacturing Company was organized in 1848, with a capital stock of $10,000, afterwards increased to $40,000. It manufactures 4,000 sets of wheels a year, with running parts, and employs thirty-five hands. The business was originally started by Mr. T. T. Merrill, who was the manager of the corporation for twenty-four years. On the death of Mr. Merrill, his son, F. S. Merrill, was given the agency of the company.

The manufacture of felt shoes is a new branch of business, employing twenty-five hands, and turning off three hundred pairs a day.

For more than a half century pottery-ware has been made in this place, by the Chase Brothers, on the banks of the Merrimac. Tanning and shoemaking are also carried on to a limited extent.

The First National Bank of Amesbury was organized Feb. 4, 1864; name changed to First National Bank of Merrimac, Dec. 27, 1876. Directors: William H. Haskell, President; John S. Poyen, William P. Sargent, William Gunnison, A. E. Goodwin, Benjamin F. Sargent, J. A. Lancaster; D. Y. Poore, Cashier. Original capital stock, $50,000; July, 1864, increased to $75,000; November, 1864, increased to $100,000; July, 1872, $150,000; May, 1875, $200,000. Total dividends declared since organization, $170,250. Never passed a dividend. During the last five years its losses are less than two hundred dollars. Of the eighty-eight stockholders, fifty are citizens of Merrimac; and the bank pays fifteen per cent. of the town tax.

The Amesbury Savings Bank was organized April 17, 1871; January, 1878, name changed to Merrimac Savings Bank. Number of depositors, 500; amount of deposits, $135,000. Never lost a dollar on its investments; never passed a dividend. President, John S. Poyen. Vice-Presidents, John P. Sargent, Isaac B. Little, John B. Judkins. Trustees, A. E. Goodwin, M. G. Clement, Alden B. Morse, James D. Pike, B. F. Sargent, F. S. Merrill, William H. Haskell, Thomas C. Sawyer, Albert Sargent, William Gunnison, John Cleary, J. Austin Lancaster. J. D. Poore, Treasurer. James D. Pike, Secretary.

Merrimac, the youngest born of the State, is a fine New England town. Its dwelling-houses are comparatively new, and among them are many beautiful and tasty residences. The streets are wide and quite well ornamented with shade-trees. It is also provided with a beautiful town hall,—a gift from one of its own citizens, William P. Sargent, Esq., of Boston. The corner-stone of the hall was laid

Thursday, July 27, 1876, by Right Worshipful Wyzeman Marshall, acting grand master of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts, assisted by Worshipful F. E. Jones, acting grand marshal, and Bethany Lodge, F. and A. M., of Merrimac.

The hall was finished and dedicated on Monday afternoon, Nov. 13, 1876. Hon. George B. Loring, of Salem, delivered an address, from which we extract the following:—

"The youngest town in this Commonwealth has as yet no history, but it has an inheritance of municipal significance and honor of which it has reason to be proud, as it turns back and remembers its parentage; and it has an opportunity opening before it which this event in which we are now engaged fills with hope and high promise. Not destined to pass through all the trials which beset our fathers, when they planted the church, the school-house, and the town organization in the American wilderness, Merrimac has stepped into line with full maturity, and in the enjoyment of rights and privileges and institutions established and matured, and in accordance with the spirit of the times, and in obedience to the genius of the American people of this age, and as a just tribute to the fathers who gave us our blessed institutions of learning, religion, and civil rights, this attractive and commodious building has been erected here in accordance with the wishes, and indorsed by the liberality, of one of your most exemplary, energetic, and respected sons, whose generosity will never be forgotten, whose memory will be cherished here for many generations, and whose example will, I doubt not, be followed by the enterprising and faithful who come after us. . . . Around this structure, upon whose architectural symmetry and proportion I congratulate you, and which, I trust, will long stand as a monument of the wisdom and generous purpose of your benefactor; may there gather, year after year, the faithful representatives of those who gave this town its high character in the beginning, engaged still in the noble work of self-government. And may He who blessed the fathers in their work, bless you also in yours, for the strength of society and the purity and elevation of the State."

Prof. Wyzeman Marshall, of Boston, prefaced the reading of an original poem, written by Harriet Prescott, by appropriate remarks.

Remarks were made by Dr. J. R. Nichols, a native of the town, who spoke approvingly of the new town, and of the good-begun and well-finished work.

Addresses were made by Mr. Brastow, of the governor's council, J. W. Silloway, the architect of the building, the Rev. Mr. Paine, of Somerville, a former pastor of the town; Patten Sargent, Esq., then 88 years of age, father of the donor, and Wingate P. Sargent, Esq., of Boston.

The edifice is built of brick; in plan, a parallelogram, eighty feet long and forty-eight feet wide, exclusive of tower and wing projection. The architecture is modern Gothic. The principal dressings are of brown Nova Scotia sandstone, the remaining parts being of cast-iron and Flemish ornamented brick-work, relieved by Minturn pottery colored tiles. At the rear right-hand corner is a fine public library-room. At the corresponding corner, immediately back of the main tower, is the selectmen's room, and, connected with it, is a commodious brick vault or depository for town records. The main entrance to "Sargent Hall," which is on the floor above, is through a large tower. The tower is adorned by a well-finished roof-clock, donated to the town by the Hon. Patten Sargent. The hall is handsomely finished, and will seat six hundred persons. The building accommodates the National Bank, post-office, and a periodical store. Its whole cost was $20,000.

A movement for the establishment of a public library was made at a meeting of the citizens, held Aug. 21, 1876, when they voted unanimously to accept the offer made by Dr. James R. Nichols, of Boston, to donate one thousand volumes for the formation of a public library. Patten Sargent, J. Austin Lancaster, John S. Poyen, William Chase, James R. Nichols, M. D., and the Rev. William H. Hubbard, were chosen trustees; the first two named for one year, the next two for one year, the next two for two years, the last named for three years.

On Wednesday evening, May 10, 1877, the public library was formally opened, and dedicated to the use of the citizens of the town. It was made an occasion of much interest, and Sargent Hall was filled for the second time with people intent on giving character as well as a name to Merrimac by the institution of a free library.

The Rev. William H. Hubbard acted as president, and opened the meeting by an exceedingly appropriate address. Dr. J. R. Nichols, the donor of the library, spoke at some length upon the proper books to read. Mayor Jenness, of Haverhill, and the Rev. Dr. Seeley, also addressed the meeting.

The library contains two thousand volumes. It is opened Saturday and Wednesday afternoon and evening each week. The library-room is very handsomely fitted up and furnished with every convenience for the accommodation of the people. The registered number of books taken out shows a high appreciation of the library and a desire to profit therefrom.

The town is divided into two villages. The south part, called Merrimacport, is located on the bank of the Merrimac River.

The valuation of the town, in 1878, was as follows: Real estate, $683,440; personal estate, $433,365; total valuation, $1,116,805. Number of polls, 616; dwelling-houses, 422. Number of property holders, 373; non-resident property-holders, 78. The common schools (seven in number) receive a liberal support, and a watchful care on the part of the citizens; and compare favorably with those of any town in the State.

The churches are five in number,—Congregational, Baptist, and Universalist in Merrimac; and Baptist and Methodist at Merrimacport. A post-office is established at each village. The railroad communication is via a branch connection with the Boston and Maine at Newton Junction, N. H.

METHUEN.

In following backward the line of history, for information concerning a community and a people, it is of the highest importance to obtain and preserve correct views of the topography of localities, the relations of which have very much to do with the general history and distinguishing characteristics of a people. In tracing the history of the early settlement of this section, even for a brief sketch, as what is now made must of necessity be, the aboriginal inhabitants and their surroundings first enter the vision of thought.

To begin by contemplating this town as once embracing the territory of the city of Lawrence, which now presents to view a municipality with a population of more than thirty thousand, with its palatial residences, its metropolitan streets, its giant manufactories, with millions of spindles and thousands of operatives, engaged in producing fabrics which command the markets of the world, is to begin at the modern end of the line; and the ancient view, which it is desirable to picture and preserve, is likely to be buried forever from sight by the magnificence of the present, now appearing as the triumph of art and civilization over the rudeness of nature.

The "elementary" Methuen, as it existed when the red man was master of the soil, contesting general possession with the beasts of the forest, and local occupancy with warring tribes, is what should be first considered. Long before it was known to the white man, its soil was crimsoned by the blood of that "fighting animal" we call man, by means of which the territory had well-nigh become depopulated, and when taken possession of by civilization, only scattering representatives of once powerful tribes of men were to be met with.

This town was embraced in the original grant of the town of Haverhill to John Ward and his associates, by the colonial authority, and conveyed to them by the ancient deed from Passaquo and Saggahew, a copy of which is contained in the history of that town. At that time it extended to the Merrimac, and far back into the interior, the locality being known as "moose country." Unlike much land of the valley, the acres bordering upon the river composed a barren plain, while the back land was the strong soil adapted to agriculture, and was covered with a dense forest. The spot now occupied by the great artificial cataract, was known at different points as "Bodwell's Falls" and "Deer Jump," which at certain seasons of the year was, doubtless, easily crossed from rock to rock by the swift-footed and agile animals who visited its brink. It was also a noted place of resort, in the fishing season, to capture the finny tribes which gathered there to "take a rest," before ascending the rapids. A little way inland, the wild and dashing Spicket came rushing and foaming over the stony barriers, to its flow, and all united to make the locality singularly wild and picturesque in its landscape features.

It was in February, 1698, that Jonathan Haynes and Samuel Ladd, of West Haverhill, were killed, and their two sons captured by the Indians, on their return from "London Meadow." In the absence of authentic records of settlements at that date upon what is now Methuen, it is generally thought that West Haverhill was at that time the extent of possession by habitation. About 1700, or soon after, however, the tide of settlement began to flow into this section, and in 1712 nine Haverhill citizens, living in that quarter, petitioned the town to abate their rates for the support of the ministry and schools, which was met by a compromise, abating one-half their taxes. It is probable this petition represented all the inhabitants there at that time. In 1722 another petition was presented, asking that this portion of the town should be set off as a separate town or parish, but it was not granted. Tax-payers were essential and desirable at that time, and the town did not care to lose them. On the other hand, taxation without enjoying the benefit thereof was offensive. These people were precluded, by distance, from the privileges of public worship and the advantages of the schools; hence their solicitude to be relieved from the burden of supporting either.

It is evident that the inhabitants were actuated by the general desire, existing at that time, to sustain the institutions of religion, for in 1723 Joshua Swan and twenty-six others petitioned the town of Haverhill to "set off fifty or sixty acres of land south-west of Bare meadow, together with a piece of land lying on a hill commonly called Meeting-house Hill, in times past reserved by our forefathers for the use of the ministry, might in hard times make a convenient parsonage, if by the blessing of God the Gospel might so flourish amongst us, and we grow so prosperous as to get able to maintain and carry on the Gospel ministry amongst us." This petition was considered and granted at the succeeding town-meeting, the effect of which was to encourage the people of that section in the hope of being finally established in a separate town.

In the spring of 1724, Lieut. Stephen Barker, with others, residing in the western portion of the town of Haverhill, petitioned the General Court for a new town, by setting off that portion of Haverhill above Hawke's Meadow Brook, which embraced the land down to Deer Jump and Bodwell's Falls, together with all the territory through which coursed the dashing Spicket River. This was not agreeable to the people of Haverhill, and they appointed Capt. John White as agent to oppose the petition.

In November, of the following year, the inhabitants of this section petitioned the town of Haverhill for a school in their neighborhood, which was granted, and a Mr. Heath employed as the school-master. They were also "allowed ten pounds to pay a minister to preach there, if they got one that year." These acts were designed to be of a conciliatory and paternal nature, with a view to leading them to abandon their attempts to secure a separate town organization. It was too late for results in that direction; self-reliance, ambition, and interest centred around the movement, and Lieut. Barker, with his associates, pressed the application for a town charter with renewed vigor, and on the 8th of December, 1725, the General Court gave the petitioners an Act of incorporation under the name of Methuen, which name is supposed to have been written into the petition by Gov. Dummer, complimentary to Lord Paul Methuen, privy councillor to the King, and for years prominent in the English Government.

The corporate Act creating the new town was as follows:—

"An Act for Dividing the Town of Haverhill and erecting a new Town there, and in parts adjacent, by the name of Methuen.

"Whereas, the west part of the Town of Haverhill, within the county of Essex, and parts adjacent not included within any township, is Competently filled with Inhabitants who labor under great Difficulties by their remoteness from the Public Worship, &c., and they having made their application to this Court that they may be set off a distinct and separate Town and be vested with all the Powers and Privileges of a Town, Be it therefore enacted by the Lieutenant Governor, Council and Representatives in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same. That the West part of said Town of Haverhill, with land adjoining be, and hereby are set off and constituted a Separate Township by the name of Methuen, the bounds of the said Township to be as follows, viz: Beginning at the month of Hawke's Meadow Brook, so called, in Merrimack River, and from thence to run half a point to the northward of the northwest to an heap of stones, or till it intersects Haverhill line; from thence upon a straight course to the head of Dunstable line, and so upon Dracut line about four miles to a pine southeast; from thence six miles or thereabouts upon Dracut line, South to Merrimack River, and from thence to run down said river ten miles and forty poles till it come to the first mentioned bounds. And that the inhabitants of the said lands as before described and bounded, be and hereby are invested with the Powers Privileges and Immunities that the inhabitants of any of the towns of this Province by law are or ought to be vested with.

Provided, That the Inhabitants of the said Town of Methuen, do within the space of Three Years from the publication of this Act, erect and finish a suitable house for the Public Worship of God, and procure and settle a Learned, Orthodox Minister of good conversation, and make provision for his comfortable and honorable support, and that they set apart a lot of Two Hundred acres of land in some convenient Place in said Town for the use of the ministry, and a lot of fifty acres for the use of a school. And that thereupon they be discharged from any further payments for the maintenance of the ministry in Haverhill. And be it farther enacted by the authority aforesaid That the Inhabitants of the said Town of Methuen be and are hereby empowered to assess all the lands of Non Residents lying within the said town, Two pence per acre toward building the Meeting House, and settling of a Minister there. Provided, nevertheless that there be and hereby is made a Reservation or Saving of the Right and property of the Province Lands (if any there be) within the bounds aforesaid, to this Province."

Following this action, the Court ordered "that Stephen Barker, a principal inhabitant of the Town of Methuen be, and hereby is empowered and directed to notifie and summons the inhabitants of the said town duly qualified for voters, to assemble and meet sometime in the month of March next, to choose town officers according to law to stand for the year."

"Att our first annual meeting in the town of methuen march ye 9th 1725, 6 Leutanent Stephen Barker was leaguly chosen moderator for ye meeting.

"At the same meeting william whittier was chosen town clark & sworn for ye yer insewing.

"Att the same meeting selectmen war leagully chosen for ye year.

1 John Bailey
2 Ebenezer Barker
3 Asie Swan
4 Daniel Bodwel
5 Thomas Whittier

} Selectmen sworn to the faithful discharg of the ofies of assessers august ye second 1726 before me William Whittier town clark.

"Att ye same meeting Richard swan is leagully chosen cunstable for the year insewing.

"voted that the cunstable or eoleetor shall be paid one shilling for each twenty shillings of money that he shall colect or gather of the Taxes which shall be laied upon the nonrazedance or peopel which belong to other towns, March ye 9th 1725, 6 the town voated that Thomas silver should be expected to serve cunstable or colector instead of Richard swan for ye year insewing and ye same day thomas silver was sworn to the faithfull discharge of the office of cunstable by the selectmen of methuen. Robert swan is leaguly chosen town treasurer att the same meeting march ye 9 for ye year insewing.

town treasurer sworn.
sureirs of high ways { 1 Robert Swan, 2 Ephraim Clark, 3 Benjamin Stephens, 4 Thomas Masser. } of highwaye surveirs all sworn."

The town of Methuen, when incorporated, included a large part of Salem, N. H., and most likely, a portion of Windham, extending, also, to the Dunstable line. It also embraced a tract of land about a mile and a half wide between the Haverhill line and "Drawcut," which was orginally granted by the General Court to individuals. In the historical sketch of Methuen prepared by Joseph S. Howe, of Methuen, in 1876, it is stated that "An old plan in the county records indicates that Major Denison, who had a grant for 600 acres from the General Court, in 1660, owned more than a thousand acres on the river, above the Haverhill line, including what is now the Bartlett farm and lands south and west. West of that was Col. Higginson's farm of over three hundred acres. A little north of these was Marshall Michelson's tract of three hundred acres. Peter Green had three hundred acres lying on each side of the brook which runs from 'White's pond,' then called North pond."

The bonndaries of this town remained as indicated by the Act of incorporation till the disputed boundary between Massachusetts and New Hampshire was settled. That question was decided by the King's Council in 1740, and promulgated in 1741, by which it was decreed that the northern boundary of the Province of Massachnsetts Bay "is and be a similar curved line pursueing the curve of Merrimack River at three miles distance, on the north side thereof, and beginning at the Atlantic Ocean."

The changes which have rceently taken place in the manufacturing interests, and the surprising increase in population, far overcap everything which the most sanguine had anticipated, and the continued development of manufacturing facilities, attended by a constant increase of population, mark this town as one of the most enterprising and thrifty in the Commonwealth. It is a remarkable fact, however, that the farming portion of the town has had very little increase in population, if any, since 1820, when the whole population was 1,371, and in 1875 the entire population was 4,205, of which 3,000 were inhabitants of Methuen village.

Unfortunately, at the outset, a bitter quarrel sprang up concerning the location of the meeting-house. On the 28th of May, 1726, a meeting was called to "prefix" a place whereon to build a meeting-house. The dispute waxed hot, meeting after meeting was held, votes to provide labor were carried and reconsidered, but the majority finally prevailed, and the new meeting-house was raised and boarded on "Powder-House Hill." The minority were determined not to be beaten, and petitioned the General Court to reverse the popular decision. The committee appointed by the Court to visit the place, concluded that the parsonage lot "was the properest place for the meeting-house to stand," so the minority were victorious, and in May, 1727, the town voted to remove the frame to the "place where the Court ordered it should stand."

The town records show that the Sunday services, as well as the town-meetings, were held at the house of Asie Swan until the meeting-house was ready for occupancy. Asie Swan seems to have been a man "prominent in those days," and his house is said to have been situated a little east of Prospect Hill. The meeting-house was "forty feet long, thirty feet wide, and twenty feet stud." There was but one pew, and that for the minister's family, the congregation being generally seated on benches. There were no means of heating the house in cold weather, until within the recollection of persons now living, and in the cold winter mornings the humble worshippers must have needed a fiery discourse to make them comfortable. It is said that there was a tavern in those days on the "Frye place," to which the meeting-goers usually resorted at noon, where they found a kettle of hot water ready, and plenty of *spiritual* comfort, less etherial than that which they received within the sacred edifice.

After settling the question of the locality of the meeting-house, and erecting the same, the next business was to settle a minister, and this was the work of the town-meeting. In 1729, a committee was chosen to "Discourse with Rev. Christopher Sargent in order to his settlement with us in the work of the ministry." There was much discussion of terms between the prospective pastor and people, which resulted in a final vote "to settle him at a salary of £80 a year, for four years, and then £100 a year so long as he should continue to be their minister."

The Rev. Sylvester Pierce was afterwards the Orthodox minister of the society, who was sueeeeded by the Rev. John C. Phillips, brother of Wendell Phillips, and a very popular, liberal, and broad-minded man, of the Congregational order, who was the pastor for nearly twenty years. The Rev. T. G. Grassie was also a pastor of the soeiety. The last pastor was the Rev. Lyman H. Blake. There is now no pastor settled over the soeiety.

In 1774, an unsuccessful attempt was made for a division of the town, the inhabitants of the westerly portion petitioning to be set off and united with the easterly portion of Draeut, the dominant idea being "so that both the above said towns may be better aceommodated to attend upon public worship."

The ancient usage of supporting the chureh and the minister by a town tax was destined to have an end, and in 1778, appears the last town record of such an appropriation. "The 'athadoxt' meeting-house was first built on Meeting-House Hill, near to which was laid out the first burying-ground, as was the custom in those days, and was the only place of public worship for nearly fifty years. In 1796, the old house was torn down and a new one built on the same spot. The erection of this house excited much interest throughout the town, and it is a peculiar fact, illustrative of the habits of the time, that it was voted, 'That the spectators be given a drink of grog apiece at the raising.'"

With the growth of the village around Spicket Falls, Meeting-House Hill ceased to be a common centre, and, to better accommodate the majority, the meeting-house was removed in 1832 to the site now occupied by the stone church. It served for the purposes of worship until 1855, when it was torn down and the present stone structure erected in its place.

In 1766, a new church organization appeared, with the Rev. Eliphaz Chapman as its pastor. Soon after, the "Second Parish" was incorporated by the Legislature, and every taxable person in town assessed for the support of the minister, paying the tax to the parish instead of the town. This meeting-house was first located near the residence of Leonard Wheeler, but was afterwards placed near the house of Stephen W. Williams, whenee it was removed to Lawrence, and subsequently burnt. This parish had an existence of nearly half a century, when it beeame absorbed in the First Parish. In 1830, it was again organized, but was afterwards united with the First Parish again, and at present there is but one Congregational church in the town.

The next oldest church is the Baptist, the germ of which made its appearance when the "Separatist" movement came to the surface.

Following the advanee of more liberal religious opinions came the organization of a Universalist church and society, in 1824, which has had considerable prosperity. The congregation first worshipped in "Wilson's Building," after which a meeting-house was built, which within a few years has been remodelled and improved in appearanee and accommodations for religious worship. Among the ministers of ability who have been connected with this society, the Rev A. A. Miner, D.D, is prominent, having sinee been the pastor of the School Street Society in Boston, and till recently the president of Tufts College.

The Methodists organized a society here about the year 1834, experiencing varied success till 1871, when they built a meeting-house at the junction of Lowell and Pelham streets, from which time they have been crowned with increasing prosperity. A Catholic congre-

gation has worshipped in the town hall for a year, but no church has yet been projected.

An Episcopal church was formed in Methuen as early as 1833, which did not long exist as an active organization. Within the past year a new organization has been effected, and a new church erected near the boundary line between this town and the city of Lawrence. It is believed the locality will unite persons interested in this form of worship residing in the two communities, thereby attaining success in establishing a permanent ministry. The organization is what is termed "High Church."

Immediately connected with the provisions for establishing and maintaining public worship in the early settlement of the town, was a proper regard for the cause of education.

In the beginning, schools were few and of short duration, and the teaching limited chiefly to reading and writing, with attention to arithmetic if the pupils desired. Grammar was little taught, and in many communities it was regarded as a useless study. To be able to read, thereby being able to become possessed of the thoughts and opinions of others, and, in turn, to communicate thoughts and opinions to others by writing, were regarded as the most desirable, practical attainments of the majority, and with the limited facilities for instruction, confinement to this limited "course" of study most certainly had its practical advantages. It may be reasonably supposed there was very little "cramming," or over-study, in the days of the fathers.

In 1731 the town voted to keep school one month in Ebenezer Barker's house, one month in Thomas Eaton's house, and one month in Joshua Swan's. In 1733, Ebenezer Barker, Zebediah Barker, and Thomas Eaton were each paid £2 10*s*. for keeping school. From keeping school exclusively in private houses, an advance-step was made in 1735, the town voting to build a school-house, eighteen by twenty feet, near the meeting-house, school to be kept two months at the school-house, and one month at Spicket Hill. The school sessions were divided between the school-house and private houses, until 1792, principally; it is presumed, for the better accommodation of the scholars, who would thereby be saved long distances of travel. Male teachers were the only ones employed till 1749, when the town voted "to choose school-mistresses to instruct children in their reading. Also voted to choose a committee to agree with school-mistresses, and appoint convenient places for them to meet in."

The division of the town into school districts came in 1775, each of which was to have its proportion of the school money, provided it built a comfortable school-house. Up to that time, the selectmen usually had the sole care of the schools. The building of the school-houses was at once let out at auction to the lowest bidder, the houses costing about £29 each. The vouchers of these transactions are now in the hands of Mr. David Nevins. To secure the occupancy of the school-houses, the town appropriated that year the sum of £30 for schools, and continued to appropriate that amount each year until 1792. Sixty pounds a year after this became the appropriation. After 1795 "dollars" appeared in the town records for the first time. The equivalent to a pound at that time was $3.33. The appropriation in 1797 was $300, followed by an increase at times, till in 1823 the sum appropriated for schools was $600.

The augmenting of appropriations did not stop here, but continued to increase, more than keeping pace with the increase of population, till in 1876 the amount appropriated for schools was $800.

A public library containing about 1,300 volumes has been established within a few years. It has an annual income from the dog-licenses of the town. Postal communication in the early time must have been one of the difficult things to accomplish. The post-office was first established here in 1843, and Moses How appointed postmaster. This was 173 years after Haverhill, which included Methuen, was settled. Letters were then carried by post-riders, and the manner of their delivery is not now generally understood.

The burying-ground was among the first things provided by the settlers, and its proper care, enlargement, and improvement has ever been in view. There are three burying-grounds laid out by the town. In 1853, Walnut Grove Cemetery was laid out by an association of individuals, and has been much improved.

The cultivation of the soil was the almost exclusive occupation of the inhabitants of this town for many years. The product of their farms, and the fish taken from the rivers, supplied nearly every want. The waters were alive with fish of various kinds, salmon so abounding that it became necessary to stipulate in the contracts of apprentices that their masters should serve them with salmon for food only a specified number of times per week. Eels, alewives, shad, and other varieties of fish were caught in immense quantities, and those not used for food served for enriching the soil, which was a use to which they were put by the Indians in raising corn, and was adopted by the white men who followed them. Their surplus products they early found a market for in Salem, and such as were portable in that way, were taken there on horseback. The soil was well adapted to the growth of flax, and what was not made into cloth through the instrumentality of the spinning-wheel and the loom, the necessary fixtures of every farm-house, was marketed in Londonderry, which was settled by the Scotch-Irish linen manufacturers and linen drapers, who carried their packs of linen goods all over the country, supplying all classes with the desirable fabrics they manufactured. The ready money required to pay taxes, and make their limited purchases of luxuries, was also obtained from the sale of wood and timber, which was rafted to Newburyport.

For long years these were the chief markets for the farmers of this town, but in the lapse of time the city of Lowell was built, which opened a fine market for everything except wood, and that became their principal market, for all products, till the building of Lawrence, which created an extensive market at their doors for every variety of surplus products. These excellent advantages of market, long existing, have made the cultivation of the soil a success here; but it is a curious fact that the population of Methuen, outside of the village, is little larger at this time than it was at the beginning of the Revolutionary War.

The convenience of the inhabitants called for the early opening of highways, or paths, when this town was a part of Haverhill. This section was at that time threaded by a large number of town-ways which were probably opened for convenience in reaching the meadows and woodland in this section. These ways were usually two rods wide, generally beginning at a marked tree, and following on, their course being designated by stumps or trees duly "spotted." The marks of these old paths through the forests has now become chiefly obliterated.

The first road recorded as laid out by the town of Methuen was from a point "on Hawkes Meadow brook to James Howe's well," and was probably a part of what is now known as Howe Street, north of the Taylor farm. At that date no money was expended for grading roads, and they were usually only ordinary cart-paths. The only vehicles passing over them were ox-carts and sleds, for many years; the introduction of wagons and chaises having taken place about the beginning of the present century. The popular mode of travelling was on horseback; the men in saddles, and the women on pillions behind them. They also went to market on horseback, taking their goods in sacks and saddlebags. This mode of travelling really required only bridle-paths, and in many cases such were the only openings for travel.

The people of the early time were quite averse to indulgence in luxuries, and were very careful about voting for public improvements which would necessitate an increase of taxation. Money was then too scarce and too hard to be obtained to part with without considerable reflection.

The conservative and the penurious opposed all public improvements and all corporate enterprises. The record is, that "In 1793, a company was organized to build a bridge over the Merrimack, at Bodwell's falls. Soon after a meeting was held to see if the town would send a remonstrance to the General Court against its erection. This proposition was decided in the negative. The opponents of the bridge then called a meeting to see if the town would petition the General Court to order the proprietors to pay the cost of the town roads leading to the bridge. This, also, was voted down, and the town decided to repair the road over Currant's hill to New Hampshire line." The evident hostility to this new enterprise was stimulated by the desire to escape taxation for the incidental improvement of highways, which an increase of travel would naturally call for. This early hostility to public improvements was akin to that which has been encountered by communities, in general, in later times, in blocking the wheels of public improvements which have called for the levying of taxes on property. The majority in the past, however, sustained public improvements, as has been the case in the present, and the march has been steadily onward.

The ferries existing at that time were "Gage's Ferry," near the house of Samuel Cross; "Swan's Ferry," at Wingate's farm; "Marston's Ferry," at the Almshouse, Lawrence; "Bodwell's Ferry," at what is now known as the Pumping Station; and "Harris's Ferry," a little east of Dracut line.

The bridge company, after being chartered, moved with alacrity,

and the bridge was soon opened to public travel, which at once concentrated at that point, passing from thence to New Hampshire, over Currant's Hill. This success led to another incorporated company, which built the "Turnpike" in 1805–06, upon which a system of tolls was established. This was not popular, and a few years after it was made a public road. Not many years after, all the turnpikes in New England were made free roads, but it was not till within a very few years that free bridges became general.

In Chase's History of Haverhill, it is recorded: "In one of the early land grants in this section we find mention of a 'wigwam' in the town. It is also mentioned in 1660 and 1685. These are the only mentions or hints of the Indians, or of anything belonging to or done by them, that we can find in the early records of the town, save an 'Indian wire' in Fishing River (1664), and the 'Indian Bridge' over 'Spicket River,' in connection with which is an allusion in the records of the General Court, of 1662, to 'Old Wills planting ground' which must have been near the mouth of Spicket River, and on the east side of it. Old Will was probably one of the Wamesit Indians, whose principal settlement was then near the Concord River. The wigwam in question, was an old and dilapidated affair, as in one of the places it is spoken of as the 'old wigwam that is or was,' in or near a certain swamp. It was located in the west part of the town 'at the lower end of the far west meadow.'"

There is no evidence indicating that any particular Indian tribe had its home in Methuen, though it is certain that Bodwell's Falls, where the Lawrence dam now stands, and the shores of the Spicket as far as "Spicket Falls," were their favorite resorts, especially during the fishing season.

It is stated, that, at the beginning of the present century, there were only six houses in the now thickly settled part of Methuen Village. These were the "Miller Cross House," corner of Hampshire and Lowell streets, "Sargent House," where the present hotel stands, "Deacon Frye's," the Butter's place, "Swan Place," now David Nevins's farm, "Jonathan Cluff House," now mill-yard, "John Sargent House," near elm-tree at the mill-yard.

At the date to which this points, there was one grist-mill a little south of Fulton's store, another on the opposite side of the river, and a fulling mill just below the foot-bridge at the falls. The first store in town was opened by Abiel Howe, in a building on Howe Street, nearly opposite the house of Charles L. Tozier, the date of which is not now known, but it is within the remembrance of persons now living.

How early the first machinery was moved by the power of the "Spicket" is not certainly known, but it must have been at an early date, and used for very common purposes. Mr. David Nevins has in his possession a deed from the widow of John Morrill, dated December, 1709, in which she conveyed to Robert Swan, for the sum of thirty pounds, one-fourth of a saw-mill, and land "on Spicket river falls, the mill that was built by, and belonged to and amongst Robert Swan, John Morrill and Elisha Davis," which was probably the first mill built.

Some time afterwards a grist-mill was built, respectively, on each side of the river, but, in the absence of business enough to keep them both running all the time, it was mutually agreed that they should be run on alternate weeks, a spirit of accommodation and concession not sure to rule in these days of sharp competition. It is stated that this arrangement continued until the cotton-factory was built, from which it may be inferred that the new enterprise possessed one of these mill-sites. The record by Mr. Howe is, that "the first cotton factory was built about the year 1812 by Stephen Minot, Esq., of Haverhill, on the north side of the river. This was burnt in 1818, and soon after rebuilt. In 1821, the whole privilege and land connected therewith were purchased by the Methuen Company. The old carding or fulling mill which had stood on the south side of the falls, was moved away and converted into a dwelling-house, which now stands on the north side of Pelham Street. In 1826–27 the brick mill was built as it now stands. In 1864 the property came into the possession of David Nevins, Esq., by whom it was greatly increased in capacity and value, and to whose enterprise the town is largely indebted for its recent prosperity.

"In 1824, a saw-mill and grist-mill were built where the Methuen woollen mill stands. They came into the possession of Samuel A. Harvy, Esq., by whom the business of the respective mills was carried on for some years. In 1864, a factory was built by the Methuen Woollen Co., and soon after put in operation."

At a very early date the manufacture of hats was introduced into Methuen, but it was in a small way, and the history of the enterprise is chiefly traditional. The work was then performed entirely by hand, and half a dozen men constituted the entire force of an establishment. These little factories were chiefly located in the eastern part of the town, and the sites of these primitive "hat factories" are still pointed out.

Abial Messer settled here about 1700, and is believed to be the first person of that name who came to this country. He had seven sons. Within the radius of half a mile, nine houses were built by the Messers, of which only the cellars now remain, some of which are covered by woods and orchards.

The first hat shop was built by Jonathan Cluff. The pioneer hatters were Moses How (now a minister in New Bedford, and the oldest living hatter in the United States), Bowen & Gleason, Mr. Hall, Barker & How, Daniel Frye, who ran the "one-horse shop," heating his irons in his house by a wood fire. The other early hatters were Bowen & Emerson, the Messers, Holley, Matthew Messer, in Pleasant Valley, J. H. Lang, Sargent & Hibbard, Joseph Jackman, Jonathan Currier, the Messrs. Pingree, John Merrill, the Messrs. Bixby, Asa Currier, Samuel Eaton, Ingalls & Davidson, Daniel Runnels, E. Mitchell, Messer & Sons, K. C. Gleason. These names have been traditionally obtained from Matthew Messer, now about eighty years old.

From these small beginnings grew the business which the introduction of machinery has made so extensive.

Contemporary with this industry was that of shoemaking, though not on so extensive a scale. The shoemaker's shop was early an institution in every neighborhood, and at length found its location on nearly every homestead in town, and in busy times the "music in the air" came from the meeting of the lapstone and the hammer, softened by the presence of the leather which received the mechanical strokes. With the introduction of machinery, and the factory system in the manufacture of shoes, as of hats, the little shops which were scattered all over the town have disappeared, and the immense increase of production is brought about by the application of machinery, united with a concentration of labor.

The statistics show that there was but slight increase of population from 1776 to 1820, from which time, by the increase of manufacturing, the gain was nearly seventy per cent. in the following twenty years.

Methuen was not a single step behind the other colonial towns to resist the oppressions of the mother country, in the opening days of the Revolution. As early as August, 1774, the record of the town commences with the vote "to pay one pound, sixteen shillings and sevenpence, lawful money, to defray the charges of the Provincial Congress." Following this, in the same year, it repudiated the payment of "province rates," but voted instead, "That the Selectmen conduct themselves respecting the Constables warrants according to the Provincial Congress Instructions."

The next record found upon the books of the town is the following: —

"At a leggal meeting of the freeholders and other inhabitants of the Town of Methuen, held By adjournment from the nineth of August 1774 to the 20th of September 1774.

"Taking into Serious Consideration the State of public Affairs, Voted that a Committee be chosen to consult and Advise with Each other Likewise with Committees of other Towns and if need be communicate to any other Town any mesuers that may appear to be condueive to the publick Benefite more Especlay to be Watch-full that no Encroachments are not made on our Constitutinal Rights and Liberties, that we may enjoy the Blessings we have Left in peace and not be Deprived of them from aney quarter but may Devise prosecute the most vigerous and reselente mesures as far as Lyes in our sphere retrieve our invaluable privelages. Voted that this committee consist of fifteen persons. Stephen Barker, Esq., John Bodwell, Nathaniel Pettengill, Samuel Bodwell, Cutting Marsh, David Whittier, Jonathan Swan, James Jones, John Muse, James Malloon, John Pettengill, Lieut. John Sargent, Richard Whittier, Ebenezer Carlton, John Masten.

"Voted that the above shall be entered in the Town Clerk's office."

Following this manifesto was the organization of a company under this agreement: —

"Wharcas milartrary Exercise hath been much nelicked We the Subscribers being the first comptrey in methuen Do Covenant and Engage To from our sevels in to a Bodey in order to Larn the man-

ual Exercise To be Subegat To Such officers as the Comptrey shall chuse by Voat in all constutenel marsher accoording to our Chattaers.

"methuen ye 6th of Octr 1774."

This company consisted of forty-five men, who organised as follows: —

"the ferst Compyney in Methuen meat att Mr. Eben Carlton's in order to Chuse officers, and they chose Lieut. Benj^{m} Hall Moderator. they chose Mr. James Jones for thar Capt. Mr. Ichobied Perkins furst Leut. Mr. James Wilson Sonent Leut. Mr. Saml. Messer Ens. Mr. Nathll. Messer Jr. Clark for said Company.

"William Page Clark for sd. metten.

"methuen ye 6 of Octor 1774."

In January, 1775, the town followed the usage of all the colonial towns in raising money by subscription for the poor of Boston, and ordered that the minute-men should be "drawn out or exposed to train," voting eightpence per day till the last of March.

At the annual meeting of the town in March, they voted to provide bayonets "which should be brought to Capt. John Davis and after the service was over said Davis is to return said bayonets unto the Selectmen of the town." Soon after, the town voted "guns for all minutemen unable to furnish themselves, and to also provide blankets and cartridges."

Not long after, the following explicit and pointedly-drawn document was adopted by the town and spread upon the records: —

"We the subscribers, being appointed a committee by the Town of Methuen to give some instructions to a certain Committee of Safety and Correspondence that was chosen by this town in September last, or may hereafter be chosen, as above, that it is recommended that the above committee do strictly observe and conform to the instructions hereafter mentioned.

"*First.* That you will be vigilant in this time of public distress, that (no) infractions, violations be made on the good and wholesome laws of this province whereby the morals of the people are endangered of being corrupted, and in case you shall be unsuccessful in your endeavors in all proper ways, then to publish their names that the public may see and know them to be enemies to their country and the privileges of the same.

"*Secondly.* That you correspond with committees of other towns if you see it needful, as may be necessary on all important occasions.

"*Thirdly.* As a Committee of Inspection, we recommend to you that you will not buy or purchase any British manufactures or superfluities in your families, but such as are of absolute necessity, and likewise that you recommend to others to do the same, for we think that a reformation of this will greatly tend to lessen our private expense and the better enable us to bear the publick charges and prevent those mischeifs that may ensue therenpon.

Fourthly. That you will suppress as much as possible those persons, if any such there be, who travel as pedlers to introduce British goods and impose on the inconsiderate which may impoverish us. And whereas it is said that our enemies are sending out spies in order to get information of our schemes and plans which are contrived for our defence, so as they may frustrate them, it is recommended that you take care that they receive that resentment due to their deeds.

"*Fifthly.* If any trader or other person within this town shall take the advantage of the present distressed circumstances in America, and by an avaricious thirst after gain shall raise the price of any commodity whatsoever beyond their usual, reasonable price, or shall use their influence by words or actions to weaken the measures advised by the Grand Continental Congress, when made to appear to you that he or they persist in the same you are to publish their names that they may be quickly known and treated as enemies of their country."

"James Ingalls,
Jonathan Swan,
John Huse, } Committee.

"Methuen April 4, 1775."

This paper, expressive of the firmness and earnest purpose of the people of this town, was adopted only fifteen days prior to the battle of Lexington, for which they were preparing, and in which they took an honorable and patriotic part. The town records make no mention of that memorable event, and do not contain the list of the "minute men" who were engaged in it, but the archives at the State House contain the "roll of honor" on that occasion as also at the battle of Bunker Hill."

"Following this is the muster roll of the number or party of men who belonged to Methuen, in the county of Essex, on the alarm of the 19th of April 1775, and never joined to any particular commanding officer."

"Capt. James Mallon, Abner Morrill, Isaac Austin, Isaac Austin, Jr., Benj. Herrick, Peter Harris, Joseph Griffin, Francis Richardson, Elisha Parker, John Parker, Jr., Isaac Hughes, Timothy Chellis, —— Bodwell, 3d, —— Austin, Jr., —— Parker, Jr., Obadiah Morse, W^{m} Russ, Jr., W^{m} McClary, Hezekiah Parker, Jesse Barker, Moses Morse, James Dennis — 22.

"The pay roll of the company under command of Major Samuel Bodwell, exhibited in consequence of the alarm on the 19th of April.

"1st Lieut., David Whittier, 2d Lieut., Nath. Pettengill, Ensign, Enoch Merrill, Clerk, John Hughs, Sergt. John Mansur, W^{m} Gutterson, Nath^{l} Pettengill, Thomas Pettengill, Dudley Pettengill, Daniel Tyler, John Pettengill, Jr., Samuel Cross, John Bodwell, Parker Richardson, Tho^{s} Dow, W^{m} Bodwell, W^{m} Morse, John Barker, Simeon Dow, Samuel Cole, Samuel Hughes, John Pettengill, John Webber, Benj Marston, Elijah Sargent, Joshua Stevens, John Whittier, Jr., Abel Merrill, Joseph Morrill, John Richardson, W^{m} Richardson, Nath'l Hibbard, James Hibbard, Bodwell Ladd, John Ladd, Stephen Barker, Mitchell Davis, Eben^{r} Barker, Nehemiah Barker, Sam^{l} Richardson, Enoch Cheney, Jona. Barker, Jr., Benj Stevens, Jr., John Hibbard, Jr., W^{m} Hibbard—45.

"Capt. James Jones' pay-roll for the campaign on the defence of the country at the battle of Concord, made at the rate of 28 days per month, 4 days' service:"

Capt., James Jones; Lieut., Ichabod Perkins; Sergt., Timothy Eaton, Sergt., Nathan Perly, Sergt., Ephraim Clark, Sergt., Jacob Messer; Corp., Nathaniel Haseltine, Corp., Elijah Carleton, Corp., Simeon Cross; Drummer, John Kelley; Abiel Cross, William Page, Moses Sargent, James Fry, Thomas Herrick, Joseph Granger, Isaac Barker, Day Emerson, Joseph Perkins, Jonathan How, Nathaniel S. Clark, John Tippetts, 3d, Oliver Emerson, James Messer, Henry Mors, Stephen Webster, Jr., Elisha Perkins, Job Pingrey, Joseph Cross, Asa Cross, John Morris, Kimball Carleton — 32.

"In the company of Capt. Furbush:" — Theodore Emerson, Isaac Maloon, Joseph Pettengill, Abraham P. Silver, John Silver, John Hancock, Nehemiah Kidah, Daniel Pettengill — 8. Total, 156.

According to the colonial census of 1776, the population of Methuen was 1,326, and the tax-book of that year gives the names of 252 poll-tax payers. These statistical figures of that time show, that out of that number of tax-payers, 156 were in arms at the first call of their country, to resist British invasion; which illustrates, more forcibly than words can do, that they were determined to stand by their rights at all hazards. No drafting forced men to arms at that time, and bounties for enlistment were then unknown. Appeals from orators were not heard, and the daily press was not an agency to fire the public heart. It was simply and purely "the spirit of '76" which led them to rush at a moment's warning to support the flag of independence and equal rights, and was a most striking illustration of the power of "free moral agency," exhibited in the acts of men in the face of peril.

The next sanguinary conflict of any note was that of the battle of Bunker Hill, on the 17th of June following, in which the records also show Methuen was represented by a company which bore an important and perilous part. The following is a copy of the original muster-roll on file at the State House.

CAMBRIDGE, Oct. 5, 1775.

Return of the men's names, when they enlisted, and where they belonged. Belonging to Capt. John Davis's company, in Col. Frye's regiment: —

Capt., John Davis; 1st Lieut., Nathaniel Herrick; 2d Lieut., Eliphalet Bodwell; Maj., Jonathan Barker; Sergt., Ebenezer Carleton, Sergt., Richard Hall, Sergt., Francis Swan, Sergt., Peter Barker; Corp., Jonathan Baxter, Corp., William Stevens, Corp., Joshua Emerson, Corp., John Davison; Abraham Enness, John Asten, Silas Brown, Parker Bodwell, David Bailey, Dudly Bailey, Timothy Chellis, David Corlis, James Ordway, Samuel Parker, Thomas Pace, Nathan Russ, John Swan, Nathan Swan, Jeremiah Stevens, James Silver, Simeon Tyler; Drummer, Amos Gage; Fifer, Samuel Barker; James Campbell, James Davison, Mitchell Davis, Amos Harriman, Lazarus Hubbard, Ebenezar Herrick (died June 17), Joseph Hibbard (died

June 20), James Ingalls (died July 8), Dudly Noyes, Aaron Noyes, Peter Webster, James Woodbury, Ebenezer Sargent, Ebenezer Pingrief, Joshua Bodwell (in train June 17), Solomon Jennings (in train June 17) — 47.

The tradition is that the company came near being surrounded toward the end of the battle, and that as the enemy came up on each hand a British soldier ran up to Capt. Davis, saying, "You are my prisoner." Capt. Davis, who was a resolute, powerful man, replied, "I guess not," at the same time running the soldier through with his sword.

"The blood spurted over his breeches as he drew it back, and he made his escape. It is also said that he took one of his wounded men upon his back, just after escaping from the redoubt, and carried him out of the reach of danger. As he was crossing the hollow between the hills, which was exposed to the fire from a British vessel, he saw before him a board fence. Capt. Davis, exhausted by excitement and the weight of his comrade, said: 'I don't see how we can get over this fence.' In an instant after, a cannon-ball knocked it in pieces and left the way clear."

A story is told by Mr. Asa M. Bodwell, of James Ordway, who afterwards lived on the west side of Tower Hill; we copy from Howe's Historical Sketch.

"Mr. Ordway was in poor circumstances in his old age, and had a bad ulcer on his leg. Mr. Bodwell says his father sent him one day to Mr. Ordway with a gallon of rum to bathe his lame leg, and with it a message saying that the rum was sent to pay for throwing stones, at the battle of Bunker Hill! The story being, that when the ammunition gave out, at the close of battle, Ordway laid down his gun and threw stones at the British until driven out."

Tradition also records that the roar of the artillery could be plainly heard in Methuen on that day, which must have intensified the interest in the contest by those so far away from the smoke and carnage of battle. In the action of that day Methuen lost three men; Ebenezer Herrick, killed in battle; Joseph Hibbard, wounded, died June 20; James Ingalls, wounded, died July 8.

A committee of safety and correspondence was yearly chosen, which kept the people fully posted on every question of interest. The question of entering into a "perpetual union," in accordance with the resolve of the Continental Congress, for all the United States of America, came before the town in February, 1778. The matter was referred to a committee consisting of Maj. Bodwell, Capt. James Jones, Col. Thomas Poor, Lieut. John Huse, and Mr. Enoch Merrill, who reported favorable thereto, and the meeting voted to "receive and accept the Articles of Confederation and perpetual union," which was a voice for the Union as it was and is, instead of a "Confederacy," as the disunionists of 1860 desired to make it.

From the ancient records, which is also corroborated by an abundance of traditional history, it appears that the currency question was quite as troublesome then as it has been in later times. In April, 1778, the town voted, "that those who refuse to take the Continental currency shall be treated as enemies, and published in the Boston newspapers." The immense depreciation of currency at that time is shown by the fact, that, while the town voted £30 to repair highways in '77, it required £6,000 for the same purpose in '81.

In 1780 the town was called to act under the new Constitution of the State of Massachusetts, in the choice of governor, State officers, senators, &c., at which time John Hancock received sixty-four votes for governor, and James Bowdoin, two, which indicated the choice was without division by party feeling.

The records of the town show that equipments were furnished to soldiers from time to time, and that, when volunteers could not be obtained, men were hired to fill the quotas under respective calls, for which purpose sixteen were hired at one time, and twelve at another. The town also responded to calls of the government for the supply of beef for the army. In 1778, 8,780 pounds of beef were furnished. The close of the war was unattended by excitement, and the soldiers quietly returned to the pursuit of the peaceful arts of life. The only record is, a vote of the town to sell its entrenching tools, in the hope, without doubt, that they should no more be called to "learn war."

In the war of 1812, all that was required of the town was supplied, the verbal record of Mr. George W. Pecker, one of the veterans of that war, being that the number of men called for was not large, and they were mostly placed in the forts along the coast. A small company went from Methuen to Canada and witnessed the surrender of Hull.

The next most interesting and thrilling page in the history of this ancient town, is that on which is recorded the part taken in the great War of the Rebellion against the preservation of that "Union" which, in 1778, by deliberate and solemn vote, the inhabitants had declared they would maintain and defend as a "perpetual" one. In its political action its voice had ever been for union, justice, and liberty. By the utterances of a generally able, broad-minded, and liberal ministry, its pulpit teachings had led a willing and true-hearted people up to a high standard of moral discrimination concerning the principles which pertain to the common welfare, and the proper development of universal man; and when the hour came when blows must be struck for the maintenance of the institutions the fathers had planted, and which were intended should be measured by the principles embodied in the Declaration of Independence, they were ready for the work of the trying hour. The sentiment had been planted in their hearts; it had been nurtured into luxuriant and sturdy growth; and when the occasion came to test the temper of their spirits, —

> "Then Freedom sternly said: 'I shun
> No stripe nor pang beneath the sun,
> When human rights are staked and won.'"

In 1860, when the deep, hoarse rumbling of the distant thunder began to be heard, and when dark and threatening clouds began to gather in the national sky, their thoughts began to concentrate upon the duty of the hour, and their purposes began to ripen for the part they were expecting to take in the impending crisis. As they were ready at a moment's warning in 1775, so were they in 1861; and immediately after the call to arms, in that year, the town was called together for deliberation.

On the 30th of April the first legal town-meeting was held, and they voted to appropriate five thousand dollars "for arming, equipping, and furnishing volunteers"; and the selectmen, Eben Sawyer, I. P. Flint, John C. Webster, and Daniel Currier, were constituted the committee "to disburse the money." It was also voted that each citizen of Methuen who had entered the military service, or who should thereafter volunteer, "be paid, from the time he enlists until he is discharged, a sum of money sufficient to make the whole amount received by him equal to twenty-six dollars a month"; and that "the sum of fifteen dollars be paid to each citizen of the town who shall become a member of the volunteer company recruiting in Methuen, and hold himself in readiness to be mustered into the United States service, in addition to his monthly pay." Following this, on August 26th, the town voted to pay State aid to the families of volunteers, according to law.

On the 21st of July, 1862, it was further voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars to each volunteer who should enlist in the military service, and be mustered in and credited to the quota of the town. On the following 2d of August, it was voted to pay, to each of the forty-seven volunteers required to fill the quota of the town, two hundred dollars "in addition to that already voted," and "to discontinue the payment of all bounties after the 9th of the present month." On the 19th of August, it was also voted to pay a bounty of one hundred and fifty dollars to each volunteer for nine months' service, when mustered in and credited to the town.

On the 2d of November, 1863, in response to the call of the President, Oct. 17, 1863, it was voted to fill the quota of the town, and pay the families of the men who might be drafted the same State aid that was paid to the families of volunteers.

On the 20th of May, 1864, with a view to filling the quota of the town, the bounty to volunteers for three years' service was fixed at one hundred and twenty-five dollars, to be paid to each enlisted man when mustered in and credited to the quota of the town. In connection with the selectmen, Charles E. Goss and Eben Sawyer were chosen to assist in recruiting men, and in the payment of bounties. This was in anticipation of a call of the President for more men. The volunteers from Methuen were scattered through several regiments, but the largest number were in Company B, 1st Heavy Artillery, Leverett Bradley, captain.

The heaviest blow received by Methuen men was in the battle of Spottsylvania, where fifteen were killed and a large number wounded. The intelligence that the Methuen company had suffered heavily in that battle caused great excitement through the town, and a meeting of citizens was immediately called, at which a series of sympathetic resolutions were passed, and an agent despatched to look after the wounded.

In addition to these were two other resolutions, completing the series; one being complimentary to the First Regiment of Heavy Artillery, in which so many Methuen men were members, and the other was congratulatory to those who had bravely, and without harm, faced danger in the battle-field.

To ensure the filling of the quota of the town, on September 12th the selectmen were authorized to deposit money with the treasurer of the Commonwealth to obtain twenty-five recruits to fill the quota of the town, "or to procure them in any other manner at the same rate."

In the call for men for the field, Methuen furnished three hundred and twenty-five soldiers for the war, which was a surplus of fifty-one in excess of all demands. Fifteen of the number were commissioned officers.

The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was thirty-eight thousand six hundred and fifty-one dollars and seventy-three cents ($38,651.73). In addition to this, seven thousand five hundred dollars were gratuitously contributed, by individual citizens, to aid soldiers' families, and for the encouragement of recruiting.

In the payment of State aid to the families of volunteers, during the four years of the war, the amount of money raised and expended by the town, which was afterwards reimbursed by the Commonwealth, was twenty-three thousand four hundred and fifty-six dollars and eighty-five cents ($23,456.85). This sum was divided as follows: In 1861, $1,625.42; in 1862, $5,494.79; in 1863, $7,044.26; in 1864, $6,392.38; in 1865, $2,900.

The noble work of the ladies during this long and desperate struggle can never be fully estimated. Their labors were constant and unceasing, and their services well directed and efficient. The work at home in preparation for kind ministrations to the sick and wounded, and the remittance of tokens of favor to the absent ones, was the chain with golden links which united hospital, camp, and tented field, with home, keeping fresh the memories of the past, and inspiring new and pleasing visions of the future. At a time when the distressing news of carnage came from a fresh and bloody battle-field, it appeared to over-stimulate the lively competition existing between the Sanitary and Christian Commissions, which led to a local rupture in the ranks of the workers in the noble cause of relief, without, apparently, more faithfully serving the sufferers with that which their necessities really required, or increasing the usefulness of the noble system of relief which so faithfully served the soldiers through the long and bloody war. The event was only one of those incidents attendant upon associations where the aggregate judgment shapes the action.

The number of Methuen men who fell during the war was fifty-two, exclusive of those serving in the navy. They were often called to take part in the hardest of the fight; and the Methuen company, in the regiment of eighteen hundred men, held an honorable position. At the battle of June 16th, the regimental color-bearer was twice shot down, after which the colors were transferred to comrade Albert L. Dame, who took the post of danger in the regiment, and had the fortune and the honor of bearing them till the close of the war, after which he delivered them to the State, where their burnt and tattered folds supply the evidence of the carnage of that now fast-receding day of conflict.

Following the return of peace, those who had borne a part in the great war, and had survived the slaughter on bloody fields, contrary to the expectations of some, quietly and silently dropped back into the peaceful walks of life to join their fellow-citizens once more in pursuing the arts of peace, and to enjoy the protection and the blessings flowing from the institutions they had so nobly defended and so successfully preserved.

Succeeding this, came a succession of prosperous years, scarcely equalled in the history of any people, and in which Methuen has most generously shared. At that time new manufacturing enterprises made their appearance, while most of those already established were animated with fresh vigor, in the operation of which wealth has been much increased and the population of the town rapidly multiplied. The largest establishments are the cotton and jute mills of David Nevins & Co., in the name and style of the "Methuen Company"; the Methuen Woollen Company; three hat factories, and three large shoe factories, all of which are owned and operated by Methuen men.

By the operation of these manufacturing enterprises, the manufactures of the town have been nearly quadrupled within the last ten years, and the population increased sixty-four per cent., a percentage of gain greater than that of any other town in the Commonwealth. The census of 1875 shows the population of Methuen Village to have been 3,000, while that of the agricultural portion of the town had not materially changed. The entire population is 4,205. The valuation, real and personal, was $2,310,770; the aggregate of manufactures, $2,115,942, and the value of domestic and agricultural products, $230,802, The acreage of the town is 13,283. While this growth has been rapid, it has not been ruinously vitiated by speculation, but has shown solidity and substance in the increase, as tested by the pressure of the present hour. This prosperity has been attended by many important changes, involving a recent expenditure of something like $10,000 for public improvements. The connection of the village with the city of Lawrence by a horse railroad, which was effected in 1867, has been found of substantial advantage, as well as a great public convenience.

On the 7th of September, 1876, the town of Methuen celebrated the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its incorporation. The day was fine, and all its hours, from early morn to latest eve, were given to a century and a half anniversary day, certain never to return for a second greeting from those who then welcomed its dawn. The morning was ushered in by an artillery salute from the heights, and the bustling village soon assumed an appearance of festivity. Flags, banners, streamers, and decorations were everywhere visible, and the town was full of rejoicing.

Gov. Rice and Surg. Gen. Dale were present, as were many strangers from abroad; and former citizens of the town made it an occasion for a visit to the enterprising and picturesque village. A procession, with numerous bands of music, passed through the principal streets. The president of the day was Jacob Emerson, Esq.; the chaplain, the Rev. Lyman H. Blake; the orator, Hon. John K. Tarbox; and the chief marshal, Adjt. James Ingalls.

A banquet was served under a mammoth pavilion, at the conclusion of which speeches were made by the Rev. Dr. A. A. Miner, of Boston; Hon. Allen W. Dodge, treasurer of Essex County; Maj. George S. Merrill, of Lawrence; Hon. J. K. Jenness, of Haverhill; Hon. J. C. Blaisdell, of Fall River; the Rev. Moses How, of New Bedford, whose record is that he has preached 8,000 sermons, attended 2,265 funerals, married 1,904 couples, and distributed 5,211 Bibles, and 15,000 testaments to seamen, and at the age of eighty-seven years was still a vigorous man. The other speakers were Hon. Joseph S. Howe; Hon. Carroll D. Wright; William M. Rogers, Esq., and David Nevins, Esq.

The most rapid advance of this town in wealth, population, and business importance has been made in the last half-century, an outline of which, blended with its earlier history, is presented in these pages. Much of its history remains unwritten, which will supply the material for a future record.

The fire-department of the town is in good condition, having a powerful steamer, the "E. A. Straw," together with other necessary fire apparatus. The situation is now in striking contrast with that of 1826, when a small hand-machine, the "Tiger," was owned and operated, half by the Methuen Company, and half by Maj. Osgood, John Davis, Thomas Thaxter, George A. Waldo, and J. W. Carleton.

The fraternal and benevolent institutions, together with the reformatory organizations, are well sustained. The earliest organization of the Masonic order was that of Grecian Lodge in 1825, which surrendered its charter in the days of anti-Masonry, but after the incorporation of Lawrence it was reorganized under the old charter within the limits of that town. John Hancock Lodge was constituted in this town in 1860, and now has a membership of nearly 150, holding its convocations in Currier's buildings.

Hope Lodge of Odd Fellows, instituted in 1844, surrendered its charter in 1855, but was reinstated in 1869, and is now flourishing, with a membership in the vicinity of 125, meeting in Corliss's building. The Reform Club and other temperance instrumentalities are in active operation, and the various benevolent organizations, chiefly under the direction of the ladies, are constantly engaged in labors of love.

In 1833, Edwin Harriman, of Haverhill, established the "Iris," the first newspaper ever printed here, removing it from Haverhill, where it was first published as a campaign paper in the interest of Caleb Cushing; but it was soon discontinued. It was succeeded about 1835, by the "Methuen Falls Gazette," of which S. Jameson Varney was editor and proprietor. The "Methuen Transcript and Essex Farmer" was established in 1876, by C. L. Houghton & Co., edited by C. E. Trow, who soon became its proprietor. It has a circulation of 500.

MIDDLETON.

At the rising of the sun, in the beginning of the seventeenth century, if an explorer had been travelling through what is now "Middleton village," and around the Great Pond, the light of day would have revealed to his gaze a far different scene than is now presented to the eyes of the visitors of Middleton. The valleys and hills, brooks and pond, all lie as in their primitive state. The giant oaks and pines, the lesser growth of birches on the poorer soil, and the alders and shrubbery, common to low lands, lying along the streams, and in the swamps, cover the uneven surface of the landscape with their verdancy; or, perchance, an autumn day, the yellow and vermilion maple-leaves would tip the rising hills and swelling knolls with glorious colors prepared from Nature's laboratory. But, lost in thought of the ages gone, when the savage horde, perhaps, rode over these hills, and through the trackless forests, he stands upon the shore of the crystal lake, the merry dance of whose sparkling waters aids in holding him spell-bound. Away over the tops of a clump of trees of some lesser growth, the sight of smoke slowly rising on the still morning air, and circling in the heavens above, dispels his pensive mood. Hastening toward the smoke, he soon finds himself encroaching upon an Indian plantation. The cultivated land lies in front of numerous wigwams, and the settlement appears to be in keeping with the character and customs of the *Agawams*. A well-beaten path leads to the pond where several birch canoes are stowed away upon its placid waters beneath the overhanging alders. Another path leads to the river, and helps to form the great highway of the Indians, in this section, when they travelled from one tribe to another.* One of the Indians that resided here was called "Old William." He owned the present Will's Hill, from whence it derived its name. One of the last (perhaps the last) survivor of this company, he at length died, and was buried on the northerly brow of the hill. Some fifty years ago, the old residents could point out his grave; but, since that time, all traces of it are gone, and the site is unknown to the present inhabitants. Not uninteresting though sad is the thought, that, in this place, there once dwelt a different race of men. Here they hunted, here they fished, here they had their council fires; but now, supplanted by the whites, they have forever passed away.

The first mention made of this section is found in the Colonial Records in the year 1639. About 1635, the original town of Andover was settled under the supervision of Richard Bellingham, Esq., and others, of Boston, and Middleton was probably explored at this time, or shortly after; as we find, a few years later, that Mr. Bellingham desired the General Court to grant him a farm there. This the Court agrees to, and accordingly grants him the tract he desires, if it is not already in the bounds of any town, in the following words, Nov. 5, 1639: "The place desired by M^{r} Bellingham for his farme is on the head of Salem to the north west from the towne, there being in it a hill, wth an Indian plantation, & a pond, & about a hundred or 150 acres of meadow, viewed by M^{r} Willi: Hauthorne & Rich: Davenport. .This is granted if it bee not in Rowley nor any other towne." This tract of land contained about 1,200 acres, and extended from the pond to near Andover line, a long, narrow strip. The original bounds of Salem were six miles from their meeting-house. Bellingham's grant lay between this and the bounds of Andover. In 1659, he sold this land to Bray Wilkins and his brother-in-law, John Gingell. The following year, Wilkins moved from Lynn, where he was living, and settled down upon his new purchase; thus becoming the first English settler in the present village of Middleton. Mr. Wilkins was son of Lord John Wilkins, of Wales; emigrated from England with Gov. Endicott in 1628, so says tradition; settled in Lynn, and died in Middleton, in 1702, at a good old age. At his request, this tract was annexed to Salem at an early date.

Maj. Gen. Dennison procured a grant east of Bellingham's, running from Pierce's Brook, north, and parallel with Bellingham's, though containing a less number of acres. This brook passes in front of the house of the late Abijah Fuller. This grant of land was sold, in 1663, to Thomas Fuller, of Woburn, the emigrant ancestor of the above-mentioned Abijah Fuller. He was a blacksmith by trade, and, in after years, made himself useful to the inhabitants of the vicinity. Mr. Fuller came from England, in 1638, on a visit of observation, intending to stay one year and return; but, while here, was converted under the preaching of the Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, Mass.

The east part of the town, originally a part of Topsfield, was settled by William Nichols, in 1652, and William Hobbs, in 1660, on the west side of Nichols's Brook. The claim on which these men settled was purchased of Mr. Bartholomew. These four families were the first English settlers of the present village of Middleton. Gould, Symonds, Peabody, Knight, Cave, and other families soon purchased land, and settled between Nichols's Brook and the river. The southern part of the town was a part of Salem, and included in that ancient district known as Salem Village. This was settled very early. The area, from the river to Dennison's grant, and from the Indian Bridge to the present Boxford bounds, was a part of Rowley, and later a part of Rowley Village (now Boxford), and early settled. The northern part of Middleton was a part of Andover, and settled by Stiles, Perkins, Peabody, and other families. Thus the town had been all taken up, and annexed to the towns of Andover, Boxford, Topsfield, and Salem, previously to 1700.

Middleton was originally called Will's Hill, after the hill of that name, and the inhabitants, "Will's Hill men." We speak, of course, of the time before the town had any *legal* existence.

The families in the vicinity of Will's Hill, having increased in number, in 1726 petitioned the several towns of which they were members to be separated in order to form themselves into a new and distinct town. This petition met with opposition at its first presentment. At the annual meeting of the several towns in March, 1727, the petition was again presented, and again received the like reception. The next year, also, with a similar result, with the exception of Boxford. Boxford agreed to their request. Topsfield "passed over" the article each year that the subject was brought before the town. However, a meeting-house had been begun in 1726, and the people were determined to be a town. After two years had elapsed in vainly endeavoring to persuade their respective towns to give them liberty to join together and form a lawful corporation, they laid their plans before the General Court, who listened to them much more readily than their own towns had. Their request was assented to June 20, 1728, on the conditions that they would support the ministry and a school. At the same time, in the House of Representatives, it was "ordered that m^{r} Jonathan Fuller, a prinsapel Inhabitent of the Town of Middleton, be and hereby is fully empowered and directed to Asemble y^{e} free holders and other Inhabitenc of the said Town to Convene as sone as may be to Elect and choose Town officers then to stand untel the annuail meting in March next." The *Council* concurred with the *House*, at the same time. Mr. Fuller issued the necessary warrant, and the freeholders of the town, which, on account of its location probably, was called *Middleton*, met at the house of Dr. Daniel Felteh, on Tuesday, July 9, 1728, and held their first town-meeting. Lieut. Thomas Fuller was chosen moderator to govern the meeting. Edward Putnam was chosen town clerk; Lieut. Thomas Fuller, Samuel Symonds, Thomas Robinson, Edward Putnam, and Benjamin Wilkins, selectmen and assessors; Francis Peabody and Isaac Wilkins, constables; Daniel Kenny, treasurer; John Fuller, tithingman; Joseph Fuller, Ebenezer Nichols, and Francis Elliot, Jr., surveyors of highways; Jonathan Fuller and John Howe, fence viewers; Joseph Wilkins and Thomas Elliot, hog reeves; Nathaniel Towne, school-master; and Nathaniel Carrit, sealer of leather. It was also voted that the selectmen should supply the pulpit with preaching. Ten days later, at another town-meeting, a committee was appointed to finish the meeting-house, and the selectmen were ordered to lay out necessary roads, &c.

Mr. Putnam held the office of town clerk for four years. His successor, Francis Peabody, was chosen to the office in 1732. Peabody's

* The place where this path crossed the river is now covered by the "Old Indian Bridge," near the residence of Mr. Noyes.

successors in the office were: Daniel Wilkins, Jr., chosen 1736; Francis Peabody, re-chosen 1738; Edward Putnam, Jr., 1741; Francis Peabody, 1742. In later years, one person held the office for a longer period.

The town-meetings continued to be held at the house of Dr. Feltch during the year 1728; but, the meeting-house being completed, town-meetings were held in that during 1729 and the succeeding years, until the town-hall was completed in 1848. The site of this old residence, thus rendered historically memorable, is plainly discernible at the present time, opposite the residence of Mr. Addison Tyler. It stood upon a slightly raised knoll, which was, nearly two centuries and a half ago, a bound between Salem and Rowley.

At the time of the incorporation of the town, there were one hundred and twenty-six voters, and a few over five hundred inhabitants. The north and east part of the town was then the most thickly settled; now the centre. The families most numerous here at that time were the Wilkins, containing twenty-three voters; the Putnam, twelve; and the Fuller, nine. The Burton, Hobbs, Robinson, Cave, Putnam, Carrol, Deal, Cheever, Lambert, Bayly, Buxton, Fry, Pope, Swinerton, Prince, Gray, and Walcott families, living here at the time of the incorporation of the town, have become extinct or removed to other places.

Before Middleton came into existence as a town, roads had been laid out by the towns of Salem, Andover, Boxford, and Topsfield, of which towns Middleton formed a part. The first road was laid out about 1670. Middleton was the great thoroughfare, not only from Andover, but from New Hampshire and Vermont, and even Canada, to Salem market. The commercial business of Salem, in former days, was nearly equal to that of Boston, and drew her portion of the country trade. The first road that was laid out through the town came from Andover, near the Great Pond and Fish Brook, leading from the pond to the Merrimac River, where "*Cochichowicke*" (Andover) was first settled; thence striking the north-east corner of Middleton, and passing through the woods to the "old Indian bridge" by the railroad crossing; thence into Danvers, nearly as the road now is. But as settlements soon began further west, the North Andover road was opened, running nearly parallel with the other, a mile or two further west, and uniting at the river; while, still later, another road came from South Andover, entering the west part of Middleton, and merging into the former about half a mile above Esty's Tavern, so called. The latter two roads were chiefly travelled, except in the very earliest settlement of the region. So great was the travel from the north to Salem that the Essex Turnpike was opened about the beginning of this century, extending nearly to Canada. This passed through Middleton, between the North and South Andover roads, uniting with them just north of the present village. At the time of the opening of this turnpike, the commercial business of Salem was, probably, never more prosperous, and consequently brought an immense amount of travel through Middleton. And here many stopped at the large old tavern to recruit, after many days, travel, before entering the market. This tavern served the double purpose of a dram-shop for the townspeople, and a home for the weary traveller; and hence the latter often had an opportunity to hear some of Middleton's most boisterous orators, and those of the same class from other towns near by, who loved large gatherings, and to pry into other people's business. This, no doubt, was done without ceremony, and carried on to the extent they had *imbibed;* and, as this state of things was not always relished by strangers, it caused them to stop either at Andover or Danvers.

Before the locating of the turnpike, most of the travel came down the north road which was a good road for those early days, with one exception. After arriving near the centre of the town, the road took a turn toward the south-west, continuing this course for about a mile, passing near the Great Pond, and passing over the river at the "Indian bridge." This crook in the highway was made to avoid a long causeway. This continued from the first laying out of the road, about the year 1670, till 1740, when the town applied to the county for aid to help them make this causeway passable. Failing in this, things remained as they were, to the great annoyance of the people of Andover, one of whom, Aaron Foster, offered, in town-meeting in Middleton, a proposition to keep the causeway in good repair for twenty years, for twenty pounds — date, 1794. A few years previous to this time there were several gates and bars across this and other roads, passing from Andover through Middleton to Danvers and Salem.

Religious History.— At the time Middleton was incorporated those who were church members were connected with the three neighboring churches of Boxford, Topsfield, and Salem Village. The Averills, the Nicholses, the Perkinses the Robinsons, the Curtises, who lived in the vicinity of Nichols's Brook, attended church at Topsfield. The Peabodys, the Stileses, the Elliotts, and the Symondses, who lived in the vicinity of the Boxford and Andover lines, attended meeting at Boxford; and the Putnams, Fullers, and Knights attended church at Salem Village. The Wilkinses, whom we have before mentioned as the most numerous, were about equally divided in attendance at Boxford and Salem Village.

A meeting-house had been begun, as we have before mentioned, in 1726. The ladies selected the site, so tradition says, which we are inclined to credit, as the selection (where the present church stands) was by far the most eligible of any in the vicinity. Notwithstanding, there were some discontented with the location, and, even after the frame was raised, a town-meeting was called to see whether it should not be removed. Very wisely, the town negatived the proposition.

The old meeting-house was framed of massive oak timber, about forty feet square, and two stories high. July 19, 1728, Lieut. Thomas Fuller, Jonathan Fuller, Benjamin Wilkins, John Burton, and Joseph Knight were chosen a committee to finish the meeting-house, and also to receive subscriptions for defraying expenses of the same. After the ordination of Mr. Peters (their first minister), a committee, as was the custom, was chosen to seat the meeting-house. First, regard was to be had to old age (*i. e.*, above sixty years); and, second, to those who paid the highest rates. The first question was soon settled; but the second was not so easily arranged, as the town valuation was not permanently fixed, and there was much doubt as to who were the wealthiest, and, consequently, who were in reality entitled to the highest seats; hence a dispute arose which came near resulting in blows, which were stayed only with the view, probably, to settle the matter in some other way. Things remained comparatively quiet for a week or two, but one Sabbath morning an old lady wended her way very early to the new church, that she might be prepared in both body and mind for the worship of God; but what was her consternation to see every seat demolished. In a mournful and despairing tone, she exclaimed: "If judgment must begin at the house of God, what will the end be?" &c. The town soon met and voted to rebuild them in a thorough manner, and if they were again torn down, each man should build up his own seat. This vote was effective; no more trouble of this nature occurred. These seats were made of buttonwood plank, two and a half inches thick, for the ends, and three-by-four joist for the backs. There were wall pews, which were built with the house, and sold to individuals, in whose families they were retained till its destruction, one hundred and twenty years afterward. This old house had many windows and doors. There was an east door, and a west door, both below and above, and a double front door, making five places of entrance. The windows numbered about thirty, which contained the small panes of the times. The clattering, after a few years, of the doors and windows in a windy day, nearly drowned the voice of the preacher.

The selectmen continued to hire ministers to preach to the people as they were ordered to do. Thursday, Feb. 13, 1729, was kept as a day of fasting and prayer, preparatory to calling a minister. On the 17th of the following month, the town having assembled for the first time at the meeting-house, it was voted to invite Mr. Andrew Peters, of Andover, to settle with them in the ministry; — offering him, as his salary, £100, payable in Province bills, or "passable money," stipulating that his salary should rise or fall according to the value of money. They also voted him a "settlement" of £200. The "settlement" in those days was no small item; and, as ministers remained for life, there was little of the shady side of pecuniary matters; — on the contrary, they were usually able to bequeath some little property. On the 16th of September, the town again met and heard Mr. Peters's affirmative answer to their call. They then voted that his salary should be paid semi-annually; they fixed as the time of the council, Nov. 26th; — appointed Jonathan Fuller to entertain ministers, and Mr. Francis Elliot to entertain scholars (*i. e.*, Cambridge students). The 22d of October, the members of the different churches resident in Middleton met together and formed themselves into a distinct church; drew up their covenant, and took as their "articles of faith," "the Confession of Faith owned and consented to by the Elders and Messengers of the churches assembled at Boston, May 12, 1680." The founders of the church numbered fifty-one — nineteen males and thirty-two females,— about half of whom were from the Salem Village church. About a month after the organization of the church, the day arrived for the ordination of Mr. Peters, and we may presume for the dedication of the new edifice. At the age of twenty-

nine years, Mr. Peters was ordained to the gospel ministry in this place, Nov. 26, 1729.

John Berry and Samuel Symonds, the first two deacons, were chosen to that office at the founding of the church. Their successors in the office were: Edward Putnam, Jr., chosen, 1738; Samuel Nichols, 1749; Francis Peabody, Jr., 1756; John Flint, 1778; Samuel Symonds, 1780; Benjamin Peabody, 1794; John Nichols, 1794; Joseph Symonds, 1820; Joseph Peabody, 1821; David S. Wilkins, 1829; David Stiles, 1831; Allen Berry, 1840; William A. Phelps, 1857, James N. Merriam, 1868; and Edward W. Wilkins, 1874.

The Rev. Mr. Peters was a large, muscular man, of imposing appearance. He lived in the rear of the old meeting-house, and the cellar of his house still remains. An anecdote, well authenticated, is related of him, which perhaps I ought not to omit. There was a man familiarly termed "Tim ———." He was a rich man, and, either on account of his riches or his natural disposition, was overbearing and insolent. I am inclined to think he might have become dissatisfied with Mr. Peters; perhaps, have lost confidence in him, as the modern phrase is, when one takes offence at his minister, and desires his dismission. Be this as it may, he was accustomed to interfere with Mr. Peters's negro-servant, as he drove his master's cows up the lane. The negro made complaints from time to time, and at length Mr. P. went to see his neighbor about it. After talking and using moral suasion to no purpose, and receiving only abuse, his indignation was aroused. He accordingly took off his coat, laid it down upon a stump, and said, "*Lie there, divinity, while I whip this rascal!*" This species of argument was triumphant; Mr. Peters's servant was never more molested. The stump which witnessed this whipping was near the house of Capt. Simon F. Esty, as stated by Deacon Symonds, who pointed it out within the remembrance of some now living.

After 1751, Mr. Peters occupied the pulpit only a part of the time. He grew more ill, but still preached as late as 1755; and died the following year, Oct. 6th, at the age of fifty-six years. Mr. Peters was son of Samuel Peters, of Andover, where he was born, 1700. He was a graduate of Harvard College. He was devoted to his calling, and the church evidently prospered under his ministry. The average number of admissions to the church, annually, during his pastorate (beside its founders) was nine. During his entire ministry of twenty-seven years, 219 members were added to the church. His remains rest in Middleton.

Two years after Mr. Peters's death the Rev. Elias Smith, of Reading, then in his twenty-ninth year, was invited to succeed him as their pastor. The town voted him £160 for his settlement, and £73 6*s.* 8*d.* for his annual salary. His ordination occurred on Wednesday, Jan. 10, 1759, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Mr. Clark, of Danvers. After a successful ministry of about thirty-three years, this man of God left the temporal for the eternal world, Oct. 17, 1792, at the age of 61 years.

Mr. Smith was a faithful, devoted servant in his Master's service, and the church prospered under his care, 234 being added to it during his pastorate. He kept the church records very carefully, and it is affecting to trace, towards the close of his records, his tremulous pen.

Mr. Smith lived in what is now called the Kenny House. He was a native of Reading and a graduate of Harvard College. His remains lie in a tomb by his former dwelling. He once had an urgent call from a church in Marblehead, with a larger salary. His reply was that he "would not leave his little flock in Middleton for all Marblehead." Mr. Smith was chosen a trustee of Phillips Academy soon after his settlement, and so remained till his death. He was grandfather of George Peabody and the late Col. Francis Peabody of Salem.

A few months after Mr. Smith's death a call was given to the Rev. Solomon Adams, of Acton, which was accepted. The town agreed to give him £200 settlement, and £90 salary. His ordination took place on Saturday, Oct. 23, 1793. At this time he was thirty-two years of age.

About 1810, Mr. Adams received a shock of palsy, causing his loss of health. He preached but little after he became feeble. Sometimes one of the deacons would read a sermon, while Mr. Adams would perform the remainder of the service. He died Saturday, Sept. 4, 1813, at the age of 52 years. He and the Rev. Elias Smith sleep in the same tomb. Mr. Adams was born in Acton, March 18, 1762, and graduated at Harvard College, 1788.

The fourth minister was the Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard. Oct. 29, 1816, the town voted to give him $300 settlement and $500 salary. He was installed over this church and society on Wednesday, Nov. 27, 1816, the installation sermon being preached by the Rev. Joseph McKean, LL. D., professor of Harvard University.

Mr. Hubbard was born in Marblehead, and graduated at Harvard College, 1805.

In 1831 a call was given to the Rev. Forrest Jefferds; but the parish, desiring unevangelical preaching, refused to concur with the church. Accordingly, the church, who declined to further worship with the society, withdrew (with the loss of but a few members), leaving behind the meeting-house, communion furniture, fund, &c.

As soon as this separation took place, the dissenters, forty-eight in number, Dec. 16, 1831, requested Ezra Nichols, Esq., a justice of the peace, to warn such inhabitants as were competent and willing to form an "*Evangelical Congregational Society*," to meet at the house of Washington Berry, Dec. 22d, and there and then to organize said society, choose officers, &c. They met, organized the society, and chose the following officers; viz., Joseph Peabody, 2d, moderator; Ezra Nichols, clerk; Andrew Merriam, David Stiles, and Allen Berry, prudential committee to hire preaching, &c.

Their meetings were first held in the "centre" school-house; but this small edifice soon becoming inconvenient, because of its diminutive size, a meeting-house was erected, by the aid of the neighboring churches, at a cost of $2,185. The contractor was Jacob Dodge, of Wenham. The sum of $734.52 was raised by the society and $1,121.62 in the neighboring towns, to defray the expenses of building. The Home Missionary Society and the Essex South Conference contributed quite largely towards the support of preaching. Mr. Jefferds was settled over the new society, May 2, 1832, with a salary of $500. He continued in his pastoral duties here until April, 1844, when the society voted not to support him that year. The society was compelled to vote thus, being so poor that the money could not be raised for his support. Mr. Jefferds was born at Wells, Me., Aug. 4, 1794.

The sixth minister was the Rev. Richard Thurston Searle. He was ordained Thursday, May 8, 1845. His ministry was short; he asked for a dismission, which was granted Dec. 23, 1846.

The church was then without a pastor for four years, when the Rev. Jacob Augustine Hood was ordained, Wednesday, Jan. 2, 1850; sermon by the Rev. Dr. Brown Emerson, of Salem. Mr. Hood's salary was $550. He was well received, but his plainness of speech caused some to be dissatisfied. The contagion spread, and the result was his dismissal, May 17, 1854. He was faithful and much beloved. At his dismission, Mr. Hood made the society a present of $50. His farewell discourse, delivered June 25, 1854, was published in a pamphlet of twenty-one pages.

The eighth minister was the Rev. A. H. Johnson. He was ordained and settled over this society, Thursday, Jan. 1, 1857; sermon by Prof. Park, D. D. He resigned Oct. 5, 1861. The church would not agree to his resignation. He sent a second letter, dated Oct. 24. He was reluctantly dismissed Oct. 4, 1862.

The congregation having increased quite extensively, it was found necessary to enlarge their house of worship, and a part of the money was raised for that purpose, when the idea of a new house was conceived by a few, and a general helping hand was given to the enterprise. The edifice was built in 1859, and dedicated, with sermon by the pastor, the Rev. Mr. Johnson, Nov. 30 of that year. The building committee was F. P. Merriam, David Stiles, Jr., and William A. Phelps. Its cost, furniture included, $6,000.

The ninth pastor was the Rev. James M. Hubbard, of Norwich. He was installed April 5, 1865, and resigned Dec. 20, 1868.

The tenth minister was the Rev. Lucien H. Frary, of Andover. He was ordained Thursday, Oct. 7, 1869; sermon by the Rev. Prof. E. C. Smyth. He resigned Feb. 27, and was dismissed March 16, 1875. When Mr. Frary was settled, he moved into the new parsonage, which had been built at a cost of $3,300: $1,400 had been raised by subscription; $500 by a legacy of the late Miss Betsey Upton, who was for many years a member of this church, and the balance was hired.

After Mr. Frary's departure, a Mr. Norris, from the State of New York, preached here for a season, but declined settlement. The present pastor, the Rev. Amory H. Tyler, was installed Wednesday, Oct. 24, 1877, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Smith Baker, of Lowell. Mr. Tyler is from Monson, Me.

Military Matters. — After Middleton was incorporated, a company of militia was formed among themselves. Prior to this time, the inhabitants trained with the companies of the various towns of which they were a part. In 1734, a "town stock" of ammunition was voted

to be kept in the meeting-house. Thirteen years after, a place was fitted up in the meeting-house for this purpose.

We find nothing on the records that points to any action being taken in regard to the French War, or the other Indian conflicts.

Middleton was so small a town, it is not to be supposed that she took any prominent part in the Revolutionary affairs. They nonconformed to the various oppressive acts of Parliament in common with the neighboring towns. Jan. 10, 1775, the town voted "to adopt the resolves of the Continental Congress and the Provincial Congress so far as they concern this town as a corporated body." They also vote to purchase half a barrel of powder and ball, and flints — a proper proportion of each. One hundred and two of the Middleton people subscribed £169 1*s.* to the inhabitants of Boston, who were suffering from the oppressive Port Bill.

Seventeen days previous to the adoption of the Declaration of Independence, the town "Voted unamsly that if the Connelty Congras declears independence up pon the kingdom of grat briten that we the inhabatance of middleton solomonly ingage with our lives and fortens to sopert them in the mesuers so far as we are able."

A company of minute-men was formed here, which marched to Lexington, on the alarm of April 19, 1775, but arrived, however, too late to participate in the fight, either at Lexington or Concord. Many of the inhabitants entered the service, and helped to achieve our national independence.

Regarding the troubles with Great Britain, previous to the war of 1812, various votes were passed by the town. July 27, 1807, "voted to give those soldiers, that are called for by the government, seven dollars per month in addition to their continental pay, when they shall be called into actual service." May 25, 1812, it was "voted to make the soldiers' wages equal to fifteen dollars per month including their continental pay."

A "powder-house" was voted to be built in 1810 (Oct. 29), eight feet square, seven feet high; the foundation of stone; the walls, brick; with the roof and door of wood. This was situated away from the dwelling-houses, in a pasture then belonging to John Fuller. The powder-house was ultimately disposed of at public auction, May 19, 1834.

In the Rebellion of 1861–65, Middleton acted a devoted and highly honorable part. July 22, 1862, a bounty of $125 to volunteer soldiers was voted to be offered. The same amount was voted, on the 16th of the following month, to be given to nine months' men. On the 20th of the next month, the same amount was voted to be given. The same bounty was voted to be given June 23, 1864.

To meet the payment of these bounties, private persons advanced money, which amounted to several thousands of dollars. Middleton furnished in the whole one hundred and twenty men for the service, which was a surplus of ten over all demands. Among these, there were no commissioned officers These men were engaged in most of the battles of that terrible struggle. Fifteen of them lost their lives by starvation in the rebel prisons, on the battle-field, and by disease.

May 2, 1861, the town "Voted to raise the sum of $1,000 all or a part of which may be appropriated, at the discretion of the selectmen, for the assistanee of those of our citizens, or their families, who may enter the military serviee of the United States, in obedience to the eall of the Governor of this Commonwealth." From this early date, the overseeing of the families of the volunteer soldiers, and the supplying them with the necessaries of life, if need be, was a prominent and worthy trait of the people of Middleton. The soldiers at the front also received contributions from the ladies of Middleton. Their contributions, including various articles sent to the hospitals for the comfort of the sick and wounded, averaged about $100 per month from the beginning to the end of the war. The ladies of Middleton also defrayed the expenses of one of the citizens who served two months as an agent of the Christian Commission. — *Schouler*. The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was $10,210. State aid paid to the soldiers' families during the war was: 1861, $660 62; 1862, $2,319.60; 1863, $2,408; 1864, 2,569.90; 1865, 1,950; total, $9,908 12.

Education. — At the first town-meetings after the incorporation of the town, Nathaniel Towne was chosen school-teacher. He continued to learn the young to "read, write, and cypher" many years. Benjamin Bragg commenced teaching here Aug. 1, 1756. In 1739, the town voted to raise £9 for the support of a school that year, said school to be kept where the seleetmen shall say. A school-house was erected shortly after, probably, as nineteen years later it is spoken of as the "oald schoole hows." It was built by a company, who neglected to repair it. In 1762, the town voted to repair the school-house if the proprietors would give it to them, which conditions were probably agreed to and the repairs made. In 1777, the school-house having been converted into a dwelling-house, it was occupied by John Powers. In 1790, the town was divided into three school districts,— north, east, and south. The old school-house was fixed up, and two new ones built for their accommodation. In 1800, the town raised $134 for the support of schools that year. Their school committee chosen for that year were the following: Asa How, Theodore Ingalls, and Francis Peabody, for the northern and eastern districts, and John Flint, Daniel Fuller, and Zacchens Giddings, for the southern district. In 1814, the town voted to lay out a part of their school money for the support of a summer school. About 1834, the town was newly divided, into four districts,—east, north, south, and centre; and school-houses erected in each district. In the centre district a large and commodious building, costing some $3,000, was erected in 1870, in place of the one erected at this time. One thousand four hundred dollars was raised this year (1878) for the support of schools, an amount equivalent to nearly that raised for general town expenses.

The principal employment of the inhabitants of Middleton is agriculture. Two or three saw and grist mills have existed here for upwards of a century. The Cummings Knife Manufactory, noted a few years since as the manufacturers of the best shoe-knives made, is situated here. The business is not carried on at the present time, however. The paper-mills, at the "Paper-Mills settlement" (Oakdale), on the Ipswich River, were, in their infancy, the largest manufactory of their kind in the country. Thomas's saw-mills are situated in the east part of the town. Box-boards are extensively manufactured here. There are other kinds of business carried on, but not of sufficient extent for permanent record.

A town-hall was erected in 1848, forty-five feet long, thirty feet wide, and one story, of sixteen feet in height. It is a substantial edifice, and combines in itself all the requisite conveniences for a town of the size of Middleton.

The town is fast increasing in population and wealth. New houses are continually being erected, and real estate in the village is gradually rising in value. The Essex Railroad gives direct communication with Lawrence, Salem, Boston, and other places, and gives facilities equal to any country town in Essex County for the transaction of commercial or agricultural business. The Salem and Lowell Railroad have a station at Oakdale.

The Great Pond, containing ninety-eight acres, and having its outlet through Ipswich River, is the only pond of any size in the limits of the town. This pond supplies water for the Insane Asylum, on Dodge's Hill, in Danvers, and the towns of Danvers and Middleton. For forcing the water, one of H. R. Worthington's gigantic duplex pumping-engines is used. This is capable of pumping two million gallons of water every twenty-four hours.

The town has no fire department, but a new hose-carriage, with a complement of hose, has just been manufactured by Hunneman & Co., of Boston, for this town (Oct. 1, 1878). It is named "The Protector." By attaching the hose to the hydrants, a stream of water can be thrown over the meeting-house. Damage by fire is almost unknown in the village. Not more than two or three buildings have been burned in the vicinity of the village for more than a hundred years.

The population of Middleton, according to the last census, is 1,092, — 562 males, 530 females. There are 260 voters, — 250 native and ten naturalized; and 314 ratable polls. There are 233 families, and 190 dwelling-houses, — 188 occupied, and only two vacant. Of the inhabitants, 517 were born in Middleton; 166 in other towns in Massachusetts; 294 in other States; 108 foreign born, and seven unknown. Of the foreign born, seventeen were born in England; nineteen in Ireland; four in Scotland; sixty-four in Dominion of Canada, and two in Germany. The population of Middletou in 1776 was 650; in 1790, 682; 1800, 598; 1810, 541; 1820, 596; 1830, 607; 1840, 657; 1850, 832; 1860, 940; 1870. 1,010.

It has a secular library, supported and controlled by the "Middleton Library Association." It contains 877 volumes, which have an annual circulatien of about 2,000. A reading-room is also combined.

Middleton has not been noted as the birth-place of many eminent personages. Solomon Adams, son of the Rev. Solomon Adams, born here April 30, 1797, was a minister in Maine. Charles L. Flint, the present Secretary of the State Board of Agriculture, was born here, May 8, 1824. These, with two or three others, complete the list.

NAHANT.

This little island town, which is usually called a peninsula, though it is the smallest of the municipalities of Essex County, both in territory and population, probably, has yet an interest about it that is of the finest, and possesses an importance in many respects that will not permit it to be forgotten or overlooked.

The rocky shore that environs the whole of Massachusetts Bay breaks out along the northern coast into numerous craggy islands, some quite bare and desolate, but others thinly spread with soil, and affording means of tolerable habitation. A few, while still maintaining their insular nature, present a connection more or less spurious with the mainland. Sometimes this connection consists of rocky reefs, passable at low tide, or with frequent interruptions; sometimes it has the form of continuous beach, resting, perhaps, on concealed ledges, but apparently formed upon strips of salt-marsh, upon which the sand and shingle have been piled by the prolonged action of the sea. The harbors of Boston and Salem are full of such, and they occur at intervals all along the shore from Minot's Light to Cape Ann.

The town of Nahant occupies the largest and altogether the most remarkable group of these weather-beaten islands. It is commonly spoken of as a group of two, called Little and Great Nahant. Lewis often calls it "The Nahants," and asserts that the name is from an Indian word meaning double or twin. But he gives no evidence on the point, and it may or may not be the case. Nahant should, however, be rather considered triple in its formation, there being just as plainly three separate elevations as two. These form a triangle, of which the two outer members lie nearly east and west from each other, and the third or inner one, almost equidistant from them, lies toward the shore, at the distance from it of about two miles. An irregularly shaped piece of salt-marsh spreads between, connecting the three by ground entirely passable at all times, or, certainly, only made otherwise during the rare tide-floods of a few exceptional years.

The two outer elevations enjoy much the greatest part of this connection, and are therefore usually spoken of as one, and called Great Nahant. The third, which only attaches to the narrow, northerly end of the marshy ligament, is of an oval, hill-shaped pattern, very regular in outline, and bearing the name of Little Nahant. It is a short half-mile in length, from north-east to south-west, with a maximum breadth of half as much, and an extreme height from the sea of, say seventy-five feet. Its connection with its fellows is only at the westerly end, from which, also, passage is had to all the rest of the surface, which is green pasturage throughout, unbroken by rocks, and very attractive in a distant view. A half-dozen houses are seen upon it, the principal property being that of George W. Simmons, the noted manager of the "Oak Hall" enterprise, in Boston.

Of the other two islets, the inhabited part of the town is almost wholly on the eastern, which is much the larger. It is very irregular in outline, yet is substantially a straight ridge of land, a mile and a half in extreme length, by half a mile in greatest breadth, with its long axis lying nearly north-west and south-east. Its elevation does not differ materially from that of Little Nahant; indeed, all three islets rise to about the same level. Like its mates, it is very craggy and repulsive round its shores, though these are indented with many pretty bays, adorned with smooth beaches; yet all the upper surface is a good, productive, gravelly loam, yielding valued pasturage for all the centuries since men have known it. It is, through its whole extent, singularly free from out-cropping ledges, and with no special features of hill and valley, save in a very moderate way. The connection of this, which is best-named Great Nahant, with the others, is entirely at the north-western end, yet is wide and ample, affording room for several roadways not too near each other; and these conduct along the northern edge of the marsh, by Short Beach, to Little Nahant and the mainland, or along the southern, by Pond Beach, to the remaining member of the group, which, never having had a name given it, may here be known by the appropriate title of West Nahant.

This islet is, in size, intermediate between the others, and quite unlike them in surface and aspect. Its general elevation is rather less than those; but at its south-eastern corner it rises in a sudden eminence, called Bailey's Hill, and attains a height of, say seventy-five feet at the summit. This affords a charming view of the rest of the little township, as well as of the mainland to the northward, two miles or more away, where the hills and thickly-built shores of Lynn and Swampscott form a delightful background to the fine sea-picture furnished by the bay and harbor between. The rest of the islet is liberally strewn with erratic blocks and bowlders, and ledges not unfrequently interrupt the greenness of the pasture sward. Toward the south-west, it is prolonged into a low and narrow cape, which, nevertheless, is very conspicuous, and bears the name of Bass Point. The extremity of this reaches the same parallel as the eastern point of Great Nahant; and the two stand as the furthest projections of Essex County in a southerly direction.

The little tract of marsh that mutually attaches these divisions is interesting in many ways. Of an irregularly triangular form, its southerly and north-easterly margins are exposed to all the force of the sea during storms in those directions, and hence have become fortified with heavy, ridged beaches, backed with large pebbles and shingle, which is piled by the breakers many feet above ordinary high water. The slope in front, where the common flow of the tide finds its range, is bedded with fine, sharp sand, as smooth almost as a floor, and so hard as to resist, with very slight impressions, the feet of the innumerable horses that pass these beaches daily. The inclination of Pond Beach is rather sharp, and it is not much resorted to by any class; but Short Beach lies flat, the shelf running out an unknown distance without interruption or dangerous features, and thus eminently fitted for any of the enjoyments of such a locality. The north-western margin of the marsh fronts the harbor of Lynn, and thus, being never exposed to rough weather, has accumulated no beach, but has the simple shore of such positions, a fact very fortunate for things inland, as will presently appear. Immediately behind the pebbly ridge of Pond Beach, is that from which the name is derived, an open sheet of water, about sixty rods in diameter, known as Bear Pond. This has, of course, a limited watershed, and is, besides, supplied with a number of springs, so that it is so pure as to be quite an ornament to the position; yet, as the sea finds ready access from the north-west at high tide, the water is kept brackish, and all the lower levels about the shore are reduced to the dominion of strictly maritime life. Some trees remain around it to memorize the dense primeval forest, and in part the productions of a fresh marsh are here exhibited; but all on the northern margin, with all the tract beyond in that direction, is now below the level of high water and the daily tides flowing in through a short brook, and for the time reversing its current and making all the valley up to Bear Pond into a mere arm of the sea. Underneath, the constitution of this marsh, like that of the more extensive ones of Lynn and Saugus, gives irresistible evidence of slow and gradual subsidence. Only a slight excavation in the black and peaty soil answers to reveal an unlimited deposit of buried wood, with stumps of liberal size, still fast embedded in their original position. Since it is a well-established fact that forests do thrive for ages in the immediate neighborhood of the sea, even where it almost washes their very roots, we are not obliged to suppose any excessive change of level to account for all the destruction that has here plainly taken place. Three feet, five at most, of elevation, would be abundantly enough to place all the extinct cedars, maples, and birches of the Nahant marsh on a footing most favorable for all good growth; and there can be no doubt that the mainland has subsided fully that distance, with no good reason why Nahant should not have accompanied it. The period occupied by this change is, of course, wholly out of reckoning, a statement at which no geologist will be at all surprised; nor can we with certainty determine whether, since the time of glacial action, an epoch of yet greater depression has once occurred, succeeded by an elevation that carried out the shore-line beyond Egg Rock and the Brewsters. There are many things observable that favor such an idea; for not only along the mainland, but abundantly on Nahant, are beds of gravel and sand

lying high above sea level, which are not only plainly derived from the glacial forces, but as plainly seen to have been re-arranged since that origin. There has been an attempt to explain this by supposing an ancient barrier extending among the islands, which converted not only the harbor of Lynn, but her whole plain, back to the hills, into a broad fresh-water lagoon, like that of Venice, by the movement of whose waters the disturbance and re-arrangement of the original beds may have been produced. For satisfactory judgment of this, we must consider whether such a lagoon could contain a mass of waters whose motion should be adequate to the comminution and new bedding of such bodies of detritus; for it is not to be forgotten that these substances are only moved, to any great extent, by the "undertow" of the ocean surf, or the deeper currents of heavy streams. And even if the latter agency, derived from the valleys of Saugus River or the "Lakes," should be asserted of the mainland district, it is yet to be judged, whether there is a probability that such could have reached and operated on the gravel-covered islets of Nahant.

Since the visitor at Nahant finds his attention almost as largely taken up by its interesting geology as by all other features of the place, we continue further to speak of this, and in a sense more relating to the interior structure. And here we notice, at the start, a very singular circumstance, in the almost total absence of silicious rocks, or of quartz in any form. Almost the entire group is formed of a series of diorites, quite distinct, usually, from any observed on the mainland. The prevailing form is highly crystalline, making a very tough rock, with strong, decided cleavage, closely resembling a sienite at the first glance, and with a uniformity of position that quite probably indicates it as a bedded rock. On the eastern side of Great Nahant it gradually loses its felspathic element, and remains as a strong development of massive hornblende, nearly pure, and often simulating some of the iron ores. This is especially the case at "Black Mine," very near the late residence of the lamented Agassiz, where its likeness to hematite is so great as to have led to its unprofitable mining. In 1691, the town of Lynn voted "that Mr Hubbard of Braintree should give three shillings for every ton of Rock Mine that he has from Nahant"; but its barrenness was no doubt very soon ascertained. In other quarters, the hornblende disappears so thoroughly that the rock passes into a variety of felsites and cherts, often diversified with stripes of porphyry and beds of conglomerate. Or again, under the influence of a more highly metamorphic agency, we find it becoming fine-grained and compact, and appearing as an intruding rock in abundant dikes and seams. If these are reckoned as basalt or dolerite, we may have to consider the prevailing rock as diabase instead, which may indeed be true.

At Bailey's Hill, on West Nahant, are plentiful veins of a very equivocal rock, almost asbestiform in style, yet very soft and brittle. It suggests picrolite, or some subfibrous chlorite, yet betrays little magnesia. At "Nipper Stage," on Great Nahant, the soft rock is full of grass-green epidote, often charmingly crystallized, and lining veins and pockets; while the centre is often occupied by adventitious quartz, and chalcedony, the first usually in good crystals. A small beach here is called "Crystal Beach," from the occurrence of such a quartz vein, from which many fine specimens have been taken. The crystals are singularly contorted, or broken and re-cemented in many cases; are rough on the surface, and greenish within, as if affected by the epidote, which also has made them brittle. It is a thing pleasantly remembered, that the first finder of this vein, the late Dr. William Prescott, of Concord, N. H., supposed the mineral to be corundum, and it went into many cabinets under that name; while Lewis, to have the wonder as great as possible, adds that probably it is the only locality of corundum known in the United States!

The only other minerals of worthy note found here are calcite, which occurs sporadically in all the beds and dikes, and cinnamon garnet, which is located on the east side, near "Saunders' Ledge." It is mostly massive, with a few crystals; and was at first thought to belong in the drift, though now suspected to exist in place in the neighboring crag. One more observation shall complete the geological survey.

On approaching "East Point," the formation is found to change quite suddenly, all hornblendic characters disappearing; and instead is seen a large upheaval of indurated argillites, scarcely metamorphic, curiously banded with green, red, and purple, and dipping about 45° N. W. The induration is just enough to destroy all vestiges of lamination, yet the hardness is not greatly increased. In these slates, particularly in the less compact green bands, are occasionally noticed appearances that were, it is said, suspected by Agassiz to be corallines of a very remote period. If this view be susceptible of verification, this is the only occurrence of genuine fossils through a breadth of many miles.

The prominent position of Nahant, with its peculiarly green and delightful appearance, caused it to attract the attention of all the early voyagers. Lewis endeavors to show that it was visited by Thorwald the Northman in 1004; and finds further that Gosnold touched here in 1602, and that Capt. John Smith examined it in 1614. There is evidence of a much better class to show that it was granted to Capt. Robert Gorges in 1622, and some probability that Gorges granted it again to John Oldham and John Dorrel, about 1629. But the title of Gorges was not respected by the colonists, and Endicott defied it by taking formal possession of Nahant a little later. But the settlers had to decide the question, whether after all the native inhabitants had not the best title; and one of them, Thomas Dexter, a most enterprising man, allowing the truth of the affirmative, purchased Nahant of its Indian proprietor, Poquanum, or Black William, for a suit of clothes, it is said, at a date somewhat earlier than 1657. But a private title, obtained in this way, with no grant from the "General Court," was not to be regarded by the rising power; and though Dexter and his assigns made good fight, and cost the town expensive suits in 1657, 1678, and 1695, they had the voice of the people against them, because the people meant to divide it among themselves. The suit of 1695 was not, however, precisely derived from Dexter, being brought by Mary Daffern and Martha Padishall, heiresses of Richard Woody, of Boston, who was understood to have taken a mortgage upon Nahant from some of the Indians direct. The claimants were nonsuited and paid costs. But a more formidable claim was earlier made by Edward Randolph, who was secretary of Andros, the usurping governor, in 1688. He attempted to grant the peninsula to Randolph, who was his favorite; but the people of Lynn wrestled with him for a whole year, till, those of Boston joining, the governor was seized and imprisoned, and his tyranny and titles all disappeared together.

The first inhabitation of Nahant is not well made out, but it surely was not occupied for fixed residence by any one for many years after the settlement of Lynn. For a long time it was supposed that no white man lived on Nahant prior to James Mills, who is found there in his own house in 1690. But Lewis modified this view by discovering Robert Coats dwelling there in 1673, whom he calls the second inhabitant. But whether by this reckoning he refers to the Indian chief, Poquanum, or Black William, who was called the original owner, or to some white man whom he fails to specify by name, is uncertain. More recent researches are said to show that Hugh Alley, who was a new settler of Lynn in 1640, established himself in some sense at Nahant about that time, and possessed a large farming tract there which he called "Hopewell." It is further said that disagreements between him and one Dr. Burchstead compelled him to give up his land; and that he left it, imprecating the curse upon it that every future proprietor should bear the plague of lawsuits as he had. The amusing tradition has been almost literally fulfilled.

Robert Coats was probably only a resident fisherman, as Lewis thinks; but Mills lived near the present centre of the town for about twenty-six years. When he died, about 1717, his successor, Dr. Burchstead, sold the property to Samuel Breed, who built the hotel since called Whitney's. This same year, the third house was built by Jeremiah, uncle of the celebrated William Gray; and this finally became the property of Caleb Johnson and his descendants. Both these houses remain in good condition, but the Mills house seems to have disappeared. It cannot be far from this same time that we must date the arrival there of the large family of Johnson, who have ever since been the leading name in the place. They appear to be partly from the original stock now spoken of, that is, from Jonathan Johnson, who bought the old mansion of Gray, about 1770, and partly from a later immigration, having no direct affinity with the former. But however this may have been, the Johnsons have for many years outnumbered all other families in the town.

One other house had been built before 1800, by Jabez Breed, who sold to Richard Hood. In fact, this was apparently built before the Gray house, so that by this time there must have been four, if not five dwellings, within the town. The place by this time had begun to enjoy its coming reputation as a watering-place, and though not yet the resort of distinguished Americans and foreigners of rank, was, by 1815, in the height of its good name as a resort for picnic and chowder parties from all the country round. In Medford, for example, it was a fixed custom to join in such visits to Nahant several times in a season.

But the fame of the lovely island-group was not slow in developing. Another large house, intended for public entertainment, had been

built, in 1800, on West Nahant, by Joseph Johnson. But a little after, Aug. 28, 1803, this house was burned to the ground, the family just escaping. It was afterward rebuilt, and, in the favorable attention now given to the place by wealthy families, passed into the hands of Wendell Phillips, Esq., where it has since remained. The hotel enterprise in this direction was ended; but a second such establishment was meanwhile opened by Jesse Rice in the principal village, and, in 1819, this kind of effort culminated in the erection of the "Nahant Hotel," by Thomas H. Perkins and Edward H. Robbins. It was set on the extreme eastern end of Great Nahant, was partly a stone structure, and cost about sixty thousand dollars. It did a large and favorable business for some time, but finally fell into partial disuse. It was at length taken by Paran Stevens, of Boston, supported by a company in which were prominent Hons. Francis S. Newhall and Daniel C. Baker, of Lynn. A great enlargement was made and a splendid business done for some years; but again the profits declined, and the property was neglected. Finally, at a time when the whole was vacant, it was utterly destroyed by fire, Sept. 12, 1861, making one of the most brilliant conflagrations ever seen hereabout. Since then the proper hotel business has been mostly confined to the old "Whitney House," the later establishment of Mr. Rice having been given up.

In the meantime a different class of summer entertainment had begun here. The "Relay House" was established in 1861, by Nathan Mower, of Lynn, not far from the Phillips mansion on West Nahant, and became a place of much resort. The "Hood Cottage," near the east end of Pond Beach, was opened somewhat later. These, as also the other about to be named, only ministered to the wants of summer parties, and took no boarders.

In 1825, Frederick Tudor, Esq., of Boston, turned his attention to Nahant, built a fine cottage residence, and gave great and successful attention to horticulture and the general benefit of the place. His relations to Nahant are full of interest. But at last, in 1859, he decided to lay out and adorn a tract of pleasant, sloping ground, near his house, for a place of public resort. It was on the north-eastern shore of Great Nahant, and possessed a pretty spring of water among the rocky crags. This he collected into an artificial pool, for which he transposed the name "Siloam," and called both this and the ornamental grounds which he laid out around it by the title "Maolis." Other waters were conducted thither from a reservoir on higher ground; and the groves of trees and pavilions of shade soon became, and have always proved, prime attractions to the seekers of pleasure, who know the "Maolis Gardens" for many a mile around.

With the established population, however, summer boarding has long been the chief business. Only a section of the place has been thus engaged, however; for the eastern third of Great Nahant was early sold in lots to wealthy parties for summer cottages, and in the winter it is almost tenantless. The other extremity, next the beach, is occupied, with few exceptions, by the laboring people of the town. Only the middle remains for the original families, and of these very little is seen in the warm season. The abundant wealth thus attracted to Nahant, with the unchangeable limits of the township, have led to its being more lightly taxed than any other town in the Commonwealth. Yet the appropriations suffice to make the public works and ways equal to those of any private possession. The streets are beautifully even, set with abundant trees, and fully lighted. Public buildings are not numerous, but very good and pleasant; a Catholic church appears in the northerly quarter; a Methodist in the old, or middle, section; and an Episcopal chapel, of choice design, first built in 1832, serves the numerous distinguished parties who sojourn here in the warm season. A fine school building and a town hall are likewise noticed.

Communication is sufficiently secured with the mainland by an excellent road over Long Beach, built in 1848, at the joint expense of the town of Lynn and people of Nahant, and with the capital by a steamboat, which runs, in the summer, several trips in a day, and gives the place much activity. West Nahant, being largely open pasture, is permitted to pleasure parties and is in constant use in warm weather.

The industries of the town are not numerous. A considerable amount is done in fishing, and some little ship-building has also been had. A sixteen-ton schooner was built here, in 1858, by J. & E. Johnson. The catching of lobsters has been, and perhaps now is, more than anything else, the leading industry; great numbers being trapped for the Boston trade.

The isolated position of Nahant always made her connection with Lynn somewhat equivocal; and after the incorporation of the latter and the separation of Swampscott, she struck for her own independence, and was made a town March 29, 1853, with, perhaps, the smallest population ever incorporated in the State. The census of 1860 found only 380 persons there, though some increase must have happened meanwhile. By 1875 it was up to 766, with 169 voters. There were then 1,777 dwellings and 154 families. The town had then no manufactures, save what might be reckoned to carpentry; and only $66 invested in mechanic industry; and it is certainly remarkable that she alone, of all the towns in the State, reported a total blank in all departments of agricultural effort. Neither had she a pauper or a convict; but her school-children were 134, at whose service were buildings worth $10,000, and other property worth $300 more.

With more of space, an interesting description might be given of the many curiosities of this place. The Swallows' Cave, the Spouting Horn, Pulpit Rock, and Natural Bridge are most attractive. Much might be said of the assemblage of eminent talent that has happened here, including such residents as Longfellow, Agassiz, Prescott, Motley, Willis, and Felton; but the limits of our sketch forbid further expansion.

NEWBURY.

CHAPTER I.

ITS DISCOVERY — LOCATION — ABORIGINAL INHABITANTS, AND WHITE SETTLEMENT.

When first the white man visited the place where the town now is, or even the county or State in which it is, we do not determine. It seems scarcely possible even that, taking the thousands of fishermen annually on the Banks of Newfoundland, some should not have held their way to the mainland, and skirted the coast before Cabot, or even Columbus, for that fleet of fishermen from France, Spain, and England, comprised full four hundred sail, in a single season, within a half century of Columbus's first voyage. But our history begins not with them; they left no records. But in the summer of 1605, a little barque of fifteen tons, commanded by Samuel Champlain, the most energetic of all the French navigators, explorers, or settlers, having on board Pierre Guast, Sieur de Monts, who was Vice-Admiral and Lieutenant-General of "New France," with viceregal powers, with some twenty seamen, and an Indian pilot, coasted along what is now the New England shores, on a voyage of discovery. The year before, they had come from France with two ships, and some eighty persons, and founded a settlement on the island of St. Croix, in Passamaquoddy Bay, where during the winter one-half their number had died, and now they were looking for a more goodly land. No Colony, State, or town invited them: for this was three years before Jamestown was founded, in Virginia; two years before Popham's settlement near the mouth of the Kennebec; and fifteen years before Plymouth. One vast solitude of waters and rough lands, with a rock-bound coast, was around them. No church-spire crowned a hill; no sail whitened the waters; no civilized man hailed them; and only a scattered Indian population answered visits to the shore, or came out in their birch or wooden canoes to receive gifts, or return presents of corn, beans, tobacco, squashes, or esculent roots, grown on the rudely cultivated patches near their wigwams. On sailed that brave little barque along the strangely indented shores of Maine, across the bays, by the river-mouths and headlands and surf-washed islands; over the reefs and sunken ledges; in sight of Mt. Desert, down to the Isles of Shoals, to Cape Ann, and the highlands of Cape Cod. Passing this point, they cast anchor off the mouth of the Merrimac, to which, in honor of De Monts, Champlain gave the name La Riviere du Guast, not doubting that its French designation would go down to the ages. Failing to find such a location as he desired, De Monts returning eastward, made his settlement at Arcadia, now Annapolis, Nova Scotia; and that failure may have determined whether the Merrimac Valley was to be in New France or New England. What became of his settlement, what was the fate of the Arcadians, has it not all been written in prose and poetry?

Nine years later, in 1614, came another explorer and navigator, more eccentric and more romantic, but equally brave and daring — John Smith — John Smith, the founder of Jamestown, the pioneer settler of the great State of Virginia. He came from the opposite direction, doubling Cape Cod, and coasted eastward to the Penobscot. He mapped the shore from Cape Ann beyond the Isles of Shoals, which islands he discovered and gave to them his own name. He looked more favorably upon the beauty of the lands within the lower end than about the upper end of Plum Island. The scenery is there very pleasing; the beautifully rounded bluffs, the hills, then wooded it may be, the broad marshes, the islands, the streams flowing into Plum Island Sound, the rich pastures and lands suited to cultivation, the abundance of fishes, birds, seals, &c., all these may have pleased him; while it is scarcely possible that he did not explore the Merrimac, though he made little account of it on his map. His voyage eastward overlapped Champlain's westward, as did the land-grants of the old countries, that of Francis I. of France to De Monts, covering the whole country, even south of Massachusetts Bay, including that granted by James of England to the Plymouth company; and as early as the very first years of the seventeenth century, commenced that conflict for possession which virtually terminated, more than a hundred and fifty years after, on the Heights of Abraham, at Quebec, where the brave Gen. Wolf, and the no less gallant Montcalm, gave their lives for their respective countries in decisive battle.

But some years were to elapse before the history of Newbury should begin. George Popham had made a settlement at Pemequod, near the mouth of the Kennebec, in 1607, but had returned to England the ensuing year. Not yet had the hand of Providence performed the last preparatory work in opening the wilderness for another race of men. The Indians were many, and hostile to the occupation by the "pale faces"; but, in 1617, came the plague that swept them off in multitudes, till the panic-stricken red-man waited not to bury his dead. They rotted in the woods, and on the river banks, and in their wigwams; and many of those left by the plague a few years after were victims of the small-pox: so that not above 50,000 Indians could be found in all New England when the tide of white immigration began.

The settlement of the Massachusetts coast was rapid for that age of the world. In 1633, English ships arrived with their living cargoes; and, in 1634, twenty-two, on one of which was Thomas Parker and his company of about 100 souls, our great ancestors. So rapidly came the immigrants that frequently the new towns had more people than they could accommodate. Tradition has it that the Newbury people, in the winter of 1634–35, camped upon one of the hills near the mouth of Ipswich River.

Hubbard, in his history of New England, says that Agawam was so filled with inhabitants that some of them were obliged to swarm. In 1633, the Court ordered that no person should go to Agawam (Ipswich) to inhabit without leave of the Court.

Now, we may properly inquire, Why this haste to settle the country east of Boston? De Monts, as we have seen, was looking for a proper place to locate, and nominally the country had been granted to the French; and, only that the St. Lawrence opened to a more inviting field, a contest at arms could not then have been avoided.

Winthrop writes in his History of New England, under date of 1632–33: "The governor having intelligence that the French had bought the Scottish plantation near Cape Sable, and that the fort and all the ammunition were delivered to them, and that the cardinal having the managing thereof, had sent some companies already, and that preparations were made to send many more the next year, and divers priests and Jesuits among them, called his assistants to Boston, the ministers, the captains, and some other chief men, to advise what was fit to be done for our safety, in regard to the French likely to prove ill neighbors, being papists." Oftentimes he calls them "French Jesuites." In that council it was determined that a plantation should be begun at Agawam, "least the enemy, finding it void, should possess and take it from us." So important did he deem it that the governor sent his own son with twelve men to commence the work. Two years later, in 1634, the General Court granted liberty to this same John Winthrop, Jr., to set up a trading-house upon the Merrimac River, showing how rapidly, for that period, they were endeavoring to cover the country. It is, therefore, literally true, as the town record of 1752 says, "for religion's sake our fathers left their native shore," &c. Gov. Hutchinson remarks: "The Massachusetts people took possession of the country at a very critical time," and he points to the French exploration under De Monts to prove it, adding, "it does not appear that they went round or to the bottom of Massachusetts Bay. Had they once gained footing there, they would have prevented the English."

Gov. Winthrop undoubtedly created a fever of excitement, both at home and in England, and fleets of vessels came over from year to year, for nothing so spurs men to action as religious zeal or animosity. It was a crusade for the possession of the "promised land," in which, however, their material interests seem never to have been forgotten.

Not only were the settlers hastened towards the eastern frontier, but great care was had of "the manner of men" they should be, and,

therefore, the Court forbade any to go without its permission; and when some "misliked" had already settled at Agawam, the governor forthwith authorized their removal. Our forefathers, therefore, we may rest assured, were a goodly, zealous, Christian people. They were the wheat of old England, and they were sifted after their arrival in the province, and none but the most stable and reliable permitted to settle in the new towns, consecrated as they were to industry, piety and freedom. Therefore, this Essex County has been, as all our annals show, in its spirit, its industry, its culture, and its morals, inferior to no other equal territory on the face of the globe. As the fathers, so their sons! As the mothers, so their daughters, from the beginning to this day.

CHAPTER II.

FROM 1635 TO 1642 — THE ERA OF THE OLD TOWN.

At this day, we have little idea of the difficulty of travelling, when there were not only no expresses, stages, or railroads, but farm-wagons and horses were very few, and no roads had yet been laid out for their use. The travel was by foot-paths winding through the unbroken woods, that could be trodden only by men, armed against the wild Indians and wild beasts, which now and then showed themselves in the forests, but shrank from the face of civilization. It should not surprise us, therefore, to find that Parker and his company reached their destination by water, the natural highway for a new country. They left their camping ground on the left bank of the Agawam, which river connects with the Merrimac by Plum Island Sound, which may have had better water for navigation then than now, the Merrimac being more obstructed by sands at its mouth, and sending a larger volume of water through the sound, over Ipswich bar. That, however, is not certain, as we find the town, in its petition, a dozen years later, to have a grant of all Plum Island, representing that they usually crossed to the island, the sound being dry in some places, and in many passable with carts and horses; and, moreover, that Plum Island "in many places is not distant ten rods, and in no place is a hundred rods from low water mark." From this it would appear that the water has not changed since; but still Parker found it deep enough to be of easy transit for vessels of sixty tons, and such were in trans-Atlantic trade at that period.

The settlers passed up the sound till they reached the beautiful Quascacunquen, as the Indians called it, which the early records call the "Great River," and we, in later times, the river Parker, in honor of the first minister. At a short distance up, making in the whole passage not over five miles, they landed on the north bank, just below where the bridge stands to-day; and there, tradition has it, Nicholas Noyes, a cousin to Mr. Parker, and whose descendants are many at this day, and not a few distinguished men, first leaped to the shore. The little company consisted of twenty-two men, their wives and children and servants. They were Mr. Henry Sewall and his servants, — he was the rich man of the party, and had abundant cattle; William Moody, his wife and four sons; Anthony Short, Henry Short and wife; Mr. John Spencer; Mr. Nicholas Easton, his wife and son John; Richard Kent, Sr., and Stephen Kent, with their wives; Mr. Thomas Parker; Mr. James Noyes and wife; Mr. John Woodbridge, and his brother Nicholas; Thomas, Richard, and George Brown; Mr. James Brown and wife; Thomas Coleman; Francis Plumer and wife, with his two sons, Joseph and Samuel; and a few others, some of whose names have not reached us.

Even now, when migration is so speedy and so easy, a party of emigrants, with their homes and friends behind, and an unknown country and future before them, presents a sad and a queer appearance; and then much more strange must have been the picture. In the boats were those who had left goodly estates to come here — men rich and honored, women pious and devoted, children weak and timid, — with their household goods and gods, mementoes of places of birth and friends to be seen no more. The primeval forests — the giant oaks, the wide-spreading elms, and the graceful willows at the water side, welcomed them: but no house — that was to be built; no home — that was to be made; no friendly hand was extended, and no kindly voice cheered them. Alone with nature and God, trusting to their own right hands and their own brave hearts, they were to begin life in the wilderness. Before nightfall, their merchandise and their cattle were landed, their camp pitched, and the sentinels posted to guard against surprise. They gathered in a little group, and the singing of a psalm and the voice of prayer closed the first day in Newbury. On the morrow, the ring of the axe on the trees which never saw axe before, and the smoke of their fires, were the evidences of the settlement at the Lower Green.

The first task was the erection of huts or wigwams, till the more substantial log-cabin could be had, for, as yet, there were no saw-mills. These were, of course, low, floorless, windowless, and smoky, not most agreeable for our maternal ancestors, though some of the log-houses, which followed immediately, were substantial and comfortable buildings. One built by Richard Dummer and John Spencer, by order of the Court, as the "Bound house," in Seabrook, within two years, is standing to the present day. But we may be certain that generally the mere shelters — on poles, or fastened to the trees, or dug into the sides of the hill — with the summer rains dripping through the roof, and the winter snows blowing through the crevices, while the cattle, sick from the wild fodder, bellowed without, and the wolves, in search of sheep and swine, left their tracks at the door, — were not most agreeable homes.

But while they were among the poorest of civilized men in the provisions and blessings that money can give, their resolve was firm set that they would excel in holiness of heart and spiritual life. So we find them gathered by Mr. Parker, under a wide-spreading oak, on the banks of the river, and there in the "open ayre" he preached from Matthew xviii. 17: "And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the church; and if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican." He laid down the principles of the government to be established. The church was the governing power, — a finality. After the sermon, the people joined in covenant whereby they established the church; and then they elected Thomas Parker pastor of the first church in Newbury, which was the tenth in Massachusetts; and they also elected James Noyes, his cousin, their teacher.

These were two of the seven of the company allowed to prefix Mr. to their names. They were among the most learned men of their day, in some respects inferior to none who have succeeded them in that or any other church in the town or country. The meeting-house, which was likewise the school and the town-house, was on land now owned by Albert Plummer, one of the descendants of Francis, who have held the paternal acres through all the years to this date.

During this year, eighteen ships brought emigrants from England to the Province, many of whom came to Newbury, for it soon had a goodly reputation. Among them were John and Robert Pike, John Emery, John Bailey, John, Jr., and others, — names familiar to us away down our annals. Also Richard Dummer, the richest man in town for many years, from whose loins sprang Gov. Dummer, the founder of the academy, — a family as liberal as wealthy; and John Spencer, likewise of means and enterprise, who afterwards built the stone-house on the Little farm, just below the Upper Green, which he owned. Among other persons who came was Mr. Avery, a minister, with his cousin, Anthony Thatcher. He was persuaded by the magistrates to settle in Marblehead; but, on the way by water, the vessel was wrecked off Cape Ann, on Avery's Rock, so called from him; and he, his wife and children, and others were drowned: all on board but Anthony Thatcher and his wife, who were cast upon an island near by, called Thatcher's Island from that event.

So we find the town peaceful, prosperous, and happy at the close of the first year. It was the largest town, territorially, in the Province, — ten miles long, and six broad at the widest, containing 28,000 acres of land, and 2,000 acres of water. The settlers came rightfully in possession: first, by finding it unoccupied — there were not twenty Indians in the whole territory; second, by legal grant; and, third, by payment of money, subsequently, to the heir of the Sagamore of Agawam, who had all the Indian claim that could exist.

After they had established society, the civil and religious intermingling, they next divided the lands, except those which, for the time, were to lie in common, and woods and pasture lands, and those left for specific purposes, as twenty acres of thatch for free roof-thatching; or those granted specifically, as five hundred acres had been to Richard Dummer, to induce his settlement. The division was with justice to all, keeping in view the public good and the future growth of the settlement. Every person had his four acres for a house-lot, his right to pasturage, and his part of the salt-marsh, which was then, and ever since has been, esteemed by the farmer. To every person who paid the transportation of himself and family were given fifty acres. Fifty acres were allotted to any person who sent out an able-bodied man, so that adventurers or speculators at

home might become land-owners. Two hundred acres were allotted to any person who should invest fifty pounds in the common stock. This was an invitation to men of means, who evidently improved it, for Richard Dummer had 1,000 acres. John Clark, the first physician, who was exempted from taxes on account of his profession, had 540 acres. Edward Rawson, a man of learning and worth and wealth, the first local judge, a man in much public business, had 501 acres. He afterwards built what is now the Pillsbury house, which was purchased of him and has remained in Pillsbury hands ever since, in ward six of Newburyport, on High Street; and back of that he had his farm in the "new town," when that was laid out. Afterwards, being appointed secretary of the Province, to their great loss he removed to Boston. He was one of the most accomplished among the first citizens. Among his descendants is Judge Taft, of Ohio, ex-Attorney-General of the United States Henry Sewall, who was the first importer of cattle, the ancestor of the Judges Sewall, had 630 acres; and thence they went down to ten acres, the lowest.

Two events we notice in 1635. The first white child born was Mary, daughter of Thomas Brown, who afterwards married Peter Godfrey, and lived to be eighty-six, "of good repute as a maid & wife, and a widow." The first boy was born the next year, Joshua, son of Edward Woodman, who lived to his sixty-seventh year; and from these two cases we may believe the place not to have been unhealthy.

The next event was this: Francis Plumer was licensed to keep a tavern. He was the ancestor of a stalwart race, who have multiplied, and many of them became distinguished in different States. The first white child born in Pennsylvania, west of the Alleghanies, was of his lineage; and of members of Congress, thirty years ago, five had sprung from him. One of them was Gov. Plumer, of New Hampshire, the only elector of 1816 who cast his vote against James Monroe. To establish the tavern was no small affair, and we may believe that he was of excellent character and good standing in the church, or he would not have been selected. The colonists had been accustomed to town-life in England, and they were not willing to endure the solitude of the winter's day and the long nights without the solaces and pleasures of the "ordinary." We must remember that they had no club-rooms, no daily mails with letters, no newspapers, no lyceums, no caucuses, no places of amusement, and the tavern was the only week-day place for gossip and discussions, and, when they were in their happiest moods, for planning future industries. It was an "institution" for a wilderness settlement, to which there was no road, where in the solitude every man carried his matchlock with him to the church or field, and where from the summit of the hill a sentry kept a strict look-out over land and sea, against invasion. They were undoubtedly pleased to hear the voices of Parker and Noyes, but in a town where it was contrary to law to live more than a half mile from the meeting-house, and John Kelly, for building a house on the north side of Oldtown hill, was told, by vote of the town, that his blood should be on his own head if he lost his life in consequence, the villagers were not to be denied the associations and pleasures of the tavern. So Francis Plumer was licensed, and we imagine he stood next in rank to the preacher and the teacher.

The next year (1636) the town was more fully organized by the choice of selectmen; the seven wise men who were to act "from quarter to quarter." They were: Edward Woodman, John Woodbridge, Henry Short, Christopher Hussey, Richard Kent, Richard Brown. John Woodbridge was register or clerk. Selectmen had a wider field of operation than now. They were to keep order, punish offenders against rules, and be the advisers in many transactions. The Court also provided for moderators of town-meetings, and ordered the mode of business. By law the voters were obliged to attend town-meetings, and fined if they did not. They were to leave, only on permission, and in an orderly and decorous manner. John Pike, who with his son, Robert, and three others, had been fined, in 1638, for being absent, "having due and fitt warning," was less than three months thereafter fined 2*s.* 6*d.* for departing from the meeting without leave and contemptuously.

These Pikes afterwards removed to Salisbury, where they manifested the same contempt for what they thought improper restraint, and Robert having declared that the persons who passed the law "restraining unfit persons from constant preaching," which was intended to punish the Quakers, "did break their oath to their country," was declared guilty of defaming the General Court, and disfranchised, disabled from holding public office, put under bonds to keep the peace, and fined twenty marks, which was between thirteen and fourteen pounds. This caused so great a commotion that, on petition of the citizens of many towns, the sentence was remitted. Mr. Pike, known as the "Most Worshipful Major Robert Pike," lived to be very old, filled the most important local trusts, and died full of honors. Still the law remained and was often enforced. The town-meeting, however, was limited in its operations, as was the voting. It was no part of the mission of our fathers to establish equality among men. The freemen were the voters, and the right of the majority was the rule of action. Individualism was ignored. For the choice of the higher officers the law required all the freemen of the Province, that is, all who were qualified by taking the freeman's oath, to meet at the General Court of electors to choose the magistrates, of whom the governor and lieutenant-governor were the chief. This continued to 1637, and in that year we find that ten men walked to Cambridge on foot, to take their oath, that they might vote against the re-election of Sir Henry Vane for governor. We can believe that they valued the right of suffrage, and that politics ran high, when men went forty miles on foot, with their matchlocks on their shoulders, to give their votes. The laws limited the governing class to these freemen, and the town was fined for electing a representative not a freeman.

The General Court assumed the power to do whatever the public good, in their judgment, required, and they decided what a man might say; what do; what eat; what wear. They didn't like long hair, because the Cavaliers in England, who were also Papists, wore long flowing locks, while the Puritans cut theirs short; so long hair was devilish. They took into consideration the dresses of women, forbidding the use of lace, except as a binding or edging on costly cloth, unless it could be afforded. So when three Newbury women were before the Court for wearing silk hoods and scarfs, they had to prove, as justification, that their husbands were worth £200, while one, Mrs. Swett, not being able to do that, was fined ten shillings. So the men were restricted even to the buttons on their coats. Likewise the tongue was bridled, and a sailor having said that all were traitors and rebels who left the cross out of the royal colors, as some did in hatred of Papacy, was thrust into prison; nor was he released till a written confession of his rashness was made. In the observance of the Sabbath they were exceedingly strict, tithingmen patrolling the streets with long, white-headed poles, to prevent any unnecessary work or travelling on Lord's Day; a rule which came down to within a half century, for till then the tithingman had lived. In the church, they saw that all were in their proper places (for all families were to attend public worship regularly, and their absence to be marked) and that all behaved properly.

Aquilla Chase, who had been induced to remove from Hampton, and had a house-lot, planting field, and marsh land allotted him, "if he would go to see and serve with his boat," that is, be a pilot on the river, was brought before the Court, in 1666, with his wife, and David Wheeler, her brother, and ordered to be admonished for picking peas on Sunday, their fines being remitted. From this Chase have sprung many noted men, as Philander Chase, a distinguished Episcopal bishop, and Salmon P. Chase, who was governor of Ohio, a senator in Congress, and Chief Justice of the United States. The house-lot given Aquilla Chase, on which he picked the peas, was near the Three Roads, now in the sixth ward, Newburyport.

We have noticed events in this connection without regard to dates. But at the end of the second year we find the town well established, with its regular quarterly town-meetings, its selectmen and town clerk, its justice court, its stocks, and other means of punishing offenders, its military and its tax-gatherer; and as its tax was nearly half as much as Salem, and a third as much as Boston, Newbury must have been a thrifty settlement. This was also indicated by prices: corn brought 4*s.*; wheat, 6*s.*; cows were worth £25 or £30 and a pair of bulls or oxen, £40; and Dummer, Spencer, Sewall, Cotton and others, had many cattle, and broad fields sown to grain to supply the new families moving in. It was an era of inflation, without a paper currency; but they had legal tender, as musket-balls, Indian wampum, cattle, beavers, grain, &c., at fixed values. The great influx of immigrants, twenty ships with 3,000 people coming in 1638, and new settlements forming all around, requiring merchandise, made flush times, and men grew rich. They pulled down their barns and builded bigger; they extended their fences and ploughed broader fields; and every thing went swimming on to 1640, when changes at home and in England checked population, and revulsion followed. "Neither money or beaver were to be had," says Winthrop. Demand ceased, prices fell, corn was of no value, and cattle were unsalable. Even Gov. Winthrop himself so suffered, "in his outward estate," that the elders took subscriptions of £500, of which Richard Dummer paid one-fifth part, indicating his financial ability. Then, says Winthrop, the times

were so hard that men could not pay their debts, though they had enough; and he who three months before was worth £2,000, could not receive £200 if he should sell his whole estate. But as after the night cometh the morn, so better times followed this first depression as they have all the financial crises since, following each other like the waves of the sea, one at least in every quarter of a century.

The first homes must, as we have said, have been very rude—mere wigwams, made tight with clay; the chimneys built of clay and sticks; without windows, or hardware supplies; and paint had not been mentioned or thought of. So saw-mills must be built.

Richard Dummer and George Spencer built the first saw and grist mill at the "Falls," and from that came the lumber for the first farm-houses, which were well built, as the John Poore house, on the south side of the Parker, where eight generations of his descendants have followed him; and the Noyes house on Parker Street, the Putnam house on High, at the head of Marlborough Street, with others, which have seen more than two centuries, some of them possibly undergoing such changes as to leave little of the original materials.

It was about this time that Rowley, Salisbury, Hampton, and other new towns, drew many families from Newbury; but others came in, not only to fill their places, but to start new industries. It was in 1639 that Anthony Somerby, the first school-master, came over, and the Lowells — John, Richard, and Percival — from whom we have had jurists, clergymen, scholars, poets, manufacturers, of whom the State and nation have been proud. They were merchants, as were William Gerrish and Richard Dole, from Bristol, England. The last-named, from his business, was called "Marchant" Dole. In 1640, also, we had Robert Adams, Henry Jaques, and George Little, whose descendants have increased to this day, and hold the destinies and fame of the old town in their keeping. They all located on the Parker, or not far above it; and as yet it is not mentioned that one vessel had ever been over the Merrimac bar, though undoubtedly some had. But there at Oldtown the first vessels were employed in the fisheries, and in the foreign trade; and we hear of John Knight, that he should have a lot of land if he would follow fishing; and of Thomas Milward, who owned a "shallop"; and Capt. John Cutting, ship-master; and all of these were encouraged by subsidies or exemptions. The ship-builder and the fisherman were excused from military training, and all estates employed in catching, making, and transporting fish, were exempted from taxes; while lots of land were granted, called "fishermen's lots." There was, also, much improvement by building roads, which were no light burdens, the first great road being from the Merrimac River to Hingham, the most southern settlement, which in that day must have been equal to the building of the Boston and Albany Railroad in ours. They also provided ferries over the rivers. The first over the Merrimac was at Carr's Island, which had its name from George Carr, a carpenter, building vessels there, a quarter of one of which he sold to William Hilton, of Newbury, for James, an Indian slave, to be his servant forever. Carr built a floating bridge from the north side of the island to Salisbury shore, five feet wide and 270 long; and that was the first bridge in Massachusetts. On the Newbury side Tristram Coffin was ferryman, who also kept a tavern; and his wife, Dionis, was indicted for selling beer at threepence a quart, which was more than the legal price; but she was discharged when it was proved that she used six bushels of malt to the hogshead, while the law only required four. This Tristram Coffin, after living in Newbury, Haverhill, and Salisbury, with other persons in the last-named town, purchased and removed to Nantucket. His descendants are numerous, and include many distinguished persons; among them the British admiral, Sir Isaac Coffin.

Though the town had been exceedingly prosperous from the first, with the exception of the financial revulsion of 1640, and was rich in cattle and sheep, in its fisheries and agriculture, in its trade and its marshes which were especially esteemed by the early settlers, and have never ceased to enrich their owners, still we may not dream that this Arcadian settlement saw and feared no troubles. They faced many storms, and, in their ignorance of the country, feared many dangers. They went armed when no enemies appeared; they watched for convulsions of nature that never came to harm them. Still their fears were not groundless, for there were stubborn facts. On July 5th, 1643, a cyclone swept over the place, crushing down "multitudes of trees," and lifting the meeting-house from its foundations when the people were there assembled. They discovered, also, that they were in an earthquake region, and as early as 1638 one broke upon them like a clap of thunder from a clear sky, and the earth shook violently. This was on the same day that Ætna had a startling irruption, and the city of Euphemia, in Calabria, was swallowed up. Earthquakes are always terrifying; and they have followed in frequent succession from that day to our own; as in 1643, 1663, 1685, and so down, one very violent being in 1727, when the sea roared, the earth bellowed like a stricken animal, and the heavens echoed back their cries. The chimneys and stone-walls were thrown down, springs were dried up and new ones opened, great chasms were rent in the earth, from which was thrown a material that burned blue like brimstone, and to many of that day it seemed as though the end of the world was at hand and hell opened. A still greater and more terrible one occurred in 1755, when all nature stood aghast, and men and cattle were alike overcome with fear; when the birds were frightened and the dogs howled, and no living thing knew what to do. That was of the same date of the destruction of Lisbon and other places in Europe. Hundreds of shocks have been felt here; perhaps as many in the Merrimac Valley as anywhere on this continent.

Neither were our fathers without alarm on account of the climate, which, while it may have been milder, as a whole, before the forests were destroyed, at times was severely rigorous; and when Winthrop says, in 1642, that "all Boston bay was frozen over, so much and so long, as the like, by the Indian relations, had not been known for forty years, and it continued from the 1st of November to the 21st of February, so as horses and carts went over in many places where ships had sailed," we cannot help inquiring what did the people poorly clad and poorly sheltered, many of the houses without floors, and none of them having proper means of heating? and what did they at meeting, where no fires were had, and the services were hours in duration, the preacher never omitting a "thirdly" or a "tenthly" of his discourse for human accommodation? But all the winters were not like that; some were milder than we have seen in a whole generation of this century. In the very next, in 1643, there was no snow, and very little rain, to the 3d of March; and two years later, after ploughing every month, with no snow till February 16th, snow then fell so deep that the ways were impassable for three weeks. It is very unsafe, without examination, to say that it is the coldest or warmest winter ever known, for within ten years of the settlement of Newbury the record ran to each extreme, as far as within the last fifty years.

Nor was the moral condition different from to-day. With all the laws to regulate life, among a people morally firm and religiously heroic, there were not only boyish pranks played in the face of severe manhood, the usual amount of gossip and scandal among the women, and lapses from virtue among the men, but quite frequently startling crimes. It was only two years from the settlement when William Schooler, having undertaken to guide and protect a poor maid, Mary Sholy, from the Merrimac to her master, dwelling at Piscataquack, murdered her before the journey was more than half accomplished, and was hanged therefor in Boston. So William Franklin, one of the first settlers in Newbury, but afterwards in Roxbury, was hanged for the murder of an apprentice whom most brutally he had treated. Human nature was the same with them as it had been with their fathers in the old world, and is now with their children two centuries after they are dead. The lights and shadows came and went then as now, and ever will; only this, the severity of character and the sturdiness of conduct required, caused more convictions for violent crimes. Thus we find several women hanged for destroying illegitimate children, whose birth — no offence on the part of the children certainly — shadowed both mothers and offspring for life. One in Ipswich was hanged for that offence; one here who killed two; and another in Haverhill, who killed three illegitimates. In the same grooves seems the race to run from age to age.

CHAPTER III.

FROM FORMING THE NEW TOWN TO THE INCORPORATION OF NEWBURYPORT.

In 1642 there were thirty towns in the Province: and the next year it was divided into four counties: Essex, Suffolk, Middlesex, and Norfolk, the last-named north of the Merrimac, covering part of south-eastern New Hampshire. From that, when the boundaries of the Provinces were fixed, the three miles north of the Merrimac were added to Essex, making the territory of the county what it is and has been ever since.

In 1643 came the confederation of the four Colonies,—Massachusetts, Plymouth, Connecticut, New Haven,—which was the precedent for the

confederation of the States before the constitutional union. The league was for general purposes, and especially for protection in war; and great care was taken to preserve its local rights to each. Bancroft in his history notes that State rights date back to that compact, which existed only by the will of the parties thereto. The confederation ended in 1665, when the white population of New England was 65,000, and of Massachusetts, 25,000.

The growth of Newbury was relatively more rapid than of the Colony, the population reaching in 1642 about 600. They were scattered over a large area, some seven miles from south of the Parker to the Artichoke River, and from the Merrimac to Dummer's Falls. Then commenced the agitation for the new town. They had discovered the superiority of the Merrimac, full of salmon and shad and sturgeon, and many other valuable fishes. It connected Newbury with Salisbury, Haverhill, Andover; was the natural route for trade; and the "riverside" was in most of its interests distinct from the Lower Green village. Hence, a committee was raised to consider the common property, and the division of the pastures. First, they determined that six hundred acres, chiefly what is now West Newbury, should be a perpetual common. It was regarded as waste land, save the meadows and what might be needed for timber cutting. It seemed distant, and it should be remembered that for seventy years thereafter Haverhill was a frontier town. It was called the "Upper Woods" and the "Upper Commons." Three other pastures were made, of 563 rights each, for cows, oxen, and heifers; and those rights were divided among the freeholders, the lowest to any person being one, and the highest sixty-two and a quarter, to Richard Dummer. All the land divisions were on the rule "unto him that hath shall be given."

The petition for the "new town" set forth as reasons the scarcity of plough land, "fencing stuffs," and remoteness of the commons; and therefore a commission was instituted of eight men, for removing, settling and disposing of the inhabitants to such places as in their judgment might tend to their prosperity, and for exchanging their lands. A valuation of property was made, as a basis for division of lands. The house lot of each freeholder in the new town was to be four acres, and the residue to have a division on property as well as persons. The number of proprietors was 91, but was afterwards increased to 113. As the chartered, these proprietors, "commoners," held all the wastes and commons. This was the last division of lands till 1686, when the town divided the "Upper Commons," one half to the freeholders in equal parts, and the other half among the inhabitants, and such freeholders as had paid taxes in the two years past, in proportion to what each man paid to the minister's rate the year before. They also then divided 1,100 acres of the lower commons; and subsequently other lands in the same manner.

We may remember, in this connection, that a freeman, one who had taken the oath and was entitled to vote for magistrates, was different from a freeholder, who might not be a freeman, but who was entitled to a share of the undivided lands; and both different from the citizen, who could vote in a legal town meeting, but not in a freeman's meeting, or a freeholder's.

So we come to the "new town,"— a town within a town, and having no boundary in common except where it touched the Merrimac River. It extended from Parker Street, to which Parker and Noyes, the ministers, soon removed — on the south, to Jefferson Street, or Carr's Ferry, north, and, following down the river, came up to the Spencer or Stone house, on the Boardman farm, as it has since been called, comprising some 700 acres. The true reason for the formation of the "new town" had really nothing to do with the lands, but the fact that the people had reached a new industrial epoch — the era of manufactures and commerce. Boston and Salem were in ship building, so Newbury undoubtedly was, to some extent, on the Parker as high up as Thurlow's Bridge, and a very little on the Merrimac. George Carr, to whom Salisbury had ceded the island bearing his name, was then a ship-builder, as he certainly was in that business in 1659; and soon the Doles, Lowells, Gerrishes, Cuttings, and others, traders and artisans at home, moved up to the Upper Green, or above that, to pursue various occupations. They were called "riverside" people to distinguish them from farmers, though along High Street, Somerby, Kent, Rawson, Moody, and others had farms. The new town was also called the "port," to distinguish it from the "old town," and when Newburyport was incorporated, more than a century later, it included most of the "new town."

In the land division one lot was for John Indian, and then first is named in the records an Indian. He was probably John Sagamore, of Agawam, or Masconomo, whose original title covered all the lands from Bradford to Beverly, which were purchased of him by Winthrop in 1638, for £20. In 1701 the town purchased of Masconomo's heirs all claims. Previously they had bought of Great Town for £3, his lands near Indian Hill; and in 1663, Old Will, living at Dummer's Falls, sold to Richard Dummer and Henry Sewall his claims. His was the last Indian family in the town. The few here had been always peaceably disposed, and none from without gave trouble but once; that was in 1695, when they raided on Turkey Hill, and in the absence of the men plundered the house of John Brown, where they seized nine women and children, but being pursued abandoned their captives, who all returned home, save an infant killed by the Indians to prevent its cries bringing evil to themselves.

The first question giving rise to contention between the old and new towns was the location of the meeting-house. The population may then have reached 400, and the "riverside" people required services nearer home. The old town objected, and would keep the meeting-house at the "Lower Green," or have a separate church. The "riverside" party, however, carried, and it was removed to a knoll, where the burying-ground, above the Upper Green, was laid out. In that vicinity it has remained ever since. In 1655, the bell first sounded from its tower. In 1661, a new meeting-house was built. This had galleries, in which seats were preferred. Then there were no pews, — the men, women, and children were assigned their seats, and were obliged to retain them; the men on one side, the women on the other. When, sixteen years later, the selectmen permitted some young ladies to build a pew for themselves, the young men broke into the meeting-house and demolished it. We find, however, in 1687, that the young men wanted pews, and liberty was granted for eleven of them to build a pew in the gallery, and the young ladies did not retaliate and *destroy it*. In that was a pew for the minister's wife, by the pulpit stairs, and other pews were allowed: and Col. Daniel Pierce had his first choice, — he was one of the chief rulers in the synagogue; and Major Thomas Noyes the second choice. The town also voted a bell of 400 pounds; and between the ringing of the first and second bells, a flag was put up to warn the people that services were about to commence. In 1700, the third meeting-house was erected — a square, two story, hip-roof building, attractive for its time. That house endured to 1806, when the fourth took its place, which, in time, burned by lightning, yielded to the present edifice.

In 1648, the town meeting was held annually, and about this date the building of the roads was no small part of the public burden. There was a ferry on the Parker, another at Carr's Island, and in time a third at Bartlett's Cove, near Moulton Hill; while Richard Thurlow, at his own expense, had built a bridge where one now is over the Parker, leading to Dummer's Academy. These ferries located the main roads, which were over Carr's Ferry to Salisbury; from Carr's Ferry to Thurlow's Bridge, and thence to Beverly, Andover, and Haverhill; and by Amesbury Ferry to the Mills and Exeter. These were no slight undertakings for a sparse population.

The punishment for crimes is worthy of notice. In 1649 Thomas Scott "was fined 10*s*. unless he learn Mr. Norton's chatachise by the next term of the court." He chose to pay, probably esteeming it the lighter punishment. Drunkards were fined, set in the stocks, or made to stand at the meeting-house door, placarded "drunkard." There were many of this kind to punish, for unintoxicating drinks were few at that period, coffee not being introduced till a century later, and tea not for three-quarters of a century; and that they then drank to excess, as now, may be learned from the closing of all the taverns within a mile of the meeting-house on "lecture days." For lewdness and false swearing, convicts were placarded and exposed at the meeting-house; for lying they went to the whipping-post; for slander their tongues were pinched in the cleft of a stick; and for scolding they were gagged and ducked in water. For the strange offence of exposing herself naked in church, a Mrs. Lydia Wardwell, a religious fanatic who is vouched for as a chaste and modest woman, crazily led to the act on account of the conduct of the church towards her husband, was tied to a fence-post by the Ipswich Court House, in which she had been sentenced, and publicly whipped. Being a woman was no excuse for crime: and then women were sometimes jurors, as, in 1693, sitting as an inquest on the body of Elizabeth Hunt, they returned thus wisely and truly, that, "According to our best light, the death of said Elizabeth was not by any violence or wrong done to her by any person or thing, but by some sudden stopping of her breath."

In 1652 began the pine-tree coinage of shillings, and half, and quarter shillings. The mint-master, John Hull, greatly enriched himself in the business, so that when his daughter married Judge Samuel Sewall, he gave her £30,000 in New England shillings. Her husband

was one of the Judges Sewall, who for eighty-four successive years held a seat on our supreme bench, and three of them filled the Chief Justice's chair.

In 1659, sixteen Newbury men petitioned for a tract of land where Concord, N. H., now is, though the first white settlement there was not till seventy years later.

The next year the Court granted a tract of land on the Saco River, provided twenty families, with a minister, settled there within five years. This shows how the emigration fever was upon the town. They had contributed to settle Salisbury, and Hampton, and Haverhill, and were then, in the first quarter of a century, looking up the Merrimac to Concord, and subsequently went above to aid in settling Boscawen, Newbury, and Bradford, in that State; and, later, Littleton and Haverhill in New Hampshire, and Newbury in Vermont; also other towns in Maine. It would be an interesting chapter in our history to follow the first settlers and their descendants, in the founding of towns, from the British Provinces, through Maine, New Hampshire, Massachusetts, down to New Jersey, where they settled Woodbridge, and named it for John Woodbridge, our third minister, from which sprang General Zebulon Montgomery Pike, who fell at Queenstown in 1812, and Joseph Bloomfield, some years governor of that State; and thence to Pennsylvania, where the first white child born west of the Alleghany mountains was descended from Francis Plumer; and thence through the North-west to Oregon, where an Old Newbury man built the first house in the now rich and thriving city of Portland.

And now we have reached some dark pages in Massachusetts history — the persecution of Quakers and the hanging of witches. It was enacted, in 1657, that not more than 40*s.* should be the fine for entertaining Quakers, and many were the outrages committed upon those unoffending and peace-loving people. They were fined, whipped, robbed, hanged, and the record stands against us unto this day. This led the Macys and Coffins, who had been among the early settlers, to emigrate to Nantucket.

It was later, in 1680, that our first and only case of witchcraft occurred, though before, in Connecticut and Massachusetts, persons had been executed for this "crime," which, so far as we can see, was not dissimilar to some of the developments of modern Spiritualism. There lived, near the head of Market Street, a venerable couple, William Morse and Elizabeth, his wife, and the unfortunate woman, charged with being a witch, was tried, convicted, and sentenced to be hanged. The testimony is peculiarly interesting. There were great noises heard, which might have been human and might have been infernal. Stones and sticks forgot the laws of gravitation, and flew in the air, coming down to pound the roof, or through the chimney into the fire-place. Doors locked flew open of their own accord, and through them, in the night time, entered the pigs and cattle, whose escape from sty and barn could not be accounted for. The chairs danced a jig with the spinning-wheel and table, and the andirons and the tea-kettle boxed each other's ears till they rang like bells. Goodey Morse says, in trying to make the bed, "the clothes did fly off many times of themselves," and a chest opened and shut of itself; and Goodman William testified: "I being at prayer, my head covered with a cloth, a chair did oftentimes bow to me, and then strike me on the side." All these strange occurrences were believed to be from William Morse's grandson. Still, some believed in witches and thought them from the devil; and some liked to seem wise, of which number was Caleb Powell, who had such an air of mystery that he came near getting his own neck in the halter, being arrested and charged with working with the devil in this matter; but he escaped with "bearing his own shame and the cost of the prosecution."

William Morse, if he believed in witches, did not believe that his wife had allied with the devil to commit evil, and he persisted in pressing petitions for reprieve, which was finally granted, and she returned to her home, for years to lead a virtuous life and die in Christian hope. The case was not without good results, for when, twelve years after, the delusion prevailed in and about Salem, it could obtain no hold here; people believed in witchcraft; it was a part of their religion; but nobody from Newbury was hanged for it. Generally it was found that the witches were the smartest, most intelligent, and best women in the community, or the prettiest and wittiest girls of marriageable age.

We may complain of the conduct of our fathers towards Quakers and witches, but we should not forget that two centuries intervene between them and us; and that they, with all their prejudices and superstitions, were in advance of the rest of the world. Bancroft says: "The Puritans emancipated themselves from a world of observances. They established a worship purely spiritual. To them the elements remained but bread and water. They invoked no saints; they raised no altars; they adored no crucifix; they kissed no book; they asked no absolution; they paid no tithes; they saw in the priest nothing more than a man. The church, as a place of worship, was nothing more than a meeting-house; they dug no graves in consecrated earth; they married without a minister, and buried their dead without a prayer."

In 1684, Newbury was recognized as a port, with Salisbury attached, and Nathaniel Clarke was naval officer. Here we have the beginning of the custom-house, and it shows that they had some commerce. The little village by the river, which was from Federal to Market Street, had gained. It attracted people from abroad. The total population of the town was 1,000. This was fifty years (1685) from its settlement. The taxable list contained 213 names, still only eight were called Mr. and only one Esq.; but the military titles were plenty, and of deacons there was a good share. The latter were often useful in works of charity, as in 1686 we find them overseers of the poor.

At this period occurred the arbitrary and oppressive administration of Sir Edmund Andros, governor, during which Robert Mason claimed the territory, under a grant to his father, for whom Plum Island had been called Mason's Island; and that might have become troublesome had Andros continued, to whom we are indebted for one good thing: he granted to John Mareh the right to establish a ferry to King's Island, which has been continued to this date. Andros's administration provoked revolution, and he was deposed by the people, who restored the old magistrates. Newbury was intensely excited over this action, and many went to Boston to participate in the work. Among them was Samuel Bartlett, one of the Bartlett family, farmers and shoemakers, who with the Moultons, silver-workers, were early in the vicinity of Moulton and Pipestave hills. It is reported of him, that, in his anxiety to reach Boston in time to engage in the revolution, he drove his horse so fast that his long sword, trailing on the ground, as it came in contact with the stones on the road left a line of fire all the way. Be that as it may, he was there in season to assist, and it was not in that blood ever to hesitate in the suppression of treason for liberty. One of them was Josiah Bartlett, signer of the Declaration of Independence for New Hampshire, a State which he served in many positions. The town sustained the deposition of Andros with only two dissenting votes, and reckless must have been the men who cast those.

In 1693, the Court of Common Pleas held its first session in Newbury, in the meeting-house, and it has been a shire town ever since. The court-house was afterwards at the head of Marlborough Street, then on the west corner of State and Essex streets, and finally on the Mall on High Street.

In 1697 was the discovery of limestone, which gave great joy to the whole Province, as great as gold and silver discoveries have in our day. To that date the builder had made lime from clam-shells; now it became abundant for home consumption, and a kiln was established at the foot of Marlborough Street to have it handy for exportation. This also was the date of changing Quascacunquen to Parker, in naming the river, on which "the first planter, and pastor, and learned school-master" had pitched his tent. He had been dead twenty years.

The seventeenth century closed with a mild winter. "Winter was turned into summer," wrote the Rev. Richard Brown. But some other things were not so pleasant. Earthquakes were uncomfortably plenty; January saw one, and February another, and the foundations of the earth were frequently shaken. A poor-house was voted; and, seven years after, a jail marked further progress in civilization; and one Esther Rogers, a young mother for the second time, drowned her illegitimate mulatto child in the pond back of the meeting-house, where the floating island is, for which she was hanged the year following in Boston.

Immediately after, Thomas Massum, a negro, was ordered to leave town with his family, but the record saith not whether he was connected with Esther Rogers's mulatto child; possibly they banished then instead of lynching, as in some cases now.

In 1708, the record reads: "Joseph Lunt rode post," which is the earliest notice of any post-office arrangements.

In 1717, the snow fell, in places twenty feet deep, and all ordinary travel was suspended; but love laughed at snow-banks, as it does at locks. Abraham Adams, on snow-shoes, went three miles courting Abigail Pierce, whose residence he entered at the chamber windows, and he was the only person the family saw for more than a week.

In 1720, potatoes were imported from Ireland and planted for food, finally to take the place of turnips used till then. They were slow in

gaining public approval, and for years were planted in beds like onions.

In 1721, Thomas Hale, living south of the Parker, was appointed justice of the peace. He was opposed by Judge Sewall, "because there are five of them in Newbury already: and he had lately kept an ordinary and sold rum."

The saddest year ever known in Newbury was 1723, when forty persons died in the month of April from a fearful epidemic. To check that, a day of prayer and fasting was observed, when nine persons lay dead and fifty were sick by the disease; "and it pleased God," says the chronicler, "to hear the prayers of his people, and to answer them in a wonderful manner, for the sick were all better the next morning, and few died afterwards." It is most likely that the wind changed, carrying the miasmatic effluvia in other directions. The laws of health, and the manner of treating diseases, were less understood then than now. From small-pox they died fearfully in those times. So the throat-distemper, which broke out by the Water-side in 1735, was absolutely uncontrollable, as it was all over New England. Between September and February 16th, eighty-one persons died, chiefly children. It swept whole families. John Boynton lost eight children, four buried in one grave. Benjamin Knight buried three in one grave. And Stephen Jaques writes: "Oct. 29th, my wife went into a chamber, that was locked, to fetch candles, that was in a bushel under a bed, and as she thrust back the half bushel, there came out a child's hand. She saw the fingers, the hand, a streked boy's cote or sleeve, and upon search there was no child in the chamber. On Thursday, a fortnite after, my Steven's son Henry died. The next Thursday Ebenezer died. The next Monday morning his son Stephen died."

Of course it was about time for strange signs in the heavens, and the same chronicler reports, Nov. 26th, 1720, about eight o'clock at night, "a light on ye north, almost like that which appeared last year, it being red, but not so much." These were the first appearances of the northern lights, in 1719 and 1720, not before having been seen in a century of New England settlement. They must have been brilliant, and to the beholders very strange. "They looked very red, and seemed to flie up allmost overhead, as if they had been driven with a farse wind, and then parted to the east, and so vanished away." Three hours later there appeared a cloud like a mist. "We could see the stars through it. It was as red as blood or crimson, but not a thick red. My eies saw it." Again it was "like the daylight, when it breaks three quarters of an hour high."

As though the northern lights, earthquakes, terrible diseases, tides higher than ever before known, freshets that swept the wharves and shipyards so that two thousand cords of wood were picked up on Plum Island, and the water was twelve feet deep near Turkey Hill, were not enough to frighten them, they discovered double-headed snakes. The Rev. Christopher Toppan wrote Cotton Mather: "It had really two heads, and at each end two mouths, and two stings or tongues." "Sir I have nothing more to add but that I may have a remembrance in your prayers." That would seem desirable when the snakes came double-headed.

Now we have reached the end of one hundred years since the coming of Parker, and we find the town to have a population of full 2,000 persons, with its centre between the Upper Green and Marlborough Street, where were the meeting-house, the school-house, the grave-yard, the court-house, and the most popular tavern in the town. The centennial was celebrated in front of the Coffin house, where since has lived the historian of the town, Joshua Coffin, and where now some of his children reside.

Soon the light of the great reformation was to break upon them. In 1740, George Whitefield preached his first sermon here. He was the most eloquent divine of his age, and, with Edwards, Tennant, and others, disturbed the waters of the spiritual pool, so that many going in were cleansed. He was the real founder of the First Presbyterian Church. He died in a house on School Street; his remains rest under the pulpit of the Old South; and near by stands his cenotaph, erected by the richest merchant of the town, William Bartlett, at one time the most wealthy man of the State, and long to be remembered for his good works.

In 1750, a lottery was authorized for building the bridge over the river Parker, and with that the ferries began to disappear; and long since all have gone, save that to Ring's Island for passengers alone.

In 1753, on petition of Nathan Hale, a fire-engine was purchased, and that was the beginning of the municipal fire department. Eight years later, Michael Dalton and others imported from London the second fire-engine.

The "Water-side" village was now in the ascendant, and in 1763, William Atkins, Michael Dalton, Daniel Farnham, Thomas Woodbridge, Patrick Tracy, and others, petitioned the General Court that Newburyport might be set off and incorporated as a distinct town, setting forth their reasons; and that petition was granted. The real causes were given by Timothy Dexter, who was far enough from being a fool, though he said and did foolish things, in his "Pickle for the Knowing Ones":

"A town called Newbry, all won the Younited states. Noubrey peopel kept together quiet till the Larned groned strong. the farmers was 12 out of 20. they wanted to have the offesers in the Contry. the Larned in the see port wanted to have them there. geering A Rose, groned warme, fite thay wood. in Law they went to Jinrel Cort to be sot of. finely thay got there Eands Answered. the see port was called Newburyport. 600 Eakers of Land out of 30000 Eakers of good land, so much for mad, people of Larning makes them mad. if they had kept together thay wood heve been the sekont town in this state about half of Boston."

There was more good sense than eleganee in what Timothy wrote. Newbury, after Salem, was next to Boston. Newburyport was the smallest town territorially in the State, 647 acres, and much of that without inhabitants. The population was 2,282. It was increased by annexation in 1851, extending it from the ocean to the Artichoke River, to between six and seven thousand acres, or nearly a quarter of the original town, and the history of old Newbury, for more than a hundred years, unites with that portion now Newburyport. Newbury and West Newbury are towns of honorable mention, but their history so interweaves with that of Newburyport that it is often impossible to separate them, giving due and distinct credit to each.

CHAPTER IV.

OLD NEWBURY SINCE THE INCORPORATION OF NEWBURYPORT.

Dwarfed by legislative action, Newbury still had an honorable name and her place in the Commonwealth to maintain. Nor has she failed in that mission. It is a goodly town, rich in its farms, and richer in its sons and daughters, who have happily lived at home or kept their birthplace prominent by their acts abroad. The troubles of war were close at hand when its first division took place, and its quiet civil life in more than a hundred years after that has left only the story of a rural town to tell. During the Revolution, the town of Newbury, as its records show, was firm and unwavering on the patriot side. It furnished its quota of men, and it contributed its money promptly and liberally. On the same day of the battle at Lexington it forwarded its troops for the struggle, and at Bunker Hill two colonels, Little and Gerrish, were at the head of their regiments, and no braver troops were under any commanders; and so the town maintained her stand to independence. But the majority of the people living on the borders of Newburyport have so merged their activities and industries with the latter town that they are largely included in its local history. Among the events to be noticed was the establishment of the "lights" on Plum Island by the government in 1787, on the same year that the Federal Constitution was adopted. In 1789, President Washington made a northern tour, and was received in a becoming manner. He rode over the Parker Bridge to the Upper Green in a carriage, and there mounted his horse and rode into Newburyport, the people universally hailing his advent with enthusiasm.

On taking the census of 1790, there were returned 538 houses, 723 families, and 3,972 inhabitants. In 1791, the last wild bear killed here came in from the Bradford woods. In 1792, the first chain bridge in the country was opened to the public, between Newbury and Salisbury. It is 1,030 feet long, and 34 wide: in fact, it is two bridges resting on Deer Island in the middle of the stream, which was once a great resort for pleasure parties. A few days after its completion, Timothy Dexter celebrated the event with an oration. The bridge was built by Timothy Palmer, a man of rare genius as an architect, and a man of cultivated taste, many of whose works remain for our admiration to this day. It was rebuilt in 1810. In 1827 the chains broke, and precipitated a heavily loaded ox-team and two men into the river in midwinter. The men were saved; the team, four oxen and a horse, were lost. The cost of rebuilding was $66,000.

In 1795, the town proclaimed religious liberty, in advance of their day, voting that "the inhabitants have liberty to attend worship where

they choose, and to be exempt from taxation elsewhere, and to petition the General Court to confirm this vote." This year Rocks Bridge was built. This was swept away by ice in 1818, but immediately rebuilt. The eighteenth century closed with the news of the death of Washington, which carried sorrow to the whole land. In Byfield, the event was commemorated by an oration and religious services on the 22d of February.

In 1805, the Plum Island turnpike and bridge were built; and in 1806, the Boston turnpike, which cost $417,000.

In 1819, West Newbury was incorporated as a town, with 1,279 inhabitants, leaving 3,671 to the old town, which was divided into two parishes and nine school districts.

In 1829, the breakwater was built by the general government, under the direction of Thomas M. Clark and Benjamin W. Hale. It ran from Plum Island to Woodbridge's Island, and thence north-westerly to turn the tide from Plum Island Sound, in hopes of improving the Merrimac bar. It was 1,900 feet long. There was also a short breakwater on the Salisbury side, at Badger's rocks; but they answered no good purpose.

In 1835, Newbury, Newburyport, and West Newbury united in a grand celebration of their 200th anniversary. Hon. Caleb Cushing was orator; Hon. George Lunt, poet; and Hon. Ebenezer Moseley presided at the dinner, which was attended by many distinguished persons. Among these were Lieut. Gov. Armstrong, Edward Everett, Stephen H. Phillips, Caleb Cushing, George Lunt, Robert C. Winthrop, who is a lineal descendant of Gov. Winthrop, Gov. William Plumer, and many others known over the land. The combined towns at the following census in 1840 had 12,066 inhabitants — Newbury, 3,389; Newburyport, 7,124; and West Newbury, 1,553.

In 1840, the Eastern Railroad was opened; and ten years later the Newburyport Railroad to Georgetown, both running for miles through the town.

In 1843, the boiler to the first steam-engine used in the town, at the Wormstead rope-walk, exploded, killing the fireman, John Green, and badly scalding a workman, Lorenzo D. Ross.

In 1851 came the last division of the town, sections on the east and west being annexed to Newburyport, as had been desired by their inhabitants for a whole generation, the Legislature having often been petitioned to that end. Perhaps this event was hastened by the abolition of school districts and the establishment of a high school, creating some ill-feeling. In notifying the adjourned meeting that year, Joshua Coffin, town clerk, advertised as follows: —

"The annual town-meeting, of what is left of Newbury, stands adjourned to Monday, May 12th, 2 P. M., at the town-house, now in Newburyport."

It is probable that the old town, which long resisted this division, was benefited thereby. After that there was less conflict of interests; its industry was chiefly farming; and it has moved forward, a charming rural district, showing on all hands constant improvement. Mrs. Nathan N. Withington, in a recently published paper, speaks of some of the well-preserved old houses, which are landmarks and waymarks worthy of notice, such as the Ilsley house, at the head of Marlborough Street, which has stood the storms of two centuries. Its cellar walls, three feet thick; its beams, fourteen inches square; and its chimney, 18 by 8 feet at the base, show how strongly our fathers built. Here was the Putnam Tavern; here Oliver Putnam, the founder of the Putnam Free School, was born; and here "Eliza Wharton," whose sorrowful tale was the study of our mothers, passed a night on her way to Danvers and death. Here was the first printing-office in Essex County; here calico and wall-paper were stamped; and here chocolate was manufactured. The Coffin house, where reside the descendants of Joshua Coffin, the historian, is well along in its third century. It has always been in the same family. The residence of Parker and Noyes, the first two ministers, is standing on Parker Street, well preserved, though it may be the oldest house in the town. If there be any older, it is the Poor residence on the Neck; and each — the Poor and the Noyes house—has remained in the ownership of those families from the first. The Short house, on the south corner of Atlantic Avenue and High Street, is about two hundred years old; and the stone house, on the Little farm adjoining, is still older. That was used as a garrison, when Indian raids were feared. Others are worthy of notice, of which we have not space even to speak.

CHAPTER V.

ECCLESIASTICAL AND EDUCATIONAL.

It is difficult to separate religion from education, politics, or even war, in our early history, since the church was the soul and life of all. Religion was required as much in the magistrate as the minister, and the two classes acted together in the synods. Public office, and even the right of suffrage, was limited to church members. They founded this government, says Bancroft, on the basis of the church, and church membership could be obtained only by favor of the clergy and an exemplary life. They denied unlimited freedom of opinion, as the parent of ruinous divisions. The church was the central sun, from which all else emanated, and to which all things tended. To be anything, a man must be a member of the church. The minister was often the teacher, especially in the higher branches of learning, and, without a Sunday school, he catechised all the children. Even the militia could not have heretical officers: in Rowley a man was rejected from being a militia ensign because of heresy; and in Newbury, in the second year of the town, we find John Spencer deposed from the captaincy for heretical opinions; and the men he should have commanded in the Pequod war, on their march to Connecticut, stopped to discuss and decide the question, whether they were under a covenant of grace or of works. Mr. Spencer, who was among the best, and "best to do" settlers, was really driven back to England by the vote to disarm the heretics, which included with him Mr. Dummer and Mr. Nicholas Easton. Mr. Dummer was the richest man and the most enterprising, and contributed more to the town than any other man in it. Elliot says of him: "No man more deserved the praise of doing well." He was of so forgiving a spirit that, two years later, when Gov. Winthrop, his persecutor, was bankrupt, he contributed £100 to pay his debts. Mr. Easton resented the injustice done him, and removed to Rhode Island, where he became lieutenant-governor of the State, as was his son after him. So were degraded for supporting the cause of Sir Henry Vane, and receiving the opinions of Mrs. Hutchinson, three of the seven settlers who were allowed to prefix Mr. to their names. The same spirit ran through all the early years of the town.

We have already noticed the organization of the First Church, Thomas Parker, minister, and James Noyes, assistant and teacher. Both were very learned men, and no two men have lived since them who did so much to establish upon a solid basis our religion and our education. They have had no superiors as hard students, sound scholars, and thorough educationists. They were learned in theology, but not more so than in the sciences and literature of their day. They spoke and wrote in Latin, Greek, Hebrew, and Arabic; they were at home in history and Oriental lore; they were trained logicians and elegant writers; and Mr. Noyes was our first poet. They made it the object of their lives to impress themselves on the minds of the town, and they were so successful that they live in us to-day, and will in the generations to come.

Both had been teachers in the same school in Newbury, Eng., a town dating back to the Roman era, fifty-six miles west of London, on the river Kennet, from which we have the name Newbury. Parker was the only son of a distinguished scholar, Robert Parker. He was admitted to Oxford College, but, his father being exiled, he went to Dublin to study under the celebrated Dr. Usher; then retired to Holland, where he studied with the no less celebrated Dr. Ames; and later, he entered the University at Leyden, where they would gladly have retained him in a professorship, but as he could then safely return to England he did so; but, for more usefulness and greater freedom, he came to New England, when only twenty-two years of age. "Whence," after a pastorate extending from 1635 to 1677, as Cotton Mather says, "he went to the *immortals*, in the month of April, 1677, in the eighty-second year of his age; and after he had lived all his days a *single* man, but, the greater part of his days, engaged in apoctalyptical studies, he went unto the Apoctalyptical Virgins, who follow the Lord whithersoever he goeth."

The school which he and Mr. Noyes taught averaged twelve or fourteen scholars, for whom they took no pay; and it was customary long after that time for the ministers to freely act as tutors for boys preparing for college. They were often the physicians as well as the preachers and teachers; and of not a few of them it could be said, as the tombstone declares of Christopher Toppan, "Skilled in the practice of physics and surgery." Mr. Parker was so thorough in his studies that when in his last years, blind from excessive reading, he

taught the languages, he could do it from memory. It is reported of him that, being interviewed by some of the most learned clergymen, who had doubts of his orthodoxy, he answered their English questions in Latin. They followed, when he retreated to the Greek and to the Hebrew, they pursuing; but when he answered in Arabic they stopped, and he declined to answer further, unless to his peers in learning.

Mr. Parker believed in the government of the church as a finality, and, though he permitted the people to act in admitting persons to church society and in passing church censures, so long as to him they seemed to act regularly, yet finally he assumed the power to himself. In this position he was sustained by Mr. Noyes and Mr. Woodbridge, his successive associates, though it caused a long and bitter controversy, during which the people reduced his pay and deposed him by vote from the exercise of his ministerial functions; but he finally was the victor.

James Noyes, the first associate of Parker, was his cousin. Both were born in the same town, in Wiltshire; they taught in the same school; came over in the same ship; preached to the same people; and, Mr. Parker being a bachelor, lived, studied, and died in the same house. He was more gentle in manner, but no less firm in opinion or less esteemed throughout the Province. He was a very subtle logician, and determined against all heresies. When he died, aged 48, in 1656, the church in Roxbury entered upon their records: "Mr. Noise, the blessed light at Newbury, died." He published more than Mr. Parker; and left descendants, among whom, as distinguished in Oriental literature as himself, was the late Prof. George Noyes, D. D., of Harvard University, translator of several Hebrew books of the Bible.

In both Parker and Noyes Harvard College found patrons. The town contributed to the university both of its sons and its means. The records of 1645 say: "By an agreement each family gave one peck of corn, or one shilling, to Cambridge College." In the first class, graduated in 1642, the best scholar of the class was Benjamin Woodbridge. He was termed "the first fruit of the college in New England," though he had studied at Oxford before coming here; and he returned to England to preach and teach in Newbury and Salisbury, where his uncles, Parker and Noyes, had done the same. He died in his sixty-third year. He was a poet as well as a Christian scholar; "a learned and mighty man," as one writer terms him. He was brother to John Woodbridge, our third minister, who married a daughter of Gov. Dudley; was first minister at Andover, and the first teacher ordained in this country. In 1647, John Woodbridge returned to England, but came back after the death of Mr. Noyes, to help his uncle, Parker, and was settled from 1663 to 1670, when, in the opposition to Mr. Parker, the people refused to pay; but, like Mr. Parker, he never lost the confidence of the people who disagreed with him, and lived here an active magistrate till 1695, when the good man died. Of his eleven children, three were clergymen; and, prior to 1845, forty-three of his descendants were among the graduates of American colleges.

The fourth pastor, also colleague to Mr. Parker, was John Richardson, whose term was from 1675 to 1696. Then Christopher Toppan, a native of Newbury, entered upon a pastorate of fifty-one years, which ended with his death at seventy-six. His was a successful ministry, and he was a learned but a very eccentric man, most determined against "schemers" and "new-lights," and therefore against the Whitefield revival, which rendered his last days unhappy. Following him was John Tucker, of Amesbury, against whom was a strong opposition, his settlement being confirmed by only two majority of the church, and twelve of the parish; but he enjoyed a long pastorate of forty-seven years, and died in 1792. His pastorate with that of Mr. Toppan made 101 years.

Next came Abraham Moor, of Londonderry, N. H., whose health failed, and he died in little over five years, giving place to John S. Popkin, one of the finest scholars in the State, who accepted a professorship in Harvard in 1815, much to the regret of all the people. He was the successor of Edward Everett, as professor of Greek literature, in 1843. He resigned, and died in Cambridge in 1852. To his time all the ministers, except Mr. Moor, who was from Dartmouth, had been graduated at Harvard. Much did that university for religion and literary culture in Newbury, but no less has Newbury done for that institution. Two of the presidents, Webber and Felton, were born here; and, at one time, all three of its professors, Webber, Toppan, and Pearson, were Newbury men. Prof. Popkin was never excelled there in the Greek, unless it was by Prof. Felton, who was almost a born Greek, as in the Hebrew Prof. George Noyes has not been outranked; and, in the law school, Prof. Simon Greenleaf and Prof. Theophilus Parsons have had no superiors. In proportion to population, no town in the Commonwealth has furnished it so many and such eminent students, and no town has had more of its sons there graduated, or attain higher honors in subsequent life to throw back lustre on their *alma mater*.

Leonard Withington, in 1816, was the successor of Prof. Popkin, and now, sixty-two years from his settlement, and in the ninetieth year of his age, holds the first place in the parish and in the affections of the people, of whom none, members of the church when he came, live to sustain his aged hands. He was graduated at Yale, and, for half a century has been a light in the church, and respected by all for his high character and scholarly attainments. Two pastors have been associated with him, — John R. Thurston, for eleven years from 1859, who received a call elsewhere, and was the first minister in 235 years to resign that pastorate for another; and Omar White Folsom, now preacher. Till a very recent period, the ministers had much to do with popular education and the common schools, and also in preparing the youth for the colleges. Dr. Withington served on the school committee nearly thirty years.

Other teachers of distinction could be named. Anthony Somerby, who received a subsidy of lands to encourage him, and had his house where the jail now stands, was the first school-master; and Henry Short, whose lands in Oldtown are still in possession of his descendants, was the second. They taught a grammar or a Latin school. At the time of the Revolution, Nicholas Pike, a man of distinction, author of the first arithmetic published in America, held the like position. His residence was on the corner of State and Harris streets, and the great elm bending over State Street was of his planting. Afterwards came Michael Walsh, of high mental culture, the author of the second American arithmetic; and, later, were Roger S. Howard, David P. Page, and other men of mark in their calling.

The first parish was in advance of the public sentiment; and the law for town libraries, and in the last century, in 1794, established what they called the "Social Library," of which Joseph Coffin was librarian, and the chief men of the town, — as John Adams, who educated two sons in college, Ezra Hale, for thirty-seven years town clerk, Ebenezer March, the Rev. Dr. Popkin, and later, the Rev. Dr. Withington — were interested in it. It was continued to 1848, and numbered several hundred volumes, carefully selected, and thoroughly read in almost every house in "Oldtown."

In 1702, the people of Byfield, a parish which included a part of Rowley, built a meeting-house, near where the present church stands. The parish name was from Col. Nathaniel Byfield, of Boston. It was not till 1706 that the first minister, Moses Hale, who had been preaching there from 1702, was settled. He was born in Newbury, graduated at Harvard in 1699, and died at sixty-six, in 1743, in the forty-first year of his labors there. Previously, he had organized the "Old South" Church in Georgetown, and that people presented the new parish with a communion service.

The second minister was Moses Parsons, of Gloucester, a great and strong man, from Harvard University, who became involved in a long and bitter controversy with one of his deacons, Benjamin Colman, upon the rightfulness of his ownership of three slaves. He was father of the chief justice, Theophilus Parsons, a name which is a tower of strength in all our courts. Mr. Parsons's death occurred in 1782, in the sixty-eighth year of his age and the forty-third of his ministry. He was much interested in education; and it was during his ministry that Gov. Dummer, by will, established the first academy of the State, which to this time continues its usefulness and bears his name. Mr. Parsons was not without influence in bringing about this result, and selected the first principal, "Master" Moody.

Elijah Parish, from Connecticut, graduated at Dartmouth in 1785, was the third minister, settled in 1787. He was learned, eloquent, and logical, and too proud ever to conceal or tone down an opinion. He was Hopkinsonian, which led to a division of the society, the dissenters settling a Mr. Sleigh; but the seceders returned again to the old church. In politics he was a violent Federalist, and declared and defended his opinions in the pulpit, when party spirit ran so high that the Federalists would gather for miles to hear him, as they went to hear the great orators on "the stump." He died in 1825, in his sixty-fourth year, and the thirty-eighth from his settlement. He was the author of several valuable school-books.

Following him, in 1827, was Isaac R. Barbour, from Bridgeport, Vt., of Arminian views, which were not held by a majority of his hearers; a temperance man, when everybody drank; an unwavering Freemason, when the story of Morgan fevered the community; and

an abolitionist, when that was a disgrace to any man. He was not wanting in ability or manly courage, but thought best to resign in 1833, which was the more expedient since a united parish was needed to rebuild the meeting-house, then burned, and that year rebuilt.

Henry Durant was the fifth minister — a man of gentle manners, a graduate of Yale, profound in scholarship, broad in literary culture, and liberal in religion, strongly inclining to Swedenborgian views. For a time he had charge of Dummer Academy. His health declining, he removed to California, and opened a school at Oakland, which grew into the University of California, of which he was president. He has passed to his reward.

Francis V. Tenney was settled in 1850, and dismissed at the end of seven years. He was a good scholar, but sought a wider field of labor. From 1858, for four years, the Rev. Charles Brooks was pastor; and he died, three years after his resignation, at Farmington, Conn. From 1863 to 1875, the church was without a settled pastor. Then James H. Child, now there, a graduate of Amherst and the Andover Seminary, was settled.

In the Byfield parish, for more than a century the best academic education has been within the reach of the youth through the Dummer Academy, founded by the bequest of William Dummer, lieutenant-governor from 1722 to 1728, who governed the Province wisely and well, after he was left acting governor, from the return of Gov. Shute to England; and again he was left in power by the death of Gov. Burnet, in 1729–30. He was grandson of Richard Dummer, to whom that town granted lands to have him settle there, and these same lands came back — bread cast on the waters — in the bequest of the governor. His family has been distinguished in our history. He was born in Boston, son of Jeremy Dummer, and had two brothers and a sister. He married Katherine, daughter of Gov. Dudley. After living in retirement many years, he died in 1761, and the academy was opened in 1763, but not incorporated till 1782. As a classical school it has taken rank second to none in New England, though it has not of late years been large and prosperous, like the Phillips academies of Andover and Exeter. For a full half-century it was universally acknowledged to be the first academy of the country in rank, as it was first in the fact of time.

The success of Dummer Academy was established by its first principal, Samuel Moody, who commenced with twenty-eight pupils, the Rev. Mr. Parsons preaching a sermon eulogistic of the liberality of Gov. Dummer, from — "The liberal soul deviseth the liberal things."

"Master Moody" was called from York, Me., a son of the Rev. Joshua, who was called Handkerchief Moody, from a habit of not allowing himself to appear in unpulpit or other public place without a handkerchief over his face, in shame believing himself to have been responsible for the death of a friend. They were from William Moody, of Newbury. His success was from rightly apprehending the true theory in education, that it is not to acquire information, but mental training; not to learn, but to obtain the power to learn. During his administration, the reputation of Dummer filled the States and the nations; and of the 525 students under his charge, some came from foreign countries as well as the several States. Less success attended his successors to 1821, when the academy revived and attained its pristine glory, under Nehemiah Cleveland, who, in the twenty years of his administration, wrought as good a work as Moody.

Among the graduates of Dummer, best known, are Theophilus Parsons, *the* chief justice, the father of our system of jurisprudence, and his son of the same name, who was Law Professor at Harvard; Rufus King, the eminent statesman and diplomatist; President Webber, and Profs. Smith, Otis, Pearson and Jackson, of Harvard; Chief Justice Sewall; Samuel Phillips, founder of the academy at Andover, and at Exeter N. H.; Com. Preble, of the United States Navy; Maj. Gen. Octherlong, distinguished in India; Prof. Cleveland, of Bowdoin; President Benjamin Hale, of Geneva College; Chief Justice Tenney, of the Maine Supreme Court; with a host of others too numerous to mention, known in religion, law, science, politics, and all the honorable and learned pursuits of life. It has had a marked influence upon the character of the people in its neighborhood, though it has induced many of the youth, by the culture there attained, to seek usefulness in wider fields of action.

As Newbury has the honor of being the seat of the first academy in America, so it claims the first female seminary in Massachusetts, which was established by Dea. Benjamin Colman, in 1806. The unfinished church built by the seceders from Dr. Parish's society, Byfield, was purchased and fitted up for the school, and is still known as the seminary building. Miss Rebecca Hardy was the first principal, but was soon succeeded by Miss Rebecca Hasseltine, who acquired a wide reputation as a teacher, her school rapidly filling up from all parts of the Union. Miss Hasseltine was succeeded by Miss Mary Atwood, Miss Eliza Tuck, and Miss Mary Adams. After the school had been in operation about ten years, the Rev. Joseph Emerson, who had married Miss Hasseltine, bought the school-building and rented the boarding-house, and, in connection with his wife, assumed the charge of the establishment for some years, when he removed it to Wethersfield, Conn. Many young ladies were fitted at this school for the higher walks of life. Mrs. Judson, and Mrs. Harriet Newell, the missionaries of world-wide reputation, Miss Mary Lyon, the founder of the South Hadley Female Seminary; and Miss Grant, of the Ipswich Female Seminary, were graduates of the Byfield school.

Male Academy. — Soon after the opening of the female school, a separate school for boys, known as Colman's Academy, was set up in the lower story of the seminary. It had two teachers, the Rev. Mr. Burnham and the Rev. Mr. Burbank. It was intended as a sort of opposition to Dummer Academy, the classics and higher English branches being taught; but it could not succeed against a free school, and it closed in a year.

The Byfield High School, for both sexes, was opened, 1838, in the seminary building, in opposition to Dummer Academy, by the people of Byfield, who became disaffected at the course of the trustees in the matter of tuition. It was taught by John N. Rollins, who for several years had been assistant at Dummer. It continued but one year, when a compromise was effected between the trustees of Dummer and the parish, on the basis of a quarter part the regular tuition, and the pupils returned to the old school.

In the same building, a second female seminary was opened, in 1844, and was continued with good success for three years.

The above comprise all the schools of Byfield proper, apart from the common schools, and those may have had a lower mark from them, the higher schools drawing away their pupils, especially within a few years since Dummer Academy has been opened to females.

The other part of Byfield, known as the Mills Village, has given less attention to education, probably from its want of a settled and permanent ministry; of clergymen who regard the place as their home and the youth of the place as in their guardianship. Early there the Quakers were somewhat numerous, and a half century ago the Methodists established a society under one of their preachers, named French, who said he was led to the locality by a dream, in which he saw the village, and was told of its needs. Be that as it may, he came there to preach, though he remained a resident of New Hampshire; and in time a meeting-house was built, and a flourishing society is the fruit of his labors and that of his successors; but it is subject to frequent changes in the ministry, which has been disadvantageous to its schools. The common schools there have been good.

CHAPTER VI.

THE INDUSTRIES OF NEWBURY.

From the first, it has been chiefly a farming town, and one of the best of its class. Its large territory was beautifully diversified with hills and valleys, plains and meadows. It was well wooded and well watered, and abounded in marshes along the rivers, which our fathers especially desired, and which have continued to be a source of wealth. It has not, however, lacked enterprise, or a liberal spirit in encouraging other industries. At first it used all its resources to attract wealth and population. As rich men were desirable, it granted lands to such as would settle in the town, as to Richard Dummer, in Byfield, and Daniel Pierce, who purchased the John Spencer place just below Ocean Avenue. It needed ministers, physicians, schoolmasters, millers, ship-builders, pilots on the Merrimac, people to carry on the fisheries, to build wharves for trade and commerce, and all of these it subsidized. To some it granted lands; to some, exemption from taxes and military duty; and to others it promised business, and gave protection in one form or another. So it was that Dummer and Spencer and Emery, and others, built their saw and grist mills; so that Nicholas Easton built his first tan-yard at the river Parker, and John Bartlett built his at Bartlett Springs; and Job Clement, in 1649, was promised freeholder's rights, if he would remove from Haverhill to Newbury, and carry on his trade as a tanner, for four years, giving a preference to the Newbury shoemakers in selling his leather, if they would pay as much as others. So Paul White built

the first wharf, near the foot of State Street, and one of the Moodys made saddles, and another brewed beer; and John Atkinson had the first hats for sale; and so all manner of business was aided.

The first important industry was milling; they must have lumber and meal; and, in 1636, the town voted privileges to Richard Dummer and John Spencer; and two years later, voted, that if Mr. Dummer would maintain the mill "fitt to grynd corne," no other should be erected in the town. This agreement was kept nine years, when, in 1655, John Emery and Samuel Scullard were voted sixteen acres of land, and £20 in money, to build a second mill, which was in the First Parish. Then, in 1668, twelve acres of land were granted John Emery, to build his mill on the Artichoke. Eight years later, in 1678, there was great want of another corn-mill, which was erected on the Parker, a mile above Dummer's, which was Pearson's mill; and subsequently three others, all owned by the Pearsons, were in the same neighborhood. Peter Cheney also had a mill, first at Little River, and then a second on the river Parker; and there was another mill, on what is now called "Peniornary"—a corruption of penny ordinary—pasture, where the remains of the dam and the foundation of the building are still seen,—in all nine grist-mills, of which Dummer's was as early as any in Massachusetts, run by water. There had been wind-mills before, and one or two water-mills were erected the same year.

Perhaps next in order was tanning, as there was an immediate demand for leather, and utilizing skins of wild animals. Nicholas Easton had the first tan-yard, at the Lower Green, where the remains of his vats could be seen to a very recent date. This became an important branch of business, and tan-yards were established in Byfield and along the Merrimac River, from the south to the north end.

Ship-building came in at an early day, beginning near the mouth of the Parker, on which stream vessels were built all the way to Thurlow's Bridge; they were also built at Pine Island, and, after the "New town" was organized, they were found in process of construction all along the Merrimac, in such numbers that, at one time, at a later period, seventy-two vessels were in process of construction between the Pettengill farm, at the foot of Ocean Avenue, and Moggaridge's Point; and a writer in "Hunt's Merchants' Magazine" said that one hundred were building on the Merrimac River at one time. Possibly there may have been more than that, as the yards were along the river-banks as far up as Haverhill; and until within fifty years, next to farming, ship-building was the leading industry of the entire lower Merrimac Valley. Some of the vessels were large; Bancroft says they were built in the Province in 1643, within eight years of the settlement of Newbury, of 400 tons; but chiefly they were small, the larger number for coasting and fishing vessels, from 15 to 25 tons. It was in their building that mechanics were called to what is now Newburyport, and gave the preponderance of population and wealth to that part of the town; therefore we shall further treat of this topic under the head of Newburyport.

We may date the active business on the Merrimac from the grant of land to Paul White, in 1656, and the building of a wharf and dock, and a still-house, at the foot of what is now State Street. This is the first notice of a distillery, giving a trade destined to increase and continue to our day. Subsequently, ten other distilleries were established, within one mile to the north and south of this point, six of which were running at one time since 1820. They grew out of our trade with the West Indies, which began prior to 1650, when we were receiving sugar and molasses, with cotton and tobacco, in return for our provisions, staves, lumber, and grain. Paul White, the first merchant at the "Port," who had come from Pemaquid, Me., two years before, was the first man to make New England rum, and the first man here licensed to sell it. We quote from the record of the General Court in 1662: Capt. Paul White licensed "to still strong waters for a yeare and sell by the quart" He built his wharf and commenced business; but before him, under authority granted to Gov. Winthrop, one Watts had built a cellar, and had a fishing station where the Market-house now stands, as one Ring had a fishing and trading post on the Salisbury side, on the island that bears his name. These fisheries were probably confined to the river fish, and particularly to sturgeon, which were very plenty and very large. An Englishman, Wood, as early as 1633, two years before the settlement on the river Parker, wrote, "Much sturgeon is taken on the banks of the Merrimac, twelve, fourteen, eighteen feet long, pickled and sent to England." We can believe, therefore, that vessels came to and sailed from the Merrimac, even before Mr. Parker was at the Quascacunquen, and that sturgeon were taken in both rivers and exported from the earliest days. A keg of sturgeon, ten shillings, was among the charges for entertaining an ecclesiastical council in Salisbury in 1656; and shortly afterwards, one Williams was sending them to Boston. Men were licensed to catch and cure them; as Thomas Rogers, in 1680, "provided he shall present the court with a bowle of good sturgeon every Michaelmas court." So early did legislative "junketing" begin. The price at which they might be sold was fixed by law; as, in 1733, Capt. Daniel Lunt could sell in Boston, at twelve shillings a keg, "if he could get no more," and the same year they were exchanging sturgeon for rum and molasses. One William Thomas had petitioned the General Court to grant him the exclusive privilege to pickle and put up sturgeon, attempting to monopolize the trade.

It is evident that Paul White had an ample field for all his enterprise at the very outset, and that the wharf and dock were needed for trade already existing. The manufacture of rum was for disposing of the molasses had in return for the fish. But he was not long without competition. "Marchant" Dole, as he was called, Daniel Davison, Stephen Greenleaf, Ahiel Somerby, who was the farthest north, at the foot of Market Street, and Benjamin Lunt, who was the farthest south, at the foot of Marlborough Street, soon built wharves, and all the intervening space was occupied with docks and ship-yards. The fact of their commerce appears in this: that a custom-house was established in 1684. We also meet in the old records such indications as these: in 1687, the brig "Merrimac," Kent, was captured by pirates in the Vineyard Sound; and, in 1703, Benaiah Titcomb had a vessel captured, coming from Antigua.

In 1708, the town had become of sufficient importance to need regular post-office connection with Boston; and the record reads, "This year Joseph Lunt rode post." He was, therefore, the first mail-carrier and the first postmaster. In 1774, the riding post, by Joseph Lunt, had grown into the first stage-coach in the country, drawn by *four* horses, driven by Ezra Lunt, which made three trips to Boston a week. A two-horse coach from Portsmouth for Boston had preceded this. In 1800, we find four stages daily, and this coaching grew into the famous Eastern Stage Company, and that into the Eastern Railroad, each in its turn indicating the progress of the people.

A new industry appeared in 1744, when John Crocker, an Englishman, built a rope-walk on State Street, the head of which was near where the Whitefield Church now stands. With this, he commenced the spinning of hemp for rigging; at first he merely took apart the strands and relayed them. Four years later, the town granted him permission to erect a rope-walk on the margin of Frog Pond, in what is now the Mall, above a wind-mill, which stood at the east end where the school-house now is. Here cordage was made from the hemp. With the growth of ship-building, other rope-walks were built,—eleven in all, we think. One was back of Frog Pond; one ran north from State Street, with its head near the east corner of Pleasant Street; another from Merrimac to Washington Street, just above the Eastern Railroad. Then we find one from Federal to Lime Street; one from Water Street, where the Victoria Cotton Mills are; and the remainder were on Bromfield and Marlborough streets; but for ship-rigging none now remain. A change came in the method of manufacturing, and the old rope-walks no longer exist. In their day they were important to the town, both for their production and the great number of persons employed—so numerous that they formed a class associated by their own interests, who celebrated St. Catherine's Day as the shoemakers did St. Crispin's.

Another industry, and one of the earliest, was the manufacturing of silver and gold into buckles, beads, spoons, thimbles, which commenced with the Moultons, near Moulton's Hill, and has been continued in that family through all their generations in this country. They were silversmiths in England, and made their settlement here in 1637, on lands by the Merrimac, which are owned by their descendants at this day, and they have never been out of the trade. They discovered silver on their own lands, smelted it, and made it into spoons, two hundred years ago, though Watts, who built the "cellar" at the Market,—of whom something more ought to have come to us than has,—is named as the first man finding silver in that section of the town. At first in the poverty of a new colony, there was little trade in silver-ware; and the Moultons were also iron and copper workers. But later, when knee-buckles were in fashion, to fasten the short clothes of gentlemen, and also for shoes, and then, when all ladies wore beads and other ornaments of gold, the manufacture of gold and silver went up to $1,000 a week or more in this town.

But while the "River-side" was most stirring, the people about the Falls of the Parker in Byfield were not idle. Among the active young men of the first generation was Peter Cheney, a miller, who, in 1663, purchased a mill and a mill-house on the Little River. To him

the town granted a half acre of land, in 1670, if he would add wind to his water-power, for the grinding of corn when the water should fail. Later, in 1680, he received a grant of land for a saw-mill in Byfield, where now is the Mills Village, which has been continued to this time; a few years subsequently, in 1687, he proposed a fulling-mill, to full "ye towne's cloth, at ye same terms that Mr John Pearson doeth full cloth;" so that, at this early period, there were two fulling-mills in the town. His mill was purchased by John Pearson, and has been continued to the seventh generation of the Benjamin Pearsons of that family, principally used for the dressing of home-made cloth.

In 1794, the first incorporated woollen company in the State built a factory at Dummer's Falls, the machinery for which was made in Newburyport. It manufactured the first broadcloth made in America. William Bartlett, of Newburyport, whose enterprise projected, and whose wealth fostered many industries, was the principal proprietor. It labored under the disadvantages of all pioneer works, and failed to pay.

Near the close of the last century, the same building was used for the manufacture of cotton goods, and there was made the first cotton-cloth this country produced — goods that sold at seventy-five cents a yard. This was within a score of years of the invention of the mule-jenny in England, which combined the inventions of Hargreaves and Arkwright. Before the Byfield cotton factory there was a cotton-mill in Beverly, and Slater in Rhode Island was spinning yarn with the Arkwright machines, the twist being sold to weavers to be used in hand-looms; but at Byfield the cloth was made in the factory, by one John Lees, an Englishman, who smuggled the machinery from England. We have then the first incorporated woollen-mill, and the first successful cotton-mill at the same place. A little later, Paul Moody, who was born close to this factory, and, perhaps, there obtained his first ideas of machinery, invented the power-loom used in Waltham, and became one of the founders of the city of Lowell.

Later still, we find Jacob Perkins in the same factory, setting up one of his machines for cutting nails, but he only operated it for the testing of his works; still there were made the first cut nails, one of the most important of American inventions. The same factory was subsequently used for the manufacture of chocolate, which was largely used as a substitute for tea and coffee; and more recently for the manufacture of furniture; and then again it returned to the spinning of wool.

Other manufactures of wood and wool, of iron and leather, have been established at the "Mills" village; and to-day it is one of the chief places in the State for the making of snuff; but principally the people are employed in shoe-making, which was established by Col. Josiah Titcomb in 1830, who to tanning and currying added the making of the leather into shoes. To-day there are several shops manufacturing on a large scale by machinery.

At South Byfield is a cheese factory which has been running some ten years, and is the first and only cheese factory in Essex County. Many varieties of business trace their origin in this country to Old Newbury, as carriage and comb-making, of which we will state under the head of West Newbury.

CHAPTER VII.

NEWBURY IN WAR, FROM 1638 TO 1865.

The history of all English settlements, except that of Pennsylvania, is military history. The people came here with arms in their hands, as the Israelites went to the promised land; and scarcely did they lay them down, unless to sleep, and then the trusty matchlock was at the bedside. As they tore up the tree-roots and broke the stubborn soil in the rude and wearisome culture of the fields, the musket was at hand. When they went through the woods, which rang with their pious psalms, the guns were upon their shoulders: they went not to the pastures for their cattle and their sheep without it, for the wild wolf and the wilder red man might be in their path. They trusted to God for the hereafter; they trusted to their own courage and their skill in arms, which were carried even to the meeting-house where they worshipped, for the protection of their lives, for the safety of their homes,— the women at their work, and their infants in the cradles. Emphatically they belonged to the church militant, — they were men of war, every one capable of bearing arms being held to answer the first alarm in the town or the first call of the country. That first call was made before they had been two years on the banks of the Quascacunquen. One hundred and sixty men was Massachusetts to furnish against the Pequods in Connecticut. Of these, Newbury raised eight; Ipswich, seventeen; Salem, eighteen; Lynn, sixteen; and Boston, twenty-six. This levy shows the relative populations. It seems a very small number — those eight men; but possibly it was the largest draft ever made upon the town in proportion to its ability. The force left in April, and in May the Indians were attacked with fire and sword — the former being the most effective, and nearly the whole tribe of five or six hundred exterminated. Who escaped or were absent from the first encounter, were destroyed before the end of the year. "There remained not a savage nor a squaw, not a warrior nor a child of the Pequod name." "A nation had dropped from the family of man," says Bancroft. This ended the first war, and without loss of life to Newbury.

In constant anticipation of evil from the Indians, training-days for drill were not omitted or neglected, and in 1675 came the war with King Philip, which created immense alarm throughout the Province. "The minds of the English," says Cotton Mather, "were appalled by the impending conflict. At the time of the eclipse of the moon you might have seen the figure of an Indian scalp imprinted on the centre of its disc. The perfect form of an Indian bow appeared in the skies. The sighing of the wind was like the whistling of bullets. Some distinctly heard the invisible troop of horses gallop through the air, while others found the prophesy in the howling of wolves." It was an age of superstition, and days of humiliation and prayer were set apart. It was on one of those, as the people were returning from the meeting, that nine whites were murdered in Swanzey. Then went forth the call for men, horses, arms, provisions, and before Christmas forty-eight men and forty-six horses were sent to the war. Edward Everett, in an address on the battle at [Muddy] Bloody Brook, stating the drain on Newbury for men and horses, says that it shows "the prodigious severity of the military service of the Colony at that period,— vastly greater than at any subsequent period in the history of the country," but he omits that, by a later draft of the same year, twenty-four men were impressed, and January 28th, thirteen more were impressed, making the total from Aug. 5, 1675, to Jan. 2, 1676, eighty-six men, when the ratable polls were only 159. There was never a war before or since, and never will be again, in which the soldiers drafted exceeded half the polls.

Of the Newbury men named above, twenty-three were drafted in August, and were of the company commanded by Thomas Lathrop in the battle, or rather massacre, at Bloody Brook, in South Deerfield, Sept. 18, 1675 — the blackest day in the early history of our State. Philip was then on the Connecticut River, and this company of eighty men, "the flower of Essex," her hopeful young men, selected from the several towns for their vigor and daring, volunteered to go to Deerfield to thrash wheat and take it to Hadley. They had it on eighteen wagons, and were proceeding through the woods of South Deerfield, when they stopped to gather the purple grapes, hanging in thick clusters in the autumn forests; and while so engaged were surprised, and Capt. Lathrop and seventy of his men were slaughtered. One writer says that not more than seven or eight escaped; another fixes the dead at seventy-one; and the names of sixty killed are given. How many of the Newbury men went into the one grave, in which Increase Mather says sixty were buried, leaving eight widows and twenty-six fatherless children, we know not. In the record of the dead, Serg. Thomas Smith comes next to Capt. Lathrop; and following are Samuel and John Stevens. Two, we know, escaped — John Tappan, who was wounded in the shoulder, but managed to conceal himself in a brook bed, then dry, and hauled grass and weeds over him, so that the Indians, who stepped over his body, did not see him; and Henry Bodwell, a very strong man, who, having his left arm broken by a musket shot, seized his gun in his right hand, and, swinging it over his head, cleared his way of Indians who had nearly surrounded him. Of the other men sent to war that year, John Plummer was killed Aug. 25, and Daniel Rolfe Dec. 19; and five were wounded — Daniel Somerby, so that he shortly died; Jonathan Emery, badly, by an arrow in the neck; and Jonathan Ilsley, William Standley, and Jonathan Harvey, all of Newbury.

During this, Philip's War, which was brief, 600 persons were killed, one man in eleven of the arms-bearing population; twelve towns utterly destroyed, and others injured; and six hundred buildings reduced to ashes. There should be no surprise at the "scare" which followed, when the General Court submitted to the selectmen of the several towns a project to build a stone wall from the Charles to the Concord River in Billerica, to keep out the "red devils" from Middle-

sex and Essex counties; but our selectmen reported in favor of a line of sentinels, of five men, with strong arms and trusty muskets, and reported to the Court that they had already ordered several houses to be garrisoned, and were about fortifying, for a mile and more, from the Parker to the Merrimac, which would enclose most of the houses and cultivated fields. But Philip was dead; and, though the Indians were at times troublesome to New England, their great man now was gone, and their cause was lost.

Twelve years King Philip had been in his grave, and the Indians had given no great trouble, when Sir Edmund Andros, the tyrant of Massachusetts, being governor, there was oppression at home and war abroad. For uttering words defamatory to his administration citizens were seized in their houses, and fined and imprisoned. Among those suffering in Newbury were Caleb Moody and Joseph Bailey. Moody was one of the chief citizens, and representative to the General Court; but that did not protect him.

At the same time Andros provoked the Castine War, so called from robbery of the house of the French baron, De Saint Castine, who had married the daughter of the chief of the Penobscot Indians. For that war some 800 men were impressed, and Newbury furnished her quota. What would have come from Andros, had not a change occurred in England, is not clear; but already committees of safety were formed, and revolution was at hand, when William and Mary were proclaimed king and queen of England.

Among the persons impressed to this French and Indian war was Capt. John March, who removed his family to the East, and was the defender of Casco Fort, for his losses at which the General Court voted him fifty pounds, "in consideration of his brave defence of his majesty's fort at Casco Bay, when attacked by the French and Indian enemy, and of the wounds he there received." He claimed that his losses were $500.

The town at this time was almost at direct issue with the governor; and when, on the 24th of August, 1689, they were called upon for a "loan of money, provisions, and goods for carrying on the Indian war," they replied that they would maintain "ye soldiers of our own towne as to provisions and wages"; but the danger was deemed so great that the military was constantly upon duty, and they were ordered to bring their arms and ammunition to the meeting-house on the Sabbath, and to all public meetings, and into the fields where they worked. This seemed not to be without cause, when Indian raids were being made upon the towns, and one Isaac Morrill, from New Jersey, was arrested in Newbury for attempting to induce the negroes and Indians to insurrection for the murder of the English and the emancipation of the slaves. It was during this war, also, that the Indian attack on John Brown's house at Turkey Hill was made.

While the people were so uneasy at home that a nightly watch of fifty-one men was kept, Sir William Phipps, a native of Maine, wealthy and patriotic, with a fleet of English vessels, captured Annapolis, Nova Scotia, which so encouraged the people that the General Court attempted the conquest and acquisition of Canada. Capt. John March was ordered to enlist a company, and William Phipps was in command of the expedition; but it proved a costly failure, and the expenses were met by an issue of paper money, the first ever seen in New England, and that soon became worthless to the great loss of its holders, and especially to the soldiers who were paid in it. It was in October of this year that Capt. Stephen Greenleaf, Lieut. James Smith, Ensign William Longfellow, Serg. Increase Pillsbury, William Mitchell, and Jabez Musgrave, of Newbury, with four other soldiers, were cast away and drowned at Cape Breton. This James Musgrave was a veteran of King Philip's War, in which he was shot through the head, the bullet entering at the ear and coming out at the eye on the other side; but he survived to be one of the sixteen volunteers from Newbury on this disastrous expedition. This war continued through several years. Indeed it was only one of the series of outbreaks that continued till finally the French were defeated on the St. Lawrence and their hopes of dominion in America died.

In 1721 the war broke out with the Norridgewock Indians, and, continuing to 1724, was suddenly brought to a close by the death of Sebastian Rallè, a French priest, who was killed by Lieut. Richard Jaques, of Newbury. Capt. Jeremiah Moulton, with eighty men, had made an attack on the village, in which were sixty warriors and more than a hundred squaws and children, when Jaques, perceiving that somebody was firing from a wigwam, broke in the door and discovered Rallè loading his gun. He refused to surrender, and Jaques shot him through the head, though it was against the express orders of Capt. Moulton that the priest should be killed.

In 1744, war existing between France and England, Capt. Donahue fitted out a small privateer, with which he captured a French sloop, with live-stock, and a ship with 3,000 quintals of fish.

The next year, 1745, the announcement of the expedition against Louisburg, Cape Breton, filled the town with enthusiasm. That was more strongly fortified than any other place in America, the French having labored through thirty years, and at a cost of $5,000,000, to make it impregnable. William Pepperell, a wealthy citizen of Kittery, commanded the Provincial forces of 4,000 men on one hundred vessels, supported by a British squadron. The attack commenced April 30, and the siege and surrender closed in forty-nine days. The attack was planned by Col. Gridley, who afterwards laid out the entrenchments on Bunker Hill, and the same old drums that beat the triumphal entrance of the New Englanders into Louisburg, June 17, 1745, beat at Bunker Hill, June 17, 1775; and many of the same men followed them, sneeringly declaring that Gen. Gage's mudworks were nothing to the stone walls of old Louisburg. So brilliant was this achievement that William Pepperell was made a baronet, and in London and other English cities the news was received with rejoicings, bonfires, and illuminations. A large number of Newbury soldiers were in this expedition, the most noted being Major Moses Titcomb, as brave a man as ever lived, whose patriotism knew no limits. He was third in descent from William Titcomb, one of the original settlers with Parker. Physically he was magnificent; of great strength and large size, who, when the men were off duty and amused themselves in wrestling, running, and other sports, found no equal. He not only commanded one of the batteries that Gridley posted against the walls, but it bore his name. The five forty-two pounders were his property, and the best of all the guns. When he returned, he brought from the field of battle the bombshell that, to this day, graces the head of a stone post on Middle Street, and is now the only memorial of his heroism.

Maj. Titcomb was colonel of a regiment in the expedition against Crown Point, in 1754, and was killed in the battle at Lake George, Sept. 8, 1755. For protection of his men, close up to the breast-works of the enemy, he ordered them to lie flat on the ground, while, the better to command them, and to use his own musket, he stood behind a large pine-tree. A party of Indians, observing this, crept around to his rear and shot him. He was buried on the field of battle, but his grave, like that of the ancient Moses, is not known to this day. He was a member of the First Church of Newburyport, and the Rev. John Lowell preached a funeral sermon from the text, "Moses, my servant, is dead," in which he pronounced the following eulogistic words, which only the greatness of the man and the deep love the people bore him would justify: —

"I question whether there has been for a great while any death in this land so justly and universally regretted; people of all ranks have been ready to drop a tear or a sigh. In the language of David's elegy, 'How are the mighty fallen!' Seldom was any man more generally beloved, and the whole country shows that his death is a great public loss; especially in such a day as this, such a hero will be very much missed."

The war continued, with varying success, down to 1759, with great cost of men and means, and Newbury did not fail to contribute her proportion.

In 1757, New Hampshire, Connecticut, and Massachusetts furnished 15,000 soldiers, and they were equally well represented to 1759, when Gens. Wolfe and Montcalm, on the plains of Quebec, with their lives ended the long struggle of races, religions, and nations, for the supremacy on this continent. In that last battle was Capt. William Davenport, with a company of men from Newbury. Returning, he established the famous Wolfe Tavern, naming it for his fallen commander, and on the sign-board was a portrait of the General, lettered beneath, "Gen. James Wolfe, Esq., 1763," the date of the tavern. The original sign is now in the possession of Major Ben: Perley Poore, of Indian Hill.

On the surrender of Quebec, the greatest joy was manifested throughout the Provinces and Great Britain. Newbury had a gala-day, and roasted a whole ox in Market Square. The carcass was split in two and broiled on a large gridiron made for that purpose; speeches were made, songs sung, and, to that date, the town had never such rejoicing.

But the French war was only the precursor of the greater struggle for independence. It was the school for training men who fought in the battles from Lexington to Yorktown. They were proud of their strength, and from that hour would submit to no oppression; but our town history so mingles with Newburyport that it is not easy to

draw the dividing line in action where there was only a street or the bounds between the houses of the nearest neighbors to divide the territory.

When the Stamp Act of 1765 passed, it met no firmer resistance than in Newbury, where Joseph Gerrish, representative in General Court, was instructed to protest against the right of one people to tax another without their consent, and to unite with his associates in legal resistance, for the support of the constitutional rights of Britons; and when that law was repealed in 1766, demonstrations of joy were had at the public expense. This spirit was kept up in Acts relating to trade, and opposition to the use of tea, and in all the patriotic demonstrations of that day, down to the conflict in arms at Lexington and Bunker Hill, when they rose as one man to the assertion of their rights. The town had voted that they would discontinue all trade with Great Britain; that they would send £200 to relieve suffering Boston; they had instructed their representative not to be qualified for his seat by any of the royal councillors, and at once made preparation for all the suffering they might be called upon to endure.

As soon as the news of the Lexington fight reached them, two companies from Newbury marched at once, starting in the night, and were ready to participate in the battle at Bunker Hill, where two colonels from Newbury, Samuel Gerrish and Moses Little, were engaged in the battle. Col. Gerrish was field-officer of the day June 17, 1775, and Col. Little behaved with great gallantry, and had the fullest regiment on the field. Col. Little will long be remembered for the part he acted in the Revolutionary struggle. He was born in Newbury, in 1724, and was consequently more than fifty years old when the war broke out. He had been a royal land-surveyor, and himself became the greatest land-owner who ever lived in the town, at one time owning in his personal right nearly seventy thousand acres in New England. He was one of the captains who marched a company for Lexington; was promoted to command a regiment at Bunker Hill, to which, on the memorable 17th of June, he led his men over the neck in Indian file, when the fire was so hot that his clothes were sprinkled with the blood of the wounded and dying. He was in the army to 1777, being the senior colonel in Gen. Greene's brigade, under Washington, at New York and Long Island, and following Washington through New York to Trenton and Princeton. From 1775 to 1777, when ill-health compelled his resignation, he was at home but two days, and then to bury two children.

In 1779, he was appointed to command the naval expedition against the enemy on the Penobscot, but declined on account of infirm health. He lost his speech by paralysis in 1781; but lived to 1790, retaining to the last that sagacity, self-possession, and patriotism which marked his early career. He was descended from George Little, who came to Newbury, 1644; and Hon. Josiah, who founded the Public Library, was his grandson.

From our inability to narrate the Revolutionary history of Newbury, without repeating under Newburyport, we prefer to give the story in what we may say of the latter town; but we do not forget that many of the men entitled to praise for their conduct both on the land and sea, as the Lunts, O'Briens, and others, lived in Newbury. The same holds good in relation to the war of 1812, and the embargo and non-intercourse measures preceding, all of which were violently opposed by both towns, which were so strongly Federal in their politics that, in 1807, the date of the first embargo, Newbury cast 355 votes for Caleb Strong, to 171 for Sullivan, Democrat. In 1808 it unanimously voted to remonstrate with President Jefferson against that measure. In 1809 it passed resolutions against the embargo, which were sent to the General Court. This grew out of the fact that the administration measures suspended all the industries of the town, and reduced many persons to pauperism. In 1812, without a dissenting voice, the town voted opposition to the war with Great Britain; and, in 1815, the announcement of the treaty of Ghent was received with almost as much joy as that which hailed independence. At the same time there were many Newbury men in the army, the first person volunteering being Paul Pillsbury, of Byfield, the celebrated mechanic who invented the mills to grind bark in tanneries, and also invented the machines for cutting pegs, which are now essential in the manufacture of shoes. There was a full company enlisted at Newburyport for the expedition to Canada, which found many volunteers in that part of Newbury now the first ward of Newburyport, one of whom, Joseph Stanwood, a drummer, was also a drummer in the War of the Rebellion, fifty years later, and by special Act of Congress was made a pensioner, — the first person of the war of 1812 so rewarded. Men also served in the coast defence at Plum Island and on Cape Ann, some of them surviving to receive the benefits of the pension laws of to-day, which include all soldiers of that war. Also many seamen of the town were on naval vessels and privateers, contesting for the freedom of the seas, for which the war was declared.

Nor did the military spirit which had animated their fathers for nearly two centuries die out after the peace of 1815; but, in 1820, we find an independent company formed, the Byfield Rifles, the first independent rifle corps of the United States, and one of the best. It was commanded by Major Ira Stickney, and instructed and drilled by Major Dudley, from West Point, who spared no pains or expense to bring it to the highest state of efficiency. It did escort duty, with the Newburyport Artillery, at the second centennial celebration of the town, in 1835, and was then a model company in appearance, drill, and deportment. It continued till about 1845, when it disbanded, Capt. Green Wildes being its last commander. But its men did not lose their skill in and taste for arms; and when, a few years later, Major Ben: Perley Poore formed his battalion, which was so prompt to answer the first call to arms in suppressing the Rebellion, Byfield furnished one company, and through its influence the "Mills Village" sent more men to the war of 1861 than any equal population in the county of Essex, and men as brave and daring as the American army ever contained.

April 3, 1861, the town called a meeting to consider the state of the country, — the first meeting of the kind, says Gen. Schouler, in his "Massachusetts in the Rebellion," held in the United States, — at which resolutions were unanimously passed, pledging the good faith of the town to the comfortable maintenance of the families of all citizens of Newbury who should enter the military service during the war; that "though we are on the verge of civil war, that is to drench the soil of our nation for years with the best blood of her sons, . . our confidence in the righteousness of our cause, and our faith in the maintenance and perpetuity of our glorious heritage of a free constitutional government, are all unimpaired"; "that our watchword shall be 'Liberty and Union, now and forever, one and inseparable,' in support of which 'we pledge our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor.'" The meeting authorized the treasurer to borrow $3,000 to arm and equip soldiers and aid families; and $300 was appropriated for the rifle company, to put it in condition for immediate service. Then, following Revolutionary precedent, they raised a committee of vigilance, correspondence, and safety, "to take such action as might be deemed expedient in reference to such persons within the town as might be inimical to the United States." Their entire action was in accordance with the spirit of '76.

In July, 1862, they voted $150 bounty to each three years' volunteer. In August, they voted to pay nine months' men a bounty of $250 each. During the remainder of the war the town paid the State bounty of $125, and $3,275, by private subscription, for recruiting and bounties, which was afterward repaid the subscribers by vote of the town. From a population of 1,400, Newbury furnished 189 men for the war, a surplus of twenty-five over all demands. Five were commissioned officers. The amount of money paid, exclusive of State aid, was $28,862, while the whole valuation of the town was $800,000. In addition, the Soldiers' Aid Society made contribution to the value of $2,000; and the town paid $9,000 to aid the families of volunteers, which was afterwards reimbursed.

The military record of Newbury, from 1638 to 1865, is one of which her sons may justly be proud.

NEWBURYPORT.

CHAPTER I.

ITS TOPOGRAPHY — LOCATION — SCENERY — APPEARANCE OF ITS HOUSES AND PUBLIC BUILDINGS, PAST AND PRESENT.

Newburyport is unique. It grew not as most other towns of its time: it was made, not born. Otherwise it would not, at first, have been the smallest town in the Commonwealth, — of less than 650 acres, carved out of one side of the largest towns in the county of Essex; and, but for external causes, it might not now be the smallest city of Massachusetts in population. But what it might have been is not our story; while what it has been is so perfectly satisfactory to its people, who are as proud of it as were ever Romans of the seven-hilled city on the yellow Tiber, that not a word of its history would we change. It was in 1763 that William Atkins, Daniel Farnham, and others, in all 206 of the chief men, foremost in culture, social position, wealth, business, and influence, living by the "water side," tired of the petty jealousies and rivalries which existed between the people of the "port" and the "old town," asked to be set off and incorporated under the name of Newburyport; and in January, 1764, their petition was granted. The name selected was natural. This portion of Newbury for a hundred years had been called the "Port," not only by the Newbury people, but by those of Salisbury, Amesbury, and other river towns; for to the Merrimac Valley it was the natural port, the *entrepôt*, and the depot for the whole line of the river. That it became; that eventually it will be again. A few years later there was a vote to call it Portland,—Portland, Me., then being called Falmouth; but the good sense of the inhabitants was better than the vote of the town-meeting. The clerk recorded it "Portland," and so the record stands; but the world knew it as Newburyport, a name that applies to it alone.

The town started with 2,282 inhabitants, and included the central part of the present city; stopping on the east at Cottle's Lane, now Bromfield Street, leaving out most of High Street, and the greater part of what is now ward six. In all respects the boundaries were bad. Half as many people as lived within the town dwelt near by, on every side save the river; having the same interests and pursuits, and equally distinct from the rural portion of Newbury. Hence immediately commenced an agitation for augmentation; and that question was never allowed to sleep, till, in 1851, an act passed the Legislature to annex so much of the town of Newbury as was between Newburyport and the Artichoke River, making it border on West Newbury; and, from the south-west point of West Newbury, the line was run to the westerly part of Newburyport,—which town on the west had form like a flat-iron; and thence, in a pretty direct line, to the southerly bend of the Plum Island turnpike; and by that across Plum Island to the ocean. This gave all of the "Ridge," all of "Belleville," all of "Jappa," and placed the face of the city on the sea, towards the rising sun. Thus the territory was extended from little more than 600 to over 6,000 acres of land; and the inhabitants were 12,866.

At the first town-meeting, in April, 1852, Hon. Henry W. Kinsman, moderator, welcomed the new citizens; and Moses Pettingell, Esq., who had been selectman of Newbury several times, representative in General Court, and had through many years led the annexation party, responded in fitting words. The town voted to petition for a city charter; and that was granted May 24th ensuing. The charter was adopted in June, and, an election of officers being had, Hon. Caleb Cushing was made the first mayor. The arms of the city are "quarterly": first, two lighthouses; in the distance, a ship under full sail; second, a steam-mill; third, a ship on the stocks; fourth (the seal of Newbury in England) on a mount three domed towers, on each a pennon, crest, a mural coronet, surmounted by two hands joined; supporters, two female figures,—that on the dexter side representing America, that on the sinister, Massachusetts. Scroll, *Terra Marique*. In the seal is, "City of Newburyport, A. D. MDCCCLI."

It will be seen that the arms designate the pursuits of the people, commerce, manufactures, and mechanic arts, — especially shipbuilding, for which the banks of the Merrimac have been famous from the first settlement of the country; and thereto is added the seal of Newbury in England, from which came our ancestors and name,—a town on the river Kenuet, fifty-six miles from London, incorporated by Queen Elizabeth in 1586. It dates back to the Norman invasion, and was called Newbury from a castle there built.

It is scarcely possible to conceive of a more beautiful location,—one more favorable to health or business. The population is chiefly on a territory three miles long and less than a mile wide, sloping gently to the river, washed by every rain, remarkable for the purity of its air and water. It has a natural drainage also conducive to health. The Ridge, which is High Street,—an elegant avenue running six miles, from the Deer Island Chain Bridge to that which spans the Parker, the Indian Quascacunquen,—is shaded by full two thousand trees of many varieties. It overlooks the town; the river, with its bridges, islands, and shipping; and the sea from Boar's Head, on the one side, to Rocky Cape Ann, on the other. The light-houses along the shore flicker here and there during the night; and the smoke of the steamer and the white sail of commerce are in full view during the day. This portion of the city is most delightful. The street is broad and overarched by ancient elms, bordered on either side by cleanly shorn lawns, beautiful gardens, and elegant mansions, — the abodes of wealthy and cultivated people, who, from their rear lands, have a view of the farms, pastures, woods, hills, and villages, stretching away to Andover, Boxford, and Topsfield.

The north section, Belleville, is also elevated for the most part, and from the laurel-crowned river-bank and Moulton Hill unveils to the eye views of quiet beauty seldom equalled in any part of the world. The south end declines to the river; and, beyond the populous part, to field-lands and marshes; to sandy Plum Island and the beaches seaward. It is here where lived the "ancient mariners," the shipwrights and fishermen of early times; where the Pettingells and Roltes had their farms; and John Spencer, who could not be captain of a military company because he was not orthodox in religion, and so, in disgust at the hard features of Puritanism, went back to England. And succeeding him, where the stone house is,—the first stone building in the town,—came Daniel Pierce, who was deemed so valuable an acquisition that they granted lands if he would promise to remain with them so long as he lived, unless he returned to England. His descendants have been as highly esteemed as himself, reaching the highest places of trust and honor: one of them, Benjamin Pierce, a hero of the Revolution, governor of New Hampshire; and his son, Franklin, the fourteenth president of the United States. What is written on a headstone in the Byfield church-yard of Benjamin Pierce, Esq., who died in 1711, only forty-two years old, though deemed worthy of this eulogy so quaintly expressed, is true of others of the family:—

"Pillar 'i th' State he was,
Bid fair still
At greater things.
To all yt knew him well,
Pattern of Virtue
Kind to all was he
Loued by friends.
Feard by his enemie,
Embalmed in tears.
Enuey itselfe stood dumb,
Snatched from ye world.
In times most troublesome."

The main streets of the city run parallel with the river, and are crossed by transverse ways, near enough at right angles to give unity and symmetry in variety, are generally of good width, and well shaded with trees. In looking through the streets running to the river, they seem like arbor walks,—shaded ways in a grand park,—

so much are the houses hidden, and so level and clean are the road-beds. Along them are found handsome churches, school-houses, and other buildings public and private, for residences or for business and trade. The dwellings are generally surrounded by well-cultivated grounds and fruit-trees and flowers; so that in looking down upon the city from any high position, in the summer, it appears like a succession of gardens. Its peculiar and beautiful appearance, with the scenery about it, has attracted the attention of the most distinguished foreign travellers; as of Brissot de Warville of France, who describes it in a volume published after his return to Europe. Other Frenchmen, as Louis Philippe, Talleyrand, and Lafayette; as also, among our own countrymen, Washington, Franklin, John Quincy Adams, and Webster,—were charmed with, and lavished their praises of, the town.

It is not surprising that these material surroundings, contributing so much to desirable mental conditions, have not only impressed persons born in the town, and waked in them the deepest and most abiding love for their birth-places, but made them what they have been in all our history,—active, ambitious, proud, cultured, poetic; enterprising in business, bold in action, and imaginative in writing. So this locality has been the home of many poets, who have lived here or have here had their family roots: like Longfellow and Lowell and Lunt, John Pierpont and Albert Pike, W. W. Caldwell, Richard S. Spofford, Lucy Hooper, Mrs. George Lee, and a host of others. Nor are we any more surprised that it has been a desirable residence for men famous in letters, oratory, law, and politics; so that, in its judges alone, it numbers Bradbury, Parsons, Wilde, Thatcher, and Cushing, all on the Supreme bench; Greenleaf and White, who made the Probate Court distinguished; and Tyng and Livermore, who honored the Common Pleas; while among the lawyers of its bar have been Rufus King, John Lowell, Stephen Hooper, Samuel L. Knapp, John Pierpont, Ebenezer Moseley, George Lunt, and many others, living or dead, worthy of honorable mention. Scholars sought here a home, with physicians and clergymen in love with the place; and merchants centred here their business, where they could combine pleasure with the toils of life: and so man has combined with nature to make Newburyport what we see it to-day.

In 1796 Dr. Dwight wrote of it: "Newburyport is built on a declivity of unrivalled beauty. The slope is easy and elegant; the soil is rich, the streets, clean and sweet, and the verdure, wherever it is visible, exquisite. The streets are either parallel or right angled to the river, the southern shore of which bends here to the south-east. None of them are regularly formed, still there is so near an approximation to regularity as to awaken in the mind of the traveller, with peculiar strength, a wish that the regularity had been perfect. . . . There are few towns of equal beauty in the country. The houses taken collectively make a better appearance than those of any other town in New England. Many of them are particularly handsome. Their appendages are unusually neat. Indeed an air of wealth, taste, and elegance is spread over this beautiful spot, to which I know no rival."

This description was written when Newburyport was one of the large seaports of the country, and its importance in wealth and trade, and the intellectual and moral standing of its people, were acknowledged at home and in foreign lands. Mrs. E. Vale Smith, in her history, published nearly sixty years later, says of High Street, overlooking the scene described by Dr. Dwight: —

"The many tasty dwellings located along the entire length, together with the beautiful foliage intermingled with the waving elms, the sturdy oak, and the majestic forest trees of a century's growth, arching their spreading branches in luxuriant grandeur, united with songs of the forest birds, and enlivened by fragrant and aromatic breezes constantly sweeping their course from hundreds of highly cultivated exotic plants in gardens on either side, cooled by refreshing air from the ocean, contribute to make the avenue of our city a delightful promenade and fashionable retreat during the summer season. The number of shade-trees on High Street, embracing that portion within the limits of Newburyport, — from the Three Roads on the north to Marlborough Street on the south, — is eleven hundred and forty-seven." The number of trees has been increased since her date (1854), and the residences also; though there is little improvement in appearance to be made to the square, three-story, white houses, with green blinds, and suitable shrubbery around them, as they were fifty years ago.

As a place of residence, Newburyport has many natural advantages; as in its drives through the country Dr. Dwight describes. Louis Philippe, king of the French, said that all Europe did not afford so fine a drive as that along the Merrimac on the north bank, between the Powow River and Rocks Bridge. Little inferior is it on the south river-bank to Haverhill; or from the city over the Parker River bridge to Rowley; and almost any direction will take one through shady dells, where he is as much alone with nature as he would be a thousand miles from civilization; or over gentle hills, ascending which a vast panorama of beauty is unrolled. Sir Edward Thornton, the British minister, spent two seasons on Moulton Hill, which he declared afforded prettier views than were elsewhere to be found between it and Washington. Brissot de Warville made a similar declaration concerning Pipe-stave Hill, when he there received the hospitalities of the Daltons and Hoopers; and Bayard Taylor was not less enchanted with the quiet beauty of Powow Hill; while any of the above-mentioned localities is fully equalled by Indian Hill.

CHAPTER II.

THE HISTORY OF THE TOWN FROM 1764 TO THE REVOLUTION.

Previously Newbury had been entitled to two representatives in General Court. One was retained by Newbury, and the other assigned to Newburyport. Daniel Farnham was the first representative. He had been active for the incorporation of the town; his name was second on the petition; and he was the moderator of the first town-meeting. He filled important municipal offices; but his family, like many of a hundred years ago, leaves little more by which they can be remembered than what is found on the headstones of the grave-yards. On the slab which covers a tomb on the Old Burying Hill, Daniel Farnham is called a barrister at law; and that is a title not found on any other tombstone in the town. It is a distinction not known in the State to-day; but was applied to the highest class of members of the bar in the old Province of Massachusetts Bay. It was held by Judge Bradbury and Chief Justice Parsons, of the Supreme Court, and attached not to any other person in the county at that time. Mr. Farnham built and lived in a house opposite the head of Market Street, on the site now occupied by the Kelley School-house.

In the very first year of the town, the British Parliament passed an Act for raising revenue in the Colonies, by internal taxes. By it the duties on sugar and molasses were increased, to the great injury of our trade with the French and Spanish West Indies; and, worse than that,—to the great annoyance of our commerce,—every naval commander was made a revenue officer, with power to search and seize American vessels if in his judgment necessary. This was a severe check to the prosperity of the new town, and the first of that series of acts which induced that rebellion of the Provinces which, being successful, we call the Revolution.

The next year, Parliament enacted the Stamp Law, which was odious; for it interfered with all business, public and private, and the whole people were in opposition. The town instructed its representative, Dudley Atkins, to oppose all his influence to the enforcement of the law; and in those instructions they set forth that Parliament was attempting to deprive them of the rights they had inherited as Englishmen,—"rights descended to us in the Great Charter, and enjoyed by our fathers, even back to the Alfreds and Edwards of immortal memory." "Are we to be treated as slaves?" asked they.

While they appealed to the civil and legislative authorities, it was a matter on which they would not wait for others to act. And when they added to this declaration, "it is the desire of the town that no man in it will accept the office of distributing the stampt papers, as he regards the displeasure of the town"; and that the town deem such person an "enemy to the country," they set up a higher law, and one more binding than the British Parliament could enact,—a law which no citizen could ignore without peril.

So when Boston, Salem, or Newburyport said let no man distribute "the stampt papers," no man did it; and when they added, a man so doing shall be deemed an enemy to his country, every one knew that he would be regarded and treated as a traitor.

The people were in a fever of excitement, and determined to execute their own will. In Boston, houses were broken open and property destroyed. Here the stamp distributor was hanged in effigy; which was afterwards burned by the ship-carpenters near the foot of Federal Street, where gathered an immense crowd, while the bell rang, and the citizens hooted, crying, "So perish all the real stamp distributors."

Then formed companies of young men, who paraded the streets at night, hailing every passer, "Stamp or no stamp?" and the answers were unvarying, "No stamp." One person, a stranger, not knowing the inquisitorial party, replied, "I am as you are!" and was cheered for his ready wit. These demonstrations had the desired effect, or the Revolution might have begun ten years before it did. The law was to be operative in November: but, when that month came, the stamps and the stamp distributor came not with it; and, on the March following, the law was repealed. The announcement of the repeal created such joy that July 24th was set apart for thanksgiving, and no thanksgiving has been so observed from that day to this.

"The people were mad," writes one, "with drink and joy." Newburyport did not stop for her thanksgiving. "By beat of drum and word of mouth," the town was assembled, as soon as the news reached here. The town-house was illuminated, and six half barrels of powder supplied the guns fired from the heads of Patch and Bartlett wharves,—the longest wharves, from which the glad news was thundered to all the surrounding country. Lacking the circumstances, one can hardly conceive, at this day, of the feelings which actuated a country verging on revolution, and still restrained within the nominal bounds of peace. The fagots were piled for the fire, and all waited the hour to apply the torch; many looking and longing for the moment when the light should gleam upon the clouds.

In 1767, Parliament laid a tax on paper, glass, painters' colors, tea, and other merchandise; and immediately agitation commenced in resistance similar to that which had led to a repeal of the Stamp Act. It was more universal against tea than anything else; as that touched every town, and entered every house, affecting females as well as men. Various herbs were used as substitutes, and demonstrations of different kinds made touching the question. It is recorded that a party of young ladies gathered at the house of Rev. Mr. Parsons, who was the head and soul of resistance to British tyranny preceding the Revolution, who preached them a sermon; after which they spun 270 skeins of yarn, presenting the same to Mrs. Parsons, and drank liberty tea, as it was called, — that is herb tea. That was in April.

The following September, Joshua Vickery, a ship carpenter, on suspicion that he had given information to the revenue officers, was set on the stocks, five hours, on a sharp stone, till he fainted; then he was revived, carted through the streets, with a rope about his neck, his hands being bound, and pelted with eggs. After that, he was kept in irons from Saturday to Monday; then he was obliged to lead a horse through the town, drawing one Francis Magro, who, for giving information against a vessel in Portsmouth, was seized here, stripped naked, tarred and feathered, and exhibited to public scorn. No man could favor the execution of the law without being deemed a public enemy, and so jeopardized in reputation, property, and person. In later years, we have seen a similar demonstration against law in relation to the fishing bounties, when the execution of the law was obnoxious.

It was at this period, and before the "Mohawks" in Boston had tested whether tea would mix with salt water, that Eleazer Johnson, a ship-builder, who had succeeded his father, William, in building at the foot of Ship Street, led the carpenters in his employ to the destruction of tea. For its safe-keeping, it had been stored in the powder-house. One day, Mr. Johnson, than whom there was not a more determined patriot in the land, a member of Mr. Parsons's church, where treason to royal prerogatives was preached every Sunday, standing upon some timber, called his men around him. "Few and short were the words he said," when the order was given, "Every man ready to do so will knock his adze from the handle, shoulder the handle, and fall into line." They all did so, and himself — a man of herculean frame, with iron will and iron nerve, so strong that he was known to carry one end of a stick timber over the bows of a ship against four ordinary carpenters — shouldered his broad axe, the emblem of power, and his black hair floating in the wind, and his black eyes flashing, led the way to the place of tea deposit. A single stroke of the strong man's trusty axe shattered the oaken door, when, at his command, each man took a chest upon his back, and in solemn, single file, not a word spoken, they wended their way to Market Square, marched around the meeting-house, which then stood where the town pump now is, broke the chests in a pile, and Eleazer Johnson lighted the fires of liberty with his own hand. Again, when the tea was reduced to ashes, like trained soldiers they formed, and returned to their work as silently as they had left it.

This was the first tea destroyed by the patriots in the Province of Massachusetts Bay; and it has surprised us that the record has found no place in history, when the tradition has come down in all its minuteness, placing the fact beyond doubt. We had it from Eleazer Johnson's grandson, the town and city clerk for some forty years. The seizure and destruction not only took place as narrated, but was repeated, — the second burning being at the foot of Federal Street, in front of Mr. Johnson's house. This Eleazer Johnson is worthy of lasting remembrance in our hearts. He was the son of William, the first ancestor of the old Johnson family here; and his mother was Mary, daughter of Daniel Pierce, before named. He lived from 1718 to 1792; and was in the pride of his manhood, a man of wealth and large business, at the date of the tea burning. He was distinguished for great energy and decision; and, though not a learned man, was a lover of learning and piety, and educated his son, who was afterwards the first minister of the Second Parish of West Newbury, at Harvard, where he graduated in 1727. He was the close friend of the Crosses, Ralph and Stephen, and of Jonathan Greenleaf, co-partners in the Revolutionary era, — all ship-builders in the same neighborhood, heroic chiefs of heroic men.

Newburyport was the first town in the province that agreed to the non-importation of foreign goods; and this when she had more to lose than any other town, as she represented to the Congress, which she declared she would sustain, "let the sacrifices be ever so great," that her chief business was importations from Great Britain; a large trade with the French West India islands, numerous distilleries, and ship building, — all of which were to be ruined by this measure, and the town impoverished. Without foreign trade, ships would rot in the docks, and those in process of construction, on the stocks; and her traffic of every kind must cease. Deliberately she gave up the bread of her life to resist oppression and secure freedom. The ships built for parties abroad — in England, Scotland, Ireland — had been chiefly paid for in British manufactured goods, or the products of the West India islands. This merchandise had filled the warehouses and covered their wharves. It went to supply not only the surrounding towns, for which this was the port, but the towns, and even the plantations above, in the north of New Hampshire, and Vermont. Chiefly, the exchange of foreign imports for the farm productions of the interior was made in the winter, when the snow secured good travelling, and the ice bridged the rivers; and persons now living can remember when from fifty to a hundred teams, driven from fifty to a hundred miles, would bring into the market, in a single day, pork, beef, wool, hides, tallow, butter, cheese, poultry, and grain, and take in return sugar, molasses, rum, iron, and dry goods. This was the mart of exchange; and all such places derive profit both from their own industry and the labors of others. Newburyport sat by the sea, like Tyre in the most ancient times, or Venice or Genoa when the commerce of the Mediterranean most flourished, or like London or New York to-day. It was one of the chief ports of the country: holding relatively the rank of Boston, Philadelphia, and Baltimore now. But all these advantages she gave up, all these interests she abandoned, for the common good and the public liberties. Deliberately she strangled the business she relied on; destroyed the industries of her people; closed her port; denounced those who preferred trade to freedom as *pests* of society, — enemies to the country; caught informers, and rode them through her streets clothed in tar and feathers, that they might be infamous; burned tea in her market-place; and sat down in her loneliness, that she might remain firm for freedom, and the right be maintained. She did more than that: when the Boston Port Bill, passed to punish and beggar Boston for her patriotism, she voted £200 from her treasury for the suffering inhabitants of that town; and not a tax-payer objected, for not a Tory was within her limits. And, later, she collected over £200 for the same purpose, by voluntary contributions of the churches. Nor did she hesitate even there, but in town meeting voted unanimously, "This town will stand by the Continental Congress, if it be to the stopping of all trade." Perish trade, she said; perish commerce; perish property; perish all else: but live freedom, and live the manhood which scorns life without liberty. Thus boldly stood forth a little town at the mouth of the Merrimac, of only three thousand people, daring British tyranny, and placing herself in the jaws of financial destruction, before she would yield to oppression, or submit to wrong.

Her letter to the committee of the town of Boston, adopted at a meeting of the freeholders and others, Dec. 20, 1774, has in it the true ring of the Declaration of Independence: "It is with astonishment that we reflect upon the unremitted efforts of the British ministry and Parliament, to fasten ruin and infamy upon these colonies. They not only claim a right to control and tax us at their pleasure, but are practicing every species of fraud to support and establish this absurd and injurious claim. . . . We lose all patience, when we consider

that the industrious Americans are to be stript of their honest earnings to gratify the humors of lawless and ambitious men, and to support in idleness and luxury a parcel of worthless partizans, their creatures and tools, who are swarming thick upon us, and are ready to become a notorious burden to the community." Then they go on: "We are under great obligations to our worthy friends and brothers who have nobly stood forth in this important cause, and assure them that if they need our assistance in any emergency, we determine most readily to exert out utmost abilities, in every manly and laudable way, our wisdom may dictate, for the salvation of our country, and even at the hazard of our lives to frustrate all the designs of our enemies." If Newburyport had been all of Massachusetts, or the thirteen Colonies combined, she could not have uttered braver words, — words soon to be backed by deeds not less brave.

The next year, 1774, Tristram Dalton, shortly to be a Senator of the new-born republic; Benjamin Greenleaf, so long the learned Judge of Probate for Essex County; Jonathan Titcomb, who became a brigadier-general in the Revolutionary Army, and was a member of the first General Court in Boston after its evacuation by the British; Stephen Cross, who had been a brave soldier in the expedition against Crown Point; and John Lowell, who soon after won a great name among American statesmen and jurists, — were the selectmen of the town. We give their names, because not, as we remember, before or since, have names of equal worth appeared; nor have we ever known five so distinguished to be the selectmen of any town. Newburyport appreciated the situation; and her able and honored and patriotic men were kept in the front. She felt that affairs hastened to a crisis, and for that she made ready.

The Boston massacre of March, three years previous, when three men were shot on the streets, was celebrated. The bells tolled at sunrise and sunset for the first blood of the struggle. The Rev. Jonathan Parsons, than whom there was not a man in the country more intensely patriotic, preached a sermon at the Old South, — a building as much consecrated to freedom as was ever Faneuil Hall. Its walls echoed with words as full of treason as Patrick Henry's when he astonished the royal court in Virginia. Unfortunately Mr. Parsons died in the same month the nation was born, July, 1776; nor saw the full fruition of his labors and prayers.

In October, in giving instructions to Jonathan Greenleaf, representative to the General Court, the town said, "Armed ships and armed men are the arguments to compell our obedience, and the more than implicit language that those utter is that we must submit or die. . . . We design not madly to brave our own destruction, and we do not thirst for the blood of others; but reason and religion demand of us that we guard our invaluable rights at the risque of both." Did they mean at the risk of their own blood, and that of others? Well did they so resolve; and hence, October 24th, the town voted: "All the inhabitants are desired to furnish themselves with arms and ammunition, and have bayonets fixed to their guns, as soon as may be." No call for volunteers; no draft of a few; every male inhabitant over sixteen years old was at once to be armed and enter upon military practice and drill, that they might become expert; and the lands about Frog Pond were levelled for a training-field. When, on examination of the rolls, it was found that some names were not there, the selectmen went around to every such man, with the inquiry, "What is the reason of such neglect?" Subsequently the committee of safety divided the town into four military districts, having alarm-posts and sentinels. The first district included all below Federal Street; the second, from Federal to State; the third, from State to Market; and the fourth, all above; and so the whole town was turned into a military camp, and the troops kept in such a state of preparation that when, on the day of the battle of Lexington, the news was brought to town, before 11 o'clock of that very night, without railroads or telegraphs to assist, the re-enforcements from Newburyport were on their way to join their brothers in the bloody struggle.

To represent them in the Provincial Congress at Cambridge, the town chose Tristram Dalton, Stephen Cross, and Jonathan Greenleaf — the last named called "Silver Tongue," from his readiness, smoothness, and persuasiveness of speech; a man learned, though he never attended a school; a man from such poverty that, when he married Mary Pressbury, his master's daughter, he had not andirons to support the chips that flew from his broad axe, and so used bricks; but he had now attained wealth; a man so important to the town that he held various offices from 1768 to 1792, and had the thanks of the town, in 1782, for his long and valuable service as representative in the General Court. Those three men, with their co-patriots, — Jonathan Jackson, who was one of the first gentlemen in intellectual and social society, and a member of the Continental Congress of 1780, the treasurer of the State for years, and full of honors; and John Bromfield, a wealthy and honored merchant, — these men were a committee to meet with similar committees for other towns in Essex County, to act for the public safety. They met at Ipswich, and passed resolves taking issue with the British Parliament on all the principal points of the bill for the better regulation of the government of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, by which act the people were deprived of all voice in the election of a governor and council, by whom, royally appointed, the judges, marshals, sheriffs, &c., were to be had. The act also limited the town to one meeting a year, and its action to the choice of town officers. It took away the right of the inhabitants to choose persons for jurymen, and provided that an action at law might be tried in a county other than that in which it was brought. It was a bill of abominations. The convention resolved that the Act of Parliament should be set aside, "as a dangerous infraction of constitutional rights and a total subversion of the goverment"; and should be treated "as though it had never been made." They declared that persons holding offices under the charter and laws of the Province should continue, and the people support them. The town approved these resolves; and further gave notice, that "if any officers of the court shall presume to act under the new and oppressive regulations, they must cease to expect support from us." One Nathan Brown, not heeding such a hint, accepted the commission of a deputy-sheriff; but, being waited upon by a committee of the town, discovered that his health of body and peace of mind forbade his acting, and formally renounced his position, and publicly promised that he would maintain the old charter privileges.

Thus, though no separation from the mother country had been declared, the towns assumed self-government; and the more thoroughly to do that, on the 23d September, 1774, they elected a committee of safety and correspondence, to consist of thirty of the most influential and patriotic men in the town, with Benjamin Greenleaf and Jonathan Greenleaf at their head. This committee reported in November that the town was fully armed; and, in addition to the four companies named, independent companies were formed, — one of which was from members of the Marine Society, consisting of seventy-six persons, under Capt. James Hudson, whose banner, with the insignia of the State, bore a blue anchor on a red field, supported by a pine-tree and an olive-branch.

In 1775, anticipating the war, the town obstructed the harbor with sunken piers, which no hostile craft could pass; and kept men there to give the alarm on the appearance of an enemy, and to prevent any strangers sounding the river. A fort was built on Salisbury shore, called the Merrimac. The harbor defences cost £2,500. These were followed shortly by a fort on Plum Island, at a cost of £4,000. A building was erected by Frog Pond for the manufacture of saltpetre; persons were forbidden to make unnecessary use of gunpowder; military stores and provisions were collected; heavy cannons purchased; small arms provided for those who enlisted in the Provincial service and needed such assistance; and the committee of safety were authorized to incur "*any expense* which the safety of the town or county required." Then they voted to pay their minute-men for the time employed in drill, as much as any other town paid, and to provide for the families of those who were in the Provincial army: and, finally, anticipating Congress, and to urge on its action, Newburyport herself passed a quasi-Declaration of Independence on the 31st of May, 1776, thirty-four days before Congress at Philadelphia; voting, without a dissenting voice, that "if the honorable congress should, for the United Colonies, declare them independent of Great Britain, this town will with their lives and fortunes support them in the measure."

Few are the towns in human history more ready to sacrifice, or manifesting a more determined spirit in resisting the wrong and asserting the right. How well they maintained their ground will appear in their subsequent acts. Thus far Newburyport indicates the important part the towns acted at this period. In fact, owing to the peculiar organization of the towns in New England, it happened that in Massachusetts they contributed more effectually to the advancement of the American Revolution than the feeble authorities of the Province; and, in this respect, no town in the Province manifested a more patriotic spirit than our own.

CHAPTER III.

NEWBURYPORT IN THE REVOLUTION.

The time which was to try men's souls had now been reached. The war had begun before the declaration by Congress. Two companies had gone on the news of the battle of Lexington, April 19th; and again there was a lull, — the quiet that precedes the storm for which all were making ready. War was inevitable. If there had been any period for conciliation, that was past. The earth had been wet with blood: the air had caught the groan of the dying patriot and borne it to the hearing of Heaven; the people, with suppressed breath, in subdued tones, whispered one to another, We must do and dare and die for our country. Jonathan Parsons, pastor of the Old South, whitened by the snows of seventy years, had lost none of the ardor of younger days. His voice was still for war; and as the Crosses, Johnsons, Greenleafs, Lunts, Titcombs, — the brave men brought face to face with the issue, — heard him, their blood thrilled, and their spirits rose with the occasion. It was just after Lexington, when Mr. Parsons had pictured the situation and their duty, that he closed with an appeal to those of his hearers who were ready to form a volunteer company to step into the broad aisle. In Revolutionary times there were no Sundays that forbade acts of patriotism. Ezra Lunt, who had been one of the publishers of the "Essex Journal," the first man who ever drove a four-horse coach to Boston, was on his feet and in the aisle almost before the words were out of the mouth of the venerable man of God, and by his side was Paul Lunt; the former was chosen captain, and the latter first lieutenant of the company then and there raised; and of more heroic blood than the Newbury Lunts went not a man to all the battles of the Revolution, on land or sea.

In all there were sixty men of this, the first volunteer company which joined the Continental Army. On the 9th of May, they received the arms which they knew so well how to use, and which responded so accurately a little after at Bunker Hill, when Gen. Putnam rode up after the first volley and said: "Men you have done well, but next time do better! Aim at the officers." On the 10th of May, they were away, hastening to the bloody scenes at hand. As wrote Hon. George Lunt, the poet-lawyer, sprung from the Lunts above-named:

> "They left the plough in the corn,
> They left the steer in the yoke,
> And away from mother and child that morn,
> And the maiden's first kiss they broke."

May 12th they reached Cambridge. May 14th, writes Paul Lunt, some ships arrived in Boston, with 200 horses and 3,000 royal troops; 16th "our men went to Charlestown, the enemy firing from ships and from Copps Hill"; 17th they participated in the victorious defeat that most fully inaugurated the Revolution. Capt. Lunt's company was in Col. Moses Little's regiment, and not having expended all their ammunition they were in the rear guard, covering the retreat of the exhausted soldiers and dealing death to the enemy.

Capt. Lunt, with his company, continued in the army under Col. Little, in Gen. Greene's brigade, and rendered good service in the defence of Long Island and New York City, and in the battles in New Jersey, he being promoted to the rank of major, and remaining in the service during the war. He was in the battle of Monmouth, where occurred the oft-quoted words between Gen. Washington and Gen. Lee. "Why this disorderly retreat?" cried Washington to Lee. The latter passionately replied, "By God, sir, American soldiers can't fight British granadiers." Washington provoked, at the top of his voice retorted, "By God, sir, they can fight any soldiers on the face of the earth," and, rising in his stirrups, he ordered — "About face!" and instantly they wheeled about, and defeat was turned to victory, disgrace to glory. The standard borne by this company was inscribed, "Appeal to Heaven," and was presented by Washington July 3d, following the battle of Bunker Hill, when he reviewed the army.

Another Newbury company at Bunker Hill, which had entered for ten days, though most of the men re-enlisted, was commanded by Capt. Benjamin Perkins, subsequently a colonel under Washington in New York and New Jersey. It had full ranks, numbering seventy-nine men, including officers. It lost two killed and several wounded at Bunker Hill. When they would march to Charlestown, on the morning of the 17th, Capt. Perkins found the Neck commanded by the guns of a war-ship and two floating batteries. It was a hot day, and rendered no more comfortable by the danger threatening. Excitedly he caught his wig from his head, and giving it a throw he exclaimed, "Single file; follow, men!" and led the way without loss. The position of this company in the fight is learned from the testimony afterwards rendered relating to Gen. Putnam, which shows that they were on the most exposed part of the field. First Lieut. Joseph Whittemore said the company belonged to Little's regiment, and that, with part of the men, he was down the left of the redoubt, near some trees which were standing, and there received the attack. He was wounded in the thigh at the very moment Gen. Warren was shot, and they fell within six feet of each other; but his life was saved by his being carried off the field on the back of a comrade. Philip Johnson said he was near Gen. Putnam, by "the rail fence," and heard him distinctly say, "Men you know you are all good marksmen; you can take a squirrel from the tallest tree. Don't fire till you can see the whites of their eyes." Two Newburyport men, Halliday and Dutton, took one of the cannon deserted by the British, and fired it a number of times, cheering loudly at each discharge. Little's regiment lost seven killed and twenty-three wounded. In the report of the committee of Massachusets on this battle, they were called "the brave Essex troops who, with resolution and deadly aim, poured the most destructive volleys into the enemy." The gallantry of Newburyport was most conspicuous in this early battle of the Revolution, even where all acted so bravely.

Soon after Washington planned the expedition against Quebec, which rendezvoused in this town; the three rifle companies, on what is now Ocean Avenue, at the extreme south end, and the others in the rope-walks, which were improvised barracks. Benedict Arnold, — as brave a soldier as this continent ever knew, — then a colonel, was in command; and, during his stay, was entertained at the residences of Tristram Dalton and Nathaniel Tracy, on State Street, and was the welcome guest at the houses of the chief men of the town. Christopher Greene, of Rhode Island, was lieutenant-colonel; Timothy Bigelow, of this State, major; and Daniel Morgan, of Virginia, commanded the rifles. Among other persons in the expedition was the Rev. Samuel Spring, chaplain, who was so popular with our people that they gave him a call to settle over the North Church, of which he subsequently became the distinguished pastor. Also, with Arnold was the young and gallant Aaron Burr and Matthew Ogden, of New Jersey; John I. Henry, afterwards judge, of Pennsylvania; and Henry Dearborn, afterwards general, of New Hampshire. One of the companies was raised here, commanded by Capt. Ward, in which was Lieut. Paul Lunt, and some twenty of the men who had fought with him at Bunker Hill. No labor or expense was spared by our citizens in assisting their preparations; and on the 10th of September, they had a grand review, at which the whole town and the whole country around assembled. The force consisted of ten companies of musketmen, and three companies of rifles, in all 1,100 men, and better soldiers were nowhere to be found, or more gallant officers. September 19th, they sailed on ten transports for the Kennebec, and the army was landed at Gardiner. The whole squadron was under the direction of Capt. James Clarkson, of Newburyport, to whom Arnold says he was under great obligations for his "activity, vigilance, and care of the whole fleet." This army suffered great hardships in marching through the wilderness from the Kennebec to the St. Lawrence, which they reached with only 700 men. There, on the last day of 1775, which was also the last day of that noble soldier, Montgomery, who was chief in command, they make the attack on Quebec. Benedict Arnold was wounded in the leg; but, for his great bravery, he was promoted to be a general. This was not the only connection of Arnold with Newburyport. Later, in 1780, when he passed to the enemy, and to the shame and disgrace which has since attached to his name, two of the bargemen who rowed him to the British ship "Vulture," were Samuel Pillsbury and John Brown of this town. They were in the Newburyport company commanded by Richard Titcomb. When he left them, he used enticing words and promises of promotion to induce them to desert; but, scorning him and his words, they rowed back to the shore, preferring the fate of their country, whatever that might be.

Aug. 11, 1776, the Declaration of Independence, published July 19th, the same day on which died the patriot preacher, Jonathan Parsons, was read in all the churches. September 2d, Nicholas Pike, town clerk, indorsed the following on the call for a town meeting: "This meeting was illegal because the *venire* for calling it was in the name of the British tyraut, whose name all America justly execrates."

The General Court had been dissolved by Gov. Gage in June, and till July the next year Massachusetts was without legal government, and

for years without a governor. In May, 1776, Michael Hodge, being chosen town clerk, was sworn into office by the selectmen, "there being," says the records, "no justice of the peace in the town." The representatives to the Provincial Congress were chosen in July '76, on writs issued by James Warren, who had been president of that body.

Somewhat in detail have we given the events initiatory of the Revolution, but we may not follow in this manner to the end of the war, to enumerate all the town was called to do, and all that it was forced to endure for independence, freedom, and nationality. The requisitions for men and money were frequent, almost continuous. At one time, in August, 1777, Newburyport was required to raise for the Continental Army one-sixth of all her men capable of bearing arms; and under these orders many men were drafted. They were in the battles to defend cities, and in the conflicts of the wilderness, by lakes and by the rivers. Amos Pearson, a Bunker Hill soldier, afterwards at the surrender of Burgoyne, gives a vivid sketch of what many endured. He was in a company drafted in August, 1777. He left on the 23d, and marched twenty successive days without halting except at night, sleeping sometimes in the woods, in barns, in log-houses, till at sunset they were within ten miles of Gen. Gates's army. He, a lieutenant in command, had orders to join the army before he slept; and did so near Saratoga, N. Y., at three o'clock, A. M. Soon after he was sent out on a scouting party, and brought in thirty prisoners. Five days later he was in the memorable engagement of October 7th, of which, he says: "The field-pieces began at four o'clock, and the musketry at five — very hot some of the time — drove the enemy within the lines, killed and wounded and took a great number of them, and ten field-pieces." This engagement, which Lieut. Pearson compresses into three lines, was Burgoyne's brave fight for the safety of his army before he retreated to the heights of Saratoga, where he was obliged to surrender. Of that, Lieut. Pearson says: "At twelve o'clock the general marched into our lines, and in the afternoon, all the troops, after laying down their arms, supposed to be six thousand, surrendered."

On the 23d, Lieut. Pearson marched with a fatigue party to Stillwater after the enemy's wounded, and on his return drew three days' rations and went down the river, reached White Plains after a tedious march and exposure in open boats, during soaking rains, wading creeks, and over flats. Thus marching and fighting and walking through four months of enlistment, he reached home in December. This was the story of many thousands, and all the worse was it because the enlistments were very short, which kept the soldiers going and coming at great expense.

It was the next year that Capt. Thomas Thomas led the artillery — now Cushing Guard — to their first battle in Rhode Island, under Sullivan. The manner in which Gen. Sullivan's men went home, when they learned of the failure of French co-operation, indicates the state of discipline, yet does not justify the assertion that the Revolution was fought by "a mob." The Newburyport company remained to the end of the campaign, and have seen much service since.

While the town readily responded to all calls of men and money to prosecute the war on the land — in her own defence sacrificed every material interest, and on her own account purchased so liberally of ammunition, cannon, and other stores, that they had munitions of war to sell in 1779 — still more conspicuous was she on the waters, and more brilliant is the record of the exploits of her sons in the navy and on board privateers. Newburyport being a maritime town, and all her energies having been directed to the building and sailing of ships, no sooner did the war begin than a thousand active men turned their eyes seaward, seeking the means of attacking the "mistress of the seas" in her own realm on the deep. The very first capture of a British vessel was by John O'Brien, a Newburyport man, who afterwards commanded the "Hibernia" and made several successful cruises. On his first cruise, the "Hibernia" captured a ship, three brigs, and two schooners, in four weeks, and had a two-hours' battle with a sixteen-gun ship, from which she finally escaped, with a loss of three men killed and several wounded. Capt. O'Brien was engaged in many enterprises and battles, and was never taken.

The first privateer from the United States was fitted out by Nathaniel Tracy; and his operations were more extended than those of any other person. It scarcely seems possible that a private citizen should have done so much; more would his action seem to belong to some prince or the chief of some small state. His first vessel went to sea in 1775, and from that time to 1783 Mr. Tracy was the principal owner of 110 merchant ships, in the total of 15,660 tons, which, with their cargoes, were valued at $2,733,300. Twenty-three of these vessels were letters-of-marque, mounting 298 guns and registering 1,618 men, and only 13 were left at the end of the war, 97 having been taken by the enemy or lost. During the same period, he was also the principal owner of 24 cruising ships, of 6,330 tons, carrying 340 guns of 6, 9, and 12-pounders, and navigated by 2,800 men. Here are 47 ships, of naval character, carrying 638 guns and 4,418 men, owned by one person — a merchant prince and a naval prince. Of the 24 cruisers, only one survived the war, leaving but 14 out of 134 vessels. But they did their work, capturing 120 sail from the enemy, of 23,360 tons, which, with their cargoes, sold for $3,950,000 in gold, and on which 2,225 men were made prisoners of war. Nor was this all the service for the independence of this country rendered by Nathaniel Tracy, but for the army and other public demands Mr. Tracy donated $167,219 from his own private purse. If that had been all that was done by the town, it would have been no ignoble record; but he was only one of the many — the foremost of all, it is true, but not without worthy imitators. He was the opulent and enterprising son of a father, Patrick Tracy, who also filled a large place in the history of the town. Nathaniel Tracy's education was the best the country could afford. He was graduated at Harvard in 1769, and was in the vigor of his early manhood during the Revolution. His residence was the building on State Street now used for the Public Library, and, with his means and cultivated taste, it was one of the most attractive places in the Commonwealth. It abounded in all that heart could wish. His slaves — for that was the era of negro slavery in Massachusetts — served the guests at his tables, and they were not unfrequently the most distinguished men of this and foreign lands. His carriages, with liveried drivers, six in hand, and outriders, were such as have never been seen in the town since his day. He owned several country seats, summer retreats, hunting-grounds, and fine fish-ponds, with other conveniences and attachments such as would have become a British lord; but, in after years, in financial distress, the government failing to pay and his debtors failing to pay, he experienced reverses of fortune and became relatively poor, when he should have had millions. Now the name of the family has disappeared from the town, and only the tomb where he sleeps, in the eastern section of Old Burying Hill, reminds us that he ever lived; but the story of what he was and what he did can never pass from our local annals. He stands there, as a merchant without a peer, a patriot unsurpassed, and a gentleman and a scholar who honors the place of his birth and active life, whose heart and hand were ever open to his country, and who was ready to give all for her freedom and prosperity.

The first prize brought to this port was the brig "Sukey," Capt. Engs, from Ireland, loaded with provisions for the British in Boston. Capt. Engs made his home here, and was master of a privateer. That was Jan. 5, 1775; and the same day, a more important prize was captured in a singular manner. The ship "Friends," Capt. Bowie, from London, for Boston, with coal, cattle, and provisions, fell into our bay, and, ignorant of the situation, lay off the bar for a pilot. She had five guns and 17 men. Capt. Offin Boardman, in a whale-boat, with 16 other men — William Bartlet, Enoch Hale, John Coombs, Joseph Stanwood, Gideon Woodwell, Johnson and Cutting Lunt, and others whose names have not come down to us — rowed within hail, and, learning her destination, offered his services as a pilot. Reaching the ship's deck, he walked to the quarter-deck, unarmed, and inquired the news from London, while his men, with their trusty muskets in hand, rushed up the gangway. He then threw off his disguise, and ordered the English flag hauled down. The captain was surprised; but as it was too late for resistance, and discretion was the better part of valor, he quietly submitted, and on the flood-tide the ship soon reached town. Other prizes were brought in before independence was declared, among them a barque of 300 tons and the brig "Nelly," loaded with coal and provisions, of which the English army was in great need. They were prizes of the "Yankee Hero," of 18 guns, which had a short career.

In June, James Tracy, a relative of the merchant Nathaniel, before named, her commander, encountered the frigate "Milford," of greatly superior force, and, after a gallant fight of two hours, she was obliged to surrender. Being exchanged shortly after, Capt. Tracy returned home, and at once put to sea in another privateer of the same name, mounting 20 guns, and carrying 170 men, fifty of them being volunteers from the first families of this vicinity; and, after leaving port, neither vessel nor crew ever reported again. Twenty-three of the lost were sons of widows. The high character of Capt. Tracy and the hope and promise of some of his crew, caused this loss to be severely felt. But like losses became mournfully common. The brave men in this branch of warfare knew how to fight better than retreat, and in

shattered hulks they went to their watery graves. The "America," 20 guns, owned by Joseph Marquand, — a very wealthy merchant who built Commercial Wharf, — commanded by Capt. William Coffin, went the same way. In her was Cutting Lunt, who had acted as third lieutenant on the "Bon Homme Richard," under Paul Jones, and who was twice captured and confined in the famous Mill-prison at Plymouth, Eng. He was a cousin to Ezra, Daniel, and Henry Lunt, all of whom distinguished themselves in the Revolution. Other vessels shared the same fate: as the brig "Wexford," Philip Trask, commander, 18 guns; a letter-of-marque, Jonathan Jewell, captain; brig "Bennington." Capt. Hart; schooner "Civil Usage," Capt. Hibbard, 80 men; a schooner, commanded by Capt. Springer; and others, — in all 22, owned at Newburyport, with crews numbering more than a thousand men, sailed to return no more; and even the manner of their disappearance is unknown to this day. They went down to the bottom of the sea by wreck or battle's fortune, carrying the flower of many a household. It is a sad tale — the loss of more than a thousand men in this way, additional to those killed in battles on land or sea, and the many who died from exposures and sufferings in camp and on shipboard! A sad tale is it for a town of only 4,000 people, in seven years! Of course, they did not all belong to Newburyport, for that would be impossible; it would have taken all her male population over fifteen years of age: but most of them were from the immediate vicinity; and we can have but a faint conception of the enthusiasm which then pervaded the country, and without which the losses of that period could not have been borne.

Some of the privateers were very small, insignificant; but that does not appear to have entered into the consideration of the men who sailed them. They acted as though they could conquer the seas, as their fathers did on the land when they rushed to battle on Bunker Hill without ammunition. One, the "Gen. Ward," Capt. William Russell, carried only thirteen men and one cannon, and she shortly captured two brigs and a schooner. Another, and one of the earliest privateers, called the "Game-cock," probably from her readiness to fight anything, was a sloop of twenty-five tons, carrying four swivels; and when she sailed the captain sent a note to his minister desiring prayers that God would preserve him in his attempt "to scour the coast of our unnatural enemies."

Among the successful privateersmen, afterwards a captain in the United States navy, was Moses Brown, who first commanded the "Gen. Arnold." In 1778, returning home from a mercantile voyage, and finding the whole country in arms, he changed his vessel to an eighteen-gun privateer. The very first gun fired burst, and killed or wounded all the officers, and after trial four others proved no better. In 1779, he fell into battle with the British ship "Experiment," fifty guns, under Sir James Wallace, and was himself captured. After his return home, he commanded the "Intrepid," twenty guns, and the "Hercules," and a letter-of-marque of twenty-two guns, for which he was commissioned by the Continental Congress. But we may not attempt a detailed account of what Capt. Brown, and many others equally brave, performed.

Not a little suffered American seamen captured and thrust into English prisons. Thousands of Americans were so held, Newburyport supplying her full share, and there being for some years no system of exchanging prisoners. So we find the brig "Dalton," in 1777, Ebenezer Johnson, captain, and the brig "Fanny," John Lee, master, — Jack Lee, as he was familiarly called, — a noted privateersman, furnishing fifty inmates to the "Old Mill Prison."

One ship, the privateer "Neptune," William Ford, master, came to a singular end. She was new, carried sixteen guns and sixty men, and had not sailed more than three miles from the bar before she foundered, and went down head first. The crew were rescued by fishing-boats at hand, save one drowned.

One of the last efforts of this town to aid the country in the Revolution, was the expedition to dislodge the British on the Penobscot River, the expense of which was largely borne by Newburyport, and the men raised here, Portsmouth also liberally assisting with men and means. The fleet sailed July 25, 1779, and reached its destination on the 15th of August; but they were pursued up the river by the English, and to prevent capture burned the ships. The men took to the woods, and many of them, with great suffering, reached their homes, others being captured, — and a most disastrous conclusion was reached. The officers were greatly blamed; but the men were not less brave than those who otherwheres marched to victory. This brought great loss to the town.

We close this chapter, — our Revolutionary history, — omitting much, very much, that we should be glad to give. It is a period to which we look back with pride, and which, for devotion to the common interests of the country, cannot be excelled by any other town in America. The total number of men lost, the total amount of money expended, is not and never will be known. The extraordinary expenses of the town, in its corporate capacity, in providing for the exigences of the war from 1775 to 1783, — independent of ordinary town expenses, — were two and a half millions of dollars. A large part of that sum was raised in gold. And when to that is added what was done by individuals, in contributions of provisions, clothing, &c., we may count the cost of the war to this little town not less than the above-named sum in coin. Truly, it was at immense sacrifice of blood and treasure that American liberty and nationality were gained.

CHAPTER IV.

NEWBURYPORT IN WARS SUBSEQUENT TO THE REVOLUTION.

With the recognition of our independence came the trying scenes that always follow long wars, when an attempt is made to liquidate the debts therefrom by heavy taxation, the heaviest of all which was the repudiation of the Continental money, falling with great weight on the poor and laboring classes. In resistance of such taxes, Daniel Shays initiated an insurrection in the western part of the State, to suppress which troops were called for. A company was raised and commanded by Ezra Lunt, the same who had commanded a company at Bunker Hill, and afterwards in the Continental Army under Washington; but no blood was shed in the campaign, the rebels disbanding. This was in 1787.

Soon after, and for a full quarter of a century, our commerce was subject to many annoyances—search, seizures, confiscation—by powers civilized and barbarous, from Norway and Denmark on the extreme north, to Algiers on the Barbary coast. In Africa, our citizens were enslaved; in Europe, imprisoned and robbed. This was especially done by the French, against whom claims, even as yet unpaid, were presented the government, for the loss of eight ships, thirty-five brigs, twenty-seven schooners, and four sloops, valued at $700,000, belonging to Newburyport, prior to 1800. How many lives were lost, we know not; but when the ship "Rose," belonging to William Bartlet, the most valuable of those taken, surrendered to a French privateer, after a hard fight, two men had been killed, and the captain and fifteen others were wounded. The Spanish, Dutch, Danes, all preyed on our merchant ships to a greater or less extent. At last, our government being aroused to self-protection, privateers were allowed; letters-of-marque were issued; the plan of a national navy was conceived, and we were on the point of war with France, which regarded neither treaty obligations nor national or natural rights. Several vessels were built here, among them the "Hancock," "Boston," and "Protection," on order of the State, by Stephen and Ralph Cross; and the brig "Pickering" was built for the United States, by Orlando B. Merrill. So urgent was the demand, that only ninety days were allowed for the building of the "Pickering," from the laying of the keel to the launching of the brig.

To all measures for the redress of public wrong, Newburyport gave a most hearty approval. In an address to President Adams, which passed a legal meeting without a dissenting voice, the town concluded in these words: "and the solemn pledge of our lives and fortunes to support the measures of the legislature and administration, is all the assurance which the best of governments could desire from the best of citizens."

As the government was poor, a number of wealthy citizens proposed that they would build and equip a ship of 460 tons, mounting twenty-six guns, for the government, to be paid for at the public convenience, at her simple cost, and six per cent. interest thereon. The offer was accepted, and the frigate "Merrimae" built and launched in seventy-five days, by William Harkett, of Salisbury, the same who had built the "Allianee," the first frigate of the navy, on which Lafayette returned to France after the Revolution. The "Merrimae" was placed in command of Capt. Moses Brown, who had sailed the "Arnold" privateer, and ordered to join Com. Barry's squadron in the West India waters, for the protection of our commerce there exposed. In addition to prizes re-captured, she took four French ships of sixty-eight guns, carrying six hundred men; and on the restoration of amity the "Merrimae" was sold, and Capt. Brown returned to the merchant service. He was a brave, faithful, efficient officer, and very popular

with his men and all who knew him. He acted as commodore of the fleet, when the "Merrimac" was sent, with others, to relieve Curacoa, and expelled the French from that island. Some years after leaving the navy, in 1804, he died suddenly, off Martha's Vineyard, aged sixty-two. After forty-seven years of sea-life, and many battles, and several shipwrecks, and two captures and imprisonments by the English, he sleeps beneath the billows on which he had lived; their white caps are his memorials; their roar his requiem. As a naval officer, he was the highest in position the town ever had.

The depredations on our shipping continuing, and our losses being unendurable, Congress, in 1807, passed the Embargo Act, the first of a series of measures, under Jefferson and Madison, for the public protection, which finally culminated in the war of 1812 with Great Britain. By the embargo, vessels were forbidden to go to any foreign port whatever, and thereby all our lawful import and export trade was suspended; and at the same time ninety men were here enlisted, in anticipation of war. The embargo ran to 1809, when it was repealed, and non-intervention substituted. This was a period of great distress. Hundreds of seamen were thrown out of employment, and the harbor was filled with dismantled ships. Grass grew on the wharves where trade had most flourished; ships rotted in the docks; and the building-yards were as silent as the burial-places of the dead. All trade came to a stand-still, because the industries of the people were suspended, and their purchasing power destroyed. The opposition to the administration was intense; nor should it surprise us that the most patriotic men, who had suffered and bled for their country, hung upon the edge of rebellion. Those who would have cheered for war, and braved the battle's fire, could not quietly sit down at home and see their families starve; and to that, or to the soup-house for supplies, came they. They had public parades to manifest their displeasure; they remonstrated with the president; they petitioned Congress and the Legislature; till finally the embargo, failing of its purpose, was repealed and non-intervention substituted.

The repeal gave great pleasure: it was the lifting of the storm; and with renewed life, in 1810, no less than twenty-one ships, thirteen brigs, and eight other vessels were built on the Merrimac. Fresh spirit was given in all directions. But the sunshine was of short duration: in April, 1812, came another embargo; and in June of the same year war was declared. It seemed a war with all the odds against us. Chiefly it was to be fought on the seas, for the independence of the waters; and while Great Britain had a navy of 1,041 vessels, the United States had but twenty frigates and sloops, and 165 gun-boats of little force. Massachusetts held a public Fast; and Newburyport, through its committee, Jeremiah Nelson, afterwards member of Congress; John Pierpont, afterwards the poet-clergymen of Boston, then an ardent Federalist and lawyer; Joseph Dana, subsequently a clergyman in Marblehead; William Bartlet, one of the richest merchants in the State; and William Farris, a prominent merchant, who served under Arnold and Montgomery at Quebec, and later was in the navy, on board the frigates "Boston" and "Hancock," was captain of a privateer, and a prisoner of the enemy;—this committee, which we describe so minutely from the character of the men who composed it, uttered its protest to the State Legislature, declaring that they would march to the war only under the orders of the governor and council, and, while they would defend their own soil, they would "not stir an inch" beyond. Much very loose and inflammatory language, and some acts performed, indicated how near to the outside of loyal citizenship our fathers pressed. Still troops were raised, and, quite as freely as the average of the State, the people contributed to the defence of the country. One company of artillery was enlisted here, and served in several battles in Canada. A few members of that company still survive; one of them, Joseph Stanward, then a drummer-boy, was also a drummer in the loyal army in the Rebellion a half-century later, and made a pensioner by special Act of Congress, before the law that recognized by such aid all the survivors of that war. Troops were also sent to the fort on Plum Island, and a regiment went to Cape Ann, for coast defence, under the late Col. Abraham Williams. When an English ship threatened the harbor, the firemen also enlisted, and were stationed on Plum Island turnpike, where defensive works were thrown up, while a sentinel was kept constantly on the "look-out" from March's Hill.

On the sea, however, in this war, as in the Revolution, Newburyport was most effective. Against the opposition of the Federal party, a fleet of privateers put to sea in 1812, as soon as the war was declared. The first to sail was the "Manhattan"; and the next year letters-of-marque were brought into service; the "Argus," Capt. Harry Parsons, being the first. About the same date, 1813, the sloop-of-war "Wasp" was built here by Orlando B. Merrill, the same who had built the "Pickering" in 1789. Her crew was made up from the young men of the town, and just before she sailed they celebrated the eighty-second anniversary of the birth of Washington, by a grand ball on board. Her career opened successfully and ended mournfully. In the first three months she captured thirteen British ships, and dared to conflict several English frigates of much heavier guns, with very little loss; but in September she encountered a frigate, towards evening, and, while the night following was one of remarkable calmness and serenity, the morning revealed upon the surface of the sea the British ship alone. In the darkness of the night she had gone down with all her gallant crew. They asked no quarters in the battle; they submitted no terms of surrender; they raised no cry and set no signal of distress: but when the "Wasp" fell off from the enemy, disabled in spars, rigging, and sails, riddled in hull, she went down, leaving not a man to tell the tale. The graves of her brave crew, the pride of half a hundred families, were made in the bosom of the sea, and mourning and sorrow fell upon fathers and mothers and maidens of the town by the river-mouth.

The most noted privateer chief of that period was Capt. William Nichols. At the commencement of the war, the brig "Alert," which he commanded, on her passage from Bordeaux, was captured by a man-of-war, which put a prize-crew on board and ordered her to Plymouth, England. Capt. Nichols, assisted by Capt. Benjamin Pierce, then a boy, re-captured the vessel in the night, fastened four men below, put the remainder of the crew in a boat, with provisions and compass, and set them adrift. As the boat pushed off, one of the men asked the British officer, an Irishman, if he thought they would ever reach land,—the coast of France, for which they steered. "I hope not," he responded: "let us end our shame in the sea." Shortly after, the "Alert" was boarded by another English ship and carried into Portsmouth; but Capt. Nichols escaped while being taken to London in charge of an officer, and reached home. He was at sea in July, 1812, commanding the brig "Decatur," and in that year, during which time he pursued the enemy to the very mouth of the English Channel, he captured a dozen vessels, seven of them having valuable cargoes, and carrying more guns and men than the "Decatur." One of them, the ship "Commerce," had fourteen guns, and, before she surrendered, her captain and three men were killed, and two men wounded. Capt. N.'s mode of fighting was to board the vessel and fight hand to hand, while the more expert marksmen were stationed in the tops to shoot the men at the helm. He became known by the constant repetition of the order "Keep the helm of the enemy clear." This being done, the vessels became unmanageable and were subjected to a raking fire. It was on one of these cruises that he was pursued, for a long distance, by a ship which he supposed to be the "Guerriere," but which proved to be the "Constitution," to whose commander Capt. Nichols gave such information as led to the capture of the "Guerriere" the next day.

Finally, the "Decatur" was taken by the British frigate "Surprise," thirty-eight guns, after a gallant defence; and Capt. Nichols, after having taken twenty-eight prizes, was put on board the "Vestal," at Bermuda, where, on being recognized as the man who had filled the British shipping with terror, he was confined in a wooden cage, seven feet long by five wide, for thirty-four days. Thence he was sent to England and exchanged. On his return home he immediately took command of the privateer "Harpy," in which, in twenty-one days, he captured four prizes, and arrived at Portsmouth with a prize cargo, valued at $300,000. In that cruise he was twice chased by British frigates, which he outsailed. He brought in sixty-five prisoners of war, including two major-generals. One of his prizes mounted twenty guns. Capt. Nichols was a man who absolutely knew no fear. He was as cool in battle as in his counting-room; he had few words, but the greatest energy in action. After the war he commanded merchant ships; entered mercantile life; for some years was collector of the port, and was highly respected by his fellow-townsmen.

But while some privateers were successful, many Newburyport vessels were captured; and hundreds of our seamen were confined in English prisons, some to die there. The English pursued our coasting vessels to the very mouth of the harbor, so that the guns of the fort on Plum Island were brought to bear on them before they gave up the chase. Even one of the pilot-boats was taken and turned into a tender; and all the transportation of merchandise between Boston and Newburyport was by teams overland. One of the enemy's ships lay off the bar for several days, apparently with the design of cutting out the "Wasp" and two of Jefferson's gunboats, just launched for the government by Stephen Coffin.

It was a war prosecuted to our loss; and when Napoleon abdicated in 1814, and peace came with England in 1815, there was great rejoicing. Immediately our ships went to sea, the first one to India from the United States being the ship "Indus," which first hoisted the "Stars and Stripes" at Calcutta as the "Count de Grasse." Capt. Nicholas Johnson had been the first to display the flag at London, after the Revolution.

The next war calling for troops was with Mexico, growing out of the annexation of Texas, also a very unpopular war in Massachusetts. In 1847, of the few troops furnished by this State, a full company was enlisted for the Massachusetts regiment, with which Caleb Cushing left as colonel, to return a brigadier-general. Gen. Cushing unfortunately broke a leg while with Gen. Taylor near the Rio Grande, and came not into active participation till the closing events of the capture of the Mexican capital. Other Newburyport men were in the New England regiment raised by General, afterwards President, Franklin Pierce; and some from other States, as Capt. Albert Pike, the poet-warrior, from Arkansas, who won fame; afterwards he was a general in the Confederate army during the Rebellion.

Passing to 1861, when the national flag at Fort Sumter was fired on, and the National Union endangered in the inter-State war, we find Newburyport first and foremost for the national integrity, assuming the place and action which had distinguished her in 1776. As early as January 7th, before blood had been shed, in a series of resolutions offered by Alderman William H. Huse, the first of their kind, says Schouler's History, adopted by any town in the State, — the city council declared that, "as Newburyport at all times had been loyal and patriotic in the support of law, order, and liberty, so she will again, if the occasion calls, pledge life, fortune, and honor in behalf of the Constitution and Union as our fathers left them"; and, as a token of loyalty to the Union, it was voted, that the national flag should be hoisted on the city hall till further ordered.

April 15th, following, the council appropriated $1,000 to aid the families of the soldiers ordered to active duty; and this was the first town of the Commonwealth so voting money. Immediately after, the Cushing Guard — the old Artillery company of 1778, which fought under Sullivan in Rhode Island — was called to the field: and the next morning — the first by all the companies, save one from Marblehead — it camped on Boston common, under its brave commander, Albert W. Bartlett. who afterwards died in battle, Sept. 17, 1862, near Maryland Heights, an officer who honored himself, his town, and his country. The 8th Regiment, to which the Cushing Guard belonged, proceeded immediately to Maryland, and thence to the rescue of the capital imperilled. It was in the service nearly all the time till 1865.

So rapidly did volunteers offer, that one company, anxious for duty, joined the Mozart Regiment, of New York, when this State had answered all calls, that they might be early in the field. Though in the service of another State, where bravely they fought, Newburyport did not forget them, as her sons in the field, but extended constant aid and support. The quota of the city was not only full, but, without counting the Mozarts, there was a surplus of seventy men at the close of the war, and still the raising of men was going on. She sent 1,353 men on the Massachusetts quota, fifty-three of them commissioned officers. In the darkest moments, there was no hesitation. When the retreat of Gen. Banks in the Shenandoah Valley was reported, the bells ringing at midnight summoned the citizens to State Street, where one hundred and fifty men volunteered, and took the first train the next morning for Boston, tendering their services, which were declined. In accordance with the resolutions of the city council at the outset, "their lives and their fortunes" staked they for their country. Bounties were paid freely; the families of the men in the army were abundantly supplied; and constantly was going forward what would give comfort in the field and the hospitals. The amount of money expended by the city, exclusive of State aid, was $123,-817.89. In addition, patriotic citizens raised $6,300; and the Soldiers' Relief Association expended $30,000, and had $1,500 in their treasury when the "boys came home from the war." The amount of State aid, for which they were afterwards reimbursed, was $101,311. Thus readeth the record: full 1,500 men furnished in four years, by a town of 13,000 population. and more than a quarter of a million in money, where the total valuation was only eight millions, or one-ninth of all the population, and one-thirtieth of all the valuation of the town.

We give the summary: we may not stop for details of services rendered in every belligerent State, between 1861 to 1865, from Gettysburg in Pennsylvania to New Orleans, —rendered by the sailor-boys in the navy, from where the first iron-clad sent our ships to the bottom in the waters of Virginia, and Newburyport men worked the guns till they were obliged to jump from the port-holes to save their lives, all along the coast, in the bays and up the rivers, till they freed the passes of the Mississippi, and opened the "Father of Waters" for the progress of the Union Army. On the ships and on the battle-fields they gave their lives for their country, for constitutional government and human freedom. In the camps they contracted terrible diseases, and from the hospitals they were borne to warrior graves. Some sleep their last sleep in the national cemeteries; while the headstones of our local grave-yards tell of others, who, for their country and the right, were gathered to their fathers. May their souls rest in peace.

CHAPTER V.

NEWBURYPORT AFTER THE PEACE OF 1783.

Immediately after the War of the Revolution there was a revival of business. The merchant returned to his counting-room, the mechanic from the camp resumed his tools, and the seaman from the privateer entered upon peaceful commerce. In seven years the tonnage of Newburyport went up to 12,000,—an increase of sixty per cent. Our streets and schools, and buildings public and private, were improved, and the town entered upon a term of much prosperity. There was some trouble with the currency and the payment of the debts of the war; but Newburyport sustained her own honor in an address to her representatives, adopted in 1786, expressing the hope "that injustice may not be confounded with policy in Massachusetts." Firmly she declared against any repudiation of State delegations.

In 1788 the new Constitution of the United States was adopted, to the joy of the people. The delegates to the State convention were met at Newbury Green, and escorted into the town, where they were received with the applause of their fellow-citizens. Under this Constitution, Tristram Dalton was the first senator from Massachusetts. He was the son of Michael Dalton, a distinguished merchant; had graduated at Harvard when seventeen years old; was a lawyer; eminent for piety and charity; and had previously been Speaker of our House of Representatives and a State senator. He was wealthy, had his residence on State Street, the first house above the Savings Institution, and also an elegant country seat on Pipe-stave Hill, in West Newbury. His mansion was the resort of great and patriotic men, and his library, which was one of the best in the State, was the study of scholars. Shortly after, he took up his residence in Washington, where he lived on the closest intimacy with presidents Washington and John Adams. He died in 1817, and was buried with his father in St. Paul's Churchyard, Newburyport. Under the constitutional government, Newburyport became a customs district; with Stephen Cross, collector, Jonathan Titcomb, a general of the Revolution, naval officer, and Michael Hodge, surveyor. The light-houses, which had before belonged to the town, were transferred to the general government. This was also the date of the Act regulating pilotage for Newburyport.

In the autumn of 1789 President Washington made his Northern tour, reaching Newburyport Nov. 1st, and remained to the next day, the guest of Nathaniel Tracy. He was received with the greatest eclat: a committee met him at Ipswich; two companies of cavalry escorted him to the town; a procession, including all classes of people, —the most numerous the school-children,—greeted his entrance; the drums beat; the cannons roared; an ode was sung; an address by John Quincy Adams, then a law-student with Judge Parsons, and destined to be one of Washington's successors, was delivered; to which Washington responded. In the evening guns were fired, a display of fireworks had, and every demonstration of joy manifested. The next morning he crossed the Merrimac at Amesbury ferry, and was escorted to the New Hampshire line, delighted with the reception which had been tendered him.

When the French Revolution of 1793 disturbed society in that country and its colonies, we were having a large trade with Gaudeloupe and other French West India islands, from which many planters, with their families, fled to the United States, and Newburyport became one of the central points for these refugees. Some remained here, and from them have come families now living in the valley of the Merrimac; others, on the return of peace, went back to their own country; and quite a number died here. On the Old Burying Hill, toward Frog Pond, now stand seven head-stones in a row

to the memory of their dead. One of these refugees was Moses Cole, the portrait-painter; and another, Dr. Francis Vergenis, an accomplished gentlemen and a skilful physician, having a choice residence on the east corner of Market and Washington streets, who was very much respected in the town.

In 1798, much alarm was created by the yellow fever, which commenced in June, and raged to the October frosts. Before it many fled; and fifty-five dead were its victims. It was confined to a small territory, at and below where the Custom House now stands,—which section was fenced in, isolating it from the rest of the town; and, in consequence of this and other visitations of the fever, a pest-house, as it was called, was maintained in Common pasture. Among the dead was Dr. J. Barnard Swett,—a very learned physician, who had enjoyed the benefits of the best schools in Europe, and was a surgeon of the Revolutionary Army. He was a very active Freemason, and the founder of the first encampment of the Knights-Templars in the United States.

The century closed with news of the death of Washington, which occurred Dec. 14, 1799, when the whole town went into mourning, as did the whole country. January 2d was set apart for memorial and religious services, held at the Old South Church, where Thomas Paine delivered his eulogy. Mr. Paine was then a student at law with Theophilus Parsons, and afterwards had his name changed to Robert Treat Paine,—because he would not be confounded with "Tom" Paine, and wanted "a Christian name," as he said. He was a poet, the author of "Adams and Liberty," with other well-known poems, and a man of real genius.

This was the "golden age" of Newburyport, when the "Essex junto" was in its glory, with Theophilus Parsons at its head; and Judge John Lowell, Rev. Thomas Cary, William Coombs, and Jonathan Jackson were the leading Federalists. At no day since has the town been so important in politics. It was also an era of improvements in streets and buildings. The old meeting-house in Market Square was razed; and the new one on Pleasant Street, then deemed the finest in its architecture in the State, was erected. Timothy Dexter contributed the greater part of the cost for a new bell for Harris Street; Capt. Edmund Bartlet laid out the Mall at his own expense; Nathaniel Tracy had commenced the planting of trees on High Street; the Plum Island turnpike was built; Timothy Palmer, the celebrated bridge-builder, was surveyor of highways, and a great number of streets were laid out, and others improved; the Newburyport turnpike was established; a court-house built; the Female Charitable Society organized; Timothy Dexter gave $2,000 for a fund to assist the poor out of the almshouse; William Bartlet and Moses Brown made large donations to found the Andover Seminary; Market Square was purchased; public libraries opened; the Academy incorporated; the Bible Society instituted; a brick Baptist church erected on Liberty Street; the chain bridge built; a fire association organized; and they even proposed to fill up "Joppa flats": all of which, with many other events not enumerated, took place prior to 1811,— the date of the "Great Fire." The foreign commerce, the coasting-trade, and the fisheries poured wealth into the coffers of the active men. In a single month in 1805, the imports were $800,000; and, though we lost largely by the depredations upon our commerce, seldom a town prospered more. The state of affairs can be seen in the large, square houses built at that time, and in their surroundings; and we have only to recall the names of the chief citizens to realize the facts. Nathaniel Tracy was living in magnificent state where the Public Library now is. His fleets whitened the seas. He ranked among the great merchants of the world. Nor was he alone in his prosperity: Joseph Marquand had so many vessels coming from prosperous voyages that he cried out, "Lord, stay thy hand; thy servant hath enough." Tristram Dalton, on his marriage with Miss Hooper, of Marblehead, reached home in this style: "His splendid new carriage was drawn by six white horses, decorated with white feathers; they hold four outriders, and footman and coachman dressed in new liveries." So they rode down State Street, with the carriage-top thrown back. Lord Timothy Dexter, a shrewd and cunning man, was living in his elegant mansion on High Street, with "poet" Jonathan Plumer to sing his praises, and his broad acres surrounded with finely wrought images of gods, heroes, and animals. All these men had their country seats, as well as their residences in the town; as Dexter and Tracy in Salisbury, Hooper and Dalton in West Newbury, Bartlet in Methuen.

But all this — the condition of things just prior or subsequent to 1800 — was soon to change. Some of the men we have mentioned died poor; and not many of the merchants, who built the grand houses which have been the admiration of all, died in them. They passed to other hands. First came the embargo, then the fire, and, finally, the war of 1812 was the finishing stroke. If Newburyport rapidly advanced, as rapidly it declined.

The "Great Fire," as it is termed, deserves special notice. After several incendiary fires in the early spring of 1811, on the 31st of May the flames burst out from an unoccupied stable on Inn Street, and the alarm sounded. The clear sky was soon clouded with the blackening smoke; and the flames, leaping from building to building, lighted the heavens to be discernible for forty miles. From the stable the flames quickly spread to Pleasant Street on the south, and the Market on the north; consuming every building on both sides of State Street, proceeding into Essex Street a short distance, through Middle Street to Fair, through Liberty to within one house of Independent, and down Water as far as Cushing's wharf; blotting out Centre Street, the whole range of buildings on Merchants' Row, on Ferry Wharf, and in fact all the wharf property between the above and Commercial Wharf; clearing a track of fifteen and a half acres in the populous business part of the town, consuming two hundred and fifty buildings, — including all the printing-offices, four in number, the custom-house, the surveyor's office, the post-office, two insurance offices, the Baptist church, the town library, &c., — in money value nearly a million dollars. The fire burned all night, the inhabitants being powerless to stay it, subsiding about daylight of its own accord. Caleb Cushing, in his History, says: "Nothing was more remarkable during the heart-rending scene of this destructive conflagration, than the spectacle which State Street exhibited on one occasion. Two large brick buildings, four stories in height, stood upon the western side of this street, and opposed a barrier to the destructive element, which, it was hoped for a time, would there be arrested in its course. But a sudden change of wind threw the flames directly upon these immense piles, which were speedily involved in the general calamity. The opposite buildings being now on fire, and the wind blowing with great force, the flames ascended high on either side, and meeting in the air, extended in a continual sheet of fire across the spacious street." It was doubtless a sight truly terrific, at a time when the country had not experienced any fires of very great extent. But hardly had the flames subsided before contributions for the sufferers began to pour in from all sides. Boston, ever generous, headed the list with $24,315.25; Philadelphia gave $13,000; Salem $10,000; and other cities in proportion, until a fund of $128,000 was raised, — a no inconsiderable part of which was by private contributions of citizens of the town, who had still a competency remaining. A reward of $1,000 for the conviction of the incendiary was offered, but to no purpose; though ten years later Newburyport, not to her credit, wreaked her vengeance by hanging a lad of seventeen years of age for setting fire to a barn on Temple Street.

Immediately after the fire, many persons removed from the town; some for business in Boston, and others to more distant parts. It was about that date that John Peabody, who was the Stewart of our dry-goods trade, left; and property so depreciated that the Merrimac House, which was his private residence, built at a cost of $30,000, was sold to the Eastern Stage Company for $12,500. With him went his nephew, George Peabody, afterwards the great London banker, who distributed millions for the benefit of mankind. So went the Dodges, Todds, Woods, and others, known later in trade and letters at Washington.

In 1817 President Monroe visited the town, on his Northern tour, and was received with military and civic honors. Ebenezer Moseley was chairman of the committee of arrangements. The bells were rung, a salute fired, a procession formed, in which were 1,850 children, addresses delivered, and a dinner provided. It was during dinner that Moses Cole sketched the best portrait of James Monroe ever taken.

In 1820 Maine was set off and created a State; and the same year Massachusetts revised her constitution, and it remained without alteration to the revision of 1853. The same year the Savings Institution was organized, the deposits of which finally exceeded five millions; while the Five Cents Bank, established in 1854, had about one million at the same time.

In 1824 the town gave a public reception to Lafayette. It was similar in its arrangements to that which had been given to Washington and Monroe. He was entertained by James Prince; and occupied the same room that Washington had occupied, the bed and furniture being unchanged.

In 1832 the Police Court was established. Hon. Stephen Marston became judge; and he was succeeded by the present incumbent, Hon. William E. Currier.

In 1835 the semi-centennial anniversary of the settlement of Newbury was celebrated. Caleb Cushing delivered the oration, George Lunt wrote the ode which was sung, and among the guests at dinner were Lieut. Gov. Armstrong, Edward Everett, Robert C. Winthrop, and many natives of the town from abroad. In the evening the ladies gave a tea-party in Washington Hall; and, as a result, from the surplus receipts the Society for the Relief of Aged Females was founded; to which William Gordon, a native of Norway, gave, in 1839, $1,000; and that was increased by donations from William Wheelwright and others, by which the Old Ladies' Home was established.

It was in this same year, 1835, that William Wheelwright, who spent a half century in projecting and executing improvements in South America, received a grant of the exclusive right to steam-navigation of the ports and rivers of Chili.

In 1840 the Eastern Railroad was opened to Newburyport, superseding the Eastern Stage Company, which had been a corporation of much magnitude. That has been followed by other railroads: the Newburyport Railroad, which was opened to Georgetown in 1850; the City Railroad, which runs to the river line; and the Horse Railroad, connecting with Salisbury and Amesbury; the last two being built by aid of the city. This was also the year of the exciting presidential election, during which a public dinner was given to Caleb Cushing, and Daniel Webster, Leverett Saltonstall, and others made speeches on Brown's Square, and in the evening Mr. Cushing gave a reception to 3,000 persons, in the No. 2 Bartlett Mill, before the machinery had been put up.

In 1842 Oak Hill Cemetery was consecrated,—the garden resting-place of the dead; and this was the beginning of the improvements made at the other burying-grounds.

In 1847 the telegraph was here established; and in 1848 was the great emigration to California, the land of gold. The first vessel fitted for passengers was the brig, "Ark," by C. H. Coffin.

There are many institutions of the past and present which our limits will only permit us to name; as the Fire and Marine Insurance Company, which has been in operation since 1829, the successor of a dozen such offices. Of banks which commenced here in 1795, we have the Mechanicks', incorporated in 1812, capital $250,000, Edward S. Moseley president; Merchants', chartered in 1831, capital $120,000, Nathaniel Hills president; Ocean, chartered in 1833, capital $150,000, Charles Lunt president; and First National, organized in 1864, capital $300,000, Charles H. Coffin president. All of these are now national banks. Military companies: The Cushing Guard, Capt. David L. Withington; and City Cadets, Capt. Samuel E. Tuck. Masonic bodies: St. John's and St. Mark's lodges, King Cyrus chapter, and the encampment of Knights Templars. Odd Fellows: Quascacunquen Lodge and Merrimac Encampment. Knights of Pythias, Knights of Honor, Good Templars lodge, and various temperance societies. The Marine Society, formed in 1772, which has a fund for charitable purposes; the Humane Society, which also has an ample fund; the Howard Benevolent Society; General Charitable Society; the Historical Society; medical, clerical, educational, social, and other societies, of more or less importance.

CHAPTER VI.

THE INDUSTRIES OF NEWBURYPORT.

The first business was fishing — the catching, curing, and shipping of sturgeon taking the lead; and the first man engaged therein was one Watts, who is often referred to in the early records, but of whom little is known. Capt. Paul White, who had a grant of land for a wharf near to Watts, where the ferry now is, was better known. He was a merchant and a distiller. He first made rum here,—a business destined to increase till, in 1781, Newburyport had ten distilleries in operation at once; and when Washington reached the town, in 1789, the men in that business were so numerous that they formed a distinct section in the street parade. Now it has been reduced to one distillery, that of the Caldwells, who have conducted it for three generations, some ninety years, and have increased its capacity to the consumption of two and a half million gallons of molasses per annum, and to the payment of more revenue into the national treasury than all other manufactures in the county of Essex.

But the most important of all our industries has been ship-building. When that began on the Merrimac does not appear from any records. It must have been about the close of the first half of the seventeenth century, and probably on Carr's Island. The first ship-yard on the south of the river was at the foot of Federal Street, where Thomas Johnson built. But he appears not to have stopped there long, as Ezra Cottle was occupying the same yard in 1698, and in 1700 John Stickney was there building. Afterwards William Johnson, shipwright, owned those premises, and from him they descended to his son, Eleazer, ship-builder; then to his son, William P. Johnson, who built the wharf, with the brick store at its head, and also the first brick house on the lower side of Federal Street, for which Capt. Samuel Huse, house-joiner, made the blinds now on it, — the first ever used in this town.

It appears from the colonial records that 130 vessels were built on the Merrimac River from 1681 to 1714, of which 100 were built in Newbury, mostly small vessels. The first ship was the "Samuel and David," owned in Boston, of 100 tons, exceeding the tonnage of any other vessel to her date, 1703. During one year eleven vessels, five of them ships of from ninety to 310 tons, were built on English account.

During the early part of the eighteenth century, Gideon Woodwell began building below Marlborough Street. That was in 1759, though the place had been previously used for the same purpose. He and his sons and grandsons, down to about 1845, launched 145 vessels, the largest 320 tons. At the north end, in 1730, we find Samuel Moggridge at a point of rocks which still bears his name. He employed negro slaves in his work.

Between these two points — Woodwell's at the south end and Moggridge's at the north end — the yards were stretched all along the river, so that Cushing's History says that seventy-two vessels were building at one time in 1766. At the extreme south end, below what is now the Huse wharf, the Cottles, Woodwells, Hunts, Pierces, Pettingells, Atkinsons, Gerrishes, Cokers, Hales, and others were builders. William Gerrish was the most wealthy of these, and had his yard where the railroad now crosses Water Street. He owned the whole square bounded by Bromfield, Water, and Purchase streets, and Somerby's Lane; and from Somerby's Lane around to Purchase Street all the houses, forty years ago, were occupied by his descendants. Above, to the Market, the Coombses, Johnsons, Greenleafs, Crosses, and others built. Ralph Cross, who came from Ipswich, was a ship-builder, as were his two sons, Stephen and Ralph. Stephen was employed by the government to build a flotilla on Lake George, in the French and Indian War in 1756, and was assisted by many carpenters from both sides the Merrimac River. He was captured, and carried a prisoner to France. He and Ralph, who was a brigadier-general in the Revolution, built three frigates for the State, and also a sixteen-gun ship, called the "Neptune," with other war vessels owned by private citizens. They were among the firmest patriots in the Revolution. In early times, not only were Merrimac ships built for England and Scotland, but timber in large rafts, formed like ships, was exported. In 1770, one such, called the "Newbury," made the passage to London in twenty-six days. The Revolution checked this trade, as it did all other industries.

After the Revolution, the ship-yards extended at the northward to the Deer Island bridge, where Elias Jackman had a yard, and was among the chief builders. Among the shipwrights of this name was Stephen Jackman, who built a large number of brigs of peculiar model, for Capt John N. Cushing, who, at the time of his death, was the largest ship-owner in the State. They were very burdensome, designed for ocean freighting, carrying twice their tonnage. The brig "Pocahontas," lost on Plum Island, with all her crew, in 1839, was one of them. In all, Mr. Jackman launched thirteen of these brigs; and in the total, thirty vessels, including two coastwise steamers, the "Ohio" and "Decatur." George W. Jackman, brother of Stephen, succeeding in the same yard, has built twenty-seven vessels, all but one of large size. Two were gunboats, of more than a thousand tons each, launched in 1864; and two were ocean steamers, of 3,000 tons each — the largest vessels ever built on the Merrimac, — launched in 1866 and 1867.

Among the most distinguished builders of the last century was Orlando B. Merrill, who, with his brothers, Jonathan and Nathan, occupied the yard next below Moggridge's Point. He invented the water-line model now in use, from which the working plans are taken in ship-construction. His original model is still in existence. He built the war-brig "Pickering" in 1798 for the United States; the "Massachusetts" in 1799 — an eighteen-gun ship of 600 tons (very large then) — for the East India trade; and in 1812 the sloop-of-war "Wasp."

In 1807, the embargo was declared; and in the same year, Elisha Briggs, shipwright, removed from Medford to Newburyport, and to 1837 built seventeen ships, thirteen brigs, and ten schooners.

In the same yard, John Currier and James Townsend built a large number of ships, some of them as large as any Merrimac sailing ships. Among them was the "Dreadnaught," which was never beaten for quick passages. Following them, at the same yard, were George E. and Charles H. Currier, who have built thirty vessels, of about 15,000 tons, in half the yard, while J. W. S. Colby and Enoch P. Lunt have launched twenty schooners from the other half.

John Currier, Jr., has built more large vessels than any other person. He commenced in 1831, and is still in the business; has launched ninety-four vessels, chiefly ships, in the aggregate of 85,000 tons. His ships are known the world over. Others, as the Duttons, and the Picketts, and the Hardys, have built in this section of the city; and there Donald McKay commenced the life of a carpenter, now the most famous builder of wooden ships in the country, and who has placed upon the water the largest amount of tonnage.

Just below, Eben Manson has built a large number of vessels, and some of the best. Still further down the river, at the foot of Titcomb Street, Fillmore & McQuilen and Atkinson & Fillmore have had a yard since 1862 — the latter firm in ten years launching 10,000 tons of shipping. At the foot of Centre Street, a few years ago, was the Selfredge ship-yard; and, in fact, in every few rods of the river-bank there has been ship-building in the two centuries past. It is impossible to tell how large the business has been, but it has been the great mechanical employment of the town; and by a devotion to that the greatest excellence has been attained. Not on the face of the earth is there a place which has had a better reputation for ship-building: but this has not been more from the skill of the carpenters than of the ship-joiners, painters, iron and brass-workers, sail-makers, and riggers. At present, building has fallen off, owing to the decline of commerce in American bottoms, and its future is uncertain. It is in competition with iron and steel hulls, and the canvas gradually but surely yields to steam on the ocean.

Fishing, we have said, was the original business on the river, antedating the grant for the town of Newbury. The deep-sea fishing was for codfish, and largely at the Labrador. The first vessels to the Labrador sailed in the very last years of the last century, and the number of vessels quickly ran up to more than sixty sail. The same vessels took their cargoes to the West Indies, returning with sugar, molasses, and coffee; or, to the French and Spanish ports of the Mediterranean, returning with merchandise from Europe, and this constituted a large trade. But that branch of the fisheries has almost entirely disappeared. Only two vessels from the United States were engaged in it in 1878, and those from Newburyport. Gradually the cod-fishing was abandoned; and, near the beginning of this century, the mackerel fishery began to supersede it. That attained its maximum in 1834, when 28,000 barrels were landed. Some 130 sail of vessels were employed. The vessels were small, not averaging half the size of those in the same business now. The decline ran from 1835 to 1851, when, of ninety vessels, nine, with a large number of men, were lost in a gale in the Bay of St. Lawrence, which greatly hastened that decline. The catch of that year was 21,000 barrels, and in the year following it was only half of that.

This year (1878), fourteen vessels constituted the entire fleet, and the utter extinction of the business is not distant. An attempt was made, some fifty years ago, to establish the seal fishery and the Atlantic whale fishery; but both failed. More successfully, the Pacific whale fishery was carried in 1833, and several ships made paying voyages: but as the carrying trade from the South to Europe was then more profitable, and cotton manufactures more enticing, that was given up; and Newburyport has ceased to have rank among the fishing towns. The same causes that destroyed cod-fishery combined to destroy the West India trade, which was very large up to 1827; and since that our shipping interest has chiefly been in freighting ships to Europe, East Indies, California, Australia, and other parts of the world; but that, also, as the coastwise shipping, is of far less importance now than thirty years ago.

Newburyport must soon cease to hold any considerable rank for shipping or commerce, unless in the future it shall become the port of the Merrimac Valley, and river improvements shall utilize the Merrimac, opening it to steam navigation as far as Lowell at least. This was the dream of our fathers, who, as early as 1816, sought that end; but Boston, through the Middlesex Canal, turned to its own benefit what naturally belonged to Newburyport. Again, the same thing is sought by the Pentucket Navigation Company. The government has been induced to appropriate considerable sums of money, and probably will spend more hereafter. The chief men of this company are Gen. Benjamin F. Butler, who would open the river to Lowell, and E. M. Boynton, who put the first steam-tug on the river to Haverhill, some years ago; since which, steamers for freight and passengers have rapidly increased in number, and now a dozen find constant summer employment, the largest carrying 1,500 passengers. The whole number of steamboat travellers in the river in 1878 must have been 250,000; and the steam-tugs make a profitable business. It is doubtful, however, if they can ever succeed above Haverhill without a dam at Mitchell's Falls, through which a good channel has already been cleared.

For more than a generation, Newburyport has been rapidly changing from a commercial to a manufacturing community. In default of water-power, John Coombs and others went to Danvers, and William Bartlet and others to Byfield, to establish factories for the manufacture of cloth, four score years ago; and it was not till the great improvements in modern machinery that anything was attempted here. The first factory was for the knitting of stockings, and was located on Brown's Square about 1828. Its most active proprietor was Charles H. Coffin, then a young man, but of great enterprise. It was not a success. Soon after, Mr. Coffin established a comb-factory, at the foot of Fair Street, which was run by steam-engine, — the first ever put up in Newburyport. It employed a hundred hands; and its combs were chiefly sold in South America, and were so large as to be worn by ladies with mantillas covering the head. The backs were two feet broad. This factory ran for several years. There were other manufacturers about that time. The same business is now pursued near the same locality; the largest establishment being that of Carr, Brown & Co., which employs about one hundred hands. C. H. Coffin was also, for a time, a member of this firm; and is to be remembered as one of the most active business men the town ever had, and one who, in a half century last past, has been among the foremost in public improvements.

The establishment of steam cotton-mills commenced in 1834; the first mill being a wooden building by the river side, just above the railroad bridge. That was operated to 1855, when it was burned. In 1837, the Bartlet corporation erected one mill: and in 1840, another. It now has $350,000 capital, runs 22,000 spindles, and employs 300 operatives. This enterprise was materially aided by William Bartlet, who, though ninety years old at the time, invested more than $70,000 in the stock, and was as ready to do for the industry of the town as when in the prime of his days. An iron man, ninety years had not effaced from his mind the conceptions of his youth. Three other corporations are in full operation: the Victoria Mills at the south end, started in 1842, with a capital of a quarter of a million, which employs 250 operatives; the Ocean Mills, chartered in 1845, which has a capital of $300,000, runs 27,000 spindles, and employs 350 operatives; and the Peabody Mills, which started in 1846, has a capital of $300,000, runs 19,000 spindles, and employs 250 operatives. The aggregate capital in cotton mills is $1,200,000; spindles, 85,216; persons employed, 1,200; cotton consumed, 3,478,000 pounds; cloth produced annually, 15,693,000 yards; and pay-rolls, a half million dollars. The Victoria Mills, in one year during the Rebellion, divided eighty per cent. on its capital; but, as a whole, the business has not paid well; and all the corporations, except the Bartlet, have changed hands once since its organization at least, with a loss to the stockholders.

If Newburyport has not done much in manufacturing at home, owing to a lack of water-power, Francis E. Lowell, son of Judge John, born here in 1775, and Patrick T. Jackson, born here in 1780, with Paul Moody, of Byfield, erected the first cotton-mill in Waltham, in 1813; and in 1821, the two last named founded Lowell, and by them, Newburyport boys, the manufacture of cotton cloth was begun in Massachusetts, and established in New England; and it was by Mr. Jackson, for the accommodation of Lowell, that the Boston and Lowell Railroad was built, at a time when railroads were an experiment.

The next business in importance is shoe manufacturing; in which are eight firms, who produce goods to the value of three-quarters of a million dollars annually, and pay about $250,000 a year to their operatives. In all are about 800 persons, male and female, in this work.

In the manufacture of wool hats, the town has become known through the Bayley Hat Company, which has the most successful factory in New England. Its production is of an average value of more than $1,000 per day.

Besides the above, there are many small manufactures, — of iron machinery and steam boilers; of cord and fishing lines, to the value

of $100,000 per annum; of gold and silver ware; of cigars, bricks, printing, paper-boxes, and other things.

Within a few years, silver-mining has become quite a business. Though most of the mineral lands are without the city limits, it is here that the miners live. Their work is pursued as practically and systematically as is mining in Nevada or Colorado. How far it is to progress, no one at this time can determine.

Silver was discovered at an early period, according to tradition, which credits several families with the possession of spoons or ornaments from ore found on their own lands; and a large excavation, called "Watts' Hole," on the banks of the Merrimac, the site of the present Moulton Mine, is said to have been opened for silver nearly two hundred and fifty years ago, by the man who dug the first cellar in the town, on the site of the Newburyport Market House, and which was long known in the records as "Watts his cellar."

Though specimens of silver, lead, and copper have been occasionally found for the last generation, and are still preserved in cabinets, no attempt at regular mining was made till 1872, when the silver discovery was made at Highfields, about two miles south of Newburyport, — which caused an excitement throughout the country, hardly excelled by that which followed the opening of the Nevada mines. Old miners returned from the Pacific coast to try their fortunes in the Eastern bonanza, which was declared to be equal or superior to the finest lodes of the West. Land went up to fabulous figures, and ancestral farms changed hands daily. At least a hundred shafts were sunk in Newbury and adjoining towns, in most of which specimens were found; and, in short, a regular mining fever broke out, which did not run its course for several years.

There are at present about twenty mines within the limits of old Newbury, with the appliances of shaft-houses, machinery, &c. The shafts have been sunk from fifty to two hundred and fifty feet; and have yielded, with the drifts, from fifty to a thousand tons of ore each, chiefly argentiferous galena and gray copper, — which assays, according to Prof. Richards, of the Institute of Technology, from $179 per ton for the galena, to $1,422 silver, and $145.12 gold for the gray copper. There are several smelting works in connection with the mines, though more ore has been shipped for reduction abroad than has been worked at home. The largest number of hands that have been employed in any mine is a hundred in the Merrimac, the first one opened. Experienced miners have great faith in the future of mineral operations; but old communities are distrustful, and the operators fail to find the material aid to carry forward their enterprises as rapidly as they desire. It is doubtful if any mines in this country have yielded more in proportion to the money and labor expended, and mining may yet become our greatest industry.

CHAPTER VII.

EDUCATION — SCHOOLS.

One of the principal arguments for a separation from Newbury was lack of school privileges, which led to maintaining private schools against the genius of the times and the people. Eleven days after the incorporation a town-meeting was held to consider the school question — providing for the instruction of the young at the public expense, and from that hour to the present Newburyport has had an unfaltering interest in public-school education. In 1793 there were nine schools with nine hundred pupils, which was 200 more than Boston had, with several times the population. Newburyport led the Commonwealth. One school, on the corner of Essex and State streets, the Latin school, was taught by Samuel Parker. His successors were, first, "Master Fogg"; and second, Nicholas Pike, author of the first arithmetic published in America. Mr. Pike had been a leader in politics, and his arithmetic drew a letter of commendation from Washington, then president of the United States. Third, came Michael Walsh author of the second arithmetic published in the country, which for many years was the standard work throughout the United States. At this period the Latin school of this town was second to no other. It prepared young men to enter college, or to enter at once on professional studies, or mercantile life. Simon Greenleaf, who filled the Royal and the Dane professorships in the Harvard Law School, received all his preparatory education in that school; and at the age of thirteen Caleb Cushing was prepared by "Master" Walsh for college. Among its later teachers were Albert Pike and George Lunt, celebrated as poets and jurists.

The common schools, with all the care bestowed upon them, however, failed to satisfy the public demands, and as late as 1836 the private schools were more numerous and more costly than the public, the former being maintained at a cost of $4,500, and the latter at little less than $3,000; but since the re-organization of the schools in 1851, private schools have almost absolutely disappeared. The Latin school took the name of Brown, from Moses Brown, a prominent merchant, from whose estate it had a fund of $15,000 for its support. Later, in 1860, it was consolidated with the Female High School, and both are connected with the Putnam, founded by Oliver Putnam, and made free to the youth of the world and all are now under A. H. Thompson, as principal, assisted by a large number of teachers, who have elevated it to very near the grade of colleges of a half-century ago.

We may not follow all the different schools in their changes, nor have we space to note the changes in the modes of instruction. The Lancasterian system was thoroughly tested, and for some years popular; nor do we feel assured that much improvement has been made on that. But it must be remembered that our public schools were for boys, not girls. The first record of schools for girls was in 1790; and then they were to be "taught good manners, reading, spelling, sewing, and knitting." In 1792, the girls were taught reading and grammar, "after the dismission of the boys, for one hour and a half." These were deemed charity schools, as no person could send his daughters who paid a tax on more than £300; and they were for girls of over nine years.

In 1804, there were two primary mixed schools, kept six months, from six to eight o'clock in the morning. Here were 1,400 pupils, and the school appropriation was $4,000. Now, with less than twice that number of pupils, the cost is full ten times that amount.

In 1812 the morning schools were merged into three female grammar schools, with the same studies as boys; and from 1820 a charitable colored school was established, which the town adopted in 1825, and supported to 1835, from which date there has been no distinction on account of race or color.

In 1843 Newburyport had the honor of establishing the first public Female High School in Massachusetts. Eben F. Stearns, a distinguished teacher, was its first principal; and it obtained its greatest success under William C. Todd, principal for ten years from 1854. Soon after it was consolidated with the Brown School.

The Putnam Free School is in charge of trustees, under the will of its founder, Oliver Putnam, who died in 1826, leaving it a legacy of $50,000, exclusive of buildings, free to "youth wherever they belong." Instruction in the dead languages is prohibited. Its first principal, in 1848, was W. W. Wells, previously of Phillips Academy, Andover; others succeeded till its connection with the town high schools in 1868.

Another school, almost passed out of mind, was the Newburyport Academy, one of the oldest in New England, incorporated in 1807. It was in a handsome brick building on High Street, now a dwelling-house, and maintained a good reputation for more than a generation, many of its teachers and graduates obtaining distinction in after life.

Among other means of education have been evening schools during the winter, for the benefit of adults and children employed during the day; and, for a hundred years and more, there has been an ample supply of reading. In the very year of the incorporation of the town, the publication of a newspaper was commenced by Isaiah Thomas, the first and most distinguished of our printers; and from that day, Newburyport has not been without one newspaper or more. The first was the "Essex Journal"; the second, the "Herald," published from 1793 to the present, and daily since 1832, being the first daily in the State out of Boston, and still flourishing. Since it began, some forty newspapers have come and gone — the only one surviving, the "Merrimac Valley Visitor," having been published from 1872.

Our libraries have been many, large, and select. The Circulating Library, of 1,500 volumes, was established in 1800; and the same year a Religious Library. In 1805 came the Social Library. In 1810 the Athenæum was incorporated, — a fine collection of books, — which continued some forty years. In 1812, the Franklin Library was instituted. In 1832, there were several Sunday-school libraries, and the high school had 400 volumes; and in 1856 the Public Library, which now has 17,000 volumes. It was founded by Hon. Josiah Little by a donation of $5,000, and its funds were subsequently increased by $5,000 by Matthias Plant Sawyer, and $15,000 by George Peabody, the London banker; and by other means the historic building on State Street was provided for its use.

The free reading-room in the same building, the first of its kind in the State, was founded by William C. Todd, who had been principal of the Female High School, by a donation of $5,000.

For fifty years, a very few excepted, the Lyceum has furnished a course of scientific and other lectures; and thus, with schools, newspapers, libraries, and lecture courses, the means of education have been all that could be desired.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE CHURCHES.

Episcopal Church. — The members of the Second Parish of Newbury, who were opposed to the moving of the meeting-house from the Plains to Pipe-stave Hill, joined an Episcopal Society, under the auspices of the bishop of London, in 1711, who presented them a bell in the name of Queen Anne, for whom their house was named Queen Anne's Chapel. The first minister was Mr. M. Lampton, who returned to England in 1714. The next year Henry Lucas was sent for, and officiated both in Newbury and Kittery, till his death by suicide, in a fit of temporary insanity, in 1720. In 1722 Matthias Plant took charge of the society, and effected a thorough organization of the church, according to the English forms. During his ministry the "Water side" people proposed to build a new church, which was done in 1738, though not finished for seven years. It was called St. Paul's, and was on the site of the present edifice, and was occupied by a virtually distinct society, though Mr. Plant officiated both in St. Paul's and Queen Anne's. Edward Bass, afterwards first bishop of Massachusetts, succeeded Mr. Plant, being ordained to the work in England by the bishop of London. During Mr. Bass's ministry the Revolutionary war broke out, and by his omitting the prayers for the royal family the church lost the aid provided for it as a missionary station of an English society. James Morss, D. D., a native of Newburyport, succeeded Bishop Bass in 1803, and continued till his death in 1842. Dr. Morss was succeeded by John S. Davenport in 1843; E. A. Washburn, 1845; William Horton, D. D., 1853; John C. White, 1863; and he was followed by the Rev. George D. Johnson. The present rector is the Rev. E. L. Drown.

First Religious Society.—This was the third church in Newbury, organized in 1725, under John Lowell as pastor. The first house was in Market Square, which was succeeded by the present building on Pleasant Street, in 1801, which is widely celebrated as a model of architectural beauty. The parish was formally set off by the General Court from its mother-parish in 1785, Federal Street being the dividing line; and the new parish at once, in accordance with their common-law privileges, established schools, and transacted much other business that would now belong to the town. The church was very zealous in the cause of religion, which they attempted to revive from its "decaying and languishing condition by extraordinary efforts, in the way of special meetings; enforcing the law for the observation of Sunday; appointing committees to wait on backsliders; appointing fasts," &c.

Mr. Lowell continued their pastor till his death, in 1767, He was succeeded by Thomas Cary the next year; who, at his death, in 1808, was succeeded by John Andrews, who had been his colleague for twenty years. Mr. Andrews resigned in 1830, and died in 1845. Thomas B. Fox was the next minister, a man of much culture and liberality of views. He was succeeded by T. W. Higginson, since widely known as a reformatory lecturer and writer, and a colonel in the War of the Rebellion. He is probably the ablest minister that the church has ever had. Next came the Rev. Charles Bowen; the Rev. A. B. Muzzey; and now the Rev. George L. Stowell is pastor.

First Presbyterian Church.—This church was formed, in 1746, by nineteen persons who had withdrawn from the First Parish in Newbury, and had held meetings for two years in a small building on High Street, Joseph Adams officiating as their pastor. By advice of Whitefield, the Separatists (as they were termed by their former associates) invited Jonathan Parsons to become their pastor, who was installed after an entirely original form. Mr. Parsons simply said, after the vote to settle him was passed, "I take this people to be my people"; and the clerk replied for the society: "In the presence of God and these witnesses, we take this man to be our minister." The next spring they joined the Boston Presbytery, though for a long time they were unjustly condemned to pay taxes to the First and Third societies, from which most of the members had separated; the Legislature refusing to grant them any relief in reply to their repeated petitions, though Gov. Shirley on one occasion specially commended their case to the consideration of the Court. Some refused to pay the taxes, and were thrown into prison, and steps were finally taken to present the case of the Presbyterians to the king and council; but the Legislature, finding that the attorney-general of England was about to move in the matter, and fearing that their charter was in danger, made some concessions, that proved the stepping-stones to fuller liberty of conscience, though the Presbyterians were not formally free from paying taxes to the Congregationalists till 1794.

The meeting-house now occupied by the society was built in 1756; and is noted for a remarkably fine whispering-gallery, which is fully equal to that of St. Paul's in London. The remains of Whitefield are preserved in a vault under the pulpit, and a monument is erected in the church to his memory.

The successor of Mr. Parsons was John Murray, an Irishman of great ability and eloquence. He was a strong patriot during the Revolution; was president and secretary of the Provincial Congress, and chairman of the committee for reporting rules and orders for Congress, the basis of which reports are still preserved in the rules of the Legislature for this Commonwealth. Mr. Murray was succeeded by Daniel Dana, D. D., an eminent theologian, S. P. Williams, John Proudfit, D. D., Jonathan F. Stearns, A. S. Vermilye, the Rev. R. H. Richardson, the Rev. Charles F. Durfee; pur the Rev. William W. Newell, Jr., is now pastor.

Belleville Congregational Church. — This church was organized in 1808, and was strictly independent and self-organized, as it is recorded that "a number of individuals formed themselves into a Christian church"; no allusion being made to a council, and no evidence appearing that any council was called, which was a wide departure from Congregational usage.

The first pastor was James Miltimore, installed 1808; died 1836. He was succeeded by John C Murch, ordained 1832; died 1846. Daniel T. Fisk was ordained 1847, and is the present pastor.

There were but nine original members; six named Atkinson, and three Little. Four hundred and thirty-three members have been added, there being about 233 at present. The parish connected with this church was set off from the Fifth Church in Newbury, which was incorporated in 1761. The first meeting-house was dedicated in 1807, and destroyed by fire in 1816. The present house was erected the same year, and remodelled in 1860, making it one of the prettiest church buildings in the county, as it is also a model parish. This is in reality the Second Parish of Newburyport.

North Church was organized in 1768, as the Second Congregational Church, it being an offshoot from the First Church. The reason of the separation, as stated in the records, was that after the death of the Rev. Mr. Lowell the church was unable to agree in the choice of a person to be his successor in the ministry, in consequence of a difference of opinion as to some of the important doctrines of Christianity. Mr. Cary, the successor of Mr. Lowell, was what was denominated a rational Christian, whose liberal theology did not suit the more rigid Calvinists. The separation, however, was perfectly harmonious, the seceding church being allowed to retain a share of the communion plate. The warrant for the first meeting was drawn in the name of His Majesty George the Third, this being the last church deriving its authority from the king of England. Its pastors have been Christopher B. Marsh, ordained 1768, died 1773. Samuel Spring, ordained 1777, died 1819. Luther F. Dimmick, ordained 1819, died 1860. E. C. Hooker, ordained 1860, dismissed 1864. W. A. McGinley, installed 1865, dismissed 1869. James Powell, ordained 1869. The present pastor is the Rev. Charles R. Seymour.

The new society at first held its meetings in the town hall; but a meeting-house was built within the year, on the site of the present building, on Titcomb Street. The house was burned in 1861; the present one being built and dedicated the same year.

Fourth Church was originated from the First Presbyterian Church, and organized in 1793. It has had but three pastors: — Charles W. Milton, installed 1794, dismissed 1837. Randolph Cambell, installed 1837, and still their senior pastor, and I. H. Ross settled as assistant pastor in 1877.

At the time of the separation of this church from the First Presbyterian, that church was under the care of Mr. Murray, who obtained the services of Mr. Milton as assistant. After the expiration of his engagement a portion of the church withdrew, and retained

Mr. Milton, the meeting being held in a private house. They were censured and suspended for this act, which led them to form an Independent Society, which ignored in its form of government the authority of the Presbytery. The General Court refused to recognize them under the name they had chosen of "Independent Calvinistic Society," and they were finally incorporated under the present designation of "Fourth Religious Society." In 1798, the First Presbyterian Church voted to take off the censure from the members who had withdrawn.

The meeting-house on Prospect Street was built in 1793. The parish was then poor; and some of the members of the society, in their zeal, mortgaged their own houses to procure the necessary funds. It was enlarged and remodelled in 1800.

The Second Presbyterian Church was organized in 1795, with thirty-three members who had withdrawn from the First Presbyterian, dissatisfied with the settlement of the Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., who, thirty years later was its pastor, coming from the presidency of Dartmouth College at their call. The first pastor was the Rev. John Boddely, of Bristol, England, a graduate of Lady Huntingdon's College; as was also the Rev. C. W. Milton, of the Fourth Religious Society. He died in 1802, and was succeeded by the Rev. John Giles, also from England, who resigned in 1823. Then follow as pastors, the Rev. William Ford, to 1825; the Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., to 1845; the Rev. W. W. Eells, and several others have then followed on short pastorates, to the present pastor, the Rev. J. A. Bartlett, settled in 1877.

First Baptist Church. — As early as 1681, a Baptist Church was formed in Newbury, which applied for assistance to the First Church of Boston, which gave a formal assent to the organization of the Newbury Society, whatever effect that may have had. But there existed a formidable prejudice against the peculiar principles of the new sect, and it seems not to have gained a permanent foothold, at that time, in Newbury, as nothing more is known of it for above a century. In 1804, the society was re-formed, and a school-house in the southern part of Newburyport was procured for a house, and Joshua Chase engaged as preacher. A large number of baptisms and accessions to the church follows his labors. In 1805 the Rev. John Peak was engaged as pastor, and officiated alternately in the Marlborough Street School-house, and at the Plains, though afterwards a central location was obtained in the "Tabernacle," on Temple Street. In 1809 a brick meeting-house was built on Liberty Street, at the cost of $16,000, but was destroyed two years later in "the Great Fire." The society occupied the court-house for a year, when the house now occupied by the Christian Society, on Congress Street, was erected with funds obtained by Mr. Peak on a soliciting tour. His successors, since 1818, have been Hosea Wheeler, Nathaniel Williams, W. B. Jacobs, Jonathan Aldrich, Albert N. Arnold, afterwards missionary to Greece, Nicholas Medbury. The society has now ceased to exist, the members becoming incorporated with the Second Baptist, and other organizations.

First Baptist Church. — This was organized in 1846, by sixty-seven persons, who withdrew from the First Baptist Church. Nicholas Medbury, formerly pastor of the First Church, was chosen to officiate over the new society. For two years the meetings were held in Washington and Market Halls, when the church-building in Green Street was erected. In 1852, Mr. Medbury resigned, and John Richardson was settled as his successor in 1853. Others have followed for short periods, and the Rev. J. T. Beckley is now pastor.

First Methodist Church. — A Methodist society was gathered in 1819, by "Reformation John Adams," a member of the New England Conference. It was connected with the Salisbury society till 1825, when it was made a station in charge of Mr. Adams, who, being a preacher of great magnetic power, inaugurated one of the greatest "revivals" known since the days of Whitefield. The meetings were held in a school-house on Marlborough Street till 1825, when a meeting-house was built on Purchase Street. In 1826, Bartholomew Otheman was appointed to the station, and has been succeeded by a long list of clergymen, some of them very able men. The changes are too frequent to enumerate the pastors.

Second Methodist Church. — Mr. Otheman, who had been the minister of the First Methodist Church, organized the Second in 1827, and a meeting-house on Liberty Street was dedicated the same year. The society was composed of fifteen members, who withdrew from the First Church, the membership increasing in six years, to 130. In 1834, a "protracted meeting" was held for twenty consecutive days and fifty evenings, and, as a result, 150 "probationers" were admitted to the church. Of late years the parish has been less prosperous. They have, however, built a new church, at a cost of $12,000, on Washington Street, where they now worship.

The Universalist Church. — The organization of this society, which consisted of eight persons, was effected in 1834. The meeting-house on Middle Street was dedicated in 1840, though the "recognition" of the church was not had till 1842, when the services were performed by the Rev. Sylvanus Cobb. The first minister was Woodbridge M. Fernald; and his successors have been Darius Forbes, E. A. Eaton, James Shrigley, A. R. Abbot, D. M. Reed, Willard Spaulding, and others, no one having a long pastorate. The Rev. J. H. Hartly now supplies the pulpit.

Christian Society. — This church and society had its origin in meetings held at Belleville, in 1838, by the Rev. Daniel P. Pike, pastor of the Christian Society at Salisbury Point. The attendance constantly increased; and, in 1840, a hall was dedicated in Brown's Square, which was soon crowded to its utmost capacity. About this time the church was organized, and Mr. Pike settled. In 1845, a church edifice was built and dedicated on Court Street, which has recently been sold to the Catholics, the Christian Society at present occupying the meeting-house (formerly Baptist) on Congress Street.

Second Advent Church. — The origin of this church may be traced to the preaching of William Miller, in 1841, that the second coming of Christ was at hand. Those who embraced his views joined a society, and sustained meetings till 1843, when, the date for the fulfilment of the expected event having passed, the meetings were discontinued. In 1848, they re-organized under the Rev. John Pearson, Jr., as pastor, and established a distinct church, Sunday school, and Bible class. They met for several years in Washington Hall; but have now a handsome meeting-house in Charter Street, H. Canfield, pastor. The doctrine of this church, as at present taught, differs in no essential particular from those of the so-called evangelical churches, though it is claimed that Christ's second coming will be personal and visible, and that the earth renewed will be the saint's inheritance.

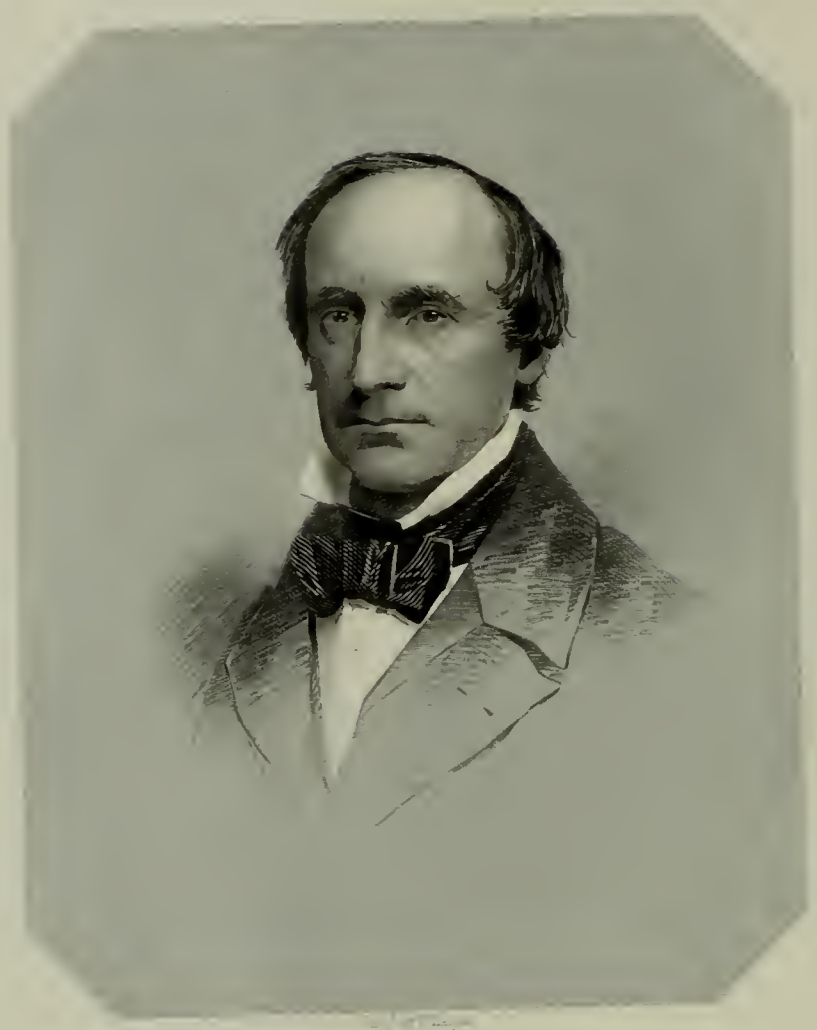
The Whitford Congregational Church was organized Jan. 1, 1850, regular preaching having been maintained for over a year previous in Market Hall, John E. Emerson, a native of Newburyport, officiating. On the organization of the church, he was ordained pastor, but died in a little more than a year after his settlement. The Rev. Samuel J. Spaulding, D. D., is his successor and the present minister. The meeting-house on State Street was built in 1852.

The Roman Catholic Church, organized in 1848, has had wonderful growth. Previous to that time worship had been held in private dwellings; but, then, as a missionary station, it was given in charge of a priest at Dover, N. H., and a chapel was had on Charles Street. Afterwards, at the same place, the Rev. John O'Brien served them. Next, about 1848, the Rev. Henry Lennon became their pastor; and, four years later, in 1852, they were able to erect the Church of the Immaculate Conception, on Green Street, which is the largest and finest church in the city. In 1872, they purchased the Christian Church on Court Street, which is used as a chapel. Since that, they have consecrated a beautiful cemetery at the Plains, and are now making preparations for a parochial school. The people constitute nearly a third of the population; and even their two churches would not now accommodate them without a succession of services in the same house for different congregations on Sunday. Mr. Lennon died in 1872, lamented by all who knew him; and was succeeded by the Rev. A. J. Teeling, who is assisted by the Rev. J. J. McNulty. They are very devoted and efficient, manifesting the zeal of the early Christian Fathers.

CHAPTER IX.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

If, in previous chapters, we have done scanty justice in treating of the distinguished persons of Newburyport, we are now in danger of coming to an almost absolute failure. We could scarcely give the bare names of the men and women eminent as authors, poets, jurists, divines, physicians, reformers, artists, scientists, mechanics, inventors, statesmen, and warriors on land and sea. We are obliged to pass without special notice Tristram Dalton, the first senator in Congress, Judge Livermore, and Jeremiah Nelson, representatives; soldiers like Gen. John Boyd, an officer distinguished in Hindostan, and likewise at home in our war of 1812; Capt. Moses Brown, of the United States



Clarkson

navy; Col. Edward Wigglesworth, of Revolutionary fame: the Lunts, —Ezra, of Bunker Hill; Paul, under Arnold at Quebec; Henry and Cutting, of Paul Jones's fleet; Daniel, of Mill Prison memory; and Micajah, of the Penobscot expedition: the Titcombs,—Col. Moses, of Louisburg; and Gens. Enoch and Jonathan, who served under Sullivan. Nothing can we say of the Crosses, Stephen and Ralph—him of Lake George, and him who was at the capture of Burgoyne; of the Tyngs, the Springs, the Danas, the Morses, the Clarks, the Chases, and a host of other clergymen; of the Hoopers, Hodges, Traeys, Marquands, Farrises, Stockers, Browns, Coffins, Willses, Cushings, Bayleys, and other merchants; of such physicians as the Hales, Vergenises, Swetts, Noyeses, Prescotts, Bradstreets, Sawyers, Perkinses, and Spoffords; of the Pikes and Walshes, mathematicians; of judges like Simon Greenleaf, Theophilus Bradbury, the Lowells, Wilde, Thatcher, Greenleaf, White, and others; of manufacturers like the Jacksons, Lowells, James Horton, Charles H. Coffin, and others; of the Blunts and such book publishers; of Isaiah Thomas, Ephraim Allen, Joseph B. Morss, Albert Pike, Ben: Perley Poore, journalists; of the poets, George Lunt, Hannah F. Gould, Wm. H. Caldwell, Harriet Prescott Spofford. A mere catalogue would make a volume of names; nor should we omit some other ladies, like Mrs. E. Vale Smith, Mrs. George Lee, daughter of Dr. Micajah Sawyer, Anna Cabot Lowell, Mrs. Jane Greenleaf, Mrs. Mary B. Crocker, Mrs. Ann E. Porter, Sarah A. Emery, and others, whose writings are admired. It must suffice for us if we take persons as types of jurists, statesmen, reformers, merchants, and mechanics.

Theophilus Parsons, chief justice, son of the Rev. Moses Parsons, of Byfield, comes first, and is identified with us by residence, marriage, and the attainment of eminence in law while here. He graduated at Harvard, read law with Judge Bradbury, and after short practice at Portland, then Falmouth, opened an office here in 1777, when twenty-seven years old. He married the daughter of Judge Greenleaf, who lived on Washington Street, and built and lived in the house now the residence of Mrs. Charles Wills, on Green Street. His fame soon became national, and his opinions are quoted as precedents in all the courts where English law obtains. He moved to Boston early in this century, and with such a reputation, that when Chief Justice Dana retired, in 1806, nobody was thought of for his successor but Theophilus Parsons. He accepted the place, though the salary was but one-quarter of the value of his law income, and so did he fill the place that ever since he has been known as the Great Chief Justice.

Mr. Parsons's fame, while here, drew around him law students of the best families, and the highest character, some of whom rivalled their great teacher, and one in honors excelled him. Among them was John Quincy Adams, the sixth president, who never forgot the happy years he passed on the banks of the Merrimac, where he made friends among the ladies as well as gentlemen, as is indicated by his poem, "The Vision," written here in 1792. Another was Rufus King, who won the honors of Harvard where he graduated, and so far identified himself with our town that he was a warden of St. Paul's Church, and one year represented Newburyport in the legislature, where he was the leading member. He afterwards, as a resident of New York, filled high position in the government. A third was Robert Treat Paine, the poet-orator; a fourth Samuel L. Knapp, the learned lawyer and graceful writer; and a fifth Charles Jackson, who became judge on the supreme bench. No other man here ever drew around him such a circle of young men. And it was not from his personal manners or social habits, for he was disorderly in his apparel, and frequently absent-minded; but, when no responsibilities pressed him, he was playful, and sparkling with wit. The exceeding vigor of his mind, of course, imparted interest to every thing he said.

But no less was Judge Parsons a maker of law than an expounder. This appeared in 1778. A constitution had been rejected by the people by four to one. In town meeting Mr. Parsons submitted a series of resolutions, inviting the selectmen to send letters to the other towns of Essex County for a delegated convention, which was afterwards held at Ipswich. The town not only adopted the resolution, but at once chose their delegates: Theophilus Parsons, Tristram Dalton, Jonathan Jackson, Jonathan Greenleaf, and Ralph Cross. Some towns declined to send; others accepted the invitation; and in the convention Mr. Parsons was placed at the head of a committee to ascertain the true principles of government, and draw up the outline of a constitution. That task fell upon the hands and brains of Theophilus Parsons; and the "Essex Result," as it was called, — of little interest now, but much then, — was reported, and upon its principles the "Essex Junto" rested, Mr. Parsons being its real head and spirit. He was the most influential member of the convention which framed the constitution of the State.

Next, in 1788, we find him in the convention for the adoption of the Federal Constitution, which had been in doubt. Theophilus Parsons moved its adoption, and was the author of the "conciliatory resolutions," as they were termed, moved by John Hancock, and seconded by Samuel Adams, whereby that adoption was secured; a result which filled the land with joy, and, as some said, "saved the nation." Mr. Parsons died in Boston, in 1813, at the age of sixty-three. He left a son of the same name, who was law professor at Harvard, and has written many volumes on law, of the highest merit.

Caleb Cushing is the only other name in our history comparing with that of the chief justice, and he more represents the statesman than the jurist; though, like Parsons, he is recognized everywhere as profound in the law. He is from a family of judges. We may recall as many as ten names, beginning with John Cushing, of our Supreme Court, and his son William, chief justice of that court, whom Washington elevated to the supreme bench of the United States, and coming down to Caleb himself, who performed the duties of justice of our highest court with marked ability.

Caleb was the eldest son of Capt. John N. Cushing, a ship-master and merchant; was graduated at Harvard at the early age of seventeen, and then held such a position in college that he was the chosen orator to make the welcome address to President Monroe, and, for two years succeeding, he was a tutor in that college. In the meantime, he pursued his law studies, and was admitted to the bar, and commenced practice in this town, at twenty-two; at twenty-five he was a representative, and at twenty-six a State senator. The same year he was a candidate for Congress, when, after a heated canvass, and a number of ballotings, — a majority being required, and three candidates in the field, — he was defeated. This, perhaps, was fortunate, for it gave needed leisure for the pursuit of his studies and a tour of Europe, during which he wrote several volumes, historical and political, which increased his reputation as a thinker and a scholar.

In 1833, he had returned, and resumed politics, again representing the town in the Legislature; the people then and ever since gladly bestowing on him all the honors in their gift. Never for a day did he lose their entire confidence. But a brighter career was opening In 1835, he took his seat in Congress, as a Whig, when that party was in its vigor; Webster, Clay, Crittenden, being its chiefs. He served by successive elections, for eight sessions, till the disruption of the party in the administration of President Tyler. During these years, not a young man in Congress appeared to better advantage; not one was more industrious; not one more attentive to public duties, and not one more distinguished for learning, eloquence, and parliamentary accomplishments in the performance of his duties. His influence was felt in the Legislature of the country, and his abilities lauded in all parts of the Union.

In adhering to President Tyler, he separated from the Whig party; but the President at once appointed him minister to China, where he negotiated our first treaty with that empire. He went on his mission by the ancient route to the Indies, *via* the Mediterranean Sea, and, having perfected his work, returned *via* the Pacific Ocean and Mexico. This was his first service as a diplomat. In less than eighteen months, he had circumnavigated the globe, and made his treaty so favorably, that it attracted the attention and the envy of emperors.

Once more he represented Newburyport in the Legislature, where he earnestly advocated the Mexican War, to which the State was as earnestly opposed. But his words he was willing to support with his purse or his life. When the Legislature refused means to equip the Massachusetts regiment, he furnished the money; and when the troops were ready to leave, he had volunteered and was elected their colonel; and shortly after, while with Gen. Taylor on the Rio Grande, he was appointed brigadier-general. The Democratic party, in appreciation of his patriotism, themselves helpless and hopeless, made him their candidate for governor, which was all they could do. After that, so long as he remained in politics, Gen. Cushing acted with that party. The parties had changed by the incoming of the Anti-Slavery issue, and the Whig party had really passed away.

In 1850, for the sixth time, he was a member of the Legislature, from the town of Newbury; but, by the annexation of a portion of that town, he again became a citizen of Newburyport, and, on its being incorporated as a city, he was elected its first mayor, without opposition. Two years later, in 1852, he was appointed to the supreme bench by Gov. Boutwell, and carried to its duties the same vigor which always marked his action. In 1853, he was made attorney-general in the cabinet of President Pierce; which was, perhaps,

the strongest cabinet the country ever had, himself second to no man in it, and it remained unbroken to 1857. This was the period of Mr. Cushing's greatest power; physically and mentally he was in the perfection of his manhood. The government was perplexed by many questions, upon which he gave written opinions, which covered more ground than those of any of his predecessors or successors, and constitute three of the twenty-one volumes of the printed opinions of the attorney-generals of the United States. In administrative action, these opinions have stood as law ever since.

Mr. Cushing returned home, again to be elected to the Legislatures of 1857, 1858, and 1859; making in all nine elections to the General Court between 1825 and 1860. It has been the rule of his life, not to accept a place the duties of which he could not perform, or to decline one, to which the people elected him, if in his power to accept. Especially has he held himself subject to the call of his townsmen, even when obliged to defer what was apparently more important to himself; but it has been noticeable that in returning near to the people, he has ever gathered strength for higher action.

In 1860, he was president of the National Democratic convention at Charleston, S. C.; and, though he was the favorite of that body, he returned dispirited and melancholy at the rupture in its ranks, portending the rupture of the Union, and the distraction and fraternal blood to follow. This was indicated in his addresses and letters; they were full of forebodings and warnings. He fully understood the situation and proclaimed the results. Most freely did he unbosom himself to his own townsmen and neighbors, in a speech running through two hours of three successive days, which has passed into the history of that crisis, and now reads almost as prophecy. It was delivered, not in passion, but in the deepest sorrow; for most earnestly sought he to have that cup pass from the Republic. But soon afterwards, at the request of President Buchanan, he proceeded to Charleston for the purpose of endeavoring to prevent the secession of South Carolina, and arrived there to find that her act of secession had been passed on the same day by the Assembly in Charleston.

War breaking out, he hastened to Massachusetts, to which first he owed fealty, and at once tendered his services to Gov. Andrew; but they were declined for political reasons. From that date Mr. Cushing ceased to be a partisan. It was his whole country he loved; and all parties he would serve. He retired from the rostrum to the forum; from politics to law. His time and his talents he had given to the public service; his very life he had staked in the war with Mexico, and offered to do so again for the flag and the Union. He had not aggrandized himself; he retired from politics poorer than he had entered; and no one of his family or personal friends, in all the long years of his public career, had been enriched by place or contract. Now his clients called, and he at once entered upon a very large and lucrative practice, which has continued to this day. Chiefly his winters have been spent in Washington, in consequence of President Lincoln having invited him to go there to take charge of the British and American commission on the claims of the Hudson Bay Company. So it happened that for a series of years, under the successive administrations of Lincoln, Johnson, and Grant, he was engaged more or less in the legal and diplomatic business of the government. Thus he was employed in a diplomatic mission to Bogata, in the United States of Colombia; also as counsel before the American and Mexican mixed commission, the Spanish American commission, and the tribunal of arbitration at Geneva, in execution of the Washington Treaty, which has peculiar significance and importance as showing how international disputes can be settled without blood. His familiar acquaintance with the languages, laws, literature and politics of Europe, especially fitted him for these duties. Later, most honorable to him was the endeavor of President Grant to make him chief justice of the Federal Supreme Court, when he had already passed the age when the judges may retire under the law. His next and last appointment was minister to Spain, when complicated questions were pending. Having performed the duties of that mission to the entire satisfaction of our own and the Spanish government, he requested a recall and returned to his home — to the friends of his youth and his manhood.

Personally, Mr. Cushing is well-formed, athletic and vigorous, to the present, showing few signs of age; younger he was an exceedingly handsome man. With a finely-cut profile, black hair, and black eyes, he would be noticed in any assemblage as no ordinary person. In religion he has followed his fathers in the orthodoxy of Protestantism; and morally he has kept himself above reproach. Never a whisper has been breathed against his integrity. Those who have known him best have most respected him; those most intimate have most loved him; and, without son or daughter to survive him, he will leave a record unsullied and honorable — a legacy to the town which is his home.

William Lloyd Garrison, the Liberator, is a son of Newburyport, with a biography unwritten, which posterity will delight to read. He had no family back of him to be remembered. His parents were poor immigrants, drifting from the British Provinces; and he was born in the house on School Street nearest the Old South Church. On one side was the pulpit beneath which George Whitefield, the famous revivalist, and Jonathan Parsons, the patriot pastor, were sleeping; on the other side, the house in which Whitefield died; and in front the school-house—the elevator of the races. No unfit place for such a man as Garrison first to see the light.

When, however, anybody conceives of Mr. Garrison as the first Abolitionist, they mistake: he was only the first man who devoted his life to that cause, as Luther was the first to successfully organize the Protestants against the Catholic Church. Slavery had existed originally in all the States, as is witnessed in the wills and sales and records of the early times; in the graveyards, where headstones attest the fact, as on Burying Hill, one reads: "To Pompey, the faithful servant; erected by Tristram Dalton"; and the census of 1755 returned fifty slaves, negroes and Indians, thirty-four males and sixteen females, in the town of Newbury. The evil of chattelism did not pass unnoticed and unrebuked; and very singularly there appear to have been more Abolitionists in Newbury than anywhere else. The first pamphlet against slavery was by Judge Sewall of Newbury. The first discussion of the legality of slavery, before any learned body, was at Harvard College, by two Newbury students, Theodore Parsons and Eliphalet Pearson. The first slave recovering damages from his master was Cæsar, of Richard Greenleaf, in Newburyport, whose suit was brought by John Lowell, afterwards Judge, and £18 with costs obtained. The first newspaper discussion of the question in this country was between the Rev. Moses Parsons, of Byfield, and his deacon, Benjamin Colman, who was a thorough and immediate Abolitionist, and was suspended from the church for calling his pastor a manthief. When slavery was abolished in Massachusetts, it was done by Judge John Lowell, who, at the convention to form a constitution, inserted the declaration of equality in the bill of rights, as he declared for that express purpose. When its entire abolition was needed, William Lloyd Garrison appeared; and when the New England Anti-Slavery Society was formed, three of its twelve members were natives of this "old Newbury." It was in this very town that the battle against slavery commenced, and by her sons that it was carried on to final victory. None the less honor to Mr. Garrison, who nobly contended, that others had been in the same contest.

In 1805, William Lloyd Garrison was born, with his heritage in brains, not gold. A hard boyhood had he, if such a lad, depending upon himself from the start, ever knows a boyhood; brief and poor his schooling to his thirteenth year, when he was apprenticed at the office of the "Herald" newspaper, where his career was so marked by industry, study, readiness in his type-setting and in writing for the press, that his master, at his majority, was willing to aid him in the establishment of the "Free Press," of which he became editor. From the first, as ever since, his writings showed good taste, a judicious choice of language, vigor of mind, and a brilliant imagination. His prose is classic; his poetry, beautiful; and both are ever in sympathy with truth, freedom, and right. His earliest papers were over the signature "Aristides," and the ancient Greek was undoubtedly his youthful model. It was with that character before his mind that the boy felt his way towards the position he eventually reached, where the justice of his cause was universally acknowledged.

At twenty-one, Mr. Garrison commenced journalism in this town, and his effort failed. Afterwards he was at Boston, Bennington, Vt., and Baltimore. He advocated temperance, when everybody drank spirituous liquors; peace, when the heroes of two wars filled the streets; and anti-slavery, when nowhere was the colored man, by the law, the gospel, or the usages of society, the equal of the white man: and it is not surprising that he was a failure; scarcely yet might such a one succeed. In Baltimore, he attacked Francis Todd, a wealthy Newburyport citizen, for allowing his ship to carry slaves to New Orleans for sale: and the courts adjudged him guilty of libel, and sentenced him to fine and costs, for which he went to jail; and civilly in personal damages, to pay one thousand dollars, which execution Mr. Todd never attempted to enforce. His fines and costs were paid by Arthur Tappan, of New York; and so he regained his liberty just as Henry Clay, a slave-holding congressman from Kentucky, had arranged to donate the money. Daniel Webster also sympathized with Mr. Garrison, regarding the verdict as an infraction of the liberty of the press.

Returning to Boston, Mr. Garrison, aided by Isaac Knapp of this town, a practical printer, in 1831, established the "Liberator" newspaper, which he continued as long as there was a slave in the United States. For two years, one room served them for dining-hall, bedroom, and printing office; and their only assistant was a negro boy. Garrison's life was threatened; the governor of Georgia offered a reward of five thousand dollars, on his conviction in that State, tempting his kidnapping; and Church and State denounced him. In 1832, the New England Anti-Slavery Society was formed, Garrison, Knapp, Joshua Coffin, and John G. Whittier, being one-third of its members,—all in this immediate vicinity. Soon after, Mr. Garrison visited England, where Wilberforce and Brougham welcomed him, and George Thompson, afterwards member of Parliament, came over to assist in the battle for freedom. The struggle waxed hot; mob after mob rioted; buildings were burned; men whipped and branded, imprisoned and put to death: but constantly the cause gained. Garrison over all the tumult shouted, "I will not retreat a single inch, and I will be heard." Finally, in 1861, came the storm of war, when, as John Quincy Adams had predicted, the shackles were knocked from four millions of colored people as a war measure. Then all eyes turned to him who in the cause of emancipation had won immortal honors; and that name Liberator, which yesterday was despised, received the applause of the country and the world. The towns which had mobbed him invited him to receptions; the churches which had barred him out threw open their gates to let him in; Newburyport, which had obliged him to speak out-doors, held jubilee for her son; Boston, which had sent him to an infidel club-room, ran out to meet him; Philadelphia, which burned the roof over his head, besought him with extended arms to come back; Washington, with President, Cabinet, and Congress, wove garlands for his crowning; England invited him to her shores, and ran down into the ocean surf to greet his landing: and who most had opposed, fastest hastened to contribute to the grand contribution of many thousands, as a testimonial for what he had done for mankind. Now, past his threescore and ten, he reposes on his laurels; and the story of what he did and dared for those in bonds, as bound with them, will be repeated to all generations, till earth has no slave and humanity is free.

William Bartlet we take from many as the representative of the Newburyport merchants. He was born in 1748 — half a generation before the town was incorporated — and lived to 1841, or ninety-three years, so that his life covered the whole duration of Newburyport to his death. A strong, sturdy man was he, serene of face, with a brow furrowed with years of thought and labor: he looked, as his fortune at that day seemed, unapproachable. He was of an old stock — from the Bartlets at the spring, near Moulton Hill, at the extreme west of the city, where the laurels grew and the great pines cast their shadows on the river. They are a square-headed, industrious, accumulating people, tanners and shoemakers originally; and he was one of the shoemakers; the lapstone was the foundation of a fortune which he pursued so eagerly that in his boyhood he ran from the shop to his meals that no time might go to waste, and worked extra hours that his accumulation might begin before his majority. At twenty-one he invested his small savings in a vessel just starting on a prosperous voyage. Fortune smiled upon her favorite son in his early morning. He was one of the seventeen men who, in 1776, captured the English ship "Friends," off the bar, — a whole boat's crew under Capt. Offin Boardman, receiving $1,000 as his prize money, material aid for his mercantile venture.

But, though William Bartlet was very saving and careful, he was not small or mean. There was a nobility to his conceptions, his financial operations, and also to his donations. His operations were on a large scale. There was no timidity of action. When he had formed an opinion and would risk at all, he was ready to invest twice as much as anybody else; and when he would give he would head the list. He wanted to know that everything was fast and strong and sure; for that was his nature — he was so himself; but his commercial transactions were as broad as the oceans which his ships sailed; with Europe, North and South, from Sweden and Russia down to Naples and Sicily; with the Indies, East and West; with America, on all its shores. We call to mind his voyages, when he piled up a million pounds of coffee at Antwerp at once; when he ran shipload upon shipload of tallow from the Baltic to the Thames; when hemp and iron and pepper and sugar, filled the warehouses upon his wharf till they would hold no more; and so he went on, in the main prospering, till his wealth must have reached a million and more, at a period when few other men in Massachusetts were valued so much, and it is doubtful if at that time a large fortune was possessed by Girard at Philadelphia; and John Jacob Astor at New York could show no more, for there were few millionaires in the last century.

Mr. Bartlet not only accumulated money, but he encouraged everybody else to do it. He never threw one cent away; he never expended a dollar for what was useless; and he would not assist the idle, dissipated, or extravagant. He detested all such. It was the real man he wanted — one who could think and do, and dare and save; and such never asked employment or help in vain. Even when they failed, if he had faith in them, they could depend upon him to try again; and many were the men uplifted by his strong hand.

Nor was it to maritime affairs that he confined himself. He was in advance of his day in manufactures. It was he who started the first woollen and the first cotton mill at Byfield; it was he who encouraged the small manufactures when machinery was scarce and steam-power unused; and later his was the enterprise which built our cotton factories. He looked up the river to inquire why its channel should be choked; he looked out upon the sea to suggest the path of commerce; and whatever would assist the town he cheerfully aided.

In his politics, Mr. Bartlet was a Hamilton Federalist, firm, set, and determined; and in his religion he was Orthodox, rigidly so. He contributed liberally to the churches, and to the religious movements of the day. He heard Whitefield preach, and for the good it did him raised the marble cenotaph now in the Old South to his memory. He contributed to the founding of the Andover Seminary, and ever after answered all calls for help. The trustees reported that he was "its most generous and long-continued benefactor." Possibly it might have been said, that he "gave more than they all." His donations were large, and his benefactions many; and to his children and grandchildren he left more than any other citizen. He was great in his business, just in his action, generous where he thought the person or the cause deserving. The good he did lives after him.

Jacob Perkins, born in Newburyport in 1766, without many opportunities for instruction, apprenticed to a goldsmith at twelve, was the best mechanic and greatest inventor of his day. His fame and his works became European as much as American. In England he was called the "American Inventor." When only twenty-one he was employed by the United States government in the minting of copper coin when die-making was a new art, when experienced mechanics had failed to do it. At twenty-four he invented his machine for cutting and heading nails by a single operation, the importance of which it is easy to conceive. This led to business operations in nail-making, which, instead of yielding a fortune, reduced him to bankruptcy and poverty. Shortly after, he invented a check-plate to prevent the counterfeiting of bank-bills, which was a perfect success. The Legislature by law made Perkins's stereotype plate the only legal plate on which bank-bills could be printed for this Commonwealth; and while other States suffered from counterfeiting, this State was entirely exempt from that evil. He was employed by the United States Bank and by the Bank of England, and did much work for France. This was the most remunerative of all his inventions.

The most valuable of his discoveries was the compressibility of water, which led to the invention of the *bathometer*, an instrument for measuring the depth of water; and the *pleometer*, to give the velocity of a vessel through the water. Very many were the inventions and improvements which came from his fruitful brain.

Mr. Perkins left town for a residence in Philadelphia in 1816; that being the best field for his operations on this continent, and especially on account of his work on bank-bill plates; and from that he went to London, seeking a still broader field. He died in London in 1849, at the age of eighty-four. He never enriched himself by the fruits of his labors. Others reaped the fields that he ploughed and sowed. His mission was to invent, not to accumulate. His residence here was on Fruit Street; and the building where he spent wearisome days in toil is still standing. His long life, however, was happy to himself as well as useful to others; for it filled the measure of his happiness, as every new invention brought a joyful sense of triumph.

NORTH ANDOVER.

The territory now within the limits of North Andover was the first-settled portion of the old town of Andover previous to April 7, 1855, and was known as the "North Parish" of Andover. It was incorporated as a town on that date, with the bounds fixed by the General Court, as follows: —

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:

SECTION 1. All that part of the town of Andover, in the County of Essex, which lies northerly and easterly of the following line, viz.: Beginning on the easterly bank of the Shawsheen River, at a stake at the bend in said river, a few rods westerly of the bridge, where it is crossed by the Salem turnpike; thence southerly, on the line dividing the North and South parishes of said Andover, to a stake and stones by the road, and near the house of Benjamin Rogers; thence southerly, on the said parish line, to a stake and stones at the point where the said parish line crosses the Salem road, east of the house of widow Betsy Jenkins; thence across said Salem road, on said parish line, to the town line of North Reading, — is hereby incorporated into a separate town by the name of North Andover. And the inhabitants of said town of North Andover are hereby invested with all the powers and privileges, and shall be subject to all the duties and requisitions, to which other towns are entitled and subjected by the constitution and laws of this Commonwealth. [*Approved by the Governor, April 7*, 1855.

It is a long and narrow town, about seven miles long and three miles wide, and is bounded as follows: On the north-east, by Bradford and Boxford; on the south-east, by Middleton and North Reading; on the south-west, by Andover; on the north-west, by the Shawsheen and the Merrimac rivers, which separate it from Lawrence and Methuen; and it contains about 15,394 acres of land, much the larger portion of which is divided into farms, which are well cultivated, the soil for the most part being very fertile.

Any one who wishes to view the beauties of nature in its best forms needs to visit the heights of this village on a fine summer afternoon, and then he will find that what an eminent traveller said of the same, in 1810, is true of to-day. Dr. Dwight writes thus: "North Andover is a beautiful piece of ground. Its surface is gently undulating, and its soil in an eminent degree fertile. The meadows are numerous, large, and of the first quality. The groves, charmingly interspersed, are tall and thrifty. The landscape everywhere varied, neat, and cheerful, is also everywhere rich."

"Upon the whole, Andover is one of the best farming towns in Eastern Massachusetts."

The town is well watered by the "Great Pond," or "Lake Cochicewick," in the north-east part of the town, a large and clear basin of fresh water, containing about 650 acres, whose waters flow through a brook of the same name, supplying the mills with power, and passing out into the Merrimac. This pond is well stocked with fish; and several years since, previous to the mill obstructions, alewives were taken in large quantities, and supplied large numbers of the inhabitants, and also furnished a revenue to the town.

The Merrimac borders on the north-west boundary; also the Shawsheen on the west line, between this town and Lawrence, whose waters empty into the Merrimac, about a mile below the old "Andover Bridge," and about sixty rods above the mouth of the "Cochicewick."

"Rose Meadow Brook," a small brook in Pond District, flows northerly into Great Pond, near the mouth of which is a saw-mill. All of these streams flow to the north, and are tributaries to the winding Merrimac, through which their waters pass to the ocean.

"Boston Brook" is a considerable stream, in the south part of the town, passing through Middleton and Topsfield, emptying into Ipswich River, and so on to the ocean.

"Musquito Brook," or "Fish Brook," is situated in the easterly part of the town, and flows through Boxford.

The town is divided into six school districts. The most northerly is "River District," bordering on the Merrimac; next is "Merrimac District," including the mills known as "Sutton's Mills"; then the "Centre District," including the village. To the east of the Centre is "Pond District"; south of Pond District is "Kimball District"; south of the Centre District, and in the south part of the town, is "Farnham District." There are fourteen good public schools in these several localities, including the "High School," which is kept in a new and elegant building, erected in 1867.

There is also a Public Library in the town, containing about 2,000 volumes, having a yearly circulation of 27,000, besides a library connected with each of the churches in the village, containing about 2,000 volumes, and having a yearly circulation of about 10,000.

It has four churches, the "Evangelical Church of North Andover"; one Unitarian, known as the "First Church"; one Methodist Episcopal church, and one Roman Catholic church.

The public buildings are good. The new and elegant High School Building, used for the purpose of a high school, as well as for town-meetings, cost nearly $25,000, $10,000 of which was given by Col. Theron Johnson, for whom the school is named, and $5,000 given by Moses T. Stevens, Esq., in honor of whom the large hall was named "Stevens Hall." On the top of this building, which is built of brick, is a tower, in which is a clock, that may be seen for a long distance. There is also a large brick building for the grammar school near the Sutton's Mill village, as well as several smaller ones in the town.

There is also one steam fire-engine near these works, called the "Eben Sutton Steam Fire-Engine." At the centre is a hand-engine, called "Cochicewick."

The Boston and Maine Railroad accommodates the northerly portion of the town. The Essex Branch of the Eastern Railroad passes through the eastern and northern portion, and has several stations along the line within its limits.

There are two post-offices — one at the Centre Village, the other at North Andover Depot. Horse cars connect the village of Methuen and the mills at the north portion of the town, passing through the city of Lawrence every half hour.

Franklin Academy. — Several years since there stood a neat building, erected by subscription, near the residence of the late Mr. Nathaniel Stevens, which was devoted to school purposes, the origin of which may be seen in the following Act of incorporation: —

An Act directing the use and appropriation of part of the money arising from the sale of the common and other lands of the proprietors of the town of Andover, and for other purposes therein named.

Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives, in General Court assembled, and by the authority of the same, as follows:

That the Treasurer of the Proprietors of the Township of Andover, and his successor in said office, shall pay over and deliver one-half of all the monies and estates which now is, or hereafter may be, in his hands as such Treasurer, unto the Rev. William Symmes, the Rev. Dr. Thomas Barnard, Nathaniel Lovejoy, Esq., Dr. Thomas Kittridge, Rev. Peter Eaton, Isaac Osgood, Esq., Dr. George Osgood, Dea. John Adams, Dea. Benjamin Farnum, Mr. Ebenezer Stevens, who are hereby appointed and constituted trustees thereof, and whose duty it shall be, and they are hereby authorized to lay out, expend, and appropriate the income and interest thereof, to the instruction of youth of both sexes, in reading, writing, and arithmetic, in the Free School, which is already established and erected in the North Parish of said Andover, in such manner as the said Trustees may think most conducive to the public good. [*June* 18, 1801.

On the twenty-first day of June, 1803, the Legislature changed the name of the free school to "Franklin Academy." The school was conducted with success. In 1827 the female department was removed to another building. The classical school was first taught by Mr. Simeon Putnam, and was deservedly popular, and had a reputation for thorough instruction and moral discipline. The Rev. Cyrus Pierce became associated with Mr. Putnam, and its reputation was of the highest order. The school, after several changes in the teachers, was abandoned several years since, and the building was removed to the old "Bradstreet" farm, and is now devoted to other purposes.

Statistical. — According to the census of 1875, there were in the town 108 farms, 308 farm-houses, and 160 farmers. The present population is 2,981, of whom 1,463 are males, and 1,518 are females, all divided into 648 families, occupying 574 houses. The valuation of the town in 1877 was $2,095,494: real estate $1,522,924, personal estate $572,570, rate of taxation twelve dollars per thousand.

Population of the town at different dates: 1855, 2,218; 1860, 2,343; 1865, 2,622; 1870, 2,549; 1875, 2,981.

Ecclesiastical and Parochial. — Church worship, in the original town of Andover, was commenced at the village now known as North Andover; it being then the north part of the old town, and quite near the first settlement. A meeting-house was built near the old

burying-ground, and a minister was settled as early as 1645. From that time till 1709, people came from every section of the town to attend worship, and were a harmonious, peaceable, and prosperous community. In the year 1707, the subject of a new and larger building was discussed. When the location was to be decided upon, the people were much divided, and, not being able to agree among themselves, an application to the General Court was made to decide for them. This resulted in the formation of a new society in the south part of the town, who erected a house of worship, and have been successful. The original society continued to prosper, and in the year 1711 built a new meeting-house near where the present one stands. Of the first building but little information can be found.

The North Parish voted October, 1710, "To build a new meeting-house fifty feet long, forty-five feet wide, and twenty-four feet between joints."

In the latter part of the year 1711, the building was completed and occupied.

Oct. 17, 1752, the parish voted to build a new meeting-house and raise £400. In June, 1753, the house was raised, and in October following £300 more were raised towards the meeting-house. The pews were sold Jan. 1, 1754, for £667 15*s.* 8*d.* Hon. William Phillips, of Boston, gave them a bell for the new church in March, 1755.

March 9, 1797, "Voted to build a *hearse*." It was built by Mr. Bott, of Salem, said to have been the first in the county, if not in the State.

In 1807, the bell broke, and a new one was purchased weighing 1,200 pounds.

April 14, 1817, "The parish voted to purchase of Mr. Jonathan Stevens one and one-quarter acres of land for a burying-ground."

March, 1822, "Voted that the Parish Committee put stoves in the meeting-house."

The following gifts to the church have been made by different persons. Benjamin Stevens, Esq., gave one silver tankard; in 1740, Mrs. Mary Aslebee gave a tankard; Timothy Osgood, Ebenezer Osgood, and a widow gave each a silver tankard; and Mrs. Elizabeth Abbott gave one by her will; in 1761, Capt. Timothy Johnson gave a tankard; in 1765, Benjamin Barker gave a silver flagon; in 1801, Capt. Peter Osgood gave a silver flagon.

In 1790, Mrs. Catherine Powell, wife of William Powell, Esq., of Boston, presented a Bible for the use of the pulpit; in 1755, Capt. Nathaniel Frye presented a bell to the parish; and 1761, Mr. Benjamin Barker gave a clock for the new meeting-house.

The present church was erected in 1835, and cost about $11,000, and is the only church in the centre village of the town.

In contrasting the condition of things as they existed in the early settlement with the present neat and quiet community at the village of to-day, one can hardly imagine the change that has taken place. At that day there were friendly Indians residing in their midst, with whom they had no difficulty. But up and down the country there were roaming savages, enough to keep the settlers ever on their guard and the fathers wide awake. It was not till after the war of King Philip that they experienced much trouble. Then it became necessary to fortify their homes, and erect garrison-houses for their protection. The farmers took their firearms into their fields when at work, and also to and from the church. Sentinels were placed at the doors during the services, and the men sat near the same, ready for any sudden alarm. The history of those days is well described in McFingal's lines: —

> "For once, for fear of Indian beating,
> Our grandsires bore their guns to meeting;
> Each man equipped, on Sunday morn,
> With psalm-book, shot, and powder-horn;
> And looked in form, as all must grant,
> Like the ancient true church militant;
> Or fierce, like modern deep divines,
> Who fight with quills, like porcupines."

The Evangelical Church of North Andover was organized, Sept. 3, 1834, and consisted of thirty-one members; seven males, and twenty-four females. The first house of worship was dedicated on the day of organization.

The services at the dedication were as follows: sermon by the Rev. Warren Fay, D. D., of Charlestown; dedicatory prayer by the Rev. Thomas H. Skinner, D. D., LL. D., of Andover Theological Seminary. The Rev. Milton Badger, of Andover, gave the Fellowship of the Churches.

In 1839, the meeting-house was enlarged to make room for twenty-eight pews, which, with those originally built, furnished seats for 350 persons. The church was at first very small and feeble, and was assisted by the Home Missionary Society, till about the year 1841 it became self-sustaining, and contributed liberally to benevolent objects.

The first pastor was the Rev. Jesse Page, a graduate of Dartmouth College, 1831 (Andover Theological Seminary, 1835); ordained pastor of Evangelical Church at North Andover, Sept. 9, 1835; dismissed June 7, 1843. From there he removed to Atkinson, N. H., and became a stated supply in 1843.

The pulpit was supplied by the Rev. J. S. Young, the Rev. Homer Barrows, and the Rev. Calvin C. Park, up to Oct. 20, 1845. Then followed the installation of the Rev. William T. Briggs, who was the second pastor, a graduate of Oberlin Institute, 1844, and Theological Department of the same institution, 1844–45; licensed by the Andover Theological Seminary in 1846; ordained pastor of the church at North Andover, Nov. 4, 1846; dismissed, May 1, 1855; installed at Princeton, Mass., 1856; at East Douglas, Mass., March 21, 1866.

The next pastor was the Rev. Levi Henry Cobb, son of Levi and Calista S. (Bugbee) Cobb, born at Cornish, Vt., June 30, 1827. Graduated at Dartmouth College, 1854 (Andover Theological Seminary, 1857); ordained at North Andover, Oct. 28, 1857; dismissed, Oct. 3, 1864; superintendent of schools at Memphis, Tenn., 1864–65; Instructor of Natural Sciences and Latin in Kimball Union Academy, Meriden, N. H., 1865–67; installed pastor at Springfield, Vt., May 2, 1867; dismissed, May 3, 1874, and now superintendent of Home Missions at Minneapolis, Minn.

The Rev. Benjamin Franklin Hamilton was the fourth pastor. Graduate of Amherst College, 1861 (Andover Theological Seminary, 1864); ordained at North Andover, June 28, 1865; dismissed, Sept. 13, 1871, and was installed colleague pastor with the Rev. A. C. Thompson, D. D., at Boston Highlands, Nov. 9, 1871.

The Rev. Rufus Cushman Flagg was the next pastor, a graduate of Middlebury College, Vt. (Andover Theological Seminary); installed pastor at North Andover, Sept. 26, 1872; dismissed, Oct. 31, 1877; commenced preaching at Westford, Mass., Nov. 18, 1877.

The Rev. George Pierce, the present pastor, was born in Marblehead, Mass., Sept. 20, 1833; fitted for college at Topsfield Academy, 1854–55; entered Dartmouth College, 1856; graduating in 1860; entered Andover Theological Seminary the same year, and graduated in 1863; ordained pastor of the Central Congregational Church in Dracut, Mass., Oct. 14, 1863; dismissed, May 6, 1867; installed at Paterson, N. J., June 5, 1867; dismissed, June 5, 1872; installed at Milford, N. H., Oct. 29, 1872; dismissed, July 23, 1878; installed pastor over the Evangelical Church, North Andover, Oct. 16, 1878. The installation services were held at two o'clock, P. M., as follows: Invocation by the Rev. George F. Wright, of Andover. Reading of the Scriptures by the Rev. Fred. Alvord, of Nashua, N. H. Prayer by the Rev. George H. Ide, of Lawrence, followed by Congregational singing. The sermon was preached by the Rev. G. R. Leavitt, of Cambridgeport, from Mic. ii. 13. The Rev. Charles Wetherby, of Nashua, offered the installing prayer; and then an anthem. The Rev. John Williams, of Marblehead, gave the charge to the pastor, having for his text 1 Tim. iv. 16. The right hand of fellowship was extended by the Rev. John H. Barrows, of Lawrence, the Rev. C. D. Barrows, of Lowell, giving the charge to the people. The concluding prayer was offered by the Rev. James H. Merrill, of the West Parish, Andover; then followed singing by the congregation, closing with benediction by the pastor.

The present church edifice is built of wood, in imitation of freestone, with a spire 160 feet from the ground. On entering the building we find on the first floor a large vestry, with two smaller rooms so constructed as to be made into one large room, for large assemblies. There is also a pastor's room adjoining, and rooms to be used for a kitchen, &c., for social gatherings. Ascending from the main entrance, on either side, stairs of easy grade, we find ourselves in a hallway, leading either to the galleries or to the auditory. Here are situated 102 circular pews, neatly upholstered and cushioned, with black walnut trimmings. There are twenty more pews in the gallery, besides an organ, valued at $2,500, the gift to the society of Mrs. Harriet K. Davis. On the front of the gallery is a marble clock, directly opposite the pulpit, to mark the passing moments as they fly. The interior aspect of the house is exceedingly fine: the spacious floor, well-arranged slips, all uniform; the small and neat black walnut pulpit, upon a semi-circular platform slightly elevated from the floor; with the finely frescoed walls and ceiling; with the beautiful stained-glass windows, —are in perfect harmony with each other, and their design and uses; and are well wrought, without a glaring effect. The design of this edifice is of the romanesque style, by John Stevens, of Boston. The

organ was built by E. & G. G. Hook, of Roxbury. The bell is from the foundry of Henry N. Hooper & Co., of Boston. The cost of the church, exclusive of the land, is about $30,000, paid by subscription; $20,000 of which was generously contributed by the firm of Davis & Furbur, who also gave the large and airy lot upon which the building stands, and erected the fence surrounding the entire grounds, at an expense of $1,100 more.

The contributions of the above gentlemen were as follows: Dea. George L. Davis, $10,000; John A. Wiley, $5,000; and Joseph M. Stone, $5,000.

The church was also the recipient of a valuable silver communion service, the gift of Miss Lavinia Farnham.

The present number of church members is 227. The Sabbath school was organized Sept. 7, 1834, and now numbers 270 members.

The following is a list of the deacons of the church from its organization: Jesse Pierce, elected May 4, 1837; died April 10, 1842. Aaron Henry, May 4, 1837, to Nov. 9, 1845. Jedediah Farnham, July 1, 1841; died Dec. 23, 1853. Albert Hervey, March 4, 1847; died April 18, 1852. Ralph H. Chandler, Aug. 30, 1850, to May 1, 1857; died Aug. 27, 1861. Stephen H. Parker, Nov. 4, 1852; died ——. George L. Davis, Nov. 19, 1857. Ezra Clark, Joseph H. Stone, November, 1868, and John F. Kimball, are the present deacons.

The First Methodist Episcopal Church was commenced in 1845. Meetings were first held in the centre school-house. Preaching by the Rev. Stephen G. Hiler, who supplied the pulpit for three months. During that time the congregation increased from twenty to one hundred and fifty members. At the expiration of that time, Mr. Hiler was engaged for one year. A class was formed during the first year, and the following year a church was organized, with nineteen members, who worshipped in the school-house till October, 1849. A new house was erected in the fall and winter of that year, and was dedicated to the worship of God, March 6, 1850. The exercises on that occasion were: Prayer by the Rev. J. Shepard, of East Cambridge; Sermon by the Rev. J. D. Bridge, of Boston. On the Saturday following the dedication, the pews were sold for enough to pay for the building, within three hundred dollars. It is a neat, commodious church, and contains sittings for four hundred and fifty persons.

The following is a list of the pastors of the church since its organization:—

The Rev. Stephen G. Hiler, August, 1845, to August, 1846; the Rev. James Dean, August, 1846, to November, 1847; the Rev. William Pentecost, November, 1847, to April, 1850; the Rev. T. S. Cook, April, 1850, to May, 1851; the Rev. Ichabod Marcy, April, 1851, to April, 1853; the Rev. John C. Smith, April, 1853, to April, 1855; the Rev. William F. Lacount, April, 1855, to April, 1857; the Rev. Nathan A. Soule, April, 1857, to April, 1858; the Rev. Rodney Gage, April, 1858, to April, 1860; the Rev. George Southerland, April, 1860, to April, 1862; the Rev. William M. Hubbard, April, 1862, to April, 1863; the Rev. John Middleton, April, 1863, to April, 1864; the Rev. George E. Chapman, April, 1864, to April, 1866; the Rev. Nathaniel Bemis, April, 1866, to April, 1868; the Rev. John S. Day, April, 1868, to April, 1871; the Rev. Linus Fish, April, 1871, to April, 1873; the Rev. Joseph W. Lewis, April, 1873, to April, 1875; the Rev. Burtis Judd, April, 1875, to April, 1876; the Rev. William P. Blackmer, the present pastor, April, 1876.

St. Michael's Roman Catholic Church: Preaching was first commenced, in North Andover, in May, 1868, in Union Hall; and the corner-stone of a new church was laid, with appropriate ceremony, Oct. 11, 1868, which was dedicated November, 1869.

The first pastor was the Rev. Michael J. Doherty, of the Church of the Immaculate Conception, of Lawrence, who supplied the pulpit each Sabbath. The next pastor was the Rev. William Orr, also from the same church. The Rev. James Murphy is now pastor of the church at South Lawrence and North Andover.

Biographical History.—The Rev. John Woodbridge was born in Stanton, Wiltshire, England. He was son of the Rev. John Woodbridge, a non-conformist minister. Entered at Oxford University for an education; but, when the oath of conformity was required, he left, and pursued his studies privately. The ceremonies of the church being vigorously enforced, young Woodbridge, deeply imbued with the spirit of dissent, came to this country in 1634, in company with his uncle, the Rev. Thomas Parker, the well-known writer in favor of non-conformity. He first took up land at Newbury, and continued his studies till, on account of his father's death, he returned to England. Having finished the business for which he went to England, he returned to this country, bringing with him two brothers, one of whom died on the passage. In 1641, he married Merey, daughter of Gov. Thomas and Dorothy Dudley, by whom he had twelve children, among whom were three sons in the ministry: John, at Killingworth and Wethersfield, Conn.; Benjamin, who died at Medford, Mass.; Timothy, who died at Hartford, Conn. Mr. Woodbridge was ordained as pastor of the "First Church," in Andover, October, 1645, being the first in the county, and second in New England. He continued to preach at this place till 1647, when he was solicited by his friends to return to England, where he was engaged as chaplain to the commissioners treating with the king at the Isle of Wight. Also for a while he preached at Andover, England; afterwards at Burford, in Wiltshire, whence he was ejected soon after the restoration of Charles II., and was also engaged in a school at Newbury, England, and was thrown out of it by the Bartholomew Act. In 1663, he returned to New England, and soon after settled as an assistant to his aged uncle, the Rev. Thomas Parker, at Newbury, Mass. After several years, a difference arising on the subject of church discipline, he was induced to resign. He was a highly esteemed preacher, — so much that, in 1684, he was invited to supply the pulpit of the Rev. John Richardson, at Newbury.

In 1683, he was chosen an assistant, and after the change in the government, he was appointed justice of the peace. His wife, with whom he had lived fifty years, died in July, 1691. He died, March 17, 1695.

He sustained an excellent reputation, and his death was greatly lamented. He possessed a placid temper, and was a model of urbanity in all his intercourse. He had great command of his passions, and could control himself with dignified composure in scenes of extreme provocation, and evinced the utmost magnanimity in the forgiveness of injuries. He was in a great measure proof against the depressing influence of worldly disappointments. When, on a certain occasion, word was conveyed to him that he had suffered a great loss of property, he replied, "What a mercy it is that this is the first time that I have met with such a disaster!" He had been "remarkably blest in his private estate." Cotton Mather says of him, "He was a great reader, a great scholar, a great Christian, and a pattern of goodness in all the successive stations wherein the Lord of hosts had placed him."

The Rev. Benjamin Woodbridge, D. D., brother of the Rev. John, who came to Andover with him, was the first graduate at Harvard College, and became the successor of the famous Dr. Twisse, of Newbury, England. He died November, 1684, aged 62.

The Rev. Francis Dane was the second pastor of the First Church, who came to this country from England in 1646, and to Andover about 1648. He received his theological education in this country. He was a useful and respected man, and peace attended his ministrations, and the cause of religion prospered during his residence in the town. "His salary was small and was paid in Indian corn and Wheat one half each, at current price." During the time of the delusion in 1692, it is said he expressed his sympathy and used his exertions for the relief of those of his parishioners who were imprisoned, by writing to the court, and signing a certificate in their favor. At the precise time of his closing his ministerial labors we have no dates, although we find he had a colleague in 1682. He died Feb. 17, 1697, aged 82, having been connected with the church forty-eight years. He left two sons, Nathaniel and Francis.

The Rev. Thomas Barnard, the third pastor, was the son of Francis Barnard, of Hadley. Graduated at Harvard College, 1679. In January, 1682, he was invited to settle as colleague with Mr. Dane in the ministry. The parsonage-house having been burned about 1707, he purchased the Gov. Bradstreet house. It was during his ministry that the town was divided into two parishes, and, during all the long and warm altercation as to the location of the new meeting-house, he conducted with such prudence and affectionate fidelity as to retain the esteem and confidence of all his people. The Rev. Mr. Phillips, of the South Parish, says of him: "He was one of the best of men, and of ministers, an Israelite indeed, in whom was found no guile; he had the tongue of the learned, and was a sound and eminent divine; delivered excellent sermons, and had the spirit as well as the gift of prayer, was truly an able minister of the New Testament, and a faithful steward in the house of God. Naturally caring for his flock, he was therefore gentle as a father, yet maintaining government and discipline in the church, very compassionate to those in distress, and, like Saint Barnabas of old, was truly a son of consolation; obliging towards all men, and always studied the things that make for peace. He was singularly prudent in his whole conduct; also grave and instructive, and yet cheerful in conversation; kind and tender as a

husband and parent, and faithful as a friend; meek and quiet in spirit, and clothed with humility." Mr. Barnard has been reckoned among the eminent ministers of New England. He died suddenly, Oct. 13, 1718, in the sixty-second year of his age, and the thirty-seventh of his ministry.

The Rev. John Barnard, the fourth pastor of this church, was the son of the last-mentioned Rev. Thomas Barnard. Born Feb. 26, 1690; graduated at Harvard College, 1709. During several years he taught the grammar school at Andover and the North Grammar School in Boston. Immediately upon the death of his father he was thought of as his successor, and, Dec. 16, 1718, he was invited to settle with them as their gospel minister. He preached his first sermon as pastor January, 1719, and was ordained April 8th following. The services at his ordination were: Charge, by the Rev. Joseph Capen, of Topsfield; right hand of fellowship, by the Rev. Joseph Stevens, of Charlestown; sermon, by the Rev. Thomas Symmes, of Boxford; the Rev. Samuel Phillips, of Andover, and the Rev. John Rogers, of Boxford, assisted in the prayers. Mr. Barnard was a good classical scholar, and, after his settlement in the ministry, he prepared many for college who became good scholars and useful men. His piety, gentleness, and pleasantry, his faithfulness and assiduity in the discharge of ministerial duty, and the interest which he took in promoting the peace and improvement of his people, procured their love and confidence. As a preacher and counsellor in the churches, he was very highly respected. He lived in the most intimate relations with Mr. Phillips, of the South Parish, and they mutually contributed to the order, peace, and harmony of the town. The people of the North Parish enjoyed the preaching of the father and son for seventy years, and were exceedingly prosperous. Mr. Barnard died June 14, 1758, aged 68 years. He left two sons, the Rev. Thomas Barnard, of Salem, and the Rev. Edward Barnard, of Haverhill; and one daughter, Sarah, the wife of the Rev. Dr. John Tucker, of Newbury, Mass. Mr. Barnard published a sermon at the ordination of the Rev. Timothy Walker, of Concord, N. H.; funeral sermon on the death of Abiel Abbott, 1739; election sermon for 1746. He preached a convention sermon, 2 Cor. iv. 1.; not published. He succeeded his father in the occupancy of the Gov. Bradstreet house.

The Rev. William Symmes, D. D., the fifth pastor, was born in Charlestown, Mass.; graduated at Harvard College, 1750, where he was tutor from 1755 to 1758. Soon after the decease of the Rev. John Barnard, he commenced to preach in the North Parish, and, on the fifth day of December, 1757, he was invited to settle in the gospel ministry, and was ordained Nov. 1, 1758. The Rev. Nathaniel Appleton, of Cambridge, gave the charge; the Rev. Peter Clark, of Danvers, gave the right hand of fellowship; the Rev. Samuel Cooke, of West Cambridge, preached the sermon; the Rev. Joseph Parsons, of Bradford, and the Rev. Seth Storer, of Watertown, assisted in the prayers. The time in which he was settled at North Andover was while the French war was going on, which seriously affected the masses and depreciated the currency and embarrassed those who were dependent upon small salaries. Notwithstanding this, however, Mr. Symmes, with a noble mind, braved it through, and generously relinquished one thousand dollars of the amount due to him from the parish. During his ministry his people were remarkably united, and nothing but the most cordial friendship existed between himself and the Rev. Jonathan French, the minister of the South Parish. They exchanged labors regularly on every Sabbath, after the annual thanksgiving and fast days, and on other days; and a monthly lecture was kept up alternately in each parish, each supplying the other's pulpit. Dr. Symmes was a good scholar, of extensive reading, and an able divine. He devoted his whole time to his profession. His sermons were written with great care and in a style remarkably neat, perspicuous, and correct. His preaching was plain and practical. He was a strict observer of order and propriety. He was modest and diffident, hospitable and benevolent, and his urbanity rendered him very agreeable to strangers as well as to others. He was distinguished for his prudence and sound moral principles, his unshaken integrity and irreproachable conduct. In size, middling, and somewhat corpulent. When dressed, wore a white bush-wig, which was the fashion with clergymen of his day; in manners, dignified but easy.

He received the degree of doctor of divinity from his *alma mater*. He died May 3, 1807, the Rev. Dr. Henry Cummings, of Billerica, preaching the sermon at his funeral, from 2 Cor. v. 1. His printed publications were a "Lecture on Psalmody," "A Thanksgiving Sermon, 1768," and a sermon at the general election, 1785. He also preached the Dudleian Leeture, 1786, which was not published.

The Rev. Bailey Loring, the sixth pastor, was the son of William and Althea (Alden) Loring, of Duxbury, Mass. Born Dec. 10, 1786. Graduated at Brown University, 1807; studied theology with the Rev. Dr. John Allyn, of Duxbury; ordained at North Parish, Andover, Sept. 19, 1810, and resigned March 1, 1849, on account of ill health. He married, Feb. 20, 1816, Sally Pickman, only daughter of Isaac Osgood, Esq., of Andover. He died at North Andover, May, 1860. His children were:—

Hon. George Bailey Loring, born in North Andover Nov. 8, 1817; was fitted for college at Franklin Academy in that town; graduated at Harvard University in 1838; received the degree of M. D. at Harvard Medical College in 1842; was appointed surgeon of the Marine Hospital at Chelsea, Mass., in 1843; was surgeon of the Seventh Regiment, M. V. M., in 1842, 1843, and 1844; was appointed postmaster of Salem, Mass., in 1853; member of Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1866 and 1867; president of the Massachusetts Senate in 1873, 1874, 1875, and 1876; delegate to the Republican National Conventions of 1868, 1872, and 1876; was appointed United States centennial commissioner for Massachusetts in 1872; and was elected to the Forty-Fifth Congress as a Republican, and is now a member of that body. He married Mary Toppan Pickman, of Salem, who died at Salem, Dec. 1, 1878, leaving one daughter, Sally Pickman Loring. He resides at Salem.

Isaac Osgood Loring, born June 20, 1819; married, first, Ellen Maria King, daughter of Hon. Daniel P. King, of Danvers; second, Caroline W. King, sister to the first wife. He died Oct. 2, 1867.

Gayton Pickman Loring, born Nov. 22, 1822. Married Sarah Pickman King, daughter of Hon. Daniel P. King, of Danvers.

John Alden Loring, born Aug. 16, 1824, an attorney and counsellor-at-law. Resident of Boston.

The Rev. Francis C. Williams, the seventh pastor, graduated at Harvard College, 1843; ordained at North Andover, Feb. 27, 1850, and dismissed May 27, 1856, and settled at Hyde Park, Mass., 1869.

The Rev. Charles C. Vinal, the eighth pastor, graduated at Harvard College, 1852; ordained at North Andover, May 6, 1857; dismissed March, 1870, and settled at Kennebunk, Me., 1870.

The Rev. John Herbert Clifford, the present pastor, graduated at Cambridge Divinity School July 1871, and was ordained the same year.

Among the most prominent in the list of the early settlers in Andover is Simon Bradstreet. He was the son of a non-conformist minister, born in Horbling, Lincolnshire, England, March, 1603. His father died when he was at the age of fourteen years. He was then committed to the care of Hon. Thomas Dudley, passed one year at Emanuel College, Cambridge, and pursued his studies amid various interruptions. Leaving Cambridge, he soon after became steward in the family of the Earl of Lincoln, and afterwards occupied the same position in the family of the Countess of Warwick. After his marriage with Anne, daughter of Mr. Dudley, he engaged to assist in the formation of a settlement in Massachusetts. He was chosen Assistant of the Colony, March, 1630, and immediately embarked for America, March 29, 1630, and arrived at (Naumkeag) Salem June 12 of the same year. He was present at the first Court, held August 23, at Charlestown, and took part in the proceedings. In 1631 he commenced founding a settlement at Newtown (Cambridge), and was a prominent citizen of that town, and was one of the first board of selectmen, or townsmen, of that town. About the time of Hooker's departure to Hartford he removed to Ipswich, where he resided a short time. In 1639 the Court granted him five hundred acres of land, near Gov. Endicott's farm, in Salem. He was first secretary of the Colony, and discharged those duties for several years. He was also one of the first commissioners of the United Colonies, in 1643, and served for many years with fidelity and usefulness. In 1653 he vigorously and successfully opposed making war on the Dutch in New York and the Indians, though it was strongly urged by all the commissioners of the other Colonies. In 1662 he was sent as agent, with Mr. Norton, to congratulate Charles the Second on his restoration, and to act as agent for the Colony. He was elected deputy-governor in 1672, and continued in that office till 1679, when he was elected governor, which office he retained till the appointment of his nephew, Mr. Joseph Dudley, in 1686, when the charter was annulled. After the imprisonment of Andros, he was again appointed governor, in May, 1689, which position he held till the arrival of Sir William Phipps, in May, 1692, with a charter which deprived the people of the privilege of choosing their own chief magistrate. He was in the service of the government sixty-two years, except during the admin-

istrations of Dudley and Andros. Mr. Bradstreet removed to Andover as early as 1644, and was highly useful in building up the new settlement and giving direction to its affairs. He erected the first mill on the "Cochicewick." He was selectman of Andover from the first record of town officers to 1672, after which he spent much of his time at Salem and Boston.

Mr. Bradstreet was not distinguished for splendid and powerful talents, but for those abilities and qualifications which rendered him eminently useful. He was upright in his dealings and principles, of sound judgment, strict integrity, persevering in business, and sought usefulness rather than popularity. He was one of the fathers of the Massachusetts Colony, and contributed much to its establishment and prosperity. He was a man of fortitude, and suffered much, with the other early settlers, amid many privations and hardships, discouragements and disappointments. He died at Salem, March 27, 1697, aged ninety-four years.

Of his residence in Andover, it has been generally considered that the house in which Gov. Bradstreet resided is the one now standing at North Andover. Here follows a description of the old mansion: Not far from the site of the old first meeting-house is a large, old-fashioned house, the oldest in the town, said to have been built by the governor. It is certain that his son, Dudley Bradstreet, resided in it. The governor's house was destroyed by fire, July 10, 1666, and if the present house was built to supply the place of the first, Mrs. Bradstreet probably lived in the present house for several years, as she lived till Sept. 16, 1672, and died in Andover. The size, the solidity of its construction, and its position, certainly tend to strengthen this conclusion. It stands on the old Haverhill and Boston road, within a few feet of the highway, and has a southern aspect. It has two full stories in front, but slopes to a single one in the rear. The rooms on both sides of the front door are high-studded, the floor having been sunk not long since. The doors are small and very low. The walls of some of the rooms are wainscotted, while others are papered in the modern style. The frame of the house is very heavy, with massive old timbers; and an immense chimney, strongly buttressed on its four sides, runs up in the centre. On the lawn in front of the house are some beautiful elms, one of which is noted for its unusual size; the size of the tree, as given in 1830, one foot from the ground, being sixteen and one-half feet in circumference. The ground, falling abruptly from the east side of the house into a deep hollow, where there is a little brook, rises again into a hill, on the slope of which once stood the meeting-house, not a vestige of which is now left. Opposite its site is the old burying-ground, an irregular lot, sparsely covered with ancient, moss-grown stones, in all positions, straggling, broken, and neglected, and overrun with tall grass and weeds. Some few, including several tombs with horizontal slabs, are more modern and better preserved. The Merrimac is only one and a quarter miles distant, and the "Cochicewick" near by.

Anne Bradstreet, the first wife of Gov. Bradstreet, was the daughter of Gov. Thomas Dudley, born at Northampton, England, in 1612, and well known as the first poetess in this country. She was the most distinguished of the early matrons of our country by her literary powers, for the evidence of which we refer the reader to her poems dedicated to her father, entitled "The Tenth Muse, lately sprung up in America"; London, 1650; another edition in Boston, 1678, and reprinted 1758, "With great Variety of Wit and Learning, full of Delight." But the most interesting and complete edition of her works, in poetry and prose, is that published by Abram E. Cutter, of Charlestown, Mass., 1867, and edited by John Harvard Ellis, pp. 434. Dr. Mather, in his Magnalia, says of her: "Whose poems, divers times printed, have afforded a grateful entertainment unto the ingenious, and a monument for her memory beyond the stateliest marbles."

Manufactures.—North Andover is a lively manufacturing town, as may be seen in the various mills lying on the "Cochicewick" Brook, between "Great Pond," or Lake "Cochicewick," and the Merrimac. The first on the list, after leaving the pond, is Stevens's woollen-mill. In 1813, Nathaniel Stevens, Dr. Joseph Kittridge, and Josiah Monroe formed a company, and entered into the manufacture of woollen goods, particularly flannels. During the following year, Mr. Stevens purchased Mr. Monroe's interest in the mills, and in 1828 bought Dr. Kittridge's interest, thus controlling the mills. At the place where the works are now situated was the first grist-mill in the town.

Mr. Stevens became a successful manufacturer, and continued in business up to the time of his death. He was born Oct. 18, 1786, and died March 7, 1865. The business is now conducted by Moses T. Stevens, under the old firm-name of N. Stevens & Sons. They occupy one four-story brick building, 140 by 40 feet; one picker-house, 60 by 30 feet; and employ about sixty hands. The mill is run by a forty horse-power steam-engine, and a fifty horse-power water-wheel, and consumes 250,000 pounds of wool yearly, and manufactures 1,500 yards of flannel per week.

An incident occurred in the commencement of Mr. Stevens's early life — about 1816 or 1817 — well worth mentioning here. When he first began business his custom was to place his goods in his wagon in bulk, rather than in bales, and thus sell from place to place, as he found a market. One day, while showing his goods to a Mr. Peabody, in Boston, Mr. Abbott Lawrence was called in by Mr. Peabody, and his opinion asked as to what he thought of these new American goods. Mr. Lawrence examined them, and, turning to Mr. Stevens, said: "Young man, if you have money to lose, I advise you to save it, and quit making flannel, as we can import them much cheaper than you can make them." Mr. Stevens replied: "Mr. Lawrence, so long as I can get grease to grease my wheels, I shall keep on making them." And he did make them so long as he lived, and his heirs continue the business as heretofore.

Following down the stream a short distance, we come to the machine-shops of Messrs. Davis & Furbur. This firm are among the most prominent and prosperous manufacturers of machinery in the country. They manufacture every variety of woollen and cotton machinery. The history of this establishment is as follows: In the year 1830, two young men, named Sawyer and Phelps, came from Worcester, and, in company with Abraham Marland, started a small machine-shop at Marland Village. After running about three years, they sold the business to Messrs. Charles Barnes, George H. Gilbert, and Parker Richardson. In 1835 Mr. Barnes retired from the business, and removed to Ballardvale, and assisted in starting the woollen mill with John Marland. In 1836 the remaining two partners purchased a mill privilege, containing a saw and grist mill, of Mr. Isaac Osgood, at North Andover, and immediately erected a machine-shop. In 1838 Mr. Barnes again united with Messrs. Gilbert and Richardson, and continued in business till 1841, when the property was sold to Isaac Osgood, who then held possession of the saw and grist mill and machine-shop. In that year, Messrs. George H. Gilbert, Benjamin Gleason, and George L. Davis formed a partnership, and leased the machine works, Mr. Osgood retaining the other mills. In 1846 Mr. Gilbert retired, the firm then continuing as Gleason & Davis till 1848, when Mr. Gleason sold his interest in the business to George L. Davis and Charles Furbur, who continued, under the name of Davis & Furbur, till 1853, when they purchased the real estate, hitherto under a lease. In 1857 Mr. Furbur died, and his interest was sold to John A. Wiley and D. T. Gage, the style of the firm remaining the same as before. In 1860 Mr. Gage retired, leaving Messrs. Davis and Wiley sole owners. In 1861 Mr. Joseph M. Stone was admitted a partner, and the present members of the firm are George L. Davis, John A. Wiley, J. M. Stone, George G. Davis, Joseph H. Stone, and James H. Davis.

The following description of the leading buildings used by them may give a little idea of the immense business done by this firm: One four-story brick building, 260 by 50 feet, with an ell attached, 50 by 60 feet; an engine and boiler room, 30 by 50 feet; a machine shop, 150 by 40 feet, four stories high; a factory, 200 by 50 feet, five stories high, three of which are used for a machine-shop, and the other two for card-clothing. They have, also, an iron foundry, 100 by 80 feet, in which they make their own castings; a pattern-shop, 70 by 40 feet; and two blacksmith shops, 60 by 60 feet each. These works are located on the main street, but a short distance from the North Andover Depot, on the Boston and Maine Railroad, or the "Machine-Shop Crossing," on the Essex Branch of the Eastern Railroad. These works are run by steam and water of nearly two hundred horse-power.

A short distance below the machine-shops are the North Andover Woollen Mills. These mills were built by Dr. Joseph Kittridge, Eben Sutton, and George Hodges, in or about 1838. Dr. Kittridge soon after sold his interest to the other two partners, and they leased to Messrs. Hodges Brothers. In 1867, an Act of incorporation was obtained from the Legislature, for the following purposes:—

"William Sutton, Eben Sutton, and Moses T. Stevens, their associates and successors, are hereby made a corporation by the name of the 'North Andover Mills,' for the purpose of manufacturing woollen or cotton cloths, or any fabric wholly or in part of wool, cotton, silk, flax, hemp, or jute, in the town of North Andover; and for this purpose shall have all the powers and privileges, and be subject to all the duties, restrictions, and liabilities set forth in all general laws which now are, or hereafter may be, in force relating to manufactur-

ing corporations," with a capital stock not exceeding six hundred thousand dollars, divided into shares of one hundred dollars each.

This company occupy a three-story brick building, 150 by 50 feet; one picker-house, 30 by 40 feet; dye and boiler house, 50 by 25 feet; store-house, 70 by 40 feet. The machinery is driven by a forty-horse-power engine, besides a large twenty-four-foot water-wheel. This firm manufacture about 25,000 yards of flannel per week, consuming 300,000 pounds of wool annually, giving employment to one hundred persons. Connected with these mills are thirty tenement houses.

These mills are now owned and conducted by the heirs of the late Eben Sutton, of Peabody, Gen. Eben Sutton being the manager.

The last mills on the "Cochicewick Brook" are "Sutton's Mills," near to the mouth of the brook, where it empties into the Merrimac River, and about one hundred feet lower than its source, giving ample power. These works are under the same management as the last-mentioned mills, and consist of the following buildings: One brick mill, 165 by 46 feet; one picker-house, 40 by 40 feet; one wooden mill-building, 100 by 46 feet; one dye-house, 50 by 35 feet; one brick storehouse, 50 by 50 feet; one stone storehouse, 60 by 40 feet; and furnish employment for one hundred and thirty hands, manufacturing about 40,000 yards of flannel per week, and consuming about 450,000 pounds of wool yearly.

With these mills, the company own forty tenement-houses.

Rebellion.—This town was prompt to respond to the calls made upon her for men to help crush the Rebellion, and furnished fifteen more than was called for. The first meeting of the town was held May 6, 1861, when it was "voted, to appropriate five thousand dollars to uniform and equip a company of volunteers, and to provide aid for their families." The men were to receive fifty cents a day while drilling, and ten dollars a month from date of muster-in until discharged. Messrs. George Davis, Moses T. Stevens, and I. Osgood Loring were a committee, added to assist the selectmen in the disbursement of the funds. A company was immediately organized, and drilled, and tendered to the government; but at that time they thought they had enough men, and the men enlisted elsewhere, in different regiments.

July 28, 1862, "Voted, to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each volunteer who shall enlist for three years, within twenty days, and be credited to the town." On the 25th of August following, the bounty was increased to two hundred and fifty dollars for nine months' men.

March 8, 1864, "Voted, to raise one hundred and twenty-five dollars for each recruit who shall enlist on or before the 15th of June next, to fill our quota," and, on the 20th of June following, the selectmen were requested "to go on and recruit as fast as possible."

July 5, 1864, "Voted, to pay the same bounty to each volunteer who shall enlist as a part of the quota of the town, prior to March 5, 1865, under any call of the president."

The town furnished two hundred and seventy-three men for the war, from the list of whom we find the following names of deceased soldiers, as near as could be found by an examination of the town records and other sources:—

GEORGE H. FARNHAM,
Died at Roanoke Island, April 3, 1862.

THOMAS RUSSELL,
Died at Fortress Monroe, Va., June 4, 1862.

ANSEL BURNHAM,
Died Nov. 24, 1862.

JOHN BERKLEY,
Died at Washington, D. C., Feb. 13, 1863.

OTIS S. MERRILL,
Died at Newbern, N. C., Mar. 2, 1863.

CHARLES W. COLE,
Died at Newport News, Va., Mar. 3, 1863.

ANDREW J. FISH,
Died at New Orleans, La., Apr. 18, 1863.

NICHOLAS TUTTLE,
Died at New Orleans, La., Apr. 25, 1863.

MICHAEL HUGHES,
Died at Batou Rouge, La., May 26, 1863.

MARTIN HAYWARD,
Died June, 1863.

WILLIAM E. FISH,
Died at Newbern, N. C., June 22, 1863.

C. W. NEEDHAM,
Died at Alexandria, Va., June 30, 1863.

HENRY E. CHASE,
Died at Newbern, N. C., July, 1863.

JOHN F. SPOFFORD,
Died at Haines' Bluff, Miss., July 8, 1863.

CHARLES LEE FOSTER,
Died at New Orleans, La., Aug. 8, 1863.

ANSEL PEABODY,
Died at North Andover, Aug. 19, 1863.

BENJAMIN W. PINGREE,
Died Dec. 14, 1863.

HENRY W. STEVENS,
Died on Steamer "Cambridge," at New Inlet, N. C., Mar. 11, 1864.

THOMAS S. PORTER,
Died at Hampton Hospital, Va., Apr. 15, 1864, from wounds received at Smithfield, Va.

L. G. PHELPS,
Died at Andersonville Prison, July 22, 1864.

G. W. RAY,
Died at Andersonville, Sept. 23, 1864.

C. W. BRIDGES,
Died at Natchez, Miss., Sept. 24, 1864.

WALLACE W. RAY,
Died at Andersonville, Sept. 25, 1864.

J. A. NEEDHAM,
Died at Newbern, N. C., Dec. 14, 1864.

CHARLES ANGIER,
Died at Newbern, N. C., Dec. 15, 1864.

ABRAM HAYWARD,
Died at Lawreneeville, Va., Oct. 1, 1865.

HARRISON LONGLEY,
Died of disease, at North Andover, May 12, 1867.

HENRY L. LOVEJOY,
Died of wounds, Sept. 1, 1867.

ELBRIDGE G. MANNING,
Died at New Orleans, La., May 31, 1869.

J. B. FULLER,
Died at North Andover, of disease, Mar. 27, 1871.

JOSEPH H. FARNHAM,
Died of disease, at North Andover, Jan. 24, 1873.

DANIEL L. PLUMMER,
Died of disease, at North Andover, Feb. 4, 1874.

WILLIAM JOHNSON DAMON,
Died of disease, at North Andover, Jan. 3, 1875.

G. H. BUTTERFIELD,
Died a prisoner at Florence, S. C.

CHARLES K. HADLEY,
Died of disease, at North Andover, Apr. 30, 1877.

Of the whole number who enlisted from North Andover, we find no commissioned officers.

The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was $40,795.10. The amount of money raised and expended by the town in aid of the payment of State aid to the families of volunteers, during the four years of the war, and which was afterwards repaid by the Commonwealth, was as follows: In 1861, $759.82; in 1862, $2,975.99; in 1863, $3,981.52; in 1864, $3,219.61; in 1865, $2,000. Total amount, $12,936.94.

The town clerk, during the years of the war, was Hiram Berry; in 1864–65, Isaac C. Sargent.

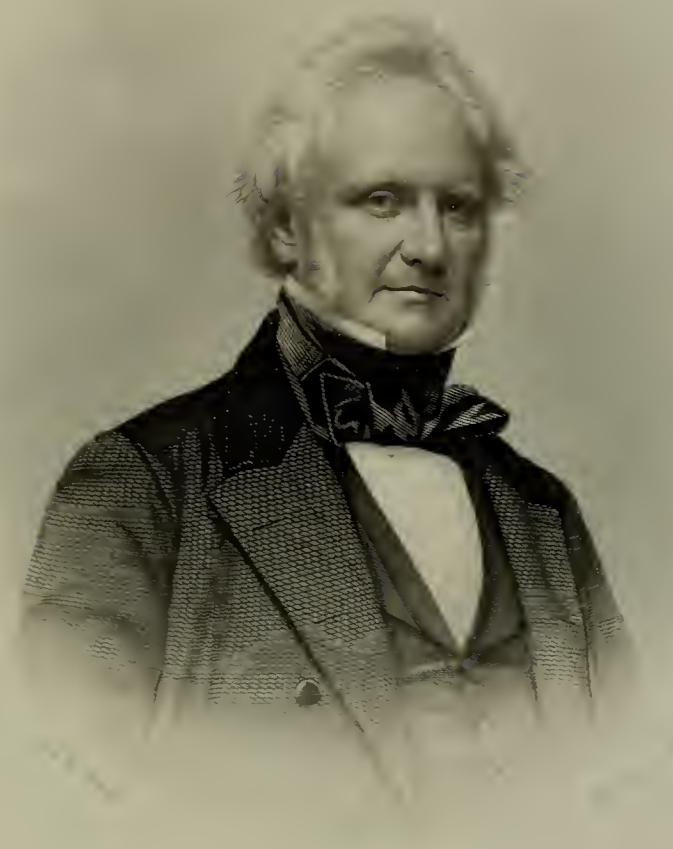
PEABODY.

Peabody, one of the brightest, cheeriest, and most bustling of Essex County manufacturing towns, although one of the youngest in point of age, lies west by north of its ancient mother, Salem, which it closely adjoins. Its territory was originally largely comprised in what was known as the "Middle Precinct," the second of the territorial parishes set off from Salem. After the organization of the district and township of Danvers, it was known as the South Parish of that town, and as such it remained for more that one hundred years. Its ancient history is thus incorporated with that of Danvers. It appears to have early taken the lead in active business pursuits, the attention of its people being turned almost from its first settlement, in the old colonial days, to the manufacture of leather; and the enterprise, so prospered, that in 1848, of the sixty-one tanneries in Danvers, it contained fully nine-tenths. In 1854, steps were taken, looking to a separation, and the establishment of an independent township. At this period, all the principal wealth of the two parishes was centred and invested here, although the North Parish contained a majority of the voters. A petition presented to the Legislature, at this time, asking for an Act to establish the town of South Danvers, naturally excited violent opposition among the brother townsmen of the North Parish, which was at first so far successful that the movement was voted down. But the matter did not rest here, and a visit of a special committee of the Great and General Court resulted in the reporting of a bill, which was finally passed May 18, 1855, entitled an Act to establish the town of South Danvers, and authorizing that all of the territory within the limits of Danvers, lying southerly of a line beginning at a point at the mouth of Waters River and running up the course of said river to the Sylvan Street bridge and thence north-westerly 500 feet to a milestone on the Newburyport Turnpike, near the house of Jasper Pope, and thence northerly to a point on the Ipswich River, where Noyes's Brook empties into said river, should be hereby incorporated as a town, by the name of South Danvers. The town was obliged, by this Act, to unite for a time with Danvers in the choice of a representative to the General Court. The ancient bounds with Salem remained as before; all of the houses on the northern side of Trask's or Shillaber's Plain, from the "Great Tree" to "Poole's Hollow," being in South Danvers, and all of those upon the southern side remaining in Salem. This line was straightened and improved in 1856, and all of the residents upon the northern side of Boston Street, east of the cemetery, were given to Salem.

The first town-meeting was held June 9, 1855. Lewis Allen, Daniel Taylor, and Nathan H. Poor were chosen as selectmen; Francis Baker, as treasurer; and Nathan H. Poor, as town clerk, which position the latter has held, with perhaps slight intervals, to the present time (1878). The town retained the name of South Danvers until the 13th of April, 1868, when it took the name of Peabody, in honor of its illustrious citizen and noble benefactor, George Peabody.

Mr. Peabody was born, a poor boy, in a house, yet standing, on the northerly side of Washington Street, near "Rock Village," and adjoining the present Upton glue-factory estate. It is a two-story structure, still in good preservation, and of the old New England style of early architecture, with the low-studded rooms, heavy frame, and the great unsightly beams extending across the centre of the ceilings. It is now occupied as a tenement-house. The future banker came into the world on the 18th of February, 1795. He was a lineal descendant of that ancient family, whose origin Mr. Nehemiah Cleveland has traced back to the time of Boadie, a king of the primeval race of Britons, who in the year A. D. 61 came to the rescue of his noble queen, Boadicea, when "bleeding from the Roman rods." From the terrible defeat in which she lost her crown and life, he retreated to the Cambrian mountains, from whose fastnesses he swept down upon the low country in frequent forays, and he and his posterity became the terror of its inhabitants. The name Pea, which signifies mountain, was at this time prefixed to "Boadie," meaning man. The name of Peabody appears in the ancient British heraldry, among the Knights of the Round Table, of the time of King Arthur. Lieut. Francis Pabody, as the name was then spelled, emigrated from St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, in 1635, and settled in Topsfield, then a portion of Salem Village, in 1667, where he died in 1698. His wife, a daughter of Reginald Foster, is mentioned in "Marmion," and "The Lay of the Last Minstrel." Of his large family, three sons settled in Boxford and two in Topsfield, and from them is said to have descended all the Peabodys in America. A Peabody fell with Wolfe and Montcalm, on the Plains of Abraham; another of the name was at the capture of Ticonderoga, and with Pepperrell at Louisburg, and participated later in the siege of Boston; and still another was with the gallant fifteen hundred on the bloody crest of Bunker Hill in '75. Others of the name served with honor throughout the struggle for American Independence. Despite his distinguished ancestry, the subject of this sketch came into the world with little beside their glorious example and prestige, and their indomitable will, pluck, and energy for his capital. He began his subsequent prosperous business career as a merchant and banker, in the grocery-store of Capt. Sylvester Proctor, in 1807, when barely twelve years of age. He remained here three years, when he went for a brief period to Thetford, Vt. Returning in 1811, he became a clerk in his brother David's store, in Newburyport. The great fire in that town, soon after young Peabody's arrival, broke up David's business, and the future banker was again thrown on his own resources. He returned without a dollar, but bearing letters of credit in Boston, given by a Mr. Spaulding, by which he obtained of a Mr. James Reed $2,000 worth of goods, to which capital he in after years ascribed his first start in life. In 1812, he accompanied his uncle, Gen. John Peabody, to Georgetown, D. C., where the two engaged in business together for two years, at the conclusion of which, when only nineteen years of age, he entered into the wholesale drapery business with Mr. Elisha Riggs, the latter furnishing the capital, and young Peabody the business talent and enterprise, as the active partner. In 1815, the house removed to Baltimore, and in 1822, branch houses were established in New York and Philadelphia. In 1830, Mr. Riggs retired, and was succeeded by Samuel Riggs, the style becoming Peabody, Riggs & Co., and the firm taking rank with the leading houses of the country. He subsequently made several voyages to Europe, and finally left his native land to make his home in London, and commence his career as a banker and broker, Feb. 1, 1837. Like a second Midas, all his enterprises proved successful, and he speedily amassed a regal fortune. He returned to this country only twice after taking up his abode in England, once in 1856, and again in 1866. Having attained the object of his life, Mr. Peabody set about devoting his wealth to the welfare of his less fortunate brother-men. In 1851 he earned the gratitude of his countrymen by advancing a large sum to enable the products of American industry to be displayed in Crystal Palace, placing them on an equal footing with those of the other nations of the world.

In 1852 he established the Peabody Institute in his native town. On the occasion of the dinner, on the 16th of June of that year, at the celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of the severance of the town of Danvers from mother Salem, he sent a sealed letter, to be read with others, which, upon being opened, was found to contain the sentiment, "Education — A debt due from present to future generations"; followed, as an appropriate response, by the announcement of a donation to his fellow-townsmen of the sum of $20,000, for the promotion of knowledge and morality among them; and expressing the desire that it should be devoted to the establishment of a lyceum for the delivery of lectures upon such subjects as may be designated by a committee of the town, and free to all; also for the establishment of a free public library, and for the erection of a suitable building, at a cost for land and fixtures not exceeding $7,000, to be located within one-third of a mile of the Presbyterian meeting-house, occupying the spot of that formerly under the pastoral care of the Rev. Mr. Walker, in the South Parish of Danvers. It was also advised, that the inhabitants, by their own act, exclude sectarian theology and political discussions forever from the walls of the institution. These provisions were subsequently carried out, resulting in the establish-



James Buchanan

ment of the present Peabody Institute. The generous donor subsequently added $10,000 to his first gift, increasing the amount for the building and land to $17,000, and authorizing the appropriation of $3,000 for the purchase of books, and $10,000 for a permanent fund. Further donations were added in later years, increasing the amount to $250,000. In this same year, Mr. Peabody provided the means for equipping the "Advance," which had been given by Henry Grinnell, for the second Kane expedition to the Arctic seas, in search of the lost Sir John Franklin. In 1857, Mr. Peabody established the Peabody Institute at Baltimore, Md. Between March 1, 1862, and Dec. 5, 1868, he carried out a long-cherished desire of his heart, in donating $1,750,000 for the relief of the laboring poor of his adopted city of London. Peabody Square, Islington, London, is a noble monument to this greatest of the public benefactors of his age. It contains four blocks of buildings, comprising 155 tenements, and accommodating 655 persons, or nearly 200 families, at a merely nominal rental. The cost of these buildings was £31,690, exclusive of the land. Sir Curtis Lampson estimates, that, if the present fund accumulated is honestly administered for two hundred years, it will have accumulated sufficiently to provide for three-fourths of all the industrious poor in London. The buildings were opened in September, 1865. There are also other squares of tenement-blocks established by this same munificent gift. Further amounts were added to the fund. Through all these years, Mr. Peabody was giving freely. He established a library at Thetford, Vt., and a Peabody Institute at Danvers. Perhaps the greatest of his gifts was that of $2,000,000 to the Southern Educational Fund, to promote the education of the people of the South, without regard to race or color. He gave $150,000 to Yale College, for the establishment of a museum of natural history; and a donation of the same amount to Harvard University, for the establishment and maintenance of a museum and professorship of American Archæology and Ethnology, in 1866. In 1867, a donation of $140,000 was bestowed by him upon the Peabody Academy of Science, in Salem.

Mr. Peabody was made a member of the Merchant Tailors' Fraternity of St. John Baptist, of London, an association whose roll of membership commences far back in the year 1351, and which embraces Edward III., James II., several of the Henrys, and a long line of illustrious monarchs and royal personages. In 1867, the Fishmongers' Company, of London, presented him with an elegant gold box, containing the honorary freedom of their ancient body. The city of London honored him by the erection of his statue, by the American sculptor Story, in City Square, the cost of which was defrayed by subscription among the people, and which was unveiled, in the presence of an immense concourse, by the Prince of Wales.

Just prior to his last visit to his home, in 1866, it was proposed to confer upon Mr. Peabody a baronetcy, or the Grand Cross of the Order of the Bath; but with the loyal independence of an American citizen, he declined them both, and, when asked what gift he would accept from the queen for his princely benefactions to the city of his adoption, he only expressed the modest desire for an autograph letter from Her Majesty. This was accorded him, and accompanied by a gift of a portrait of Victoria herself, painted by Tilb, on a solid sheet of gold, and finished in 1867. The picture was mounted in an elaborate and massive chased frame of gold, ornamented by the royal crown. It is the largest miniature of the kind ever attempted in England; and a furnace was specially built for the execution of the work. Its cost is variously estimated at from thirty to fifty thousand dollars, but it is not known in this country that any one has information of the exact sum. The queen was attired in demi-robes of state, with demi-crown, Marie Stuart cap, and wore a jewelled cross, and the famous Kohinoor. The likeness is said to be remarkably good.

In 1866, Congress presented Mr. Peabody with a gold medal, of chaste design, valued at $5,000, as a recognition of his generosity to the South.

Mr. Peabody was elected an honorary member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, July 12, 1866.

Mr. Peabody made his last public appearance in this country at the great National Peace Jubilee in Boston, in 1869. He returned that summer, in failing health, to London, in the firm belief that the atmosphere of the metropolis would restore him. The final summons had come, however, and soon after his arrival in England he grew worse, and, on the night of the 4th of November, 1869, the noble benefactor of his race passed away from the world in which he had accomplished so much.

His decease was mourned by every civilized nation of the world; and the land of his birth, and that of his adoption, vied with each other in paying honors to his memory. A public service was held in Westminster Abbey, which was attended by the queen and royal household, the lord-mayor and official dignitaries, the nobility, and the people, whose friend he was. The Bishop of London preached his funeral discourse on the following Sunday. The remains were embalmed and conveyed across the Atlantic, in Her Majesty's ship of war "Monarch," convoyed by the United States frigate "Plymouth," especially detailed for the purpose. The squadron was received with naval honors at Portland, from whence the body was carried to the town he loved, and where it was returned to the dust from whence it came, amid the tears of a bereaved nation. Both governments (H. R. H. Prince Arthur representing Great Britain), the Commonwealth, and the town were represented at the final ceremonies, and the body was accorded military honors when interred in its last resting-place in Harmony Grove Cemetery. Mr. Peabody was a man of genial, kindly temperament, a thorough and devoted Christian. Space forbids a more extended description of the noble work which he accomplished, but the following is a partial list of his larger donations: To the State of Maryland, for negotiating the loan of $8,000,000, $60,000; to the Peabody Institute, Baltimore, including accrued interest, $1,500,000; to the Southern Education Fund, $3,000,000; to Yale College, $150,000; to Harvard College, $150,000; to Peabody Academy of Science, Salem, $140,000; to Phillips Academy, Andover, $25,000; to Peabody Institute, Peabody, $250,000; to Kenyon College, Ohio, $25,000; to Memorial Church, at Georgetown, Mass., $100,000; to Homes for the Poor of London, $3,000,000; to libraries in Georgetown, Mass, and Thetford, Vt., $10,000; to Kane's Arctic Expedition, $10,000; to different sanitary fairs, $10,000; to unpaid moneys advanced to uphold the credit of States, $40,000: total, $8,470,000. He left an estate estimated at $4,000,000. Besides the above donations, there were a number of others, of sums varying from two hundred and fifty to one thousand dollars, and extending back to the year 1835. The Memorial Church at Georgetown was erected by Mr. Peabody and his sister Judith, in memory of their mother, Mrs. Judith Peabody, who died June 22, 1830.

The history of the town of Peabody is brief, it being, as yet, but twenty-three years since the date of its incorporation, and its previous record is linked with that of the present town of Danvers.

It embraces within its limits the old historic Second Parish Church, or, as it is now known, the "South Church"; the site of the Old Bell Tavern, where genial Francis Symonds was once the jolly host; the spot where Foster's company assembled to go forth to its first baptism of blood at Lexington, and the granite testimonial to their memory; the grave of Eliza Wharton, famous in song and story, and the site of the first mill erected in this country, on the spot now occupied by the depot, about the year 1630. Here, too, stands the famous Crowninshield House, built by the Salem merchant, who thought to bring the wealth of the Indies to his very door from the ancient port below, via the present stygian North River, then a far grander stream, and canal. A chain of sad fatalities gradually encircled the mansion, and its owner never saw the hoped-for "golden fleece" landed at his door. For many years the major part of the house remained unfinished, and it was not until within a few months that the hand of trade set its grasp upon it and it was converted into a factory, in which capacity it may yet realize in a measure the magnificent expectations of its builder. The house stands by itself in the rear of Central Street; beyond it, on the Danvers road, were the famous potteries, the producers of the once-familiar Danvers china. Of the many that lined the way but one now remains. Here, too, the brilliant lawyer, statesman, and orator, Rufus Choate, laid the foundation of his subsequent fame, and commenced his practice after the completion of his studies. And here lived and was born the pure and noble statesman, Daniel P. King. He was the son of Daniel and Phœbe (Upton) King, a descendant of staunch Danvers stock, whose family patronymics have been identified with the town from its earliest settlement. His ancestors were of the respectable class of farmers, and it is said by Upham, that they were raised to affluence through the extraordinary energy and business enterprise of one of its female heads. The grandmother of Daniel P. King opened a small shop or store in the farm-house, furnishing needful supplies to the passing teams and country people. She left the care of the farm to her husband and took entire charge of her business, purchasing from the original importers, and in turn selling directly to the exporters. She soon had a large business, and was recognized as a merchant in full standing. She was possessed of remarkable intelligence, judgment, and force of character, and had a thorough knowledge of the laws of trade. She kept a sharp eye on the arrival of vessels from foreign ports, and

was often first at the counting-rooms of the owners to purchase largely of their cargoes. She thus speedily founded a prosperous business, in addition to which she carried on the manufacture of vinegar extensively. As a natural result, her family was soon far more affluent than if they had depended on agriculture alone.

The business, thus established, was continued by Mrs. King's son Daniel, a man of cheerful temperament, hospitable manners, and decision of character. His wife was a very excellent woman, of great strength of character and firm Christian faith. Her son inherited her prominent traits. He commenced his education in the district school, was subsequently at school in Saco, Me., and afterwards at Phillips Academy in Andover, where he finished his preparatory studies for a college course. He graduated from Harvard in the class of 1823, and received his degrees from that university. He made no pretensions to eminence as a scholar, and pursued his studies quietly and without ostentation throughout his collegiate career. Upon graduating, he commenced the study of law, but soon acquiring a distaste for its pursuit, he abandoned the legal profession. In 1824 he married Sarah P., daughter of Hezekiah and Sally (Putnam) Flint, and settled down as a farmer on the estate left by his wife's father, and entered at once upon his favorite study and occupation as an agriculturist, devoting his leisure hours to his classical studies and English literature. Although somewhat retired, he was soon called forth by his fellow-citizens to fill municipal offices, through the whole round of which he passed successfully. The knowledge of the best methods in agriculture, which he soon acquired, made him a leader and guide among his townsmen and neighbors. His sound judgment and sterling common-sense restrained him from the wasteful experiments and foolish speculations commonly indulged in by gentlemen farmers. His public career may be said to have fairly commenced in his election to the State Legislature in 1835. Some years previous he had been nominated, at a period when there were a large number of contestants in the field, and had been defeated by only one vote. Afterwards, by singular coincidence, one vote placed him on the high-road to fame, after a long and exciting struggle. His cheerful, sunny nature did not brook of discouragement from defeat, and, with his customary pleasantry, he remarked that he owed his fortunate escape to having himself voted for the successful candidate. He claimed by virtue of that fact the right to share in the congratulations tendered that gentleman. Upon his election in 1835, he remained two years in the House and was subsequently four years in the Senate, during the two last years being the president of that body. His inherent modesty, and lack of self-conceit common to the majority of mankind, and also the high esteem in which he was held by his fellow-associates, is shown by the following episode: Upon his retiring from the chair of the Senate, one of the most distinguished members of that body prepared a resolution of thanks, which he desired to present for adoption. He submitted it to Mr. King, who expressed reluctance to have it offered in the form in which it was framed; and upon further reflection addressed a characteristic note to the senator, in which he says: —

"Even your persuasive eloquence could not prevail with the Senate to adopt such a vote. A general and common expression of satisfaction with the discharge of the duties of the Chair is all that I can expect: or, if you will allow me to say it, I think your kindness of heart and generous disposition should not extend the testimonial beyond the most common terms.

"I am deeply impressed with your kindness of intention and shall ever remain most truly your friend, DANIEL P. KING."

The reply of the senator was: —

"I will do what you want, but let me say in all sincerity, I have shown that to most of our leading men, and they all say you deserve it, and it ought to be said, and so I do seriously think. Unless you feel quite an objection, I shall like to 'adhere.'"

The Resolve was cordially and unanimously passed as follows: —

"COMMONWEALTH OF MASSACHUSETTS.

"IN SENATE, March 16, 1841.

Resolved, That the thanks of the Senate be offered to the Hon. Daniel P. King, for the faithful, just, and able performance of his duties as President of the Senate. To the promptitude and accuracy of his decisions, and his unfailing courtesy, we are indebted for much of the harmony, which has facilitated the business of the Session, and will make our recollections of it pleasant."

In 1842 he was again a member of the House. The opening session was stormy; parties were equally divided; and political passions were running high in the Legislature and State. On the first day, there was no choice for Speaker, the Democratic candidate having within one of a choice, and the Whig leader within two. The next day, Mr. King, whose name had not been mentioned in the contest, was found to be chosen on the first count. In politics, Mr. King was an undeviating Whig; but he cherished views on the slavery question far in advance of those of either of the national parties of the day. In 1843, the position of Speaker was one of great difficulty, and one which a man of less nerve, equanimity, gentleness of temperament, prudence, and foresight, would have found impossible to fill. The Governor was a Democrat, elected in the House by one vote. There was a Democratic majority in both Senate and House; but so wise and judicious was the conduct of Speaker King, — so impartial, correct, and prompt were his rulings, — that neither party could be or were dissatisfied with his performance of his duties, and both concurred heartily in sustaining his authority. He again received a vote of thanks for the "courteous, able, and impartial manner" in which he had presided. Yet there was nothing in the man's deportment and bearing in ordinary life that would stamp him as a leader, and one born to command. There was a latent and decisive force in his character, which developed itself in public bodies, and brought him strangely into prominence. His address was pleasing; his manner wholly unpretentious and unobtrusive; his countenance open, frank, and genial, but not striking. In dress, he was scrupulously neat; but his tastes were for plain apparel, and he was no follower of the world of fashion. While in the Legislature, he was an active, vigilant, and efficient member. January 14, 1837, he introduced and carried into effect an order instructing the Committee on Education to consider the expediency of providing by law for the better education of teachers of the public schools. This was the germ which, subsequently, under the guidance of James G. Carter, of Lancaster, bore fruit in the establishment of the present admirable system of State Normal Schools. Mr. King's chief efforts as a legislator were, however, in the interests of agriculture. He was the author of a proposition, now carried into effect, to establish an agricultural college, and also for providing a professorship of the same in Harvard University.

In the district to which the present town of Peabody, as a portion of Danvers, belonged, there was no choice for member of Congress in the election of November, 1842. The old majority system was then in vogue, and a plurality did not elect. At the election, the Democratic candidate received 5,403 votes, the Whig 4,928, all others 1,230, and there was no choice. At a special election, February 13, 1843, the result stood, — Democratic, 4,978; Whig, 3,904; all others, 1,349; and again no choice. The Whig candidate withdrew, and the district seemed lost to the Whig party. In this crisis, on the 2d of March, Daniel P. King was made the Whig nominee. On the next trial, April 3d, the vote stood, — Democratic, 4,621; Whig, 4,480; all others, 1,107. The Democratic plurality was reduced to 141. Their candidate withdrew from the field, firm in the conviction that Mr. King was to be chosen, and so it proved. June 5, 1843, the Whigs carried the election by a majority of eighty-two, — the vote being 3,711 for Mr. King; 2,854 for the Democratic candidate; and scattering, 775. The district was saved to his party, and he held it to the end of his life. He took his seat in the twenty-eighth Congress, December 4, 1843. On the 16th, Mr. King presented the Resolves of the Massachusetts Legislature against the annexation of Texas, and on the 29th of December he warmly espoused the cause of the oppressed bondmen in the District of Columbia, in an exciting debate. He took firm stand as opposed to the curse of slavery, and remained true to his principles and convictions throughout his career. On the 26th of January, 1844, he took a manly stand in a brave and eloquent speech in the House, which gave him great prominence, and won for him the warm support and friendship of the friends of freedom throughout the country. It was upon the Resolve of the Massachusetts Legislature, proposing an amendment of the Constitution that would base representation on the free population alone, thereby striking out the element that gave preponderance to the slave States, by virtue of the provision counting three-fifths of the slaves. Mr. King remarked, that the petitions on which these Resolves were founded were signed by sixty thousand freemen of Massachusetts. A Southern member asked if the form of the heading for those petitions had not been framed by a runaway slave from Virginia? Mr. King replied that "he presumed the petition was signed by freemen only, for in Massachusetts they had no slaves, but every man, created in the image of his Maker," — (cries of "order," "order," in loud, angry tones, resounded through the hall). Raising his voice to the full volume and height of which it was capable, clearly and distinctly above the uproar, the speaker finished his sentence, — "owes allegiance to Him alone." The Speaker ruled him out of order, but his brave and manly bearing shamed his opponents, and he continued his speech. May 23, 1844, he introduced and carried through the House an amendment to the Navy Appropriation Bill, to prohibit spirit rations, substituting

money in their place. He was active and energetic in pushing through a large number of useful and needful appropriations for his constituents and the people at large. He was a persistent and active opponent of the Mexican War, voting against it in every shape. The bill for raising volunteers and other troops was passed by 159 yeas to 4 nays. Of those four were John Quincy Adams and Daniel P. King. The latter had previously endeavored to attach an amendment looking to an honorable and peaceful adjustment of the difficulties with the "sister Republic of Mexico," which was rejected. December 29, 1845, Mr. King presented the Memorial of the Society of Friends in New England against the Mexican War, and made an earnest, effective, and fearless speech in its support in the angry debate which followed. In the thirtieth Congress, December 6, 1847, Mr. King was made Chairman of the Committee on Revolutionary Claims, and Chairman of the Committee on Accounts, Robert C. Winthrop being Speaker of the House. He discharged the duties of these positions with his accustomed fearlessness and honesty. In 1847 and 1850, he made several glowing and eloquent speeches upon the Mexican War, and the extension of slavery. Alluding to the undying fame of Nathan Dane, for having rescued the North-western territory of the Union from slavery by the ordinance of 1787, he concluded his speech as follows: "If, in 1847, his successor can achieve no such renown, he will at least, on this ground, stand firm; that by no voluntary servitude of his, by no treason against duty, conscience, humanity, and Heaven, shall slavery be tolerated in any territory hereafter to be acquired; by no deed of his shall the glorious memories of the past be tarnished, or the bright hopes and prospects of the future be clouded."

He characterized the Mexican War as bad in its inception, bad in its progress, and nothing but evil in its consequences; and closed by saying that if ever a stone was raised to his memory he hoped that it might bear the inscription, "A lover of Peace, of Liberty, of his Country — he voted against the Mexican War." On the 21st of May, 1850, he made an elaborate speech, in Committee of the Whole, on the California question, then pending, and the ordinance of 1787. It was his last effort on the floor of Congress. July 10, 1850, Mr. King left Washington for home, for a brief respite from his exhausting labors. He never returned. Stricken with a fatal disease upon his arrival in his native town, he lingered until the 25th of the same month, when he was gathered to his final rest. His death was a great shock to his townsmen, his constituents, the Commonwealth, and the nation at large. On the 27th of July, the sad event was announced to the House of Representatives by Mr. King's life-long friend, Mr. Rockwell, of Berkshire, accompanied by a brief and touching eulogy. The Whig convention of August 8, 1850, held at Salem, passed resolutions expressive of the great loss which the party had sustained. Probably no man ever combined in so great a degree the heartfelt affection of his friends, and the profound respect of his political opponents, as Daniel P. King.

Grace Greenwood, shortly before his death, sent Mr. King the following graceful tribute of her pen: —

"Child of the Republic,
I have never bowed the knee
To coronets or sceptres,
To rank or royalty.
But when a royal nature,
Crowned with a royal name,
Devotes to holy freedom
His genius and his fame—
'Tis then my heart forgets its pride;
Then to the winds I fling
My Democratic scruples,
And all that sort of thing.
My spirit owns allegiance,
And prays, 'God save *thee*, King.'"

Mr. King was a trustee of the Massachusetts Lunatic Asylum, member of the Essex Historical Society, Essex Natural History Society, and of the New England Historic-Genealogical Society; Secretary of the Essex Agricultural Society, from 1842 to 1844, and one of its vice-presidents and trustees until his death.

Of the institutions of Peabody, the Peabody Institute stands pre-eminent. The building stands on Main Street, a short distance above the monument, facing the beautiful estate of Mrs. Eben Sutton. It is a handsome structure, built of brick, with freestone trimmings, and surrounded by beautiful grounds. The corner-stone was laid by Abbott Lawrence, with appropriate ceremonies, Aug. 20, 1853, and the building was finished the following year. The institute was the munificent gift of George Peabody, and was dedicated on the 29th of September, 1854, Hon. Rufus Choate delivering an eloquent address. The building is 128 feet by 50 feet, and is of two stories, with a tower. On the first floor is the large library hall, which contains the free public library, endowed by Mr. Peabody. It was first thrown open to the public on the 18th of October, 1854, and then contained 1,500 volumes. There are now 18,500 books on its shelves, and the names of 3,745 persons on its index of borrowers. Mr. Fitch Poole was the first librarian, and was succeeded by Mr. Eugene B. Hinkley. He was succeeded again by Fitch Poole, and he in turn by Mr. Theodore M. Osborne, who now holds the office.

The library is elegantly fitted up and adorned in fine taste. There are here the busts of Peabody, Robert C. Winthrop, Rufus Choate, and others, and the vault containing the queen's portrait, the gold boxes from the city of London, and the Fishmongers' Association, and the medal of Congress presented to Mr. Peabody. The queen's letter to the generous banker, and other testimonials from the Merchant Tailors' Fraternity, are also deposited here. In addition to the library, there are on this floor the committee room, and the room for the trustees, which contains the original portrait in oil of President Harrison, from which many copies have been taken, and a portrait of Gen. Gideon Foster, the hero of Lexington.

In the second story is the large lecture hall, capable of seating 800 persons, in which the free lecture courses are held each winter. The first lecture delivered in this hall was by the Hon. George S. Hillard, of Boston, and was especially prepared for the occasion.

In the rear of this hall is the Sutton Reference Library, probably one of the most magnificent and costly libraries, for its size, in the Commonwealth. The spacious room is fitted with rare taste and elegance, and contains, among many valuable works, a superb edition of Audubon, valued at $1,500. There is also here a fac-simile of the famous Milton shield. The library is intended only for books of reference, and was donated to the town by Mrs. Eben Sutton, as a memorial of her son, Eben Dale Sutton, in 1866. She endowed it with a fund of $20,000, besides fitting and furnishing it at her own expense. A fine portrait, in oil, of the youth for whom it was named, adorns the room. The library was first opened to the public, June 14, 1869. It contains about a thousand volumes of rare and choice works in the various languages. Miss Mary J. Floyd is librarian. The present general fund of the institute is $117,750, and the amount of the invested funds and real estate, $169,679.77. The first president of the institute was Robert S. Daniels; the first secretary, Francis Baker; and the first treasurer, Eben Sutton. The present officers are: Alfred A. Abbot, president; Charles D. Howard, secretary; George A. Osborne, treasurer.

Of the religious societies, the Second Parish, or "Old South Church," is the oldest, its members having withdrawn from the parent church in Salem, April 24, 1713. They were granted dismission on the 25th of June of that year, and, September 23d following, the Rev. Benjamin Prescott was ordained as their first minister. It was called the Third Church in Salem till 1759, and then the Second Parish Church in Danvers, and, subsequently, the South Church in South Danvers. The church has had four meeting-houses, all of which have stood upon the present site. The first was erected just prior to the withdrawal of the church from the Salem congregation, in 1712–13. It was torn down, when decrepit by age, and substituted by another, which was burned. The third was sold to the Methodists, and moved to Washington Street, in 1840–41, and was replaced by the present commodious edifice. The Rev. Mr. Prescott occupied the pulpit for many years. Nathan Holt succeeded him at the outbreak of the Revolution. The remaining pastors have been the Rev. Samuel Walker, the clergyman in Peabody's boyhood; the Rev. Mr. Park, the Rev. Dr. Field, Prof. Butler, the Rev. Dr. Murray, Prof. Barbour, the Rev. George T. Anthony, and the Rev. Willard Sperry. The present membership of the church is about 300.

The Unitarian Society comes next, in point of age. It was organized Jan. 1, 1825, with thirty-three members. The first meeting-house, the present edifice, was dedicated July 26, 1826. The Rev. Mr. Brazer, of the North Church, Salem, preached the dedicatory sermon. The pulpit was supplied for some months by a Mr. Alonzo Hill. The first-settled pastor was the Rev. Charles C. Sewall, who was ordained April 11, 1827. His successors have been the Rev. Andrew Bigelow, installed Feb. 15, 1843; the Rev. Frank P. Appleton, installed Jan. 14, 1846; the Rev. C. H. Wheeler, installed Oct. 4, 1854; the Rev. David H. Montgomery, installed in 1862; the Rev. E. I. Galvin, installed May 13, 1868. The Rev. Mr. Whitney at present occupies the pulpit.

The Universalist Church was gathered March 26, 1832, with forty-seven members. The present church was dedicated Jan. 10, 1832, and has been since twice remodelled. Its pastors have been the Rev.

John Moore, 1833; the Rev. J. M. Austin, 1835; the Rev. John Prince, 1845. The latter closed his pastorate in 1848, and, for nearly six years, the society was without a pastor, and no services were held. In 1853, the Rev. J. W. Talbot became pastor. He was followed by the Rev. W. R. G. Mellen, in 1855; the Rev. Orville Brayton, 1856; the Rev. C. C. Gordon, in 1859; the Rev. O. F. Safford, 1862; the Rev. A. B. Hervey, 1866; and the Rev. E. B. Smith, in 1873.

The Methodist Church was organized, in 1840, as a separate charge, being the result of mission meetings, conducted in Harmony Village (now Rockville) as far back as 1833, by the Rev. Amos Walton, assisted by brethren from the South Street Church in Lynn. The third edifice, erected by the South Congregational Church of Peabody, was purchased, in 1843, by the Methodist brethren, and removed to the present site on Washington Street, where it has since been used as a house of worship. It was remodelled and raised in May, 1859. The first pastor was the Rev. Amos Walton, the founder of the society, and the present minister is the Rev. V. M. Simons. The pulpit is in charge of the conference.

The Baptist Society was organized, Feb. 16, 1843, with sixteen members, and was recognized Feb. 22d of the same year, when its membership was twenty-seven. The sermon was preached by the Rev. Joseph Banvard. No regular minister was installed until the settlement of the Rev. Phineas Stowe, Dec. 5, 1843. His successors have been the Rev. J. G. Richardson, 1846; the Rev. I. E. Forbush, 1848; the Rev. B. C. Thomas, 1849; the Rev. F. A. Willard, Nov. 11, 1849; the Rev. N. Medbury, 1855; the Rev. T. E. Keely, 1857; the Rev. C. E. Barrows, 1861; the Rev. N. M. Williams, 1865, and the Rev. C. V. Hanson in 1868. The present meeting-house was dedicated Nov. 19, 1857, the Rev. T. D. Anderson preaching the sermon. It was remodelled in 1865. Prior to its erection, the society worshipped in the Unitarian church.

The St. John's Catholic Church was erected in 1871. The corner-stone was laid Aug. 20, 1871, and the basement was opened for worship, Dec. 25th of the same year. Regular services were not held, however, until September, 1872. The congregation averages twelve hundred. It is estimated that there are four thousand Catholics in Peabody. The church building is of brick, 72 feet by 146 feet, with a tower. The cost of the edifice will reach more than fifty thousand dollars.

St. Paul's Episcopal Church, a Gothic chapel on Lowell Street, was erected in 1875. The pastor is the Rev. George Walker.

Peabody possesses seven schools: one high; and six grammar, intermediate, and primary, combined. In 1856, the number of pupils attending school in the town was 956; and in 1872, it was fifteen hundred. In the same term of years, the amount appropriated for schools more than trebled, being $7,500 in 1856, and $23,000 in 1872.

The Peabody High School was opened June 3, 1850, with forty pupils. It was named in honor of George Peabody, who donated the sum of two hundred dollars per year to the town, for the purpose of procuring medals for the graduates of the Peabody and Holten High schools. He also presented the Peabody High School with a piano, and a portrait of himself. The school is one of the most flourishing in the State, and maintains a very high standard of scholarship. The other schools are the Wallis, Centre, Bowditch, Rockville, West, and Felton. The school-houses are models of convenience and taste.

Of the various societies, Jordan Lodge of Free and Accepted Masons takes precedence as the oldest, being chartered Nov. 30, 1808. The first lodge of Masons was erected in Danvers, May 1, 1778, under the name of the United States Lodge, the charter being obtained from St. Andrew's Grand Lodge. This lodge flourished for a time, but the war drew off its members, and it finally lapsed. The charter, furniture, &c., were preserved in the house of Mr. Skidmore, until they shared in the destruction of the dwelling by fire, in the year 1808. In September of that year, the founders of the present lodge met at E. Berry's tavern and formed the Jordan Association. The meetings were continued until the lodge was chartered, as stated. The first meetings were held at the Plain; but, in the year 1810, they were transferred to the South Parish, where the lodge has since remained.

The Ladies' Benevolent Society was organized in 1814, for the purpose of furnishing the poor with clothing. The Charitable Tenement Association was incorporated April 27, 1869. Its object is to obtain homes for elderly women at a moderate rental. The society owns a tenement-house at the corner of Washington and Oak streets.

William H. Shove Post 132, G. A. R., was organized July 7, 1870. Peabody contributed its full share in men and money for the support of the government in the late Rebellion, being represented in nearly every Massachusetts regiment. Its sons did gallant service, and one of them, Granville M. Dodge, by his prowess and bravery, rose to the rank of major-general. This Post is large and flourishing. The Soldiers' and Sailors' Veteran Association, a society with a kindred object, was organized Nov. 14, 1872. The American Hibernian Benevolent Association was formed Jan. 21, 1871, by members of the old Young Men's Literary Association, which was organized Sept. 15, 1858, and was the first Irish society in Peabody. The St. John's Catholic Total Abstinence Society was organized March 3, 1872. General Howard Division Sons of Temperance was instituted Dec. 15, 1866.

The Young Men's Christian Association was re-organized Dec. 18, 1871. It had been originally founded Nov. 17, 1858; but the advent of the war, and other causes, led to its dissolution. The society since its re-organization has done a large and noble work.

The staple industry of Peabody is the manufacture of leather and morocco. Its natural facilities for this business are unsurpassed. From the time of Joseph Southwick, and his primitive method of tanning in tubs, in 1750, the business has grown rapidly, and to vast proportions, as compared with those early days. In twenty years, there were "57½" tan-houses, slaughter-houses, pot and pearl ash works, in Danvers, according to Judge Holten. In 1848, there were sixty-one tanneries in Danvers; and in 1856, after the incorporation of the South Parish, there were but two or three remaining in Danvers proper.

During the war, it was stated that Peabody produced thirty-five per cent. of all the morocco manufactured in the United States. The leather manufactories of Franklin Osborn & Co., and Thomas H. Proctor, and the morocco manufactory of W. M. Jacobs & Son, are the largest of their kind in New England, and among the largest in the country. There are now (1878) forty-nine leather-manufacturing firms, and nineteen engaged in the manufacture of morocco, both furnishing employment to a thousand men. The estimated capital invested is more than one million of dollars. In addition to this industry, the manufacture of glue is extensively carried on, there being three manufactories in town; and the old Danvers Bleachery and Dye-Works, located on Washington Street, at the head of Foster, produces a large amount of superior-finished bleached cottons, sateens, and cambrics.

Peabody has also two national banks, — the South Danvers, with a capital of $150,000; and the Warren, with a capital of $250,000. The Warren Five Cents Savings Bank is also a flourishing institution. The South Danvers Mutual Fire Insurance Company was incorporated in 1829.

The "Peabody Press," a lively, pungent, and enterprising weekly paper, was founded in 1859, as the "South Danvers Wizard," by Charles D. Howard, its present publisher and proprietor. The title was changed to the present heading in 1868, upon the adoption of the new name for the town. It was originally a four-page paper, but is now an eight-page sheet, and one of the most prosperous and brightest members of the county press.

The "Peabody Reporter" is the name of a paper recently started, and an outgrowth of the monetary mania which has recently swept over the country. Its editor is S. C. Bancroft.

The town is supplied with pure water from Brown and Spring ponds by the mains of the old Salem and South Danvers Aqueduct Company, whose property it acquired by purchase.

The valuation of the town, when set off as South Danvers, was $2,944,900. In 1862, the valuation was $3,394,150: in 1872, $5,938,950: and in 1878 the valuation is, in real estate, $4,075,600; in personal, $2,345,450: total, $6,421,050. The number of polls is 1,671, and the population is about 9,000.

Peabody is charmingly located naturally, and its walks and drives are full of interest. It posesses one natural curiosity of great rarity, a gigantic bowlder, popularly known as "Ship Rock," which rests upon the crest of a hill near Newhall's Crossing, in Rock Village. It is believed to be the largest bowlder in this country, east of the Mississippi, with the exception of one in North Carolina. It measures forty feet in length, thirty feet in height, and twenty feet in thickness. It is supposed to have come from the north-east in the glacial drift, the scratches on its base proving this fact to the satisfaction of geologists, and to have lodged here on the verge of a declivity, where it has maintained its wonderful equipoise through the ages. The origin of its name is in doubt. The rock is now the property of the Essex Institute. Such is a brief sketch of modern Peabody, than which no town has a brighter prospect for a brilliant future.

ROCKPORT.

The town of Rockport occupies the whole of the easterly extremity of Cape Ann, and, except on its westerly border, where it joins Gloucester, is surrounded by the ocean. From its northerly boundary, on Ipswich Bay, to its southern on Massachusetts Bay, the distance is a little more than four miles. The indentation of the coast between Andrews's Point, the extreme north-easterly part of the Cape, and Straitsmouth Point, at what may be called the head of the Cape, makes the width of the town, in its northerly and southerly sections, to differ considerably. In the former, it is about one, and in the latter about two and one-half miles wide. Like the rest of Cape Ann, a large portion of the surface is very rocky; but there are large tracts of clear land in the southerly half of the town, on which there are good farms. The highest elevation of land in the town is Pigeon Hill, presenting to view a grassy top, in striking contrast with the ledge-and-bowlder-covered hills of all the rest of the Cape. This hill is the first land that meets the eye on approaching the coast, and from its summit the view round almost the whole circle of the horizon takes in nothing but the vast sea and the vessels that may be sailing on it. There is no natural harbor in the town, but there are a few coves at which artificial harbors have been made by the construction, at great expense, of massive stone piers and breakwaters. At one of these coves, there is a short sand-beach, which probably gave the name by which this section of the Cape began, about the end of the seventeenth century, to be called—Sandy Bay.

Early Settlers.—The first separate grant of land, on the territory just described, was made to John Babson in 1695, at Straitsmouth, "to sett up fishing upon." There is nothing to show that he ever had a home there, and it is not known that a single family had settled on this territory before 1697. In 1688, Gloucester made its first general division of land, which was laid out into eighty-two lots, extending from Flat-Stone Cove, on the northerly side of the Cape, to the beach at Sandy Bay. The territory then granted was covered with wood, which the grantees wished to sell. The most convenient place for loading the vessels required for its transportation to market was at Sandy Bay; and tradition reports that it was by desire of the wood-coasters, and to help them in their work, that the first permanent settler at that place located himself there. Be it as it may, it is certain that Richard Tarr had a house at Sandy Bay, on land granted to him by Gloucester, as early as 1697. He seems to have been in Gloucester in 1693, and had, perhaps, already settled on this very spot, and must therefore be regarded as the first permanent settler on the territory now composing the town of Rockport. He acquired more land, became a prosperous farmer, and died about 1732, leaving seven sons and two daughters, and an estate of £399. His descendants are numerous; one hundred of whom are men bearing his name, now living on Cape Ann. His great-grandson Jabez, who died Nov. 25, 1844, aged eighty-five, was the last of the Cape Ann soldiers who fought on Bunker Hill. The town of Rockport has erected a granite monument, with an appropriate inscription, to the memory of its first settler.

Tarr had a pleasant location, with much good land around him, and no long time elapsed before he had a neighbor. In 1700, came John Pool, from Beverly, and bought of John Emerson, Jr., for £160, an extensive tract, situated at the southerly end of the lots laid out in 1688, to which he added greatly by purchase in subsequent years. He was a man of great enterprise and industry, as is apparent from the fact that he relieved his first purchase of the mortgage which he gave when he bought it; and, besides £540 personal property divided among his widow and nine children, left real estate valued at £2,209. He died May 19, 1727, aged fifty-seven. Besides two daughters, he had seven sons, who survived him, by whom the name has been extensively diffused; and it is still borne in Rockport by a large number of his descendants. Caleb, one of his grandsons, became a religious enthusiast, having his mind "blasted with excess of light." There is still extant in print an account of the "signs, wonders, and visions," by which God spoke to him for many years. A descendant of John Pool, — Ebenezer, — the antiquary of his native place, made a large collection of facts relating to its families and local events, and died April 10, 1877, in his ninety-first year. Two others are living, graduates of Brown University,—Nathaniel, in 1853, a farmer of Rockport, and Reuben B., in 1857, librarian of the Young Men's Christian Association in New York.

It is not known who was the first to join Tarr and Pool at Sandy Bay; but it is certain that, in 1702, Samuel Gott had taken up his abode at Halibut Point, about ten miles distant from them. He came from Wenham, and was, without doubt, a grandson of Charles, who came to Salem in 1628. He, also, must have got his living from the forest and the soil. Mr. Gott died Nov. 3, 1748, about seventy-one years of age. His will mentions six sons and two daughters; but the name is not now extensively borne in Rockport, though it still survives where it was first planted in the town. Joshua, a grandson of Samuel Gott, died there March 22, 1846, in his ninety-second year. One of his descendants was John, a trader of Sandy Bay, and representative, who died Nov. 24, 1845, aged sixty; and another was Jabez R., many years deacon of the Orthodox Church, and cashier of the bank there, who died March 15, 1877, aged eighty-two.

The first, and for many years the only, neighbors of Samuel Gott, on the Sandy Bay side, were William Andrews, who owned land near his in 1707, and who was a brother of his wife; Joshua Norwood, who was also connected with him by marriage; and Jethro Wheeler, who, in 1712, bought of Norwood, for £150, about one hundred acres of land near Pigeon Cove. Wheeler had lived in Newbury before 1695, and subsequently in Rowley, where he sold land, in 1704. About the time of Wheeler's settlement, or not long after it, Thomas Harris was permanently located at Pigeon Hill. He removed to the southerly end of the Cape, and died in 1764. In May, 1716, Edward Bragg had come from Ipswich, and was living in a house somewhere on the back side of the Cape. Passing along by Pool's and Tarr's to the extreme southerly end of Rockport, we find there, about 1708, a house in which Peter Emons then lived; and another occupied by Peter Bennet, who, at that time, owned a tract of four hundred acres opposite Milk Island, and who probably made his home there for the purpose of cutting down his wood, and hauling it to the landings on the sea-shore. At the end of the first quarter of the eighteenth century, nearly all of the land on the shore line of Rockport had passed into the possession of individual proprietors, and there can be no doubt that, during all this time, an active business was carried on in exporting the wood with which it was covered.

The settlement at Sandy Bay progressed slowly. In 1715, Ebenezer Davis was there, and then married Elizabeth, daughter of Richard Tarr. Probably he was a son of the "old Mr. John Davis," who is subsequently mentioned, and who was living there in 1749, then eighty-nine years old. Samuel Davis, who appears there in 1723, was certainly his son. He was a captain, an elder of the church, and died Aug. 25, 1770, aged sixty-seven. He had several children, four of whom (sons) were, at different times, lost at sea.

In 1719, Jabez Baker, of Beverly, removed to Sandy Bay, and settled near Richard Tarr. He became an elder of the church afterwards organized there, and died Aug. 24, 1758. In the next year, John Wonson married Honour, daughter of Richard Tarr, and settled there. Two years later, in 1722, came Edmund Grover, with three sons, from Beverly, and located themselves at Loblolly Cove, about a mile from Sandy Bay. He also became ruling elder of the church. His wife Mary died May 16, 1757, aged seventy-eight; and he took the next year a bride of fourscore, who survived the marriage but a few months. He died Feb. 5, 1761. Two of his sons, Nehemiah and Ebenezer, settled near him, the former of whom died Jan. 13, 1761, and the latter, Oct. 25, in the same year. Henry Witham, son of Thomas, of Gloucester, settled near the Grovers about 1733. He had a large family of children; became an elder of the Sandy Bay Church, and died March 18, 1777, aged eighty-two. John Rowe, son of Stephen, of Gloucester, married a daughter of Jabez Baker, and settled near his father-in-law at Sandy Bay. He was a lieutenant in

the French war, in 1755. His son Jabez served in the expedition against Canada, in 1759; and his son John commanded one of the Gloucester companies at the battle of Bunker Hill, in which his grandson John also took part. One of his descendants, David S. Rowe, graduated at Bowdoin College, and was for several years principal of the State Normal School, at Westfield. Joshua Norwood, already mentioned, finally settled at Straitsmouth. He had previously lived in a house, still standing, erected, according to tradition, by two Salem men, to conceal their mother, who was accused in the witchcraft fury of 1692. Joshua Norwood died in 1762, aged about eighty. The Rev. Francis Norwood, who graduated at Dartmouth College in 1818, was one of his descendants; and William Norwood, who died in Rockport, Oct. 7, 1867, aged ninety-three, was his grandson. James Parsons, grandson of Jeffrey, of the Farms, in Gloucester, fixed his residence at Sandy Bay in 1744, and died in January, 1789, aged sixty-seven, leaving many descendants. Besides the foregoing, there were among the early settlers on the territory now comprised in the town of Rockport:—Samuel Clark, Joshua Kendall, Thomas Dresser, Elias Cook, Stephen Butler, Thomas Goss, John Hobson, Jr., Eliezer Lurvey, Job Lane, Thomas Finson, Joseph Thurston, Ephraim Shelton, Israel Shelton, Daniel Williams, and Thomas Oakes.

These are all the settlers that are known to have resided on this territory before 1754. The most important event that occurred, during the progress of the settlement, was a distressing sickness, which, in 1738, took away from the twenty-seven families then composing it, as they say in a memorial to the General Court, "thirty-one of their pleasant children by death."

Incorporation as a Parish.—In 1725, the commoners of Gloucester granted those settlers land on which to erect a school-house, "to keep a good school in for the godly instruction of children, and teaching of them to read and write good English." Many of the people, however, were deprived of the advantage and enjoyment of public religious worship by their distance from the meeting-house of the First Parish in Gloucester, in the limits of which their settlement was included. They sometimes had preaching in the winter; and, in 1740, obtained from the parish remission of one-third of their parish rates, on condition of supporting religious worship in their own village four months in a year. The parish had once refused them this privilege, and were now apparently only induced to grant it by an Act of the General Court requiring them to do so. The settlement had, in 1754, attained such strength as would enable it to support a parish organization; and this was secured by an Act, approved by the governor, January 1 of that year, which made it the Fifth Parish of Gloucester.

The whole number of the tax-payers in the new parish, at the time of its incorporation, was thirty-seven, comprising the following-named persons:—

Jabez Baker, Stephen Butler, Capt. Samuel Davis, Thomas Dresser, Samuel Davis, 4th, Thomas Finson, Elder Edmond Grover, Nehemiah Grover, Nehemiah Grover, Jr., Ebenezer Grover, Thomas Goss, Thomas Harris, Jr., Samuel Harris, John Hobson, Eliezer Lurvey, Job Lane, Joshua Norwood, Jr., Ebenezer Pool, Francis Pool, Stephen Pool, Jonathan Pool, Caleb Pool, John Pool, James Parsons, Jr., John Rowe, Ephraim Shelton, Israel Shelton, William Tarr, Joshua Tarr, Benjamin Tarr, Benjamin Tarr, Jr., James Tarr, Jacob Tarr, Joseph Thurston, Jr., Henry Witham, Samuel Wonson, and Daniel Williams.

Joshua Norwood, Sr., and Thomas Harris, Sr., paid no tax of any kind. Nineteen of the number paid only a poll-tax. The whole assessment for town-tax was £12 3*s.* 6*d.* The three largest taxes were those of three of the Pools, who, together, paid £3 0*s.* 3*d.*

An account of the Sandy Bay Parish, as one of the organized religious bodies of Gloucester, is given in the history of that town, in this volume, to which the reader is referred. The population of the parish, in 1754, was about two hundred, of whom about one-half got their living from the sea, and the rest by cultivating the soil. Only two vessels of sufficient value to be taxed were then owned there, and the taxable property of the settlement was about one twenty-fourth part of the whole valuation of Gloucester.

Shore Fishing.—The proximity of these people to the ocean gave easy access to the ledges off the coast, and invited early attention to shore-fishing; but there was one serious obstacle to success in that pursuit: they had no harbor or cove in which boats suitable for the business could be kept in safety during the prevalence of an easterly gale. They could fish, therefore, only from small boats that could be easily hauled ashore; but with these they could not proceed to any fishing-ground far from the coast. With such boats they did commence the business early, and the practice of wherry-fishing has been continued to the present time. For the use of larger boats, in which they could safely proceed several miles from the shore, and remain out over night, a harbor was indispensable; and as nature had denied them this convenience, they resolved to try what art could do to supply the defect; but their means were too limited for the accomplishment of much in this way. They did, however, make a beginning; for which purpose Ebenezer Pool, John Pool, and Benjamin Tarr, with such others as should join with them, had, in 1743, liberty to build a wharf and warehouse at Bearskin Neck,—a short tongue of land projecting from Sandy Bay Cove into the sea; but it was not till 1811 that the people felt themselves able to construct an artificial harbor. In that year they erected a breakwater on the westerly side of the neck; and, in 1819, a wharf opposite; the two structures forming a small but safe haven, and remaining to this day an honorable testimonial of their enterprise and industry.

They had, from the beginning of their shore-fishing, continued to pursue it with their wherries and small boats, going out even in the winter season, when they often disposed of their fish in a frozen condition to the traders who brought in country produce from Vermont and Canada. The only account preserved, showing the annual product of this fishery in its early years, is one that reports the number of boats engaged in it, at the commencement of the Revolutionary War, to have been seventy, which landed on an average one hundred and sixty quintals of fish each. The construction of an artificial harbor gave the people better accommodations for business, and they procured larger vessels for their fishery, and, in the course of a few years, engaged in the coastwise trade.

Breakwater at Long Cove.—Additional facilities for the transaction of their maritime business were afforded to the people of Sandy Bay by the building of a breakwater at Long Cove by the United States government. This was designed to be simply an extension, in an easterly direction, of Bearskin Neck. The work was commenced in 1836, and was in progress till 1840, when the appropriation for it was exhausted, leaving the structure still incomplete. The end projecting into the seas was greatly damaged by the furious seas that beat against it during a heavy gale in October, 1841; but, though incomplete and damaged, the work is useful in rendering the Cove a safe place of anchorage, and in protecting from the violence of an easterly gale the vessels lying at the piers since erected within it. The erection of this breakwater was a benefit to the people of the Cape, not only in a maritime, but in an agricultural, point of view; for the removal from their fields of the vast amount of stone used in its construction greatly increased the value of the land. Other circumstances marking and contributing to the prosperity of Sandy Bay, were the establishment of a post-office, with a tri-weekly mail, in 1825; and the formation of a mutual marine insurance company in 1827. Up to 1840, this section had outstripped all the older localities of the town in a proportionate increase of population. It did, in fact, gain largely and steadily in numbers for a long period, while the rest of the town was either stationary or retrograding. Its population at the close of the Revolution is estimated to have been four hundred; and, in 1792, seven hundred. In a little less than fifty years from the last-named date, it had nearly quadrupled, while that of the Harbor Parish had not even doubled in the same time. This growth is attributed to the success of the shore-fishing for most of this period, to persevering industry in agriculture, and the quarrying of stone; to all of which, the economy and other good habits of the people were important auxiliaries. Having attained a population of 2,650, there seemed to be no good reason why it should remain any longer a village of Gloucester.

Incorporation as a Town.—The interest and convenience of the people at the head of the Cape appeared to require that they should be set off as a town long before the final separation took place. They did, indeed, make an attempt to that end in 1818, when the subject was brought into town-meeting, and a committee was chosen to consider it, but, wanting unanimity among themselves, no further action was taken till 1827. In that year, the matter was again agitated, and brought formally before the town, but ended as before. In neither case was the project opposed by the people of the other sections of Gloucester. When, therefore, the Cape people ceased to disagree among themselves, which, at last, they were wise enough to do, they found no obstacle to a peaceful and equitable separation, and the organization of one of those popular New England democracies,—an independent town government.

The act for the incorporation of Rockport passed the two legislative branches, and received the approval of the governor on the same

day, Feb. 27, 1840. The first town-meeting was held on the 9th of March following, when David Babson, Jr., James Haskell, and Thomas O. Marshall were chosen selectmen, John Gott, Esq., town treasurer, and Col. William Pool, town clerk. Having held the office by successive re-elections nearly twenty-nine years, the latter resigned in 1868, and died Nov. 3, 1871, aged seventy-five. He was succeeded by his son Calvin W. Pool, the present town clerk.

The portion of the old town set off as the new contained about two-sevenths of the property of the whole; and it was upon this basis that the settlement in relation to debts, liabilities, and property was made.

The territory of Rockport includes all of the Fifth Parish of Gloucester, and a portion of the Third adjoining it, situated on the north-east end of the Cape. The principal settlement of the latter section is at Pigeon Cove, now called the North Village of Rockport. A few settlers were scattered around this cove and in its vicinity before the Revolutionary War; and, in 1792, thirteen boats fished from it: but the place began to rise in importance in 1831, chiefly in consequence of the quarrying carried on there, and the erection of a breakwater and pier at the cove for the accommodation of that business, which have also afforded increased facilities for carrying on the fishery. The breakwater, though apparently a sufficient barrier against any sea, yielded in the great storm of 1841, when the breakers knocked a portion of it down, and swept into the cove as of old, causing considerable destruction of property. The break, however, was soon repaired, the whole work was strengthened, and it now contributes materially to the prosperity of this thriving village.

Death of Old Physicians.—One of the first events to be noticed in the history of the new town is that of the death of an old physician of the place. On the 5th of November, 1841, died Dr. John Manning, aged eighty. His father was Dr. John Manning, of Ipswich, whose father was Dr. Joseph Manning, of the same town, both of whom lived to advanced age. At the age of seventeen, he joined the American army, in Rhode Island, as surgeon's mate. Afterwards he practised four years in Chester, N. H., and removed thence to Gloucester Harbor about 1786. In 1798, he took up his abode in Sandy Bay, and made that his home for the rest of his life. He gave some attention to pursuits outside of his profession, first to commerce and afterwards to agriculture; but the ample estate he acquired came principally from his medical practice, in which he was distinguished for skill and success. In early life he was an ardent politician of the Federal school, and was frequently elected a representative by his party. Three sons of Dr. Manning graduated at Harvard College,—Joseph B. in 1808, John in 1810, and Charles B. in 1819.

Joseph B. studied law, but never engaged in active practice. He employed his time chiefly in philological studies, the fruits of which he gave to the world in two small printed works,—"Epeögraphy; or, Notations of Orthoëpy," &c.; and "The Voice of Letters." He died a bachelor at Ipswich, while on a visit, May 22, 1854, aged sixty-seven. John settled as a physician in Waldoborough, Me., and practised there till 1842, when he removed to Rockport, and practised there till his death, Feb. 7, 1852, at the age of sixty-two. One of his four sons, William H., was collector of the customs in Gloucester five years; and another, Joseph, is a physician and dentist in Rockport. Charles B. was a physician in his native place, and died there Dec. 16, 1843, aged forty-four.

Another aged physician of the town died Nov. 29, 1842. This was Dr. James Goss, at the age of seventy-nine. He was a native of Billerica, and settled in Sandy Bay about 1792. Besides attending to the duties of his medical practice, he was often employed in writing deeds and other instruments; and by his various services secured the respect of society as a useful man. He was one of the representatives of Gloucester in 1832.

Centennial Celebration of the Incorporation of the Sandy Bay Parish.—An event of great interest to the people of Rockport took place on the 2d of January, 1834, when the people celebrated the one hundredth anniversary of their incorporation as a parish. The principal feature of this occasion was the delivery by Dr. Lemuel Gott, of Berlin, Mass., of an historical discourse, at the Congregational Church, in the afternoon and evening of that day. A recent snow-storm of unusual severity prevented the attendance of people from abroad, but the large church was entirely filled by the inhabitants of the town, who listened with great interest as the orator of the day recounted the most prominent events in the history of the bay, of which he was himself a native, and a descendant of one of the first settlers on the end of the Cape. Dr. Gott also delivered, at the dedication of a school-house in Rockport, an historical discourse on the schools of Sandy Bay; and it is a matter of surprise that some successful public or private effort has not been made to induce the author to print these valuable memorials.

Raid of Women upon the Liquor Saloons.—A memorable event in the history of Rockport occurred on the 8th of July, 1856. At nine o'clock in the morning of that day a regularly organized band of women, led by a man bearing an American ensign, appeared in the principal street of the town, for the purpose of making a demonstration against the liquor saloons of the place. As mothers, wives, sisters, and daughters, they were suffering under the terrible evils of which these sinks of vice are the cause, and they determined to make one desperate effort to get rid of them. Animated by this purpose, they proceeded successively to thirteen places where ardent spirits were unlawfully kept for sale; and, seizing casks, demijohns, and decanters, containing the bane of their happiness, poured their contents into the street, occasionally breaking a vessel in order to hasten the flow of the hated liquid to the ground. Having finished their work at about three o'clock, P. M., they proceeded to the "Square," and exchanged congratulations upon the performance of the good deed; after which they separated and went to their respective homes. Of course the only justification that the women could plead, was that the sufferers by an intolerable public evil may proceed in their own way to correct it when no legal remedy can be had.

Religious Societies.—At the time of the incorporation of Rockport the church of the Fifth Parish was the largest religious body in Gloucester, and it still maintains that rank among the Protestant sects of Rockport. The Rev. Wakefield Gale, who was then its pastor, remained in office about twenty years, and was succeeded by the following-named ministers: the Revs. W. H. Dunning, J. W. Cooper, and C. C. McIntire, who is the present pastor. A second Congregational church was organized in Rockport in 1855, and continued in existence a few years, under the pastoral care of the Rev. David Bremner, but it has ceased to support preaching.

The Baptists, Universalists, and Methodists also had organized societies in Rockport while it was still a part of Gloucester, and they all continue to exist and to maintain religious worship. The Baptist Society has no settled minister. The pastor of the Universalist Society is the Rev. Byron J. Russell.

A chapel for the use of the Roman Catholics of the town was opened in 1857. The influx of foreign population has been so large in recent years that this sect has now a large congregation in Rockport, of which the Rev. Thomas Barry is the priest.

Since the incorporation of the town the growth of the North Village has encouraged the organization of two religious societies in that locality, one by the Orthodox and one by the Universalists, both of which have preaching, though neither has a settled minister.

Business of Rockport.—In the first years of its existence as a town, the business of Rockport was in a depressed condition. It was but a temporary check however, and the town soon started upon a career of steady and increasing prosperity in all its business activities, which continued till the great collapse of 1873. During the period of depression the enterprise of the people was turned to manufacturing. A small establishment for the manufacture of isinglass from hake-sounds had been in existence twenty years or more, but it was of very little account in the way of public benefit. An event of more promise in that way was the erection in 1848 of a mill for making cotton-duck, the cost of which, together with that of a large addition made afterwards, became a total loss to the stockholders, and the mill was sold to pay its debts. It now manufactures another kind of cotton fabrics; and, as it employs many hands when in operation, it makes a considerable amount of business for the town.

About this time a bank was established, which went into operation in 1851, and has proved a useful and successful institution. A savings bank was also put into operation, and had gathered a large amount of deposits, when public distrust of its soundness recently compelled it to close its business.

The shore-fishing of Rockport has not increased materially, if at all, since the town was incorporated; nor have the people engaged in the Georges and Grand Bank fisheries, which have been prosperously pursued in the parent town. The artificial harbors of the new town are of insufficent capacity for the accommodation of any considerable number of vessels suitable for those distant fisheries, and its people will probably ever be obliged to confine their maritime employments to the boat and wherry fishing, which was the chief business of the place a hundred years ago. This shore-fishery is mostly done in wherries, which, in little fleets of ten or a dozen each, are towed out to the fishing-grounds and back by small schooners. In

some cases the fisherman rows his wherry out and back, as of yore. At different seasons of the year cod, hake, and pollock resort to these fishing-grounds, and sometimes they are found so plenty that a few weeks' labor yields enough for as many months' support of the fisherman's family. In one day, in 1873, an old fisherman of eighty-five years rowed his wherry out to the fishing-ground, four miles distant, fished all day, and then rowed her back with a load that brought him over twelve dollars. But it is not often that the young fisherman even, however expert at the hook and line, can do as well as that. At best, the business is precarious, and does not invite the attention of the young and enterprising, who seek constant employment. The whole number of fishermen in Rockport is about two hundred, and, besides wherries, there are ten boats, and between twenty and thirty schooners, employed in the fishing business of the town.

A more reliable means for the increase and prosperity of Rockport is found in the ledges of granite which abound in the northerly part of its territory. It is said that the first cutting of this material on Cape Ann was by Joshua Norwood, of Pigeon Cove, who, about 1710, began to supply the fishermen with mooring stones. These were slabs of granite about six feet square and ten to fifteen inches thick, with a hole in the centre fifteen inches in diameter, through which a part of the trunk of a white-oak tree, about twenty feet in length, with a portion of the roots attached, was put. Thus prepared, these stones were lowered into the sea in the coves of the Cape, at places where the fishing-boats would float at low water. This was the humble beginning of a business, which, in the two towns of the Cape, has in recent years employed a thousand men at a time. It was not, however, till about a century after Norwood's first work in stone-cutting that the business of cutting blocks of stone out of the solid ledge, for purposes to which the article is now so commonly applied, began to be carried on. The writer of these lines has heard it affirmed that the first two buildings erected in Gloucester on a foundation of cut and hammered granite were the Universalist meeting-house, and the building now known as the Ocean House, both built about 1805.

In the autumn of 1823, Nehemiah Knowlton, of Sandy Bay, cut out a large quantity of stone, suitable for cellars, underpinning, and door-steps; and, in the spring of 1824, advertised it for sale in a Boston newspaper. Seeing this advertisement, Maj. Bates, of Quincy, came to see Mr. Knowlton's stone and bought it. Not long after, Mr. Bates leased a ledge at Sandy Bay, and commenced operation with a gang of men, teams, and vessels for the transportation of his stone to market. Mr. Knowlton must, therefore, be regarded as the pioneer in the great stone business now carried on at the head of the Cape. He was a native of Hamilton, Mass, was for many years a citizen of Sandy Bay, and took an active part in town affairs. He was a delegate to the State Convention in 1820, representative in 1831, and died Nov. 25, 1847, aged seventy-two.

The principal successors of Mr. Bates in stone-cutting at the Cape has been Messrs. William Torrey, Beriah Colburn, Ezra Eames, John Stimson, and Preston, Fernald & Co. Mr. Eames died Aug. 17, 1874, aged seventy-three. Mr. Stimson is treasurer of the Rockport Granite Company, the largest establishment now carrying on the business in the town of Rockport, having a capital of $200,000. It owns seven vessels, and has sometimes as many as seventy-five transient vessels in its employ, carrying stone to New York, Baltimore, and other places. Their quarries furnish a superior quality of granite for building and monumental work. It admits of a high polish, and is not excelled in any good quality required in this stone by any granite in the United States. In all departments of its business this company employs 250 men. Two other companies employ about 150 men in all, and the whole number of men employed in the business, including those of two companies not now in operation, has, during a brisk demand for stone, been as high as seven hundred.

In addition to what is here given in relation to the business employments of the people of Rockport, it may be added that its population includes fifty-four farmers.

Rockport in the Civil War. — This town bore an honorable part in the great struggle for the Union. The largest bodies of its men enlisted in a single regiment were thirty-five in the 17th twenty-five in the 30th, seventeen in the 32d, twenty-eight in the 35th, and forty-seven in the 50th, Massachusetts regiments. It also had twelve in the 5th Maine Regiment, which took part in the first battle of Bull Run. Besides these, the town was represented in more than twenty other military organizations. The whole number of men it furnished for the army was 352, of whom six were killed in battle, and about thirty others died in the service. The names of the former were: George L. Berry, killed at Salem Church, Va., May 5, 1863; George Clark, 3d, at Spottsylvania, Va., May 18, 1864; Walter Johnson, at Shady Grove, Va., May 30, 1864; Sylvanus Babson, at Laurel Hill, Va., May 18, 1864; Samuel F. Lefflan, at Fredericksburg, Va., June 16, 1864; and Aaron Hodgkins, Jr., at the capture of Fort Fisher.

The town made ample provision for the families of its soldiers, and met them on their return from the scenes of war with a hearty greeting. Thirty-six, who came at one time, had a public reception, and were addressed by ex-President Franklin Pierce, who was then visiting the sea-side for the benefit of his health.

The Schools of the Town. — Rockport had, in 1716, 793 children of school age, to whom its public schools were open seven months in the year. In the table of the board of education, in which all the towns of the State are numerically arranged according to the percentage of their taxable property appropriated for public schools in that year, Rockport stands 294th in the State, and twenty-seventh in the county of Essex. This low rank does not indicate poorer quality of instruction, but a less amount of it, occasioned by higher wages to teachers. The average monthly pay of its female teachers is very much in advance of that of the parent town.

Death of a Beloved Physician. — On the 21st of January, 1878, died Dr. Benjamin Haskell, at the age of sixty-eight. He was a native of the town, his father, Josiah Haskell, having removed from Gloucester Harbor to Sandy Bay about 1800. The son graduated at Amherst College in 1832, and spent the whole of his professional life in his native place. He was held in high esteem as a learned and skilful physician and a good man.

Conclusion. — The movement of population in this town at different periods, from the time of its incorporation, is exhibited in the following statement: —

Population by United States census,		1840, . .	2,650
"	" " " "	1850, . .	3,274
"	" State census,	1855, . .	3,498
"	" United States census,	1860, . .	3,237
"	" State census,	1865, . .	3,367
"	" United States census,	1870, . .	3,904
"	" State census,	1875, . .	4,490

Its increase in wealth has been steady, and large enough to be beneficial. The signs of poverty are few, and, with its inexhaustible resources of sea and land, there seems to be no reason to fear that it will ever cease to be the abode of a contented people.

ROWLEY.

Rowley is a long and narrow township, in the north-easterly section of the county, thirty-two miles from Boston by the Eastern Railroad, which has a station about one-half a mile eastward from the village. It was incorporated, Sept. 4, 1639, and then embraced what is now extended from the sea to the Merrimac River: Bradford, Groveland, Georgetown, and part of Boxford, which was for some time known as "Rowley Village." It received its named from Rowley, a parish of East Riding, York, Eng., whence its first minister, Ezekiel Rogers, had come. The Congregational Church is in north latitude, 42° 43′ 07.16″, and in west longitude, 70° 53′ 08.25″. The boundaries of the town are Newbury on the north, from which it is, in part, separated by Parker River and Mud Creek, the Atlantic Ocean on the east, Ipswich on the south, Boxford on the south-west, and Georgetown on the north-west.

A small section of Plum Island belongs to the town, but the land is of no great value. The surface of the town is drained by Mill River and its tributaries, among which is Great Swamp Brook, on the north and west, and by Rowley River, navigable for small craft to the railway station on the south. Plum Island River, a broad and shallow creek, separates the main body of the town from Plum Island, and the meadows on the westerly margin of that stream furnish valuable crops of salt hay. Mill River affords some motive-power, and the banks of Rowley River abound in clams. The surface of the town is agreeably diversified, and, in one instance, rises to an eminence of 264 feet above the level of the sea. This elevation is on the confines of Ipswich, and bears the name of Prospect Hill. From it a charming view of the valley of the Merrimac River, the neighboring villages, and the ocean, is obtained. The geological formation is sienite, porphyry, and alluvium; and many bowlders, brought from afar in the glacial period, are scattered over the town. The soil is well adapted to the growth of forest and fruit trees, and also to that of corn, oats, barley, hay, and culinary vegetables.

The population of the town in 1875 was 1,162, of whom 602 were males and 560 females. One person had attained the age of ninety-seven years. The number of voters was 381, and of ratable polls 395. There were no persons of color. The town had 179 farmers, ninety-two boot and shoe makers, sixteen merchants and traders, the same number of farm laborers, eleven carpenters, seven painters, and seven persons retired from business. There were five female teachers, 297 housewives, six housekeepers, and eighteen domestic servants. The value of goods manufactured for the year ending May 1, 1875, was as follows: For boots and shoes, $88,500; for heels, $45,000; for flour, $10,000; for lumber, $5,000; and for wagons and wheels, $3,000. Blacksmithing was done to the value of $1,600; and butchering to the value of $26,000; the total amount of capital employed in all being $34,550. The number of barrels of clams taken was 2,200, valued at $4,400.

The whole number of dwelling-houses was 253; of farms, 154, embracing in all 7,213 acres; of horses, 183; of cows, 353; of oxen, forty; of sheep, fourteen; of apple-trees, 12,745; and the total valuation of the town was $515,461.

The town has four public schools, two churches, one of which is Congregational, and the other is Baptist; a good hotel, called "The Eagle House," George J. Smith, proprietor; two saw-mills, one grist-mill, and one shingle-mill.

The principal village on level ground, near the confines of Ipswich, is finely shaded with elms; and some of the streets still bear the names of the places whence the early settlers came. The people, mostly engaged in agricultural pursuits, are noted for industry, frugality, and the love of home. They are, for the most part, the lineal descendants of those who purchased the lands of the aborigines. Among them are found the substantial virtues, and many of the customs of their worthy ancestors. The farms are generally kept in good order, and some of the dwelling-houses, as the Jewett house, bear the marks of great antiquity. A building was taken down in 1878, which had inscribed or cut into one of its oaken beams the date of 1686. The timbers were still sound. The houses are generally surrounded with fruit-trees, shrubbery, and flowers, and present an air of comfort and tranquillity. The town has long been noted for the excellence and abundance of its apples. The principal amusements of the people consist in church sociables, excursions either by land or water, picnics, berry parties, dancing, base ball, and croquet. The old husking parties have long since passed out of date; yet hunting and fishing along the seaboard, where the supply of birds and fish seems inexhaustible, may be as popular now as in the olden times.

Some writer, speaking of Rowley, says: "It is one of the pleasantest towns in Essex County. There is everything about it substantial, prosperous and agreeable. In the summer season, it is hardly possible to go over the green hillocks, and through the quiet intervals, along the roads, dust laid by the late showers, or by the sparkling brooks fringed with luxuriant grass and flowers, and see the quiet and peace reigning everywhere in this old town,—the contentment and prosperity of its stable farmers, and the thrift and joyousness of its active mechanics, without wishing that we had been born in Rowley; that it had been our lot first to have heard there the lowing of the cattle, and down its hillsides to have tumbled the ripened pumpkins, when autumn yellowed the leaves. Let the world go. To be born in such a place, and in the sereneness of old age to die in such a place, and to sleep at last in the same dust with the good old fathers of olden times, were enough to fill the cup of mortal happiness full."

The English, under the guidance of the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, commenced a settlement here as early as 1638. The Act of incorporation is thus briefly expressed: "4th day of 7th month 1639, ordered that Mr Ezekiel Rogers plantation be called Rowley."

On the 13th of May, 1640, it was declared by the General Court "that Rowley bounds is to be eight miles from their meeting house in a straight line.; and then a cross line diameter from Ipswich Ryver to Merrimack Ryver when it doth not prejudice any former grant." In October of the same year the Court ordered "that the neck of land on Merrimack, near Corchitawick be added to Rowley."

On the "tenth of the eleaventh Anno Dni 1643, Thomas Nelson, Edward Carleton, Humphrey Reynon & Francis Parrot made a survey of the town and a register of the several house lots of from 1½ to 6 acres then laid out to the settlers. They were as follows: On Bradford Street, Thomas Ellethrop, John Dresser, Hugh Chaplin, Peter Cooper, Thomas Sumner, John Burbank, Thomas Palmer, William Wilde, William Jackson. Hugh Smith, Michael Hopkinson, John Boynton, William Boynton, Thomas Dickinson, Joseph Jewett, Maxemilian Jewett, Jane Grant, John Spofford, George Kilborne & Margaret Stanton whose lot contained only one acre. On Wethersfield street, John Remington, James Barker, William Stickney, William Scales, Matthew Boyes, Jane Brocklebank, Thomas Mighill, Margery Shove, Humphrey Reynor, & Ezekiel Rogars who had six acres. On Holmes street John Miller, John Jarrat, Francis Parrot, Edward Carleton, Henry Sands, Thomas Leaver, John Trumble, John Haseltine, Thomas Tenney, Robert Haseltine, Richard Swan, Thomas Lilforth, Richard Thorlay, Francis Lambert, Robert Hunter, William Acy, Thomas Miller, William Harris, John Harris, Thomas Harris, John Newmarch, William Bellingham, Thomas Nelson, Thomas Barker, Sebastian Briggam, George Abbot, Edward Bridges, Cushins Crosby & Richard Nalam. Sixteen other lots were soon afterwards laid out to the following persons, viz.: John Smith, Mark Prime, William Tenney, Nicholas Jackson, Richard Leighton, John Pearson, Edward Sawer, James Bailey, Richard Holmes, Thomas Burkley, John Tillison, Samuel Bellingham, Thomas Sawer, Daniel Harris, William Law & John Hill.

The common lands of the town were assigned to the settlers in proportion to the extent of their respective house-lots. A military company was soon formed of which Sebastian Brigham was appointed captain. It was to be drilled eight days during the year, and the fine for absence was five shillings per day. The people early distinguished themselves for the manufacture of cotton, hemp and flax cloth. "Our supplies from England," says Winthrop, in 1643, "failing much, men began to look about them and fell to a manufacture of cotton, whereof

we had store from Barbadoes, and of hemp & flax wherein Rowley, to their great commendation, exceeded all other towns."

Of the early settlers here, Edward Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," says: "They consisted of about three score families. Their people, being very industrious every way, soon built as many houses, and were the first people that set upon making cloth in this western world; for which end they built a fulling-mill, and caused their little ones to be very diligent in spinning cotton-wool, many of them having been clothiers in England."

This fulling-mill was built in 1643 by John Pearson, in the parish of Byfield, which then belonged to Rowley.

The first-recorded marriage in town was that of Robert and Anna Hasseltine, in 1639; and the first-recorded birth was that of Robert Carleton, in the same year.

In the minds of the people, the church was the leading institution; the minister the chief guide in things temporal as well as spiritual. Hence a plain meeting-house was erected some time during the first year of the settlement; a church was organized Dec. 3, and the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers installed as pastor. He was born in Weathersfield, Eng., in 1590, and was for some time chaplain to Sir Francis Barrington, after which he was pastor of the church in Rowley, Yorkshire, for about twenty years; when, in 1638, he came, with a large company of his people, to Rowley, Mass. He was an eloquent speaker, and preached the election sermon before the General Court, in 1643, in which he maintained that the same person should not hold the office of governor for two successive years.

Samuel Mather (Harvard College, 1643) was some time an assistant of Mr. Rogers in Rowley "where the Zeal of the People to have him settled, was the Cause of his not settling there at all."

The closing days of Mr. Rogers were far from tranquil. Late in life he married a third wife, but "that very night," says Cotton Mather, "a fire burnt his dwelling house to the ground, with all the goods that he had under his roof." His right arm was soon afterwards rendered useless by a fall from a horse; so that he was obliged to learn to write with his left hand. After a lingering illness, he died Jan. 23, 1661, aged 70 years. He gave the greater part of his lands and his house to the town and church of Rowley.

This property subsequently reverted to the use of Harvard College.

It does not appear that the inhabitants of Rowley were ever much annoyed in the settlement by the Indians; they were, however, frequently called upon to march away, and to fight for the defence of other places. On the 1st of September, 1642, several men were ordered from the place to disarm Passaconaway, on the Merrimac River, who was then supposed to be inimical to the English. They were out three days, and received three shillings each for their services. In August, 1653, twenty-seven men from Rowley and Ipswich were ordered out on a scouting expedition, to discover the intentions of the savages assembled at Piscataqua. They were absent four days.

The first grist-mill in town was erected by Thomas Nelson, anterior to 1645, on Mill River. Ten acres of land were granted to him the preceding year, "for encouragement towards building the mill." After the death of Mr. Nelson, 1648, John Pearson made improvements in the mill.

The first physician in town was Dr. Anthony Crosby, who practised here from 1652 until about 1670. He was followed by Dr. David Bennett, who died here, Feb. 4, 1718–19, at the remarkable age of 103 years. The first town clerk was John Miller, from 1639 to 1641; the next was Francis Parrot, from 1642 to 1655. He was also a representative to the General Court in 1640 and in 1642.

The Rev. Samuel Phillips (Harvard College, 1650) was settled in June, 1651, as teacher of Mr. Rogers' church, on a salary varying from £50 to £90 per annum. During the sickness of the pastor, Mr. Phillips performed the whole duties of the ministry, for which service the selectmen ordered that £5 should be paid to him. After the decease of Mr. Rogers, his widow, and those in sympathy with her, continued to annoy Mr. Phillips for the space of eighteen years, on account of his reception of this money, to which they persistently claimed he had no legal right. The case was decided in favor of the widow by the Ipswich court; but the decision was overruled by the General Court, and by a church council held on the 19th of Nov., 1679, and the course of Mr. Phillips justified.

On the 15th of Nov., 1665, Samuel Shepard (Harvard College, 1658) was ordained pastor of the church, Mr. Phillips still acting as teacher. Mr. Shepard dying, April 7, 1668, Mr. Phillips was then ordained as pastor, in which office he continued until his death, which occurred, April 26, 1696, after a ministry, either as teacher or pastor, of forty-five years. During the last thirty years of his life, fifty-four were added to the church, and at his death the office of teacher in that church is supposed to have ceased.

Mr. Phillips married Sarah, daughter of Mr. Samuel and Mary Everhard Appleton. From them Mr. Wendell Phillips, of Boston, is descended.

The Rev. Mr. Phillips preached the election sermon before the General Court in 1678. A monument was erected over his remains by the Hon. Jonathan Phillips, in November, 1839, bearing this inscription:

"Beneath this stone are buried the remains of Samuel Phillips, the second pastor of the church in Rowley."

"He was born in Boxford, Eng., A. D. 1625; came to America with his father, George Phillips, first minister of Watertown, Mass., in 1630: was graduated at Harvard College in 1650: was settled in the Christian ministry in this place in June, 1651, where he served God and his generation faithfully for forty-five years, and died, April 22, 1696. Near this spot are buried the remains of his wife, Sarah, daughter of Samuel Appleton, of Ipswich. She died, July 15, 1714, aged eighty-six years. From them have descended among others, George Phillips, minister at Brookhaven, Long Island, N. Y., who died, 1739, aged seventy-five years. Samuel Phillips, minister at Andover, Mass., died, June 5, 1771, aged eighty-one years. Samuel Phillips, one of the founders of Phillips Academy, Andover, died, Aug. 21, 1790, aged seventy-six years. John Phillips, founder of Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., died, April, 1795, aged seventy-six years. Samuel Phillips, lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, died in Andover, Feb. 10, 1802, aged fifty years. William Phillips, a distinguished merchant and patriotic citizen, died in Boston, January, 1804, aged eighty-two years. William Phillips, lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts, died in Boston, May 26, 1827, aged seventy-seven years; and John Phillips, President of the Senate of Massachusetts, and first mayor of Boston, died in Boston, May 29, 1823. This monument is erected by Hon. Jonathan Phillips, a descendant in the sixth generation, A. D. 1839."

The earliest mention of a meeting-house bell is in 1653. It was hung in a frame, as it was called, near the meeting-house. During the ministry of Mr. Phillips, Samuel Brocklebank, William Tenney, John Pearson, and Ezekiel Jewett were appointed deacons.

The earliest mention of a school is Feb. 3, 1656–57, when William Boynton was engaged by the town as a teacher for the term of seven years. This church then agreed to loan him £5, for enlarging his house for the accommodation of his school. He usually received £2 10s. yearly for sweeping the meeting-house, and for ringing the bell. He probably taught here for about twenty-four years, when he was followed, in 1682, by Mr. Simon Wainwright; after whom the Rev. Samuel Phillips was employed as a teacher.

The town in early times was much infested with wolves and catamounts. It paid for many years a bounty for killing wild animals. Several pens were built for taking wolves. It is stated in the records, in 1661, that "Lieut Samuel Brocklebank, Henry Rily, Thomas Wood, John Grant, Richin Rainer & John Migill, having engaged to make a pen for catching wolves, had the privilege granted, that nobody else shall make any pen anywhere upon the Cow Commons during the space of three years, and they are to have for every wolf taken by their pen, fifty shillings, paid by the town."

That part of the town subsequently known as "New Rowley" began to be settled about the year 1669, and it is presumable that John Spofford, Sr., and his two sons, John and Samuel, were the first actual white residents of the place.

In 1673, Samuel Brocklebank was appointed captain; Philip Nelson, lieutenant; and John Johnson, ensign, of the military company.

In the autumn of 1675, twelve Rowley men were impressed into the service to meet the exigencies of King Philip's War, then raging. Their names are John Hopkinson, John Stickney, Joseph Jewett, Thomas Palmer, John Jackson, Stephen Mighill, John Leighton, Caleb Jackson, William Brown, Samuel Tiller, Joseph Bixby, and Simon Gowin. These men and others, under Capt. Brocklebank, were led in January, 1676, to Narragansett, and thence in March to Marlborough, where, in an assault upon the Indians, one of the company had his hand badly shattered by the breaking of his gun.

Capt. Samuel Wadsworth, with fifty men, was sent from Boston to the relief of Marlborough. Learning on his arrival that the enemy had gone to Sudbury, he proceeded with his own and Capt. Brocklebank's party towards that town. Discovering a few Indians, and pursuing them about a mile into the woods, the English found themselves suddenly surrounded by some five hundred of the savages, who with hideous yelling opened a destructive fire. Almost every one of the men engaged on our side was slain. A monument was erected on the

spot about 1730, by Benjamin Wadsworth, then president of Harvard College, and brother of Capt. Samuel Wadsworth, bearing this inscription :—

"Capt Samuel Wadsworth of Milton, his Lieut Sharp of Brooklin, Capt Brocklebank of Rowley, with about Twenty-six other Sould^{rs} Fighting for the Defence of their country, were slain, By y^{e} Indian enemy April 18th 1676, & lye Buried in this place." The date should have been April 21st instead of April 18th.

Another monument was erected on this spot in 1852, with this inscription, still erroneous in respect to the day of the month :—

"This monument is erected by the Commonwealth of Massachusetts and by the town of Sudbury in grateful remembrance of the service and sufferings of the founders of the State, and especially in honor of Capt. S. Wadsworth of Milton, Capt Brocklebank of Rowley and Lieut. Sharp of Brookline, and 26 others men of their command who fell near this spot on the 18th (21st) of April, 1676, while defending the frontier settlement against the allied Indian forces of Philip of Pokonoket. 1852." As John Hopkinson, John Stickney, Joseph Jewett, Thomas Palmer, Stephen Mighill, John Leighton, and Caleb Jackson, of Capt. Brocklebank's command returned to Rowley subsequent to the engagement, it is probable that they were left as a guard, either at Marlborough or Sudbury, and so escaped the fate of their companions.

The Rev. Edward Payson, born in Roxbury, June 20, 1657 (Harvard College, 1677), was ordained as colleague with Mr. Phillips, Oct. 25, 1682, and continued in the ministry until his death, which occurred Aug. 22, 1732.

In 1675, the westerly section of the town, known as the "Merrimack Lands," or "Rowley Village by Merrimack," which began to be settled by Robert and John Haseltine and William Wild, about 1650, was incorporated as a town under the name of Bradford. A meeting-house had already been constructed, and the Rev. Zachariah Symmes, though not then ordained, was preaching in the place.

The number of families in the town, in 1680, was 129, and to oversee these families, eleven tithingmen were appointed; viz., John Palmer, Abel Longley, Thomas Tenney, Thomas Wood, Daniel Wicom, John Dresser, Joseph Chaplin, Ivory Kilborn, and John Pearson.

The south-western section of the town, long known as "Rowley Village," was incorporated as the town of Boxford, Aug. 12, 1685, it then containing about forty families. The petitioners for the Act of incorporation were Abraham Riddington, Sr., Joseph Bixby, Sr., Samuel Buswell, Sr., William Foster, and John Peabody. In the petition they say: "Wee lying so far remote from Rowley that wee cannot comfortably atend God's public worship for the greatest part of the year, it is therefore the general desire of the inhabitants of Rowley village to bee a preparing to settle a minnester amongst ourselves as soon as conveuantly wee can, thearfore wee desiar that the Honoured General Court would bee pleased to grant us township preveleg, that so wee might the more comfortably cary on so needfull a work, for the betor edication of our children that cannot gooe fouer mieles to meting."

Several men were ordered, in 1689, to the defence of Haverhill and Dover against the Indians; but it is not known that any of them were slain. In the expedition against Quebec, 1690, Rowley furnished one captain, Philip Nelson, one lieutenant, and thirty other men. Of these, John Bailey and Moses Wood died on their way to Canada.

The earliest tax-list preserved bears the date "ye 9th June 1691," and the rates were to be paid "either in money, or in publick bills of credit, or grain, or provisions at the prices specefied in the warrant."

The selectmen for this year were Ezekiel Northend, Ezekiel Jewett, Samuel Platts, John Stickney, and Robert Greenough.

Of the foot company, Joseph Jewell was captain, John Dresser, lieutenant, and Andrew Stickney, ensign.

On the 23d of October, 1692, Mr. Goodrich, his wife, and two daughters were killed by the Indians, he being shot while at evening devotions with his family. His daughter Deborah, seven years old, was taken captive, and subsequently redeemed by the Province. This family lived in that part of Rowley which is now Byfield.

A meeting-house was erected on the site of the old one in 1697, and a committee of seven was appointed to seat the people, having respect to age, office, and the sum paid towards the building. In 1699, a watch-house was constructed on one of the hills of the town.

In 1700, the town paid, through their committee, Dea. Ezekiel Jewett, Samuel Platts, and Capt. Joseph Boynton, to Samuel and Joseph English and John Umpee, heirs of the Sagamore Masconomo, the sum of £9 for a title to the lands of Rowley.

In 1702, the people living at "The Falls," on Parker River, uniting with some people from Newbury, erected a meeting-house. They were incorporated as a parish by the name of "The Falls," Nov. 17, 1706, and the same day a church was organized, and the Rev. Moses Hale, born July 10, 1678, was ordained as pastor. The name of the parish in 1710 was changed to Byfield. Mr. Hale died Jan. 16, 1743–44, and was succeeded in the pastorate by the Rev. Moses Parsons (Harvard College, 1736), and ordained here, June 20, 1744. He was the father of the eminent chief justice, Theophilus Parsons, and died Dec. 11, 1783. The next pastor at Byfield was the Rev. Elijah Parish, born 1762 (Dartmouth College, 1785), and ordained here Dec. 20, 1787. He was a man of learning, and left many valuable publications. He died Oct. 15, 1825, and was succeeded, Dec. 20, 1827, by the Rev. Isaac R. Barbour, who was dismissed in 1833. Just before his dismission, the meeting-house was destroyed by fire; but it was soon rebuilt and dedicated, November 7 of the same year. The Rev. Henry Durant, the fifth minister of Byfield, was ordained Dec. 25, 1833.

On the 10th of July, 1706, Joseph Kilborn, Sr., and Jeremiah Nelson, both of Rowley, were killed by the Indians in Dunstable; and on the 5th of August following, John Pickard, of Rowley, having been wounded by the Indians, died at Billerica.

Duncan Stewart, or, as written in the town records, Dunkin Steward, died here in 1717, at the remarkable age of 100 years. He and his sons carried on the business of ship-building for many years, and were succeeded in the business by Edward Saunders of Scituate. The vessels were then built at the landing near the present railway station. Subsequently the vessels, averaging from thirty to fifty tons, were built near the dwelling-houses of the contractors and drawn by oxen to the river. The largest one ever thus constructed was of ninety tons, and named "The Country's Wonder." It was built on Rowley Common, by Capt. Nathaniel Perley, and drawn by more than one hundred yoke of oxen one mile and a half to the margin of the Rowley River.

The town voted, in 1720, to build a new school-house, "26 feet by 20 & 8 feet post." Mr. Richard Gyle was then, and had been for several years, the school-master. He died February 22d of the ensuing year, and was succeeded by Mr. Samuel Payson, who continued to teach the town school until the end of 1741.

The fifth-settled minister was the Rev. Jedediah Jewett, a native of the town, and a graduate of Harvard College in 1726. He was ordained as colleague of Mr. Payson, Nov. 19, 1729, and continued in the ministry until his death, May 8, 1774.

That part of the town called "New Rowley," now Georgetown, was incorporated as the Second Parish, Oct. 31, 1731. A church was organized here Oct. 4, 1732, and, on the 20th of the same month, the Rev. James Chandler, born 1706 (Harvard College, 1728), was ordained pastor. A meeting-house had already been erected. Mr. Chandler had a long and successful ministry, which closed with his life, April 19, 1789. In 1769, a new meeting-house was erected, the Rev. George Whitefield preaching the dedicatory sermon.

The first officers of the new parish, chosen Oct. 5, 1731, were John Spofford, moderator, Jonathan Boynton, clerk, John Spofford, Jeremiah Chaplin, Benjamin Plumer, William Searle, Aaron Pingree, assessors, and Jonathan Thurston and Samuel Johnson, collectors.

In 1736, the First Parish was visited by the throat-distemper, by which no less than seventy-two children died, causing lamentation in almost every family. Richard Clark, and one of his children, died this year of the small-pox.

In the old French War, Rowley made a noble record. In the expedition under Pepperrell, against Louisburg, the following men were lost from this town: James Jewett was killed by a cannon-ball; Moses Platts was mortally wounded; and Moses Davis, Jr., John Platts, Humphrey Woodbury, Joseph Saunders, Samuel Smith, and Richard Harris, were lost. In 1754, nine men at least, from Rowley, served on the eastern frontier. In the year following, a company under command of Thomas Gage, was in service at Lake George. Fourteen of the unfortunate Acadians, French neutrals, were this year billeted upon the town; viz.: Peter Dupee, his wife, and two children, one of which died here; Bezaleel Leblong (Le Blanc), his wife, and three children (Mrs. Leblong died here); Charles Lower and wife, aged about twenty-seven years, and one child. In 1763, the town granted £13 6*s*. 8*d*. to assist them in returning to their home.

In 1756, Capt. John Pearson, of Rowley, raised a company here to serve at Fort Edward. In the year following there were three military companies in town: Capt. John Northend's company, of 65 men; Capt. John Pearson's cavalry, of 45 men, and Capt. Richard Thurston's train-band, of 55 men. There were also on the alarm-list 62 men. Among those from Rowley present in the massacre at Fort William Henry, August 9th of this year, were Jonathan Bailey,

Joseph Poor, and Jedediah Stickney. In the following year, Lieut. Col. Thomas Gage was at Lake George; and, on the 20th of July, David Payson was killed there by the Indians. The town, this year, furnished 52 men for the service. In 1760, a large number of Rowley men enlisted for the service, under Capt. Joseph Smith and other commanders. Capt. Smith, Peirce Bayley, William Bailey, and Samuel Spiller died in the service.

A third meeting-house, with spire, was completed in 1749. It was sixty feet long, and forty-two feet wide. In 1754 a Baptist society was formed in the West, or Second, Parish.

The earliest mode of travelling to church here was on foot or on horseback. The old stone horse-block, from which the ladies mounted, is still occasionally seen. In 1755 the town had two chaises, and seven chairs, on which a tax was laid. The four-wheeled carriage came into use much later; the stage-coach being the first of the kind employed. Mr. John Stavers, in 1761, commenced running a curricle of two wheels, and carrying, besides himself, two passengers and the mail, from Portsmouth through Rowley to Boston. The fare one way was 13*s.* 6*d.*, or about $3. In 1774 a four-horse and four-wheeled carriage passed much more rapidly over the same route. Ezra Lunt was the proprietor.

In 1762, "the parish voted that those who had learned the art of singing may have liberty to sit in the front gallery. They did not take the liberty." The hymns were still "deaconed off," line by line, to the congregation. In 1780 "the parish requested Jonathan Chaplin Jr & Lieut. Spafford to assist Deacon Daniel Spafford in *Raising the tune* in the meeting-house."

Five years later, "the parish desire the singers, both male & female, to sit in the gallery and will allow them to sing once on each Lord's day without reading by the Deacon."

About 1790 the practice of lining out the psalms was discontinued, and the choir permanently established.

The number of inhabitants was, by the incorrect census of 1765, 1,477; of whom 22 were colored people. In 1776, the number of inhabitants was 1,678. Dummer Academy, founded by the Hon. William Dummer, was opened at Byfield in 1763. It is the oldest academy in the State.

The selectmen in 1771 were Thomas Lancaster, Stephen Mighill, David Nelson, Francis Pingree, and Thomas Gage. They made the following interesting exhibit, in respect to the material condition of the town: Ratable polls, 369; polls not rated, 39; dwelling-houses, 239; workshops, including tan-houses, 16; mills, 6; servants, 8; acres in tillage, 1,079; bushels of corn, 15,259; acres of English mowing, 847; tons of English hay, 608; acres of fresh meadow, 1,025; tons of fresh hay, 898; acres of salt marsh, 1,829; tons of salt hay, 1,643; acres of pasturage, 5,280; cows it will keep, 1,596; barrels of cider, 1,391; horses, 210; oxen, 296; cows, 868; sheep, 1,633; swine, 364; money at interest, £2,481; stock in trade, £421; income of real estate, £2,660.

It appears from this that the raising of sheep was then considered profitable, that English hay was limited in quantity, that the potato crop was not worth mentioning, and that apples, for which the town is still noted, were abundant. The servants were colored persons held in bondage.

In the great struggle for independence, Rowley evinced an ardent and steady patriotism. In 1765 it instructed its representative, Humphrey Hobson, to oppose the infamous Stamp Act, passed January 10th of that year. The town chose a committee, March 17, 1770, to devise measures for preventing the importation of British manufactures.

In its instructions to Mr. Hobson, its representative, the town declared, Feb. 3, 1773, itself ready to do everything it could "to restore, defend, and preserve inviolate, all our rights, civil and religious." It voted Jan. 11, 1775, to grant £40 for the relief of the suffering inhabitants of Boston. It also made provision for the enlistment of minute-men. The Second Parish voted in February, "to raise minute men according to the advice of the Provincial Congress." On the arrival of the news of the battle of Lexington, Capt. Thomas Mighill and Capt. Edward Payson marched immediately, with their respective companies, for Boston. On the 8th of May following, Col. Daniel Spofford, Dr. Nathaniel Cogswell, Samuel Harriman, and Samuel Northend were appointed a committee of correspondence.

Nathaniel Mighill, Esq., was chosen May 29th, to represent the town in the Provincial Congress, with whose resolves it voted to comply.

On the 22d of May, 1776, the town voted that in case the colonies are declared by Congress independent of Great Britain, "we, the inhabitants of the town of Rowley, do solemnly engage that with our lives and fortunes we will support them in the measure."

For the War of the Revolution Rowley furnished three captains, Thomas Mighill, Benjamin Adams, and Edward Payson; nine lieutenants, Amos Bailey, Mark Creasey, Daniel Dresser, Thomas Green, Thomas Pike, Benjamin Stickney, Moses Scott, John Tenney, and Rufus Wheeler; and about 448 privates,—that is, about fifty men per annum for the eight years of the contest.

In August, 1777, the spire of the meeting-house was struck by lightning; but the powder which the town had stored in the church was not ignited.

The Rev. Ebenezer Bradford, born in Canterbury, Conn., 1746 (Princeton College, 1773), succeeded Mr. Jewett in the pastorate, and was installed here Aug. 4, 1782. He continued to serve the church, which at the time of his settlement consisted of eighty-three members, faithfully until his death, which took place Jan. 3, 1801. He was an eloquent preacher, and educated several young men for the ministry. On his tombstone it is said that, his "labors in the vineyard of the Lord were eminently blessed."

A remarkable north-easterly storm occurred on the 4th of December, 1786, during which the tide arose to an unusual height, and most of the salt hay was set afloat and lost. The Rev. Ebenezer Bradford gives the following account of a singular preservation of two men, Samuel Pulsifer and Samuel Elwell, both of Rowley, who were then engaged in digging clams on the flats in Plum Island River, between Plum Island and Hog Island in Chebacco: "They left the clam ground and came to their hut on Hog Island, expecting to spend the night; but a snow-storm coming on very rapidly, caused them to change their purpose and endeavor, at low water, to get themselves off the island. They soon got lost in going over the marshes and creeks. After wandering about some time, they found a stack of salt hay, in which they dug a hole and encamped for the night. In the morning, to their utter astonishment, they found the tide had risen so high, that they were obliged to leave their hole and repair to the top of the stack. They were deprived of all hope, save a faint expectation that their weight would keep the stack from moving off the staddle; but a cake of ice soon struck the stack and set it afloat. The winds blew and the sea raged around them, while the heavens were darkened with the falling snow. The land disappeared, they knew not their course, and could discern nothing but the world of waters, agitated by a tremendous storm. Their stack at times went directly forward, and at others whirled around like a top, threatening every moment to break in pieces. On a sudden they felt the stack, on which they had thus far been preserved, separating under them. At this instant another stack of hay, large and unshattered, came along side of them, on which they had sufficient strength to leap. In this dangerous situation they passed about two hours, exposed to the cold, snow, and water, which continually dashed upon them, by which time they became almost stupefied and began to feel sleepy. They were driven into Smith's Cove in Ipswich, between three and four miles from the spot where the tide first set them adrift. Here, hoping and despairing by turns, they lay some time, the stack being prevented from gaining the land by cakes of ice. . After a while they perceived that the wind and the tide were again carrying them out to sea. Pulsifer immediately threw himself upon the ice, and bid the other follow him; Elwell was much stupefied with the cold; but after some delay, got on to a cake of floating ice, and succeeded in reaching the shore. Pulsifer got so near the land that he could touch the bottom with his feet; but his legs were so benumbed with cold, that he could not put one before the other, and for a while thought he must perish within a rod of the shore. At last he bethought himself of putting his legs forward one after the other with his hands and gained the shore in safety.

"The thought of being on land once more re-invigorated their almost exhausted faculties, and they ran a few rods, when to their dismay they found they were on an uninhabited island, instead of the main, as they had supposed. To venture into the water to gain the main, would be immediate death, and to tarry on the island was wholly impracticable. At last they found a stack of dry hay, in which they secured themselves as well as they could and halloed for help. Pulsifer espied a man on the main and they called more vigorously; but the man soon passed out of sight. Despair settled into their very hearts and death seemed to be their inevitable portion. About three-quarters of an hour after this, Major Charles Smith of Ipswich, with his two sons, came within sight of the island, in search of some strayed sheep. One of the sons saw a man on top of a stack, swinging his hat and crying for help. The major, knowing the ground, went immediately on to the island over a causeway, covered with

about three feet of water and brought off the distressed men, whom he took to his house and provided with everything necessary; and on Thursday following, they returned to their homes."

For the suppression of the rebellion under Capt. Daniel Shays, Rowley furnished twenty-four men, who were enlisted by Lieut. Ezekiel Bailey, and served under Capt. Francis, of Beverly.

In his "Gazetteer," 1797, Dr. J. Morse says: "Near Rowley's bounds with Newbury, some specimens of black lead have been discovered." This was perhaps the harbinger of the gold and silver mines recently discovered on the other side of the line in Newbury.

The number of inhabitants in 1800 was 1,557, 500 of whom resided in the West Parish, now Georgetown. The number of colored people was 16; in 1820, 15; in 1830, 2; in 1850, 6; in 1860, 1; in 1875, none. Slavery existed here only in its mildest form, and ceased entirely after the Revolution.

The Rev. David Tullar, born in Simsbury, Conn., Sept. 22, 1749 (Yale College, 1774), was installed as the successor of Mr. Bradford Dec. 7, 1803, and dismissed Oct. 17, 1810. He subsequently preached in Linebrook, and died in Sheffield, Aug. 23, 1839.

A post-office was established in 1804, and James Smith was appointed post-master. His son, Edward Smith, succeeded him.

An Act was passed by the Legislature, March 4, 1809, that "no person or persons whatever be allowed to take by seines any bass, shad, alewives, or other fish in Parker River, Rowley River, the Falls River and streams and brooks running into said Falls River, excepting within that part of Parker River more than seventy rods below the falls, by John Lee's manufactory." The fine for transgressing was to be not less than five nor more than twenty dollars. Mr. Lee had come from England and established the first woollen-mill on that river.

The eighth settled minister of the First Parish was the Rev. James W. Tucker, a man of an excellent spirit and of refined taste. He was born in Danbury, Conn., in 1787 (Yale College, 1807), and was ordained here June 24, 1812, his salary being $600 per annum, with a "settlement" of $500. He was dismissed June 24, 1817, and died at Springfield, N. J., Feb. 11, 1819,

For the war of 1812 the town furnished thirty-one men, to whom it paid $349.72, which was in addition to what they received from the government.

The Rev. Willard Holbrook, born in Uxbridge, Apr. 7, 1792 (Brown University, 1814), was ordained as the successor of Mr. Tucker, with a salary of $600 per annum, July 22, 1818. At that time the church consisted of eighty-four members. He was dismissed May 12, 1840, and subsequently supplied the church in Linebrook.

A Baptist Church was organized in Rowley, Nov. 17, 1830. The Rev. Caleb Clark was the preacher from September, 1831, to May, 1832; the Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin, D. D., from October, 1833, to April, 1836. The Rev. A. W. Carr preached here from 1851 to 1858.

By the introduction of tanning and the manufacture of boots and shoes, into the Second Parish, it had become so prosperous that in 1836 a bank, with a capital of $100,000, was established for facilitating business; and on the 21st of April, 1838, it was incorporated, with the most of Rowley's part of Byfield, as the town of Georgetown.

On the 5th of September, 1839, the citizens of Rowley observed, by appropriate ceremonies and an address, the second centennial anniversary of the incorporation of the town. The ecclesiastical address, by the Rev. James Bradford, together with the history of Rowley, by Thomas Gage, was published in a handsome volume of 484 pages, during the course of the year following. To these invaluable productions the present writer is indebted for many of the materials for this sketch of the town.

The great event of the year following was the opening through the town of the Eastern Railroad. A train of cars passed from Ipswich through Rowley to Newburyport, on the 17th of July; since which time the people here have enjoyed all needed facilities for travel, trade, and transportation.

The successor of Mr. Holbrook was the Rev. John Pike, installed as pastor here Nov. 18, 1840. After a successful ministry he was dismissed, Jan. 5, 1869, and still resides in Rowley. He delivered the election sermon in 1858.

A military company, called Poor's Rifle Guards, with J. Scott Todd captain, was organized here July 26, 1855.

For the War of the Rebellion the town furnished its full quota of men, and evinced the same patriotic spirit as in the old Revolutionary War.

During the year ending May 1, 1865, Rowley manufactured 5,650 pairs of boots and 26,310 pairs of shoes. The capital employed was $51,716, and the number of employees, 76. The number of bushels of shell-fish taken was 7,304, valued at $3,527, and the number of hands employed six months in the business was 15. There were 132 farms, embracing 10,085 acres, and employing 159 persons. The number of horses was 152; of milch cows, 378; and the number of gallons of milk sold was 7,273, valued at $1,306.20. The woodland was estimated at 2,000⅔ acres; and the number of apple-trees cultivated for their fruit was 11,568; of pear-trees, 756.

The Rev. Lyman H. Blake was installed over the Congregational Church, Nov. 9, 1869, and after a successful ministry was dismissed April 27, 1874. The Rev. William R. Joyslin succeeded him, and was installed Dec. 2, of the same year. He was dismissed

The Rev. J. H. B. Headley became acting pastor in 1876.

Rowley is the birth-place of many men of note, and as many as eighty of her sons have been graduates of colleges.

Spencer Phips, son of Dr. David Bennet, was born here June 6, 1685 (Harvard College, 1703), and died April 4, 1757. On being adopted by his uncle, Sir William Phips, he took the name of Spencer Phips. He was many years a councillor, and was lieutenant-governor from 1731 to 1757. His son David (Harvard College, 1741), a loyalist, went to Halifax in 1776, and died at Bath, Eng., in 1811, aged 87 years.

Rev. Jacob Bailey, a noted loyalist, was born here Apr. 16, 1731 (Harvard University, 1755), and died at Annapolis, N. S., where he had been rector of St. Luke's Church, July 26, 1808. His journal, with a memoir, has been published by the Rev. W. S. Bartlett.

Samuel Tenney, M. D., was born in Byfield, Nov. 27, 1748 (Harvard College, 1772), and was employed in dressing the wounded at the battle of Bunker Hill. In 1800 he became member of Congress. He was a good scholar and writer, and died in Exeter, N. H., Feb. 6, 1816. He married Tabitha, daughter of Samuel Gilman, of Exeter, who wrote "Female Quixotism," one of the earliest American novels.

The Rev. John Smith, D. D., was born here Dec. 21, 1752, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1773. He was professor of languages in his *alma mater*, from 1778 to his death, April 30, 1809. He published a Hebrew, a Greek, and a Latin grammar, and was for some time pastor of the college church. A memoir of Dr. Smith was published by his widow, Mrs. Susan Smith, in 1843. She died in 1845, at the advanced age of 82 years.

Hon. Jeremiah Nelson, born here about 1778 (Dartmouth College, 1790), was a member of Congress, 1805–07, and 1815–23. He was highly respected, and died in Newburyport, in 1838, aged 60 years.

Moses P. Payson was graduated at Dartmouth College, 1793, and became president of the State senate of New Hampshire.

Parker Cleaveland (Harvard College, 1799) became a professor in Bowdoin College.

Jonathan Cogswell (Harvard College, 1806) was professor at East Windsor, Conn.

The Rev. Jeremiah Chaplin, D. D., was a native of Rowley, having been born here Jan. 2, 1776. He graduated at Brown University, in 1799, and was for three years tutor there. From 1802 to 1818 he was pastor of the Baptist Church in Danvers, and from 1820 to 1832, president of Waterville College. He subsequently preached in Rowley and other places, and died in Hamilton, N. Y., in May, 1841.

Alfred W. Pike (Dartmouth College, 1815) attained eminence as an instructor.

Richard S. Spofford, M. D. (Harvard College, 1816), was long the leading physician in Newburyport.

The Rev. Joseph Torrey, D. D., was born in Rowley, Feb. 2, 1797, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1816. He was minister at Royalton, Vt., from 1819 to 1827, professor of Greek and Latin in the University thence till 1842, after which he was professor of intellectual and moral philosophy till his death, which occurred Nov. 26, 1867. He was president of the University from 1863 to 1865. He was the editor of Neander's "Church History," and of some other works.

Rev. Milton P. Braman (Harvard College, 1819) was settled in Danvers, and attained distinction as a clergyman.

SALEM.

CHAPTER I.

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF SALEM FROM THE FIRST SETTLEMENT TO THE ADOPTION OF A CITY CHARTER.

The history of ancient Salem forms one of the most interesting chapters in the history of the settlement of this continent. The early settlers came hither, not attracted by a mild and even climate, where with little exertion the various products of the earth could be obtained; not as to a land flowing with milk and honey, and rich in all those natural advantages that more favored climes offer to the sojourners within their borders; but with the knowledge that on the bleak and rock-bound shores of their newly chosen home they must endure hardship and privation and suffering, and a constant and never-ceasing contest and strife for their very existence. Driven from their home in England by religious persecution and oppression, these sturdy and courageous men sought to establish in a new world a haven of refuge for themselves, and for all others whom a desire to worship God according to the dictates of their conscience, free from religious bigotry and intolerance, might lead to join them. No desire to amass large fortunes, no expectation of a life of ease and comfort, no dreams of conquest, or of political power and renown, brought the founders of Salem across the ocean to establish on these shores the germ of a new State and nation; but, actuated by a nobler ambition, impelled by an inborn love of liberty and freedom, undaunted by perils and afflictions, and unflinching in the face of adversity, they sought in a foreign clime that relief from persecution which was denied them in their native land. Few communities can boast a nobler origin as to the motives and character of their founders.

Roger Conant, with his companions, came to Salem, then called Naumkeag, in 1626. They had previously settled at Cape Ann, and engaged in a planting, fishing, and trading enterprise; but, being unsuccessful in their venture, they removed to Salem, and established here a plantation, receiving encouragement from the company in England, which had obtained a charter or indenture for this place, under date of Jan. 1, 1623, old style, or Jan. 12, 1624, new style. The original indenture over the signature of Lord Sheffield is now in the possession of the Essex Institute.

Among those who came with Conant were John Lyford, John Woodbury, John Balch, Peter Palfray, Richard Norman and son, William Allen, and Walter Knight. The Rev. John White, of Dorchester, a famous Puritan divine, who was deeply interested in the settlement at Cape Ann, hoping to secure there a retreat for such of his countrymen as were subject to severe trials because, while adhering to the government of the national church, they could not approve of what they deemed its faults, and who "grieved in his spirit" when the Cape was abandoned, wrote to Conant urging him and his associates not to forsake Naumkeag, and encouraging them to expect a patent for their better protection. Many of them, however, became discontented with their new abode; and it required much reasoning and persuasion to prevent them from accompanying their pastor, Mr. Lyford, to Virginia. Mr. Conant says, writing of the settlement of Naumkeag, that "in the infancy thereof, it was in great hassard of being deserted. I was a meanes, through grace assisting me, to stop the flight of those few that then were heere with me, and that by my vtter deniall to goe away with them who would have gone either for England or mostly for Virginia, but thereupon stayed to the hassard of our lives." In spite of discouragement and discontent among his companions, and the fear of hostilities from the surrounding Indians, Conant and many of his followers remained "the sentinels of Puritanism on the Bay of Massachusetts."

An interest in this plantation having been aroused in England, it was deemed best to send one of their number across the sea, to explain their condition; and for this purpose John Woodbury was selected, and he went, and remained abroad some six months. As a consequence of the newly awakened interest, and the application of Mr. White for State license and protection, a grant was obtained from the Council for New England, by a written document dated March 19, 1628, new style, which conveyed the soil then denominated Massachusetts Bay to Sir Henry Roswell, John Endicott, and others. The bounds of the colony so granted were "between three miles to the northward of Merrimac river and three miles to the southward of Charles river, and in length within the described breadth from the Atlantic ocean to the South sea." The grantees selected from among their number John Endicott — "a man of dauntless courage; benevolent though austere; firm though choleric; of a rugged nature which his stern principles of non conformity had not served to mellow" — as a "fit instrument to begin this wilderness work." He was appointed governor of the plantation, Matthew Cradock being governor of the Massachusetts Company in London; and in June, 1628, he set sail for Salem in the "Abigail," accompanied by his wife and a band of emigrants. They cast anchor in Salem harbor on the 6th of September. Conant and his companions were gathered on the shore to receive them, and the scene presented to the view of the voyagers must have been striking and impressive. Uniting with those already here, Endicott founded the oldest town in the Colony, soon to be called Salem; and extended some supervision over the waters of Boston harbor, then called Massachusetts Bay.

Until this time, the Massachusetts Company acted under the patent from the Council for New England; but this was a grant of property in the soil, rather than an authority to establish municipal government, and the company solicited, and on the 4th of March, 1629, Charles I. put the broad seal of England to the letters-patent for Massachusetts. This created a corporation under the name of the "Governor and Company of the Massachusetts Bay in New England," and was the instrument under which the Colony of Massachusetts continued to conduct its affairs for fifty-five years.

Among those named in this charter were Sir Henry Roswell, John Endicott, Richard Saltonstall, and Matthew Cradock. It gave power to the freemen of the company to elect annually from their own number a governor, deputy, and eighteen assistants, on the last Wednesday of Easter term, who were to meet once a month or oftener, "for dispatching such businesses as concerned the company or plantation." Four times a year, the governor, assistants, and all the freemen, were to be summoned to "one great, general, and solemn assembly," and these "great and general courts" were invested with full powers to choose and admit into the company so many as they should think fit to elect, and constitute all requisite subordinate officers, and to make laws and ordinances for the welfare of the company and for the government of the lands and inhabitants of the plantation, "so such laws are not repugnant to the laws and statutes of the realm of England." Matthew Cradock was the first home governor under this charter, and John Endicott the governor of the plantation. A duplicate of the charter was sent over to Endicott, which is now deposited in Plummer Hall, in the keeping of the Salem Athenæum, reposing in the very settlement where it was once the Magna Charta on which the council at Naumkeag made their laws and granted their authority.

After the organization under the charter, the company made haste to send over colonists, and six vessels were despatched, containing eighty women, twenty-six children, and three hundred men, with "one hundred and forty head of cattle." The company were careful to make plentiful provision of "godly ministers." The Rev. Francis Higginson and the Rev. Samuel Skelton came over among the passengers in the "Talbot," and reached Salem June 29, 1629. In Mr. Higginson's journal, referring to their arrival, he says: "By God's blessing we passed the curious and difficult entrance into the spacious harbor of Naimkecke and as we passed along it was wonderful to behold so many islands replenished with thick woods and high trees and many fayre green pastures." In a letter written in 1629, by the same hand, we find, "that Naimkecke contained at that time about half a score of houses built and a fayre house newly built for the Governor," and that in all, about two hundred planters were settled there.

After the arrival of Higginson, Gov. Endicott set apart the 20th

of July, 1629, "to be a solemn day of humiliation for the choyce of a pastor and teacher at Salem." The vote was taken by each one's writing in a note the name of his choice. Such is the origin of the use of the ballot on this continent. Skelton was chosen pastor, and Higginson teacher. Higginson lived but a short time after his arrival. He left his native land hoping to gain health and strength in a new country; but his hopes were all in vain, and he died at the early age of forty-three. He was greatly loved by his people, and his talents were of a high order. A primitive writer of New England describes him as "a man indued with grace, apt to teach, mighty in the Scriptures, learned in the Tongues, able to convince gain sayers."

All the freemen under the charter met in "Great and General Court till 1634," when deputies became a part of the Legislature; and it was ordered that the whole body of freemen be excused from attending the four annual General Courts, except that for election of magistrates in May. This continued till 1663, when a vote passed that the freemen should choose part of their number to assemble at the court of election, and choose a governor and other magistrates. This latter change was so unpopular that it was repealed the subsequent year. The people were apprehensive that they might lose their political heritage, so jealous were they, even then, of any encroachment on their political rights, which might be subversive of their liberty. The charter made provision for a common seal for the company, and such a seal in silver was sent to Endicott in 1629. The Indian which is to-day a part of the seal of our Commonwealth, was a principal figure on this colonial seal. A representation of this seal may be found on the title-page of this volume.

During the early part of Endicott's settlement at Salem, the colonists were sadly afflicted with sickness, and were unprovided with suitable food and shelter. Being destitute of regular medical attendance, word was sent to the Colony at Plymouth, and Dr. Samuel Fuller was sent to Salem. The visit of Dr. Fuller was not without results other than those which attended his ministrations to the needs of the sick. He was the means of strengthening the friendship between Gov. Bradford at Plymouth, and Mr. Endicott, and of interesting the colonists at Salem in the congregational form of worship followed by the people of Plymouth. The Massachusetts Company at London were still attached to the Church of England, its liturgy and forms, and gave no encouragement to Messrs. Higginson and Skelton, who adopted the congregational discipline of Plymouth. Some of the Salem colonists also clung to their old faith, and Messrs. John and Samuel Brown wrote letters of complaint to the company at London, whereupon they were charged by Gov. Endicott with factious conduct and sent back to London. Upon their arrival they made complaint of Endicott and his ministers, "concerning some rash innovations begun and practiced in the civil and ecclesiastical government."

The difficulties arising from having the government of the plantation in London now began to be apparent; and Gov. Cradock, at a meeting of the company proposed, "for weighty reasons to transfer the Gouernment of the Plantacon to those that shall inhabit there, and not to continue the same in subordination to the Company heere as now it is." This matter was fully discussed at several meetings of the company at London, until at the meeting of Aug. 29, 1629, it was decided "by erecon of hands that the Gouernment and Pattent should be settled in New England, and accordingly an order to be drawne vpp." Having decided to transfer the government to New England, Gov. Cradock resigned, and Messrs. John Winthrop, Richard Saltonstall, Isaac Johnson, and John Humphrey were put in nomination for the position, the first named being chosen "with full consent by erecon of hands."

Winthrop was a man well fitted for the difficult task in which he was to engage. "An honest royalist, averse to pure democracy yet firm in his regard for existing popular liberties; in his native parish a conformist, yet wishing for 'gospel purity'; disinterested, brave, and conscientious, his character marks the transition of the reformation into virtual republicanism; when the sentiment of loyalty which it was intended to cherish, gradually yielded to the irresistible spirit of civic freedom." Winthrop, with a company of emigrants, arrived in Salem harbor, in the "Arbella," June 12, 1630, after a long and stormy passage, bringing with him the original charter, now deposited in the State archives at Boston, of which Endicott was already in possession of a duplicate copy.

After the long voyage, the shores of their new home must have been a welcome and attractive sight. Arriving in the month of June, when all Nature is at her best, before the heats of summer have scorched the foliage and robbed the fields of their freshness, it must have been a fair and attractive landscape that greeted the eyes of these weary and tempest-tossed travellers. Winthrop writes, that "most of our people went on Shore upon the land of Cape Ann, which lay very near us, and gathered store of fine strawberries." But while Nature had donned her choicest robes to welcome them, they were doomed to disappointment at the unexpected condition in which they found the colonists. More than eighty had died the winter before; that terror of our climate, consumption, had fastened upon Higginson, and he was slowly wasting away; others were weak and sick; and the corn and bread was scarcely sufficient for a fortnight's supply. To add to Winthrop's distress, his son Henry, who arrived in the harbor of Salem July 1st, in the ship "Talbot," was drowned while landing from the vessel.

With Winthrop came Lady Arbella Johnson, a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, who, with a woman's devotion, left "a paradise of plenty and pleasure which she enjoyed in the family of a noble Earldom" for this "wilderness of wants," that she might accompany her husband in his voluntary exile. She died within a month of her arrival, and was buried in Salem.

After remaining at Salem about a week, Winthrop proceeded with a party in quest of some more attractive place of settlement. He traced Mystic River to its source, and, after an absence of three days, returned to Salem to spend the Sabbath. When ten or eleven vessels had arrived, the colonists kept the 8th of July as a day of thanksgiving. Winthrop selected Charlestown as the seat of government, and early in August, with much cost and labor, the removal was made from Salem. Ten weeks after the landing, the first Court of Assistants was held at Charlestown.

With the coming of Winthrop and the supersedure of Endicott, Salem ceased to be the capital town; but the record of her people during the first two years of the Colony will always remain as an example of fortitude in the face of danger and suffering, and of a supreme reliance on that overruling Power who guided their footsteps to this trackless wilderness. Neither death nor danger nor disaster could turn them from the path in which their conscience told them they should walk; and we of to-day do well to pause, and, turning back the pages of history, contemplate the heroic virtues, the unflinching devotion to duty, the dauntless courage which endured through sorrow and suffering and death, which will make the names of the Puritan fathers of Salem respected so long as a free people shall enjoy the blessings of civil and religious liberty, and so long as the printed page shall endure to preserve the record of their acts.

The Commoners.—The territory of Salem was held by the members of the corporation of the Massachusetts Company, under their patent, in common and undivided, and from time to time grants were made by the "commoners," as they were styled, to individual members of the corporation. The records of the ancient commoners of Salem commence in 1636 and end in 1739. Nearly all the citizens were commoners and had an interest in the common lands, and rights were granted and land conveyed by vote of the proprietors in public meetings. From the commoners all the present titles are directly or indirectly derived. With increasing population this method of holding the lands became unwieldy and cumbersome, and in 1713 and 1714 the commoners determined to make a general division and distribution of the lands held by them. In 1713 they granted all the highways and burying-places and common lands lying within the town bridge and block-houses, to remain forever for the use of the town of Salem; and the Common was then dedicated forever as a "training field." In 1714 the commoners, at a meeting held at "ye meeting house of ye first parish in Salem," voted that Winter Island be wholly reserved and granted for "ye use of ye fishing" rights, to use the same to be let by the selectmen of Salem; and the same year the Neck lands were granted and reserved to the town of Salem for a pasture for "milch cows and riding horses," the same to be fenced at the town's charge.

In 1722–23, Feb. 26, the grand committee of the commoners who had charge of affairs reported the whole number of rights to be 1,132, and the number of acres held 3,733. Several distinct proprietaries were formed under an Act of the colonial Legislature; and the commoners of the two lower parishes, having 790 rights and 2,500 acres of land lying between Spring Pond and Forest River, organized themselves into a corporation. This organization continued till 1855, when they were incorporated into the Great Pasture Company; and by that company the last of the common lands, about 400 acres in extent, are now held.

In 1723–24 the ancient commoners, as a body, ceased to convey land, though they retained their organization and acted in adjustment and closing up of their affairs till 1739, when their records end.

House Lots.—After the arrival of Gov. Endicott, in 1628, the town seems to have been regularly laid out in house-lots; and the first houses built in Salem appear to have been located in what is to-day the most central part of the city. Washington Street was the first street, and was laid out four rods wide, connecting the two rivers and the primitive highways which ran along their banks at the point where they approach nearest together. A fort was enclosed between this street on the east and North and Summer streets on the west, and was built near the western corner of Sewall and Lynde streets, on the highest land in that part of the town. The manner in which the house-lots in the central part of the town were originally laid out seems to indicate that the earliest settlement was made in the vicinity of Elm Street and Washington Street, upon the South River. Between these streets the lots were small, irregular, and not in conformity with the plan upon which the rest of the town was laid out. East of these, all along the South River to the Neck, house-lots were laid out running back from the river; and along the North River, west of North Street, were larger house-lots, also running back from that river. Essex Street was probably a way that came gradually into use along the ends of these lots; and, as they were all of the same depth from the river, this street acquired, and has retained, the same curves the river originally had.

The Indians.—Before proceeding further with our narration, let us turn for a moment and consider the condition of the aboriginal inhabitants of this territory, found here on their arrival by the early settlers. A "great and grevious plague" had, a few years previously, swept away the larger portion of the Indian tribes living hereabouts, so that but a small remnant were found inhabiting the region about Salem. Tradition seems to point to an Indian settlement on the north side of the North River, and another on Marblehead Neck. Indian remains have been exhumed at the lower part of the city and on the Marblehead side of our harbor, and it is related that, down to 1725, a company of Indians paid an annual visit to Salem and encamped on a side of Gallows Hill. It is very likely that some, if not all of them, were descendants of those who once occupied this territory.

In 1686 the inhabitants of Salem fearing that, by a possible forfeiture of their charter, the land they held might be taken from them, endeavored to provide for such a contingency by obtaining from the Indians then residing around Salem, for the sum of £40, a deed of the territory within the town limits. Such a deed was drawn and formally executed on the eleventh day of October, 1686, and the original now hangs on the walls of the city hall.

Town Government.—In 1635 the township of Salem comprehended the present towns of Beverly, Danvers, Marblehead, Middleton, Topsfield, Wenham, and a part of Lynn. Marblehead was recognized as a distinct settlement in 1635, and was incorporated in 1649. Wenham was incorporated in 1643; Manchester in 1645; Topsfield in 1650; Beverly in 1668; and Danvers, which then included the present town of Peabody, in 1757. Salem cannot strictly be said to have been ever incorporated. Gov. Winthrop, on his arrival, in 1630, found it the only settlement or town in the Colony, except, perhaps, Charlestown. It was recognized as a town by the government of the Colony, and indeed it had been established as such before the existence of any authority here superior to that of its own government. Upon the settlement of Boston and other places, town governments sprang up and were gradually moulded into the form in which they have continued until this time, and which constitutes one of the peculiar institutions of New England. Their origin was not derived from the authority of the General Court, but, like that of all governments, was from the necessity of the case. Their foundation was in the voluntary though tacit compact of the proprietors and settlers of the different towns.

It was necessary that some form of town government should be established, and as early as 1633 the inhabitants chose several of their principal proprietors, then styled "Townsmen," and not till some years afterwards "Selectmen," to whom were intrusted the principal concerns of the town. These held regular meetings, at which the important affairs of the town were transacted, and their proceedings were afterwards brought before general or town meetings for confirmation. The first records of the town of Salem bear date, the "Book of Grants," Oct. 1, 1634, and the "Town Records," Dec. 26, 1636, a portion of the record being in the hand-writing of Gov. Endicott.

Town and Court Houses.—Town-meetings were held, prior to 1655, in the first meeting-house.

About 1677, a building for town purposes was erected in the middle of Washington Street, anciently called School Street, near what is now Lynde Street and facing Essex Street. Its upper part was fitted up for the accommodation of the court. In this building the innocent victims of delusion charged with the crime of witchcraft were tried, and here was anxiously agitated the question of submission to the Commissioners of Charles II.

In 1719, a building was erected, the lower story to be used for town purposes and the upper for the courts. This building stood on Washington Street, its northern wall nearly coinciding with the line upon which stands the southern parapet of the Eastern Railroad tunnel. Here for nearly half a century the freeholders held their town-meetings, and the selectmen consulted upon municipal affairs. In this building the session of the Provincial Congress was held October 5, 1774, which is referred to more at length hereafter.

In 1785, a building was erected for the joint use of the town and county. It stood in the middle of Washington Street, its west side facing the Tabernacle Church, and fronting Essex Street. The expense of its erection was divided between the town and county. Town-meetings were held here until the erection of the town hall in Derby Square in 1816, when the town sold its interest in the building to the county, and it was thereafter used exclusively to accommodate the courts and court records until the building of the Eastern Railroad tunnel, in 1839, compelled its removal. The present granite court-house was thereupon erected in 1841; and twenty years thereafter, in 1861, the brick court-house was built, in which to-day all the courts are held, save the probate court, which still holds its sessions in the granite building.

In 1816, the town hall and market-house now standing on Derby Square was built, and the lower part was opened as a market, Nov. 26, 1816. The town hall was first used on the occasion of President Monroe's visit to Salem, July 8, 1817, and from that time until the town was incorporated as a city it continued to be used for all town-meetings.

Modes of Punishment.—While speaking of the courts where sentence was passed on the offender, it may be well to note the ancient instruments of punishment by which that sentence was carried into effect. In 1638, Isaac Davis is paid for a pair of stocks, and in 1657, two persons "undertake to make stocks sufficientlie and to sett vp the whipping post." Both of these were formerly placed in Washington Street, near Essex Street. The county court orders, Nov. 27, 1666, that a cage shall be erected in Salem, in which to display wrong-doers, and in 1715, Miles Ward is paid by the county for making a pillory. It was erected in front of the court-house and near the whipping-post. On Sept. 28, 1630, the Court of Assistants order that two persons shall sit in the stocks here four hours for being accessories in crime; and June 14, 1631, Philip Ratclif is sentenced to be whipped, have his ear cropped, and be banished for hard speeches against Salem church as well as the government. On Dec. 4, 1638, the Assistants order a resident of Salem to sit in the stocks, on lecture day, for travelling on the Sabbath.

Mary Oliver seems to have given the magistrates much trouble. On January, 1642, she was presented for neglect of public worship. In February, 1644, she was sentenced to be publicly whipped for reproaching the magistrates, and on August, 1646, she had a cleft stick put on her tongue for half an hour, for slandering the elders. She was finally banished from the town. On May 14, 1714, an inhabitant of Salem is found guilty of passing counterfeit bills. He is sentenced to the pillory, to have his ear cropped, to be imprisoned twelve months, branded with F on his right cheek, and pay £30. The pillory, stocks, and whipping-post ceased to be used as a means of punishment in 1805; but it is still a question whether a certain class of crimes, like wife-beating or cruelty to children, could not more effectually be punished at the whipping-post than by our present system of punishment.

Salem Neck seems to have been the place for the execution of criminals. Jan. 16, 1772, Bryan Sheehan was hung there in the presence of 12,000 people, the Rev. Mr. Diman preaching a sermon; and Dec. 21, 1786, Isaac Coombs, an Indian, suffered the same fate, his crime being the murder of his wife. Jan. 14, 1796, Henry Blackburn, an Englishman, and a chimney-sweeper in town, was hung there for murder. In 1821, May 10, Stephen M. Clark, of Newburyport, aged 17, was hung on Winter Island, for setting fire to a stable, by which a dwelling-house was consumed. Since then executions have taken place in the yard of the present jail on St. Peter's Street.

Prisons.—For the confinement of prisoners, provision was made June 30, 1668, for the building of a prison. It was located near the south-western end of the first meeting-house; and June 29, 1669, Benjamin Felton was appointed its keeper. In 1684, a new prison was

built near the corner of Federal and St. Peter's streets, at the charge of the county, on common land given by Salem. Its dimensions were thirteen feet stud and twenty feet square. A curious custom prevailed for a long time, of allowing the keeper of the prison the perquisites of selling liquor to his prisoners. The county, in 1813, built the present stone jail which stands at the foot of St. Peter's Street.

Almshouses. — While providing accommodation for criminals, the town was also careful to provide for care of the poor; and, in 1698, authorized the selectmen to hire a house for their accommodation. In 1719, a building was finished for their occupancy located on the site of the present State Normal School. This building was afterwards enlarged, and, in 1750, overseers of the poor were for the first time chosen. May 16, 1770, upon report made by Dr. E. A. Holyoke, the town vote to build an almshouse and workhouse upon the northeast part of the common at a cost of £452 lawful money; and in 1772, upon the completion of the building, rules are adopted for the management of the inmates. The rooms in the old almshouse were rented by the town till 1807, when it was taken down to allow of the erection of a registry office. On the 30th of November, 1816, the present brick almshouse on the Neck was ready to receive the poor, and Paul Upton was its first master.

Roger Williams. — In February, 1631, Roger Williams arrived in Boston, and a few weeks afterwards the First Church at Salem invited him to succeed Higginson as their teacher. Mr. Williams, in the short time he had been in Boston, had made himself obnoxious to the government, and a letter was written from the Court to Mr. Endicott to this effect, "that whereas Mr. Williams had refused to join with the congregation at Boston because they would not make public declaration of their repentance for having communion with the churches of England while they lived there, therefore they marvelled they would choose him without advising with the Council." The Salem church, however, chose Williams their teacher, despite the remonstrance; but he remained there only a short time, when he went to Plymouth, and became assistant to the pastor of the church there. He was invited back to Salem, and returned; but was not immediately called to the clerical office. When it was proposed to appoint him to the place lately vacated by the death of Mr. Skelton, the Massachusetts magistrates interfered, but he was, nevertheless, installed. The magistrates soon found additional cause for complaint; and when Salem applied to them for a grant of land, they replied that "because they had chosen Mr. Williams for their teacher and so offered contempt to the magistrates their petition was refused." The next General Court unseated the deputies from Salem, till their constituents should apologize for having "exceedingly reproached and vilified the magistrates and churches," which was presently done, and the following order was passed: —

"Whereas Mr. Roger Williams one of the elders of the church of Salem hath broached and divulged divers new and dangerous opinions against the authority of magistrates as also writ letters of defamation both of the magistrates and churches here, and that before any conviction and yet maintaineth the same without retraction, it is therefore ordered that the said Mr. Williams shall depart out of this jurisdiction within six weeks now next ensuing; which if he neglect to perform it shall be lawful for the Governor and two of the magistrates to send him to some place out of this jurisdiction not to return any more without license from the Court."

The six weeks was extended to the next spring; and, in the meantime, the magistrates, thinking he was better out of the country, sent a vessel from Boston to take him to England; but Williams, hearing of this, left Salem three days before the vessel's arrival, and made that memorable journey in midwinter through the deep snows of a New England forest, guided only by a rude compass through the pathless wilderness. This compass is still preserved at Providence, among a people who look back with a just pride upon the history of this remarkable man, whose daring and heroism well fitted him to be the founder of a new State.

John Endicott charged with Assault. — The methods of communication in these early days were rude and primitive, and journeys were made, whenever practicable, by water. In April, 1631, John Endicott, then one of the Court of Assistants under Gov. Winthrop, was charged with an assault upon Thomas Dexter, and being found guilty was fined 10*s*. In reference to this matter, Mr. Endicott writes to Gov. Winthrop a quaintly worded letter, which shows that human nature has not changed much since our early days, although it would be thought strange if one of our present governors should be found guilty of an assault, even under the provocation so naively stated in Endicott's letter, which is dated at Salem, April 12, 1631, and which proceeds as follows: —

RIGHT WORSHIPFUL — I did expect to have been with you in person at the Court and to that end I put to sea yesterday and was driven back again, the wind being stiff against us. And there being no canoe or boat at Sangus, I must have been constrained to go to Mystic and thence about to Charlestown, which at that time durst not be so bold, my body being at this present in an ill condition to wade or take cold and therefore I desire you to pardon me. Sir, I desired the rather to be at Court, because I hear I am much complained of by goodman Dexter for striking him. I acknowledge I was too rash in striking him, understanding since it is not lawful for a justice of the peace to strike. But if you had seen the manner of his carriage with such daring of me with his arms akimbo, &c., it would have provoked a very patient man. But I will write no more of it, but leave it till we speak before face to face. Only thus far further that he hath given out if I had a purse he would make me empty it; and if he cannot have justice here he will do wonders in England, and if he cannot prevail there he will try it out with me here at blows. Sir, I desire that you will take all into consideration. If it were lawful to try it at blows, and he a fit man for me to deal with, you should not hear me complain; but I hope the Lord hath brought me off from that course. I will be with you, the Lord assisting me, as soon as conveniently I can. In the meanwhile I commit you to his protection and safeguard, that never fails his children, and rest

Your unfeigned and loving friend to command,

JO. ENDICOTT.

Cutting out the Red Cross.—A few years later, March 4, 1635, Mr. Endicott was again summoned before the court, on the charge of having mutilated the English ensign at Salem by cutting out the red cross. At that time a strong opposition was felt towards Popery, in all its signs as well as services, and the bold act of Endicott was secretly approved by the principal men of the Colony. Had it not been for fear of the consequences, for the act in England was construed as an act of rebellion, no notice would have been taken of Endicott's act; but the General Court felt constrained to bring in some sentence against him, as a sign of their loyalty. In consequence of this he lost his election as assistant. One of Salem's distinguished authors, in speaking of this occurrence, says: "It is one of the boldest exploits which our history records. And forever honored be the name of Endicott! We look back through the mist of ages, and recognize in the rending of the Red Cross from New England's banner, the first omen of that deliverance which our fathers consummated after the bones of the stern Puritan had lain more than a century in the dust."

House of Representatives.—On the 14th of May, 1634, the General Court defined the power of the Legislature. They provided that the whole body of freemen should be present at only one of the four General Courts to be held each year, and that their deputies should act fully for them in the three others. The addition of representatives to the assistants and governor was an imitation of the House of Commons in England. The House of Representatives in this Colony was the second in America. One had already been formed in Virginia. The Salem representatives were Messrs. John Holgrave, Roger Conant, and Francis Weston.

Sir Henry Vane.—On the 9th of July, 1636, Salem was visited by Sir Henry Vane, the new governor of the Colony, then only twenty-four years old. He came to this country in consequence of his non-conformity, and to escape the displeasure of the Bishop of London. After his return to England, and on the accession of Charles II., he was tried for high treason, and beheaded June 14, 1662.

Salem in 1639.—Wood, in "New England's Prospect," gives the following description of the town as it was during the year 1639: "Salem stands on the middle of a necke of land very pleasantly, having a South river on one side and a North river on the other side. Upon this neeke where most of the houses stand, is very bad and sandie ground, yet for seaven years together it hath brought forth exceeding good corne, by being fished but every third year. In some places is very good ground and good timber, and divers springs hard by the sea side. There likewise is store of fish, as Basses, Eels, Lobsters, Clammes &c. Although their land be none of the best, yet beyond these rivers is a very good soyle, where they have taken farms and get their hay and plant their corne; there they cross these rivers with small Cannowes, which were made of whole pine trees, being about two foote and a halfe over and twenty foote long. In these likewise they goe a fowling, sometimes two leagues at sea. There be more cannowes in this towne than in all the whole Patent, every household having a water horse or two. This town wants an alewive river which is a great inconvenience. It hath two good harbors, the one being called winter and the other summer harbors, which lieth within Derbins Fort which place, if it were well fortified might keepe shippes from landing forces in any of those two places."

Town Records.—In January, 1644, "The seaven men chosen for the year ensuing" for the government of the town of Salem were

John Endicott, William Hathorne, William Lord, Jeffrey Massey, Peter Palfray, Thomas Gardner, and Henry Bartholomew, and they agree that if either of them are absent from their meetings without good excuse he shall pay 4*s*. The town records about this time contain some curious and quaintly worded entries. In order to insure an attendance at church, it was ordered, on July 7, 1644, "that twoe be appointed every Lord's day to walk forth in time of God's worshippe, to take notice of such as either lye about the meeting house without attending to the word or ordinances, or that lye at home or in the fields without giving good account thereof, and to take the names of such persons and to present them to the magistrates whereby they may be accordingly proceeded against."

As showing the importance attached by our fathers, at that early day, to popular education, we find on the town records, under date of Sept. 30, 1644, an order "that a note be published on next Lecture day that such as have children to be kept at school would bring in their names and what they will give for one whole year, and also that if any poore body hath children or a childe to be put to schoole and not able to pay for their schooling, that the towne will pay it by a rate." The General Court, at its session of October, 1647, order "every town consisting of fifty householders to have a school for reading and writing, and of one hundred families to have a grammar school, so as to fit scholars for college"; and further enact, no doubt much to the discomfiture of the younger portion of the community, "that if any young man attempt to address a young woman without the consent of her parents or, *in their absence of the County Court*, he shall be fined £5, for the first offence, £10 for the second, and imprisonment for the third." Several instances of such fines being imposed appear on the records of the court.

In 1654, the persons chosen to conduct the business of the town having been called, for the most part, the seven-men, began to have the title of select-men, and on the 27th of May of that year an order was passed, "that any townsman duly warned, and declining to take part in public meeting, either in person or by proxy, should be fined 18*d*." On August 22d, the General Court appoint Samuel Archer, of Salem, to examine all persons going out of Massachusetts, to see that they carry no more than 20*s*. in coin to pay expenses.

Persecution of the Quakers.—Although the founders of Salem left country and friends that they might worship according to their own belief, they rigorously excluded from among their number all who held different religious views. The stern and uncompromising nature which had prompted them to separate from the church in their native land, and cross an ocean to establish a church where the gospel should be preached according to their understanding of its doctrines, would not brook interference on the part of any person or sect. The religious intolerance from which they had suffered did not deter them from being equally intolerant to others of a differing belief. They banished Roger Williams and Anne Hutchinson, and they fined and whipped and hung the Quakers.

In 1658, Samuel Shattuck, Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, Nicholas Phelps, Joshua Buffum, and Josiah Southwick, all of Salem, and all Quakers, were ordered to leave the Colony before the next election day. And on the 11th of May following, Daniel and Provided Southwick, the two children of Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, having no home to shelter them, and no one being allowed to harbor them under severe penalties, were arrested as vagabonds, and the treasurer was authorized to sell them to any of the English nation in Barbadoes or Virginia, as slaves. Provided Southwick was baptized at the First Church Dec. 6, 1639, and was therefore, at the date of this event, probably a little over twenty years of age. Christopher Holder and John Copeland, of the Friends denomination, being at Salem Sept. 21, 1657, the former attempted to address the people after the minister had done. They were both secured till the next day, and then sent to Boston, where they received thirty stripes each, and were imprisoned nine weeks.

William Robinson and Marmaduke Stevenson, Quaker ministers journeying from Virginia and Rhode Island, held open-air meetings in Salem in the year 1659, and were soon after *both executed* on Boston Common by the Puritan magistrates, being sentenced to death by John Endicott, then governor of the Colony.

The wife of Robert Wilson, for going through Salem without any clothes on, as a sign of spiritual nakedness in town and Colony, was sentenced to be tied to a cart's tail, uncovered to her waist, and be whipped from Mr. Gedney's gate to her own house, not exceeding thirty stripes. Her mother Buffum and sister Smith, being abettors of her conduct, were sentenced to be tied on each side of her, with nothing on to their waists but an under garb, and to accompany her the distance mentioned. Of this conduct there is no doubt the Friends in Salem disapproved. Edward Wharton, who was actively engaged in spreading the doctrines of the Friends, was apprehended in Boston, and ordered by the governor to be whipped and carried to his house in Salem.

Thomas Maule, who in 1688 built the first Quaker meeting-house, was on the third day of May, 1669, sentenced to be whipped for saying that "Mr. Higginson preached lies and that his instruction was the doctrine of the devil." Maule was a remarkable man, and a merchant of no inconsiderable business. His house was on the south side of Essex Street, on the spot where the house of James B. Curwen now stands. The building was demolished in the year 1852. Here it was that the Quakers of Salem, in 1680 and for several years thereafter, held their meetings for worship and business.

In 1694, Maule wrote a book, entitled "Truth set forth and maintained," with a desire to explain and defend the views of the Quakers; whereupon the governor and council directed the sheriff to search his house and burn all the obnoxious volumes he could find. Maule was arrested and indicted for publishing and putting forth a book "wherein is contained divers slanders against the churches and government of this province"; and for saying at the honorable court at Ipswich, in May last, "that there were as great mistakes in the Scriptures as in his book." He was tried by a jury and acquitted, despite the adverse rulings of the presiding justice.

Sir Edmund Andros.—In 1689, Sir Edmund Andros passed through Salem on his way to Boston from Pemaquid, where he had been to suppress Indian hostilities. The Colony charter had been abrogated, and Andros was the appointed ruler of New England. During his stay in Salem, he had a conference with the Rev. Mr. Higginson, the aged minister of Salem, and, in the presence of a large company, asked him if all the lands in New England did not belong to the king. Higginson answered him in the negative, stating two reasons for his position: first, that the colonists held by right of just occupation; and second, by right of purchase from the Indians; therefore the lands in New England are the subjects' property and not the king's. After much discussion, Sir Edmund said at last, with much indignation, "Either you are subjects or you are rebels." The foregoing was a part of the testimony of Mr. Higginson after Sir Edmund was displaced. The latter part of the same year, Andros was arrested and imprisoned, and a provisional government was formed, which elected the venerable Simon Bradstreet, resident in Salem, to be its president, and Wait Winthrop to command the militia. The General Court again convened, and Salem sent her deputies, and, during the year 1690, raised troops to serve against the Eastern Indians.

Salem Witchcraft.—There broke out in Salem, in 1692, that strange and dreadful delusion which will always remain as a blot on the fair fame of this ancient town. Some twenty persons were tried and executed on the charge of witchcraft, and many others, charged with the same offence, were arrested and thrown into jail. As Chapter V. of the history of the county has already given a full and accurate account of their trials and executions, it is not necessary to further allude to the matter here. The history of this delusion marks one of the most melancholy and deplorable events in the annals of Salem.

The Province Charter.—Sir William Phipps arrived in Boston May 14, 1692, bringing the new charter from William and Mary. This charter constituted Massachusetts, Plymouth, Maine, and Nova Scotia one Province, of which William Phipps was appointed governor by their majestics. This was the occasion of great rejoicing among the people here, although it did not restore, as they hoped it might, the whole of their former chartered rights.

Simon Bradstreet.—The venerable Simon Bradstreet, who had been the last governor under the colonial charter, died in Salem March 27, 1697. He was born in England in 1603, and came to Massachusetts in 1630, as one of the Assistants. Mr. Bradstreet was deputy-governor in 1673, and so continued to 1679, when he was elected governor. He served in that office till the charter of Massachusetts was made void, in 1686. When Sir Edmund Andros was deposed by the people, Mr. Bradstreet was again chosen governor, continuing in office until 1692, when Sir William Phipps, appointed by their majesties, came and took his place. "He was a man of deep discernment whom neither wealth nor honor could allure from duty. He poised with an equal balance the authority of the king and the liberty of the people. Sincere in religion and pure in his life, he overcame the world." His house in Salem occupied the site on Essex Street, next west of Plummer Hall, and was taken down in 1750.

Ferries and Bridges.—At a very early period in the history of the

settlement of Salem, ferries were established as a means of communication with the surrounding country. It is agreed by the town, Dec. 26, 1636, that John Stone shall keep a ferry betwixt his house on the neck and Cape Ann side, during the space of three years, and shall charge twopence from a stranger, and one penny from an inhabitant. This was the ferry to Beverly. Sept. 25, 1637, George Wright is granted certain land "to keep a ferry between Butt point and Darby fort." This ferry was from the foot of Turner Street to Naugus Head. When Marblehead was incorporated, in 1649, Salem reserved to itself the right of the ferry, and the appointment of the ferrymen. The Beverly ferry was continued, with numerous changes of rates and ferrymen, until the opening of Essex Bridge, Sept. 24, 1788. The ferry to Naugus Head was used till about 1785, when it was abandoned altogether.

The Mill Bridge, over South River, was built about 1664. The bridge over North River was built in 1744, and, in 1789, became the property of the town. The proposition to build a bridge from Salem to Beverly, in 1787, met with violent and determined opposition on the part of the Salem people. They assembled in town-meeting and instructed their representatives to oppose the granting of a charter, alleging as a reason that the navigation of North River would be destroyed; and they invited the adjoining towns to join in the remonstrance, and to use their utmost endeavors to prevent the accomplishment of the project. In spite of the opposition, however, a charter was granted, and, Sept. 24, 1788, the bridge was opened to the public as a toll-bridge. The tolls were removed in 1868. A bridge was built over South River, in a line with Central and Lafayette streets, in 1805. It was built at the expense of E. H. Derby and others, and was accepted by the town in 1810.

The General Court at Salem.—In 1728, a dispute having arisen between Gov. Burnet and the General Court, in reference to his salary, the governor orders the General Court to meet at Salem October 31st. And to accommodate them, the town have "the new town and court house fitted up." Salutes are fired as the governor arrives. He informs the House that he removed them from Boston because the people there endeavored to influence representatives from other places against granting him a salary. The House hold that they should not be moved from Boston, and desire the governor to order them back again, and they prepare a memorial to His Majesty "setting forth the reasons why the House cannot settle a salary on the Governor for the time being." The House having refused to do any business in Salem, holding that they should sit only in Boston, the governor, on December 12th, adjourns them to the Ship Tavern, and, on the 20th, prorogues them. April 2, 1729, the General Court again meets in Salem, and Gov. Burnet renews his call for fixing his salary, and again the question is put "whether the House will come into any further consideration of settling a salary on the Governor at this session," and decided in the negative; and, on the 18th of the same month, the governor dissolves the Legislature, after informing the members that he had not ordered them any pay, because they had refused to do business one-third of their sessions, and to compensate him as the king required. The town of Salem votes to pay its representatives out of the town treasury.

On May 28th, the Legislature meets again in the court-house, which the town has had newly painted for its reception. Immediately after the Council is formed, the governor prorogues them to June 25th, without delivering a message, at which time they again assemble, and July 7th, without transacting any business, are adjourned to meet at Cambridge, August 21st. In the midst of his controversy with the representatives, Gov. Burnet dies September 7th. He was a son of the celebrated Bishop Burnet.

Jonathan Belcher is appointed governor in his stead, and reaches Boston in August, 1730, and, like his predecessor, has a dispute with the Legislature about his salary, and May 31, 1733, in his speech to the House, says: "In obedience to His Majesty I must inform you he still expects, that you make provision for the support of his government according to his Royal instructions"; but the House still refuses to grant the governor a fixed salary. Finally the House votes to supply the treasury with £76,500 in bills of credit, and in this manner the matter is adjusted. A misunderstanding arises soon after in regard to raising money to supply the treasury, and the governor complains bitterly of the action of the representatives in not following his instructions in relation to taxation. The Legislature agree to supply the treasury with £100,000 in bills, and £900 are granted for fortifications at Salem. May 27, 1741, the General Court met, but were dissolved by Gov. Belcher, on the 28th, because they encouraged the formation of the Land Bank, which he says will injure unwary persons who will take the notes for money "which have no honest or solid foundation." A part of the proprietors of this bank lived in Salem.

Earthquakes. — Salem was visited by an earthquake, Nov. 18, 1755, Dr. E. A. Holyoke says in his diary, that "about 4 h. 15 m. we were awakened by a greater earthquake than has ever been known in this country. Tops of chimnies and stone walls were thrown down, and clocks stopped by the shake. I thought of nothing less than being buried instantly in the ruins of the house"; and on March 8, 1756, town-meeting was opened with prayer, by the Rev. Mr. Barnard, and several Province laws are read against profaneness and other immoralities, to the inhabitants, this seriousness being occasioned by the recent earthquake. March 12, 1761, another severe earthquake was felt in Salem, described as much the same as the one of five years before.

Stamp Act. — On the 13th of June, 1764, the House accepted a draft of a letter to their agent in London against the Sugar Act and the Stamp Act, though the latter had not gone into effect. In this letter, the House maintain that Parliament has no right to tax this Province, because it is not represented in the House of Commons. The inhabitants of Salem at once took firm and decided ground in regard to what they considered an encroachment of their rights and liberties, and at a town-meeting held Oct. 21, 1765, it was voted "that instructions be given to our representatives with regard to a late act of Parliament commonly called the Stamp Act." Benjamin Pickman, Joseph Bowditch, Edward A. Holyoke, William Pynchon, and John Higginson are appointed to draft such instructions.

On their report, the town sent instructions to Andrew Oliver and William Brown, their representatives, stating "that the Inhabitants of Salem being fully convinced that the Act, lately passed by the Parliament of Great Britain, commonly called the Stamp Act, would if carried into execution be excessively grevious and burthensome to the inhabitants of this his Majesty's loyal Province; and productive of the most fatal consequences to our trade, as it must soon drain us of the medium necessary for carrying it on, and be very injurious to Liberty, since we are therein taxed without our consent, having no Representative in Parliament. But if in any sense we are supposed to be represented, most certainly it is by such only as have an interest in laying burthens uppon us for their own relief, and further as we are thereby deprived of another most valuable right, that of trial by juries and instead of it have the power of the Courts of Admiralty further extended, which must be unfavorable to Liberty. As these are some of our sentiments of this act and as we would give a public testimony of our disapprobation thereof — we do hereby request you to do everything you legally can towards obtaining a repeal of the Stamp Act."

Town Records. — Several curious entries are found on the town records about this time. It was voted in 1768, at town-meeting, that the selectmen be desired to petition the General Court in behalf of the town for an act for a lottery to raise a sum of money to be applied towards paving Main Street in said Salem; and the same year the following vote appears on the town records: "Voted, that it is the mind of the town that proper means be used for preventing slaves especially on election days (so called) from wearing swords, beating drums and making use of powder." The townsmen, however, did not approve of slavery; for we find that they voted, May 18, 1773, that the representatives of the town be instructed to use their utmost endeavors to prevent the future importation of negroes, "their slavery being a thing repugnant to the natural rights of mankind and highly prejudicial to the Province."

But as late as Jan. 24, 1769, there appears in the "Gazette," of Salem, an announcement that a very strong, healthy, negro boy is to be sold, and buyers are asked to "inquire of the printer."

Duty on Tea. — Hardly had the rejoicings ceased over the repeal of the Stamp Act, which, March 18, 1767, was "joyfully commemorated through the Colonies," when the imposition of new duties on paper, glass, and teas caused great dissatisfaction among the people. On the 13th of February, 1768, the House direct a letter to the "several Houses and Burgesses of the British Colonies on the Continent, setting forth their sentiments with regard to the great difficulties that must accrue by the operation of divers Acts of Parliament for laying taxes and duties on the Colonies with the sole and express purpose of raising a revenue. June 21st the Governor lays before the House a letter which expresses his Majesty's displeasure for their resolve for writing to other Colonies on the subject of their intended representation against some late Acts of Parliament and that it was the King's pleasure that the House rescind their vote." The House voted, ninety-two to seventeen, not to rescind. The Salem representatives, William

Brown and Peter Frye, voted with the minority, and were exposed to much reproach therefor.

That the people of Salem did not sympathize with the views of their representatives is shown by their vote in town-meeting, July 18, approving the late vote of the House not to rescind, and thanking them "for their firmness in maintaining our just rights and liberties," a protest against such approbation being signed by only thirty of the inhabitants. Sept. 6, the merchants and traders of Salem meet at the King's Arms Tavern and unanimously vote "not to send any further orders for goods, and that from Jan. 1, 1769, to Jan. 1, 1770, they will not import, nor purchase of others any kind of merchandise from Great Britain except coal, salt and some articles necessary to carry on the fishery," and that they will not import any tea, glass, or paper until the Acts imposing duties on these articles are repealed.

On September 7th, one Row, for giving information that a vessel in the harbor was about to elude the payment of duties, was carried to the Common, tarred and feathered, set upon a cart, with the word "Informer," in large letters, on his breast and back, and carried through Main Street, preceded by a crowd, and bidden to flee out of town. He went to Boston, and was rewarded by the Crown officers for his sufferings.

The inhabitants of Salem, in town-meeting, held May 27, 1769, vote, after discussion, "that Messrs. Richard Derby, Jr., and John Pickering, Jr., the Representatives in General Court, be instructed to endeavor that inquiry be made into the conduct of the troops stationed among us, and that his Majesty's loyal subjects of this Province may be protected and secured against any violence or oppression; that, with regard to the revenue laws lately enacted, we esteem them our greatest grievance, as well as the unhappy cause of most others we now labor under; our obtaining full and effective relief from them you will, therefore, consider as the most weighty charge lying upon you. We earnestly recommend to you to use every means that may tend to restore the harmony and affection not long since subsisting between Great Britain and the Colonies, but which the late measures have, unhappily for both, greatly interrupted, and, if persisted in, may, in the end, totally destroy: but, at the same time, you are to keep the strictest watch over our essential constitutional rights and privileges, that none of them be in the least infringed upon."

On the first day of May, 1770, Samuel Flagg, Richard Derby, Jr., Warwick Palfray, Jonathan Ropes, Jr., John Gardner, Richard Manning, Thomas Mason, James King, and David Northey, are chosen, in town-meeting, a committee of inspection and correspondence; said committee to offer to the inhabitants of the town a paper to sign against using tea or foreign goods; and at the same meeting it is voted "that we do further agree to and with each other that we will not suffer any foreign tea to be used in our families, and that we will not buy any kind of goods whatever of those persons who shall sell said tea after the first day of the present month; and further, that we will not employ any person that shall use it themselves, or shall suffer it to be used in their families."

On September 27th, "considering the memorial of the Committee on Inspection respecting the infamous conduct of John Appleton, Peter Frye, Abigail Eppes, and Elizabeth Higginson, who, in breach of a solemn agreement, took their imported goods by violence out of the hands of the committee, it was voted that a memorandum, setting forth their conduct, be read at every annual town-meeting in March for the space of seven years next ensuing, immediately before the choice of town officers," and that an account of their "base and infamous behaviour" be published in the "Essex Gazette" for the space of one year.

Meeting of the Provincial Assembly. — The action of the town just narrated was but a prelude to what was soon to follow; and it was the fortune of Salem to be the theatre of the opening scenes in the great struggle that was to end in the independence of the Colonies. There is no year in the annals of Salem so memorable, and crowded so full of historic events, as the year which began on the first day of June, 1774. Here, during that time, were convened the last Provincial Assembly and first Provincial Congress; here were chosen the first delegates to the Continental Congress; here the assembled Province first formally renounced allegiance to the Imperial Legislature; here was made the first attempt to enforce the last oppressive Acts of Parliament, and here that attempt was resisted; and here, though no mortal wound was given, was shed the first blood of the American Revolution. If Salem had no history save that contained in the record of this eventful year, she would still be entitled to a high place among the historic cities of this country.

On the 13th of May, 1774, Gen. Thomas Gage arrived in Boston. He was the first British soldier appointed to the office of governor. On the 25th of the same month the General Court met at Boston, and a week later Gov. Gage adjourned them, to meet in Salem on the 7th of June. The governor proceeded to Salem on the Thursday before the Assembly met, and the next Saturday he was received with great parade, ending with a brilliant ball at the old Assembly Hall on Cambridge Street.

The Assembly met on the 7th of June, but the session lasted only eleven days. The House passed five Resolutions, protesting against the removal to Salem. No further political measure transpired in either branch until the 17th, when the House passed a Resolve, appointing as delegates to the Congress at Philadelphia, James Bowdoin, Thomas Cushing, Samuel Adams, John Adams, and Robert Treat Paine, the purpose of the Congress, as indicated by the Resolve, being "to consult upon measures for the restoration of harmony between Great Britain and the Colonies." The expenses of the delegates were also provided for. This action displeased Gov. Gage, and he ordered a proclamation for dissolving the General Court to be prepared by Thomas Flucker, the secretary of the Province. The proclamation was dated June 17, 1774, and with it the secretary proceeded to the town house, where the General Court was in session.

On arriving he found the door locked and the messenger on guard. He "directed the messenger to go in and acquaint the speaker that the secretary had a message from his Excellency to the honorable House, and desired he might be admitted to deliver it." The messenger returned, and said he had informed the speaker, as requested, "who mentioned it to the House, and their orders were to keep the door fast." Thereupon the secretary proceeded to read the paper upon the stairs, in the presence of the assembled multitude, and afterwards in the council chamber. Thus ended the last General Court held in Massachusetts under a provincial governor, and such, too, were the dramatic incidents attending the choice of the first five delegates to that congress which, by successive elections, continued throughout the war.

Governor Gage had taken up his residence at Danvers, in the mansion of Robert Hooper, now known as the "Collins House;" and two companies of soldiers, from Castle William, land in Salem, march through the town, and encamp near the governor's abode. On the 12th of August, a Halifax regiment land, and are quartered on the neck. On September 10th, they march from the neck through the town, are joined at Danvers South Parish, now Peabody, by the guards from the governor's headquarters, and together they proceed to Boston.

On Thursday the 1st of September, writs for calling a new General Court, to be held at Salem, on the fifth of the next month, were issued by the governor's order; but a week before the first day of the session, he published a proclamation, excusing the representatives elect from appearing at, or holding, a General Court.

Notwithstanding this proclamation, when the 5th of October arrived ninety of the representatives assembled. Among them were men of tried courage and determination, who were bent on executing the purpose they had in view, whether the governor appeared or not. We can imagine with what eager expectation the people watched their proceedings, and how earnestly the throng about the old town house discussed the momentous questions of the day. That they might not be charged with unseemly haste, the assembly did no formal business on the first day. At three o'clock the next morning there was an alarm of fire, and when the representatives assembled they found twenty-four buildings, including the meeting-house, destroyed, and the town-house itself scorched and blistered.

The assembly now organized, and John Hancock was chosen chairman, and Benjamin Lincoln, clerk. A committee was appointed to consider the governor's proclamation, and the assembly adjourned. On Friday, the 7th of October, the committee reported four resolutions, declaring that the grievances which they set forth were such as "in all good governments" had "been considered among the greatest reasons for convening a parliament or assembly," and that the proclamation was further proof of the necessity of "most vigorous and immediate exertions for preserving the freedom and constitution" of the province. The resolutions were adopted, and thereupon the following vote was passed: "*Voted*, That the members aforesaid do now resolve themselves into a Provincial Congress, to be joined by such other persons as have been or shall be chosen for that purpose, to take into consideration the dangerous and alarming situation of public affairs in this province, and to consult and determine on such measures as they shall judge will tend to promote the true interest of His Majesty, and the peace, welfare and prosperity of the province."

Having thus solemnly renounced the authority of parliament, and affirmed the fundamental right of the people to institute a government, when in their judgment the regular administration had overstepped the limits of the constitution they adjourned to more comfortable quarters at Concord, to meet on the following Tuesday. Here they organized the Congress, by raising Hancock to the presidency, and electing Lincoln secretary. They continued their sittings at Concord and Cambridge, and by midsummer three sessions had been held, had transacted business, and finally dissolved. On the day of their dissolution, they again assembled, by the recommendation of the Continental Congress, as an independent government under the charter. The vote of the assembly at Salem, on the 7th of October, 1774, was the legitimate act of the Province, in the only way in which the Province could express its pleasure. From this fact the movement in Salem derives a peculiar significance, and it can be justly claimed as the first official act of the Province by which she put herself in open, actual opposition to the home government.*

Leslie's Retreat. — The winter of 1774–75 came on, and found the breach between the Colonies and the mother country growing wider and wider. Military stores had already been seized, in various places, by the British troops, under orders from Gen. Gage, when, on a Sabbath afternoon in midwinter, a detachment of about three hundred British soldiers, under Col. Leslie, land at Marblehead, and march through the town towards Salem, with the purpose of seizing certain cannon loaned to the Provincial Congress. Maj. John Pedrick hastened to Salem to give the alarm, and, as the troops marched along through the "South fields," they were obliged to stop and repair the bridge at the South Mills, which the inhabitants had torn up to delay their passage. Hastily repairing it they cross, and the advance guard march towards Derby Wharf as a decoy, while the main body advance towards the North Bridge, halting a few minutes at the court-house. It was about four o'clock on the afternoon of Sunday, Feb. 26, 1775. The inhabitants of Salem were already aroused. Pastors dismissed their congregations, and repaired with them to the scene of action. Capt. Mason, living near the old North Church, shouted the alarm cry at the door: "The regulars are coming!" and then hastened to the bridge. Leslie and his men arrived at North Bridge, attended by a concourse of people, and found the draw raised to prevent their further progress. He requested Richard Derby, who owned part of the cannon,† to exert his influence for their surrender, and received the reply: "Find them if you can; take them if you can; they will never be surrendered."

On the other side of the river was Timothy Pickering, who had just been chosen colonel of the First Regiment, with forty armed militia ready to dispute Leslie's passage across the stream. Leslie threatened to fire on the people, when Capt. John Felt, who had "kept close to Leslie every step from the court-house," said to him: "You had better not fire, for there," pointing to the other side of the river, "is a multitude, every man of whom is ready to die in this strife."

On the top of the raised leaf of the draw, on the opposite side of the stream, the more adventurous spirits had clambered. They called to the soldiers in strong and defiant language, and received in reply a threat that if they did not desist they would be fired upon. "Fire and be d—d!" calls out Capt. Joshua Ward, in language more forcible than elegant. Three gondolas lay on the west side of the bridge, and Jonathan Felt, a shipmaster, Frank Benson, and Joseph Whicher, the foreman in Maj. Sprague's distillery, fearful that the enemy might use them to cross in, set about scuttling them to render them useless. A scuffle ensued between the soldiers and those in the gondolas, and Whicher received a wound from a bayonet, drawing blood, and of which he was afterwards exceedingly proud. Others were somewhat scratched, and a bloody struggle seemed imminent.

While matters were fast tending to a disastrous conflict, the Rev. Thomas Barnard of the North Church appeared as a mediator between Leslie and the people. "You cannot," said he, "commit this violation against innocent men, here, on this holy day, without sinning against God and humanity. Let me entreat you to return." "And who are you, sir?" answered Leslie to this remonstrance. The young minister replied, "I am Thomas Barnard, a minister of the gospel, and my mission is peace." He suggests the compromise by which honor is to be saved, on one side, and no guns lost on the other. Leslie agrees that if the draw is lowered, and he permitted to lead his men thirty rods beyond, he would then countermarch and leave the premises. Col. Pickering consents, a line is drawn and guarded by Pickering's men, and the haughty Briton crosses, turns in the face of the enemy, and proceeds expeditiously back to Marblehead, and from thence to Boston.

For the first time in the history of the Colony, the military authority of Great Britain had received a check; for the first time, blood had been spilt in a strife between the Colony and the mother country; and that the struggle was not as bloody and memorable as that of Lexington, which took place soon after, was due to the prudence and caution and forbearance of Col. Leslie. A single shot, and the brave and determined men of Salem who stood at North Bridge, under the lead of the gallant Felt, would have left few of the British soldiers to report to Gen. Gage the result of their expedition. A flag-staff now marks the spot on which the townspeople stood, in their opposition to the encroachment of the British troops on that eventful winter Sabbath in 1775.

Salem Militia. — Leslie's expedition roused the people of Salem to a sense of their danger; and on the 14th of March following, all persons on the alarm-list receive warning to meet in "School Street," and on the 25th, the town votes to raise two companies of minute-men "whose attachment to their country can be relied on." On the 19th of April, Benjamin Pierce, of Salem, is killed at the battle of Lexington. Col. Pickering, with three hundred soldiers, march as fast as they can from Salem towards Lexington, but do not arrive in sight of the enemy till the last of them were retreating through Charlestown. For the failure to arrive in season, the Salem troops are greatly censured; the inhabitants are highly indignant at this unjust censure of their soldiers, and call a town-meeting, Aug. 10, 1775, to make statement of the facts to the General Court. This is done at length, the statement beginning as follows: "On the 19th of April, very soon after the barbarous deeds of the King's troops at Lexington, the inhabitants mustered in arms, and near three hundred marched off and directed their course according to the intelligence they were continually receiving on the road, of the situation of the troops. Thousands of men nearer, much nearer the scene of action, either stayed at home, or arrived no sooner than the Salem militia."

This statement is sent to the General Court, which body thereupon votes: "In House of Representatives, August 17, 1775. On a petition from the town of Salem complaining of many illiberal reflections being cast by some individuals respecting the conduct of said town, in the present dispute between Great Britain and the Colonies. — Resolved: — That notwithstanding many ungenerous aspersions have been cast on said town, there is nothing appears to this court, in the conduct thereof, inimical to the liberties and privileges of America, but on the contrary, in many instances, its exertions have been such as has done its inhabitants much honor, and been of great advantage to the colony."

Benedict Arnold. — On the 14th of September, 1775, a detachment of troops sent from the headquarters at Cambridge, by Gen. Washington, stop for dinner at Salem, on their way to attempt the captnre of Quebec. This remarkable expedition was commanded by Benedict Arnold, then high in favor with Washington; and his indomitable courage and unfailing resources made the passage of the trackless woods of Maine by his troops a possibility. Congress, for this service, made Arnold a brigadier-general; and, while we execrate his subsequent treachery, this should be remembered to his credit.

Salem in the Revolution. — From 1775 till the news of the declaration of peace was received, April 3, 1783, Salem bore an honorable part in the contest that was waged for liberty and freedom. She furnished men to fill the ranks of the army, and money and clothing for its support. Her people were ready to sacrifice all, if need be, in the cause of independence and for the establishment of the rights of the Colonies.

At a town-meeting, held Wednesday, June 12, 1776, the following stirring and patriotic address to their representatives was adopted by men who knew the meaning of the brave words they used: "To the Gentlemen who represent the inhabitants of Salem in the present General Court. Gentlemen: We the inhabitants of the town of Salem in town meeting legally assembled hereby advise you that if the Honorable Congress shall for the safety of the United American colo-

* In preparing this brief account of the meeting of the Provincial Congress, liberal use has been made of an address delivered by Abner C. Goodell, Jr., Esq., before the Essex Institute, Oct. 5, 1874, in which the subject is elaborately and exhaustively treated. (See *Hist. Coll. Essex Institute*, vol. xiii., page 1.)

† Mr. Gideon Tucker, who died in 1861, aged eighty-three, related that when a boy six or seven years old, being with his father, at his wharf, in North Salem, there was pointed out to him the place where the cannon were piled. They were owned, he was told, by various persons, and had been landed from merchant vessels, a general peace making them unnecessary. When the alarm came that Leslie was on the road from Marblehead, these cannon were carried off by the farmers, and were placed on land owned by Col. Mason, near the present head of School Street. There they remained till about 1793.

nies declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain we will solemnly engage with our lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

After the Revolution. — The War of the Revolution having been brought to a successful termination, the inhabitants of Salem turned their attention to the avocations of peace. Commerce flourished here with unexampled prosperity, and the white sails of Salem's ships were unfurled in every port in the known world, and carried the fame and name of Salem to the uttermost parts of the earth. During the war with Great Britain in 1812, a large number of privateers were fitted out from Salem, and the inhabitants were several times alarmed by reported arrivals of vessels of the enemy. The commerce of Salem is treated more at length in a succeeding chapter.

From the close of the Revolutionary War until the adoption of the city charter, in 1836, no very notable event marked the history of Salem. The calm and placid stream flows quietly along unnoticed, while the brawling and dangerous rapid fixes our attention. History is little else than the record of disasters. War and turmoil, rebellion and riot, and their results, fill the larger part of the pages of history. Happy is the town whose record is short, because it is a record of peace and prosperity.

City Government. — As early as the year 1805 the subject of a city form of government was seriously considered, but the project took no definite shape until Jan. 29, 1836, on which day a town-meeting was called, upon petition of Joseph Peabody and others, to ascertain the sense of the town in relation to a city charter, the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall presiding. A committee of three persons was chosen from each ward, on motion of E. H. Derby, who, together with the selectmen, were to constitute a committee to consider and report upon the expediency of a change in the form of government.

Correspondence was had by the committee with gentlemen in other cities; and on the 15th of February they reported in favor of the change, and the meeting adopted a resolve "that it is expedient to adopt a city form of government." The selectmen were instructed to petition the General Court in behalf of the town for an Act of incorporation as a city, and a committee was appointed to draft a city charter. This committee consisted of Messrs. Leverett Saltonstall, Nathaniel Silsbee, Jr., Perley Putnam, Nathaniel J. Lord, Benjamin Merrill, Nathaniel L. Rogers, and Joseph G. Waters; and fifteen hundred copies of their report were printed and distributed forthwith. At a meeting of the committee on February 20th, it was voted that a charter for the city be obtained as soon as may be.

The Act "to establish the city of Salem" was approved March 23, 1836, by Edward Everett, governor of the Commonwealth. Warrants were now issued for a town-meeting to be held April 4, 1836. This meeting was held in the town hall, the Hon. Benjamin Merrill presiding; 802 votes were cast, of which 617 were for the charter, and 185 against it.

This action closed the history of the town of Salem,—a history extending over two centuries, and replete in its earlier years with stirring events and honorable actions, and making a record of which any town might be justly proud.

CHAPTER II.

SKETCH OF SALEM SINCE THE ADOPTION OF A CITY CHARTER.

Salem was the second city incorporated in the Commonwealth, the Act granting a city charter being dated March 23, 1836. Boston was incorporated Feb. 22, 1822; and Lowell, April 1, 1836. The charter of Salem was modelled after that of Boston. It provided for a city government, to consist of a mayor, six aldermen, and twenty-four common councilmen. The only change in this respect that has since been made has been the addition of one member to the board of aldermen. This was done by statute of 1878. The city charter having been accepted April 4, 1836, the selectmen issued their warrants for an election of mayor and members of the city council on the twenty-fifth day of April, 1836. At this election 1,104 votes were cast for mayor, of which the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall received 752 votes, and was elected. Perley Putnam had 260 votes, George Peabody 56, and David Putnam 36. Samuel Holman, Jr., George Peabody, Henry Whipple, David Pingree, John Waters, and Oliver Parsons were chosen to constitute the board of aldermen.

The organization of the new city government took place on Monday, May 9, 1836, at ten o'clock, in the Tabernacle Church. Prayer was offered by the Rev. Dr. Brazer, and David Cummins administered the oath of office to the mayor-elect. Mayor Saltonstall delivered his inaugural address, and at its close the two boards retired to rooms in the court-house, formerly used as a town hall. John Glen King was chosen president, and Nathaniel Cleaves clerk of the common council. Joseph Cloutman was elected city clerk, and the new goverment was ready to commence its labors. The city council continued to hold its sessions at the court-house until the present city hall was ready for occupancy.

City Hall. — On the third day of April, 1837, Mayor Saltonstall, with Aldermen Peabody and Parsons, and Councilmen Putnam, Rogers, Shepard, and Russell, were appointed a committee to report what measures were expedient to be taken to provide suitable accommodations for the city council and officers of the city; and May 19, 1837, they reported that it was expedient to erect a city hall on Court, now Washington Street. A committee of five was appointed to superintend its erection; and on the 24th of May, 1838, the mayor, as chairman of the committee, reported that the city hall was ready to be occupied, and Thursday, May 31, the first meeting of the city council was held therein, Mayor Saltonstall delivering an address upon the occasion. The cost of the city hall, completed and furnished, together with the land, was $22,878.69, which sum was wholly paid from the surplus revenue hereafter referred to. The city hall was enlarged, in 1876, during the administration of Mayor Williams, who delivered a dedicatory address May 8, 1876. The cost of the improvement was about $24,000; and, as enlarged, it will doubtless supply the needs of the city for many years to come.

The city hall has this noteworthy fact connected with its history: It is the only building that has been, or probably ever will be, built in Salem with surplus revenue returned by the United States government, because the coffers of the nation were full to overflowing. The income from customs duties and the sales of public lands so far exceeded the estimates that the secretary of the treasury found his receipts to be $40,000,000 in excess of his needs; and that sum was, by Act of Congress, distributed among the States, which, in turn, made a distribution among the cities and towns. Salem's share of this surplus revenue was $33,843.49.

City Seal. — An abiding place having thus been provided for the city officials, attention was turned to procuring an appropriate municipal seal; and March 11, 1839, an ordinance was adopted, providing for the seal as at present used by the city. The design was adopted substantially as drawn by Mr. George Peabody, then a member of the board of aldermen; and the ordinance before-mentioned provided that the following be the device of the seal of the city, to wit: In the centre thereof a shield, bearing upon it a ship under full sail, approaching a coast designated by the costume of the person standing upon it, and by the trees near him, as a portion of the East Indies; beneath the shield, this motto: "*Divitis Indiæ usque ad ultimum sinum*," signifying "To the farthest port of the rich East;" and above the shield, a dove, bearing an olive-branch in her mouth. In the circumference encircling the shield, the words "*Salem condita, A. D. 1626*," "*Civitatis regimine donata, A. D. 1836.*" The engraver, Mr. Stott, of Boston, substituted a female for the male figure intended by the ordinance, apparently without authority from any one. The seal of a city should be characteristic and unique, so that it could not fitly be borne by any other city; for it is an enduring link between the past and the future. It should bear upon its face an epitome of the city's history. The seal of Salem seems to meet the conditions of an historic work. It fitly typifies and commemorates that commercial enterprise that during the first half of this century gave Salem a peculiar distinction among the cities of the earth, and carried the fame of her merchants, as well as the flag of the country, into unknown seas.*

Mayors. — A brief notice of the men who have been assigned the positions of mayor and of president of the lower branch of the city government will be of interest, as indicating the character of the municipal government of Salem.

Leverett Saltonstall was the first mayor, serving from May 9, 1836, to Dec. 5, 1838, when he resigned to take the seat in Congress to which he had been elected, and where he served until 1843. He was born in Haverhill, June 13, 1783, and graduated at Harvard in 1802. He was a member of both branches of the State Legislature, and President of the Senate in 1831. Harvard conferred upon him the degree

* For a full account of the proceedings on the adoption of the city seal, see an article by Robert S. Rantoul, Esq., in Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. VIII., page 3.

of LL. D. in 1838. He was an active member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and of the Massachusetts Historical Society. He was a distinguished lawyer, a graceful and pleasing orator, and a man universally respected and beloved. He died May 8, 1845.

Stephen C. Phillips was mayor from Dec. 5, 1838, to 1842. He was born in Salem, Nov. 1, 1801, and graduated at Harvard in 1819. From 1824 to 1829 he was a representative to the General Court; in 1830–31, a member of the State Senate; and 1832–33, again in the House. He was a representative to Congress from 1834 to 1838, and in 1848 and 1849 Free Soil candidate for governor. Mr. Phillips was deeply interested in the cause of education, and on his retirement from the office of mayor he gave the whole of his salary to the city for the benefit of the public schools. He was lost by the burning of the steamer "Montreal" on the St. Lawrence River, June 26, 1857.

Stephen P. Webb served as mayor in 1842, '43, and '44, and again in 1860, '61, and '62. He was born in Salem, and graduated at Harvard in 1824. He was mayor of San Francisco during the stirring times of the vigilance committee, and was city clerk in Salem from 1863 to 1871.

Joseph S. Cabot was mayor four years, — from 1845 to 1848. He was born in Salem, Oct. 8, 1796, and died June 29, 1874. In 1829 he was chosen president of the Asiatic Bank, and continued in that office till his death, with brief intervals, when he was bank commissioner. He was greatly interested in horticulture, and was president of the Massachusetts Horticultural Society. He was also president of the Salem Savings Bank, and of the Harmony Grove Cemetery Corporation.

Nathaniel Silsbee, Jr., was mayor four years, — in 1849–50, and again in 1858–59. He was born in Salem, and graduated at Harvard in 1824. He was for many years Treasurer of Harvard College.

David Pingree served as mayor in 1851. He was born in Georgetown, in 1795, and died in Salem, March 31, 1863. He was a merchant, president of the Naumkeag Bank from its organization in 1831; and president of the Naumkeag Cotton Company from its establishment till his death.

Charles W. Upham was mayor in 1852. Born in St. John, N. B., May 4, 1802, he graduated at Harvard in 1821. He was settled over the First Church in Salem from 1824 to 1844. He was a member of the thirty-third Congress 1853–55, and a representative to the General Court in 1849, 1859, and 1860; a member of the State Senate in 1850, 1857, and 1858, — the last two years being president of that body. Mr. Upham is quite celebrated as an author, — the "History of Salem Witchcraft," and "Life of Timothy Pickering" being among his most recent productions. He was at various times editor of the "Christian Register" and "Christian Review." His death occurred June 15, 1875.

Asahel Huntington served as mayor in 1853. He was born in Topsfield, July 23, 1798, and graduated at Yale in 1819. He was county and district attorney, appointed first in 1830. In 1845 he resigned as district attorney; but in 1847 he was again elected to that office, and served till 1851, when he was appointed clerk of the courts for Essex County, which office he held till his death. He was twice a representative to the General Court, and was president of the Essex Institute. He was greatly interested in the cause of temperance. He died Sept. 5, 1870.

Joseph Andrews served as mayor in 1854–55. He was born in Salem in 1809, and died Feb. 8, 1869. He was captain of the Salem Light Infantry and brigadier-general of the State militia, which position he held in 1861, at the opening of the Rebellion. He commanded at Fort Warren, in Boston harbor, and had charge of the State troops sent to that station prior to their departure for the seat of war, and until it ceased to be used for that purpose. He was a bank official.

William S. Messervy was mayor in 1856–57. He was born in Salem Aug. 26, 1812. Appointed as territorial secretary of New Mexico in 1853, he was at one time the acting-governor.

Stephen G. Wheatland served as mayor in 1863–64. He was born in Newton, Aug. 11, 1824, and graduated at Harvard in 1844. He served as representative to the General Court for several years, and is a lawyer by profession.

Joseph B. F. Osgood was mayor in 1865. He was born in Salem July 1, 1823, and graduated at Harvard in 1846. He has served in both branches of the State Legislature, and is the present judge of the first district court of Essex County, having been appointed on the establishment of the court in 1874.

David Roberts served as mayor in 1866–67, resigning on account of a disagreement with his board of aldermen, Sept. 26, 1867. He is a lawyer, has served in the lower branch of the State Legislature, and is the author of a book on Admiralty Law and Practice. He was born in April 5, 1804.

William Cogswell was elected mayor, Sept. 26, 1867, on the resignation of Mayor Roberts, and served in 1868–69, and again in 1873–74. He was born in Bradford, Aug. 23, 1838, and graduated at the Harvard Law School. He entered the War of the Rebellion as captain in the 2d Mass. Regiment, and rose to the rank of brevet brigadier-general. He was with Sherman during his memorable march through Georgia. In 1870–71 he was a representative to the General Court. A lawyer by profession, he now holds the office of State inspector of fish.

Nathaniel Brown was mayor in 1870–71. He was born in Salem, March 18, 1827, and was a captain in the merchant service for many years. He is president of the Salem Marine Society, and delivered the address on the centennial anniversary of the incorporation of that society in 1871.

Samuel Calley served as mayor in 1872. He was born in Salem, April 13, 1821, and is by trade a house-painter. He served as representative in the General Court in 1870 and 1871.

Henry L. Williams served as mayor in 1875–76. He was born in Salem, July 23, 1815. He is president of the National Exchange Bank, and was for a long time a director in the Eastern Railroad.

Henry K. Oliver was mayor in 1877, '78, and '79. He was born in Beverly, Nov. 24, 1800, and graduated at Harvard in 1818. He was adjutant-general from 1844 to 1848, and was State treasurer during the war, from 1861 to 1866. He has been interested in the labor question, and was chief of the State bureau of labor for several years. He has served as mayor of Lawrence and as agent of the State board of education. At the Philadelphia exhibition in 1876, he was one of the judges of musical instruments. He was a member of the first common council of Salem. Mr. Oliver was a teacher by profession, and taught many years in Salem, being the first teacher of the English High School. He was afterwards agent of the Atlantic Cotton Mills at Lawrence.

Presidents of the Common Council. — John Glen King was president of the common council in 1836–37. He was born March 19, 1787, and died July 26, 1857. He graduated at Harvard in 1807, and was one of that corps of scholars who gave the type and character to the Essex bar. He was a member of both branches of the State Legislature, and one of the founders of the Essex Historical Society.

Richard S. Rogers was president in 1838. He was born in 1790, and was an active merchant in the firm of N. L. Rogers & Bros., who were pioneers in the United States of the Zanzibar and New Holland trades. For many years, down to 1842, they were engaged in foreign commerce with the East Indies, and were among the most distinguished merchants of Salem. He died at Salem, June 11, 1873.

John Russell was president in 1839–40–41. He was born in Boston in 1779, and was an apprentice in the office of the "Columbian Centinel." He served as colonel of the Salem Artillery Regiment; was president of the Salem Charitable Mechanic Association, a representative to the General Court, and cashier and president of the Bank of General Interest. He died in Salem, April 12, 1853.

Joshua H. Ward was president in 1842–43–44. He resigned Sept. 2, 1844, on his appointment as judge of the court of common pleas. He was born in Salem, July 8, 1808, and graduated at Harvard in 1829. He was the youngest judge upon the bench, being only thirty-six at the time of his appointment. He left a lucrative practice to take the seat, and won the respect and esteem of all who had occasion to attend the courts. He served repeatedly in the lower branch of the State Legislature, and died at Salem, June 5, 1848.

David Putnam was chosen president on the resignation of Judge Ward, Sept. 5, 1844, and served during the remainder of the year. He was born in Danvers, in 1780, was a dry-goods merchant, and brigadier-general in the State militia. He died in Salem, May 15, 1866.

Joseph G. Sprague was president in 1845–46–47. He was born in Danvers in 1786, and was for twenty years the cashier of the Naumkeag Bank. He died Dec. 1, 1852.

Jonathan C. Perkins was president in 1848. He was born at Ipswich, Nov. 21, 1809, and graduated at Amherst College in 1832. He was State senator in 1849, and was appointed a justice of the court of common pleas in 1848, which position he held till the abolition of the court in 1859. For several years he was the city solicitor. He was one of the trustees of Amherst College. He edited and annotated

several valuable legal works. His death occurred at Salem, Dec. 12, 1877.

Benjamin Wheatland was president in 1849–50–51. He was born in Salem in May, 1801, and graduated at Harvard in 1819. He was agent of the Newmarket Manufacturing Company for many years, and died in Salem, Dec. 28, 1854.

John Whipple was president in 1852–53. He was born in Hamilton, and died Aug. 6, 1876, at the age of seventy-five years. He was a manufacturer of furniture, and represented Salem in the lower branch of the Legislature.

Daniel Potter was president in 1854–55. He was born in Ipswich, March 24, 1800, and was by trade a blacksmith. He has been a representative to General Court, and for many years a deputy sheriff for Essex County, having served continuously in the latter office since 1855.

John Webster was president in 1856. He was born in Salem, Sept. 10, 1804, and was in early years a master mariner, making voyages to Zanzibar and other ports. He is now treasurer of the Newmarket Manufacturing Company.

William C. Endicott was president in 1857. He was born in Salem, Nov. 19, 1826, and graduated at Harvard in 1847. He was appointed one of the justices of the supreme judicial court in 1873, and is now upon the bench. He was for several years the city solicitor. He takes an active interest in science and literature.

Stephen B. Ives was president in 1858. He was born in Salem, April 12, 1801, and was a bookseller and publisher. He has served in the lower branch of the Legislature, and has always taken an active part in municipal affairs.

Henry L. Williams was president in 1859, and mayor in 1875–76.

James H. Battis was president in 1860. He was born in Salem, Dec. 10, 1819, and is a manufacturer of cigars. He has been storekeeper at the Salem custom-house.

Stephen G. Wheatland was president in 1861–62, and mayor in 1863–64.

William G. Choate was president in 1863–64. He was born in Salem, Aug. 30, 1830, and graduated at Harvard in 1852. He was assistant attorney-general of Massachusetts. He has practised law in New York City since 1865, and was appointed Judge of the United States Court for the Southern District of New York in 1878.

Gilbert L. Streeter was president in 1865, and again in 1870–71–72. He was born in Salem April 30, 1823, and is the editor of the Salem "Observer," and an officer in the First National Bank.

Charles S. Osgood was president in 1866–67–68 and '69. He was born in Salem March 13, 1839. He served in the board of aldermen two years, and in the common council seven years. He was deputy collector of the port of Salem from 1864 to 1873; and represented Salem in the Massachusetts House of Representatives for six years, from 1874 to 1879, inclusive.

William M. Hill was president from 1873 to Jan. 14, 1875, when he resigned to accept the position of city marshal, which office he held until 1877, when he was appointed on the State Detective Force. He was born in Salem Aug. 16, 1831, and is by trade a currier.

George W. Williams was chosen president on the resignation of Mr. Hill, Jan. 14, 1875, and held the position during the remainder of the year. He was born in Salem, Oct. 2, 1839.

George H. Hill was president in 1876. He was born in Salem July 14, 1842, and is in the drug business.

Arthur L. Huntington was president in 1877–78. He was born in Salem Aug. 12, 1848, and graduated at Harvard in 1870. He is a member of the Essex bar.

Such is a brief history of the men who have been prominent in the government of Salem since its organization as a city. It includes the names of many who have attained great eminence in their different walks in life, and the name of no one appears there who has not striven to increase the prosperity and add to the material welfare of the city. The years from the adoption of the city charter to the opening of the War of the Rebellion in 1861 were quiet and uneventful years in the history of Salem. During that period the commercial prosperity of the city, already declining, continued to decrease, and her ships engaged in foreign commerce were mostly entered and cleared at the great commercial cities. The opening of the Eastern Railroad to Boston Aug. 27, 1838, and the increased facilities for travel, have tended to concentrate business at the great centres of trade, and Salem no longer holds her place as one of the principal cities engaged in foreign commerce. Other avenues of business have been opened, however, which will be noticed more at length in a succeeding chapter.

Salem in the Civil War. — We have seen in the preceding chapter that, during the War of the Revolution, the people of Salem, in town-meeting assembled, declared themselves ready to support the cause of freedom "with our lives and fortunes," and that upon her soil the first blood of that contest was shed. When, nearly a century later, civil war hung like a black and angry cloud over the nation, and threatened to rend it asunder, Salem again took a prominent and honorable part in the defence of the national honor and life. The complete history of Salem in the civil war would contain a record of the movements of every regiment, battalion, and unattached company from Massachusetts, and a description of the cruises of many of the war vessels of the government. On the 16th of January, 1861, Gov. John A. Andrew issued the order which caused the non-combatants to leave the ranks of our militia organizations and their places to be filled by those who were willing to enter upon active service in defence of their country.

The Salem Light Infantry, on Monday evening, April 9, 1861, gave an exhibition drill and ball at Mechanic Hall, at which Gov. Andrew was present. At the close of the drill, he addressed the company, expressing the pleasure he had derived from witnessing the brilliant and beautiful exhibition. He closed by saying that he hoped there would be no occasion for their services in the field; but, if duty called, he had no doubt that they would promptly rally to the defence of the starry flag, under which their fathers had marched to battle. The governor did not realize that the catastrophe he dreaded was so near at hand. Within the week, on the morning of Friday, April 12, Fort Sumter was fired on, and the loyal men in the North sprang to arms. On the 15th of April, President Lincoln issued a proclamation calling for 75,000 men to march to the defence of the country; and on Thursday, the 18th of April, but little more than a week from the evening of the ball, the brave men who danced there to the soft and melodious music of the waltz, followed the stirring and martial strains of the band, to defend with their lives, if need be, the insult to the national flag that floated from the battlements of Sumter.

The Salem Light Infantry, Capt. Devereux, was the first company to leave Salem; but the Mechanic Light Infantry, Capt. Pierson, and the City Guards, Capt. Danforth, were not far behind, — both those companies leaving Salem on Saturday morning, April 20. Eight days after the first gun opened on Fort Sumter, three full companies had left Salem for the scene of action. The Salem Light Infantry, called also the Salem Zouaves, formed part of the 8th Regiment; and on their departure from Boston, Gov. Andrew closed his address to them as follows: "Mr. Commander, — Go forth with the blessing of your country and the confidence of your fellow-citizens. Under the blessing of God, in a good and holy cause, with stout hearts and stalwart arms, go forth to victory. On your shields be returned, or bring them with you. You are the advance-guard of Massachusetts soldiers. As such, I bid you God-speed and farewell."

The city council met on Friday evening, April 19th, and appropriated $15,000 "for the benefit of those of our fellow citizens who have so promptly and so nobly responded to the call of their country," and the private citizens did all in their power to encourage and assist them.

The noble record of the three months' volunteers, who so promptly obeyed the orders issued by Gov. Andrew in April, their valuable services rendered on land and water, the rescue of the frigate "Constitution," the brave deeds of the men of the 5th Regiment at Bull Run, the salvation to the Union of the city of Baltimore; in all these historic events Salem volunteers bore an honorable part, and acquired in their short career an experience which fitted them for efficient service in the regiments which they found forming on their return. A single instance will show the enthusiasm and zeal with which these men devoted themselves to the service of the country. Out of the ranks of the Salem Light Infantry, known sometimes as the Salem Zouaves, twenty-six officers were commissioned.

When the call came for a response from the light batteries of the State, the old Salem Artillery, under Capt. Charles Manning, was one of the first in the field, with the title of the 4th Light Battery. In the heavy artillery regiments assigned to the defence of our border cities, but transformed later into infantry regiments, the city was so well represented that the First Heavy Artillery alone contained between two and three hundred Salem men. When Gen. Banks made his successful retreat down the Shenandoah Valley, the 2d Massachusetts Infantry performed the arduous and responsible duties of rear guard, and Company C of Salem, under command of Capt. William Cogswell, received especial mention for brave and meritorious conduct. This regiment was present at Antietam, at Gettysburg, at

Averysborough, and on the march from Atlanta to the sea. In the brave Irish regiment, the 9th Massachusetts, the city was ably represented by a full company, under Capt. Edward Fitzgerald, and they participated in the memorable battles of the Army of the Potomac.

Capt. Arthur F. Devereux, when he returned from the three months' campaign, accepted the position of lieutenant-colonel in the 19th Massachusetts Regiment. A large number of the officers of this regiment were Salem men, and a full company, recruited by Capt. Charles U. Devereux, was afterwards connected therewith. This command performed good service on the Peninsula, on the Potomac, and at Antietam, Gettysburg, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, and before Richmond. Capt. John F. Devereux recruited a company from this vicinity and joined the 11th Massachusetts Regiment. The organization of the 23d Regiment included two Salem companies: Company A, under Capt. E. A. P. Brewster; and company F, under Capt. George M. Whipple. In this regiment were more than two hundred men connected with this city, and it participated in the battles of Newbern, Kingston, and Goldsborough, and saw active service in front of Petersburg. In the 40th Regiment there were twelve commissioned officers and forty-eight enlisted men from Salem. The colored regiments, the 54th and 55th Massachusetts, which performed such valiant service at Fort Wagner and the surrounding islands, contained Salem men in their ranks.

In the nine months' regiments, Salem furnished one full company, under command of Capt. George Wheatland, Jr., to the 48th, and one, under Capt. George D. Putnam, to the 50th Regiment. These regiments saw service in Louisiana and before Port Hudson. The Salem Cadets, under Maj. J. L. Marks, from whose ranks the three years' troops had drawn very freely, enlisted for 100 days, and were assigned to garrison duty in Boston harbor. The 13th Unattached Company, Capt. Robert W. Reeves, was stationed at New Bedford. The 1st Company of Sharpshooters, under Capt. John Saunders, and the 2d Company, under Capt. Lewis H. Wentworth, performed their especial work in a manner to reflect credit upon themselves and the city. In the navy, the first enlistment was in April, 1861, and, between that date and the close of the war, nearly four hundred men represented Salem in the different squadrons and flotillas. We find them with Dupont, with Farragut, with Porter, on the "Kearsarge," and on the sinking "Cumberland."

In the early days of the war there were two funerals in Salem, which first brought home a full realization of the horrors of war. Brig. Gen. Frederick W. Lander was born in Salem, Dec. 17, 1822. He was a successful engineer and surveyor, and a valuable employee of the government. On the breaking out of the war he offered his services to Gen. Scott, and was appointed in July, 1861, a brigadier-general of volunteers. He distinguished himself at Ball's Bluff, where he was wounded, and March 2, 1862, he died of congestive fever, aggravated by his wounds. His funeral took place in Salem, March 8th, in the presence of a large assemblage of mourners.

Lieut. Col. Henry Merritt, of the 23d Massachusetts Regiment, was killed at the battle of Newbern, March 14, 1862. He was a brave and faithful officer, and his funeral occurring on Friday, March 21st, so soon after that of Gen. Lander, caused a general feeling of sadness in the community.

More than three thousand men entered the service from this city, and more than two hundred were killed. Fifty shared the suffering endured in the rebel prisons, and hundreds bear to-day the scars of honorable wounds. Such is briefly the record of Salem in the civil war, and it is a record of which she may be justly proud.

The members of the Salem High School Association have placed a marble tablet on the wall of their school-room, bearing the names of those scholars who entered the service of their country. Salem has as yet erected no monument or memorial hall to perpetuate the memories of her gallant sons; but their surviving comrades of the Grand Army, on each returning spring, strew flowers on their graves as a token that they are still held in affectionate remembrance.

Grand Army Post.—With the close of the civil war, there sprang up, all over the country, organizations composed of the soldiers and sailors who had been honorably discharged from the service of the country, and known as the Grand Army of the Republic. Salem has one of the largest posts in the State. It is numbered 34, named the Phil. H. Sheridan, and was chartered Nov. 15, 1867, its charter members being George H. Pierson, George A. Fisher, George M. Whipple, Robert W. Reeves, E. H. Fletcher, John P. Tilton, John R. Lakeman, E. A. Phalen, and John P. Reynolds. Its commanders have been in the order named as follows: George H. Pierson, John R. Lakeman, Charles H. Chase, James G. Bovey, Gilman A. Andrews, John W. Hart, J. Frank Dalton, William H. Eastman, and Charles J. Sadler, the latter commanding in 1878. Its present membership is 314; but it has reached the number of 525, which is believed to be the largest number ever attained by any Post in the State. It has furnished two members of the national staff, one member of the council of administration, one department commander, one member of the department council of administration, and three members of the department staff. It has raised and disbursed over $20,000 in charity. In 1874, Congress, by enactment, recognized this Post by a donation of four rebel cannon and thirty-six cannon-balls, which will, undoubtedly, be used to ornament the large and beautiful burial-lot given to the Post by the city, in the cemetery on Orne Street. The discriminating and conscientious disbursement of its charity fund, and its scrupulous observance of Memorial Day, early won for the Post the confidence of the Salem community, which it still fully enjoys.

Memorial Hall and Public Library.—There is as yet no memorial erected in Salem to the memory of her brave sons who died in the late civil war, but the failure to agree upon the particular form the memorial should assume seems to be the principal reason for the delay. The common council, in 1869, passed an order to a second reading appropriating $28,000 for a soldiers' monument; but the order failed of a final passage, many thinking that a memorial hall was the best form of testimonial.

In 1873 it was again discussed by the city council on a proposition to establish a memorial hall in connection with a free public library. A petition was received from R. S. Rantoul and others, asking for the establishment of a public library, which was referred to a committee consisting of Aldermen Oliver P. Ricker and William A. Brooks, and Councilmen Charles S. Osgood, George W. Williams, and John H. Conway. This committee gave public hearings, which were fully attended, and, on July 14th, a minority of the committee, Messrs. Osgood and Williams, reported in favor of making a proposition to the Salem Athenæum, Essex Institute, and Peabody Academy of Science, for the free use of their collections of books; the city agreeing to erect a fire-proof building in the rear of Plummer Hall, suitable for containing a memorial hall, to provide for the proper care and custody of the books, and keep the same forever as a free public library. The societies named were inclined to consider the proposition favorably, but a majority of the committee reported in favor of referring it to the next city government, which report was accepted by the city council, and no further action has as yet been taken regarding it.

City Water-Works.—The greatest public enterprise that Salem has ever engaged in was the introduction of water from Wenham Lake, and, before giving a history of it, it may be interesting to briefly notice the various private companies that have, to a greater or less degree, supplied the city with water. From the settlement of the town until 1796, there is no record of any public association of citizens for the purpose of securing a supply of water. But in that year there was an organization of citizens "for the purpose of supplying the inhabitants generally of Salem and Danvers with pure spring water." On the 30th of December, 1796, a meeting was held at the Sun Tavern, with Jacob Ashton chairman, which appointed a committee of three to "procure an act of incorporation and to purchase the necessary logs, contract for boring the same, and do such other acts as were necessary to forward the business." This was the beginning of the Salem Aqueduct Company.

An Act of incorporation was obtained by the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct Company, March 9, 1797. The company organized April 7th, and William Gray, Jr., was president. In 1798, the corporation built a reservoir on Gallows Hill, ten feet deep, and about twenty-four feet square. In the spring of 1799, the corporation began to supply water from the present sources of the aqueduct to the inhabitants. Their operations were at first primitive and simple, consisting of a large-size fish hogshead for a fountain and sapling of three-inch bore for the main pipe. A new fountain was built in 1802. In 1804 the three-inch bore gave out, and logs were substituted with a bore of five inches. The estimated cost was at least $20,000. In June, 1814, complaints began to be made of a failure of water, and, in 1816, the proprietors voted to discontinue all branches leading to manufactories, distilleries, stables, and similar establishments. In 1817, the corporation purchased a piece of land on Sewall Street, on which a reservoir of 22,000 gallons capacity was subsequently erected. In 1834, a charter was obtained for a new aqueduct company, but the old company voted to reduce their water, and the plan of building a new aqueduct was abandoned. In 1834, a six-inch iron pipe — the first used by this company — was laid down in Essex Street from North to

Newbury Street. In 1839, a new main, without branches, was laid from the fountain to the reservoir at Gallows Hill.

In November, 1839, this new main was extended from Gallows Hill to the main iron pipe, near Summer Street. In 1849, an iron pipe was laid through Union Street to the Naumkeag Mills, which were authorized to draw water during the night. In May, 1850, leave was granted to lay a log to Spring Pond, and in 1851 a twelve-inch iron pipe was laid from the fountain to the head of Federal Street. A new reservoir was also built, capable of holding 652,000 gallons, and the company gradually laid iron pipes in the place of the wooden logs. Everything now went smoothly till 1858, when the tanners and curriers demanded a larger supply of water. They laid their complaints before the city government, and a conference was had with the aqueduct company. The effect of this complaint was the laying of an additional six-inch iron pipe from Federal through Boston and Essex streets to Summer, and the twelve-inch main was extended into Spring Pond. Complaints still continued of a short supply of water, and, in 1865, a connection was made with Brown's Pond, a sixteen-inch main was laid from the fountain to the head of Federal Street, and great expense was incurred in building dams. These last expenses were incurred with the hope of deterring the city from building a system of city water works, but the supply was still insufficient, and the construction of the works to take water from Wenham Lake was vigorously pushed forward.

The history of this company shows how immensely the requirements of our city have increased in seventy years. Starting with a fish hogshead and saplings of three-inch bore in 1799, it had in 1865 absorbed the whole of Spring and Brown's ponds, and the aqueduct fountain, with a capacity of 600,000 gallons per day, and still the supply was inadequate to the demand. This company is now confined almost entirely to supplying the town of Peabody.

Salem Water-Works.—The first action of the city council upon the subject of a water supply was in July, 1858, when a committee was appointed to confer with the aqueduct company in regard to an increased supply. The result of this conference was the laying of an additional main by the aqueduct company. In 1863, the condition of our water supply became such that the citizens again invoked the aid of the city government, and, on the 12th of October, John Bertram and ninety-three others petitioned the city council "to take the necessary measures to procure from the Legislature power to establish city water works," which petition was referred to a committee consisting of Aldermen George R. Chapman and Francis W. Pickman, and Councilmen Rufus B. Gifford, Gilbert L. Streeter, and Charles Lamson. On their report, the mayor was requested to petition the Legislature to grant to the city such powers as will enable it to convey a sufficient supply of pure water for domestic and manufacturing purposes from Humphrey's, Brown's, and Spring ponds, and the springs in the land of the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct Company.

On the 23d of November, the city council chose in convention Stephen H. Phillips, James B. Curwen, and James Upton a committee, with authority to collect evidence, showing the necessity of a larger supply of water, and present the same to the Legislature. This committee examined the different sources of water supply, and on their suggestion a supplementary petition was presented to the Legislature, asking that Wenham Lake be included in the sources of supply for the city water-works. This petition was presented to the Legislature on the 18th of February, 1864, and a hearing was had on the petition Feb. 29. This hearing was very protracted. The city was represented before the committee by Robert S. Rantoul, Esq., and their petition met with sharp opposition from the Aqueduct Company and others. An Act was approved, however, May 13, 1864, which provided that the city may take water either from Wenham Lake, or from Brown's and Spring ponds, and that the city council shall make careful investigation as to the sources mentioned, and determine by joint ballot, at least fourteen days before the first Monday of December, 1864, from which source the city will take the water, in the event of the acceptance of the Act by the citizens. The Act to be void, unless accepted by a majority of the voters, at a meeting to be held on the first Monday of December, 1864.

The committee of citizens reported to the city council May 23, 1864, and a committee of the city council, consisting of Aldermen John Webster, Peter Silver, Nathaniel G. Symonds, and Councilmen Richard C. Manning, John C. Osgood, James F. Almy, Thomas Quinn, Rufus B. Gifford, and Charles S. Osgood were appointed to investigate the sources of supply, and report thereon to the city council. This committee examined both sources thoroughly and carefully, and on the 11th of November reported, recommending "that the city council decide to take Wenham Lake as the source of supply." On the 14th of November their report was accepted, and in joint convention it was decided by a vote of twenty-two to five to select Wenham Lake as the source of supply. On the fifth day of December next following, the citizens voted to accept the Act of May 13, 1864, by a vote of 1,623 yeas to 151 nays.

On the 22d of May, 1865, the city council passed an ordinance, providing "for the choice of three water commissioners, who shall, under the direction of the city council, commence the work of construction," and Stephen H. Phillips, James B. Curwen, and James Upton were chosen; but Messrs. Curwen and Upton declining, on the 26th of June, Franklin T. Sanborn and Peter Silver were elected in their stead. The board met in July, and Mr. Phillips was chosen chairman, and James Slade was appointed engineer; and subsequently Charles H. Swan was appointed assistant engineer, and Daniel H. Johnson, Jr., clerk.

The commissioners were in favor of proceeding at once with the construction of the works, and asked the city council to place $40,000 at their disposal. A disagreement now arose between the water commissioners and the city government, the former contending that they were authorized to proceed at once with the work, and bind the city for all expenses incurred; and Mayor Osgood taking the ground in a communication sent by him to the city council, Sept. 11, 1865, that no money could be expended except that raised by a sale of the water-loan bonds, and stating that he had refused to sign the warrants to enable the commissioners to draw money from the city treasury. About this time two petitions were received by the city council, asking for delay in the construction of the water-works, and one asking that they be completed forthwith. These petitions were referred to a committee, before whom numerous public hearings took place; and Oct. 22, 1865, they made a lengthy report, signed by Abner C. Goodell, Jr., Charles S. Osgood, James F. Almy, and Thomas Nichols, Jr., favoring no unnecessary delay in the construction of the works. Alderman Chapman submitted a minority report, with an order directing the commissioners to suspend all work until the city council shall order them to commence. Both reports were widely circulated through the city.

The season of 1865 was very dry. The disagreement between the water commissioners and Mayor Osgood, and the consequent delay in pushing forward the work, caused much uneasiness among the citizens; and prior to the municipal election of Jan. 1, 1866, public meetings were held, pamphlets were issued, and the matter was earnestly and warmly discussed. At the election it was the main issue before the people, and a city government favoring no delay was chosen by a large majority.

The new city government organized Jan. 22, 1866; and the Hon. David Roberts was qualified as mayor, and Charles S. Osgood, Esq., was elected president of the common council. Mayor Roberts, in his address, said that "the project so emphatically endorsed should, with all reasonable despatch, be pushed to its final completion." An ordinance establishing the Salem water loan, and authorizing its issue, was passed Feb. 12. On the same day, the commissioners advertised for proposals for the construction of a reservoir on Chipman's Hill in Beverly; and on April 17, the proposal of Messrs. Collins & Boyle was accepted. On the 18th of May, work was commenced on the reservoir.

Caleb Foote and others petitioned the supreme court for an injunction, restraining the city from constructing works to cost over $500,000, and from payment of interest in coin. Their petition was dated May 30, 1866, and a hearing had June 16, on which day Judge Gray declined to issue an injunction. The matter was then carried before the full court, who, after hearing arguments, dismissed the petition, and decided that the city was not restricted by the Act to an expenditure of $500,000, and that the payment of the interest in coin was not illegal. On the 5th of July, the commissioners notified the city council that they had decided to purchase a Worthington pumping-engine for the sum of $40,000. One of the commissioners, Mr. Stephen H. Phillips, resigned July 9, and Mr. Willard P. Phillips was elected to fill the vacancy. The proposal of Messrs. J. W. & J. F. Starr to furnish 6,000 feet of thirty-inch and 25,000 feet of twenty-inch iron pipe was accepted Oct. 8. On April 15, 1867, the proposal of Boynton Brothers for building a pipe bridge and syphon at Bass River was accepted. Early in May, the laying of the supply main was commenced; and in July every portion of the work beyond the limits of the city was under contract. The total expenditure to July 1 had been $213,176.85. During the month of October the twenty-inch supply-main had been laid from the reservoir to Beverly Bridge,

and from there nearly to the junction of Boston and Federal streets. Upon the 4th of November four of the iron pipes, furnished by the Messrs. Starr, were found to be deficient in weight, and the laying of pipe was at once discontinued. This resulted in a lawsuit, in which the city was successful in recovering damages against the Messrs. Starr. On Nov. 18, the syphon was lowered into place by the Messrs. Low of Boston. Up to Jan. 1, 1868, the total amount expended was $445,736.86.

In consequence of the great cost of the works, the amount being largely in excess of the estimates, there was another contest at the municipal election of January, 1868; but the friends of the water project again triumphed, although by a comparatively small majority. On the 3d of February, 1868, the commissioners contracted with George H. Norman, of Newport, R. I., to furnish and lay the iron and cement distribution-pipes, and to set hydrants and gates; and on April 15 he commenced laying them. The Legislature, by an Act approved March 19, 1868, provided for a further loan of $500,000, making the whole amount of the water loan $1,000,000.

On the 12th of October, Mr. Norman commenced putting in service-pipes, and on the 31st of the same month he had laid in the streets of the city 127,000 feet of distribution-pipe, and set 196 hydrants and 228 gates. On Tuesday, November 24, the force-main was completed. The pumping-engine was put in order, and on November 25, at midnight, the pumping began, and at four o'clock on Thanksgiving morning, November 26, there was a foot of water in the reservoir. On the afternoon of November 26, water was let into the supply-main, and the section extending to the Gloucester Branch Railroad crossing was filled and tested, and, at 11 A. M. of November 29, the supply-main and syphon at the river were filled, and the first water from Wenham Lake reached Salem. On Wednesday, December 2, the filling of the distribution-pipes in the city was commenced, and on Christmas morning, December 25, the water was let into the service-pipes, and the houses of the citizens were supplied. The total expenditures to Dec. 31, 1868, were $919,771.94.

On the first day of January, 1869, the city government made an inspection and examination of the works at Wenham, and after returning to the city hall the hydrants were tested, and seven of them, all in sight from the corner of Washington and Essex streets, were opened; and to each of the seven six lines of hose were attached, so that forty-two streams were playing at once, and the trial was entirely satisfactory. During 1869, the reservoir was sodded, fences were built, and the works completed, and on the 19th of November, 1869, Mr. W. P. Phillips, chairman of the water commissioners, formally transferred the charge of the Salem Water-Works to the city council, and delivered an address upon the occasion, from which most of the foregoing facts and figures are taken. The amount expended up to the date of transfer was about $1,060,000.

Wenham Lake, the source of supply, is situated partly in Beverly and partly in Wenham, and has an area of twenty acres. Its extreme depth is fifty-three feet, and its distance from the city hall by the pipe line is four and six-tenths miles. Its capacity is from two to three million gallons per day, and its level thirty-one feet above mean high tide. The reservoir, situated on Chipman's Hill, Beverly, is four hundred feet square, and has a capacity of twenty million gallons, and when filled the surface of the water is one hundred and forty-two feet above mean high-tide. The supply main can deliver five million gallons in twenty-four hours, and retain a head of eighty-eight feet, or three million gallons, with a head of one hundred and twenty-two feet. At first merely nominal rates were established for the use of water, but in 1873 regular water-rates were prescribed. In 1877, the number of Wenham water-takers was 6,895, and water was supplied to sixty-seven tanning and currying, besides numerous other manufacturing, establishments. The receipts from water-rates in 1877 were $35,646.

The history of the introduction of Wenham water has been recited somewhat at length, because it is the most extensive and important work that the city ever accomplished. The plan at the outset met with determined opposition from a portion of our citizens, and the municipal elections, when the water question was at issue, were hotly contested. The project has now stood the test of time. It is ten years since the water from Wenham Lake first flowed through the streets of Salem, and to-day those most bitterly opposed to the plan in the beginning are willing to acknowledge the benefit derived from the copious and bountiful supply of pure water which Salem now enjoys. The works are substantially built, and will compare favorably with any in the country.

The Fire Department.—The introduction of Wenham water worked an entire revolution in the methods employed for extinguishing fires. The fire department previous to this time had consisted of three steam fire-engines and five hand-engines, and there were between four and five hundred members of the department; now there are two steamers, six hose-carriages, and one hook-and ladder carriage, with a total force of less than two hundred men, and no city is better protected or less liable to extensive fires. The first fire-engine used in Salem was bought by Richard Derby and others, March 20, 1749, and in the old days of Salem most householders hung in the entries of their houses a number of leather buckets, to be ready to render prompt assistance in case of fire.

Great Fires.—Salem has suffered at different intervals from severe fires, the first of importance occurring Oct. 6, 1774, when the Rev. Dr. Whitaker's meeting-house, the custom-house, eight dwellings, and fourteen stores were burned. The town-house caught, but was saved. An aged lady was burnt to death in one of the houses. At four o'clock, on the morning of Aug. 22, 1816, a fire broke out on the corner of Liberty and Water (now Derby) streets, and sixteen buildings were burned and three badly damaged. No very destructive fire occurred again until Dec. 18, 1844, when, shortly before eleven o'clock at night, a fire was discovered which destroyed twenty buildings, including Concert Hall, seven being on Front, four on Lafayette, and nine on Fish (now Derby) streets. The loss was $100,000, the largest loss by fire that ever occurred in Salem. At one o'clock, on the morning of June 8, 1859, a fire broke out in the stable of the Mansion House, on Essex Street, and fourteen horses and the hostler, I. L. Hatch, perished in the flames. Twelve or fifteen buildings, including the Mansion House, were destroyed, the total loss being $68,400. The Franklin Building was consumed by fire, Oct. 21, 1861. The loss was $20,000, the insurance having expired the day previous to the fire. The last great fire occurred on May 14, 1866, when the Lynde Block, on Essex Street, and eight or nine other buildings, were destroyed, the total loss being about $70,000.

Police Department.—With the government of a city or town there must always be connected a police department. John Woodbury was appointed constable at Salem in 1630, and, in early years, the inhabitants watched by turns. A contract was made, Nov. 10, 1676, with Arthur Hughes "to be bellman and to walk the streets from ten o'clock until day break and to give notice of the time of night and what weather according to custom." About 1817, the custom of calling the hour and weather was abandoned. In 1666, the meeting-house was used for a watch-house, and afterwards a building, used for that purpose, stood in the middle of Washington Street, about as far north as the north end of the Stearns Building. It had a soldier in full uniform on the top of it. In 1725, it received a coat of paint,—a rare covering for those days. The present police force consists of a marshal, assistant-marshal, captain, sergeant, and thirty-eight men. The bellman just mentioned, not only acted as a watchman, but it was his duty, by an order made in 1673, to ring the bell at five o'clock in the morning, and nine o'clock in the evening, "as an admonition to improve the light of day and keep good hours at night." After 1774, the bells of the North and East churches were rung at one and nine o'clock, P. M.

Police Court.—The Salem Police Court was established June 23, 1831, and the Hon. Elisha Mack was appointed justice, which office he resigned four or five years afterwards, and was succeeded by the Hon, Joseph G. Waters, who held the office until the abolition of the court in 1874, at which time the First District Court of Essex County was created, and the Hon. J. B. F. Osgood was appointed justice. The new court includes in its jurisdiction Salem, Danvers, Beverly, Hamilton, Middleton, Topsfield, and Wenham, and its sessions are held in the Flint Building on Washington Street.

Population.—Salem has gradually increased in population since the first settlement of the town. In 1638, there were about 900 inhabitants; in 1776, 5,337; in 1800, 9,457; in 1810, 12,617; in 1820, 12,731; in 1830, 13,886; in 1840, 15,082; in 1860, 22,252, and in 1875, 25,958. By the census of 1875, the valuation of Salem was $26,312,272, of which $11,988,627 was personal estate.

CHAPTER III.

HISTORY OF THE FORMATION OF THE CHURCHES, AND THE ORGANIZATION OF THE PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

The preceding chapters have briefly sketched the history of Salem, under its town and city government; and it is the purpose of this chapter to give, as succinctly as possible, an account of the different churches and schools, the history of some of them being a part of the history not only of Salem, but of the State and country. The First Church of Salem was the first Protestant church organized in America, and the honor is claimed for Salem of establishing the first public school.

The First Congregational Society of Salem dates its organization from the year 1629, and was the first Protestant church organized in America. There had previously been meetings for religious worship, but no attempt to form a regularly constituted church-organization. On the 20th of July, 1629, Samuel Skelton was chosen pastor, and Francis Higginson teacher. On the 6th of the following August, which day was observed as a day of fasting and prayer, they were duly ordained in their respective offices. Gov. Bradford, of Plymouth, and some others, "coming by sea were hindered by cross winds that they could not be there at the beginning of the day, but they came into the assembly afterward and gave them the right hand of fellowship wishing all prosperity and a blessed success unto such good beginnings."

The original covenant of the church is as follows: "We covenant with our Lord, and one with another and we do bind ourselves in the presence of God to walk together in all his ways, according as he is pleased to reveal himself unto us in his blessed word of truth; and do explicitly, in the name and fear of God, profess and protest to walk as followeth, through the power and grace of our Lord Jesus Christ."

The original meeting-house, a small, single-story structure, stood on a portion of the site now occupied by the present church edifice, on the south-eastern corner of Washington and Essex streets. There is a tradition that the exact location of this building was on the corner of the lot at the opening of Higginson Square. The original building was erected in 1634. In 1639, it was enlarged by the addition of a second structure. The original building was discovered some years since on the premises of David Nichols, in the rear of the tanneries under the brow of Witch Hill, through the active agency of the late Francis Peabody. The length, breadth, and height of this building correspond exactly with the recorded measurements of the first structure. It is stated that it had been used at one time as an inn on the old "Boston Road." The subject was investigated by the Essex Institute, and all doubts as to its being the original church were subsequently removed. The original meeting-house was twenty feet long, seventeen wide, and twelve feet in the height of its posts. It consisted of a single room, with a gallery over the door, and an aisle five feet in width leading to the pulpit at the opposite end of the building. The frame of the church was carefully removed to the rear of Plummer Hall, and covered in, where it is preserved as an interesting relic.

The Rev. Francis Higginson was educated at Jesus College, Cambridge, England, and received his first degree in 1609. He was settled over one of the parish churches in Leicester, where he proved a very popular preacher. It is said of him, that "He was a good scholar, of a sweet and affable behaviour, and having a charming voice, was one of the most acceptable and popular preachers of the country." He was ejected from his living, and forbidden to preach in England, on his adoption of the doctrines of the non-conformists. He was well qualified to be a chief agent in the great enterprise for which he was sought; and, though his career was brief in the New World, he accomplished his work, and lived to secure the foundation of his church. He died Aug 6, 1630, exactly one year after his ordination.

The Rev. Samuel Skelton, the first pastor, was educated at Clare Hall, Cambridge, England, taking his first degree in 1611. He survived his colleague about four years. He died Aug. 2, 1634. He received a grant of land at the "New Mills," near the "Orchard Farm," which was at one time known as "Skelton's Neck," and is now comprised in Danversport.

The Rev. Roger Williams was first settled as Mr. Skelton's colleague or "teacher," upon the death of Mr. Higginson. He was born in Wales, in 1599. He was a thorough non-conformist, and landed at Boston in February, 1631. He accepted an invitation extended to him by the Salem church to become its teacher, and was settled on the 12th of April, 1631. His settlement was so strongly opposed by the governor and magistrates that he was induced to leave Salem before the close of the summer, and to become the assistant of Mr. Ralph Smith, in Plymouth. In 1633 he returned to Salem and again became the assistant of Mr. Skelton. After the latter's death he was sole minister of the church, until November, 1635, when the renewed opposition of the magistrates drove him from Salem into exile, and he went forth into the wilderness to found the future State of Rhode Island upon the basis of civil and religious freedom. He died in that Colony in 1683. The cause of his offending was the divulging of obnoxious opinions, declaring that the ministers of Boston had conformed in a sinful degree to the English church, and ought to declare their repentance, and that the royal patent could give them no title to lands without a purchase from the natives; that the civil power could not rightly punish breaches of the Sabbath, nor in any way interfere with the rights of conscience.

The Rev. Hugh Peters was the successor of Mr. Williams. He was born at Fowey, in Cornwall, in 1599, and received the degree of A. M. from Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1622. He was afterwards lecturer at St. Sepulchre's, in London. In 1629, when Laud commenced his persecutions of the Puritans, he went to Holland, and was pastor of an independent church at Rotterdam. He came to this country from Holland, arriving Oct. 6, 1635. He was for a time in Boston, but finally settled in Salem, Dec. 21, 1636. He speedily took a prominent part in the town affairs, aiding in reforming the police, stimulating industry and encouraging the spirit of improvement. During his administration as pastor, a water-mill was erected, also a glass-house and salt-works. The planting of hemp was commenced and a market was established. Commerce received earnest attention. The pastor planned the mode of conducting the fishing business, the coasting and the foreign voyages, and the building of vessels. One of three hundred tons was undertaken under his influence. Mr. John Fisk, of King's College, Cambridge, assisted him in the ministry. Mr. Peters returned to England in 1641 to represent the Colony upon the matter of excise and trade. He rose in high favor with Cromwell, and fell a martyr to his cause, after the Restoration, Oct. 16, 1660.

The Rev. Edward Norris came to Salem in 1639, and joined the church in December of that year. He was ordained colleague to Mr. Peters, March 18, 1640. After the latter's departure, he was sole minister for eighteen years. He died Dec. 23, 1659, at the age of seventy.

The Rev. John Higginson, the son of Francis, was born at Claybrook, England, on the 6th of August, 1616, and came to New England in 1629. He was educated in the Colony, was chaplain at Saybrook from 1636 to 1640, and was located at Guilford and Hartford, Conn., at different periods. He left Guilford with the intention of returning to England in 1659, but, being driven into Salem by stress of weather, he left his ship and accepted an invitation to settle over the church there. He was ordained in August, 1660, and continued in the ministry until his death, Dec. 9, 1708. During his ministry (July 4, 1667), the brethren and sisters on the Bass River side applied for dismission to form a church by themselves. Sept, 20, 1667, the new organization was effected, and the Rev. Mr. Hale was ordained as their minister. The church at Marblehead was formed Aug. 13, 1684, its members having formally withdrawn from the mother church the 6th of June previous. Nov. 10, 1689, the members of the church from Salem Village presented their petition for dismission to form a new society. On March 8, 1703, brother John Massey was presented with the old worn-out great Church Bible, he being considered as the first "town born child."* It was given to him and delivered to him before the brethren. A new church edifice had also been built in the year 1670.

The Rev. Nicholas Noyes was born in Newbury, Dec. 22, 1647; took his degree at Harvard in 1667; was ordained teacher of the First Church, Nov. 14, 1683; and died Dec. 13, 1717. He was a fine scholar and able preacher, but was swept away with others by the witchcraft delusion, for which he afterwards confessed his error.

The church at the middle precinct withdrew and was dismissed June 25, 1713. Mr. Noyes was the last-ordained teacher under the old title.

The Rev. George Curwin, son of Hon. Jonathan Curwin, was born in

*Whether Massey was the first born in the town has since been questioned.

Salem, May 21, 1683; graduated at Harvard in 1701; was ordained pastor and colleague, May 19, 1714, and died Nov. 23, 1717.

The Rev. Samuel Fisk was the grandson of John Fisk, the assistant of Hugh Peters. He was born in 1689; graduated from Harvard in 1708, and was ordained pastor over the First Church, Oct. 8, 1718. On this occasion the assembly met in a new house of worship on the same site as the others. This latter house was commenced May 21, 1718, and was opened for public worship July 13. The settlement of Mr. Fisk caused another division, and Nov. 14, 1718, the members living in the east part of the town applied for dismission, which was granted Dec. 25, and the company withdrew to form the present East Church.

Nov. 4, 1727, a public meeting was held to take proper observance of a terrible earthquake which visited the town on the "Lord's day night previous, at half an hour after ten; October 29, 1727." Both parishes met on this occasion, and there was a vast assembly.

Mr. Fisk introduced so many new practices in church management differing from those of his predecessors as to cause great disaffection and uneasiness in the parish. He refused to call regular church meetings and held them only when he stayed the church after the religious exercises. His course finally led to his expulsion from the church and pulpit in 1735. He and his followers claimed to constitute the First Church after their dismission. Mention is made by the pastor in his records of the house of Joseph Orne, as being "the dwelling house where the First Church met and worshipped God for several Lord's days after it was (with its Pastor) driven together from the public meeting house, on Lord's day, April 27, 1735." A fierce controversy continued for some time after this event in regard to the matter. The church thus formed at Joseph Orne's, subsequently became the Third Church. Mr. Fisk died in Salem, April 7, 1770.

After Mr. Fisk's expulsion the members remaining in the old church proceeded to reorganize. Aug. 5, 1736, the brethren adhering to the ancient principles of the church, met at the house of Benjamin Lynde and renewed the ancient covenant. Mr. John Sparhawk was chosen at this meeting to be the minister. He was born in September, 1713; graduated at Harvard in 1731; died April 30, 1755.

The Rev. Thomas Barnard was born at Andover, Aug. 16, 1716; graduated at Harvard in 1732; installed pastor of the First Church Sept. 17, 1755; died Aug. 5, 1776. The North Church withdrew upon the settlement of Mr. Barnard's colleague, the Rev. Asa Dunbar, and organized July 19, 1772.

The Rev. Asa Dunbar was born in Bridgewater, May 26, 1745; graduated at Harvard in 1767; ordained as colleague with the Rev. Thomas Barnard, July 22, 1772; resigned April 23, 1779. He died in Keene, N. H., June 22, 1787.

The Rev. John Prince, LL. D., was born in Boston, July 22, 1751; graduated from Harvard in 1776; ordained pastor of the First Church Nov. 10, 1779. In 1817 the church received a legacy of $3,000 from Charles Henry Orne, which when accumulated to $5,000 was to form a permanent fund for the support of the minister. The church was at the same time incorporated as the "First Congregational Society in Salem." In February, 1824, a meeting was called to settle a colleague. Mr. Henry Colman having preached as a candidate, a number were in favor of his settlement, but the majority were opposed, and his supporters withdrew and formed the Barton Square Church. Dr. Prince died June 7, 1836.

The Rev. Charles W. Upham was ordained as colleague Dec. 8, 1824. He continued in the pastorate until his resignation in December, 1844.

The Rev. Thomas T. Stone was installed as pastor, July 12, 1846, and his ministry terminated by vote of the church in February, 1852.

The Rev. George W. Briggs was installed as pastor Jan. 6, 1853, and continued in the ministry until March, 1867, when he resigned to accept a pastorate in Cambridge. He was the second minister who came to the church from the ancient church of Plymouth.

The Rev. James T. Hewes succeeded Dr. Briggs, remaining with the society till 1876. The present pastor is the Rev. Fielder Israel.

The society will observe its two hundred and fiftieth anniversary in August, 1879.

The Friends Society.—In 1688 Thomas Maule built the first Friends meeting-house, which stood on the south side of Essex Street, next east of the late Rev. Dr. Emerson's dwelling-house. This was sold to Maule for £25 in 1716, the Friends having built another meeting-house on Essex Street, on a part of the site of the Quaker burying-ground. The Quakers now worship in a brick church on Pine Street. This sect has no settled ministry, their ministers, like Paul in his day, working with their hands, or pursuing some lawful occupation, to provide for their own support and that of their families. Women, as well as men, are acknowledged as ministers. Among the ministers acknowledged and recorded as such, from time to time, by the Salem monthly meeting of Friends (comprising the meetings of Salem and Lynn), are the names of Micajah Collins, Mary Newhall, Moses H. Bedee, Avis Keene, Elizabeth Breed, Jane Mansfield, Benjamin H. Jones, William O. Newhall, Abigail Bedee, Sophronia Page, Henry Chase, Hannah Hozier, Lydia Dean, Mary Chase, Daniel Page, Ruth Page. Three of these, Micajah Collins, Moses H. Bedee, and Sophronia Page (all now deceased) travelled very extensively in the ministry, attending meetings of the society, and preaching publicly otherwise, through New England and at the South and West.

The East Church was the result of a movement which commenced on Nov. 14, 1718, when the brethren and sisters residing in the eastern part of the town applied to be released from their covenant obligations in the First Church, that they might organize a church of their own, and settle the Rev. Robert Staunton as their pastor. This is the first mention on the records of any desire on their part to leave the parent church, but prior to this time steps had been taken to establish a new church organization, and a new house had been built. This house was raised Aug. 27, 1717, and had been opened for public worship in May, 1718. For a long period before this efforts had been made for a separation, but the First Church opposed it. The old records tell us, that for a long time before the new church was built, those members of the old society residing in this eastern district had neglected to attend the meetings at the First Church on the Lord's Day, and some of them had pretended to be members of the Church of England in Marblehead, and had made a practice of going back and forth in boats "across our harbor, until it appeared more like a day of frolicking than the Lord's day." The new church stood on "Grafton's Lane," upon what is now the corner of Hardy and Essex streets. This house was used for public worship until the erection and dedication of the present edifice, in 1846. Mr. Wigglesworth preached at the first opening of the church, in May, 1718. There continued to be trouble between the people and the First Church about a separation, and an appeal was made to the General Court. Dec. 25, 1718, the First Church finally voted the desired dismission, and on the 8th of April, 1719, the Rev. Robert Staunton was ordained as pastor of the new church, the third within the present limits of Salem, which from its location was known as the East Church. The Rev. Cotton Mather, of Boston, preached the ordination sermon on this occasion. The first pastor was ordained April 8, 1719, and died May 3, 1727. William Jennison, his successor, was a native of Watertown; graduated at Harvard in 1724; ordained over the East Church May 27, 1728; dismissed at his own request, Sept. 13, 1736; and died April 1, 1750. James Diman was born Nov. 29, 1707; ordained over the East Church May 1, 1737; and died the 8th of Oct., 1788. He was a native of Long Island, graduated at Harvard in 1730, and was librarian of the University from 1735 to 1737. William Bentley, the famous divine of 1812, was born June 22, 1759. He was ordained over the East Church, as colleague to the Rev. Mr. Diman, Sept. 24, 1783, and continued in the ministry until his death, in Salem, Dec. 29, 1819, at the age of sixty-three. He graduated at Harvard in 1777, and was tutor at the University for three years. He took an active part in the politics of the day, and was editor for several years of the "Essex Register." He was the author of a historical sketch of Salem. He took strong Arminian grounds, and under his lead the church became practically Unitarian in 1785, and was one of the first churches in America to adopt that faith. In the war of 1812, on one occasion, when the frigate "Constitution" was chased into Marblehead by British frigates, this patriotic pastor locked up his church, and at the head of his people, in full ministerial garb, hastened to Marblehead to aid in the defence of the town and frigate. Dr. Bentley died in December, 1819, and Edward Everett preached his funeral discourse. James Flint was born in Reading, Dec. 10, 1779; graduated at Harvard in 1802; installed over the East Church Sept. 19, 1825; dismissed Dec. 17, 1851, and died March 4, 1855. During Mr. Flint's pastorate the old church was abandoned, and the present freestone edifice was erected on Brown Street, opposite Newbury. It was dedicated Jan. 1, 1846. Dexter Clapp was born June 15, 1816; installed over the East Church Dec. 17, 1851, and died in its pastorate July 27, 1868. Samuel C. Beane was born Dec. 19, 1835; installed over the East Church Jan. 1, 1865; resigned Dec. 8, 1877. George H. Hosmer, of East Bridgewater, accepted the invitation to become the pastor of the East Church, Nov. 17, 1878.

St. Peter's Church was erected on "Prison Lane" in 1733, on

land given by Philip English and his connections, and was consecrated June 25, 1734. It was the fourth church in Salem. The first Episcopal preacher was the Rev. John Lyford, who came with Conant in 1626. At the end of a year he accepted an invitation to preach in Virginia. There was Episcopal preaching, from time to time, after Lyford's departure, but no movement to form a church organization until 1733. The Rev. Charles Brockwell was the first rector of St. Peter's Church. He graduated at Cambridge, Eng., was settled May 9, 1739, resigned in 1746, and died April 20, 1755, aged fifty-nine. In 1833, the first edifice was succeeded by the present Gothic stone structure. Mr. Brockwell was succeeded by the Rev. William McGilchrist, who was born in 1707, settled in 1747, and died April 19, 1780. The Rev. Robert B. Nichols and Nathaniel Fisher followed. The Rev. Thomas Carlile, a famous divine of his day, was the fifth rector. He was born at Providence, R. I., in 1792; graduated at Brown University in 1809, was settled in 1814, resigned Oct. 6, 1822, died March 28, 1824. The rectors succeeding Mr. Carlile, in the order of their ministry, have been the Revs. Henry Ducachet, D. D., Thomas W. Coit, D. D., Alexander V. Griswold, D. D., John A. Vaughan, Charles Mason, William R. Babcock, George Leeds, William Rawlins Pickman, James O. Scripture, E. M. Gushee, and Charles Arey, D. D. The church became unpopular during the Revolution, and was closed for a time, owing to the violence of its opponents. The building was badly damaged. It was finally reopened under a warrant issued by William Wetmore.

The Tabernacle Church resulted from a division of sentiment among the members of the First Church. In 1735, the Rev. Samuel Fisk was pastor of the First Church. On the 27th of April of that year, according to a record kept by himself, he and his supporters, or, as he states it, "the First Church," were driven from the public meeting-house by their opponents, and were obliged to hold their services in the dwelling-house of Joseph Orne. Mr. Fisk claims that he carried the majority of the church with him, and that they were of right the First Church; and there followed a long and bitter controversy between the two parties. Mr. Fisk carried the church book, containing the records with him, and continued to use it in the new church, refusing to give it up to those who stayed behind. It was not until 1811 that the book was recovered from the heirs of Mr. Fisk. Dr. Bentley says, "Mr. Fisk was dismissed from the First Church in 1735, and accepted a new house provided by his friends in the same street, westward on the north side of the street." The late Samuel M. Worcester states, that "for twenty years, the present Tabernacle Church alone was called the First Church." The minority of the First Church, by the aid of a Council and the Legislature, dismissed Mr. Fisk, the pastor, on the 18th of April (O. S.), 1735. Having held together and hired preaching for about a year, they were duly organized as a church in 1736, under the style of "the Church and Parish of the Confederate Society in Salem." More briefly, they were called the "Confederate Church," while their brethren, who had been separated from them, were called by others "the First Church of Christ in Salem." The records of the First Church show that Mr. Fisk departed from the ancient usages and customs, and introduced many innovations which caused the separation. The present Tabernacle Church was the result of this separation, and in 1762 surrendered the title of First Church. The new society took the name of the "Third Church of Christ in Salem." The designation of Tabernacle formally appears in the church records of 1786. The new house was built in 1735, according to Bentley, on the same street, a little "farther to the westward, on the north side of the street." It stood for nearly forty years, until burned down on the night of the 6th of October, 1774. The ancient site of this meeting-house was probably that of the present "King" building.

The Rev. Mr. Fisk became the pastor in 1735, and so continued until 1744. The Rev. Dudley Leavitt, his successor, was ordained Oct. 23, 1745, and died Feb. 7, 1762. The Rev. John Huntington was ordained Sept. 28, 1763, and died May 30, 1766. The Rev. Nathaniel Whitaker, D. D., the fourth pastor, was installed July 28, 1769. Previous to his installation, the church unanimously voted, to adopt "his plan of Church government," which was Presbyterian. The government of the church was by an eldership or session, of which the pastor was moderator, and member *ex officio*. April 27, 1772, some forty or fifty families, being offended, withdrew to form a new church.

On Nov. 27, 1773, a majority of the church requested the pastor to join with them in applying to the Boston Presbytery, "to take the Church under their watch and care." This action was taken in accordance with the conditions of Dr. Whitaker's settlement. The church was accordingly received in May, 1774. The church voted, Feb. 11, 1784, to reassume the congregational mode of church government. The relation with Dr. Whitaker was dissolved Feb. 26, 1784. Dr. Whitaker was endowed with great energy and determination. He was the first to introduce Presbyterian doctrines in Salem, and in so doing encountered great opposition. His ministry was not altogether harmonious. His congregation, although agreeing to become Presbyterian, in 1769, was not formally so until June, 1774. Upon the destruction of the first meeting-house, the doctor at once set about the construction of a tabernacle in the form of a tent, a rectangular parallelogram, and pyramidal in roof, — on the model of Whitefield's Church in London. The society was much crippled by the withdrawal in 1772. Of the £536 subscribed for the new house, £238 came from abroad. The house was raised in 1776, and opened for public worship in 1777. It was not finished at this time. The house stood in a large field, in a somewhat unsettled neighborhood, on about the present site. From the time of the burning of the first house, Dr. Whitaker had no fixed salary. Collections were taken every Sunday for his support. He was an ardent patriot through the Revolution, but he became very unpopular with his congregation, and the feeling against him continued to grow stronger, until it culminated in his dismission in 1784.

The Rev. Joshua Spaulding was ordained Oct 26, 1785, and was dismissed April 23, 1802. During his ministry, the church, built by Dr. Whitaker, was greatly improved. It was not until 1794, twenty years after it was undertaken, that this house was decently and tolerably finished. In 1804, the dome and belfry were carried away entire in a gale, and landed in an adjoining garden. A steeple was raised in 1805, at the front of the church, and in its improved form the church remained until demolished, March 9, 1854. Chief among the many associations hovering around this old tabernacle, is the fact that it was the cradle of the Massachusetts Missionary Society and of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions. It was in this church, Feb. 6, 1812, that the first foreign missionaries to India were ordained. The Rev. Samuel Worcester, D. D., was installed April 20, 1803. He was born in Hollis, N. H., Nov. 1, 1770, and died June 7, 1821. He graduated at Dartmouth, 1795, and was installed as pastor of the Tabernacle Church April 20, 1803, after a five years' ministry in Fitchburg. The Rev. Elias Cornelius was settled as his associate July 21, 1819. The Rev. Mr. Cornelius was dismissed Sept. 29, 1826. The Rev. John P. Cleaveland, D. D., was ordained Feb. 14, 1827; dismissed April 23, 1834. The Rev. Samuel M. Worcester, D. D., installed Dec. 3, 1834, was born at Fitchburg, Sept. 4, 1801: he graduated at Harvard in 1822; studied at Andover Theological School, and was assistant teacher at Phillips Academy in Latin and Greek; professor of rhetoric and oratory at Amherst College from 1823 to 1834; pastor of the Tabernacle Church for a quarter of a century, until Dec. 3, 1859. He represented the town of Amherst in the General Court; was a member of the State Senate, and a representative from Salem in 1866. He died at Salem Aug. 16, 1866. Dr. Worcester was a man of remarkable talents, and an able preacher. The present church edifice was erected in 1854, during Dr. Worcester's pastorate. The corner-stone was laid April 26th, and the building was dedicated and opened December 3d of that year. The Rev. Charles Ray Palmer was ordained Aug 29, 1860, and was dismissed June 13, 1872. The Rev. Hiram B. Putnam was installed Dec. 31, 1873, and was dismissed, at his own request, March 15, 1877. The Rev. DeWitt Scoville Clark, the present pastor, accepted the call to the pastorate Nov. 17, 1878.

The North Church is the sixth religious society in point of age in Salem. Its first proprietors, on account of a division among the members of the First Parish in regard to the settlement of a colleague pastor in 1770, separated from that parish, and on the 14th of February, 1772, purchased land for a church-site on the corner of North and Lynde streets. This estate is now occupied by the Hon. Otis P. Lord. This separation was harmonious, and the relations between the churches continued to be of the most friendly character. There were forty-two associates in the purchase, and John Nutting, who sold them the land, was the forty-third proprietor. March 3d, following, the proprietors of this land met at the town hall, and organized the society known as "The Proprietors of the North Meeting House," popularly called "the North Society." William Browne, Edward Augustus Holyoke, Joseph Blaney, Samuel Curwen, John Felt, Richard Ward, and Clark Gayton Pickman were chosen a committee to superintend the building of a church. The foundation of the house was laid May 11, 1772, and the building was opened for public worship, Aug. 23, 1772. The structure was of wood, with a tower and

spire, on Lynde Street. In 1796, the spire, being deemed unsafe, was taken down, and replaced by a cupola and dome. This house was known as "the large new meeting-house," and was frequently used for civic celebrations. It continued to be used as a house of worship for sixty-four years, until the erection of the present stone edifice on Essex Street. The building passed from the hands of the society in 1836, and remained standing for many years, being used for manufacturing purposes. It was last used as a manufactory of floor oil-cloths.

On the 16th of May, 1772, fifty-two brethren and sisters were dismissed from the First Church, at their own request, to form the new society; and July 19th, this company met at the Pickman house, opposite St. Peter's Street, still standing on Essex Street, in the rear of the stores numbered 167 to 171, and proceeded to effect a church organization. The covenant of the First Church was adopted as that of the new church; and twenty to thirty more members were added, prior to the ordination of the minister. It was voted, Aug. 20th, that this should be called the North Church. On the same day, Thomas Barnard, Jr., was chosen pastor. Dr. Barnard was ordained Jan. 13, 1773. His ministry continued until Oct. 1, 1814, the date of his death, a period of nearly forty-two years. He was peculiarly fitted for his high calling. A little more than two years after his ordination, came that memorable Sabbath afternoon in February, 1775, when Col. Leslie, with a battalion of the British 64th, marched past his church, through Lynde and North streets, on the way to the North Bridge to seize cannon supposed to be concealed thereabouts. An account of the stirring scenes that took place there, and the part performed by Mr. Barnard, have been recounted in a preceding chapter. Dr. Barnard was born in Newbury, Feb. 5, 1748; graduated from Harvard in 1766; studied theology with Dr. Williams of Bradford, and received the degree of Doctor of Divinity from the Universities of Edinburgh and Providence, in 1794. His father, an uncle, a grandfather, and a great-grandfather were all ministers. He died suddenly, on the 1st of October, 1814. Dr. Barnard was a fine scholar, and delivered the Dudleian lecture at Cambridge, in 1795; and a discourse at Salem, upon the death of Washington, in 1799, which was printed "by desire of the town." John Emery Abbott, Dr. Barnard's successor, was born at Exeter, N. H., Aug. 6, 1793; graduated at Bowdoin in 1810; studied for the ministry at Cambridge University, and also with the Rev. W. E. Channing; was ordained pastor of the North Church, April 20, 1815; and died at Exeter, N. H., on the 7th of October, 1819. He was the son of Dr. Benjamin Abbott, for more than half a century the principal of Phillips Academy at Exeter. John Brazer, the third pastor, was born at Worcester, Mass., Sept. 21, 1789; graduated from Harvard in 1813; tutor of Greek at Harvard, 1815 to 1817; professor of Latin, 1817 to 1820; ordained pastor of the North Church, Nov. 14, 1820; delivered Dudleian lecture at Harvard in 1836, and received the degree of Doctor of Divinity in the same year; died, Feb. 26, 1846, at Huger plantation, Cooper River, near Charleston, S. C. During Dr. Brazer's ministry, the present stone church was erected. It was dedicated June 22, 1836. Octavius B. Frothingham succeeded Dr. Brazer, and was ordained March 10, 1847. He resigned April 9, 1855, to accept a pastorate in Jersey City, N. J. The Rev. Charles Lowe was installed pastor, Sept. 27, 1855, and resigned July 28, 1857. The Rev. Edmund B. Willson, the present pastor, was installed June 5, 1859.

South Church. — When the old "Third Church" meeting-house was burned, Oct. 6, 1774, the greater portion of the society, on account of dissatisfaction felt with the pastor, the Rev. Dr. Whitaker, purchased the old Assembly House, on Cambridge Street, as their place of worship. This society claimed to be the "Third Church," just as Dr. Whitaker's church had claimed to be the First Church when it left the parent society with the Rev. Samuel Fisk. On Dec. 19, 1774, it was voted that the new meeting-house should be called the "South Meeting House"; but the name Third Congregational Society was retained until the subscribers to the purchase of the Assembly House were incorporated as "The Proprietors of the New South Meeting House in Salem," March 15, 1805. The corporate name was changed to the South Church by an Act passed April 14, 1838. The present edifice was erected in 1804, on the present site, adjoining the old Assembly House, which stood where the vestry does now. Its dimensions were 66 by 80 feet, and it had a spire 166 feet high. Its architect was Samuel Mackintire. The first spire was blown over by the violent gale of September, 1804, but was replaced by the present symmetrical and beautiful piece of architecture surmounting the building. The church was dedicated Jan. 1, 1805, and was remodelled in 1860.

The Rev. Daniel Hopkins was the first-settled pastor, and he was ordained Nov. 18, 1778. He was born in Waterbury, Conn., Oct. 16, 1734; graduated from Yale College in 1758; he came to Salem in 1766, and preached in the Third Church for a time, after the death of Dr. Huntington. In 1775, he became a member of the Provincial Congress, which position he accepted at the urgent demands of his townsmen, and to the detriment of his private interests. He was chosen pastor of the South Church, March 15, 1776; but his duties as Congressman prevented his ordination until Nov. 18, 1778, and continued in the ministry until his death, Dec. 14, 1814. The Rev. Brown Emerson was ordained as Dr. Hopkins's colleague, April 24, 1805. He was born in Ashby, Mass., Jan. 8, 1778; he graduated at Dartmouth College in 1802; and was licensed to preach in February, 1804, by the Essex North Association. Dr. Emerson celebrated the fiftieth anniversary of his pastorate in 1855, and retained his connection with the church until his death. The Rev. Israel E. Dwinell was ordained as colleague pastor to Dr. Emerson, Nov. 22, 1849. He was born in East Calais, Vt., Oct. 24, 1820, and graduated at the University of Vermont, in 1843. He resigned his pastorate in 1863, and was succeeded by the Rev. E. S. Atwood, the present pastor, who was installed Oct. 13, 1864.

The First Baptist Society was organized in 1804, in a vestry erected near the site of the present meeting-house, on Federal Street. The church was regularly constituted, Dec. 24, 1804, with sixteen members. The society was incorporated in 1806. A new church was dedicated Jan. 1, 1806. It was remodelled in 1868; partially destroyed by fire, Oct. 31, 1877, and restored and repaired in 1878.

The Rev. Roger Williams, third pastor of the First Church, from 1633 to 1636, is claimed as the first Baptist preacher in New England. The first pastor of the first Baptist Church was the Rev. Lucius Bolles, D.D., who was born Sept. 25, 1779; graduated at Brown University in 1801; was settled over the First Baptist Church, Jan. 9, 1805; resigned, Aug. 6, 1834; died in Boston, Jan. 5, 1844. His successors, in the order of their pastorates, have been the Revs. Rufus Babcock, John Wayland, Thomas D. Anderson, Robert C. Mills, D.D., for twenty-five years; and George E. Merrill, the present pastor.

The Howard Street or "Branch Church," as it was originally called, was organized Dec. 29, 1803, its members being a number who left the Tabernacle Church on account of dissatisfaction felt at the dismissal of the pastor, the Rev. Joshua Spaulding. After uniting with the church at Rowley for a time, the disaffected members held services in Salem, in Jacob Lord's house, Carpenter Street; then in a vestry, built in 1802, on Baptist Hill, and, in 1804, a meeting-house was built on Howard Street, and Mr. Spaulding settled, but not without some opposition. Aug. 23, 1813, the bodies of Capt. James Lawrence and Lieut. Augustus C. Ludlow, who had been killed on board the frigate "Chesapeake," in her engagement with the "Shannon," were buried from this church, Judge Story delivering a eulogy. Dr. Spaulding left Salem, and moved to South-East, in New York. He died Sept. 26, 1825. The Rev. Henry Blatchford was the next regular pastor, and he was followed by the Rev. William Williams, the Rev. John Todd, the Rev. George B. Cheever, the Rev. Charles T. Torrey, the Rev. Joel Mann, the Rev. M. H. Wilder, the Rev. E. W. Allen, the Rev. C. C. Beaman. The church changed from Congregational to Presbyterian, March 25, 1815, and was restored to the original faith, June 4, 1828. The church several times suffered from depressions, and finally, Oct. 2, 1864, its pastor, Mr. Beaman, resigned, and the society quietly passed into history. The church was let for a time to the New Jerusalem Society, and by authority of the Legislature, granted by request of the proprietors, the church property was sold, at auction, June 28, 1867. The proceeds of the sale of the communion plate were divided among those members of the church who remained in its fellowship at the time of sale.

The Freewill Baptists, sometimes called Christians, formed a society in Salem, in the year 1806, with the Rev. John Rand as its pastor. A meeting-house was erected for this society, on English Street, in 1807. In 1819, a second house was erected at the corner of Essex and Carlton streets. In 1828, the third house was built on Herbert Street. In 1840, the latter house passed into the hands of the Seaman's Society, and the Freewill Baptists became extinct as an organization. A portion of them continued with the Free Church or Campbell wing until 1850. Mr. Rand's successors in the ministry were, the Revs. Abner Jones, Samuel Rand, Moses How, Abner George W. Kelton, William Andrews, William Coe, and Christopher Martin.

The Universalist Church dates its organization from Feb. 5, 1810.

Universalism was first preached in Salem, by the Rev. Samuel Smith, in 1804. From this time meetings were held in private houses by the leaders of the infant church: Ballou, Murray, Turner, Jones, and Barnes. The corner-stone of a church edifice was laid August, 1808, and the building was dedicated June 22, 1809, the Rev. George Richards being the preacher of the sermon. The succession of clergymen has been Edward Turner, June, 1809, to June, 1814; Hosea Ballou, Sept., 1815, to Oct., 1817; Joshua Flagg, Dec., 1817, to March, 1820; Barzillai Streeter, June, 1820, to Aug., 1824; Seth Stetson, June, 1825, to March, 1828; Lemuel Willis, Dec., 1828, to May, 1837; Matthew H. Smith, Nov., 1837, to April, 1840; Linus S. Everett, May, 1841, to April, 1846; Eben Fisher, May, 1847, to Oct., 1853; Sumner Ellis, Jan., 1854, to Sept., 1858; Willard Spaulding, March, 1860, to Dec., 1869; Edwin C. Bolles (the present pastor), June, 1871. Of these the six last mentioned are living.

The church edifice of brick is one of the oldest in the city, the South and the First Baptist only exceeding it in age. It has several times been remodelled,—in 1840, 1855, and 1878. At the last date, as well as in 1857, extensive changes were made in the outside of the building or its surroundings, as also in its interior arrangement and decoration. Its pews have sittings for one thousand people. Over three hundred families are connected with the parish; and its Sunday school, organized in 1829, numbers nearly six hundred members.

In this parish was formed, in 1832, the Female Samaritan Society, one of the most efficient charities of Salem. During the war, 1861-64, this society sent more than two hundred young men to the ranks of the United States Army. The church celebrated its fiftieth anniversary in 1859, and, with the published proceedings of that occasion, may be found much historical and biographical material relating to its early years.

A Roman Catholic Church was organized in Salem, in 1811. The first Roman Catholic services in Salem were held in 1806, by the Rt. Rev. John Cheverus, Bishop of Boston; and were subsequently held in the intervening years, until 1811, by the bishop and Father Matignon. In the latter year, a church was organized in a school-house on Hardy Street, by the Rev. Dr. O'Brien, who officiated as its priest for two years. From 1813 to 1819, services were held occasionally by Matignon and Cheverus. The meetings were of a missionary character. The Rev. Paul McQuade was the settled pastor from 1818 to 1822. During his pastorate, the St. Mary's Catholic Church, a wooden edifice, was erected in 1821, at the corner of Mall and Bridge Streets, on land deeded for the purpose, in 1810, by Simon Forrester, an Irishman by birth, and a successful merchant. The land was to be used only for Catholic religious purposes forever. In 1826, the Rev. John Mahoney was settled as pastor, and from his time the succession has been unbroken. In 1842, the church was enlarged, and the first Catholic parochial school was taught in this city. In 1849, the congregation at St. Mary's having greatly increased, the St. James Church, on Federal Street, was built, and the "upper parish" organized. St. Mary's Church continued to be occupied until 1857, when the Church of the Immaculate Conception was erected on Walnut Street, and the old edifice abandoned. It remained standing, unused, for twenty years longer, when it was torn down, in 1877, as unsafe.

A Methodist Episcopal Church was first organized in Salem, in 1821. In 1823, the wooden church in Sewall Street (now Wesley Chapel) was built by the Rev. Jesse Fillmore, the first pastor. His ownership of the property caused dissension in the society, and its early history was stormy and troubled. The Rev. Mr. Fillmore was settled in 1822, and remained for a period of ten years, the church not then being a member of the General Conference. It did not unite with the latter until Feb., 1835. In March, 1841, a second Methodist Society was formed by a withdrawal from the first; the Rev. N. S. Spaulding was its first pastor. A new house of worship was erected in Union Street. The second society continued to occupy this meeting-house, until 1851, the members of the first church gradually joining with it, until the two societies were merged in 1844, and the house in Sewall Street passed into the hands of the Second Universalist Society.

In 1851, a new and larger house was deemed necessary, and the present house, at the corner of Lafayette and Harbor streets, was dedicated Jan. 5, 1853. The pastors are changed every three years. The present pastor is the Rev. Daniel D. Steele, D. D.

In 1872, the first old meeting-house, in Sewall Street, was repurchased, and consecrated as "Wesley Chapel." It is occupied by a Methodist Society, formed by the withdrawal of members from the Lafayette Street Church. Its first pastor was the Rev. Joshua Gill. The present pastor is the Rev. W. H. Meredith.

The *Seaman's Society* was formed in August, 1823. Its first meetings were held under the auspices of the Moral Society. It was intended to furnish a place for religious worship for sailors in port, and sea-faring men generally. Eleazer Barnard, settled in 1824, was its first pastor; he was followed by Benjamin H. Pitman, and Michael Carlton. The society first worshipped on Derby or "Long Wharf." Subsequently the chapel in Herbert Street was purchased from the Freewill Baptists, and was occupied for many years, until, with the decline of Salem's commerce, the society gradually diminished, and finally ceased to exist. The chapel is now owned and occupied by the St. Joseph's French Catholic Church.

The Independent Congregational Church, in Barton Square, or, as it is more generally termed, the Barton Square Unitarian Church, was formed in 1823. On the 10th of May in that year, $13,000 was subscribed to build the house, and to pay the salary of the pastor, the Rev. Henry Colman. The corner-stone of the church edifice was laid July 4, and in December the dedication ceremonies took place. The society was incorporated Jan. 24, 1825, and the Rev. Mr. Colman was installed Feb. 16. Mr. Colman's ministry lasted seven years, when he resigned and retired to private life, his health failing him. The Rev. J. W. Thompson was pastor of the church from March 7, 1832, to March 7, 1859; the Rev. A. M. Haskell from Jan. 1, 1862, to May 2, 1866; the present pastor is the Rev. George Batchelor. The society observed its semi-centennial in 1874. Its place of worship has been once remodelled, and entirely refitted in 1877.

The Central Baptist Church, formerly called the Second Baptist, was organized in 1825. Its first pastor, the Rev. George Leonard, was settled August 23, 1826. The church was regularly constituted in January of the latter year, with "eleven brothers and twenty-one sisters," who were dismissed from the First Baptist Church for the purpose. In June, 1826, the present meeting-house was dedicated. It was remodelled in 1867, and again improved in 1877. Mr. Leonard's successors have been the Revs. Robert E. Pattison, Cyrus P. Grosvenor, Joseph Banvard, D. D., Benjamin Brierly, William H. Eaton, D. D., Daniel D. Winn, D. D., S. Hartwell Pratt, David Weston, D. D., and W. H. H. Marsh. The church is located at the foot of Federal Street, on St. Peter Street.

A Mission Chapel, for the use of the colored people, was erected in 1828, on South Street, afterwards Mill Street, and now New Washington Street. It stood on the hill between New Washington Street and Harbor Street. James P. Lewis was a missionary among the colored people in 1831. This church was originally known as the "Union Bethel Church." February 25, 1839, it was reorganized, under the title of the Wesleyan Methodist Church, with John N. Mars as its pastor. In 1842 it held the name of Zion's Methodist Church. Samuel Palmer was its minister in 1845, and it was known as the Wesleyan Methodist Connection. The society continued, with varying fortunes, till about 1861, when it ceased to exist.

The Crombie Street Church was founded in 1832, the founders purchasing the old Salem Theatre building, on Crombie Street, and transforming it into a very commodious and neat church. The society was formed the same year; and the first pastor, the Rev. William Williams, was settled Nov. 22, 1832, and resigned in 1838. His successors have been the Revs. Alexander J. Sessions, James Mason Hoppin, J. Henry Thayer, Mr. Waite, and Hugh Elder.

The Free Church was formed in 1839. In 1837 Campbellite opinions were embraced by a portion of the Freewill Baptists, which caused a division in the society of the latter, and two years later resulted in a separation. The new society rejected all creeds, and, according to its own phraseology, desired to be called an "assembly of Christians," and not "Christ-ians." A church was formed in 1840, with its place of meeting in Masonic Hall, No. 27 Washington Street. William W. Eaton was the first-settled pastor, in 1843. He was succeeded by David O. Gaskill, in 1847. During the latter's pastorate the society ceased to exist, about 1850.

A Mormon Church was formed Jan. 1, 1842. Ten years previous Joseph Smith, the famous Mormon prophet, came to Salem, with two elders, and preached the new dispensation. Erastus Snow and another made a second visit in September, 1841. Snow remained as a preacher, and organized a church, which, in 1843, had a membership of one hundred. During this year a number removed to Nauvoo, then the seat of the Mormon faith in Illinois, and the society was dissolved in 1844 by the departure of the remainder.

The Second Universalist Church was organized in June, 1844, with the Rev. Day K. Lee as its pastor. The society worshipped in the

Lyceum and Mechanic Halls, and in the Phenix building, corner of Lafayette and Central streets, with the Rev. B. F. Bowles as its pastor. It subsequently hired the First Methodist Church, in Sewall Street. The Rev. S. C. Hewitt succeeded Mr. Bowles. The society became extinct about 1850 or 1851.

A Second Advent Church was formed April 13, 1845, and on Oct. 10 a camp-meeting was held, by the disciples of Miller, in North Salem. Arrangements were subsequently made for holding public worship. The society has since maintained an existence, and now worships in Holyoke Hall, Essex Street.

Grace Church, Episcopal, was organized in 1858, by members who withdrew from St. Peter's Parish. The present Gothic meeting-house was erected in that year, on land adjoining the Brown Emerson estate, on Essex, between Monroe and Flint streets. Its rectors have been the Rev. George D. Wildes, the Rev. Joseph P. Kidder, and the Rev. James P. Franks.

New Jerusalem Church. — On July 7, 1794, William Hill, boarding in town, strongly maintained the doctrines of Emanuel Swedenborg. Maj. Joseph Hiller is mentioned as one of the first converts to the faith in Salem. The first meeting for worship was held in 1840, at the house of Mrs. Burleigh, on Lynde Street. But four persons were present. The Rev. O. P. Hiller, a grandson of the collector, preached the new faith at Lyceum Hall, to an audience of four hundred persons, on the evening of July 24, 1844. Eighteen years later, the Rev. T. B. Hayward was invited to come to Salem, by the people then interested in the "heavenly doctrines." From his efforts sprang "Salem Society of the New Jerusalem Church," consisting of thirteen members. The society was organized Jan. 25, 1863. The present meeting-house was erected in 1871, and dedicated April 18, 1872. The pastors have been the Revs. Abiel Silver, L. G. Jordan, and A. F. Frost.

The Calvary Baptist Church was formed in October, 1870, being the third Baptist society. It was constituted with about ninety members, who withdrew from the Central Baptist Church upon the settlement of the Rev. David Weston. It was designed as a free church, and was organized in Mechanic Hall, March 7, 1871. The church continued to worship there until February, 1873, when it removed to the Bethel in Herbert Street. The present meeting-house was erected in the last-named year on land presented by Mrs. John Dwyer. It was dedicated Nov. 17, 1873. Its pastors have been the Revs. S. Hartwell Pratt, D. Henry Taylor, and William A. Keese. .The church is located at the corner of Herbert and Essex streets. It was incorporated March 17, 1874.

French Church. — The St. Joseph's French Catholic Society worships in the Seamen's Bethel, on Herbert Street. It was formed in 1874.

The Public Schools. — In New England the school-house and the church were considered inseparable, and we naturally turn from the history of the churches to an account of the establishment of the schools.

The honor of leading in the establishment of a public school is claimed in behalf of both Salem and Boston. This claim cannot, with absolute confidence, be awarded to either city. The earliest recorded votes of the people (in Boston, 1635; in Salem, 1640) mention the employment of teacher in such terms as to indicate the prior existence of that office. Further, it is known that, in fact, the Rev. John Fisk did discharge the stated duties of teacher in Salem as early as 1637. Besides, the arrival of Endicott preceded by two years the settlement of Boston. The records of the first school show at the earliest moment a tree of vigorous fibre and no uncertain hold. Mark the continuity of this school's existence! A complete pedagogical succession, with scarcely a missing link in the line of descent, and with none at all for more than one hundred years.

Probably not a school in the world can bring such proof of continuous existence during two hundred and forty-one years. The identity is indisputable. The sites of the original school have been, as far as known, the following: On "Court" Street, upon the eastern half of the present Washington Street, over against Mr. Robert Brookhouse's residence; in 1760, in the centre of Washington Street, over the northern end of the tunnel, occupying a new brick building; in 1785, for a while in hired quarters, awaiting the erection of a two-story wooden building, just north-east of the same end of the tunnel, the chamber of that house being its room; in 1819, on Broad Street, in a new brick building, now (1878) occupied by a primary school. It was here that the Boys' English High School was established, afterwards to be united with the Latin School. In 1856, the consolidated school, the Girls' High School being combined with the foregoing schools, was located in a new edifice of brick, where it still remains.

The year 1845 was the first time that names of citizens were bestowed upon the public schools. The old Latin School was called the Fisk School; the Boys' High, the Bowditch; the Girls' High, the Saltonstall; the English Grammar Schools, in the various parts of the city, the Phillips, Hacker, Pickering, Browne, Higginson, Bentley, and Epes. The Fisk and the Bowditch, in 1854, were united and received the title Bowditch; in 1856, the Saltonstall was incorporated with them into the present High School, which bears no honorary name. The branches of instruction in the Latin School were, at first, English, Latin, Greek, good manners, and the "principles of Christian religion" (1677). Later (1699), writing, ciphering, and reading are mentioned. Then (in 1801), English grammar, composition, and geography are added to the list of studies, and writing and arithmetic are mentioned, as though for some reason — perhaps, as being taught in the English School — they had been temporarily discontinued. Term time, in the good old days, was "all the year round," or nearly so. The vacations prescribed in 1770 were as follows: General election, commencement day and the rest of that week, fasts, thanksgivings, trainings, Wednesday and Saturday afternoons. These were, properly, holidays, and not vacations as we now term them. The "glorious Fourth" was not yet ushered into being. The boys of 1700 were obliged to rise and breakfast early. From March to November, school opened at seven, A. M.; the rest of the year at eight, A. M. The school day ended at five and four, P. M., for the respective seasons.

Grammar schools (anciently called writing schools): In 1712 the first writing school was established, Nathaniel Higginson teacher, for reading, writing, and ciphering. The site was the old watch-house "in the north end of the town"; *i. e.*, upon ground extending to Essex Street and into Washington Street, west of the location of the Stearns or "Observer" building The successors of Higginson, till 1785, were Swinerton, Gerrish, Gale, Hart, Ford, Dawson, and Edward Norris. In 1785 the Centre School-house is erected; the upper story occupied by the Latin school and the lower part by this English school. At the same time the number of English schools increases: One is established in Dean Street, Isaac Hacker teacher; one on East (now Forrester) Street, John Watson teacher. In 1807 another is added, on School Street, taught by William B. Dodge. In 1819 South Salem is similarly favored: William Carnes is placed in charge of a school on South (now Washington) Street. In 1821 a like school was opened in Williams Street, with Samuel Burrill for teacher. These schools were the progenitors of our present grammar schools. They were originally organized for boys. In 1793 girls were admitted to the three schools then existing; namely, the Centre, Dean Street, and East Street schools, but not as associates and equals of the boys. To them an hour following the morning session and an hour after school at night was given. In 1827 they were granted two schools for themselves: on Beckford Street, Henry J. Hamilton, teacher; and on East Street, Rufus Putnam, Jr., teacher. In 1835 they are admitted to equal privileges with boys in the North Salem school; and, in 1841, likewise to the South Salem school, in which year additional provision for both boys and girls is made by the establishment of a grammar school on Aborn Street, under Charles Northend. There are now four boys' grammar schools: two for girls, and three for both sexes. In the same year (1841) the Centre, Williams Street, and East Street schools (three of the boys' schools) are united and suitably called the Union School, located between Bath (now Forrester) and Essex streets. In 1845 this school is called by the honored name, Phillips; the boys' school on Dean Street is called the Hacker; the Beckford Street girls' school is yclept Higginson; and that on East Street, Bentley; the mixed school in North Salem receives the appellation, Pickering; that in South Salem, Browne; and that in Aborn Street, Epes. The consolidation of the Hacker, Higginson, and Epes, under the title Bowditch, in 1870, completed the present system of grammar schools: one for boys, one for girls, and three for both sexes. After some changes, the names and locations of these schools and the date of erection and material of their present edifices, are as follows: Phillips, Herbert Street, 1869, wood; Bentley, Essex Street, 1861, brick; Bowditch, Dean Street, 1870, brick; Pickering, School Street, 1862, brick; Browne (now called Holly Street School), Holly Street, 1874, wood. Though the first English (grammar) school was established in 1712, it was nearly one hundred years (1807) before the fourth school was opened. The population of Salem in 1712 is computed at 2,600; in 1800, it was 9,457; now (1878) it is set at 26,000. The number of pupils in 1718, at the first school

above named, was 54. In 1803, the three English (grammar) schools and the Latin school contained 213 boys; of whom perhaps 180 were in the former schools: now the number is above 1,200. In 1816 grammar and geography were added to the course, which had consisted of the "three R's." Up to that time private schools seemed to eclipse the public schools. Better management and an adjustment of the course of studies to the popular needs gave larger success to these schools. At the present day, in addition to studies named above, spelling, history, music, drawing, and some study of the Constitution of the United States, are embraced in the school-work. Female assistants in the boys' grammar schools, all under masters, began to be employed in 1839; for a year or two previously such teachers had been serving in the East Female School. Now one of the five principals is a female, as are all of the assistant teachers in this class of schools: four male teachers, twenty-five female teachers.

The first record we have of a primary school is in 1729, when Samuel Browne donated to the town of Salem £240, the interest of half this sum to be devoted to the education of poor children in the grammar (Latin) school, one-quarter to be similarly applied for poor children in the English school, the remaining fourth part to be similarly invested "for the learning of six very poor children their letters and to spell and read" in "a woman's school." The same gentleman, in 1731, remembers the Latin, the English, and "the woman's school" by a donation of £50 each. We have also other incidental mention of the public care to bestow instruction upon the young and unlettered. In 1773 a class of boys not fitted to remain in masters' schools are put under female teachers. In 1801 three public schools are opened to children of both sexes of five years old and upwards. These, with their teachers, were as follows: Lynn Street, Mrs. Holman; Church Street, Mrs. Lamperel; East Street, Miss Carlton. This number increases to seven in 1820. There are now twelve primaries, employing forty-eight female teachers.

A school for colored children was organized in 1807, Chloe Minns being appointed teacher, and was supported till 1823: the same teacher, apparently, having continued in charge all the time. She had meanwhile become Mrs. Lawrence. In 1826 a school of the rank of writing school is kept by a colored man for colored children. An effort, in 1827, to re-open the primary is unsuccessful. In 1830 the right of a colored girl to enter the girls' high school was questioned, but affirmed. In 1834, in consequence of a remonstrance against permitting colored girls to attend that school, instruction for them is provided in the chamber of the Centre School-house, which the Latin school once occupied; William B. Dodge is teacher till 1841, and Thomas B. Perkins then till 1843, when race distinction in public schools ceases.

An evening school of a private character was taught in 1770; again, in 1772, a similar school is advertised: Mr. Steward proposed to instruct twelve poor boys, from January to April, 1774, on Monday, Wednesday, and Friday evenings. His compensation came from the Brown fund, placed at the disposal of the committee. In 1823 an appropriation of seventy-five dollars is made for an evening school for young men over fifteen years of age, Mr. Hood, teacher. In 1847 the city missionary provides free evening instruction. The next year Mr. Ball, assisted by "many ladies and gentlemen," conducts schools two evenings a week for males and two evenings for females. This school is generously continued until, in 1850, the city authorities come to its support with an appropriation of three hundred dollars, the same gentleman remaining in charge. In 1854 a school was maintained one season at the charge of the city, under instructors already employed in the day schools. Finally, from 1869 to the present time, there have been public evening schools free to males and females who would be benefited by them. The one for males is now in charge of a female principal, with six young teachers as assistants; that for females is conducted by a female principal, with three such assistants.

The Naumkeag School was opened in 1869, as a half-time and factory school. Such it continued until 1878, the present year, when it lost both these distinctive features. Miss Margaret A. Dunn was its teacher during that entire period. This school is now a miscellaneous one, supplementary to the graded system. In 1869 the school committee made the study of drawing a regular branch in all the day schools. In 1872 evening schools of drawing were inaugurated. There has been no discontinuance of either policy to the present time. From 1872 to 1877 a special instructor of the art was employed in the day schools.

In 1842, a teacher of vocal music in all the public schools, under masters, except the Latin, was employed; compensation, $150. The next year, twice that amount was paid for such instruction, under three teachers. In 1848, inquiry is made, and the exercise seems to have been generally neglected, but the committee feel unable to put the study upon a permanent basis. In 1868, the branch receives due attention, and, from that time to 1877, a regular instructor is employed in all the day schools. By the dismissal of special instructors of these arts in the day schools, the committee did not intend to allow the neglect of the arts themselves; but relied upon the educated skill of the teachers in the schools to continue and direct the practice.

Originally, as with all other town affairs, it was the custom for the voters to manage the schools at town-meetings. As schools grew more numerous, and more frequent attention to details was required, it was found impossible to exercise the proper control in this way. The selectmen were first intrusted with this responsibility; but, in 1712, an occasion calls for a board of committee,—the selection of a teacher for the Latin school. These men were Samuel Browne, Josiah Wolcott, Stephen Sewall, John Higginson, Jr., and Walter Price. Samuel Browne, in 1729, stipulated that the schools upon which his donations were bestowed should be committed to men chosen for that special duty. The people elected the committee till 1836, when, at the incorporation of the city, this power was delegated to its council; but it was restored to the people in 1859, where it still resides. From 1836 to 1847, the number of members was twenty-five; since then it has been a board of eighteen elected, and the mayor and president of the common council, *ex officio*. The committee have made annual reports in print, regularly, since 1848. For some time previously, statements concerning the schools were included as part of the city government's report. The executive office of superintendent was established in 1865. Jonathan Kimball was the first superintendent, and held the office until 1872, when it was discontinued for a year. Augustus D. Small has filled the office from 1873 to the present time.

The Salem State Normal School was founded in 1854; the Resolve of the Legislature for its establishment having been approved April 16, 1853. The State board of education decided June 2, 1853, to locate the school at Salem, and the city furnished the site and erected the building, receiving from the State $6,000, the amount appropriated by the Legislature. The site was formerly occupied by the registry of deeds, and the buildings of that department were removed for the school building. The cost to the city, over and above the $6,000 appropriation by the State, and $2,000 contributed by the Eastern Railroad, was about $5,200. The building was dedicated Sept. 14, 1854, Gov. Emory Washburn presiding. An address was delivered by the Hon. George S. Boutwell. The school was opened Sept. 13, 1854, Richard Edwards being the first principal. He is now principal of the Bloomington (Ill.) State Normal School. His successor was the late Alpheus Crosby. He was a celebrated Greek scholar, and was a man of note among literary people. He resigned in July, 1865, and devoted the remainder of his life to literary pursuits. He died April 17, 1874, aged sixty-three. Prof. Daniel B. Hagar succeeded Prof. Crosby, and the school to-day is under his supervision. The school has always been a prosperous institution of learning, and the attendance of pupils never was so large as within the last three years. Originally the school building was sixty-seven feet square; but an addition has been built, and a French roof added, making it now one of the finest public buildings in the city.

CHAPTER IV.

THE LITERARY, BENEVOLENT, AND OTHER SOCIETIES OF SALEM.

Sketches of institutions that have an educating or refining influence on the people appropriately follow an account of the churches and schools; next come benevolent institutions and societies, and those akin to them; and, lastly, the general miscellaneous societies.

The Salem Athenæum was incorporated in 1810, being formed by a union of the Social and Philosophical Libraries. The first of these dates its origin to a time when Salem was a small provincial town, 1760. In that year, a library was formed, and called the Social Library. It was the outgrowth of a social evening club, composed of gentlemen of extended literary attainments: among them, Benjamin Lynde and Nathaniel Ropes, judges of the superior court; Andrew Oliver, judge of the court of common pleas; William Pynchon, a lawyer; the Rev. William McGilchrist, the Rev. Thomas Barnard,

Stephen Higginson, a merchant; William Browne, judge of the superior court; Col. Benjamin Pickman, and Dr. E. A. Holyoke. In 1797, this library received an Act of incorporation. The Philosophical Library was founded in 1781. An American privateer had captured the vessel on which a part of the library of the celebrated Dr. Richard Kirwan had been shipped across the Irish Channel, and the books were brought to Beverly and sold. These were purchased by a company of Salem gentlemen, and the library was thus started. It was the combination of these two libraries that formed that of the Salem Athenæum, which institution was incorporated in March, 1810. The call for the first meeting was signed by E. A. Holyoke, William Orne, Nathaniel Silsbee, and Samuel Putnam. Rooms in the Central Building, Central Street (then Market Street), were opened July 11, 1810. In 1815, the library was removed to rooms in Essex Place; in 1825, to rooms over the Salem Bank; in 1841, to Lawrence Place; and in 1857, to the present rooms in Plummer Hall.* The present number of volumes is about sixteen thousand. They have been principally obtained by money arising from the annual assessments and from the sale of shares, though the library has received valuable donations and several legacies.

The Salem Lyceum dates back to Jan. 18, 1830, when the organization was started. The earlier lectures were given in various churches; but the present Lyceum Hall was built soon, and the success of the institution increased from that time. Judge Daniel A. White, the president of the Lyceum, delivered the first lecture, Feb. 24, 1830, and an effort was made to have home talent largely represented in the list of lecturers. Among the Salem scholars who appeared in Lyceum courses in the earlier days of the institution, were Francis Peabody, Jonathan Webb, Henry K. Oliver, Dr. Abel L. Pierson, Charles W. Upham, and Rufus Choate. Some of the most noted men of the time have, year after year, lent their talents to the success of the Salem Lyceum: among them, Daniel Webster, Edward Everett, Ralph Waldo Emerson, Oliver Wendell Holmes, Charles Francis Adams, A. P. Peabody, Horace Mann, Robert C. Winthrop, Jared Sparks, George Bancroft, and Caleb Cushing. The Lyceum has always maintained a high standard in the selection of its lecturers, and few similar organizations can show such a fine record. The fiftieth annual course of entertainments has just been opened (Nov. 13, 1878) by a lecture by the Hon. Henry K. Oliver, mayor of Salem; his lecture being an historical sketch of the society.

The Young Men's Union was organized in 1855. It maintains a reading-room in Peek's Block, Washington Street; and each season presents a fine course of lectures, concerts, and other entertainments. As a rule these have been largely patronized. They have always been of a high order.

Musical Societies. — Salem has always been noted for its musical talent, and its devotion to musical study and practice. Early in this present century, an attempt succeeded in the publishing, by Mr. John Appleton, of a work intended to supplant the imperfect and unique church music then in general vogue, by a more sober, solemn, and devotional style, and, at the same time, pleasing in melody, accurate and rich in harmony. No organized music society, however, appears till 1818, when the Handel Society was formed, continuing about three years, and studying the highest order of music. In 1821, but existing a very short time, the Haydn Society started. The first more permanent association was the Mozart Association organized by the efforts of Gen. Henry K. Oliver, in May, 1825. It had a very successful career of about ten years, giving concerts, with music from the classic authors, and exciting a marked influence upon the taste and skill of the several church choirs in the city, the leading members of which were enrolled among its numbers. Hon. John Pickering was its president, Henry K. Oliver vice-president, conductor, and organist, and the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall first director. The first organ ever built by the celebrated brothers Hook, of Boston, was used by this society. Their concerts were always well patronized, and the prospect of a permanent existence was so very favorable that an application was made in 1834 to the Legislature for an Act of incorporation to enable the society to purchase and hold real estate whereon to erect a music hall. The Act passed both branches, but was vetoed by Gov. Lincoln, on the ground that he considered it "inexpedient to encourage the incorporating of institutions of so limited a public benefit!" This discouragement seems to have operated unfavorably on the continuance of the society. The next association for musical purposes was the well-known and most successful Salem Glee Club, organized in 1832, of which the leading spirits were Gen. Henry K. Oliver, John Chadwick, Warwick Palfray, William Kimball, Charles Lawrence, Charles G. Putnam, William Brown, Leverett Saltonstall, and W. H. Prince. The club was under the presidency and instruction of Gen. Oliver, who selected its library, comprising all the best works of Horsley, Callcott, Spofforth, Lord Mornington (father of the Duke of Wellington), Danby, Bishop, and others. The club continued about twenty-two years. On its breaking up, its library was presented to the library of the Harvard Musical Association, of Boston.

No other formal association seems to have existed in Salem till about the year 1868, when the Salem Oratorio Society was formed, with a membership of about three hundred persons. It was gathered mainly by the personal efforts of Mr. Francis H. Lee, an amateur. Its success has been very great; mastering, under the instruction and lead of Mr. Carl Zerrahn, the principal works of Handel, Haydn, Mendelssohn, and rendering them to the public in a manner to excite the praise of the severest musical critics,—one of whom, in a leading musical journal, declared that there never had been heard in this country such marvellous chorus singing. The fame of the society spread far and wide, and it was selected, at the Peace of the World Jubilee at Boston, in 1872, as one of the societies to sing the double choruses of Handel's "Israel in Egypt," over against the Handel and Haydn Society of Boston.

The Salem Marine Society, the most ancient organization in the city, originated in March, 1766, when eighteen shipmasters constituted the society. The Act of incorporation was received in 1772. The early meetings were held at the houses of members, and later at the public houses. The society now has rooms in Franklin Building, corner of Essex and Newbury streets, which it owns. The late Thomas Perkins bequeathed to the society his buildings known as Franklin Place, and the first meeting was held there Nov. 28, 1833. The building was badly damaged by fire Jan. 29, 1845, again Jan. 4, 1859, and totally destroyed Oct. 31, 1860. The last time the insurance had expired a few hours before the fire but; the generosity of the insurance company, and liberal contributions of citizens, aided substantially in erecting the present fine structure. The subscriptions amounted to over $14,000. The objects of the institution, from its formation, have been charity, and progress in navigation. These principles have been closely adhered to.

The East India Marine Society is one of the oldest associations in the country, having been organized Oct. 14, 1799. Capt. Benjamin Hodges, was the first president; Jacob Crowninshield, treasurer; and Capt. Jonathan Hodges, secretary. Its chief objects were "to assist the widows and children of deceased members, who may need it, out of the funds of the society"; "to collect such facts and observations as tend to the improvement and security of navigation"; "to form a museum of natural and artificial curiosities, particularly such as are to be found beyond the Cape of Good Hope, or Cape Horn." The by-laws provided that "any person shall be eligible as a member of this society, who shall actually have navigated the seas near the Cape of Good Hope or Cape Horn, either as master or commander, or as factor or supercargo of any vessel belonging to Salem, or, if resident in Salem, of any vessel belonging to any port in the United States." These conditions were always observed, and under them 348 joined the society up to the time that its museum was, with that of the Essex Institute, placed in charge of the Peabody Academy of Science (1867). Of these, 278 had died, leaving seventy surviving members. The charity bestowed was frequently outside of the channels prescribed in the by-laws. Much attention was paid to improvement in navigation. The earliest journal written in the records of the society was by Nathaniel Bowditch, who was for some years master or supercargo on voyages from Salem to the East Indies. The museum of curiosities collected was a very remarkable and extremely valuable one, and makes a prominent part of the collections now displayed by the Peabody Academy. The society first occupied a room in a building on the corner of Essex and Washington streets; next a building in the rear of the present Downing Block, and in 1825 moved into the East India Marine Hall, on Essex, nearly opposite St. Peter Street. The opening of this new hall was celebrated by a procession and dinner, at which President Adams, Mayor Quincy, of Boston, Judge Story, of the United States Supreme Court, and President Kirkland, of Harvard College, were present. The organization of the society is still maintained, and its charity fund is continued.

The Salem Fraternity is an exceedingly worthy institution. It was organized in April, 1869, and maintains, free to all, a reading-room, amusement room, and library, in the Downing Block, Essex Street. The library contains upwards of 2,000 volumes, and free

* See account of the Essex Institute in County History.

instruction is given in various branches by competent teachers. Its labors are mainly among such young people of both sexes as are employed in the city, but who have no home associations. Its objects are appreciated by the charitably disposed, and its influence is considerable.

The Young Men's Christian Association was organized in 1858. It has rooms at No. 194 Essex Street, which are open to all, day and evening, and where religious services are frequently conducted on week days and on each Sunday.

Temperance Societies. — Salem has had, first and last, a host of temperance organizations. Washington Total Abstinence Union, from 1841 to 1847; the Martha Washington Society, in connection with the first named; Young Men's Temperance Society, 1843; Henfield Division, Sons of Temperance, 1844, and still in existence; Salem Division, 1846; Young Men's Division, 1859 to 1865; Phillips Division, 1859, and Abraham Lincoln Division, 1866, both still maintained; Independent Division, Daughters of Temperance, and Zephyr Union Daughters; Social Council, 1859; Essex Temple of Honor, 1856; Meteoric Temple of Honor, 1866, and still existing; Cadets of Temperance, 1848; Naumkeag Tent, Independent Order of Rechabites, 1844; Ocean Tent of Rechabites; Daughters of Rechab; Father Mathew Temperance Society, 1848, and still maintained; Temperance Watchmen, 1851; Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society, 1857, and still existing; Bands of Hope; Minnehaha Lodge, Order of Good Templars (1862), and Siloam Lodge, 1866, both in existence now; Young Men's Temperance Volunteers, 1867; the present Reform Clubs; Ladies' Christian Temperance Union, and others. Each one has done what was within its power to check the evil of intemperance, and with greater or less degree of success.

The Plummer Farm School is a reformatory institution for boys, founded by bequests of Miss Caroline Plummer,—one of $10,000; one of $8,000; and, besides, the residue of her property after paying other legacies. The legacies were accepted, according to the terms of Miss Plummer's will, by the city council, and the mayor and aldermen chose ten trustees to have charge of the institution. An Act of incorporation was granted by the Legislature, May 21, 1855. The amount of the fund July 1, 1856, was $25,462.23. To this the city added $8,000, and interest on the whole was allowed to accumulate till 1870, when the school building was erected on Winter Island, on lands owned by the national government, which granted their use for the school. The building is a handsome French-roof structure. Mr. C. A. Johnson is principal of the school. The school fund now amounts to $50,000.

The City Relief Committee is composed of the pastors and one delegate from each church, and delegates from charitable societies, who act with the assistance of an agent in dispensing charity among the worthy poor of the city. Funds are furnished by the churches and by general contribution.

The Salem Hospital was organized April 7, 1873, a fund having been contributed for its formation by Capt. John Bertram and other citizens. The hospital building is located on Charter Street. This institution supplies a want long felt in the community.

The Salem Dispensary, organized in February, 1820, and incorporated in 1831, had for its object the relief of poor people, by affording medicine and medical advice gratuitously. Its labors ended on the formation of the Salem Hospital, which assumed its mission.

The Old Ladies' Home, located on Derby Street, was founded by the late Robert Brookhouse, in 1861; and the *Old Men's Home*, on the same street, by Capt. John Bertram, in 1877. Both are excellent institutions.

The Masons. — There are in Salem six branches of the Masonic fraternity. Essex Lodge, F. A. M., was erected March 9, 1779, under authority from the Massachusetts Grand Lodge, descending from the Grand Master of Scotland. This charter was returned to the Grand Lodge, March 6, 1789, it being found impossible to continue the lodge, as so many of its members were mariners and absent at sea. Another charter was granted, and the lodge formally constituted June 8, 1792. The lodge was suspended on account of the anti-Masonic excitement from 1833 to 1845. Starr King Lodge was chartered March 9, 1865, twenty-two members having demitted from Essex Lodge for the purpose of forming it. Washington Royal Arch Chapter was constituted in September, 1811; suspended from March 17, 1835, to September, 1852; since which time companions have demitted to constitute Sutton Chapter, Lynn; William Ferson Chapter, Gloucester; Amity Chapter, Beverly; Holton Chapter, Danvers. Salem Council of R. S. M. was constituted June 3, 1818. Winslow Lewis Commandery of Knights Templars, under the jurisdiction of the Grand Commandery of Massachusetts and Rhode Island, was instituted June 27, 1865. Sutton Grand Lodge of Perfection, under the authority of the Supreme Council of Inspectors-General of the thirty-third degree of the Ancient Accepted Scottish Rite of Freemasonry, for the Northern jurisdiction of the United States of America, was constituted and established April 8, 1864.

The Odd Fellows. — During the latter part of the summer of 1843, Adrian Low and Thomas Harvey, both residents of Salem, and members of the order of Odd Fellows, the former of Siloam Lodge, and the latter of Oriental Lodge, conceived the idea of organizing a lodge in their own city, and the necessary steps were at once taken. A special meeting of the Grand Lodge of Massachusetts was held at Salem, Nov. 6, 1843, and Essex Lodge was formed, fifteen members being admitted. In January succeeding, this lodge had a membership of thirty, and in June, 1876, its members numbered 335. A charter for a new lodge in Salem was granted in 1846, and on the 18th of November, Fraternity Lodge was organized, with twenty-nine members, that number withdrawing by card from Essex Lodge. Its membership in June, 1876, was 205. Both of these lodges have excellent records of work done within the order, and of charity bestowed on sick members. Both are in flourishing condition to-day, and have the promise of brilliant futures. Naumkeag Encampment was instituted June 26, 1845. Union Degree Daughters of Rebecca is the title of the female branch of Odd Fellowship in Salem.

The Salem Charitable Mechanic Association was organized Oct. 1, 1817, and the Mechanic Hall Corporation in 1839. The former has a library and reading-room in the Mechanic Hall Building.

The Salem Mutual Benefit Association is a mutual life insurance company, as is also a lodge of the Royal Arcanum recently organized in the city. The headquarters of the Essex County Odd Fellows' Mutual Benefit Association is also in Salem.

The Harmony Grove Cemetery Corporation was organized in 1839, and incorporated in 1840; cemetery consecrated June 14, 1840. The cemetery contains about seventy acres, and is beautifully laid out, and finely kept. The remains of George Peabody, the philanthropist, are here interred.

Miscellaneous Societies. — The American Association for the Advancement of Science has its headquarters in Salem, occupying a room on the second floor of the Bank building, on Central Street. Prof. F. W. Putnam is the permanent secretary. The library of this association is a very large and valuable one, and its volumes are sent all through the country among the leading scientists. The business of the association is done almost wholly by mail and express, and few people comprehend its wide scope. The Salem Female Charitable Society was organized in 1801, and incorporated in 1804; the Samaritan Society was organized Dec. 10, 1832; the Salem Female Employment Society was incorporated May 1, 1867; the Seamen's Widow and Orphan Association was formed in 1833, and incorporated in 1844; the Seamen's Orphan and Children's Friend Society organized Feb. 25, 1839, and received an Act of incorporation in 1841. A new "home" has just been completed and opened on Carpenter Street. The City Orphan Asylum of Salem Sisters of Charity is the successor of the Looby Asylum, founded by the late Thomas Looby in 1866. It is situated on Lafayette Street, the building being a new one of brick, and perfectly adapted for the uses to which it is put. St. Peter's Guild, organized in 1872, is devoted to charitable work, under direction of the rector of St. Peter's Church. There are also in the city at the present time lodges of the United Order of American Mechanics, Knights of Pythias, Knights of Honor, American Protestant Association, United Order of Red Men, and others of lesser note.

CHAPTER V.

SKETCH OF THE COMMERCIAL HISTORY OF SALEM, WITH BIOGRAPHICAL NOTICES OF THE PROMINENT MERCHANTS.

The commercial record of Salem, the most brilliant chapter in her history, is yet to be written. The old shipmasters, whose record is a part of that history, are many of them still living among us; but their numbers are gradually diminishing, and before many years nothing will be left for the historian to glean from but the written and printed page. This history is so full of important events, and so crowded with interesting details, that it is not possible in the limits of a single chapter to do more than touch, in the briefest manner possible, upon

some of the salient points. Perhaps the facts here stated may show what a wealth of material lies ready to be moulded into shape, and induce some chronicler worthy of the theme to undertake the interesting task of gathering it together for preservation. So, ere it be too late, the record may be preserved and handed down as a precious legacy from Salem of the past to Salem of the future.

Salem was undoubtedly chosen as a good place for settlement by Roger Conant, who describes it as "a fruitful necke of land," because of its harbors and rivers. Situated on a peninsula, with North River on one side, and South River on the other, all parts of the town were readily accessible by water. Salem was from the first, and of necessity, a maritime place. The Massachusetts Company that sent John Endicott to Salem was a trading company, and the Home governor, Matthew Cradock, writes to Endicott, in 1629, to send as return cargoes "staves, sarsaparilla, sumach, two or three hundred firkins of sturgeon, and other fish and beaver." In the same year, the Home Company sent to Salem six ship-builders, of whom Robert Moulton was chief. The neck was used for ship-building from the earliest period. In 1636, Richard Hollingworth, a ship-builder, gets a grant of land on the neck from the town, and builds a ship of three hundred tons there in 1641.

The early, long-continued, and staple trade of Salem was in the product of the fisheries. The harbor and rivers swarmed with fish, and so plenty were they that they were used for manure. From 1629 to 1740, Winter Island seems to have been the headquarters of the Salem fishing trade, and that trade was the staple business of Salem down to a much later period. From 1629 to 1640, Salem had not much shipping of her own; but during the latter year the Rev. Hugh Peters, of the First Church, a man of great energy and sagacity, interested the people in ship-building, and in a few years an abundant supply of vessels was built. In 1643, the merchants of Salem were trading with the West Indies, with Barbadoes and the Leeward Islands.

Between 1640 and 1650, the commercial career of Salem received an impetus, and her vessels made voyages not only to the mother country, but to the West Indies, Bermudas, Virginia, and Antigua. Her wealth was great in proportion to her population, and Josselyn, writing in 1664, says, "In this town are some very rich merchants." From 1659 to 1677, there appear to be four noted ship-builders in Salem, one of whom, Jonathan Pickering, gets a grant of land about Hardy's Cove, from the town, to himself and heirs forever, to build vessels upon. In 1676, Salem is said to be one of the principal places for building vessels at £4 per ton.

From 1670 to 1740, the trade was to the West Indies and most parts of Europe, including Spain, France, and Holland. From 1686 to 1689, inclusive, Salem is trading to Barbadoes, London, Fayal, Pennsylvania, Virginia, and Antigua. The great majority of her vessels are ketches from twenty to forty tons, and carrying from four to six men. Only one ship appears among them, and her tonnage is but one hundred and thirty tons. In 1698–99, registers are taken out for two ships of eighty and two hundred tons, a barque, three sloops, and twenty ketches. John Johnson, of Salem, in 1693, "having for nigh three years followed the trade of boating goods," to and from Boston, "sometimes twice a weeke," complains to Gov. William Phipps, of the cost of entering and clearing.

In 1700, the foreign trade of Salem is thus described by Higginson: "Dry Merchantable Codfish for the markets of Spain, Portugal and the Straits. Refuse fish, lumber, horses and provisions for the West Indies. Returns made directly to England are sugar, molasses, cotton-wool, logwood and Brasiletto wood, for which we depend on the West Indies. Our own produce a considerable quantity of whale and fish oil, whalebone, furs, deer, elk and bear skins are annually sent to England. We have much shipping here and freights are low."

Philip English was a good type of the Salem merchant of this period, and the commercial history of Salem is best written in the lives of her representative merchants. Mr. English came to Salem before 1670, and in 1675 married the daughter of another Salem merchant, Mr. William Hollingworth. In 1676, he is at the Isle of Jersey, commanding the ketch "Speedwell." He had so flourished in 1671 that he put up a stylish mansion on the eastern corner of Essex and English streets. It was one of those ancient mansion-houses for which Salem was once noted — a venerable, many-gabled, solid structure, with projecting stories and porches. Down to 1753 it was known as English's great house. It stood until 1833, long tenantless and deserted, and when torn down a secret room was found in the garret, supposed to have been built after the witchcraft furor as a place of temporary security in case of a second outcry.

In 1692, Philip English was at the height of his prosperity. He was trading with Bilboa, Barbadoes, St. Christopher's, and Jersey, as well as with several French ports. He owned twenty-one vessels, besides a wharf and warehouse on the neck, and fourteen buildings in the town. It is probable that his wife was over-elated by their prosperity, and forgot her humble friends of former days; for she is now called "aristocratic," and the prejudice thus engendered against her doubtless led to her being "cried out" against for witchcraft. Both Mr. English and his wife were so accused. From 1694 to 1720, Mr. English sends ketches to Newfoundland, Cape Sable or Arcadia, to catch fish, and sends these fish to Barbadoes or other English West Indies, Surinam, and Spain. He also had a number of vessels running between Salem and Virginia and Maryland. The ketch of those days was two-masted, with square sails on the foremast, and a mainsail on the mainmast, which was shorter than the foremast. The schooner gradually supplanted the ketch. It first appears in our Salem marine about 1720.

Mr. English was put into Salem jail, so says Felt, in 1725, for refusing, as an Episcopalian, to pay taxes for the support of the East Church. About 1734 he retired from trade, and in 1735, he was put under guardianship as being clouded in mind. He died in 1736, aged about eighty-six years, and was buried in the Episcopal church-yard.

Richard Derby was born in Salem in 1712, and about the time that Philip English retired from trade we find him master of the sloop "Ranger," about to sail for Cadiz and Malaga. "Salem, in 1732, has about thirty fishing vessels, much less than formerly, and the same number which go on foreign voyages to Barbadoes, Jamaica, and other West India Islands; some to the Wine Islands; others carry fish to Spain and Portugal." In 1739, Mr. Derby sails in the same vessel to St. Martins, and in 1742 he is master and part owner of the "Volant," bound for Barbadoes and the French Islands. In 1757, he retired from the sea and became a merchant of Salem, relinquishing his vessels to his sons, John and Richard.

The commerce in which Mr. Derby was engaged was pursued in vessels ranging from fifty to one hundred tons. His vessels, laden with fish, lumber, and provisions, cleared for Dominica, or some Windward Isle in the British West Indies, and then ran through the islands for a market. The returns were made in sugar, molasses, cotton, rum, claret, and naval stores, from Carolina. With the returns from these voyages, assorted cargoes were made of oil, naval stores, and the produce of the islands, for Spain and Madeira; and the proceeds remitted partly in bills on London, and partly in wine, salt, fruit, oil, iron, lead, and handkerchiefs, to America. During the French War, from 1756 to 1763, Mr. Derby owned several ships, as well as brigantines, carrying each eight or ten cannon. He was owner of part of the cannon to capture which Col. Leslie was sent down from Boston, as related in a preceding chapter. He died in Salem, Nov. 9, 1783.

The commerce of Salem did not receive any decided impetus till the close of the Revolutionary War. From that period until the embargo preceding the War of 1812, the commercial prosperity of Salem was at the zenith. The three prominent merchants of that period were Elias Hasket Derby, William Gray, and Joseph Peabody. They owned a large proportion of the shipping of Salem, and their vessels penetrated every port and brought home the offerings of every clime. They made the name of Salem familiar wherever trade penetrated or civilization ventured, and the name of the Salem merchant a synonym for honor, intelligence, and vigor the world over.

Elias Hasket Derby was born in Salem, Aug. 16, 1739. At an early age, he entered the counting-room of his father, Richard Derby, before alluded to, and from 1760 to 1775 he took charge of his father's books and engaged extensively in the trade to the English and French islands. At the commencement of the Revolutionary War, he had seven sail of vessels in the trade of the West Indies. Many of the rich men clung to the mother country, but Mr. Derby espoused the cause of the colonists. His trade and that of Salem was ruined by the war. Indignant at the oppressive course of Great Britain, Mr. Derby united with his townsmen, and Salem fitted out at least 158 armed vessels during the Revolution. An account of the encounters of some of these vessels will be given later in this chapter.

From 1771 to 1785 the tonnage of Salem declined, and did not revive till the opening of the India trade, when it increased with astonishing rapidity, as appears by the following table: —

Tonnage of Salem. — In 1768, 7,913 tons; 1771, 9,223 tons; 1781, 8,652 tons; 1791, 9,031, tons;* 1800, 24,862 tons; 1807 (252 vessels), 43,570 tons.

* This table is from a list of Salem property, valued and returned to the General Court. A return from the custom-house puts the tonnage in 1791 at 14,570 tons, and in 1794 at 16,788 tons.

On the 15th of June, 1784, the barque "Light Horse" was sent by Mr. Derby to St. Petersburg, and opened the American trade with that place. For a short time Mr. Derby sent ships to Spain and the West Indies. But his daring and venturesome spirit was not content to follow only in the footsteps of his predecessors, and he turned his eyes to the Cape of Good Hope and the far-distant Indies, and determined to measure his strength with the incorporated companies of England and France and Holland, which then entirely monopolized the commerce of the East.

In November, 1784, he despatched the ship "Grand Turk," of 300 tons, Capt. Jonathan Ingersoll, on the first voyage from Salem to the Cape of Good Hope. Although this voyage was not very successful, it gave Mr. Derby an insight into the wants and prices of the Indian market, and Nov. 28, 1785, he cleared the same vessel under command of Ebenezer West, for the Isle of France, with the purpose to visit Canton; went to Isle of France, Batavia, and China, and returned to Salem in June, 1787, with a cargo of teas, silks, and nankeens, making the first voyage from New England to the Isle of France, India, and China.

In December, 1787, Mr. Derby again despatched his ship "Grand Turk" on a voyage to the Isle of France, under the charge of his son, Elias Hasket Derby, Jr. The "Grand Turk" was sold at a great profit, and the son remained at the Isle of France until the arrival, about a year afterwards, of the ship "Atlantic," when he proceeded to Surat, Bombay, and Calcutta, and first displayed our ensign at those ports. He bought at the Isle of France the ship "Peggy," sent her to Bombay for cotton, and then back to Salem, where she arrived June 21, 1789, with the first cargo of Bombay cotton. One of his vessels was the first to display the American flag at Siam, and another made the first voyage from America to Mocha.

In February, 1789, Mr. Derby sent, for the first time, the ship "Astrea" on a direct voyage to Canton. American ships were now following the lead of the "Grand Turk," and we find fifteen there in 1789, five of them belonging to Salem and four to Mr. Derby. In 1790 he imported into Salem 728,871 pounds of tea. In May, 1790, the brig "William and Henry," Capt. Benjamin Hodges, owned by Gray & Orne, entered this port with a cargo of tea, which was among the first of such cargoes imported in an American bottom. When Mr. Derby first engaged in the India trade there were no banks, and he rarely purchased or sold on credit. While his large ships were on their voyages to the East, he employed his brigs and schooners in making up the assortment for cargoes by sending them to Gottenburg and St. Petersburg for iron, duck, and hemp; to France, Spain, and Madeira for wine and lead; to the West Indies for spirits; and to New York, Philadelphia, and Richmond, for flour, provisions, iron, and tobacco. In the brief space of fourteen years, from 1785 to 1799, he made 125 voyages, by at least thirty-seven different vessels; of which voyages, forty-five were to the East Indies or China. Among the officers of his ships who were afterwards distinguished, were Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, late United States senator from Massachusetts, and Dr. Nathaniel Bowditch.

In 1798, the nation appeared to be on the eve of a war with France, and was without a navy. John Adams was president, and the administration in June, 1798, passed an Act authorizing the president to accept such vessels as the citizens might build for the national service, and pay for them in a six per cent. stock. Subscriptions were opened in Salem, and Mr. Derby and Mr. William Gray each subscribed $10,000, and William Orne and John Norris, each $5,000, and in a brief period some $74,700 was subscribed. Mr. Enos Briggs, who had built many of Mr. Derby's fastest ships, was instructed to build a frigate, to be called the "Essex." The keel was laid April 13, 1799, and September 30th following she was successfully launched. She proved the fastest ship in the navy, and captured property to the amount of two million dollars. Admiral Farragut served on the "Essex" as a midshipman.

Mr. Derby erected a costly edifice on the site now occupied by Derby Square, and laid out walks and gardens from Essex Street to a terrace which overhung the South River. This mansion he occupied but a few months before his death. Mr. Derby made one more brilliant voyage before he closed his career, although he did not live to ascertain its results. Hostilities between France and the United States had commenced when Mr. Derby sent a ship of 400 tons, called the "Mount Vernon," equipped with twenty guns, manned by fifty men, and loaded with sugar, to the Mediterranean. The cost of the cargo was $43,275. The vessel was attacked by the enemy, but escaped, and arrived safely in America with a cargo of silks and wines, and realized a net profit of $100,000. Before her arrival, Mr. Derby died, Sept. 8, 1799, and left an estate which exceeded a million dollars, and was supposed to be the largest fortune left in this country during the last century.

Among the many eminent merchants of Salem, perhaps Mr. Derby should be named first. He led the way to India and China, and opened for Salem that extensive foreign commerce which will always hold a prominent place in her history. We have given somewhat at length the account of Mr. Derby's career, because in no better way can we recite the commercial history of Salem for that period.

William Gray was a prominent merchant of Salem during Mr. Derby's later years. He was born in Lynn, June 27, 1760, and moved to Salem at an early age and entered the counting-room of Richard Derby. He became one of the largest ship-owners in Salem, and followed the lead of Mr. E. H. Derby in sending ships to Canton and ports in the East Indies. In 1805, Salem had fifty-four ships, eighteen barques, seventy-two brigs, and eighty-six schooners, five ships building, and forty-eight vessels round the Cape. In 1807, sixty ships, seven barques, forty-two brigs, forty schooners, and three sloops in the merchant service, and 100 fishermen and schooners; and of these William Gray owned fifteen ships, seven barques, thirteen brigs, and one schooner, or one-fourth of the tonnage of the place.

From 1801 to 1810 inclusive, the duties collected at Salem amounted to $7,272,633.31, and these were the years of Mr Gray's greatest activity. His former mansion is now the Essex House. About 1808, he left the Federal party and joined the Democrats, upholding Jefferson in the Embargo Act of that year. Party feeling ran high, and Mr. Gray, finding a growing coolness towards him among many of his former associates, left Salem in 1809 and moved to Boston, where in 1810 and 1811 he was chosen lieutenant-governor, and where he died, Nov. 3, 1825. During his life he accumulated a great property. As a merchant he was industrious, far-seeing, and energetic; as a citizen, patriotic and public-spirited, and he may well be classed among Salem's "princely merchants."

Joseph Peabody, contemporary with Mr. Gray, was an eminently successful merchant, who lived to see the decline of that commercial prosperity to which he had contributed so largely. He was born in Middleton, Dec. 9, 1757, and during the Revolutionary War he enlisted on a privateer, and made his first cruise in E. H. Derby's "Bunker Hill," and his second in the "Ranger." In 1782, he made a trip to Alexandria in the "Ranger," as second officer; and on his return the vessel was attacked by the enemy and Mr. Peabody was wounded. After peace was restored he was promoted to a command in the employ of the Messrs. Gardner, of Salem, and soon realized a sufficient sum to purchase the vessel known as the "Three Friends." He retired from the sea in 1791, and engaged actively in commerce. During the early years of the present century he built and owned eighty-three ships, which in every instance he freighted himself. His vessels made thirty-eight voyages to Calcutta, seventeen to Canton, thirty-two to Sumatra, forty-seven to St. Petersburg, and thirty to other ports of Europe before the War of 1812. He shipped at different times 7,000 seamen, and advanced thirty-five to the rank of master, who entered his employ as boys.

The disastrous effects of the embargo and war were shown in the diminution of vessels in the foreign trade of Salem, from 152 in 1807 to fifty-seven in 1815. In 1816, forty-two Indiamen had sailed and sixteen returned since the war. In 1817, Salem had thirty-two ships, two barques, and eighteen brigs in the India trade, and from 1808 to 1817 the arrivals from foreign ports were 936; which yielded an annual average of duties of $378,590. In 1821, 126 vessels were employed in foreign commerce, fifty-eight of them in the India trade, the largest being the ship "China," H. Putnam, master, 370 tons.

A few facts relating to the connection of Mr. Peabody about this time with the China trade are interesting. In 1825 and 1826, the "Leander," a little brig of 223 tons, brought into Salem cargoes from Canton, which paid duties amounting, respectively, one to $86,847.47, and the other to $92,392.94. In 1829, 1830, and 1831, the "Sumatra," a ship of only 287 tons, brought cargoes from the same port, paying duties of $128,363.13, in the first case; $138,480.34, in the second; and $140,761.96, in the third,—the five voyages paying duties to an aggregate of nearly $587,000. No other vessel has entered Salem paying $90,000 in duties. Both brig and ship were owned by Mr. Peabody, and were commanded on each voyage by the same gentleman, Capt. Charles Roundy, who still lives in Salem, a good type of that class of master mariners whose energy and fearlessness carried the name of Salem to the remotest ports, and whose uprightness and business integrity made that name an honored and respected one in those far-off countries. Among the commanders of Mr. Peabody's

vessels still living in Salem, are Charles Roundy, Oliver Thayer, Joseph Winn, Peter Silver, and Thomas M. Saunders. His death occurred at Salem, Jan. 5, 1844.

The enterprise and vigor displayed by Salem merchants, in seeking new ports for trade, is something almost unparalleled. Reynolds, who made a tour round the world in the U. S. vessel "Potomac," writing of Salem, in 1835, says: "When peace arrived, and our independence was acknowledged, the merchants of Salem were among the first to explore new channels of trade, disdaining to confine themselves to the narrow track of a Colonial commerce. With a few erroneous maps and charts, a sextant, and 'Guthrie's Grammar,' they swept round the Cape of Good Hope, exhausted the markets of the Isles of France and Bourbon, and pushing onward entered the Straits of Babelmandel and secured the trade of the Red Sea. They brought from Madras, Calcutta and Bombay the best of their staples, and had their choice of the products of Ceylon and Sumatra."

Sumatra Trade.— Salem sent the first vessel that ever sailed direct from this country to Sumatra. In the year 1793 Capt. Jonathan Carnes, of Salem, being at the port of Bencoolen, learned that pepper grew wild on the north-western coast of Sumatra. On his return to Salem he made known his discovery to Mr. Jonathan Peele, who immediately built a schooner, and gave Carnes the command. The vessel was called the "Rajah," and was of 130 tons burden, carrying four guns and ten men. In 1795 he set sail for Sumatra, the destination of the vessel and the object of the voyage being kept a profound secret.* The vessel was absent eighteen months, during which time her owner, Mr. Peele, had no tidings from her. At last she enters Salem harbor, with a cargo of pepper in bulk, the first to be so imported into this country. This cargo was sold at a profit of seven hundred per cent. Such an extraordinary voyage created great excitement among the merchants of Salem, and they were all anxious to discover in what part of the Eastern world the cargo had been procured. But the matter still remained a secret. Capt. Carnes was preparing for another voyage; and the Salem merchants, determined if possible to penetrate the mystery, despatched several vessels to the port of Bencoolen, where it was known Carnes got his first knowledge of the trade. They were not successful, however, and had to make up their voyages in some of the other ports of India. But the secret voyages to Sumatra did not long continue. By the first of the present century the mystery was penetrated, and the whole ground open to competition.

In 1792 Nathaniel West built and despatched the schooner "Patty," under command of Edward West, from Salem to the East; and she was the first American vessel to visit Batavia. The ship "Friendship," Israel Williams, master, owned by Pierce & Waite, sailed from Salem Aug. 18, 1797, for Batavia and the coast of Sumatra, and left Batavia for the United States March 4, 1798. The ship "Fame," Briggs, master, sailed from Salem to Cochin China, and Manila Jan 18, 1803. The ship "Three Friends," Stewart, master, made a voyage from Salem to Batavia in the year 1801. The ship "Active," G. Nichols, master, arrived on the coast of Sumatra May 9, 1801. The ship "Recovery," Luther Dane, master, sailed from Salem for Sumatra June 15, 1802. The ship "Putnam" sailed from Salem to Sumatra Nov. 21, 1802, and by this time the trade with this island had increased, so that during that year it was visited by some thirty American vessels, seeking cargoes of pepper. From that period up to the time of the embargo, previous to the War of 1812, the trade on the coast of Sumatra was regularly prosecuted by merchants from several ports in the United States — Salem always taking the lead.

Mocha Trade. — On the 26th of April, 1798, Capt. Joseph Ropes, in the ship "Recovery," left Salem, bound direct for Mocha, Arabia Felix, with $50,000 in specie, and arrived in that port on the 9th of September. This was the first American vessel that ever displayed the stars and stripes in that part of the world. The captain says that the arrival of the strange ship was viewed with great interest by the authorities, who could not divine from whence she came, and made frequent inquiries to know how many moons she had been coming.

Madagascar Trade. — The American trade with the Island of Madagascar was opened by Nathaniel L. Rogers, an enterprising and eminent merchant of Salem. He sent the "Beulah" there about 1818, and his vessels were trading about that time at some ports on the east coast of Africa, and through the Mozambique Channel. Zanzibar was then a small settlement, and no trade was carried on there — gum-copal, the principal staple, being carried to India by the Sultan's vessels to be cleaned.

* The "Rajah" cleared at Salem Nov. 3, 1795, for India, having on board 2 pipes of brandy, 58 cases of gin, 12 tons of iron, 2 hhds. of tobacco, and 2 boxes salmon.

Zanzibar Trade. — As Salem had been first at Sumatra and Madagascar, so she was first at Zanzibar. But little of the uncleaned gum-copal, which was the staple article of export, was brought to this country until after the "Black Warrior," belonging largely to N. L. Rogers, and commanded by John Bertram, was there in 1831. Mr. Bertram arrived in Zanzibar while the Sultan's frigate was lying in the harbor ready to carry the gum-copal to India, and made a bargain for what was on hand and for future cargoes. The "Black Warrior" arrived in Salem, in 1832, with the first large quantity of uncleaned gum-copal that had been imported into this country. For some time after, the gum-copal trade was monopolized by Salem merchants, and all the gum-copal used was distributed to Europe and other countries from the port of Salem.

But the "Black Warrior," although taking the first large cargo from Zanzibar, was not the first vessel to open trade with that port. The brig "Ann," Charles Millett, master, and owned by Henry Prince & Son, left Salem March 12, 1826, for Mocha. When she arrived there in June, Capt. Millett found a great scarcity of breadstuffs, and, leaving a clerk in charge of the business, he left Mocha for Zanzibar and Lamo, where he obtained a cargo of small grain, and purchased ivory and other articles for the homeward cargo. The "Ann" went from Zanzibar to Mocha, and from thence to Salem, arriving May 9, 1827. This was the opening of American trade with Zanzibar. The same vessel made a second voyage to Zanzibar, leaving Salem Aug. 9, 1827, and arriving home April 10, 1829, having visited many new ports on the east coast of Africa.

On the 12th of January, 1825, the brig "Laurel," Lovett, master, owned by Robert Brookhouse, left Salem for South America. Finding markets dull, the captain sailed for ports east of the Cape of Good Hope; and about the 10th of July left Port Louis, Mauritius, for Zanzibar, stopping at the Island of Johanna on the way. This was the first time the American flag was displayed in that island, and the king gave a reception in honor of the event. The vessel arrived at Zanzibar the 20th of July, 1825, and, although not the first to open trade, seems to be the first to have displayed the American flag in that port. From Zanzibar the "Laurel" proceeded to Mombas, and from there to Patta, Lamo, and other small places, in all of which she appears to have displayed the American flag for the first time. The "Laurel" arrived in Salem on her return passage June 3, 1826.

The trade with Zanzibar, Madagascar, Arabia, and the east coast of Africa has been continued by Salem merchants from the summer of 1826, when the "Ann" was there, to the present day. Michael Shepard who was born in Salem, Sept. 4, 1785, and died there, Oct. 10, 1856, was engaged quite extensively in this trade. In 1846, Salem had nine vessels there. The firm of John Bertram continue the trade to the present day, but their vessels no longer enter the port of Salem. The last arrival at Salem from Zanzibar was the bark "Glide," May 1, 1870, and this was also the last arrival at Salem of any vessel from beyond the Cape of Good Hope.

South American Trade.—The trade between Salem and South America has been quite extensive. On the 25th of August, 1789, the schooner "Lark" arrived from Surinam with sugar and cocoa, and April 24, 1798, the brig "Katy" cleared for Cayenne. The brig "Laurel," before mentioned as belonging to Robert Brookhouse, was at Brazil in 1825. Salem vessels were found in all the eastern ports: in Cayenne, Para, Rio Janeiro, Rio Grande, Montevideo, Buenos Ayres, and on the coast of Patagonia. Michael Shepard and John Bertram sent vessels to Para, between 1845 and 1857, and Mr. Bertram was on the coast of Patagonia about three years, purchasing and shipping hides, returning to Salem in 1829. In 1846, Salem had fifteen vessels engaged in the South American trade. The last arrival at Salem from a South American port was the schooner "Mattie F.," which was entered from Cayenne, by Messrs. C. E. & B. H. Fabens, March 21, 1877. The ancestors of the Messrs. Fabens, for several generations, have been engaged in trade between Salem and Cayenne, but the business has been removed to Boston, and the entry of the "Mattie F." closed the foreign trade of Salem.

West Coast of Africa Trade.—If the natives on the West Coast of Africa have been temperate, they have been so in spite of the efforts of the Salem merchants to supply them with the materials for intemperance. The trade opened early, and Oct. 6, 1789, the schooner "Sally," and Oct. 8, 1789, the schooner "Polly," cleared for Senegal, each with a cargo of New England rum; and from that time forward, Salem has contributed largely to spread a knowledge of the virtues and good qualities of New England rum, of the astounding effects of gunpowder, and of the consoling influences of Virginia tobacco, among the savage tribes of the West Coast. The Salem trade with this

country has been quite extensive; Robert Brookhouse, Edward D. Kimball, Chas. Hoffman, Wm. Hunt, and others having been engaged in it. The last arrival at Salem from the West Coast of Africa was the brig "Ann Elizabeth," from Sierra Leone, which was entered by Charles Hoffman, in July, 1873. Salem merchants are still engaged in this trade, but their vessels do not enter the harbor of Salem.

Feejee Island Trade.—The enterprise of Salem merchants seems not to have been confined by the limits of the civilized world, but to have extended to all habitable countries, however remote and however peopled. Salem was as familiar a name to the cannibals of the Feejee Islands, during the first half of the present century, as it was to the savages of Africa and Madagascar. In many of those wild countries, the untutored inhabitants thought Salem comprised all the remainder of the outer world about which they knew so little. Capt. William P. Richardson, of Salem, was at the Feejee Islands early in the present century, and when Commodore Wilkes was there on his famous exploring expedition, he found Salem vessels at the islands on his arrival, and their masters familiar with the shoals of the harbors, and the habits of the natives. One of the vessels of the squadron, the "Peacock," is in danger of being cast away, and Salem, in the person of Capt. J. H. Eagleston, takes the helm, and brings her safely into port. This was on the 12th of July, 1840. The commodore, in his report to the government, says: "The squadron is much indebted to Capt. Eagleston for his attention and assistance. I am also indebted to him for observations relating to gales."

Capt. Eagleston, in 1834, had made three voyages to these islands. He sailed for Stephen C. Phillips, who was a prominent merchant of Salem, from about 1828 to the time of his death in 1857. Mr. Phillips was largely engaged in trade with the Feejee Islands, with Manila and other Eastern ports. In 1846, Salem had six vessels engaged in trade with the Feejee Islands. The usual voyage was from Salem to the Feejee Islands, where the vessel would remain collecting the Beche-de-mer, a sort of sea-slug found on reefs and in shallow water, and after drying and preparing them for the market, carry them either to Manila to exchange for sugar and hemp, or to China to exchange for tea; the voyage usually consuming about two years. There are many curious articles at the Peabody Academy of Science, at Salem, which were brought from the Feejee Islands during these early voyages.

Australian Trade.—Wherever a new channel of trade was opened for Americans, Salem was either the first to open it, or her vessels followed closely after the pioneers. She was found asking for admission to the port of Sydney, in 1832, and by a special order of the council, passed that year, the ship "Tybee," Charles Millett, master, was allowed to enter that port. This vessel was owned by Nathaniel L. Rogers, and others, and was the first American vessel to enter the ports of Australia.

California Trade.—A letter giving definite information of the discovery of gold in California, reached Salem in October, 1848. The brig "Mary and Ellen" was then fitting for sea. A cargo suitable for the California trade was at once put on board, owned by Stephen C. Phillips and others, and the brig, under command of Capt. J. H. Eagleston, was cleared Oct. 27, 1848, for the Sandwich Islands *via* California. Salem again takes the lead, for this was the first vessel to sail for California from Massachusetts after the gold discovery. Both vessel and cargo were sold in California. The first vessel that cleared from Massachusetts for San Francisco direct, with an assorted cargo and passengers, was the barque "Eliza," of Salem, loaded by John Bertram and others, and commanded by Capt. A. S. Perkins. She left Salem, Dec. 23, 1848, and arrived at San Francisco, June 1, 1849. Alfred Peabody, of Salem, was among the passengers, and upon his arrival he found that Capt. Eagleston had already sold the "Mary and Ellen," and her cargo.

Foreign Commerce.—Salem merchants still own a large amount of tonnage, but their vessels never enter the port of Salem, and their business is transacted largely in Boston and New York. Where once vessels were arriving, sometimes two in a single day, from India or other remote ports, but a solitary schooner found her way into Salem harbor from a foreign port, other than those from the British Provinces, during the year ending, June 30, 1878, and she brought a cargo of coal from England. At the Custom House, where in the *week* ending Sept. 15, 1798, seven Salem vessels, three ships, one barque, and three brigs cleared for Copenhagen, there was cleared during the *year* ending June 30, 1878, one vessel to the West Indies, and one to Liverpool; the single entry and the two clearances being in the month of December. The whole number of foreign entries for that year were seventy-nine, of which eight were American vessels, and the total tonnage was 8,183. The number of foreign clearances was ninety-six, of which nine were American vessels, the total tonnage being 10,090.

The Coasting Trade.—While Salem has lost her foreign trade, the harbor of Salem is not entirely barren of vessels; for a large amount of tonnage, larger even than when she was at the height of her commercial prosperity, engaged in the coasting trade, brings coal to Salem for distribution to the mills of Lowell and Lawrence. In 1870, there entered the harbor, 1,812 coasting vessels, having an aggregate tonnage of 213,514; and 1,237 vessels, measuring 203,798 tons, entered during the year ending June 30, 1878. Some eight or ten years ago, there was a line of steam packets between Salem and New York, run by the Salem and New York Steamship Company.

Salem Merchants.—Among the prominent Salem merchants, whose names have not been before alluded to, were John Turner, who died in 1742, Edward Kitchen, and Thomas Lee, who died July 14, 1747. These men followed Philip English. The name of Pickman has been intimately connected with the commerce of Salem. Benjamin Pickman, who was born in 1706, and died in 1773, was very successful as a merchant. He built and occupied the house which stands opposite the head of St. Peter's Street, and has at present a number of stores built in front of it. His trade was mainly with the West Indies. Timothy Orne, who died July 14, 1767; Joseph Cabot, who died Nov., 1781; William Orne, who was born Feb. 4, 1751, and died Oct. 14, 1815; George Crowninshield, who was born Aug. 6, 1734, and died June 17, 1815, and who lived in a house on the site of the present custom-house; George Crowninshield, Jr., who was born May 28, 1766, and died Nov. 26, 1817, and who equipped the famous vessel know as "Cleopatra's Barge" for a pleasure trip to the Mediterranean,—a floating palace, which excited wonder even at Genoa for her beauty, luxury, and magnificence; Thomas Perkins, who was born Apr. 2, 1758, and died Nov. 24, 1830; Nathaniel West, who was born Jan. 31, 1756, and died Dec. 19, 1851; Joseph Lee, born May, 1744, and died in 1831; Pickering Dodge, Gideon Tucker, Robert Stone, Dudley L. Pickman, Jerathmael Peirce, and Aaron Waite—were all prominently connected with the commerce of Salem, and their individual careers would well repay the labors of the biographer.

John Bertram.—This brief recital of Salem's commercial record should not be closed without some reference to the last of the merchants of Salem, whose vessels arrived in her harbor from ports beyond the Cape of Good Hope. It is a curious coincidence, that our first merchant, Philip English, is supposed to have been born in the Isle of Jersey, and that our last merchant, John Bertram, first saw the light on that same island, Feb. 11, 1796. Mr. Bertram came to Salem at an early age; and in December, 1813, we find him sailing from Boston in the schooner "Monkey" as cabin-boy. He arrived in Charleston, S. C., early in 1814, and left there in an American privateer in March. The privateer was captured, and he was taken to Bermuda and confined in the Bermuda and Barbadoes prison-ships. Having been born on the Isle of Jersey, and being familiar with the French language, he was released, as a Frenchman, after which he enlisted in another American privateer, was again taken prisoner, and carried to England, where he arrived in April, 1815, after peace had been declared.

In 1824, with P. I. Farnham and others, Mr. Bertram purchased the schooner "General Brewer," and, in company with Capt. W. B. Smith, sailed for St. Helena. When a few days out, he met the brig "Elizabeth," of Salem, Story, master, bound also for St. Helena. Capt. Story came on board the "General Brewer," and took tea with Capt. Bertram: and each was desirous that the other should not know his destination. They each announced themselves as bound for Pernambuco. Capt. Bertram suspected, however, that the "Elizabeth" was bound to St. Helena, and he was extremely anxious to arrive there first, and dispose of his cargo. As night came on, in order to lighten his vessel, he had his entire deck-load of lumber passed aft and thrown overboard, and by crowding on all sail, day and night, he arrived at St. Helena, disposed of his cargo, and was coming out of the harbor just as the "Elizabeth" arrived. From St. Helena, Capt. Bertram went to Pernambuco, on his way to Salem. After his return home, he purchased the "Velocity," of 119 tons burden, and, with Capt. W. B. Smith, again set sail for St. Helena. He went from there to the Cape of Good Hope, and thence to the Rio Grande and the coast of Patagonia, at which latter place he remained, engaged in trading for hides, while Capt. Smith made trips up and down the coast in the "Velocity." After being at Patagonia for some time, Capt. Bertram and Capt. Smith both sailed for Pernambuco in the "Velocity," and there found Capt. Thomas Downing, of Salem, in the brig "Combine," of 133 tons burden. They purchased the "Combine" of Capt. Downing, and

drew lots to determine which of them should return to Patagonia, and which should go home to Salem. It fell to the lot of Capt. Bertram to return to Patagonia, which he did: Capt. Smith coming back to Salem in the "Velocity." After trading for a while on the coast, Capt. Bertram returned to Salem in the "Combine." He afterwards made another trip to Patagonia in the brig "St. Michaels," of 120 tons burden. He was on the coast of Patagonia for about three years.

On his final return to Salem, the firm of Nathaniel L. Rogers & Bros. offered him an interest in the ship "Black Warrior," of 231 tons burden, and he sailed in command of her from Salem in December, 1830, for Madagascar, Zanzibar, and Mocha. Capt. Henry F. King, of Salem, was with him on this voyage. He loaded, as has been before stated, with a large quantity of gum-copal in bulk, and established a trade there which he has continued to the present time. He returned from this voyage March 31, 1832. Mr. Bertram has been connected in this business at various times with Michael Shepard, Nathaniel Weston, and Andrew Ward.

From 1845 to 1857 he was trading at Para. He sent, in December, 1848, one of the first vessels from Massachusetts to California after the gold discovery, and the favorable accounts he received from her induced him to send three vessels from Salem the next spring with full cargoes, and two others shortly after. He also engaged in the California trade with Messrs. Glidden & Williams, of Boston. He has been connected with the building and management of several railroads in the West. Mr. Bertram founded, and has maintained at his own expense, the "Old Men's Home," and he was largely instrumental in establishing the Salem Hospital. As a merchant, he was enterprising and energetic; as a citizen, public-spirited and charitable. His name worthily closes the long list of eminent merchants who have given Salem a history unparalleled in the annals of commerce.

Salem's Commercial Record. — The commercial history of Salem reads like a tale of fiction. We of to-day can hardly realize that she led the way from New England round the Cape of Good Hope to the Isle of France, and India, and China; that her vessels were the first from this country to display the American flag and open trade with St. Petersburg, and Zanzibar, and Sumatra; with Calcutta and Bombay; with Batavia and Arabia; with Madagascar and Australia: and yet such is the plain story of her achievements. The adventures of her brave officers in unknown seas; their encounters with pirates and savage tribes; their hairbreadth escapes; their tales of shipwreck, and of imprisonment among the Algerines, and in the prisons of France and Spain; and the strange and thrilling incidents of their early voyages,—would make a tale which even the imaginings of romance could hardly parallel.

But the commercial prosperity of Salem is a thing of the past. Her triumphs on the seas have passed into history, and the record is closed. Derby Street no longer presents a scene of bustle and activity,—of sailors greeting friends on their arrival from the far East, and of others preparing for departure; the shop windows no longer display curious trinkets and odd ventures gathered from all quarters of the world; the boarding-houses where the returning sailor found a home, with the inevitable clothing-shop attached, where he was invited to spend his hard-earned wages, have been a long time closed; and the rope-walks, the sail-lofts, and the ship chandlers' shops are deserted and abandoned. The foreign commerce of Salem, once her pride and glory, has spread its white wings and sailed away forever. But the traditions of the past will always make a bright page in her history, and the motto on her municipal seal, "To the furthest port of the rich East," scattered far and wide as she each year sends forth her official documents, will serve to perpetuate and hand down to posterity her brilliant commercial record.

The Custom-House.—Hand in hand with commerce come the collectors and officers of the customs revenue. Before 1819, and during the palmy days of Salem commerce, there was no government building for the accommodation of such officers. Salem has been established as a port of entry at least since 1658. In 1663, Hillard Veren was collector; and in 1683, Marblehead, Beverly, Gloucester, Ipswich, Rowley, Newbury, and Salisbury are annexed to the port of Salem by order of the Court of Assistants, and it is decreed that this port and Boston shall be lawful ports in this Colony, where "all ships and other vessels shall lade or unlade, any of the plantations enumerated goods, or other goods from foreign ports, and nowhere else, on penalty of the confiscation of such ship or vessel, with her goods and tackle, as shall lade or unlade elsewhere."

At an early period, commerce seems to have centred about Creek Street and the locality of the present Eastern Railroad Station. This is the supposed location of the "Port House on the South river" mentioned in an order of the Quarterly Court in 1636. All the "cannowes of the South Syde, are to be brought before the Port House att the same time to be viewed by the Surveiors." These "cannowes" were used for transporting passengers to North and South Salem before the days of bridges, and in them they sometimes went fowling "two leagues to sea." There was another port house on North River, and much business was done in former years on that side of the town.

The Custom House for thirty-four years was in a building on the corner of Gedney Court, erected in 1645, and known as the French house, having been tenanted by French families. The customs officers often transacted business at their homes. In 1789, it was on the site of the present bank building in Central Street. Maj. Hiller was the collector. In 1805, it was removed, under Col. Lee, to the Central Building on the opposite side of the street, where a carved eagle and shield, lately restored, still mark the spot. In 1807, it was in Essex Street for a time, opposite Plummer Hall; in 1811, it was on the corner of Essex and Newbury streets; and in 1813, in the Central Building again, where Col. Lee resided, and whence, in 1819, it was removed to the government building erected for the purpose at the head of Derby Wharf, where it now remains. This building stands upon land bought of the heirs of George Crowninshield, and was the site of the Crowninshield mansion-house, which was removed to make way for the present structure. It was "intended to accommodate a hoped-for increase in the commercial prosperity of the place—hopes destined never to be realized—and was built a world too large for any necessary purpose, even at the time when India was a new region, and only Salem knew the way thither." This custom-house is a substantial, two-story brick building, with a large warehouse in the rear, the whole surmounted by a cupola, from which the inspectors can watch for incoming vessels. It is now out of all proportion to the business of the port, and the time is not far distant when it will be abandoned for some smaller quarters.

There has been collected in imposts at the port of Salem, since the organization of the Union in 1789, the sum of more than twenty-five millions of dollars. From 1790 to 1799, inclusive, 1,466 vessels in our foreign commerce entered, which paid annually, on an average, $249,041.25; from 1801 to 1810, inclusive, the duties collected amounted to $7,272,633.31, the years 1804–5–6–7 showing an average of about one million each; from 1808 to 1817, the foreign arrivals were 936, and the average annual duties, $378,579.78; from 1818 to 1827, inclusive, 1,139 arrivals, paying annual duties of $463,978.29; from 1828 to 1834, inclusive, the arrivals were 704, and the average annual duties, $419,230.77. The duties for the quarter ending Dec. 31, 1807, when the embargo was officially announced at Salem, were $511,000, which is the largest amount ever collected at Salem in a single quarter. The goods were imported in 22 ships, 3 barques, 19 brigs, and 23 schooners. Among them 17 vessels were from Calcutta, and 6 from Sumatra. The Sumatra vessels landed three million pounds of pepper. In 1793, 12 ships were owned in Salem. In 1807, 60; and in 1833, only 29. In 1825, there were 32 ships, 5 barques, 95 brigs, 60 schooners, and 6 sloops owned in Salem, measuring 34,224 tons;—the ship "Nile," of 400 tons, was the largest; and in 1828, 30 ships, 102 brigs, 8 barques, and 30 schooners,—the largest being the ship "Arabella," Foster, master, 404 tons. In 1833, there were 111 vessels engaged in the foreign trade of Salem. In 1868, there was collected in duties the sum of $118,114.37, of which $30,000 was paid in a single month. In 1878, the whole amount collected was only about $11,000, of which about $3,600 was for direct imports.

Collectors of Customs.—The successive collectors since the Revolution have been Warwick Palfray (born, Oct., 1715; died, Oct. 10, 1797), from 1776 to 1784; Joseph Hiller (born, March 26, 1748; died, Feb. 9, 1814), 1784 to 1802; William R. Lee (born, 1744; died in office, Oct. 26, 1824), 1802 to 1824; James Miller, 1825 to 1849; Ephraim F. Miller, 1849 to 1857; William B. Pike, 1857 to 1861; Willard P. Phillips, 1861 to 1865; Robert S. Rantoul, 1865 to 1869; Charles W. Palfray, 1869 to 1873; Charles H. Odell, 1873 to the present time.

Deputy Collectors.—The deputy collectors, under the present organization, have been: Charles Cleveland, from 1789 to 1802; William W. Oliver, 1803 to 1839; John B. Knight, 1839 to 1843; Ephraim F. Miller, 1843 to 1849; J. Linton Waters, 1849 to 1854; Henry E. Jenks, 1854 to 1857; Chipman Ward, 1857 to 1859; Henry Derby, 1859 to 1861; Ephraim F. Miller, 1861 to 1864;

Charles S. Osgood, 1864 to 1873; J. Frank Dalton, 1873 to the present time.

Surveyors.—The surveyors during the same period have been Bartholomew Putnam, from 1789 to 1809; George Hodges, 1809 to 1817; John Saunders, 1818 to 1830; James Dalrymple, 1830 to 1834; Joseph Noble, 1834 to 1838; Edward Palfray, 1838 to 1841; Stephen Daniels, 1841 to 1843; Nehemiah Brown, 1843 to 1846; Nathaniel Hawthorne, 1846 to 1849; Allen Putnam, 1849 to 1854; Lewis Josselyn, 1854 to 1857; Ebenezer Dodge, 1857 to 1861; William C. Waters, 1861 to 1863; Charles F. Williams, 1863 to 1865; Joseph Moseley, 1865 to 1871; Charles D. Howard, 1871 to 1875, when the office was abolished.

Naval Officers.—The naval officers have been William Pickman, from 1789 to 1803; Samuel Ward, 1803 to 1812; Henry Elkins, 1812 to 1829; John Swasey, 1829 to 1842; Abraham True, 1842 to 1846; John D. Howard, 1846 to 1849; William Brown, 1849 to 1853; Charles Millett, 1853 to 1858; John Ryan, 1858 to 1860; Joseph A. Dalton, 1861 to 1865, when the office was abolished.

Nathaniel Hawthorne.—The two most prominent names in this list are those of Nathaniel Hawthorne and James Miller. The one the unequalled master of romance; the other "New England's most distinguished soldier." Nathaniel Hawthorne was born in Salem, July 4, 1804, in the house now numbered twenty-one on Union Street. He was a descendant of Maj. William Hathorne, who came with Gov. Winthrop in the "Arbella." The name is an old and honored one in Salem, and prominently connected with its early history. On the death of his father, in 1808, he lived for a time with his maternal grandfather, Richard Manning, on Herbert Street. For a year he lived in Raymond, Maine, and then returned to Salem. He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1825, in the same class with the poet Longfellow. He was appointed weigher and ganger at Boston in 1838, and was removed in 1841 for political reasons; he was surveyor at Salem from 1846 to 1849; and consul of the United States at Liverpool from 1852 to 1856. The fame of Hawthorne as a writer was of very slow growth. In 1828, he published anonymously the romance, "Fanshawe," and in 1837, "Twice-told Tales."

In 1840, after having been a resident of Lenox, as well as of Concord, he drifted back to the old family mansion in Union Street, where, writing in the solitude of his chamber, he says: "Here I sit, in my old accustomed chamber, where I used to sit in days gone by. Here I have written many tales. If ever I have a biographer he ought to make mention of this chamber in my memoirs, because here my mind and character were formed; and here I sat a long, long time, waiting patiently for the world to know me, and sometimes wondering why it did not know me sooner, or whether it would ever know me at all — at least till I were in my grave." Some years later he published the "Scarlet Letter," and there was no longer any doubt whether the world would ever know him. This romance has become one of the classics of our language, and the subtle genius of the great story-teller has reflected a halo of interest round the Custom-House which brings curious travellers from far and wide to visit it. The room he occupied; the desk on which he wrote; the stencil-plate with which he put his name on packages; the room in which he tells us he found the manuscript, telling the sad, strange story of Hester Prynne, were, until a few years, preserved and examined with interest by tourists. The Custom House was refurnished in 1873, and his desk was deposited by his successor in office with the Essex Institute.

About 1849 he removed to Lenox, and there wrote the "House of the Seven Gables." The scene is located in Salem. The work added to his growing fame as an author. The house which he is supposed to refer to is situated on Turner Street, and is now occupied by Horace Ingersoll. Among his later works are the "Blithedale Romance," and "Marble Faun." The one a reminiscence of his residence at Brook Farm, the other of his abode in Italy. He died in Plymouth, N. H., May 19, 1864, while making a short journey, in the company of his friend and classmate, President Franklin Pierce.

James Miller was born in Peterboro, N. H., in 1776. He was bred to the law and left the courts for the camp, on being appointed by Jefferson, in 1808, a major in the 4th U. S. Infantry. He was with Gen. Harrison throughout his famous Western campaign of 1811; then followed Brownstown, Chippewa, and Lundy's Lane, and from the last dates his national fame and his brigadier's commission. At that battle Maj. Gen. Brown was in command, and was disabled, and Scott of the First Brigade was also disabled. It was plain that a certain hill, whose frowning front bristled with artillery, was the key to victory. At this juncture Col. Miller was called on to storm the work. "I'll try, sir!" was Miller's reply, and as he says, with his regiment reduced to less than three hundred men, he at once obeyed the order. Two regiments ordered to his support quailed and turned back. "Col. Miller," says the official records, "without regard to this occurrence, advanced steadily and carried the height." "Not one man at the cannon," says he, in writing to his wife, "was left to put fire to them." The memorable words, "I'll try, sir!" were at once embossed upon the buttons of his shattered regiment, which was presented with a captured gun for distinguished gallantry. On the following November Congress voted him a gold medal bearing his likeness, his famous words, and the names of Chippewa, Niagara, and Fort Erie. He was also presented with a sword by the State of New York. Gen. Miller was governor of Arkansas Territory in 1819. He died July 7, 1851, in Temple, N. H.

Mr. Cleveland and Mr. Oliver are remarkable among the deputy collectors. The former was born in Norwich, Conn., June 21, 1772, and died June 5, 1872, coming within sixteen days of living out the century. At the age of ninety-eight he attended Mr. Oliver's funeral, who died at ninety-one. Mr. Oliver was connected with the Custom-House forty-six years. He was born in Salem, Dec. 10, 1778, and died Dec. 29, 1869.

Jonathan Pue, now immortalized in the "Scarlet Letter," became "searcher and surveyor" in 1752, and died suddenly in office, March 24, 1760. In 1734 William Fairfax, whose name was afterwards pleasantly associated with that of Washington, left the collectorship of this port and removed to Virginia, and it was upon the petition of James Cockle, collector of Salem, for a warrant to search for smuggled molasses, heard at the Old State House in Boston, February, 1761, that James Otis made his immortal plea against writs of assistance.

Salem Privateers in the Revolution.—The colonists in the War of the Revolution were almost destitute of ships of war. They were engaged in a struggle with one of the most powerful maritime nations, without the means to cope with their enemy on the high seas. Their own commerce was ruined, and it was essential to their success that provision be made for making the commerce of Great Britain suffer, in common with them, the fortunes and vicissitudes of war. Boston and New York were occupied and nearly ruined by the enemy, and Newport, Philadelphia, Savannah, and Charleston soon share their fate. The main reliance of the country to preserve its intercourse with Europe, and for supplies of arms and military stores, was on the shipping of Salem, and a cluster of small ports around it, including Marblehead and Beverly.

Salem at this crisis showed the same patriotic spirit which she has always exhibited when the country in its need and distress has called on her for assistance. The merchants and mariners of Salem turned their vessels into men of war, equipped them with cannon, manned them with gallant seamen, and sent them out to meet Great Britain on the deep. During this contest there were equipped and sent out from this port at least 158 vessels, manned by several thousand brave sailors from Salem. They mounted more than 2,000 guns, carrying on an average twelve or fourteen each. The number of prizes taken by Salem armed vessels during the Revolution was about 445. About fifty-four of the privateers and letters-of-marque were captured. Among the gallant officers who commanded the privateers of Salem, were Jonathan Haraden, Thomas Benson, John Carnes, Benjamin Crowninshield, John Derby, John Felt, Simon Forrester, William Gray, Thomas Perkins, S. Tucker, and Joseph Waters.

Jonathan Haraden. — The daring deeds performed by these men deserve a more extended notice than history accords them. A type of the character of Salem commanders may be found in Jonathan Haraden. He was one of the bravest officers and best seamen who sailed from Salem in the Revolution. His desperate actions and wonderful triumphs, his consummate courage and serene intrepidity, entitle him to a place in history by the side of Paul Jones and Decatur, and Farragut and Cushing. The equal of these in bravery and daring, his memory should be cherished as one of the dauntless heroes of the Revolution. He was born in Gloucester, and died in Salem, in 1803, in his fifty-ninth year. He came to Salem when a boy. Soon after hostilities commenced between Great Britain and her Colonies, Captain Haraden was appointed a lieutenant in the "Tyrannicide," Capt. Fiske, of Salem, which vessel captured a royal cutter, bound from Halifax to New York. Lieut. Haraden soon rose to the post of captain, and took command of the "Gen. Pickering," a Salem ship of 180 tons, carrying fourteen six pounders and a crew of forty-five men and boys. In this ship he sailed from Salem in the spring of 1780, with a cargo of sugar for Bilboa, then a famous resort for American privateers. On his passage, May 29, 1780, he was attacked by a British cutter of twenty guns, and beat her off after a contest of about

two hours. Upon entering the Bay of Biscay, he fell in with a British privateer of twenty-two guns and sixty men. Having approached in the night, unobserved, he ran alongside and commanded her through his trumpet to strike to an American frigate or he would sink her. The privateer struck her flag, and the captain, when he came on board the "Pickering," was mortified to think he had submitted to such inferior force. Mr. John Carnes, of Salem, was put in charge of the prize.

As the vessels approached Bilboa they met a sail coming out, which the captured captain said was the "Achilles," a privateer from London, of forty-two guns and 140 men, and added that he knew her force. Capt. Haraden coolly replied, "I shan't run from her." The British ship first retook the prize and placed a crew on board, and, night coming on, deferred her attack on Capt. Haraden till morning. As the day dawned, June 4, 1780, the "Achilles" bore down upon the "Pickering," and Capt. Haraden placed his vessel in condition for action. After a desperate contest of about three hours' duration, the British ship was obliged to seek safety in flight, notwithstanding her greatly superior force. Capt. Haraden gave chase, but the "Achilles" was light, outsailed the "Pickering," and escaped. He then returned, coolly recaptured his prize, and carried her in safety into Bilboa.

The battle was fought so near the Spanish coast that an immense concourse of spectators, amounting, as was supposed, to nearly one hundred thousand, assembled along the shore, in boats, and on the hill-sides, during the action, and before Capt. Haraden with his prize had been at anchor half an hour, one could walk a mile from his ship by stepping from one boat to another. So great was the admiration with which the battle and victory were witnessed that when the captain landed he was surrounded by this vast throng of strangers and borne in triumph into the city, where he was welcomed with public and unbounded honors. The late venerable Robert Cowan, who was with him, in this action, said that the "Gen. Pickering" in comparison with her antagonist, "looked like a long-boat by the side of a ship," and "that he fought with a determination that seemed superhuman," and that although in the most exposed positions, "where the shot flew around him in thousands, he was all the while as calm and steady as amidst a shower of snow-flakes." Space will not permit the recital of the numerous other conflicts, sometimes against great odds, in which this intrepid commander engaged. During the war he captured more than a thousand guns from the ships of the enemy. Amid the din of battle he was calm and cool and self-possessed. The more deadly the strife, the more imminent the peril, the more terrific the scene, the more perfect seemed his self-command and serene intrepidity. He was a hero among heroes and his name should live in honored and affectionate remembrance.

The armed ships of Salem performed valiant service to the country; they intercepted the transports and supply-ships sent from New England and Nova Scotia to the troops in Boston and New York. They resorted to the French islands for munitions of war, and captured the ships engaged in the sugar trade. They cruised in the Bay of Biscay, in the English and Irish channels; raised the rate of insurance on British ships to twenty-three per cent., and compelled England to employ most of her navy in convoying merchantmen; and, although a large number were captured, they rarely yielded to an equal force.

Salem Privateers in the War of 1812.—When this country was once more engaged in a war with Great Britain in 1812, Salem again did her part in harassing the commerce of the enemy. She sent out forty privateers, with an aggregate tonnage of 3,405 tons, mounting 189 cannon, and manned by 2,142 men. Some of these privateers were very successful in capturing prizes from the enemy. The schooner "Fame," of Salem, was a fishing-boat of thirty tons, and carried two guns and thirty men. She received her commission July 1, 1812, at noon, sailed in the afternoon, and sent the first prize into Salem. Robert Brookhouse, Jr., was one of her commanders. The sloop "Jefferson," a pleasure-boat of fourteen tons, belonging to George Crowninshield, sailed the same day as the "Fame," and sent the second prize into Salem. She carried only one gun, and twenty men. The ship "America," of Salem, was the fastest-sailing vessel afloat during the war of 1812, and the most fortunate. She was of 350 tons burden, and carried twenty guns and 150 men. She made four cruises, commanded on the first by Joseph Ropes, and on the third and fourth by James Chever, Jr. She arrived in Salem from her third cruise with fifty prisoners on board, having taken twelve prizes, and the property taken and safely got into port amounted to about $1,100,000.

The brig "Grand Turk" was one of the finest vessels of her class in the United States. She was fortunate as a cruiser, and as famous for her good qualities as the "America." She was of 310 tons burden, carried eighteen guns and 150 men, and was commanded by Holten J. Breed. She arrived at Salem Nov. 17, 1815, after a second cruise of 103 days, with forty-four of her original crew (the rest being on board her prizes) and fifty prisoners. She captured seven or eight vessels, one with an invoice of £30,000 sterling. She had on board goods to the value of $20,000.

The schooner "Helen" was a merchant vessel, loaned by her owners, the Messrs. White and J. J. Knapp, for the purpose of capturing the English privateer "Liverpool Packet," which for months had rendered herself a terror to all vessels entering the bay. Her cruising-ground was in the vicinity of Cape Cod, although once she was seen inside Half-Way Rock, Capt. John Upton originated the project of fitting out the "Helen," and going to capture the "Liverpool Packet." He spoke to others about it on the morning of Nov. 12, 1812, and the "Helen" was got ready, and seventy volunteers raised, in about four hours. Before the next morning she was at sea. Those who started the expedition formed a procession, preceded by the American flag, and by James McCarthy with his drum, and Henry Hubon with his fife, marched through the streets of Salem, led off by Capt. James Fairfield. Before night, on the day the expedition was first talked of, the vessel was prepared with stores, ammunition, and cannon, and at nine o'clock that night she was off Naugus Head. They found the English vessel they sought had sailed the previous day for St. John, and thus the object of their expedition failed.

The other armed vessels were more or less fortunate; but even a list of them would take more room in these columns than can be spared, and the curious reader must turn for a fuller account to other sources of information.*

CHAPTER VI.

SKETCH OF THE MANUFACTURING AND BUSINESS INTERESTS OF SALEM.

Proceeding from the commercial to the business interests of Salem, the manufacture and trade in leather first demands consideration, as by far the largest single interest.

The Leather Interest.—A brief retrospect of the foundation and growth of this business may be interesting. The exact date of the beginning of the manufacture of leather in Salem is not attainable, neither are any very definite facts regarding the location of the first tanning and currying shops. The common, and the territory eastward of it, previous to 1800, was a more or less swampy locality, and on the north and east sides of it had been located, for many years, a number of tanneries. Within a dozen years, evidences of the location of tan-yards have been found in digging to lay sewers in the lower end of Forrester Street. The business finally located on the North River, and extended up towards Peabody, along the line of the water-course, and this valley is to-day the greatest tanning district in the country. The trade hereabouts suffered a decline about forty years ago; but during the last thirty years it has grown rapidly, and all attempts to divert it to other places have failed to check its increase in this its original *habitat*. Salem is as famous for its tanneries as Lynn is for its shoe-shops.

In 1639 Philemon Dickerson was granted land "to make tan pits and to dress goat skins and hides." Afterwards tanners were occasionally mentioned, and in 1642 "Ould Thomas Eabourne" was "prosecuted" for "wronging the country by insufficient tanning." For the offence he was "admonished" and fined a small sum. The same year the General Court passed an order "that no person using the feat and mistery" of currier, butcher, or shoemaker, "shall exercise the feat or mistery of a tanner." It seems to have been not uncommon in those days for families to tan their own leather and make their own shoes. For this purpose they used a trough hollowed out of a pine log. The hides were cut into strips of a suitable width for the soles of shoes, and alternated in the trough with layers of oak

* For an account of the privateers belonging to Salem during the war of 1812, consult the article prepared by William Leavitt in the Historical Collection of the Essex Institute, Vol. II., page 57.

bark pounded up with a mallet. Lime being scarce, ashes were frequently used to remove the hair from the hides.

In a century after the first beginnings, or in 1750, an old Quaker preacher in Danvers, named Joseph Southwick, had so far improved the method as to grind the bark with a circular stone moved around by a horse. This was the first bark-mill. Another and much greater advance in the art of tanning was made in the early part of this century, when steam and water-power were brought into use in the more laborious parts of the process. This, together with some improvements in the methods of working, led to a great improvement in the business.

There were four tanneries in 1768; eight in 1791; seven in 1801; twelve in 1811; thirteen in 1821; twenty-three in 1831; twenty-four in 1836; eighteen in 1840. In 1836 there were tanned 68,677 hides; the value of leather tanned and curried was $398,897; hands employed, 194; capital used, $299,170. In 1844 there were forty-one tanneries, employing 280 hands; value of leather tanned and curried, $642,671; capital invested, $401,668. In 1850 there were thirty-four tanners, the same number of curriers, fifteen who followed both trades, and two leather and morocco dressers and colorers,—total, eighty-five. Then 550 hands were employed in the business, and the value of the leather tanned and curried was $869,047.70. It has been found extremely difficult to obtain even an estimate of the average business for the last five years, as a fair statement to go into history; but careful investigation and consultation with leading manufacturers and dealers places the figures at the following estimate: capital employed, $1,250,000; annual production, $4,000,000; number of men employed, about 1,000. Most of the capital employed is home capital, and the Salem banks discount a large proportion of all the "leather paper" passed in the transaction of this great business.

Cotton Manufacture. — The next industry in order of importance is the manufacture of cotton cloth, carried on by the Naumkeag Steam Cotton Company, which was incorporated April 5, 1839, with a capital of $200,000. The first mill erected was completed in 1847, the capital stock having been meanwhile increased to $780,000. It was then the largest and best appointed mill in the United States. The building was 400 feet long by 60 feet wide, contained 32,768 mule spindles, and 643 looms, and its weekly production was 94,000 yards of cloth, weighing 22,000 pounds, made from No. 30 yarn, 72 picks to the inch.

The mill was successful from the start; and, after twelve years of uninterrupted prosperity, the capital stock was increased to $1,200,000, and a second mill, 428 feet long by 64 feet wide, containing 35,000 spindles and 700 looms, was built, and successfully operated in connection with the first mill.

In 1865 the capital stock was further increased to $1,500,000, and a third mill built. This building is 189 feet long and 95 feet wide, and contains 15,000 spindles, and 350 looms. The three mills at this time (1878) contain 90,000 spindles and 1,900 looms, driven by two pair of Corliss steam-engines, of 2,000 horse-power in the aggregate. The mills employ 1,200 operatives, and consume 11,500 bales of cotton per annum, in the production of 14,700,000 yards of cloth, weighing 4,730,000 pounds, and varying from 28 to 108 inches in width.

Boots and Shoes. — The manufacture of boots and shoes is an industry of considerable importance in Salem. There are about forty establishments, employing over 600 hands. The capital invested is about $130,000, and the annual production is over $600,000.

The Forest River Lead Company was incorporated in 1846. It manufactures white and sheet lead, its capacity for the former being 1,000 tons annually. Its works are on Forest River, on the road to Marblehead.

The Salem Lead Company was incorporated Feb. 7, 1868. Its manufactures are white lead and lead pipe, the capacity for white lead being 1,500 tons per annum. Its works are on Saunders Street.

The Salem Gas-Light Company was organized in April, 1850. Its works are at the foot of Northey Street, though premises have been secured and a large "holder" built on the "Pierce and Waite Lot," Bridge Street. The stores were first lighted with gas Dec. 17, 1850, and the street-lamps Dec. 25, 1850.

The Salem Laboratory Company manufactures various chemicals; *the Salem and South Danvers Oil Company* manufactures kerosene oil, or, more literally, refines petroleum; *the Seccomb Oil Manufacturing Company* manufactures lubricating and currier's oil.

Car Manufacture. — The Salem Car Company was formed in 1863, for the manufacture of horse-cars. Not meeting with the necessary degree of success, the works, on Bridge Street, were sold to Mr. John Kinsman, who closed out the stock on hand, then built a few railway passenger-cars, and in turn sold the works to the Eastern Railroad. The shops are still continued for the manufacture and repairing of cars for this corporation.

Jute Mills. — The India Manufacturing Company, and the Bengal Bagging Company were thriving concerns, manufacturing jute bagging material in large quantities, and finding for it a ready market. The trade in this class of goods diminished, and less business is done now than formerly, though both mills are run by private parties.

Miscellaneous Business. — In 1864 or 1865, a factory was built on Bridge Street, for the manufacture of Charles W. Felt's type-setting and justifying machine; but the invention did not prove a success, and the works were sold. For a time they were occupied by a machine-shop, manufacturing the Hicks Engine. The Atlantic Car Company was organized in 1872, and a factory for the manufacture of railroad passenger coaches and freight cars, built on Broadway. The depression in business the following year caused a suspension of business, which has never been revived. The works are now occupied in the manufacture of furniture. The Salem Foundry and Machine-Shop, and the Salem Shade-Roller Company are now doing a fair business under individual management. Numerous small manufacturing occupations and trades employ a great number of people, and a large aggregate capital is employed, with reasonable financial results. The State Census of 1875 gives the number of manufacturing establishments in Salem as 550; the capital employed as $4,230,008; the value of manufactured goods and work done as $8,512,693, and the number of persons employed as 4,045. These are all considered reasonably low figures.

Railroads. — The business of the Eastern Railroad in Salem is to be counted by the hundreds of thousands yearly. The receipts annually from the passenger business are about $150,000; and the freight department contributes about $250,000 yearly to the income of the road.* Nineteen passenger trains now leave Salem for Boston daily (except Sunday—two on Sunday), against five or six when the road was opened, in August, 1838. The depot in those days was a small wooden structure, very insignificant compared with the commodious granite and brick one of to-day. When the tunnel was built in 1839, and the road opened to Newburyport in 1840, the business of Salem received a fresh impetus: and from that day to this the Eastern Railroad has contributed much to the substantial prosperity of the city; the branches to Marblehead, Gloucester, Lawrence, and South Reading (now Wakefield), all adding new outlets and inlets for trade. The Lowell road has also done its share; and with its tracks and those of the Lawrence Branch of the Eastern road, extending to tide-water at Phillips wharf and Pennsylvania Pier, Salem has had unlimited railroad facilities for transporting coal and merchandise to the inland cities of Lowell and Lawrence. With these iron bands extending in all directions, Salem has been favored with railroad facilities hardly surpassed by any city, however fortunate in its railroad accommodations.

Coal Business. — For many years Phillips Wharf was the scene of an immense coal trade; but since the building of Pennsylvania Pier by the Philadelphia & Reading Coal and Iron Company, in 1873, the business has been divided, the latter wharf taking a large proportion of it. This pier is built further out into the harbor than any other in the city; and the large iron steamers of the Philadelphia & Reading company land there about 90,000 tons of coal annually, for transportation into the interior, — mainly to Lowell. The "coal pockets" here have a capacity of 8,000 tons. At Phillips Wharf, the Wilkesbarre company lands its coal for transportation to the manufacturing cities inland.

Express and Freight Business. — With the advent of the railroad came the express and freighting business. Mr. David Merritt, Sr., being the founder. This has grown to immense proportions; and J. H. Moulton, and David Merritt, Jr., to-day do a thriving and enterprising business in the freighting and express lines, while Savory & Co's Express, founded by the late Benjamin Savory, a driver of the old Boston Stage Company, and numerous smaller parcel expresses, are doing a large business.

Banks. — The business interests of the city are accommodated by the establishment here of seven National Banks; and two savings banks serve as depositories for the earnings of the working people.

The Essex Bank, the first bank established in Salem, began business July 2, 1792, with a capital of about $300,000. It occupied the building on Central Street used for the Custom House for a series

* These figures do not represent the *earnings* of the station, but the gross amount of business transacted.

of years. Central Street was then known as "Bank Street." The Essex Bank was incorporated June 18, 1799, when it was allowed a capital of $400,000. It expired in 1819, although its affairs were not fully wound up until 1822.

The Salem Bank, now the "Salem National," was incorporated March 8, 1803, with a capital of $200,000. This was increased Feb. 8, 1823, to $250,000; reduced Feb. 14, 1859, to $187,500; restored April 1, 1865, to $200,000; increased Feb. 12, 1873, to the present amount, $300,000. Its presidents have been Benjamin Pickman, 1803; Joseph Peabody, 1814; George Peabody, 1833; Benjamin Merrill, 1842; George Peabody, 1847; William C. Endicott, 1858; Augustus Story, 1875. Its cashiers: Jonathan Hodges, 1803; John Moriarty, 1810; Charles M. Endicott, 1835; George D. Phippen, 1858. The bank was originally located in a brick building on the south side of Essex Street, next west of the Benjamin Pickman estate, nearly opposite St. Peter's Street. It stood in from the street. The bank adopted the national system in 1864; and removed to its present location, Holyoke building, November, 1866.

The Merchants' Bank was organized in 1811, and incorporated June 26th of that year, with a capital of $200,000; which was afterwards increased to $400,000, and reduced in 1845 to its present figure $200,000. The first banking rooms were in the Union building, on the corner of Union and Essex streets. Afterwards the bank occupied rooms in the Bowker building, and in 1855 removed to its present location in the Asiatic building. Its presidents have been Benj. W. Crowninshield, Joseph Story, John W. Treadwell, and Benjamin H. Silsbee. Its cashiers, John Saunders, John W. Treadwell, Francis H. Silsbee, Benj. H. Sillsbee, and Nathl. B. Perkins. It became a National Bank Jan. 19, 1865.

The Commercial (now First National) Bank was organized April 19, 1819, with a capital of $300,000. This was reduced to $200,000 in 1830, and restored in 1851. It has always occupied its present quarters in the Central Street bank-building. Its presidents have been Willard Peele and William Sutton; cashiers, N. L. Rogers, Z. F. Silsbee, and E. H. Payson. The bank entered the national system, as the First National Bank, in June, 1864.

The Exchange Bank was incorporated Jan. 31, 1823, with a capital of $300,000; which was afterwards reduced to its present amount, — $200,000. The bank commenced business at No. 172 Essex Street, on the site of William Gray's garden, next below the Essex House; and continued there until it was removed to its location in the First Church building, Dec. 8, 1864. It originally faced Essex Street, but now occupies the opposite corner of the building on Washington Street; its presidents have been Gideon Tucker, John Webster, Henry L. Williams. Its cashiers, John Chadwick, Joseph H. Webb. It adopted the national system, Feb. 18, 1865.

The Asiatic Bank was incorporated June 12, 1824, with a capital of $200,000. It commenced business in July, 1824, with a capital of $315,000, in the old bank-building on Central Street. From thence it removed to the East India Marine building; and from there to the Asiatic building, on Washington Street, in 1855. Its presidents have been Joseph S. Cabot and Leonard B. Harrington. Its cashier, Mr. William H. Foster, has been fifty-three years in the bank's employ, fifty of which as cashier. There is but one older bank officer in the United States. The Asiatic became a National Bank Feb. 1, 1865.

The Mercantile Bank was organized May 8, 1826, with a capital of $200,000, which has never been changed. It first occupied a room with Mr. John W. Fenno, a broker, in the Central building, Central Street, the room now occupied by J. B. Osborn as a barber-shop. The bank was moved into its present rooms early in 1827. Its presidents have been Nathaniel L. Rogers, David Putnam, John Dwyer, Aaron Perkins; and Charles Harrington, the present holder of the office. The cashiers have been John A. Southwick; Stephen Webb; and Joseph H. Phippen, the present cashier. The bank entered the national system Jan. 10, 1865.

The Mechanics' and Traders' Bank was incorporated March 10, 1827, and allowed a capital of $200,000. It, however, never commenced business.

The Naumkeag Bank was incorporated March 17, 1831, with a capital of $200,000, which was subsequently increased to $500,000. It commenced business in the store of Benjamin Dodge; thence removed to the Manning building, now Bowker Place; from there to the East India Marine Building; and then to its present location in the Asiatic building, Washington Street. It became a National Bank in December, 1864. Its presidents have been David Pingree, Edward D. Kimball, Charles H. Fabens, and William B. Parker; its cashiers, Joseph G. Sprague and Joseph H. Towne.

The Bank of General Interest was incorporated March 17, 1831, with a capital of $200,000. It ceased business in 1842.

The North American Bank was incorporated March 31, 1836, and was allowed a capital of $300,000. It never went into operation.

The Salem Savings Bank was incorporated Jan. 29, 1818, and was the second institution of its kind in the State. It commenced business April 18th, in the old bank-building, on Essex Street, originally occupied by the Salem Bank in 1803. Its presidents have been Dr. Edward A. Holyoke, 1818; Joseph Peabody, 1830; Nathaniel Silsbee, 1844; Daniel A. White, 1851; Zach. F. Silsbee, 1861; John Bertram, 1864; Joseph S. Cabot, 1865; Benjamin H. Silsbee, 1875: its treasurers, William P. Richardson, 1818; William Gibbs, 1820; William Dean, 1821; Peter Lander, Jr., 1822; Daniel Bray, 1823; Benjamin Shreve, 1837; Henry Ropes, 1839; William Wallis, 1861; Charles E. Symonds, 1865. In 1855 the bank removed to its present location, on Washington Street, in the Asiatic building, of which it is now the owner. In 1846 over $900,000 was on deposit in this bank. In 1878 the number of depositors was 15,095, and the assets were $6,011,440.36.

The Salem Five Cents Savings Bank was incorporated in 1855. Its presidents have been Edward D. Kimball, 1855; Edmund Smith, 1861; Henry L. Williams, 1862: its treasurers, J. Vincent Browne, 1855; Charles H. Henderson, 1868. The bank was originally located on Essex Street, opposite St. Peter's; then, in the second story of Downing block; from which it removed to its present location in the Northey building, corner of Essex and Washington streets. The number of its depositors is 7,049; amount of assets, $2,139,160.48.

The Salem Board of Trade was organized in 1866, and opened a reading-room. Meetings were held for several years; but in 1876 the interest in the association had so far abated that it was deemed inexpedient to longer continue the reading-room, though an organization is maintained.

Insurance Companies. — The Essex Mutual Fire Insurance Company was incorporated June 11, 1829. Its risks are confined to buildings, dwellings, and furniture. "The Mutual Fire Insurance Company in Salem" was incorporated April 16, 1838. Its risks are buildings, dwellings, household furniture, and stocks of goods. The Holyoke Mutual Fire Insurance Company was incorporated in 1843, and is to-day the leading insurance company of Essex County.

CHAPTER VII.

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES OF DISTINGUISHED MEN, AND VARIOUS HISTORICAL NOTES IN REFERENCE TO SALEM.

Any sketch of Salem, however limited, would be incomplete without some reference to the distinguished men without whom there would have been no history to write. Her ministers and merchants have already been alluded to, as have also her prominent city officials; but the names of others not included in that list deserve some passing notice.

Many prominent members of the legal profession have made their home in Salem. Some have already been referred to. Rufus Choate and Joseph Story, both identified with Salem, are sketched in the histories of their native towns, — Essex and Marblehead.

Benjamin Lynde was born Sept. 22, 1666. He graduated at Harvard in 1686. He was appointed chief justice of the superior court of judicature of the Province of Massachusetts Bay in 1729; and died in office Jan. 28, 1745. Benjamin Lynde, his son, was appointed chief justice of the same court in 1769, and left the bench in 1771. He was born in Salem Oct. 5, 1700; graduated at Harvard in 1718; and died in 1781.

Timothy Pickering was one of the most distinguished citizens of Salem. He was born in Salem, July 17, 1745; and graduated at Harvard in 1763. In 1774 he wrote the address of the people of Salem in regard to the closing of the port of Boston. In 1775 he was chosen colonel of the first regiment of militia; and was present with part of his command at North Bridge, Feb. 26, 1775, where Col. Leslie was successfully prevented from seizing the Provincial cannon. He was about this time a clerk in the office of the registry of deeds for Essex County. Later in the same year, he was appointed a judge of the court of common pleas, and judge of the prize court for Suffolk, Middlesex, and Essex counties. In the fall of 1776, he commanded a regiment of 700 men. He was adjutant-general at the battles of Germantown and

Brandywine; member of the Continental board of war, in 1777; and a quartermaster-general in 1780. At the close of the Revolutionary War he settled in Philadelphia, and went into business as a commission merchant. When the convention was held for remodelling the Constitution of the State of Pennsylvania in 1790, Mr. Pickering was present as a member. Washington appointed him postmaster-general in 1791; and he held the office till 1795, when he was transferred to the position of secretary of state.

Upon his retirement from the latter office in 1800, or soon thereafter, he returned to Massachusetts, and in 1803 was elected to the senate of the United States. Retiring from that position in 1811, he turned his attention to horticulture and agriculture, in which he took a great interest. He was again called to participate in public affairs, and was chosen in 1814 the member of Congress from this district. In 1817 he again retired to his farm, and devoted the rest of his life to rural pursuits. He was the founder and first president of the Essex Agricultural Society. His death occurred in Salem in January, 1829. Energetic and faithful in public office, plain and simple in private life, pure and unblemished in character, he was a man whom his native Salem and the nation delighted to honor.

Daniel A. White was born in Methuen June 7, 1776, and graduated at Harvard in 1797. He commenced the practice of law at Newburyport in 1804, was a State senator from 1810 to 1814; and was chosen a representative to Congress in 1814, but resigned in 1815, before taking his seat, to accept the office of judge of probate for Essex County. He made an admirable judicial officer, and continued to hold the position till July, 1853, when he resigned. He came to Salem to reside in 1817; and from that time till his death he contributed largely to build up the literary and charitable institutions of the city. Harvard conferred upon him the degree of LL. D. in 1837. He was president of the Salem Lyceum; of the Essex Historical Society; of the Salem Athenæum; of the Salem Dispensary, and of the Salem Savings Bank. When the Essex Institute was established, he was its first president; and his interest in that society never wavered nor grew cold. He donated to the institute, at different times, a library of 8,000 volumes, and contributed money freely to advance the work of the institution. His death occurred in Salem, March 30, 1861.

Physicians. — Dr. Edward Augustus Holyoke was the son of Pres. Edward Holyoke of Harvard College. He was born Aug. 1, 1728, and graduated at Harvard in 1746. He commenced the practice of medicine in Salem in 1749. He was the first person on whom the degree of doctor of medicine was conferred by Harvard College, and he afterwards received the degree of doctor of laws. He was the first president of the Massachusetts Medical Society, and was among the original members of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and at one time its president. He was at the time of his death the president of the Salem Athenæum, of the Essex Historical Society, of the Salem Savings Bank, and of the Salem Dispensary. A public dinner was tendered to him, by his associate physicians of Salem and Boston, on his hundredth birthday. He was still so vigorous at that extreme age that, when the morning came, he rose, dressed, and shaved himself without assistance, and walked to the Essex House, where the dinner was given. He died in Salem, March 31, 1829.

Dr. B. Lynde Oliver was born in 1760, and died in Salem, May 14, 1835. He was a distinguished physician and learned theologian. He was noted for his acquirements in several branches of natural philosophy, particularly in that of optics.

Arts and Artists. — While Salem has fostered her literary and scientific institutions, she has also been ready to aid in the development of the fine arts. A number of painters and sculptors of no ordinary merit have been born within her limits, and have received encouragement at her hands.

Charles Osgood was born in Salem, Feb. 25, 1809. At the age of sixteen he entered the Asiatic Bank as a boy, and continued there about a year. He early developed a taste for painting, and in 1827 he opened a studio in Boston. In 1828 he came to Salem, where he has resided ever since, with the exception of the year 1840, when he was established in New York City. His portraits hang upon the walls of the historical societies of Boston and Worcester, the Memorial Hall at Cambridge, the Peabody Institute at Peabody, and the City Hall, East India Marine Hall, Essex Institute, and Athenæum at Salem. Felt, in his "Annals of Salem," writing in 1849, says of him: "His labors have been extensive and his success unsurpassed. He is deservedly ranked among the first painters of our republic."

George Southward was born in Salem, and died Feb. 19, 1876, at the age of seventy-two years. While pursuing his studies in Rome he contracted a severe cold, and his health was feeble ever after. He possessed considerable merit as an artist, but his extreme modesty and love of retirement prevented him from becoming so well known as his merits deserved. The coloring of his pictures was especially good, and his copy of Guido's "Aurora" was an admirable piece of work, and much admired.

William W. Story was born in Salem, Feb. 12, 1819, and was a son of Joseph Story. He graduated at Harvard in 1838, and was admitted to the bar in Boston. He soon turned his attention to sculpture, and has given the world some fine specimens of his talent in this direction. Among his prominent works may be mentioned his statues of "Cleopatra" and "Semiramis." He has also made some famous portrait busts. He is a poet of good repute, and wrote the ode on the occasion of the celebration at Salem of the 250th anniversary of the landing of Endicott.

John Rogers, the famous modeller of the small character groups which are now so deservedly popular, was born in Salem, Oct. 30, 1829, and was in early life a machinist.

Representatives to Congress and others. — Benjamin Goodhue was born in Salem, Oct. 1, 1748, and died July 28, 1814. He graduated from Harvard in 1766; State senator from 1784 to 1789; elected representative to Congress, 1789; and United States senator, 1796. While in the National House of Representatives he was one of a committee who formed the code of revenue laws, and as senator was chairman of the Committee on Commerce. He resigned his seat in the Senate in 1800, and retired to private life.

Nathan Reed, of Salem, where he was born, a graduate of Harvard in the class of 1781, represented the Essex District in Congress from 1800 to 1803. He tried the effect of steam, in propelling a boat on Wenham Lake, before the invention of Fulton's steamboat. He died in 1849.

Jacob Crowninshield was born in Salem, May 31, 1770, and died in 1808. He was a representative to Congress from 1803 to 1805, and at the close of his term was offered a seat in the Cabinet of President Jefferson, a position which he declined, preferring the comforts of private life to the toils and trials of office.

Benjamin Pickman was born in Salem, Sept. 30, 1763, and graduated at Harvard in 1784. He was a merchant, and represented the town in the Legislature in 1800, and was State senator in 1802, '3, '4, and '5. After a number of years' service in the executive council, he was chosen a representative to Congress in 1809, serving till 1811. He was president of the board of directors of the Theological School at Cambridge, and died Aug. 16, 1843.

Nathaniel Silsbee was born in Salem, Jan. 14, 1773. He was first a master-mariner, commanding the ships of E. H. Derby, and afterwards a successful merchant. He was chosen a member of Congress in 1816, served in the House until 1820, and in the Senate from 1826 to 1835. In 1823, '24, and '25, he was president of the Massachusetts Senate. He died in Salem, July 14, 1850.

Gideon Barstow, of Salem, who died at St. Augustine, Fla., where he had gone to recruit his health, March 26, 1852, aged sixty-nine, was a member of both branches of the State Legislature, and representative in Congress from 1821 to 1823.

Benjamin W. Crowninshield was born in Salem, Dec. 27, 1772. He was secretary of the navy, under President Madison, from 1814 to 1818, and a member of the State Senate for several years, beginning in 1811. He was a representative in Congress from 1823 to 1831. He built and lived in a house on the site of the present Home for Aged Women on Derby Street. He died in Boston, Feb. 3, 1851.

George B. Loring was born in North Andover, Nov. 8, 1817, and graduated at Harvard in 1838. He received the degree of M. D. at the Harvard Medical School in 1842; was surgeon of the Marine Hospital at Chelsea in 1843, and of the 7th Regiment, M. V. M., in 1842, '43, and '44; was postmaster of Salem in 1853; was a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives in 1866–67; was president of the Massachusetts Senate in 1873, '74, '75, and '76; was United States Centennial Commissioner for Massachusetts in 1872; and was elected a representative to Congress in 1876, and re-elected in 1878, being the present member from this district.

Nathaniel Bowditch was born in Salem, March 26, 1773. His early life was spent in Danvers and Salem, in which latter place he was for several years employed in the ship chandler stores of Ropes & Hodges, and S. C. Ward. At the age of twenty-one, he made his first voyage to sea. Having a natural taste for scientific research, he early devoted much time to the study of scientific works, and in 1788, at the age of fifteen, he made all the calculations of an almanac for the year 1790. He translated Newton's "Principia" from Latin into English, while in the merchant office of S. C. Ward. His first voyage

was in the ship "Henry," Capt. Prince, to the Isle of Bourbon. He made four other voyages, the last in the "Putnam," of which he was master and part owner. His sea-voyages covered a period of nine years. Before the close of his nautical career, he had received the degree of Master of Arts from Harvard University, and had been chosen a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. Immediately after the close of his seafaring life, he was elected president of the Essex Fire and Marine Insurance Company, and held the office about twenty years, till his removal to Boston in 1823. He was a member of the Salem Marine Society, and also of the East India Marine Society, a proprietor in the Social and Philosophical libraries, and a trustee of the Salem Athenæum. He declined a professorship in Harvard College, also one in the University of Virginia, a third at West Point, and the presidency of a Boston insurance company, preferring to remain in Salem; but in 1823, he was persuaded to become the actuary of the Massachusetts Hospital Life Insurance Company, in Boston. After his removal there, he completed and published a translation and commentary on "Mécanique Céleste." This was in four volumes, and it fixed his fame on a most substantial basis at home and abroad. The "London Quarterly Review" gave it a flattering notice, and it became at once a standard work. Bowditch produced a fine chart of the harbors of Salem, Marblehead, Beverly, and Manchester; contributed largely on astronomical subjects to the "Transactions" of the American Academy; published (1802) "The New American Navigator," and contributed many articles to the "North American Review" and "Rees' Cyclopædia." While at Boston he became a trustee of the Boston Athenæum, president of the American Academy, and a member of the corporation of Harvard College. He died March 16, 1838.

Robert Cowan was a man whose rare inventive genius has seldom been equalled. Born in Glasgow, Scotland, about 1762, he was brought to this country in a prize vessel during the Revolutionary War. When Capt. Joseph Peabody, afterwards an eminent Salem merchant, was engaged in privateering, Mr. Cowan made several cruises with him; and he was present with that distinguished naval hero of the Revolution, Jonathan Haraden, also of Salem, in the privateer "General Pickering," in his memorable fight with an English privateer near the coast of Spain, on June 4, 1780. After the war he settled in Salem, and became distinguished for shrewdness, industry, and ingenuity. He either invented or introduced the art of varnishing carriages and furniture, and in 1796 articles of furniture were sent from Boston to Mr. Cowan to be varnished. He also manufactured without assistance from others, organs, pianofortes, and drawing pencils, among the first to be made in this country. His establishment was on the corner of Essex and Beckford streets. He died in Salem, Aug. 24, 1846, at the age of eighty-four years.

Francis Peabody was born in Salem, Dec. 7, 1801. He was the founder of the Forest River Lead Company, and built the paper-mills at Middleton. He was one of the founders of the Salem Lyceum and Harmony Grove Cemetery Corporation, and was president of the Essex Institute. He was colonel of the 1st Regiment of the State militia, and was one of the leaders in organizing a famous sham-fight that took place, Oct. 6, 1826, in Danvers. Col. Peabody introduced in Salem the system of miscellaneous courses of public lectures. It was largely through the instrumentality of Mr. Peabody that the old First Church structure was removed from the place of its discovery, near Witch Hill, to the grounds in the rear of Plummer Hall. Mr. Peabody died Oct. 30, 1867.

Historical Notes. — There are many interesting facts relating to the history of Salem and its surroundings which are not mentioned in the preceding chapters and which should find some place in this sketch. The most prominent of them have therefore been introduced into this chapter.

The Common. — In the year 1714 the commoners voted that the spot "where the trainings are generally kept before Nathaniel Higginson's house shall be forever a training field for the use of Salem." This common was for a long time unenclosed, and was little else than a swamp where the townspeople gathered berries and cut flags and hoops. The surface of the land was very uneven, and there were several small ponds included within its limits. Portions of the common were at various times leased by the town to individuals, and in 1770 the town voted to build an almshouse on the north-eastern portion of it, which was opened for occupancy about 1772. The common remained in this condition till 1801, when Elias Hasket Derby, having been chosen colonel of the militia, raised a subscription of about $2,500 for levelling the common and filling up the ponds. This was done, and rows of trees, chiefly poplar, were planted along the walks, and in 1802 the selectmen changed the name to Washington Square. In 1817 the poplar-trees gave place to the present elms, and a substantial wooden railing was built to enclose the mall. In 1850 the present iron fence was substituted for the wooden railing.

First Houses in Salem. — The four meeting-houses of the First Church have all occupied the same spot; the first was built in 1634, and the "unfinished building of one-story," which had been previously used for worship, was no doubt in the same vicinity. The dwelling-house of the Rev. Francis Higginson, who died in 1630, was on ground now covered by the Asiatic Building, and faced towards the South River. The Rev. Samuel Skelton's house was near where the police station now stands, on Front Street. Skelton died in 1634. Samuel Sharpe, who was sent over from England in 1629 to take charge of military affairs, lived in a house where is now the corner of Washington and Lynde streets. Next south of Mr. Sharpe's house stood one once owned by the Rev. Nicholas Noyes. This was just south of the present residence of Robert Brookhouse, Esq. Where the new Price Block now stands was a house owned by the Rev. Hugh Peters, pastor of the First Church from 1636 to 1641. South and west of this stood a house which was the homestead of Ralph Fogg, the first town clerk, and afterwards owned by John Hathorne, one of the judges in the witchcraft trials. South of that was a house occupied for a time by Lady Deborah Moody, and next south was the homestead of the Rev. Hugh Peters, afterwards occupied by Judge Corwin,* another justice in the witchcraft trials. On the corner of Norman Street lived Dr. George Emory, here as early as 1637. South of Sweet's Cove (now Creek Street) was a lot of land laid out to the Rev. Samuel Skelton in 1630. Next south of this was the "Broadfield," originally owned by Gov. Endicott. The almshouse stood on the present site of the State Normal School.

The first Quaker meeting-house was built by Thomas Maule in 1688. "The town bridge, on Boston Street, was built probably about 1640. Next east of the bridge, and north-east of Boston Street, were two houses owned in 1659 by Giles Corey, who was crushed to death in witchcraft days for refusing to confess. Robert Moulton, the "chief" ship-builder, sent over to Gov. Endicott in 1629, lived near the head of the North River, where possibly was built the first vessel constructed in the Colony. The homestead of Gov. Endicott was east of Washington Street, and south of the North River. Where Dr. S. M. Cate now lives on the corner of Washington and Church streets, was the house of Thomas Oliver, whose wife, Mary, was a noted character in early colonial history. Thomas Oliver's second wife, Bridget, who afterwards married Edward Bishop, was the first victim of the witchcraft delusion. Where the West Block now stands, the site of the late Mansion House, was the old Ship Tavern, kept for many years by John Gedney. Between that and St. Peter's Street was the homestead of Peter Palfray, one of the old planters. On the north corner of Essex and Washington streets lived Walter Price, and next east, John Woodbury, another of the old planters.

The exact location of the house of Roger Conant, the first built in Salem, has never been settled; but the strongest evidence is that it stood on the site of the present Maynes Block, opposite the market, on Essex Street. The house on the north-west corner of Essex and North streets, known as the "Witch House," was originally owned by Roger Williams in 1635 and 1636, and afterwards by Capt. Richard Davenport, whose administrators sold it to Jonathan Corwin in 1675. Judge Corwin lived here, and one of the rooms was used for preliminary examinations of those charged with witchcraft in 1692. Hence its name of "old witch house."†

Other Salem Houses.—The house in which Dr. E. A. Holyoke lived is now occupied by Israel Fellows as a furniture warehouse. William H. Prescott, the historian, was born May 4, 1796, in a house which stood on the site of Plummer Hall. This house was built by Nathan Reed, member of Congress from this district, and was afterwards occupied by Joseph Peabody. The house in which Joshua Ward lived when he entertained President George Washington on his visit to Salem, in 1789, still stands on Washington Street, and is now occupied by Dr. J. E. Fiske. Nathaniel Bowditch was born in the house formerly numbered fourteen on Brown Street, and which has recently been moved back into the garden formerly attached to the house. The house numbered twenty-one on Union Street was the birth-place of Nathaniel Hawthorne. On Broad Street, in the house now occupied by his grandson, John Pickering, Col. Timothy Pickering was born.

* Spelled Corwin at that time, but now spelled Curwin.

† These notes in reference to the first houses of Salem are taken from Mr. W. P Upham's contributions to the "Essex Institute Bulletin" in 1869.

Taverns.—Early provision was made "of taverns or ordinaries." They who kept them were required to be licensed, and were not to suffer "any to be drunk," nor to tipple "after nine of the clock at night." In 1637 John Holgrave, at the earnest request of the town, "has undertaken to keepe an ordinary for the entertaynment of strangers." In 1645 Mrs. Catherine Clarke, having a family of children, is licensed for £10 per annum, if "she provide a fitt man, that is godly to manage the business." A house was erected for John Massey in 1661, and became noted as a tavern. It was situated at the Salem end of Beverly ferry, and was called "The old Ferry Tavern." It was demolished in 1819. The "Great Tavern" stood on the site of the present Stearns Building in 1727. It was known as "the great tavern with many peaks," and for a time as the Ship Tavern. It was here that the Social Library was formed, in 1760. The land was once owned by Hugh Peters. The Stearns Building was erected about 1791.

A tavern on or near the site of the first house of Gov. Endicott was also once called the "Ship Tavern" (1774). This was near the northern corner of Washington and Church streets. The veritable "Old Ship Tavern," noted of that name, was on the site of the present West Block, Essex Street. It was in later years the site of the Mansion House. In this immediate vicinity,—Essex Street, between the present head of Central Street and St. Peter's Street,—stood many taverns: "Mr. Stacey's Tavern," "Mr. Pratt's Tavern," "Mr. Goodhue's Tavern," "Mr. Robinson's Tavern," "Benjamin Webb's Tavern," the "King's Arms Tavern," later, the "Sun Tavern," the "Essex Coffee House, the "Lafayette Coffee House," and the present "Essex House." The last three the same building, with different names, as above. The "King's Arms Tavern" was a building built in 1652, by William Browne, as a mansion. It was about 1768 that it was known as the "King's Arms Tavern," and, on the breaking out of the Revolution, as the "Sun Tavern." It was taken down, in 1800, by William Gray, who built a brick house just east of its site. The tavern was next kept in Mr. Gray's former residence, on the site of the present Bowker Block. In 1814 Mr. Gray's new house became a tavern, and was called the "Essex Coffee House." It became the "Lafayette Coffee House" when the Marquis de Lafayette visited Salem the last time and stopped there. It next became the "Essex House," and is thus known now. In 1774 the "Salem Coffee House" was kept in a building near the site of the present St. Peter's Church. "Beadle's Tavern" stood on Essex Street, nearly opposite the present junction of Pleasant Street.

Stage Companies.—The Salem and Boston Stage Company (a Salem institution) was incorporated in 1821,* and, up to the time of the advent of the Eastern Railroad, in 1838, was a very successful concern, and was considered decidedly progressive. It was as well run and as well equipped as any line in the country, and was the first to introduce the "swing-rack and foot-board," and later, the steel-spring stages. Most of its coaches were built in its own shops in Salem, among the mechanics employed being Osgood Bradley, since the day of railroads a large and successful passenger-car builder in Worcester, and Joseph Smith and Daniel C. Manning, the present livery firm of Smith & Manning. On the occasion of the visit of President Jackson to Salem, in 1833, Mr. Smith drove him to the old Mansion House, and the next day to Andover. Mr. Manning, an office-boy for the company, received the packages and letters brought in on the stage and delivered them about town, thus starting the express business in Essex County. He drove President Polk through the city on his visit to Salem in 1847. William H. Foster, the present cashier of the Asiatic National Bank, was one of the clerks of the company. On the gradual dissolution of the concern, several of the drivers of the old stage company became in some way connected with the railroad company, a business nearer akin than any other to their "profession."

Newspapers.—Salem followed closely behind Cambridge and Boston in introducing the printing press, Samuel Hall, a native of Medford, opening an office here in April, 1768. In the following July he established a paper, the "Essex Gazette," to be issued on each Tuesday. The first number appeared Aug. 2d, and was a folio ten by sixteen inches. In May, 1775, Mr. Hall removed to Cambridge and published his paper there till 1781, when he returned to Salem and started the "Salem Gazette." This paper he published for a little more than four years, removing to Boston and publishing the "Massachusetts Gazette" there. This removal from Salem was on account of heavy taxes levied on advertisements, which sadly reduced his income.

* Previously the stage line had been run by the Mannings, Richard and his sons.

Before Mr. Hall's return to Salem three papers had risen and died,—the "Salem Gazette," the "Newbury and Newburyport Advertiser," and the "Salem Gazette and General Advertiser." The present "Salem Gazette" was commenced Oct. 14, 1786, John Dabney and Thomas C. Cushing issuing the first number under the title of the "Salem Mercury." It assumed the name of the "Salem Gazette" Jan. 5, 1790. The present "Gazette" is traced back in a direct line to Mr. Hall's first venture, and the "Gazette" of today bears, at the head of its column, the words: "Established, weekly, 1768; semi-weekly, 1796"; and its claim, as a continuation of Mr. Hall's paper, is founded upon the judgment of local antiquarians who were contemporary with Mr. Cushing. He had served his apprenticeship with Mr. Hall, and took his materials and revived the paper, after a break, in 1786. Mr. Foote served as an apprentice with Mr. Cushing,—so the line is traced down, connecting the first issue with that of the present day. Mr. Dabney withdrew in 1789, leaving Mr. Cushing sole proprietor. In 1794 William Carlton assumed the publication, and, in 1797, transferred it back to Mr. Cushing. On account of ill-health, the latter withdrew from the paper, and his son, Caleb Cushing, succeeded him. He published the paper for six months with Ferdinand Andrews, who then took it alone. He sold one-half the establishment, in 1825, to Caleb Foote. Jan. 1, 1833, Mr. Foote became sole proprietor, and is now the senior partner of the firm of Foote & Horton (N. A. Horton), who are the present publishers, the latter entering the firm in 1854. It is now published as a semi-weekly, on each Tuesday and Friday morning. A weekly edition, the "Essex County Mercury," is issued on each Wednesday. This was started June 8, 1831.

The "Salem Register" was commenced May 12, 1800, as a semi-weekly. William Carlton was its publisher, and it was originally called the "Impartial Register," then the "Salem Register," the "Essex Register," and finally the "Salem Register" again. Mr. Carlton died July 24, 1805, and the paper was published for his widow, then "for the proprietors" for a while next by Haven Poole and Warwick Palfray, Jr. Mr. Poole died and the paper was continued by Mr. Palfray, and later by Mr. Palfray and Mr. John Chapman. On the death of Mr. Warwick Palfray, Jr., his son, Charles W., formed a partnership with Mr. Chapman. The latter died in 1873, and Mr. Eben N. Walton was admitted to the firm, which became Palfray & Walton. The "Register" is issued on each Monday and Thursday.

The "Salem Observer" was first issued Jan. 4, 1823, by William & Stephen B. Ives, as a weekly, appearing on each Monday evening. It was first published as the "Observer," next as the "Salem Observer," four years as the "Salem Literary and Commercial Observer," and last and now as the "Salem Observer" again. Its first two editors were B. Lynde Oliver, and Joseph G. Waters. George W. Pease became a partner in 1837, and in 1839 Mr. Stephen B. Ives withdrew, leaving the firm, Ives & Pease. William Ives withdrew a few years ago, and Horace S. Traill became a partner. The "Observer" is now published by Pease, Traill & Fielden, Mr. Francis A. Fielden having been admitted within three or four years. It is issued on Saturday mornings. Mr. Gilbert L. Streeter is its editor. Mr. Streeter wrote, in 1856, "an account of the newspapers and periodicals published in Salem," up to that year, and it contains much detailed information. The pamphlet is on file at the Essex Institute.

The "Salem Post" is the outgrowth of a free advertising sheet, published monthly by Charles H. Webber. On Jan. 1, 1873, it became a weekly, published by Mr. Webber, and F. B. Browning, and was styled the "Salem City Post." For a time the publishing firm was Webber Bros., Mr. Putnam Webber being the junior partner. The "Post" is issued each Wednesday morning.

These four are the only newspapers now published in Salem, and, though neither of them is a daily, some one is issued on each morning of the week, except Sunday.

Many papers have been born in Salem only to die, most of them for want of support. Among them the "Salem Advertiser," published from 1832 to 1849; the "Salem Daily Chronicle," from March, 1848, to May 22, 1848; "Essex County Freeman," from Aug. 1, 1849, to June 14, 1854; the "Union Democrat," from July 31, 1852, to Oct. 6, 1852; the "People's Advocate," from Oct. 1854, to ——; the "Salem Daily Journal," from July 24, 1854, to Nov. 24, 1855; the "Essex Statesman," from 1863 to 1868. These were the most important. A host have been published during exciting political contests, for advertising purposes, or with a hope that they might gain a foot-

hold in the community; but only the "Gazette," "Mercury," "Register," "Observer," and "Post," stand to-day.

Telegraph and Telephone. — The first communication between Salem and Boston by the magnetic telegraph was a dispatch sent by the mayor of the former city to the mayor of the latter, Dec. 23, 1847. The first public exhibition of the telephone was made at Lyceum Hall, on the 16th of February, 1876, under the supervision of the inventor, A. Graham Bell. A despatch of a quarter of a column was sent by telephone the same evening to the "Boston Daily Globe," by Henry M. Batchelder, then connected with that paper. But three errors in receiving it were made, and it was the first despatch sent by telephone to a newspaper.

Salem Neck, like all other lands in this vicinity, was originally held by the commoners, — the proprietors of lands lying in common and undivided. In 1714 the commoners granted the Neck lands and Winter Island, and from that date to 1728, the Neck was probably used for pasturage, and Winter Island for "the fishery"; that is, for drying fish. Who collected the rents cannot be determined; but, according to the vote of the commoners, the rents were to be paid into the town treasury. In 1729 the town let the lands on Winter Island to five shoremen. In 1735 it was voted to let so much as was sufficient to the shoremen, the remainder as a public pasture, and from 1738, up to 1824, the island was let for pasture lands. In March, 1756, the land on which the powder-house now stands, was let to Richard Derby for one shilling a year, and he built a wharf and warehouse. In 1859 the city authorities received $152 rent from Oliver M. Whipple (who had purchased the title of the Derby family) for the unexpired term of one thousand years. It is probable that, prior to 1714, the town owned a portion of the Neck, and the commoners the balance. In 1765 the town treasurer was authorized to let Winter Island and the Neck together, for pasture lands. In 1679 there were so many people at Winter Island that John Clifford was licensed to keep a victualling house for their convenience. "This may have been," says Felt, "the origin of the famed 'Blue Anchor Tavern.'"

The Neck has a long story in connection with the coast defences of the Colony and Commonwealth. Block-houses, stockades, and earthworks, almost innumerable, have been built there on various threatening occasions, ever since the first settlement. Their history is difficult to trace; but the notes which follow pertain to the most important defences. A ship which arrived in 1629 brought five cannon; but these were probably for the Darby Fort on the Marblehead shore, at Naugus Head, built about that year, as near as can be decided from the records.

A fort on the Salem shore (Winter Island) was commenced in 1643. Felt says that in 1758 the Neck had "long been guarded" by two block-houses at the gate, and by another at Watch-house Point, familiarly called Hospital Point. Besides these defences, it had a fort on its heights, called "new," to distinguish it from the old one on Winter Island. In 1690, the Winter Island fort was repaired, and breastworks thrown up on the heights of the Neck. In 1699 the Winter Island fort was called Fort William, in honor of the king, and in 1704, Fort Ann, in honor of the queen. A new fort was built in 1742, on the heights of the Neck, the location fortified in 1690. In 1775, Fort Lee was built on the site of the fort of 1742. In 1787, there were three forts, known as William, Lee, and Juniper. In 1794, Fort William was ceded to the United States. In 1799, the name of Fort William was changed to Fort Pickering, by order of the secretary of war. In 1814, these forts were rebuilt, and Forts Pickering and Lee again in 1863, at the breaking out of the civil war. Both are now in a dilapidated condition.

The noted frigate "Essex," thirty-two guns, was built on the south side of Winter Island in 1799, and launched, September 30 of that year, from a spot not far from the lighthouse.

Old Mills.—Capt. William Trask, one of the original planters, erected the first mill in New England. It was built on a small brook, running into the North River, near the Eastern Railroad station in Peabody. The first machinery was a "mortar mill" for pounding corn. In 1692 it was rebuilt for a fulling mill. In 1640 Capt. Trask obtained permission, and, some years later, erected a mill a half mile further down the North River, and in a short time moved it another half mile down stream. This became known as Frye's Mill, being under the direction, the latter part of the century, of William Frye, father and son. In June, 1633, permission was granted to Walter Price, Henry Bartholomew, John Gardner, and Samuel Gardner, to build a mill on the South River, and it was completed in 1664. It was on the site of the grist-mill removed a few years ago by the Eastern Railroad, to build the engine-house, on Mill Street.

Fire Clubs. — Associations known as "fire clubs" have existed in Salem since 1744. Each member was required to have two substantial leather buckets, and they were usually painted with the name and device of the club. Many of these buckets may still be found hanging in the front or rear hall-ways of the old houses of Salem, usually under the stairs or on some projection or cornice. These buckets were kept thus handy, and when an alarm of fire was given, the owner was supposed to take his buckets and repair to the scene of the fire, to assist in passing water from the cisterns to the tubs of the engines, or to throw it on to the fire directly. This of course was before the introduction of the suction-hose. Each member of the clubs was also provided with a bag, in which to take property from buildings, and a bed-key to take down the old-fashioned bedsteads. Most of the clubs had ladders at convenient places about the town. In later years, these organizations having been mainly surpassed in usefulness by the introduction of improved fire apparatus, they have been maintained as social clubs, an annual meeting and supper being held, at which officers were chosen and reminiscences of former days related. The only clubs now in existence are the Active, the Enterprise, the Naumkeag, and Alert. The following clubs, with their dates of organization, were the most important of those that have existed in Salem: Old Fire Club, 1744; Union, 1770; Social, 1774; Number Five, 1783; Social (2), 1793; Amity, 1796; Relief, 1803; Washington, 1803; Adroit, 1806; Active, 1806; Hamilton, 1809; Enterprise, 1810; Union and Amity, 1812; Volant, 1816; Adroit (2), 1831; Naumkeag, 1832; Boston Street, Sons of Temperance, Alert Social, Social (3).

These were active and useful organizations in their day. Some of them lived but a few months or years, while a few, enumerated above, have come down to the present time.

The Post-Office. — The methods employed in carrying and distributing the mails have changed with the needs of the country, beginning in 1639, when the General Court ordered that all letters "from beyond the seas" should be deposited with Richard Fairbanks, of Boston, who was to receive one penny each for their delivery. In 1693 the postage from Salem to Boston was fourpence. Edward Norris was postmaster at Salem in 1768, and re-appointed by the Provincial Congress May 13, 1775. The post-office was then in a shop on Washington Street. In 1779 Mascoll Williams succeeded Mr. Norris, and the office was nearly opposite Mechanic Hall, on Essex Street. By 1792 there was a daily mail to Boston, transported by stage. The Marblehead mail was carried on foot, by a Mr. Fabens, who had lost one arm. John Dabney succeeded Mr. Williams, and after Aug. 21, 1792, kept the office at the corner of Essex and Washington streets. He removed in 1800 to the corner of Essex and Central streets, and afterwards to a new building at the foot of Central Street, called Concert Square. His last location was on the premises on Essex Street occupied by Bowker Place. Joseph E. Sprague succeeded Mr. Dabney in 1816. He moved the office to Franklin Building, to the corner of Court and Essex streets in 1817, to the corner of Essex and St. Peter's streets in 1818, and there it remained while he continued in office. Eben Putnam succeeded him in 1829, and the office remained for a while in the last-named location, and was then removed to the East India Marine Hall Building, where it continued to be kept until Feb. 24, 1855, when it was removed to its present location in the Asiatic Building. Charles W. Woodbury succeeded Mr. Putnam as postmaster, Mar. 1, 1840, and held the office until Caleb Foote was appointed, in May, 1841. Benjamin F. Browne succeeded Mr. Foote in August, 1844, and was himself succeeded by George Russell in February, 1849. George B. Loring succeeded Mr. Russell in June, 1853, and was followed by Joseph S. Perkins in 1858. John Ryan was appointed in 1860, and continued in office until the appointment of John Chapman in 1861. Mr. Chapman was succeeded by William W. Lander in 1867, and upon his removal from office, in 1869, George H. Pierson was appointed, and is the present postmaster of Salem.

Military Companies. — From the days of the first settlement, Salem has maintained organized bodies of soldiery. The earliest mention in the old records is only brief, but enough is found to prove that some organization existed. A Salem company saw service against the Dutch in Acadia at the capture of St. John and Port Royal. In 1675 five Salem men were killed in an engagement with the Indians at Bloody Brook; and thirty-one Salem men were impressed for an expedition against the Narragansetts. During this campaign two Salem men were killed, and four wounded. Salem men were engaged in a battle with the Indians at Cocheco, in 1676. In 1707, "our soldiers, troop and foot," went to Haverhill to meet the French and Indians; two were

killed and two wounded. Salem sent a quota in the Port Royal expedition, in 1710; and, in 1711, "twenty men of Col. Hathorn's Regiment" sailed in the English fleet for Canada. In 1745, a company of fifty was raised for the expedition against Louisburg. Timothy Pickering was chosen colonel of the 1st Regiment, Feb. 13, 1775, and his regiment marched to Lexington, April 19, 1775, but arrived too late to take part in the skirmish.

In April, 1776, the first uniformed infantry company appears under Capt. Joseph Sprague and Lieut. Joseph Hiller. A portion of Col. Pickering's regiment was at Bunker Hill, but does not appear to have fought there as an organization, though Lieut. Benjamin West is reported killed. The command fought through the war.

The present Second Corps of Cadets was organized July 10, 1786, with Stephen Abbott as its first commander. The uniform was red and white, and these colors have always been retained. The Cadets furnished a large proportion of the nucleus of the 24th Massachusetts Regiment in the civil war, and was represented largely in the 2d and 19th Regiments and 1st Heavy Artillery. The corps is now a battalion of two companies, under Lieut. Col. Samuel Dalton.

In 1786 there was a volunteer company in Ward IV. The Salem Artillery made its first parade May 23, 1787, and continued with varying fortunes till the opening of the Rebellion, when it was merged with the 4th Massachusetts Battery. In 1798 a company of "exempts" was formed.

The present Salem Light Infantry was formed July 4, 1805, Capt. John Saunders commanding. It adopted the French Zouave drill at the opening of the Rebellion. It served in one of the "three months" regiments; in the "nine months" and "100 days" campaigns; furnished full companies in the 8th, 23d, and 50th regiments; and was represented in the 32d, 35th, and other Massachusetts organizations. The company is now attached to the 8th Regiment, and is under Capt. Jonathan Osborne.

The present Salem Mechanic Light Infantry paraded for the first time July 4, 1807, under Capt. Perley Putnam. It served in the 5th Regiment during the late war, as a "three months" organization. Its members afterwards saw service in several different regiments. The Essex Hussars existed for a short time, about 1808. In 1811 two new companies were organized, making eight in Salem at that time. The Essex Guards first paraded July 4, 1814, and became extinct at the close of the War of 1812. The Salem City Guards made their first parade May 31, 1847. This organization was attached to the 5th Regiment at the opening of the civil war. It disbanded before the close of the war.

Salem has two excellent brass bands, the "Salem" and the "Cadet," the latter attached to the Second Corps of Cadets. In its early days the Salem Band was led by P. S. Gilmore.

Halls. — Salem is very well provided with halls suited for theatrical performanees, concerts, dancing parties, and all description of public assemblies. Mechanic Hall is the largest and finest in the city. It is on the west corner of Essex and Crombie streets. It was built in 1839 by the Mechanic Hall Corporation, and in 1870 was enlarged and entirely remodelled. Its seating capacity is 1,093, and the stage is well adapted and furnished with good scenery for theatrical purposes. The interior of the hall is neat and beautiful, and its furnishings are in the most approved modern design. A large organ, blown by water-power, was contributed to the hall by the subscription of a few citizens. Lyceum Hall, on Church Street, was built in 1830, and is the property of the Salem Lyceum. The hall was opened Jan. 19, 1831. The hall is semi-circular, amphitheatre form, and is well adapted for lectures. It seats about six hundred. Hamilton Hall was built about 1810 by a company of gentlemen who intended it for assemblies, a use to which it has always been largely devoted. Many important events have been commemorated within its walls, including the fourth and fifth half centuries of the landing of Gov. Endicott. The hall has always been kept in excellent repair, and has been refitted within a half dozen years, and is to-day as ever a favorite gathering place for dancing and other parties. Central Hall, on Central Street, was built in 1869, is well adapted for small parties and entertainments. It was for a number of years leased by Post 34, Grand Army. Each of the military companies occupies an armory sufficiently large for all gatherings of its own, and they are frequently let for public assemblies or daneing parties. The Young Men's Catholic Temperance Society has a good-sized hall, called Nonantum Hall, on Warren Street; and the Grand Army Post occupies a hall in Essex Block, St. Peter's Street. The Odd Fellows have nice halls in the Asiatic Building, Washington Street, and the Ancient Order of Hibernians in the Phœnix Block, Lafayette Street.

There has been no regular theatre in Salem since 1832, when the old Salem Theatre building on Crombie Street was sold to the Crombie Street Church Society. This building was erected for theatrical purposes in 1828, and was known as the Salem Theatre. Aaron J. Phillips was its manager and lessee. The first play performed there was the comedy, "Wives as They Were." The theatre was run to a losing business four years, and was then sold as above mentioned.

Cemeteries. — The Charter Street Cemetery is the oldest burying-ground in Salem, and was occupied before 1637. Among others interred there are Hilliard Veren, Martha Corey, Richard Derby, Warwick Palfray, Benjamin Lynde, William Browne, Simon Forester, and Deliverance Parkman. The Broad Street Cemetery was commenced about 1655. Capt. George Curwin, the sheriff of witchcraft days, is buried here. The Howard Street Cemetery was commenced about 1801. A part of it was originally reserved for colored people, and a part for strangers. The Orne Street Cemetery was originally laid out in 1807, and contained about two and a half acres. In 1864 about six acres were added to the former reservation. A soldiers' lot of eight thousand feet were set apart in 1872. Harmony Grove, near the Peabody line, is the largest and newest resting-place for the dead. It contains sixty-five acres, and is a beautiful spot, kept in the nicest order. It was commenced in 1840. Many fine monuments and beautiful enclosures are here to be found. The Roman Catholic burying-ground, in North Salem, was laid out a few years since. The Quaker burying-ground, on Essex Street, occupies a lot of land adjoining the site of an old Quaker church.

"*The Willows*" is a portion of the north-eastern point of Salem Neck, and derived its name from the fact of there being there some large willow-trees. It has always been a favorite resort for picnic parties, and is now a public pleasure-park, controlled by the city. It is neatly laid out, and one large and several smaller pavilions have been erected. Its situation is a beautiful one, and the view of the harbor, the north shore toward Cape Ann, and the peninsula of Marblehead, is a rare bit of scenery. The tracks of the Naumkeag Street Railway extend to The Willows, conveying people thither in twenty minutes from the centre of the city.

Juniper Point, or "The Juniper," lies east of the Willows. Its historic features have been traced in an account of the early forts. It is now the locality of a large summer settlement of cottagers, mainly from Lowell and Nashua, but including some Salem people. The cottages extend all along the shore toward the Willows. Streets are laid out, and the little settlement is as regularly visited by the butcher, baker, and milkman as the city itself.

The Islands of Salem Harbor. — The principal islands of Salem Harbor are Baker's, Misery, and Lowell. The first-named was so denominated as early as 1630. It lies about four miles off the Salem shore, and contains about fifty-five acres. The United States government maintains two light-houses on this island. Misery Island was first called Moulton's Misery. It contains about sixty-four acres, and is connected by a bar with the "Little Misery." Lowell Island was granted, in 1655, to Gov. Endicott by the General Court. It was bequeathed in 1684, by Z. Endicott, to his daughters, under the name of Cotta Island. It was later known as Cat Island, and received the name Lowell when a party of Lowell people built a hotel there, a few years ago. In 1774, a small-pox hospital on the island, owned by the town of Marblehead, was burned by a mob. The chief of the smaller islands are Cony, Eagle, the Gooseberries, Ram and Tinker, the three last owned by the city.

Distinguished Visitors. — Salem has entertained a large number of distinguished visitors. Lafayette was here Oct. 29, 1784, and attended a public dinner at Concert Hall, and a ball in the evening. He was at Salem again Aug. 31, 1824. On the 29th of October, 1789, George Washington visited Salem, and was entertained at the residence of Joshua Ward, on Washington Street, being the brick house now occupied by Dr. J. E. Fiske. James Monroe was in Salem July 8, 1817; Andrew Jackson, June 26, 1833; James K. Polk, July 5, 1847; and Ulysses S. Grant, Oct. 17, 1871. These comprise all the presidents of the United States who have been in Salem during their official term.

Celebrations. — The landing of Gov. Endicott has twice been fitly celebrated in Salem. The 200th anniversary was observed Sept. 18, 1828. A procession, under the escort of the Cadets and Mechanic Light Infantry, marched to the North Meeting-House, and there were held commemorative exercises, the Hon. Joseph Story delivering the oration. The Rev. Dr. Prince and the Rev. Mr. Emerson offered prayers, and the Rev. Mr. Brazer read scriptural selections. At Hamilton Hall a dinner was spread, to which the company adjourned

from the church. The venerable Dr. E. A. Holyoke presided, assisted by Judge Story, the vice-president of the Essex Historical Society, the Hon. William Reed, Willard Peele, Pickering Dodge, and the Hon. Gideon Barstow. Among the distinguished guests present were, Gov. Levi Lincoln, Lieut. Gov. Winthrop, the Hon. Daniel Webster, the Hon. Edward Everett, the Hon. B. W. Crowninshield, the Hon Josiah Quincy, Col. Aaron Ogden of New Jersey, Senor M. L. de la Vidaurre of Peru, William Shaler, consul at Algiers, Judge Davis, Gens. Sullivan and Dearborn, and Profs. Farrar and Ticknor.

The 250th anniversary of the landing of Gov. Endicott * was observed Sept. 18, 1878, under the auspices of the Essex Institute. At Mechanic Hall, at 11 A. M., there were appropriate exercises, and at 2 P. M. a lunch was served at Hamilton Hall, and this was followed by speeches from distinguished guests. The forenoon programme was as follows: Reading of Scripture, by the Rev. R. C. Mills, chaplain of the day (the Bible used was printed in 1758); prayer, by the Rev. Dr. Mills; singing of an original hymn, written by the Rev. Jones Very; poem, by the Rev. Charles T. Brooks of Newport, R. I.; original ode, by the Rev. S. P. Hill; oration, by the Hon. W. C. Endicott, judge of the supreme court, and a lineal descendant of Gov. Endicott; singing of Mrs. Hemans's hymn, "The Breaking Waves Dashed High," by Mrs. J. H. West; poem written for the occasion by W. W. Story, and read by Prof. J. W. Churchill of Andover; singing of the 100th psalm; benediction, by the chaplain. At Hamilton Hall, Dr. Henry Wheatland, president of the Essex Institute, presided, and a distinguished company sat at the tables. After the lunch, which was one better entitled to the name of banquet, a number of toasts were offered by the Rev. E. C. Bolles, who was toast-master, and they were replied to by the following gentlemen: Gov. A. H. Rice, Mayor H. K. Oliver, the Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, president of the Massachusetts Historical Society; the Hon. Marshall P. Wilder, president of the New England Historic Genealogical Society; the Rt. Rev. Dean Stanley, of Westminister Abbey; the Hon. W. C. Endicott, orator of the day; the Hon. Leverett Saltonstall; Prof. Benjamin Peirce, of Harvard College; the Rev. Fielder Israel, pastor of the First Church; B. H. Silsbee, Esq., president of the East India Marine Society; and J. H. Choate, Esq., of New York.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE SALEM OF TO-DAY — HER PLACE AMONG THE CITIES OF THE COMMONWEALTH.

Though not as exhaustive and detailed as the authors might wish, yet the chapters that have preceded have given an insight into the history of the good old city of Salem. Her progress has been traced from the day on which Conant and his associates landed and founded Naumkeag, through two centuries and a half — each one of the two hundred and fifty years adding something to her fair name. Not that there have not been dark passages in her annals; but no city escapes some records that is not regretted when it has been engraved by time on the page of history. More than any other place in the county of Essex, Salem has attracted attention from the students of local history. Within her borders was commenced the first permanent settlement of the county. In her early days she ranked with Boston in importance, and had her location been as well adapted, she would have been the capital of the State. Within the old town limits centred the terrible witchcraft delusion of 1692 — the history of which forms the one dark page in the chronicle of her progress. Her commercial record is more brilliant than that of any other port in the country. Here assembled the first Provincial Congress, and in Salem was shed the first blood of the Revolution.

A quaint old city, Salem is often called; but she is not quaint to that degree that she might be deemed a disagreeable place to those who abide within her walls. Her antique features serve rather to furnish a pleasing variation, and an added attraction to the general modernness. Salem is no decrepit, tumble-down city. Modern structures are the rule, not the exception. Her public buildings are substantial and ornamental; her business blocks well built and of pleasing architectural design, and fine houses adorn many streets in the residence portion of the city. Salem is withal beautifully situated, lying in a section of country which abounds in the loveliest natural scenery, and bordered by a harbor that is one of the most picturesque on the Massachusetts coast. Her people are cultivated and social, and no pleasanter community could be desired for a home.

Salem has been a progressive place — progressive in that stronger sense, that means real advancement. Her growth has not been fabulous, or even rapid, but a steady pushing forward, till the Salem of to-day holds a high place among the cities of the Commonwealth. Though her commerce has fled, business of other and many sorts furnish life to the municipality and employment to her citizens.

Purity and progress have always been her aim; and she has so nearly lived up to her aspirations that her record is almost an unblemished one. Her literary and scientific societies are numerous and prosperous, and her benevolent and charitable institutions are many; and all on the most liberal and stable basis. Salem has always afforded the best means of education for the young, and her school-system to-day is unsurpassed by that of any city of the Union. Salem's sons have won distinction and honor in all lands, and many who have made her the home of their adoption, have added to her already wide-spread honors. Few cities can point to such names in their annals, as those of Bowditch, and Hawthorne, and Prescott, and Story, and Choate. To do the city justice in chronicling the acts and deeds of her noted sons, would alone fill a volume. The list includes statesmen, merchants, scientists, and philanthropists; and to-day she can take just pride in men doing their full part in sustaining and perpetuating her good name. Her record in the councils of nation and State has been a worthy one; and she has to-day, for the fourteenth time, the honor of furnishing the representative of the Essex District in the National Congress. Of legal talent, Salem has always had the best of the time, and to-day, three judges of State courts reside within her borders, — Judges Lord and Endicott of the supreme bench, and Chief Justice Brigham, of the superior court, — each of them honored graduates from service at the bar. Judge George F. Choate, of the probate court, and Judge J. B. F. Osgood, of the district court, also reside here. Eminent divines have filled her churches with their eloquence, and there always have been among her citizens, noted literary men, scholars, and orators. Salem has ever been deeply interested in scientific progress, and has attracted to her institutions many of the prominent men of their time. Not many cities can point to such literary institutions as Salem has; and in art, as well as literature and science, she takes high rank. Her artists have contributed worthy tributes to her honor, and the sculptors, Story and Rogers, revere her as their birthplace.

Of Salem, the old and the new, her citizens are alike proud; and their earnest desire for a bright and honorable future for their beloved city, is fully shared by her sons and daughters abroad, though they have long been dwellers without her gates.

* A complete account of this noteworthy celebration may be found in a volume of 200 pages, published by the Essex Institute. It contains the oration, the poems, and a stenographic report of the speeches.

SAUGUS.

This interesting town lies upon territory that originally formed part of Lynn; and some of the most ancient settlements of the latter place are now within its borders. For the first ninety years, there was no thought, apparently, of any kind of division from the parent stock; but when, in 1720, the men of Lynnfield succeeded in gathering a church of their own, on account of distance, those who lived west of "the river" soon caught the same infection, and never rested afterward till they had a church, parish rates, and at last a town, all to themselves.

The town of Saugus, as now found, has an oblong form, its greater axis lying N. W. and S. E. It is bounded east by Lynn; south, by Revere; west, by Melrose; and north, by Wakefield and Lynnfield. Its length is greatest from the west corner of Lynnfield to the angle of Chelsea River, being $5\frac{3}{4}$ miles; while its breadth, which averages about $2\frac{1}{4}$ miles, runs up to its maximum between the west corner with Lynn and the west corner with Wakefield, where it measures $2\frac{3}{4}$ miles across. In its most southerly section are found very extensive salt marshes, such as abound along the coast; but at some two miles from the shore these are terminated by a hilly territory, that stretches northward through all the rest of the township. A fair proportion of good arable land and intervale is distributed; but the broken character in general is conspicuous, though there are no hills of great height or peculiar character. Castle Hill, in the north-west, is indeed to be remarked as a prominent station of the coast survey; and Baker's Hill, close upon the marsh, is noticeable for its isolated position. Neither, however, is very high. The water system of the town is quite ample: it consists of the Saugus River, which, rising in Wakefield Pond, works to the south-east by a very crooked course; and, meeting tide-water at the Centre Village, goes thence to the sea at "Pines Point," through an estuary of considerable breadth, but great irregularity. This last is capable of light navigation as far as the East Village, though rarely used for the whole distance; but whale-ships and other good-sized vessels have been easily brought at high-water as far as Fox Hill Bridge, where the stream is crossed by the Salem Turnpike. Several small streams appear as useful tributaries of Saugus River; of which Shutes' and Cranberry brooks, on the west, and Hawke's Brook, on the east, are the principal. Valuable water-power is enjoyed along this stream: it makes rather a rapid fall just before reaching tide-level; and this is occupied by the modern privilege of Scotts's Mills, and the very ancient one of Pranker's a little above. Still further up, in the northern section, are Howlett's Mills; and between them and the others are several old privileges, now disused, where some early manufactures were attempted. The various creeks opening into the lower estuary give room for excellent tide-mills; one such, just above Fox Hill Bridge, is very valuable. The main stream is intercepted at the East Village by the dam and gates of Goulds' Mills. These are very ancient, having been bought in 1738, by Joseph Gould, of Thomas Cheever, who, with Ebenezer Merriam, had established a corn-mill here in 1722.

The tributaries of the river afford some minor facilities of the same sort, mostly utilized for saw-mills in the early time, but now either disused, or converted to more modern purposes. The considerable amount of the small streams may be said to compensate for the singular want of natural bodies of water; of which, curiously enough, the township contains but one, and not the whole of that. This is called Long Pond, though its length is only about a fourth of a mile; and it lies at about the centre, north and south, of the western boundary, the line of which crosses it in the middle, leaving about one-half in Melrose. This is one of the numerous ponds of the country, so analogous to swamps in character, with deep, muddy bottom, and low, sphagnous banks, covered with dense thickets. Its original outlet was toward the south-west, where the little stream crept through several grades of meadow by a very crooked course, trending slowly north-east, and finally reaching Saugus River. This, however, is now quite obscure; for the surplus water all passes off by an artificial canal, which enters the pond on the north-east angle, and conducts them very directly to the valley of Shutes' Brook. This canal was cut, with much skill and great labor, through ridges and ledges, about 1800, by Judge William Tudor, father of the late Frederick Tudor, of Nahant. Judge Tudor then had a country-seat on the site of the present almshouse, beside the newly contrived Newburyport Turnpike. The premises were adorned in many ways; among others, by an artificial lake, for the replenishing of which this new channel was cut, and the waters of Long Pond brought at least a mile, no doubt with much satisfaction to the proprietor.

The geology of Saugus is in the southern portion decidedly felsitic, belonging to the large formation which includes the porphyries and other argillaceous rocks of Lynn. In the neighborhood of Saugus River, this material appears extensively as a series of conglomerates of various age; but, westward from this, it takes the style of a uniform, compact, and very hard felsite, which style continues nearly or quite to Melrose. In the south-west, adjacent to Revere, may be found some instances of diorites, possibly intrusive, and often carrying calcite freely; while, to the north, the aluminous rocks are sharply succeeded by a series of sienites, which occupy most of the remaining territory. These rocks do not in any case afford associated minerals in any considerable variety. Asbestos is found near East Saugus, and fine epidote is occasional near the almshouse; also, pretty specimens of a brilliant magnetite have been obtainable at a place called the "Lime-kiln," near "Pleasant Hill" station. Several good specimens of purple fluorite, long thought to be amethystine quartz, have been found in the "School-house Ledge," in East Saugus. Two other discoveries of minerals, neither of equal reality with these, have been sources of much fame for Saugus. The first is the "antimony mine," generally called after its chief character, Asa Cheever.. Many people confidently assert that he used, for a good while, about 1818, to give away fine specimens of sulphuret of antimony, or stibnite, which he said he obtained in the woods near Long Pond. Others believe it to have been nothing but "black lead," or graphite; and the formation of that locality favors this opinion, which is probably correct. The rock tends clearly toward the production of graphite, but seems not likely to bear so rare a mineral as the other. We only add that the locality has never since been identified. The "blue sand" of East Saugus deserves to rank with "Asa Cheever's antimony." It was found about 1833, forming a mass of some eight quarts, as Lewis says, in giving a glowing account of it. A great mystery was made over it on account of its fine blue color and even grain; but the whole yielded to common sense, when, in 1850, Mr. S. D. Poole, of Lynn, showed, by a simple analysis, that it was only a parcel of common sign-painter's blue smalt, lost or buried in some olden time at the point of discovery.

A worthier note has been gained for the so-called "jasper," which is a beautiful, fine-grained felsite, deep-red in color, and almost hard enough for jewelry. This is found in a small ledge called the "Jasper Rock," on the west bank of the river, half a mile above Boston Street. Also, the very excellent style of green amygdaloid, that is abundant at Round Hill, a furlong or so further up. This is suspected of being chloritic in composition; thus furnishing the instance of nearest approach of the serpentines of Lynnfield and Newbury to the felsite of the coast. This possibility is thought to bear strongly on the relative age of the three great formations of this region.

After having existed as a parish of Lynn for almost eighty years, or from 1736 to 1815, the ecclesiastical liberty before enjoyed was completed in the civil independence and incorporation of the town, which took place on the 17th of February. And now, as Lynn had been called Saugus for the first seven years of her existence, and afterward this town had been included under the new name of Lynn for more than a century and three quarters, so now the fluctuating terms were finally settled, and the young town took the old name of her own, then and thereafter.

From this time the purely civil history of the place presents but few changes worthy of note. For the last sixty years it has continued as a quiet, charming, semi-suburban town, with its chronicle only stored with the facts of its industrial and religious progress. At present it is divided, by a kind of natural gravitation of its people, into five vil-

lages, of unequal population and prominence, only two of which are within sight of each other. The first, or Centre Village, had its origin about 1643; when, through the enterprise of Robert Bridges and Thomas Dexter, the first iron foundry was here established that was seen in the United States. The fall of the river, from the meadows to the marshes, is about fifty feet. The iron works were placed at almost the lowest point; and the highest, nearly, was occupied with a dam, that flowed a large area for a pond behind it. A canal of about a fourth of a mile conducted the water to the wheels; of this the upper end is still open, and other portions are traceable. For a long period these works were remarkably successful. They employed the most skilful workmen to be brought here; and, in 1648, were said by Gov. Winthrop to be making eight tons of bar iron per week, "as good as Spanish." At these works were done three very remarkable things. The first "ingine to carrye water in case of fire" was built for the authorities of Boston by Joseph Jenks, the ingenious mechanic of the works. This was in 1654. Two years before, he had cut and sunk the dies for striking the famous "Pine-Tree Shillings," which were the first coinage in the country. And in 1655, he obtained the first patent ever issued here, being for an improved scythe; to wit, the long, light, and serviceable blade now universally employed, but never known before that time. Three such exploits in mechanics, occurring by the skill of one man, and within the space of four years, should be distinctly credited to the soil on which they were accomplished.

The iron-works were supplied with ore from the extensive meadows above the dam and pond, using the soft limonite that there abounded. But it seems to have been mostly exhausted. It might well be so, since the furnaces ran almost steadily,—certainly till 1683, and perhaps in some sort much longer. Lewis makes them last near a century; but this is a rather strong estimate. The evidence of their great activity is yet visible in the great heap of slag, ashes, and scoria, by the river-side, known far and near as the "Cinder Banks." All the latter part of their existence, they were encumbered by lawsuits, which finally crushed them out of being. After their decadence, no use was made of the privilege, till about 1770, when Ebenezer Hawkes repaired the dam slightly, and started a grist-mill and saw-mill just below it. From him, through several owners, it finally passed to Benjamin Sweetser, an enterprising manufacturer of chocolate, in 1794. He had used horse-power; but bringing his business to this spot he applied water-power to it, with great success. He died in 1819; but the business went on for a long time after. Meanwhile Robert Emes had leased the grist-mill, and introduced the grinding of dye-woods; and this, too, was continued for many years. In 1822, the celebrated William Gray brought thither the manufacture of cotton duck; but this did not last long. Brown & Baldwin, of Boston, followed with bleaching, and then with calico-printing. This went on till 1825, then declined, was revived again by True & Brodhead. Under their ownership, the flannel business was introduced by Brierly & Whitehead, in 1829. At this period a large brick factory was built, and the woollen business seemed firmly established. In 1834 the whole went over to Whitwell, Bond & Co., who added the cleaning and sorting of foreign wool. They sold in about a year to Livermore & Kendall; but these also broke up in 1836, and removed to Framingham. After two years idleness, the property was purchased by Edward Pranker, who continued the flannel business in it, making great improvements in the premises, from time to time, till his death, which happened a few years ago. The business was afterward continued by his son, George Pranker; but, not remaining profitable, was, after his decease, discontinued, and the now extensive mills became again a scene of idleness.

The privilege of the iron-works was not exhausted by the Pranker enterprise; which, indeed, in its very beginning, only appropriated a part of the water, or of the fall. Lower down, almost where the furnaces had stood, was a short, quick descent, of which no use was being made. In 1810 this spot was furnished with a dam, by the enterprise of Joseph Emes, and a building erected for morocco-finishing. In 1813, Robert Emes, brother of Joseph, joined him; and they added a grist-mill. By 1817 business had changed, and the grist-mill was put to grinding dye-woods. These branches variously continued till 1834, when James Brierly leased the brick factory, and started the shoddy business. But, in 1847, the whole was burned, and Joseph Emes (Robert having been gone some time) sold the property to Francis Scott, of Salem, who devoted it at once to the making of flannels. At length he died; and his son, Andrew A. Scott, succeeded to the property, and has succeeded in keeping it in successful operation up to this time. These two industries have built up the village of Saugus Centre.

The East Village had a different origin; which, however, it owes to the river and its efficient power. We have alluded to the tide-mill of Cheever & Merriam, sold to Joseph Gould in 1738. He, and his widow after him, kept up the business here: which consisted partly in grinding grain, and partly in making snuff (chocolate, also, say some, but this is doubtful). But the widow let it go to disuse from 1785 to 1792, when it was sold to George Makepeace; who refitted the mills, but soon sold to Jona. Makepeace, his nephew. He certainly began the chocolate business, if no one had before, and added many other branches, till it was a place of great activity. At last, in 1805, the property was leased to Amariah Childs, who afterwards bought the title, in 1812. He kept up the business, specially in chocolate, till, in 1840, he leased the whole to Benjamin F. Newhall, and in 1844 sold it out to Charles Sweetser. This gentleman made remarkable improvements, particularly in snuff-making; but gave up the chocolate trade as unprofitable. In its place he commenced the roasting and grinding of coffee, then almost a new branch of industry; and also the grinding and packing of spices, in which a large reputation was speedily obtained. The premises afterwards were leased to Herbert B. Newhall, who still carries them on with energy.

Another tide-mill has been alluded to, further down the river. It is situated on the west bank, at "Fox Hill Creek," a little north of the Salem Turnpike. The tide here fills a large extent of open creeks and broad ditches, so that a heavy body of water is available for power at low-water. This mill was built, in 1852, by Benjamin F. Newhall; and subsequently passed to his son, Herbert B. Newhall, by whom it is still operated. No business is done here, save the grinding of grain; yet this trade is heavy, and proves to be profitable, adding much to the prosperity of East Saugus.

The village is, however, greatly indebted to the shoe manufacture for its advancement. This was begun here by Ebenezer Oakman, in 1800. It must be allowed that the operations of this gentleman were hardly in Saugus, as we now reckon boundaries; yet their influence was felt nowhere else so much. He located just on the east of the "Great Bridge," and carried on business very successfully till 1818, when he removed to Philadelphia, and the business was not kept up by any one. His whole property was finally bought up by Thomas Raddin, Jr., about 1825. This gentleman, with his two brothers, George W. Raddin and Sewell Raddin, and two or three others, revived the shoe business, and gave it a new vigor, which it has never lost since. It has remained a standing industry of this village, and a large share of the wealthiest men here to-day have gained their reward from its prosecution.

The third village in importance is now known as "Cliftondale," but formerly as "Sweetser's Corners." It is reached by following Boston Street westward from East Saugus about a mile and a half; and the two villages are wholly out of each other's sight, though well settled between. This prosperous little place owes its being almost wholly to the business in cigars, snuff, and tobacco, which was set up there by Samuel Copp about 1807. He relinquished to Charles Sweetser in 1820; and he, in turn, transferred to his sons, many years ago. The business still goes on, being followed as well by very many other parties in the same village. The profitable character of this trade has enriched the little community, and Cliftondale is one of the most prosperous divisions of the town. It may be mentioned that here is found a very beautiful country-seat that once belonged to Jacob Eustis,—a brother of the governor of that name, and in which that dignitary sometimes resided.

One of the first settlers of Lynn was Adam Hawkes. He located in 1630 on the upper lands near Saugus River, and died there in 1671. The natural increase of his own posterity, who were numerous and remained near home, would have tended to the production of a small village; but, beside this, the discovery was made that under his cool meadow lands lay immense deposits of bog-iron ore. From this at once followed the digging and removing of this for the furnaces at "Hammersmith," as the iron-works were then called. This lasted for a considerable time; and thus the "North Village" came to be a great deal better known than would otherwise have been the case. And thus was obtained the nucleus and beginning of a tolerable little settlement.

But, as already mentioned, there are eligible spots for water-power on the upper part of the river. Most of these are close to this village, and whatever influence has flowed from them has fallen mostly upon it. One experiment was tried here in 1814 for a linen factory, under Joseph R. Newhall and Amos Binney, of Boston. They tried the making of sail-cloth, but failed in about a year. In 1816, Joel Fox sought to revive the concern, with the making of shoe-thread; but, after struggling three years, gave up. The same year (1816), Nathaniel

Perry selected another spot, and tried linen again, but with no success. This was on a tributary stream. At the same time, Clark & Howlet commenced the snuff business on the other stream; and, as Perry soon failed, they presently bought his whole interest, consolidated the privilege, and ran it for about two years, when the place was given up in its turn. Again, in 1820, Clark, being alone, fitted up again for a grist and chocolate mill, ran it three years; and then it was again given up, everything removed, and the place forgot its wonted activity.

Meanwhile a different enterprise had sought a location at a point still more to the north. Dr. John Hart and others had been incorporated in 1812, as the "Lynn Wire & Screw Company." They built a factory, and ran well till the peace of 1815, which paralyzed them as well as others; and they gave up, after a fruitless effort to make nails instead of screws. Finally, in 1819, John Clark, whose name seems to attach to all the thrift of the village, having quitted the lower privilege, bought up this idle property, and put in his snuff and tobacco machinery. The business was in charge of James Howlet, whose son, John Howlet, at last bought the premises, and, for a long time, did a very good business. More recently, we believe, the manufacture of some light wood-work has been also pursued here, with fair success.

The fourth, or North Village, connected with the industries just described, is a very charming little country place, rather more isolated than any of the others, yet well provided with lines of public communication. The Newburyport Turnpike passes directly through it, intersecting the county road from Lynn to Wakefield, and Lynnfield near the thickest portion. At present, the business is almost wholly agricultural; and, in fact, this industry has probably been the support of the village always, manufacturers being too uncertain for much reliance. But the beautiful open lands of the "North Ward," or "Flower End," always seemed, and, indeed proved, to be the real treasury of the villagers; and they always guarded them with jealous care from the intrusions of the factory people at the Centre. In the days of the iron works, they were terrified by the burning of their forests for charcoal, and the trenching of their meadows for ore; in later days, they were disturbed by the flowing of their intervales for mill-ponds, and the incursions of a lawless population on their fields and orchards. At all times they were ready to give battle, and hence the standing of any manufactory was notably insecure anywhere on Saugus River above tide-water.

The remaining village of the five, best known as the "West Ward," has none of the antecedents that have given note to its sister settlements. It is more scattered than either of the others; being made up of separated homesteads, along the northerly road to Melrose, and the road leading to Wakefield and Stoneham, through the narrow, rocky passage called the "Straits." Communication with any but the Centre Village is not easy; and this is by a mile, nearly, of very unattractive way, leading partly through swamps, and the rest beside forbidding, edgy pastures. There is an old road, little travelled, leading to the North Villages; but few of those who visit "Oakland Vale," as this West Village is often called, care to pursue or explore it. The existence of this little sequestered community on this spot is due to a tract of fine intervale that borders the copious stream of Cranberry Brook; and hence we do not look here for manufactures, but only for husbandry and those who pursue it. Yet there is as much artistic improvement visible here as anywhere in the town. A pretty large farm here was purchased by Brooks and Saunders, of Boston, in 1847, and not only adorned with two or three elegant residences, but cleared up, laid out, and replanted in the most attractive style of landscape gardening. The above-named brook winds beautifully through the whole, among lawns, gardens, and shrubberies; and the whole picture suggests the possibility of an abode of happiness, such as, sad to say, is rarely or never to be realized in this life.

The various manufactures along their beautiful stream do not prevent the people of Saugus from the pursuit of agriculture, with a devotion established by years. Market-gardening is profitably followed, chiefly at Cliftondale; milk is a favorite product all over the town; orcharding is good, and hay is abundant; while poultry-raising is more approved than in most towns beside. There are, indeed, some mechanical pursuits not yet alluded to; as, for instance, the cleaning and dressing of hair, by Enoch T. Kent, at a factory on Shute's Brook; and the extensive manufacture of bricks, by Frederick Stocker, in East Saugus.

A noteworthy fact in this history, is the location here, on the rising ground near the Methodist church in East Saugus, of the first tavern, or public house, found hereabout. It was that of Joseph Armitage; established by him in 1640, or thereabout, and which continued in useful service till past 1800. It had the honor of receiving all the great men of the nation, Washington included.

The first church in this town was gathered in 1732, being the third in Lynn. The first minister was Edward Cheever. The faith continued Calvinistic till 1826, when they settled Ephraim Randall, he being a Unitarian. Still, the tendency was even more than this indicated; and about 1830 the orthodox portion left, and the Universalists remained in possession, and settled Dunbar B. Harris. The retiring party formed a new orthodox Society, with Sidney Holman as minister; and both institutions have thus continued since. These are at the Centre Village; where, still more recently, a Methodist Society has likewise been formed.

The principal strength of the latter denomination is at East Saugus, where a church was gathered about 1823. The house was built in 1827. The first minister was Warren Emerson; and the society has been both vigorous and prosperous till the present day. There was commenced, about the same time, a Methodist Society at the North Village; but it did not continue operations very long. But a similar one at Cliftondale had better fortune; and, having begun in 1854, is still active.

The school facilities are excellent; fine large buildings in each village being appropriated to the work. Even the "West Ward" has a good house, though when built, no one knew where to find the pupils to fill it. An excellent high school is kept at the Centre, where a capacious town hall has been erected within a few years.

The avenues of public travel in Saugus are numerous and commodious. We have mentioned both the Salem and Newburyport turnpikes. Between them runs the old Boston road to Malden Bridge, traversing both Cliftondale and East Saugus. Both this and the Salem Turnkike communicate directly with Lynn. In the extreme southern part, the Eastern Railroad crosses the whole township; but being wholly upon the marshes, affords no facility to the town's-people, most of them more than two miles away. This fact led them to devise the "Saugus Branch Railroad," which was finally opened for travel, Feb. 1, 1853. The route was so contrived as to reach all the three principal villages, with an eastern terminus at Lynn, and a junction with the Boston and Maine at Malden. Afterwards, the whole was absorbed by the Eastern Railroad, and was united to that line at both ends. A large share of the trains from Boston now run out on this route, which is a great accommodation to the many villages scattered along its way.

The population of this town is considerable; amounting, in 1875, to 2,578. She taxed that year 765 ratable polls, and registered 644 voters. Her manufactures were worth, in the aggregate, $771,370: among which were items for boots and shoes, $40,000; flannels, $437,500; cigars and tobacco, $100,000; slippers, $83,000. As examples of her agriculture, may be mentioned 96,118 gallons of milk, worth $19,594; 40,600 heads of cabbage, $1,963; and 260 tons of hay, $6,046. She had 21 farms of more than 10 acres, valued at $163,380. Her six public schools had buildings worth $18,000, and they made use of other property to the amount of $2,000.

SALISBURY.

Town settled in 1638, as early as March. Under that date, Winthrop, in his record, says: "Another plantation began on the north side of the Merrimac called Salisbury." Sept. 4, 1639, it was ordered to be called Colchester; and on Oct. 7, 1640, the General Court ordered Colchester to be called Salisbury. The first settlers of this town, like those of all other towns in New England, came at different times, from different parts of Old England, and may for convenience sake be divided into three classes. The first class comprised all those who, either by birth, education, or office, were entitled to the appellation of *Mr.* This, of course, included the ministers, magistrates, those who held an office in the militia as high as captain, and a few others. All the other inhabitants were called by the offices they held, — such as corporal, cornet, ensign, lieutenant, &c., — and, in default of any office, were styled goodman.

Of the sixty-four grantees of Salisbury, ten were entitled to be called *Mr.*, — a large proportion; for, says Hutchinson, "in a list of 100 freemen you will not find above 4 or 5 distinguished by *Mr.* although they were generally men of some substance. Goodman or *goodwife* were common appellations." If the husband was called *Mr.* the wife shared the honor, and was called *Mrs.* or *Madame*. The second class comprised the farmers, mechanics, &c.; and the third class, the servants whose time had been bought of themselves, or were hired by the month or year.

Salisbury originally included in its limits, South Hampton, a portion of Kingston, Plaistow, Seabrook, Newton, and Hampsted in New Hampshire, and Amesbury and Merrimac in Massachusetts.

The first record of a meeting held in Salisbury is dated March, 1639; at which it was ordered by Simon Bradstreet, Daniel Dennison, Christopher Batt, Samuel Winsley, Samuel and John Sanders, that there shall be two divisions of meadow-land, each man to have four acres to his one hundred pounds of personal property, and other divisions were left to be determined by future action. Upland lots were to be divided so that he who had £50 should have four acres, and he who had £150 should have sixty acres. This division of land was upon the principle, "that to him that hath shall be given." Its real object was, undoubtedly, to attract among them the settlement of men of wealth. The lots granted were on condition that they should be settled upon before the 6th of May, and that those having families should inhabit before the last of October. The granting of the lots to individuals shows the money value of the persons receiving them. The number of men who shared in this grant was twelve, and in 1639 the number had increased to sixty.

Simon Bradstreet was at the first meeting, and helped to organize the town by laying out roads, the "green," on which the first meeting-house and court-house stood, and assisted in the adoption of rules for their government.

Mr. Bradstreet was born in Lincolnshire, Eng., 1603; came over in 1630, as one of the assistants, and was thus continued till 1673. He was secretary of the Colony from 1630 to 1643; was chosen deputy governor in 1673; and so continued till 1679, when he was elected governor. He received no grants of land in Salisbury. He settled in Ipswich, and afterwards in Salem.

Daniel Dennison helped organize at the first meeting at "Merrimack," yet received no land. He settled in Ipswich in 1634, and received large tracts of land there. In 1671, he was appointed to hold a court at Hampton and Salisbury, was commissioner of the United Colonies, and appointed by the legislature major-general of the Colonies.

Samuel Dudley was a son of Gov. Thomas Dudley, born in 1606; came over with his father in 1630; settled in Salisbury, and received a house lot, a planting lot, and a meadow lot, at the first division of land in 1639. He was appointed magistrate "to end small causes" at Salisbury, for six years from 1639; lot-layer of the town; deputy from 1641 to 1646; appointed to lay out the bounds between Exeter and Hampton; 1647, associate justice of the court at Ipswich; 1648, appointed to keep court in the county of Norfolk. The same year sold all his land in Salisbury, and removed to Exeter; settled in the ministry there in 1650, where he spent his days; and died in 1683, aged seventy-nine years.

John Clark, born in England, 1598; was in Newbury 1638, and was one of the "petitioners for the plantation in Merrimac," but received no grants of land. Tradition says, "He was the first regular educated physician who resided in New England."

Christopher Batt came from Salisbury, Eng., and settled in Salisbury, Mass., in 1639. He was at the first meeting of the proprietors; a lot-layer, and one of the committee to confirm grants from 1639 to 1643; one of the prudential men; "drill officer" to train the company; commissioner; local magistrate; and four years deputy. He introduced the tanning business into the town, from which early sprung that branch of trade. In 1650–51, he removed to Boston; became a somewhat noted merchant, but was accidentally shot by his own son, who was firing at a mark in his orchard. He was sixty years old at the time of his death. The following is of interest: "1654—Christopher Batt, of Boston, merchant sold to Edmund Elliott of Salisbury, 30 acres of meadow, and also 'my 100£ Commonage' for and in consideration of a lot of merchantable boards, &c., 'to be delivered when I send for them by boat'" &c.

Edmund Batter was one of the grantees of the Merrimac Plantation; though no land was granted him. He settled in Salem as early as 1636.

Henry Diley, from Salisbury, England, received house, planting, and meadow lots, at the first division, and additional lots in 1640. He died, and his widow sold her landed estate to Henry Ambrose, of Salisbury. She married Mr. John Hall, a wealthy land-owner, who soon after died; and her third husband was the Rev. William Worcester, first minister of the town.

Gyles Fyrman was one of the grantees of the town, but had no land assigned him. He had large tracts given him in Ipswich, on condition of his living there three years as a practising physician. He afterwards returned to England, and became eminent as a religious teacher and physician.

Richard Kent, Jr., was one of the grantees of the town, but had no land assigned him. He was one of the early proprietors of Old Newbury.

John Sanders attended the first meeting of the proprietors; and house, planting, and meadow lots were granted him. He was from Weeks, Wiltshire Co., Eng. He sold his land in Salisbury to Richard Wells, in 1653; and settled in Wells, Me., where he and eighteen others took the oath of allegiance to the government of Massachusetts.

John Woodbridge, of Stanton, Eng., was born in 1613. Came to New England in 1634; was one of the grantees of Salisbury, but no land was laid out to him. He was ordained the first minister of Andover, Mass., in 1644.

Samuel Winsley, one of the grantees of the town, was the only one of the twelve who settled in Salisbury, and remained there until his death. He was a planter; lot-layer at the first division; committee to confirm grants; prudential man for eight years; local magistrate; freeman, 1639; commmissioner, 1640; deputy from 1642 to 1653; committee to view and run out the line between Salisbury and Hampton, between Exeter and Hampton; and also held other important trusts in the town. He died in 1663.

The twelve men who received the grant of Merrimac "were possessed of intelligent minds, virtuous hearts, useful influence and respectable character."

In 1639–40 the business of the town was almost wholly confined to the disposal of land among the settlers. In 1640 we find the first recognized action for the proper organization of a "town meeting." Then it was ordered that "in ye first of every meeting a Moderator shall be chosen who shall have to interrupt and call to order any who shall exceed propriety, and the Moderator who neglects to preserve order shall be fined two shillings and sixpence. Every freeman shall speak his turn and not otherwise, and shall signify when he is to speak by rising up and putting off his hat, and on his speech being ended

shall signify it by putting on his hat or sitting down, and in case he be interrupted by the Moderator and shall refuse to cease, shall forfeit for every such offense one shilling." "No person shall depart from the meeting without leave of the moderator, without subjecting himself to like fine."

Notwithstanding the wilderness of woods that covered the town, the care with which the early settlers guarded the growth of the forest-trees is very remarkable. No person could fell a tree on any street, or about the town, or on the "green," without being subject to a fine of twenty shillings; and the early records of the town contain several names of persons fined for violating these laws.

The names of those who received grants of land in the first division of the town, in 1639, are taken from the old book of records, as follows: Mr. Samuel Dudley, Mr. William Hooke, Mr. Christopher Batt, Mr. Samuel Winsley, Mr. Henry Biley, John Sanders, Mr. Francis Dowe, John Rolfe, Mr. Henry Munday, George Carr, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, John Harrison, Mr. John Hodges, John Fuller, Phillip Challis, Luke Heard, Josiah Cohbet, Jarrit Hadden, Anthony Colby, John Bailey, Sr., John Stephens, John Severance, Robert Pike, Robert Ring, Richard Singletary, Thomas Macy, John Hauxworth, John Clifford, John Eyres, Roger Eastman, Anthony Saddler, Mr. Fitts, Mr. Rowell, and Widow Christian Brown.

In 1641, at a general meeting of the freemen, there was granted William Patridge a meadow lot that was formerly granted William Currier, containing four acres, if it do not prejudice lots formerly laid out, in full of his lot formerly granted. The same year, George Carr was granted the island which bears his name, in the Merrimac River, and which has remained in the hands of his descendants to this day. Mr. Hall was granted twelve acres of land on the north side of the Merrimac River. In the 5th month, 20th day, an order was passed by the town, that all persons who had been granted lots of land should come and reside in the town before the first of November, or else their land should be forfeited to the town.

The first record of the laying out of roads, was made on the 12th of the 11th month, when it was ordered "that there should be a way layed out four rods in width from the Powow River Westward and so another way of the same width from the river Merrimac Northward next the land of Thomas Bradbury.

"This year the pay of laborers was fixed. Lot layers were to receive one cent per acre, for every lot layed out upon the Powow and Merrimac rivers. It was also ordered that the year shall be accounted thus; From the first of November to the last of the first month shall be winter months, and the seven other months shall be summer months, and all laborers for the winter months shall have no more but 16 pence per day, and for the Summer months 20 pence per day, and all carpenters shall have 2 pence per day more than laborers, that is 18 pence per day in winter, and 22 pence in Summer. Mowers to have 2 pence per day more. The sale of certain articles was also regulated: Clapboards five feet in length, 3 shillings per hundred, split, 4 shillings 6 pence per hundred. Butter 6 pence per pound; milk 3 half pence per quart, new milk one pence."

The first saw-mill was erected in 1641, by William Osgood; and for building this mill he was to receive fifty acres of upland, and ten acres of meadow.

In the 5th month, methods were adopted for making the highways passable through the town, and a system of working the highways was adopted. Fence-viewers were also appointed, and they were required "to have a care for the trees on the bank of the Merrimac River." Every man was required to work one day for making a road to carry corn to mill.

Three hundred acres were ordered to be enclosed for an ox common. This year, the Rev. William Worcester was granted 200 acres of land, Mrs. Rebecca Biles, 100; Henry Munday, 100; John Sanders, 200; Robert Pike, 200; John Hall, 100. In addition to the disposal of grants of land by the town, it also controlled the right of fishing in the rivers. Thus it is recorded, that the sole right of fishing in the Powow River was taken out of the hands of John Bagley, Sr., for having forfeited the conditions under which it was granted. John Harrison was granted liberty to cut as many trees as shall make two hundred pipe-staves, and to be freed from all taxes, save minister's tax. Staves were a great article of commerce, and their sale and shipment brought much ready cash. In subsequent years, several of the citizens made fortunes by freighting vessels with staves and lumber to the West Indies, and bringing return cargoes.

The first meeting-house was built at the East Parish, in 1640. It was situated below the East Salisbury depot, opposite the house of the late Moses French, on what is known as the "Common." Here was situated also the whipping-post and stocks. Its first minister was the Rev. William Worcester. Unfortunately, the early church records of this parish are lost, but enough is known to give a generally reliable account of the transactions of sufficient importance to be quoted. Thus, on the 11th month, 1641, at a general meeting of the inhabitants, Henry Munday and Thomas Bradbury were ordered to procure a workman to hang a bell in the meeting-house. This was the first bell ever rung in the town, and tradition says was sent over from England by an order from the Rev. William Worcester.

The first meeting-house in the West Parish was located about a half-mile north of the present location of the old Rocky Hill Church, and was built in 1665. In 1735, an article was inserted in the warrant to have this church moved; but not until 1784, was it successful. It caused great excitement, and the opposing party felt themselves greatly injured by the action of the town. The following protest, duly signed, was sent abroad: —

"We the subscribers, being dissatisfied with the proceedings of our town in removing our meeting house from us, as we judge that we are robbed of our just rights and privileges and are not dealt with after a Christian Manner, although there are a number that are dissatisfied with our Minister's doctrine and gone out of town to worship, yet we never refused paying our Minister's rates. It is the estates that pays the bulk of the rates; the polls pay but three shilling apiece, and there is no reason why the polls should run away with estates, and as our town is so divided in religious affairs that it seems there will be no religion soon. It was always said that our forefathers came into this land for religion's sake and they were Presbyterians. The Presbyterians' constitution of church government is the nearest the Scriptures of any denomination of Christians, we ought in conscience to look out for ourselves and our children. It is religion that upholds a people and saves them from ruin, and as our new Constitution gives all denomination of Christians free liberty, and no subject be hurt or molested or restrained in his person, liberty, or estate, for worshipping God in the manner and season most agreeable to the dictates of his own conscience, and as things stands in our town at this present time, we whose names are hereinafter mentioned have jointly and severally agreed to petition the parish of Seabrook to see if they will agree and build a new meeting house upon the Province line, or move their meeting house upon the Province line, and in so doing we will join them in ministerial affairs and will settle a Presbyterian minister and will pay our proportion of said minister's support according to each of our polls and estates." This was signed by Nathan Dole, Reuben Merrill, Benjamin Joy, Stephen Merrill, Aaron Clough, Reuben Burns, Enoch Goodwin, Ebenezer Tucker, Belcher Dole, Thomas Bagley, Daniel Merrill, Ezra Merrill, Seth Bagley, Benjamin Joy, Jr., Samuel Merrill, Osgood Carr, Lewis Eaton, Abraham Morrill, Perley Dow, Aaron Dow.

This year it was ordered that all the wood and timber upon all the common lands shall be divided to every inhabitant, apportioned according to his estate, except such land as shall be offered by the town for further consideration.

The energy of the early settlers is seen in the willingness with which they approved of all requests from those of their number who saw the advantages of utilizing the Powow River. Therefore, there was granted to Abraham Morrill and Henry Saywood threescore acres of upland, so near the falls as may be convenient, on condition "that before October they shall set up a mill of sufficient capacity to grind all the corn the town shall need." John Bayley, Sr., was granted the exclusive right of fishing in Powow River, on condition that he shall not dispose of his fish to any but inhabitants of the town. But, after the expiration of twenty-four hours, if he find no sale for his fish, he could sell them elsewhere; but his fishways were to be full-sea high. Thus it appears that "fisherman's rights" were duly considered in the early years, though in a somewhat exclusive manner.

1642. The first meetings of the town, related, as before, to the voting of land grants; and the business of the town was placed in the hands of "seven men"; viz., Wm. Worcester, Samuel Dudley, Edward French, Richard Wells, Wm. Pattridge, Robert Pike, Wm. Hooke, Ralph Blaisdell. The first record of a county and town rate; and Thomas Hall, Thos. Bradbury, Thomas Macy, and Robert Pike were ordered to levy the tax. The rate for the county to be £12 10*s*. The town rate, £3 15*s*. More decided action was taken for repairing and building town-ways and bridges, and Thomas Bradbury and Richard North were ordered to seize the goods of any person, to double the amount of his tax, who should refuse to work.

"5th mo. 11th. At a general meeting it was ordered and agreed

that thirty families of the town shall remove to the west side of Powow River before the first of the third mo. 1645." Seven men were appointed to approve the persons who should go; viz., Wm. Worcester, Samuel Dudley, Richard Wells, Robert Pike, Wm. Hooke, Ralph Blaisdell, and Wm. Pattridge. They to divide and distribute the lands on the west side, and to fix rates for taxes. This was the first movement made for the settlement of the town of Amesbury; and land was granted there to thirty persons. Laws were adopted for the government of the ox common on the north side of the great neck leading to the sea; a highway was laid out to run from Powow River, through "Amesbry," up into the country. Samuel Dudley was chosen deputy, and the improved land on the west side of Powow River (Amesbury) was ordered to be rated at half so much as improved land in the town, until they have a minister there. Mr. Worcester's rate was £27 for six months. At a meeting held on the 12th mo. 18th, Samuel Winsley and Samuel Dudley were chosen "deputies for the next General Court to be holden at Boston, 7th of 1st mo." It was ordered that those persons who go up to live on the west side of Powow River shall have the liberty of the sole feeding of their cattle on the common, and other privileges conceded them. Grants of land were made to Richard Goodale, Richard Currier, Robert Pike, Christopher Batt, Abraham Morrill, and P. Challis. Joseph Cobham was chosen grand juryman. Messrs. Dudley, Thos. Bradbury, Robert Pike, Mr. Munday, and Isaac Bussell, assessors. The fishing interest was so far established that the town granted to Robert Ring, of Ring's Island, two acres of upland for putting up fish flakes for the cure of fish. For two hundred years, Ring's Island was devoted to that business. This year, fears were aroused on account of the threatened hostility of the Indians; and Passaconway, the Indian chief, who lived by the Merrimac, was to be disarmed by order of the Court. Forty armed men were sent for that purpose, twelve of whom belonged in Salisbury. The people were also in trouble over a great tornado, which did considerable damage along the coast towns from Lynn to Hampton. It extended in a narrow limit, and in its course blew down many forest-trees. Groves of oak and pine covering the rocky pasture and intervale land for a mile in extent, in the vicinity of where now is located the Salisbury almshouse, were blown down.

1643. Luke Hurd was chosen constable; and Richard North, town crier; Thomas Bradbury and John Severance, highway surveyors, and arrangements made for digging the town creek; Samuel Winsley and Samuel Dudley, deputies to the General Court, 7th of 1st mo.

1644. Meetings of the freemen were held; and additional land grants made to John Carr, John Stevens, Willie Brown, and others, and orders given to protect both trees and lands from encroachments, and the fisheries of the town from being destroyed or abused. Theo. Whitcher, John Hoyt, Willie Sargent, and Theo. Russell were fined for trespassing upon the rules of the town, and ordered to pay their fines in "pipe-staves, corn or cattle."

The first-recorded sale of a house is dated the 20th of January. Richard Macy sold unto Richard Currier his new dwelling-house and lot, with all things thereunto belonging. Following this are recorded several sales of land.

1645. The manufacture of pitch, tar, and resin was prosecuted as an industry; but none was to be carried out of the town, under penalty of twenty shillings. The reason of this order has some reference to the prosecution of the building of small fishing-boats on the Merrimac. Tradition says that large numbers of such boats were built at a very early period at Salisbury; of which more hereafter. Samuel Winsley was chosen deputy, "to have eight shillings per week while he attends Court." A highway to the beach was voted; and Thomas Macy was ordered to see that the "highway be layed out from the mill to the Merrimac."

1646. At a general meeting of freemen, it was ordered that Samuel Dudley, Left. Pike, Thos. Bradbury, Ralph Blaisdale, Thos. Macy, Sarget. Challis, Samuel Winsley, shall have power to order and dis, pose of all town affairs (except lands and timber) for one year.

1647. Mr. Batt, Thos. Bradbury, Ed. French, Mr. Buswell, and Mr. Wells were chosen to the charge of town affairs (except timber and lands) for one year. The town exercised a jealous care over its timber and lands; and the power of sale was kept in the hands of the freemen, to be acted on in town-meeting. Richard North was voted "fifty shillings for ringing the bell two years and a half, and twenty shillings to ring it one year more."

1648. Both grand and petit jurors were chosen. Mr. Munday was ordered to rate estates according to order of court; and John Stevens, to gather up the town rates ordered by the "seven men." Robert Pike, Mr. Winsley, Willie Sargent, Henry Ambrose, and Philip Challis were appointed to settle the bounds between Salisbury and Hampton. Several persons were fined for disorderly talk in town-meeting. A county way was laid out from Carr's Island to East Salisbury. The island was connected with the main land by ferriage, and from thence across the river by ferry to Newburyport, which was the only means of communication between the two places.

1649. Salisbury was made a shire town by the General Court. In the old "Norfolk County" records are preserved the cases coming before the courts in Salisbury. The court-house was established at East Salisbury. On the settlement of the boundary line between Massachusetts and New Hampshire, Norfolk County was abolished in 1680, and the town lost its title of "shire town." The method of conducting trials is indicated in the following, taken from the town records: "At a general meeting of freemen, held 11th of 1st month, Left. Pike, Mr. Wells, Mr. French, and Mr. Cobham, were chosen to serve on the jury of trials, at the next county court, to be holden at Salisbury." A rate of £22 was made this year to pay town debts. Stephen Flanders was admitted as townsman, on condition that he should keep the town herd of cows. Thomas Petitt was admitted a townsman, and given liberty to dwell in the watch-house till next May-day. It appears by the record that a rule of the town fined all freemen who absented themselves from town-meeting. Many fines had accumulated, and this year a vote was passed remitting the fines.

1650. John Stevens and Samuel Fellows were chosen surveyors of highways. Surveyors of fences were chosen, and fines and penalties voted against all who did not build in accordance with the rules adopted by the town. It was also ordered that Willie Osgood "shall have liberty to make use of all the pine timber between the west side of the path leading from the house of Jona. Bagley to Exeter, and on other growths, on condition of his building a saw mill, to be completed before May, 1652." For this grant of timber-land, comprising some three hundred acres, Willie Osgood agreed to pay one-half hundred boards and plank, merchantable, for every thousand sawn at the mill. At this mill the first planks were sawn for ship-building purposes on the Merrimac River. A ship, built by Mr. Greaves, and one by Nathan Gold, were furnished plank at this mill. In 1689, Willie Osgood surrendered up to the town all his right and interest in this grant of timber-land. The capacity of the mill is learned by a deposition found in the Essex County court files, wherein Richard Currier testifies that the mill in Salisbury is "no waies inferior to the mill at Amesbury," which, in the spring, "saws about five or six thousand foot of bord a weeke for three months together."

1651. The prudential men voted a rate of thirty pounds for repairing and finishing of the meeting-house and paying town debts. Samuel Winsley was ordered to prosecute the business between the town and Hampton, at the next General Court, about the settling of the bounds. The Rev. William Worcester was voted five-and-twenty pounds for preaching. Anthony Colby and Philip Challis were chosen to order the prudential affairs of the town. It was voted that the old meeting-house should have an addition of sixteen feet. Henry Brown and Samuel Fellows were chosen surveyors of fences for the old town; Jerrett Haddow and —— Hoyt for the new town. The new town (Amesbury) being under the jurisdiction of Salisbury at that time, not having been incorporated by the State.

1652. Thomas Bradbury was chosen to be school-master to teach all the children (those only excepted who have not the knowledge of letters) in writing and reading; and otherwise, so far as his abilities will reach unto. The town agreed to pay him twenty pounds per annum for his services. He was to have the privilege of attending the county courts, and the benefit of teaching other children. The "overseers," or school committee, were Willie Worcester, Samuel Winsley, Left. Robert Pike, and Thomas Macy; they, among other duties, to judge when the teaching of other children was prejudicial to the interests of the school. The seats in the meeting-house were assigned; but twelve of the prominent men dissented from such assignment. The wolves troubled the settlers to such an extent that a town bounty of thirty shillings was offered for each wolf killed. Thomas Bradbury, Thomas Macy, John Ilsley, Andrew Greeley, and John Gyll, were chosen to order the planting and prudential affars of the town; except the disposal of upland, meadow, and timber, and erecting buildings. A highway, four rods wide, from the mill bridge to Lion's Mouth was ordered, Anthony Colby and Richard Currier to care for the same.

1653. The "five men," or selectmen, gave liberty to any townsman to put his cattle upon the town common, and Richard Goodale was ordered to look after those delinquent in working upon the highway.

Mr. Worcester was ordered to be paid twenty-five pounds for his last year's maintenance, to be paid by contribution, and those who did not pay to be taxed. The first suit at law which the selectmen had to settle is thus recorded: Mr. Samuel Winsley, plaintiff, against Philip Challis, defendant, in an account of debt upon goods delivered unto him, as one iron pot, a bottle of liquor, and other things. The plaintiff withdraws the account, allowed the defendant for costs, five shillings and fourpence. Another lawsuit between Samuel Winsley and Abraham Morrill, for goods delivered, plows, harrows, &c.; Mr. Winsley, plaintiff, was allowed five shillings and elevenpence, and costs of the meeting, nine shillings. At a general meeting of the town it was ordered that that which is commonly called Beach Common, running from Merrimac River's mouth to Hampton River's mouth shall remain a common to the use of the town forever. But in the mowing of the grass, every townsman was to have his proportion according to his estate. Sixty names are recorded in this division, and Anthony Colby, Thomas Macy, Mr. Munday, Abraham Morrill, Samuel Hall, and Jonathan Rolfe, were, evidently, the largest real estate owners. The division of the mowing of the grass towards the Merrimac and Great Creek barberry meadows was divided among sixty persons, which would make the number of property-holders in the town, under the two divisions, about one hundred and twenty.

1654. Joseph Peasley and Thomas Macy, for violating a law which forbade any but ordained ministers from preaching, were arrested and fined. This caused great excitement in neighboring towns, and petitions, numerously signed, were sent to the General Court to remit the fine and imprisonment imposed on Lieut. Robert Pike. Those who signed the petition were also called to account, and bound over in ten pounds each. Such as acknowledged their offence were released. The signing of the petition for release was considered as an offence against the court.

1655. This year was built the first bridge across the Merrimac. It was a floating bridge, between Carr's Island and Newbury, at the old ferry. It was five feet wide, rails on each side, and 270 feet long. It was built by George Carr, who owned the island; and for this service he received liberal grants of land in the town. The ancient road leading to the ferry on the Salisbury shore, though abandoned a hundred years ago, still remains.

1656. Lieut. Robert Pike, Edward French, Willie Buswell, Willie Osgood, and John Ilsley, were chosen prudential men.

1657. At a general meeting of the town, Robert Pike, moderator, it was ordered that the breaches of all orders concerning timber, boards, staves, &c., shall be prosecuted. Also voted, that Mr. Worcester's salary for the midsummer quarter be at the rate of six pounds per annum. Liberty was granted to Left. Pike, Jonathan Clough, and Henry True, to transport so many plank as will serve for the deck of a vessel building at Boston. A grant was given to "Left. Robert Pike to build a warehouse on the Ferry, if it doth not prejudice the country way." The following order may serve to amuse, if it does not instruct, the reader. We copy it verbatim: "Ordered, that whose swine shall be taken upon ye Common after ye first of March next ensuing without their snouts slitt down to the grissell, and slit half an inch on either side the said slitt along by the grissell, shall forfeit five shillings per head for every swine, the one half to ye informer, and the other half to the towne."

1658 and 1659. The thirst for land seemed to be a growing desire among the settlers, and the division of five hundred acres by vote occasioned some difficulty; seven persons entering their contrary dissent; viz., Lieut. Robert Pike, Thomas Bradbury, Edmond Elliott, Robert Ring, John Stevens, John Rolfe, and John Maxfield. Lieut. Pike denounced the action as unjust, declaring it was equivalent to saying, because we have the power we will take it and divide it among ourselves. It was voted, 11th of 12th month, that there shall be a general meeting for the choice of all public officers for the town, and for the election of a deputy to the General Court, and for one to administer oaths and marrying. A further division of land was made and a highway of four rods wide laid out next to Merrimac River. It was ordered that Mr. Worcester shall have his maintenance for the year, either sixty pounds or fifty pounds and the produce of the old saw-mill, provided the new town continue with the old town. John Severance was to keep the ordinary and to provide for the court. The county rate for the year was established and seventy-six persons were assessed in the town.

In 1860 and 1861 further divisions of land were made among fifty-eight property owners in the town, and Edward Freneh, George Goldwyer, Willie Osgood, Capt. Robert Pike, and William Worcester, received each one hundred acres.

1662. This year the Rev. John Wheelwright came to the town to preach, and it was agreed "that for his maintenance while he should continue among us that he should have three score pounds a year while the new town continues as one with us, but when they have a minister he shall be paid the full sum of fifty pounds per year by the town of Salisbury, besides accommodation of house and land."

1663. At a general meeting, Sept. 29th, two divisions of land were ordered to be made "above the mill," with a sufficient highway, beginning at the north end of John Stevens's lot, and so run till it comes to a spacious turn towards Powow Hill; but the woods were so thick up between the hill ranges as to make the running of the road a difficult matter.

1664. This year a meeting was held, John Severance moderator, and a new meeting-house was ordered to be built with all convenient speed. It was also added that all the townsmen "shall have libertie to make staves or bolts, or heading, or planks, allowing to the town one hundred out of every thousand, and to give a true account to Thos. Bradbury of the number of staves made, and the number of trees felled upon the old common belonging to the old town." This year we have a recognition of the division of the town into its several districts, which has been continued all through its history. Fence-viewers, highway surveyors, &c., were chosen as follows: "For the old town, for the new town, ye middle town," (Mills) and Batt's Hill, or Plains. Henry Dearing was allowed ten pounds a year for his encouragement in teaching school in town, and to have the privileges of a commoner.

1665–66. In the early records there is evidence that the settlers and leading men were disposed to deal justly by the Indians. Many facts might be given to confirm this view, but the following will suffice: At a meeting held 6th of 1st month, Thomas Bradbury moderator, "there was granted to Ned, an Indian, the right to set up a fish ware in the town creek to catch fish for the summer following." In another instance it is recorded that one of the settlers was held to account for dealing unfairly by an Indian. A committee was appointed to build an addition to the barn for the ministry, a floor to thrash on, and to finish off the attic for a library-room; stone the well, and do the finishing work for the minister's house.

1666. On the 6th of 1st month, Capt. Robert Pike, Willie Buswell, and Thomas Bradbury were chosen a committee to treat with the Rev. John Wheelwright and debate with him about any matters of difference between him and the town.

The ministry of Mr. Wheelwright was not a very pleasant one. He early came in conflict with Capt. Robert Pike; yet no one of the early ministers of the town possessed such powers of mind. His trouble with the parish and appeals to the government only served to create still stronger prejudice. The connection between parish and people was broken in 1678. He soon after went back to England; returned to this country and settled in Exeter, N. H., and left upon the records of the town of Exeter and the State of New Hampshire, the evidences of his genius, not alone as a scholar and religious teacher, but in wise statesmanship. Capt. Pike was chosen "deputie" for the town for its first sessions of next General Court. John Dickenson and John Eaton were chosen surveyors for highways; William Buswell, clerk of the market; Richard Currier, measurer; Richard Goodale, "hawzord" (pound-keeper).

1667–68. The town line between Salisbury and Hampton became a troublesome question and its final determination was ordered. At a General Court, held at Boston May 22d, "George Carr, in consideration of having built a bridge over Salisbury River, shall be freed from any tax to town or County, except minister's tax, and the minister and his family to be ferried from said bridge." The salary of Mr. Wheelwright was increased from £50 to £60.

1668–69. The desire of the early settlers to provide well for the future is seen, not only in the demand made for the building of roads and care of forest-trees, but also in their efforts to encourage school-teachers to settle among them. Another feature was the provision made for the care and raising of stock. Stock-raising in many of the settlements was much neglected. Not so in Salisbury. The extra care and guardianship of the "Cow Common," and "Ox Common," and the "town herd of cows," shows conclusively that there were minds who considered the wealth involved in fostering this branch of the farmer's calling. Other instances of this care are given in the records; viz., the persons appointed to apportion the Common were instructed to provide watering-places for the cattle. In 1668 there was "reserved convenient land for a watering place for cattle about the Pine Hill Ridge to remayne to ye said use forever."

1670–72. The selectmen were given authority to appoint surveyors of highways and to instruct them in their duties. Several meetings of the town were held during the years, but the business was mainly with reference to grants, gifts, changes and sales of land. In 1672, there appears the first recorded sale of a horse, viz: "Christopher Guild sold unto Jno. Severance, sen: of the town, a bright bay stone horse with a black mane and tayle; a white blaze down ye forehead, about fower year old."

1673–75. The first assistance to poor and indigent persons is recorded, and the constable was ordered to procure comfortable subsistence and entertainment for widow Buford and Clement Jarmine.

A convenient highway to the beach was very early agitated, and the surveyors were ordered to see it done. A committee of three was appointed to settle the bounds between Amesbury and Salisbury, with three men appointed by Amesbury. The fear of the Indians, whose appearance had been noted by unfriendly acts for some months, caused the town to erect a place of security from sudden attack. Thus it was ordered on the 20th of September, 1675: "That what soldiers or inhabitants soever belonging to this towne shall refuse or neglect to come to work about ye fortifications appointed by ye militia forthwith to be erected for ye security of ye town, especially women and children, shall be fined five shillings."

1676. Henry Brown was appointed to be town appraiser, Wm. Brown, constable, and Thos. Rawlenson to keep "the town's flock of sheep from May until October, and to have six pence a head," to be paid as follows: "four pound of butter for every twenty sheep and lambs and one bushel of corn for every score, and ye remaynder of ye pay in corn or other good pay." Wm. Bradbury was given leave to "set up a pue or seate in ye meeting house in ye hindermost seat behind ye women's seats, next to the window, as shall be convenient for myself and family."

1677–78. Much of the business or trade between individuals was by barter, and the chief article for this purpose in the heavier transactions was lumber. Therefore, the town records contain many cases of persons who were brought before "ye Commissioners of Salisbury," for refusing or neglecting to pay their agreements in lumber.

1679. The town had trouble about paying the salary of the Rev. John Wheelwright, and Henry True and Ephraim Winsley were chosen attorneys in behalf of the town to answer an account brought against the town by the minister. The Rev. Geo. Burroughs was called to preach, and for his support the town voted him four score pounds per annum, twenty pounds in current New England money, and three score pounds in corn and provisions, with house and land belonging to the ministry. Mr. Burroughs did not accept, and in 1682, Mr. Samuel Andros was invited to come and preach, and the call to him was renewed. Mr. James Alling was invited "to come and settle among us and marry, if it shall please ye lord yt he dies while he is with us, the town doth engage and order that his wyfe shall have twenty acres of upland, or in lieu of land, three score pounds." Mr. Allen accepted the offer and the agreement on the part of the town was fulfilled, and to this day the "Allen lot" is known in Salisbury (East), where he was settled for many years. He died there in 1696.

Limited space compels us to pass over many of the yearly recorded acts which make up the history of the town, together with the grants of land made to sundry persons. The custom of having a "parsonage pew," originated with the Rev. Mr. Allen, whose request to build a pew for Mrs. Allen to sit in, next the pulpit, was granted.

In 1692, a law was enacted that every town within the Province having the number of fifty householders or upwards, shall be constantly provided with a schoolmaster to teach children and youth to read and write, and towns with one hundred families or householders should establish a grammar school, and the selectmen were required to take effectual care and make due provision for the settlement and maintenance of schoolmasters. A neglect of this duty subjected delinquent towns to a fine of £10. As early as 1648 the town employed a schoolteacher. Under this law the services of Ephraim Winsley and Benjamin Eastman were secured, the former at the lower part of the town, and the last named at the upper section. Following this action the town voted that a teacher should be employed competent to teach Latin, for the reason "that some young men wanted to be learned for a physician and a knowledge of Latin was necessary."

1693–94. Thomas Bradbury, who had been identified with the interests of the town for many years, serving as town clerk, instructor of youth, constable, representative, selectman, lot-layer, &c., died, leaving a legacy of five pounds to the poor of the town.

The death of Rev. Mr. Allen left the East Parish without a minister, and a general meeting was called at which a vote was passed "that the town will send to Mr. Cushing to know whether he be clear or not: Isaac Morrill Sen., and Ensign Will Allen were directed to find that if he be free then they give him an invitation to our town, to help us in the work of ye ministry in order for a further call as God shall make way for us." Mr. Cushing accepted the call, and in 1696, the town voted to give him £60 in good merchantable pay, ten of it in silver money, with four contributions, "besides ye sixty pounds," and the use of the parsonage house, and all the lands and meadows belonging thereto, during his stay. It was voted that ye ordination be the second Wednesday of November, and Capt. Wm. Bussell, Isaac Morrill, Sen., and Nathl. Eastman, Sen., are chosen to take care and provide things needful. Tax rate paid to the State 32 pounds, 19 shillings, 8 pence. This year a saw mill was built by John Wadley on the Powow River, making the third mill on the Salisbury side. Later, Benjamin Eastman "petitioned for a right in Powow River, between the Mill Bridge and the old saw mill, now in possession of Major March, Thomas Currier and Jacob Morrill, and with it the right to improve four rods of land adjoining, for the purpose of building a fulling mill, to full the town's cloth, before any other town, they paying as other towns. Agreed to so long as the said Eastman performs the said conditions." In 1703 agreements were made between Salisbury and Newbury to maintain two ferry-boats for passengers and teams over the Merrimac. Jeremiah Eastman was elected the town school-master, for twenty-three pounds a year — "he to teach them to read, write, cipher, and Latin."

1704–06. At this period it was voted that all the common land should be laid out, and sixty persons shared in this division. But on petition of Jacob Morrill, Jarvis Ring, Joseph Page, William Smith, and John Wadleigh, sixty acres of land were reserved for the use of the poor people "who had settled on the land for a supply of their necessities." Christopher Tappan, of Newbury, received judgment against the commoners as one of the heirs to Christopher Batt's division in the common land. This year the selectmen and town officers took the oath of office, and the records classify the voters and citizens as "freeholders." Willie Bradbury was chosen schoolmaster, and to "teach the children to read, write, cipher, and to teach grammar to such as doe come." A committee was appointed to select "wimmin for scoole-dames for ye several places in ye town most convenient." The town was continually troubled about the proper adjustment of land claims, and it required the services of one or two agents to attend such cases in the courts at Ipswich.

1708–10. The assessment of the parish tax had been growing in disfavor among a considerable portion of the citizens, and in 1708, no one was chosen to collect the minister's rate. Accordingly, a committee was appointed, with instructions, to settle the matter between the town and the Rev. Caleb Cushing, and to call the several constables to account. Several years the controversy about paying the arrears due the minister was carried on, and many pages of the records are taken up with this matter. The Rev. Dr. Webster had an unsettled account of £200, and quite a sum was due Mr. Cushing. Thirty pounds was due the estate of the Rev. James Allen, which was paid. Samuel March was chosen school-master, and voted £30; five in money, the balance in provisions, to be paid quarterly, "so that our youth may be educated in learning, and the law of the country obeyed."

1710. This was quite an eventful year in the town. The subject of building a new meeting-house agitated the people greatly. In addition thereto the following petition shows that the industries at the "mills," on the Powow River, confined mostly to saw-mills and grist-mills, and a fulling-mill, were to receive a new impulse: —

"The humble petition of we, the subscribers, to the town of Salisbury, assembled this 21st day of March, 1710: hereby showeth that whereas your petitioners have had thoughts for to set up and build Iron Works upon ye Falls in ye Powow River, humbly prays ye town that they would please to grant them some small matter for ye promoting that design which if we shall go on with ye work it may prove a great benefit to the town. Therefore, we pray ye town to grant that we may be freed from all rates that may arise on said works, and to give something that may promote that work; so hoping that you may oblige us in this thing. We remain your humble servants,

John March, John Barnett, Jarvis Ring."

The petition was granted, the works were built, and for several years did quite a business in the town. Anchors for many ships built on the Merrimac were forged at the works, the ships "Alliance" and "Essex" among the number.

1711–12. The meeting-house trouble continued to vex the people. A committee consisting of Dea. Moss, of Newbury, Dea. Tinnie, of

Bradford, Dea. Stevens, of Amesbury, Dea. Leavitt, of Exeter, and Dea. Shaw, of Bradford, in connection with the selectmen, were chosen to settle the location. And a committee was appointed to confer with, and entertain a committee appointed by the Legislature. The question was finally settled in 1714, the church built, and the West Parish established. Jurors were allowed two shillings a day for their service, and grand jurors one shilling.

1721. This year the town received its proportion of the £50,000 issued by the state in bills of credit. It was placed in the hands of trustees, "and let out by them to the inhabitants at five per centum from time to time as they may have occasion for it, on good security, not above £15 to any person at one time." The money was not to be let out for a longer term than four years at the first letting. This town's proportion was £410 10*s*. Such was the scarcity of silver, that the issue of this paper money was designed to aid the trade and business of the Province. It was not popular with the people.

For many years the unsettled condition of the boundary line between Hampton and Salisbury had led to much contention. The collectors of both towns in turn levied upon the property of those persons within the line of the disputed territory, and finally the authority of the governor of the state was invoked to protect the people.

The settlement of the boundary line caused a committee of the General Court, with the governor at their head, to assemble at East Salisbury. The "State" house, as it is called, is still standing where the governor and committee met to determine the question.

1727. The interest-money on the bills of credit in the hands of the treasurer was voted to be paid into the town. The money received from the state occasioned no little anxiety from the time the first loan was received until paid up and withdrawn. Several times the trustees of the fund were questioned as to the disposal of the fund; but as long as the interest-money was paid, public anxiety was allayed, but when not paid, a public meeting was called, and judging by some portions of the record, hard thoughts found expression.

From 1727 to 1773 the town continued to foster its little industries. The saw-mills, five in number, were a considerable source of income to the people at the "mills," and at Webster's Point ship-building was attracting settlers and building up that locality. The sustaining of public worship by a town tax-rate was a prolific source of trouble. The two settled ministers, with their friends, were yearly soliciting increase of pay, which may be taken as a good indication of prosperity among the people.

In 1773 the town was visited by a violent tornado. The Rev. Mr. Webster, the West Parish minister, in his diary, says of it: "This tempest was preceded by heavy rain and gross darkness. It first appeared on the Merrimac river, and rolled up the waters upon the banks, and threatened to swallow up the affrighted inhabitants. From the river inland it covered three quarters of a mile, and extended to the sea. The tempest continued for three minutes, and wrecked and destroyed one hundred buildings in the town. Yet through the great and marvellous mercy of God who ruleth in the storm, no life was lost or bone broken on the Salisbury side, where the most damage was done."

The action of the town during the "Revolutionary period," from 1770 to the close of the war, is an unexceptionably bright and patriotic record. March 13th the town voted that "thanks be given to the respectable body of Merchants in Boston and other towns for their truly generous non-importation agreement, and for their prudent and vigorous endeavors in this critical time to save their Country." . . . "That we will not ourselves drink any foreign teas and endeavor (sickness excepted) that none shall be drinked in our houses till the duties are taken off and the other Revenue acts repealed." Col. Caleb Cushing and Capt. Nathaniel Currier were candidates for representatives, and received 55 votes each. At the second meeting, Col. Cushing was elected. One hundred pounds voted for town expenses.

At a meeting dated Dec. 28, 1772, the freeholders and other inhabitants, voted and resolved unanimously:

1. That the most essential rights of mankind are—Life, Liberty and Property.

2. That the only end and design of government is to secure these.

3. That gross invasions have been made upon these our rights by the British administration till our grievances and oppressions are become intolerable.

4. That our Representative be instructed to use all his influence in the house that all proper measures may be taken to obtain a redress of these grievances.

5. That if this fails of effect, this town are ready to unite with the other towns in this government, and with all the other British governments on this continent in all lawful measures which on joint consultation shall be judged necessary to save our sinking state and to obtain redress of our grievances.

6. That a copy of the above resolves be transmitted by the town clerk, to the gentlemen of the Committee of communication and correspondence at Boston, thanking them for their seasonable and prudent care of the public good.

In 1774, on the reception of the news that the harbor of Boston had been blockaded, the town voted, "This is a blow at the root of all American liberty and property and renders it all precarious forever. Voted, that since we cannot have commerce with Great Britain upon no easier terms than giving up our liberty and property, it is best to have none and therefore that if the other Colonies, or we of this Province in general come into measures, we will after the 14th inst., forbear all trade with Great Britain and Ireland and the West Indies, till the port of Boston is again opened as heretofore." For the distress occasioned to the poor of Boston by the "embargo," the town not only voted aid, but contributed sixty pounds. Mr. Samuel Smith, Capt. Henry Eaton, and Maj. Nathaniel Currier, were a committee to confer with the town of Marblehead on the state of affairs. The "Committee of Correspondence" were Capt. William Hackett, Dr. Samuel Nye, and Lemuel Stevens.

Mr. Samuel Smith was chosen delegate to the Provincial Congress, to be holden at Cambridge in February, and in May following, Maj. Nathaniel Currier was chosen a delegate to the Congress, and July 4th chosen to represent the town in the Legislature. Twenty pounds voted in timber, rocks, and labor, towards stopping the channel of the Merrimac, to prevent British ships to enter: the pay of the minutemen voted; powder and ball, and clothing for the soldiers, provided; and the selectmen instructed to hire money to pay the soldiers. The Committee of Safety consisted of eleven men; viz., John March, Moses Pike, Josiah French, Capt. Steven Merrill, Henry Moody, Henry Morrill, Lieut. Benjamin Evans, Capt. Joseph Pike, Capt. William Hackett, Lieut. John Hackett, and Dr. Samuel Nye. Said committee to act in the town's behalf, and during the town's pleasure, and were empowered to give such encouragement as they deem necessary to soldiers, that the town may be called upon from time to time to raise, without calling the town together.

For two months' service at Cambridge, and classed as "minutemen," the following names are recorded: Jacob Currier, William Osgood, Abel Morrill, William Tucker, Israel Morrill, Samuel Dudley, William Morrill, Philip Osgood, Rufus Smith, Stephen Smith, Daniel Gale, Jeremiah Morrill, Joshua Morrill, Archelaus Adams, Jr., William Hackett, Jr., Elias Pike.

For service at "Winter Hill" for two months: Joseph Wadleigh, Jacob Currier, Thomas Arnold, Jeremiah Brown, Samuel True, Sylvanus Eaton, Jona. Webster, Daniel Morrill, Abel Jackman, John True, Isaac Dalton, Robert Fowler, Richard Brown, William Osgood, Robert Maxfield, Samuel Hackett, David Eaton, Benjamin Eaton, Moses Collins, William Morrill, Jeremiah Morrill, Charles Morrill, Lieut. William Brown, Joseph Gerrish, Jonathan Sellers, John Dalton, Joseph Maxfield, John Merrill, Jr., Simon French, Jabez True, Nathaniel Jackson, John Brown, Jacob Ring, Aaron Dow, Benjamin French, Jr., Jere. Dole, Samuel Carr, Jr., William Pike.

Those paid as Continental soldiers, some of whom fought at Bunker Hill, and afterwards enlisted for three years, were: Jacob Blaisdell, John Carr, Eliphalet Woodward, Thomas Griffin, William Sellers, John Merrill, Jona. Blaisdell, John Griffin, David Davis, Jeremiah Brown, Samuel Morrill, Enos French, Winthrop Wiggin, Samuel Colby, Samuel Dudley, James Sellers, Nathaniel Dustin, Samuel Stevens, Thomas Brown, Dudley Stearns, William Gould, Moses French, Richard Hoyt, James Davis, Daniel Marshal, Elijah Dow, Moses Collins, Lieut. William Brown, Samuel Webster, Stephen Smith, Moses French, Jona. Sawyer, Jona. Fowler, John Mansfield, William Eaton, John Brown, James Noyes, William Glidden, John Carr, Joseph Adams, Lieut Lewis, Capt. Nath. Currier, Daniel Gale, Jeremiah Dole, Levi Tilton.

Thirteen soldiers were paid who went to Providence, and ten soldiers were paid who went to Rhode Island.

On the record is the following: "There is due Francis Maxfield, two thousand old emission dollars equal to seventy-five for one, if said Maxfield should call for his money." He was reported among the killed at Bunker Hill. "Paid Ebenezer Tucker and Jabez True £42 for making shoes for the soldiers; also Philip Wadleigh, Daniel Moody, Enoch Hoyt, for shoes, stockings and shirts, £15 each." "Paid Enoch Jackman for cash paid Mr. Osgood of Andover for the

town's quota of beef for the army £13,632" (this was in Continental currency).

Twenty-eight soldiers were enlisted in addition to the above-named.

The cost of shoes, clothing, and blankets, furnished the soldiers of the Continental Army by the town, was £1,900 6*s*.

In 1779, upon the adoption of the new Constitution, the town voted "To accept the new Constitution in every article, except those which follow — in the third article in the bill of Rights after these words: And all moneys paid by the subject to the support of public worship and the public teachers aforesaid, shall, if he require it be uniformly applied to the support of yc public teachers of his own religious sect or denomination, provided there be any on whose instruction he attends. It is the mind of this town that these words should be added — 'provided, also, that he signify his mind publicly and enter his dissent at the settlement of a minister as being of a different denomination.'" This amendment was urged for the reason that the people being left at an utter uncertainty who is to support their minister, and the minister whether he can have any support at all, and also for the reason that a man might change his religious sentiments for the sake of avoiding his civil obligations, and it does not come within the power of the government to dissolve such a contract. Fifty-five voted for the amendment, twelve against.

The result of so much trouble with ministers' rates, building and repairing churches and parsonage-houses, led to action on the part of many citizens of Salisbury, which finally resulted in severing the whole parish-tax system. The first opposition was made by Mr. Robt. Pike, who protested against being compelled to pay a tax for the support of preaching, as against the Constitution of the State. A petition was presented to the General Court by citizens of Salisbury and Amesbury, praying "that they may be exempted from paying ministerial charges to the Congregational ministers in said towns." The result of this petition was the calling of a town-meeting on the 27th day of December, and Caleb Cushing, Maj. Joseph Page, Dr. Samuel Nye, Benjamin Evans, and Moses Rowell were chosen a committee to prepare such reasons as they shall judge necessary against the prayer of the petition. Subsequently the town voted "not to raise any more money for the support of ministers by virtue of any vote passed in the town prior to votes passed in 1751; and later (1788), voted, "that the town will not take any action respecting ministerial affairs," and voted against hiring the Rev. Mr. Webster and the Rev. Mr. Noyes. This virtually ended the parish-tax system under the old law.

Sept. 19, 1786, a town-meeting was called to hear the report of a committee previously appointed to instruct their representative-elect in regard to his duties. The report is a curiosity in its way, as it treats of questions which agitate the public at the present time. It speaks upon the finance question; the undue influence of lawyers; methods of law and need of greater economy in legislation. The instructions are seven in number, and the sixth is as follows:

"With regard to an emission of paper money (so called), we must say that we view it as a vain and dangerous expedient, promising rather an increase of confusion, fraud and injustice through the land, than any solid advantage to the public. We therefore wish you to discountenance the measure. As some provision ought to be made for the relief of the numerous debtors throughout the State, many of whom are persons of property, but through the present scarcity of money unable to settle with creditors — we suppose an act to make certain articles of real and personal estate a tender or for the suspension of executions for debt for a limited time may be necessary and more eligible than any emission of paper money. To further aid an act to prevent excessive usury would be seasonable."

The seventh article enjoined "Frugality and Economy in every department of government, and such laws be adopted as would tend to diffuse these virtues, together with Temperance and Industry throughout the State, as we look upon the practice of these, and the cultivation of the most useful manufactures among ourselves to be the surest and safest method of extricating us from our present disagreeable and embarrassed situation." The report is addressed to Samuel March, representative, and signed by Maj. J. Page, John March, Samuel Nye, B. Evans, Esq., Capt. Zebedee Morrill, David Morrill, and Capt. Ezekiel Worthen.

On a preceding page we have given a short biographical sketch of the grantees of the town. It may be of interest to follow with a like sketch of several of the early settlers, who were known as men of remarkable character and ability.

The first of our early writers who makes mention of the Rev. William Worcester, is Capt. Edward Johnson, of Woburn, in his book entitled, "Wonder-working Providence of Zion's Saviour in New England," published in 1651. "For perfecting this wilderness work; not far from the Towne of Hampton, was erected another towne called Salisbury, being brought forth as twins, sometime contending for the eldership, . . . the situation of the town is very pleasant, rivers navigable far up, the branches thereof abound in fair and goodly meadows, with good store of stately timber upon the upland in many places, . . . the people Joined in church relationship have desired and obtained the reverend and gracious godly Mr. William Worcester to be their pastor."

Of the Rev. William Worcester, Cotton Mather, in his "Magnalia," thus writes, calling him one of "the reverend, learned and holy divines arriving from Europe to America, by whose evangelical ministry the churches of New England have been illuminated."

In the settling of the new town, and in reply to a petition of the people to the Legislature to allow them a minister, are these words: "It is not expedient for Mr. Worcester to travel once a month to preach at New Towne, but the people there shall attend his preaching at Old Towne and also that they shall help pay his salary until they are legally dismissed. They of the new towne should not content themselves with ordinary help whilst the Lord is pleased to continue *so bright a star in their candlestick*." In 1662, Oct. 28, the Rev. William Worcester died. He had been their pastor for twenty-four years, and through all the trying scenes of his ministry appears to have maintained an unblemished reputation as a wise, discreet, and pious minister of the Gospel, and to have retained the affection of all the inhabitants, and nothing but the great distance they were obliged to travel, over the rough country roads, prevented the inhabitants of the new town from attending public worship, and their harmonious agreement, not only with the minister, but with each other.

The successor of Mr. Worcester was the Rev. Mr. Wheelwright. He was settled in 1662, and had not probably been in the country long. Coffin speaks of him as a man possessed of great powers of mind.

The Rev. James Alling, settled in 1687, died, 1696. The Rev. Caleb Cushing in 1698. He was the ancestor of Hon. Caleb Cushing. The Rev. Edward Noyes, 1751; died, 1809.

Maj. Robert Pike, one of the first settlers, was the ancestor of Capt. Zebulon Montgomery Pike. He was born in Longford, 1616, came to Newbury with his father, John Pike, who died in Salisbury, in 1654. He was admitted freeman in 1637, was a representative from Salisbury in 1648, and for seven other years; a lieutenant in 1647; captain, 1663; a major in 1668; assistant from 1682 to 1686; one of the Council of Safety in 1689, and one of the first Council under the Charter of William and Mary in 1692. He died Dec. 12, 1796, aged 92. He was a man of great decision of character, but somewhat arbitrary and pugnacious, and was consequently much involved in difficulties, both civil and ecclesiastical. The following is an instance. Prior to the incorporation of Amesbury as a separate town in 1668, it was called "Salisbury new towne." Among the early inhabitants of the new town was Joseph Peasley, who was a member of the church in Salisbury, and what was then styled a "gifted brother," who commenced preaching on his own account to all those who chose to hear him. The inhabitants of the "old town" were of course unwilling that any of the inhabitants should leave the old church, and listen to exhortations of "brother Peasley," and consequently complained of the irregularity to the General Court, who ordered Peasley to desist. The following is an extract from the Court records:

> August, 1653. — The Court being informed that at the publishing of the last Court's orders at Salisbury, Lieut. Robert Pike demanded if that law, which was made to restrain unfit persons from preaching etc., was in force after the next General Court, and on being answered, said that such persons as did act in making that law did break their oath, or acted contrary expressing the freemen's oath, for said he, "it is against the liberty of the country both civil and ecclesiastical." Lieut. Pike was accordingly sent for, and on a full hearing of the case (Sept. 7, 1653) do judge that he has been guilty of defaming the General Court, and order that he shall be defranchised, be disabled from bearing any public office, be bound to his good behaviour, and be fined "20 marks."
>
> This sentence rather increased than diminished the difficulties. Petitions from Salisbury and all the neighboring towns, numerously signed, were sent to the General Court praying that the sentence against Mr. Pike might be reconsidered, but without avail. In August, 1656, a Committee was appointed by the General Court to settle the "sad contention and division of the churches in Salisbury, and Amesbury, and Haverhill," and appointed Samuel Hall, of Salisbury, and John Clements, of Haverhill, to entertain the messengers sent by the Court, and order £12 19*s*. to be levied on each of the towns, and to be collected by the Constable. "In 1667, in answer to the petition of Mr. Pike humbly desiring the courts favor, his fine being paid, to remit and release him from the other part of the Courts former sentence against him, Mr. Worcester, the pastor of the church at Salisbury, appearing on the behalf of the petitioners, and acknowledging himself much bound to the Court if they would be pleased to grant the said Pike's request. The Court grants his request."

Thomas Bradbury was very long identified with the early history, and his influence was of the highest importance in moulding public sentiment.

Few names appear so frequently on the records of the town, and unlimited confidence was reposed in his good judgment.

Thomas Macy and Tristram Coffin were both remarkable men. Macy was recognized as a prominent citizen and good man. He and Coffin were the original settlers of the island of Nantucket.

Coffin, the historian of Newbury, says: "The early land grants in this town were held by men who were fitted by education to adorn any civil station."

Maj. Nathaniel Currier, of Salisbury, held a commission under King George III. On the breaking out of the War of the Revolution he enlisted in the service, and previous to this was active in word and deed, in advancing the interests of the Colonies.

The West Parish Church in Salisbury was organized November, 1718, consisting of eleven male members, with the Rev. Joseph Parsons their pastor. He died March 13, 1739, in the sixty-ninth year of his age, and twenty-first of his ministry. During his ministry, about 300 persons joined the church. He was succeeded by the Rev. Samuel Webster, D. D., Aug. 12, 1742. The Rev. Dr. Webster died July 18, 1796, in the seventy-eighth year of his age, and the fifty-fifth of his ministry. During his ministry, upwards of 300 persons joined the church, of which number there were seventy-nine joined in the year 1756, and fifty-three on the 4th of January. He was succeeded by the Rev. Andrew Beatie, who died March 16, 1801, in the thirty-fourth year of his age and fourth of his ministry. During his ministry six persons joined the church. His successor was the Rev. William Balch, Nov. 17, 1802. His connection with the church and parish was dissolved in February 1816, in the fourteenth year of his ministry. During his ministry six persons joined the church. The next pastor was the Rev. Benjamin Sawyer, whose labors extended over a period of forty years. He died March, 1871.

In 1799 the sum of $469.14 was voted for the support of public teachers, and other charges by this parish, and 307 persons were assessed on their polls and estates, to raise that amount of money. The largest paid by any one person was $12.43, and the smallest *nine cents*.

The West Parish Church is the parent of the following church organizations: — the Baptist, organized in 1779; Methodist, 1805; Christian, 1820; Universalist, 1831; Congregational Evangelical Union, 1835.

Business Interests of the Town. — Powow River, a tributary of the Merrimac, affords one of the best manufacturing privileges to be found in the country. Its advantages were seen by the early settlers, and there were located on its banks previous to 1793, five saw-mills, and seven grist-mills, and in succeeding years, two linseed-oil mills, a fulling-mill, carding-mill, snuff-mill, iron and nail factory. In 1812 the manufacture of cloth was commenced, and the first contract for clothing our soldiers in the war, which began the same year, was filled by this mill. From that time up to 1875, manufacturing steadily increased. Previous to 1854 there were three corporations; the Powow Cotton Co., the Salisbury Mills, and the Amesbury Mills. The Amesbury Mills and Cotton Co., sold their property to the Salisbury Mills, by which the latter company gained the entire control of the stream, from its source in New Hampshire to tide water, a distance of sixteen miles. There are five dams, having an aggregate fall of seventy-five feet. The water is used over five different times as a motive power. When fully operated the woollen fabrics manufactured daily would extend seven miles — a business amounting to over three million dollars. There are ten mills, with seventy-five sets of woolen machinery, and two thousand cotton spindles. For two years the mills have not been in operation. In July they were sold, and a new company organized, under the title of the "Essex Mills," with John Gardner as treasurer.

The hat business was first established in 1780, when "liberty was given Jacob Brown to set up a hatter's shop on the highway near David Currier's barn." This industry was continued there for many years. In 1853 A. L. Bailey started the hat business at Salisbury Point, when a company was organized with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, which has proved the most profitable branch of industry ever established in the town. The same company have recently built a large and spacious brick mill at Amesbury Ferry.

Carriage making was commenced in 1853, by J. R. Huntington, and is now the chief business and support of the town. There are sixteen firms, employing three hundred men, who manufacture from six thousand to seven thousand carriages annually. The introduction of this branch of industry has largely increased the wealth and population of the place, and has been the direct means of much general improvement.

The Powow River Bank was organized April 8, 1836. The corporators were Seth Clark, Robert Patten, J. B. Webster, and their associates, with a capital stock of $100,000. The directors, at the organization, were Seth Clark, Sr., Robert Cross, Esq., D. L. Dearborn, Patten Sargent, Wm. M. Colby, Thomas J. Clark, Robert Patten and Samuel Walton. Seth Clark was chosen president, Nathl. White cashier. The banking-house was established over the counting room of the Salisbury Mills. The notes of discount the first year amounted to $96,675.74. Oct. 21, 1847, J. B. Webster, cashier; April 17, 1858, Geo. F. Bagley, cashier; J. B. Webster, president; Sept. 1877, Albert B. Brown, cashier; Geo. F. Bagley, president; May 1, 1865, changed to the national banking system; up to which time, a period of twenty-nine years, it had paid in dividends $221,500, with a surplus on hand of $9,940.65.

During the thirteen years it has existed as a national bank, it has —

Paid in dividends, ...	$149,000 00
Has a surplus of, ...	50,000 00
Undivided profits, ...	11,191 84
	$210,191 84

The only dividends passed were in April, 1838, October, 1846, and April, 1847.

For seven and one-half years in succession it paid $6,000, as quarterly dividends. Few financial institutions can show such successful management for so long a period of years.

The Provident Institution for Savings was incorporated Feb. 20, 1828, by Jacob Brown, Joseph Flanders, Thomas Boardman, James Horton, Joseph Wadleigh, Daniel Blaisdell, and Nathan Crosby, of Salisbury, and Ephraim Morrill, Robert Patten, Thomas Bailey, Joshua Aubin, Enoch Winkley, Robert Cross, John Wadleigh, Joseph Mann, and James Homer, of Amesbury. The first meeting was held at the hotel of Daniel Long, in Amesbury, March 26, 1828, and the following board of officers chosen: —

Jacob Brown, president; Edward Dorr, Robert Patten, and Stephen Sargent, vice-presidents; Joseph Flanders, Patten Sargent, Thomas Bailey, Joshua Aubin, John Blaisdell, Jr., Azor O. Webster, Daniel Weed, John S. Williams, Isaac Tukesbury, John Wadleigh, Dudley Evans, and John S. Morse, trustees; Joseph Wadleigh, secretary; and Robert Patten, treasurer. The first deposit was made April 10, 1828, at the counting-room of the Ameshury Flannel Manufacturing Company, and the business was continued at this place until the Powow River Bank was established, in 1836, when its office was removed to their rooms over the Salisbury Mills counting-room. In 1855, the institution, in conjunction with the Powow River Bank, erected a banking-house on Market Square, which it now occupies.

In 1830 its deposits amounted to $9,000; in 1840, $46,000; in 1850, $100,000; in 1860, $340,000; in 1870, $950,000; in 1878, $1,340,000. Its dividends during fifty years have amounted to 291¼ per cent. Robert Patten, Esq., served as treasurer until 1857, a period of twenty-nine years. The Hon. Thomas J. Clark, his successor, served eighteen years, when he retired. Jona. B. Webster acted as secretary twenty-two years, retiring with Mr. Patten.

The present board of officers are: Stephen Woodman, president; Seth Clark, D. L. Dearborn, and Geo. W. Morrill, vice-presidents; Joseph N. Clark, Daniel Morrill, William J. Boardman, George F. Bagley, Benj. E. Fifield, Charles M. Brown, M. D. F. Steere, Chas. L. Allen, Azor O. Webster, Everett Fowler, Daniel Webster, and Alfred C. Webster, trustees; D. L. Dearborn, secretary; Alfred C. Webster, treasurer.

The institution had its birth through the efforts of Jacob Brown, Thomas Dennett, and J. B. Webster, employed in the Salisbury Mills, who were in the habit of taking the surplus earnings of such of the mill hands as they could solicit to entrust their funds with them, agreeing to pay stated rates of interest. The first amount ($7.50) deposited and now remaining, was placed to the credit of a young woman employed in the mill, by Mr. Dennett. The original deposits, were in sums varying from five to ten dollars, until $201 was secured. She has drawn from this investment $229, and has now on deposit $1,158. In its history of fifty years there has never been a time when it refused to pay its depositors, and the securities to-day are regarded as among the best.

Ship Building on the Powow. — As near as can be ascertained, the first ship-builder on the Powow River, was a Mr. Adams. This was as early as 1702. His yard was located near where Biddle's carriage factory now is. In 1726, Joseph Wadleigh, Jr., Aaron Wad-

leigh, John Wadleigh, Jr., and Abraham Wadleigh, petitioned "for liberty to use ye town's landing place, near ye widow Ring's house, on the spot where Mr. Adams formerly built vessels, for the purpose of building a small vessel." The Wadleighs built quite a number of large ships on the river. In 1727, Jarvis Ring was given liberty to set up a vessel at the landing-place. In 1731, Philip Rowell and Abraham Morrill petitioned "for liberty to build a sloop at ye landing place at the mills." In later years Maj. Currier built vessels on the river, on the Amesbury side. The last vessel built on the river was by Mr. Samuel Follensbee, about the year 1835.

Ship-building on the Merrimac, in Salisbury. — For nearly one hundred and forty years ship-building was quite an extensive and productive industry of the town, giving employment to many mechanics, whose skill and improvement in the art collectively, have won for the ships of the Merrimac River a world-wide reputation. It is impossible to give, accurately, the number built, or by whom, as there has been a general negligence of the descendants and others in regard to records of a great many vessels known to have been built in Salisbury in early times. Many built in the colonial period were contracted for and sold to the English merchants and foreign parties. Of such vessels there could not probably now be found any reliable record. Commencing at the junction of the Merrimac and Powow rivers, on a point of land called "Webster's Point," on premises now owned by J. F. Currier, was the "Webster yard." Here was built, in 1799, the ship "Warren," eighteen guns, by contract, for the United States, under the superintendence of Capt. Johnson, of Newburyport.

Mr. William Hackett was one of the most enterprising and scientific shipwrights of early times; his services were required in many places on account of his superior knowledge in the art. He built at this yard the frigate "Alliance," owned by the Federal goverment. The "Alliance" was in the memorable battle of Paul Jones, but rendered no service, on account of the jealousy between the commanders. "She carried thirty-two guns and was the favorite of the whole navy on account of her great beauty and speed. This ship had a history. She was not only named for the alliance between this country and France, but was placed in command of a Frenchman, Capt. Landois, and her first service was to convey Lafayette to his home." Hackett afterwards drafted and superintended the building of the frigate "Essex," at Salem, Mass. He was the master-builder and superintendent of the twenty-gun ship "Merrimac," of 355 tons, which was completed in seventy-five days. The "Merrimac" was the first and best vessel of her size furnished on loan to the government. Hackett built other vessels here for many years, and afterwards bought a place below, and built a dwelling on the site of Mr. Folsom's new residence, and established a yard in front, and continued his business, contracting for many ships. He was also the founder of a family that has produced many eminent men. The late Prof. Horatio Hackett, known as the best Greek scholar in America, was a descendant, and native of the town.

At "Fowler's yard" (opposite the residence of Everett Fowler), vessels were built by Mr. Robert Fowler, also by the Curriers, Morrills, Burnhams, Colbys, and others, for many years.

Keniston's yard was next below. Jonathan Keniston, George Morrill, Ezekiel Fowler, partners, built vessels here soon after the War of 1812. The firm name was afterwards changed to Keniston & Colby, who continued building mostly large vessels, freighting ships, brigs, &c. Afterwards, George and Francis Keniston, sons of Jonathan Keniston, continued the business. This yard is the only one remaining to-day. In front of the residence of James Williams was the ship-yard of John Hackett. John and Richard Hackett built many vessels. Their successors were J. Fowler, David Currier, and others.

Nearly ninety years ago, Simeon Lowell, of Amesbury, bought an estate of one Edmunds, ship-builder in Salisbury, and soon after, with his sons, commenced boat-building. They built many boats for ships and other vessels; also small schooners for fishing, privateering, &c. The business, though changed somewhat in kind of boats built, is still carried on by their descendants. The many fishing schooners, yachts, &c., built by them have a notable reputation for their superior sailing and other good qualities. The dory business, as prosecuted at the Point, gives employment to many men, and the number sold averages two thousand yearly. In front of Jonathan Keniston's residence was the ship-yard of the Stevens Brothers, who did quite an extensive business for many years. A short distance below, was an old yard occupied by Fowler & Swett, and others. Where William C. Merrill now carries on the boat business, was Capt. Stockman's building place, where he and others built vessels.

Orlando B. Merrill, a noted ship-builder of Newburyport, commenced business at the old Brown landing-place, near the Essex Merrimac Bridge, with his father, where G. A. Monson now has a residence. He married a Newburyport lady, and removed to that town, locating a yard there, and building a number of vessels for the government. He was the first builder to use the water-line model in draughting now in use, his own invention. By the water-line method, the draughtsman gives all the moulds for the many different shapes and pieces of timber, thus enabling the builder to get his frame and other timber in the forest all fit for use. We must claim Mr. Merrill as a Salisbury builder; but, if not allowed the honor, will honor him as one of the most ingenious mechanics among Merrimac shipwrights. It is within the bounds of prudence to say that upwards of 600 vessels have been built and launched from Salisbury Point and Amesbury Ferry, varying from 50 to 800 tons. In the history of ship-building on the Merrimac, the record of 540 ships built at Salisbury and Amesbury is given.

In 1762, on petition of twelve householders, an open highway was laid out from "the Hudson land," near the wharf down to land of the heirs of Joseph Stockman, where are twelve houses and several ship-yards.

It was the shipping interest that built up Webster's Point. At one period in its history, as many as twenty-five vessels could be counted on the stocks. It was also the centre of much commerce, foreign and local. The Websters and Clarks, Lowells, Hacketts, and Stevenses very early engaged in the West India trade; and the Colbys and Kenistons, in the coasting trade. "Sharper's Island," now a summer resort for steamboat parties, was so named from the fact that it was the place where several vessels, owned by successful shipping merchants, were fitted out.

Powow Hill is a beautiful elevation of land, three hundred feet above the level of the sea. From its summit, the view is one of rare beauty, and of wide extent. Tradition says that the Indians built their wigwams and held their powwows on the hill, and this was the origin of the name "Powow." The population of the town is 4,000; valuation, $1,791,373; number of voters, 1,000; tillage land, 12,000 acres. The town supports eighteen public and three high schools.

SWAMPSCOTT.

The incorporation of the city of Lynn, in 1850, was vigorously opposed by many of her people, and especially by those of her first school district, formed of the village of Swampscott. They were largely engaged in fishing, from King's and Blaney's beaches; they were not closely identified with the business interests of the rest of Lynn, and they were more determinedly democratic than any other portion. Add to this a spirit of brotherhood among themselves that used to bring them, on all urgent occasions, up to the town hall in a body, marching with fife and drum; and it no longer appears singular that, as soon as the incorporation took place, they resolutely moved for a separation as a new town. This object they accomplished in just about one year, obtaining their incorporation May 21, 1852.

The territory thus taken from Lynn is an irregular triangle, smaller than any other in the county, save only Nahant. It is bounded northeasterly by Salem and Marblehead, westerly by Lynn, and southerly by the sea. A large part of the surface is rocky, uninviting pasture, coming down to the shore in heavy, beetling, precipitous hills, in front of which the road just finds room for passage: on the east this softens out into considerable tracts of fine arable land, allowing for many excellent farms; and, on the west, a lesser space of the same good character connects with the intervales of Lynn. Beside the two beaches named are two others, called Whale Beach and Phillips Beach; at which, however, little or no business is done.

In point of actual settlement, this is the oldest of the towns originating from Lynn; one of the five first settlers of 1629, Francis Ingalls, having located here, and established the first tannery in the country. The place of his homestead is yet well known, and some of his ancient vats were discovered and opened as lately as 1825. The business did not, however, fix itself here; and, indeed, it does not appear that any tanner has been here since.

In 1795, there began a more permanent form of local industry. The catching of fish from small boats, or from the shore, was coeval with the Indians themselves: all the people practised it. But this year some of the men of this village — James Phillips, Jonathan Blaney, and others — fitted out the schooner "Dove," of twenty tons, and sent her to the fisheries in a larger way. She was wrecked two years after; and they replaced her with the "Lark," of sixteen tons, which was also lost in about two years. Then they put on another, called the "Dove," which was more fortunate. From this was formed the considerable fleet of "jiggers," or small fishing-craft, which have since made the town famous for their immense catches of cod and other shore fish. In some cases, the fortune of these little vessels has been incredible. We will only mention the week ending Dec. 13, 1856, in which the schooner "Flight," Capt. Stanley, with thirteen hands, took 62,700 pounds of codfish; and the single day's catch of the schooner "Flying Dart," with twelve men, Feb. 25, 1863, when they took 14,000 pounds, within twenty-four hours. These vessels, it is understood, do not generally go to the great Eastern fishing grounds, though there are not a few veteran "banksmen" to be found in the town. Beside this, the trapping of lobsters has become a valuable industry of the place. It was begun by Ebenezer Thorndike, in 1808, with only a dozen pots. Afterward it was remarkably enlarged as a business by Ebenezer Weeks, who had pots and creels in all the neighboring waters. The number taken is still immense; but the market seems fully equal to the supply.

Between Whale and Phillips beaches, the shore projects in a conspicuous promontory, covered originally with beautiful woods. This early attracted the attention of wealthy summer residents; and a fine hotel, called the Ocean House, was built upon this cape in the first part of the century. It was very popular for many years. From this grew up the purchase and occupation of the neighboring lands, for gentlemen's country-seats, along with which proceeded the enterprise of large boarding hotels for transient company in the warm season. In this direction, perhaps, the ability and energy of the towns-people have gone furthest of all. The capacious houses for fashionable entertainment may now be reckoned by the dozen; while the private dwellings that are annually given up to rent to wealthy strangers are still more numerous. The roads have been enlarged to streets, and many of these are improved so as to afford the most splendid drives.

It is not strange that the republic of pleasure should be so gracious to the little town of Swampscott. Its distance from Boston is not great; its facilities for sea-bathing, boating, and the like are unrivalled; its air is delightful; and its scenery, to such as love the finest features of coast-view, is often quite enchanting. From its heights, a broad expanse of sea and country can be surveyed at a sweep; and a moderate walk inland exchanges the busy streets of the little town for spots that are still and secluded as the wilderness.

Swampscott has three religious societies: an Orthodox Congregationalist, a Methodist, and a Baptist, — all with good houses of worship. The first was established July 15, 1846. A fine town hall is found here, with a small, but choice library. The Eastern Railroad passes through the middle of the township, but somewhat apart from the principal seat of business. A branch also diverges here, running to Marblehead, which affords much advantage to those in the eastern section.

A sad shading to this lovely picture is observable in the peculiar exposure of the very rocky coast to the fury of the heaviest storms, which has been the occasion of many most distressing wrecks. Perhaps the most painful of these was that of the barque "Tedesco," Capt. Peterson, of Portland, from Cadiz, with salt and wine. She struck on Long Rock, near the Ocean House, Jan. 18, 1857, in the severest storm remembered by any one. The mercury had been twenty-eight below zero, and then stood about twelve below. The snow was so terrible as to suspend travel for two days, and nothing could be done for the vessel. She had twelve in her company; all of whom perished, six bodies being recovered and buried at one time.

As an offset to this may be mentioned a much later case, occurring not far from 1860, when a vessel struck near Galloupe's Point, in the darkest possible night, and was lifted bodily by a great wave to a natural groove in the rocks, where it left her upright, high and dry. The whole crew, captain and his wife, all stepped from the rail upon solid ground, and walked to the shore, with no hurt whatever.

We conclude with a few statistics. The population of this town in 1875 was 2,128, including 612 ratable polls and 541 voters. She had five public schools, occupying houses worth $22,500, with $300 additional property. Her manufactures were very limited: the most was done in house-carpentry, in which the aggregate value reached was $19,100. Her best agriculture was in milk, of which she raised 47,033 gallons, worth $10,878. Next were onions, amounting to 5,600 bushels, worth $5,535. Hay, however, was more valuable, reckoning 414 tons, at $8,073. Seventeen farms above ten acres appear, valued, with five smaller ones, at $425,900

TOPSFIELD.

Before we commence our sketch of the history of the ancient town of Topsfield, let us take an ideal sail up the Ipswich River. It is the year 1640. We spread our sail at the Ipswich settlement, and proceeding westward, with a good breeze, we soon reach the "river meadows," as they are now called, in Topsfield. We have just passed, on our right hand, the farm of five hundred acres which was granted by the town of Ipswich, in 1637, to Dep. Gov. Samuel Symonds. Farther away to the north lies a farm laid out to John Winthrop, Jr., both farms being almost surrounded by "common" land. Before turning, in the bend of the river, in a southerly direction, away off toward the west about a mile, we faintly discern the spot on which, a few years later, was the residence of Francis "Pabodie," the ancestor of the Peabody family in America, near which was the first mill in the town, erected in 1672, but now known as "Towne's grist-mill."

Sailing along down the stream for a mile or two, we make a turn to the right. On the right hand, the heavy growth of the forest extends nearly down to the banks of the river; on the left, the "Wennam" meadows, as they were then called, present an unvarying scene as far as the eye can reach. A part only of these lowlands had been granted to individuals. Bryant Pendleton, William Howard, and a few others owned small tracts here. On the west of this extensive tract of meadow lies some common land called "Salem Woods." As we continue our boat-ride, we see to the right a house belonging to Allan Perley (the ancestor of the Perley family in America), which he conveyed, in 1652, to Walter Roper, a carpenter, who had been residing in the little settlement. A very short distance ahead and nearer the banks of the river, we come in full view of Alexander Knight's house. Half a mile further on, on the same side of the river, we have a good view of the old ancestral home of the Goulds. "Old Zacchens Gould" here built his house upon a tract of land that had previously been granted to Capt. Patrick. On the south side of the river, some of the land is under cultivation. Beyond this point, the wild, uninhabited country, with its plains and hills, forests and swamps, prevails for miles.

With the addition of two or three dwellings (Daniel Clark's, John Reddington's, and perhaps one or two more), our sail up the river gives us a just estimate and a very good view of the settlement of *She-ne-we-me-dy*, as Topsfield was then called by the Indians. Probably on account of the extensive tracts of meadow land in its immediate vicinity, the settlement was known among the English as New Meadows.

The first notice which we find of Topsfield is contained in an order of the General Court, dated on the 4th of the 7th month, 1639. By this order, certain lands lying near Ipswich River, were granted for a village, to inhabitants of Salem. Although Salem alone had lawful authority to settle there, several families in Ipswich availed themselves of the opportunity and settled with the Salem people. The town of Ipswich, or rather "the Ipswich people," maintained preaching in the Topsfield settlement for two years before the General Court gave them liberty to take up grants of land there. This order is dated 10th of the 3d month, 1643, and a clause reads as follows, viz.: "It is therefore ordered that Mr. John Endicott, and the said inhabitants of Ipswich, viz.: Mr. Bradstreet, Mr. Symonds, Mr. Whittingham, Mr. William Paine, Mr. Robert Paine, with such others of Ipswich or Salem as they shall associate to themselves, shall have liberty to settle a village near the said river of Ipswich, providing it is done within one year," &c. (*Town Records*, Vol. 1, p. 45.)

William Towne, Thomas Perkins, John Wildes, Abraham and John Reddington, Nathaniel Porter, George Currier, of Salem, and others, were also among the original proprietors of land at New Meadows.

Gov. Endicott also owned a considerable tract of land here as early as 1639. In 1648, a copper mine was discovered upon his land. Mr. Leader, a metallurgist, then superintending the Lynn iron-works, having expressed a favorable opinion of the ore, Endicott spent considerable money in excavating and working it. The site of this ancient mine can be seen on the County Map. More than 120 years after its discovery, in spite of Endicott's failure, it was re-opened, and worked for a while, at considerable loss to the proprietors. After an interval of about seventy years, a company of Salem capitalists caused the old shaft to be cleared out, and subjected the ore to analysis. The result was, that the hole was once more filled up, never again, probably, to be disturbed.

Besides the operations at the "copper mine," bog-iron ore was dug, to a considerable extent, by the early settlers. In 1681, June 17th, the town orders "that there shall bee noe boge mine doge in ye Towne but by some townes men: and hee that dos dige et shall Carey et with his one teme or hieree a townes man to Carey et alwayes provieded hee that diges it a grees with the selectmen of the Towne to pay four pence a ton for the Towns Vese ether in Silver or Iron and this order stands in force" only one year. Ten days later "Ensign goold" was granted liberty to dig twenty tons of bog iron. And Lieut. Peabody also received the same liberty.—(*Town Records*, Vol. 1, p. 25.) Bricks were also manufactured here before 1697.

The population increased, more houses were built, and the little hamlet of a few cottages had emerged into a settlement of no inconsiderable importance, comparatively speaking, when the General Court granted them a town charter, as per following: "At a third session of the General Court, held at Boston, the 15th of October, 1650: In answer to the request of Zaccheus Gould and William Howard, in the behalf of Topsfield, the Court doth grant that Topsfield shall, from henceforth, be a town, and have power within themselves to order all civil affairs, as other towns have." By this order it seems that the name was changed to Topsfield before the town was incorporated. It was so called, probably, from *Topesfield*, a small parish, about four miles W.N.W. from Castle Hedingham, in Essexshire, Eng.

Topsfield was a part of the old sachem, *Muschonomet's* territory; and although the old chieftain gave a title of the land then within the bounds of Ipswich, which included a part of what was afterwards Topsfield, to John Winthrop, Jr., more than sixty years after, his grandson, Samuel English, made a claim upon them for the land. Upon the payment of three pounds in money, he gave them a quit-claim deed, bearing date March 28, 1701.

The first records of town-meetings, &c., are gone, so that the earliest town officers cannot be ascertained. In 1661, however, we find that "Ensigne Howlett, ffrances pabodye and John Redington" were chosen selectmen. Lieut. Francis Peabody was, probably, town clerk from the incorporation of the town until March 7, 1681–82, when John Gould was chosen to be his successor. It is a fact worthy of note, and only paralleled by few cases, that Mr. Jacob Towne, and his son, J. P. Towne, held the office of town clerk from 1810 to March, 1878, a period of seventy-seven years.

In 1661, the common lands on the south side of the river were laid out to "m^{r} Bradstreet, m^{r} perkins, Zacheus Gould, m^{r} Baker, Tho Dorman, ffrances Pebody, Willi Evens, Daniell Clark, Isaac Cumings, Sen^{r} Isae Cumings jun^{r} Ensigne Howlet Willi Smith, m^{r} Endicott, John Wiles, John Redington, Tho Perkins, Tho Browning, Jacob Towne, Isaac Estey, Willi Towne, Edmond Towne, matthew Standly, Anthony Carell, ffrances Bates, John How, Edmond Bridges, and Willi Nicholse"

In 1664, the land on the south side of the river, which was still common, was divided among the several inhabitants of the town that paid to the minister's rate. Those that paid fifty shillings, or more, minister's tax, were to have one of the larger pieces; those that paid more than twenty and less than fifty shillings, to have a middle piece; and those that paid less than twenty shillings were to have one of the least pieces. Thus they divided it up among the following persons, viz.: "John Goold, m^{r} thomas baker, danel Clark, thomas dorman senr, frances pabody, decon hovey, william Eevens, Isack Comings senr, Isack Comings innar, Ensigne howlat, antoni Carol, thomas perkins, thomas broning, thomas averil, thomas hobes, John Redington, John wildes, william smith, Edman bridges, Jacob towne, Isack Este, william towne, Joseph towne, Edman towne, mathew

staule, william nicoles, m^r^ william perkeings, m^r^ Endicot, John how, Robart andros, and frances bates."

Some more of the common lands, on the south side of the river, were laid out in 1668, by John Gould, Thomas Baker, John Wildes, and Francis Peabody. Probably all the land that now remained common, on the south side of the river, was the five hundred acres of upland voted to be laid out, 14th of the 10th month, 1661, "to remain common to perpetuity for the use of the inhabitants."

Although the town was incorporated in 1650, its boundaries were not settled for a long time afterward, with the exception of Rowley. Rowley bounds being settled very early, their exact location was, doubtless, forgotten in a few years; and after Boxford was incorporated (1685) a long contention of forty-six years ensued before the boundary could be settled upon. Town-meetings were held, committees and attorneys were appointed, prosecutions were entered before the law tribunals, and the action even of the General Court was repeatedly invoked and obtained. The bounds against the town of Salem were settled in 1664. The Ipswich line was established after a short quarrel. With Wenham, the limits were easily settled, but the duty of the perambulators on that side of the town was rather severe. The course which they were compelled to take, as from year to year they went round to renew or identify the landmarks, carried them through a sort of bog, in which they often got sadly mired. To prevent this calamity, the line was finally altered by an amicable arrangement.

At a town-meeting held June 10, 1726, a petition signed by Thomas Caves, Edward Putnam, Joseph Knight, and five others, praying that Topsfield would grant them liberty to join with other families of Salem, Boxford, and Andover, to be set off as a distinct town, was presented. The town would not listen to the petition, and the subject was dismissed without being acted upon. However, the petitioners, with the others mentioned, presented their petitions to the General Court, which were listened to with due respect, and satisfactorily answered, two years later. These families thus set off from the four towns became the town of Middleton.

The few families on the east side of the river, now included within the town of Topsfield, originally belonged to Ipswich. The Lampson and Cummings places were settled as early and, perhaps, earlier than the town of Topsfield. They helped to support the ministry in Topsfield, the same as the Rowley Village (Boxford) people, from its earliest date. From 1729 until 1774, these families struggled to free themselves from Ipswich, and to be annexed to Topsfield. The town of Ipswich repeatedly opposed their petitions, until the General Court finally ordered, Feb. 11, 1774, that the families of Joseph Cummings, John Lampson, Ireal Clark, Joseph Cummings, Jr., John Lampson, Jr., and Thomas Cummings, with their lands, &c., be set to the town of Topsfield. These two instances are the only material changes in the original boundaries.

In Topsfield, as elsewhere, the farmers carried weapons and ammunition, as well as tools, to the field, and armed sentries used to walk their rounds about the house of God, while the people were assembled for His worship upon the Sabbath day. In 1673,—when it stood in the cemetery near by Mr. Samuel Todd's house,—a massive stone wall of five or six feet in height, and three feet wide, was built around their house of worship, leaving a space of ten feet between the wall and the building, except on the south side, which was twelve feet. On the south-east corner of the wall was built a watch-house, ten feet square. A space of four feet was left between the watch and meeting-house, so that the passage around it — the meeting-house — would not be obstructed. The watch-house was, probably, fitted up without windows, and excepting through the small loop-holes, little light was let in. It was called in 1706, the "Old meeting house ffort." There was a watch-house built to the new meeting-house, in 1703, in which, the town voted, Dec. 17, 1707, "Samuel Perley, sen^r^ hath liberty to make a fire on Sabath dayes at noontime so long as the town see cause." (See *Town Records*, Vol. 1, p. 131.) At a town-meeting held May 14, 1708, the Rev. Mr. Capen had liberty granted him to work in the watch-house, and to make a place to let in more light. It was removed before 1738.

In 1675, a committee appointed for that purpose petitioned the General Court for leave to form military companies, in order to protect the inhabitants while at their work from attacks of the Indians. The following year the General Court ordered, that each town should "scout and ward," and clear up the brush-wood along the highways, "to prevent the skulking of the enemy," which order was not disregarded, probably, by such men as were the early settlers of Topsfield.

A tax-rate was made in February, 1676–77, for defraying the expenses of the "Indian War." In 1679, they purchase ammunition to the value of £46 5*s.* 6*d.* Cleaveland, in his bi-centennial address, at Topsfield, 1850, says: "On the grounds of the estate which belonged to Dr. Dexter, and not far from the Newburyport turnpike, may still be seen the traces of an old fortification, once the garrison-house of the town."

It was just nine years before the terrible episode of the "witchcraft delusion," that is, in 1683, that the alarming demand for the surrender of the Provincial charter, under a threat of *quo warranto* in case of refusal, came over from Charles II. In the record of a town-meeting held in Topsfield, Dec. 25th of that year, is the following brief but significant entry: "We do hereby declare that we are utterly unwilling to yield, either to a resignation of the Charter, or to any thing that shall be equivalent thereunto, whereby the foundation thereof should be weakened."

In the following year the royal menace was put into execution, and the letters-patent of Massachusetts were cancelled by a judgment in the Court of Chancery. To carry out the arbitrary measures thus begun, James II., in 1686, sent over the notorious Sir Edmund Andros to be governor over the Colony. After two years King James fled to France, and the people, having no more to fear from him, pounced upon Andros and his tyrannical officers with well-known results. Lieut. Thomas Baker, of Topsfield, was chosen to meet and consult with the "council of safty" about resuming the former government according to the charter. His instructions were: "To act for the public good, and welfare and safty of this Colony,—prohibiting any act or anything that may have any tendency to the infringement of any of our charter privileges whatsoever."

They followed the old English style of the "churchyard," and buried their dead around their house of worship,—a custom which we could wish was more prevalent at the present time. The most ancient headstone now remaining in this ancient cemetery bears the following inscription:—

HERE LYES BURIED Y^E^
BODY OF CAP^T^ THOMAS
BAKER WHO DIED
MARCH Y^E^ 15^TH^ 1717–18
AGED 81 YEARS &
6 MONTHS
& 5 DAYS.

This was and is the principal cemetery of the town, In 1706 an addition was made to it, and the whole enclosed with a new stone wall. A few years ago another addition was made, which has been laid out in perfect order, with avenues and roads dividing the family squares one from another. The first grave-digger of whom we have learned may be claimed by the Hobson family. His name was John Hobson, and he came into possession of his office March 7, 1676–77. The town ordered him to "dig graves for such as shall Requier him and he is to have three shilens sixten for ol graves abov for foot long and thre for ol under." He was also to have the charge of the meeting-house, sweep it out, keep the key, &c. In 1709 Benjamin Bixby was chosen grave-digger.

We find on the records, under date of Dec. 27, 1720, that the town "alowed to John Willds for makeing the Towns Stoock and for finding y^e^ Iorns and Lock and bringing them to the meeting house and for seeting up sd stoocks 1£ 4*s.*" These "stocks" were used as a mode of punishment until about 1757.

Wild animals of all species,—wolves, bears, deers, &c.,—were plenty, even as late as 1722, when the last wolf was killed of which we have any account. In 1687 the town offered a bounty of ten shillings for every wolf killed in the town by townsmen.

The laying out and the making of private ways, and of highways, must, of necessity, be among the earliest and most important objects of attention in a new settlement. The history of these in Topsfield, as they advanced from foot-paths to horse-paths, from these to cart-ways, and from the last to the carriage-roads of the present day; the slow but certain progress which was made from sloughs to causeways, and from fords to bridges, might, perhaps, in most instances be distinctly traced.

A "minister's farm" was early laid out and a parsonage built upon it for the use of the minister. The house was situated in the rear of the Dr. Merriam homestead, being about a quarter of a mile away. The Revs. Gilbert and Hobart probably occupied the house while they preached here. The Rev. Mr. Capen moved into it in 1684. After a few years he built a house of his own, which is still standing and at pres-

ent occupied by Mr. Alonzo Kneeland. After the Rev. Mr. Capen moved into his new residence the parsonage was occupied, during the years of 1694 and 1695, by Goodman (also called "Father") Lovewell, who kept the only school in town, and swept the meeting-house. March 5, 1694–95, the town granted him the use of the orchard also. The town voted, March 24, 1700–01, to dispose of the parsonage-house, which was probably immediately done. The site of this residence of some of the early theologians is still pointed out by the old residents. The farm was let, year after year, till within a few years.

Religious Societies.—Hardly had the first feeble band of colonists planted themselves here in the woods ere they established among them the preaching of the gospel. In 1641 the Rev. William Knight, a resident of Ipswich, began to preach to the little company, and probably continued his labors until his death, in 1655(?). He was supported, as it was claimed, by the Ipswich people. His successor was the Rev William Perkins, who came hither from Gloucester in 1655. Like Mr. Knight, he officiated for a number of years. Mr. Perkins was son of William and Catherine Perkins, and was born in London, Eng.,—where his father was a merchant tailor,—Aug. 25, 1607. His grandfather was George Perkins, who lived a yeoman's life in Abbot's Salford in the county of Warwick, England. In 1633 we find our Mr. Perkins associated with the illustrious John Winthrop, Jr., and eleven others, the first settlers of Ipswich. The following year he removed to Roxbury, where he married Elizabeth Wooton, Aug. 30, 1636. In 1640 he revisited his native country. He soon returned and represented the town of Weymouth in the General Court in 1644, acting as leader of a military company, and one of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company. From 1650 to 1655 he was preaching to the inhabitants of Gloucester. From that place he came to Topsfield. Here, after preaching several years, he spent the remainder of his life in the calm pursuits of husbandry. He died May 21, 1682, in the seventy-fifth year of his age. A diminutive gravestone bearing the inscription, "Rev. William Perkins," has lately been discovered in the old cemetery. Among the early settlers of the town, Mr. Perkins was probably the most accomplished person. He was a scholar and a man of business,—a farmer, a clergyman, a soldier, and a legislator.

At what stage of the ecclesiastical history of Topsfield the church was erected, cannot be definitely determined. Tradition says it stood near the "dry bridge," on the "Ipswich road," not far from the residence of Mr. Nehemiah Perkins. In 1662 the Rev. Mr. Gilbert was invited to settle with them in the ministry. Upon the villagers agreeing to pay their share of the minister's salary, Mr. Gilbert accepted the call to be their settled pastor. In November, 1663, the church was organized. Mr. Gilbert's ordination probably took place in the same month. The church was composed of the Topsfield people, the villagers (Boxford people), and several families living in Ipswich near to the Topsfield line, — *all* being hardly able to honorably maintain an able minister.

The Rev. Thomas Gilbert was born in Scotland in 1610, and, previous to his settlement in Topsfield, had been a clergyman of the Established Church, at Chedlie and at Edling, in England. He was one of the two thousand clergymen who were ejected from their benefices by the Act of Uniformity, in 1662; so that he came almost directly from an English vicarage, or curacy, to be the minister of a Puritan Congregational Church in the woods of Topsfield. In 1670 he was arraigned on a charge of intemperance. This trial left him in a very disgraceful attitude, and he was ejected from the office of pastor the following year (1671). After having been thus ejected, both in the old country and the new, he died in Charlestown, Oct. 28, 1678.

The second-settled pastor was the Rev. Jeremiah Hobart, who was born in England in 1630, and ordained as the pastor over the Topsfield church Oct. 2, 1672. He was son of the Rev. Peter Hobart, who emigrated to this country in 1635; assisted in forming the settlement of Hingham, in which town he was the first pastor, and a noted personage in Massachusetts. On the 21st of the next September (1680), he retired from the pulpit. He was afterwards settled at Hempstead, L. I., where he preached a number of years. But finding, after a while, that his congregation had nearly all left, he concluded to go also. The people of Haddam, Conn., then took him up, and there he stayed until his death, which occurred in March, 1715. His wife was Dorothy Whiting, daughter of the distinguished first minister of Lynn. Their daughter, Sarah, married a Brainerd, and thus became the mother of that celebrated missionary, whose name is inscribed on the same illustrious roll with those of Eliot and Swartz and Martyn.

The Rev. Joseph Capen was the third pastor of the Topsfield Church. He was born in Dorchester, Mass., Dec. 20, 1658. After graduating at Harvard College, he pursued his theological studies, until he received a call to preach to the people of Topsfield. He accepted the call, and, July 29, 1681, "Thomas Perkins jn^{r} and Joseph Bixby, Jun^{r} [were] Chosen to goe to Cambrig to pilot m^{r} Capen to Topsfield, to Lin^{t} Pebodyes house. Lin^{t} pebody Deekon perkins Sarg^{t} Redington James How sen^{r} m^{r} Tho: Baker John Gould sergt pebody Samuel Busell sen^{r} John Wilds John How: John Estey Clerke are Chosen a Commitey to discorse with m^{r} Capen to stay and preach here with us at Topsfield a while." The committee agreed with Mr. Capen to receive for his salary twenty pounds in silver money, and forty-five pounds payable in pork and beef, and the use of the parsonage.

In January, 1681, Samuel Symonds agrees to build a pulpit, ten feet long, — the town finding stock, — for ten pounds, to be finished before the 15th of September next. Probably there had been no pulpit in the meeting-house prior to this date. Three years previously, the town voted to have a gallery built.

After preaching to the people of Topsfield for upwards of a year, they gave him a call to become their settled pastor. He accepted their call, Sept. 18, 1682; but was not ordained until June 11, 1684. Being an acceptable pastor to the people of his charge, he continued to preach to them until just before his death, which occurred June 30, 1725.

During the Rev. Mr. Capen's pastorate of forty-one years, changes of considerable importance had been going on. The old meeting-house had become unfit for use, and it was deemed necessary to build a new one. At this time, the Boxford brethren built a house of their own, and this subtraction left the Topsfield church in a weak state. However, they, with what little help they received from the neighboring families in Ipswich, began upon a new house of worship, which was completed in 1703. It was "two and forty foot wide and four and forty foot long." The site of this new edifice was where the present church stands, which was then a knoll that had been levelled for the purpose to which it was applied. After removing the pulpit from the old meeting-house to the new, and using of the timbers, boards, &c., of the old house, what could be used, the old edifice was sold to John Gould for five pounds. After being used as a barn for many years, it fell beneath the hand of time, and is now returned to the dust from whence it came.

The Rev. John Emerson was next invited to accept of a call, which he did. He was the son of Joseph Emerson, the first minister of Mendon, Mass, and was born at Charlestown Feb. 7, 1707; and ordained over the church here Nov. 27, 1728, having just passed the years of his minority. Mr. Emerson resided where Charles H. Holmes, Esq., has lived for many years. Mr. Emerson's labors closed just before his death, which occurred July 11, 1774.

Five years elapsed before another minister was settled over the church.

During the pastorship of the Rev. Mr. Emerson, the third church edifice had been erected. May 19, 1757, a committee was chosen "to search the meeting house to see if it was worth repairing." The committee reporting it beyond repair, the town voted, Jan. 9, 1759, to build a new meeting-house fifty-four feet long, forty-two feet wide, and twenty-six feet stud, with a "perpornable steeple," and set it where the old one stood. Dea. Bixby, Thomas Symonds, Jacob Averill, Nathan Hood, and Stephen Perkins were chosen a committee to purchase timber, boards, &c., get it together near the old meeting-house, and hire carpenters to build it. On the following 4th of July (1759), a large crowd gathered on the "common," to view the raising of the new church. A hundred men were present to assist in raising those heavy oak beams, posts, and other parts of the frame, into their proper positions. After their labor was over, the men partook of dinner. During this day, a barrel of rum and eleven barrels of cider were consumed. The cost of this meeting-house when finished was £743 10*s.* 7$\frac{3}{4}$*d.* It is a fact worthy of notice, that a Mr. Ross, of Ipswich, who was present at the raising of this meeting-house, he being at the time but nine years old, was also present at the raising of the present church edifice, more than eighty-three years afterward.

After five years of unsettled, and therefore irregular preaching, their fifth-settled pastor was placed over their society. This was the Rev. Daniel Breck, a native of Boston. His ordination took place on Wednesday, the 17th of November, 1779, the sermon being

preached by the Rev. Mr. Lothrop, of the "Old North" Church, Boston, from 2 Corinthians iv. 5: "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake."

A council was called, which advised Mr. Breck's dismission, and he closed his services for the society, May 26, 1788. He removed to Hartland, Vt., where he settled in the ministry, and died in extreme old age. While in Topsfield, he married Hannah, daughter of Elijah Porter, March 23, 1786. Their son Daniel, who was a Kentuckian member of the national council, was born here, Feb. 12, 1788.

On Thursday the 12th of November, 1789, the Rev. Asahel Huntington, the sixth-settled minister, was inducted into the sacred office. After an illness of only four days' duration, the Rev. Mr. Huntington died of malignant sore throat, April 22 1813, at the age of fifty-two years.

The seventh pastor was the Rev. Rodney Gove Dennis, a native of New Boston, N. H. He was settled over the church here, on Wednesday, Oct. 4, 1820. He resigned his office in a letter to the society under date of April 22, 1827. A town-meeting was held May 15, when it was voted not to dismiss him. He made another application, April 9, 1829, and was accordingly dismissed, by advice of a council met for that purpose, May 18, 1829.

While the Rev. Mr. Dennis occupied the pulpit, stoves had been placed in the meeting-house, to heat it in the winter season. In 1817, the spire of the steeple was taken down, and a cap-tower erected in its place. A bell, weighing 938½ pounds, was also purchased of Paul Revere & Sons, for $400, and suspended in the steeple "to be rung on all public days, and tolled for funerals."

The Rev. James Frisby McEwen, a native of East Hartford, Conn., was the eighth pastor. He was installed over the church here, May 5, 1830. A "root of bitterness" sprang up between the Rev. Mr. McEwen and the society toward the end of 1840. A council was held March 10, and his connection with the society ended May 5, 1841.

The ninth-settled minister was the Rev. Anson McLoud, of Hartford, Conn. For twenty-eight years Mr. McLoud broke the "bread of life" to the people of his charge. His connection with the society ceased Oct. 1, 1869.

The tenth pastor was the Rev. E. P. Tenney, of Boston, who was installed on Wednesday, Dec. 1, 1869.

The Rev. James Hill Fitts, the eleventh and present pastor, was installed over the society, June 22, 1871.

The church membership now numbers 155; the Sunday-school has 175 scholars; a library, containing about 1,000 volumes, which have a circulation of about 2,400, and supported by contributions, is in connection with the Sunday-school.

Several religious denominations having crowded their way into the town, the unanimity of the original Orthodox church was broken up. In this state of affairs, the members of the Orthodox society petitioned the General Court to grant them a parish charter, which was accordingly acceded to, in 1824, and approved by the governor, Feb. 19, 1824. The first legal meeting of the society was held on Monday, March 29, 1824, at which Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland was chosen moderator; Jacob Towne, Jr., parish clerk; David Perkins, Thomas Balch, and Samuel Hood, parish committee; and Samuel Hood, treasurer. Dea. Daniel Bixby, who died the following year, bequeathed to this parish the farm, since known as the "Donation" farm, for the support of the ministry. In 1877, the principal of this fund was $5,592.55, and the income for that year, $358.29.

In 1842 the present church edifice was erected, at a cost of $5,000. The dedicatory exercises occurred on "Washington's birth-day," Wednesday, Feb. 22, 1843, at 2 o'clock, P. M.

Methodist Episcopal Church. — A society of this denomination was organized here in 1830, and incorporated, by an Act of the Legislature, in 1847. Their first meetings were held in the "north schoolhouse." The Revs. William Nenseamen and Asa U. Swinerton preached to them until May, 1831. Their third preacher, the Rev. R. D. Easterbrooks, was the first stationed by the Conference. A plan was adopted and contract made with Mr. Timothy Munroe, of Lynn, to build a meeting-house. It was raised Oct. 19, 1831, and dedicated December 23d following. The church was of modern style, forty feet square, cost $600, and was situated upon the Newburyport Turnpike, near Springvale. On January 9th and 10th, 1840, the meeting-house was moved on wheels to a site midway between the residences of the late Dr. Merriam and Mr. John B. Lake. The present church was erected in 1853, and dedicated June 14, 1854. The parsonage was built in 1840. Both church and parsonage are now entirely clear of debt, and the society have in their possession about $20,000 worth of church property. The present pastor is the Rev. Stephen Louis Rodgers, a pleasing preacher of the gospel.

Military History.—A military company was early formed here, agreeably to the laws of the Colony, with whom the soldiers in Boxford trained. This old-time institution continued without abatement, until a few years previous to the late civil war, when it came to an end. About 1840, a militia company, calling themselves the "Warren Blues," flourished here.

An armory was early erected, of which William Smith was the keeper in 1682.

Capt. Israel Davis and Maj. John Baker, of Topsfield, were officers in the "French War." Many privates were out under their command, as well as in companies formed by neighboring towns, and who rendered good service for the Crown. Several lost their lives on different occasions; while many, from enduring the fatigues and sufferings of the expeditions, destroyed their health and future usefulness.

The town purchased clothing for the soldiers; and, in 1780, voted to purchase 8,440 lbs. of beef for the use of the army. The town early appointed a committee to look after the soldiers' families, and to aid them, if need be, in procuring the necessaries of life.

Aug. 23, 1808, the town adopted and sent an appeal to the president to have the Embargo Act of Dec. 22, 1807, removed. The declaration of war, five years afterward, was condemned as an unnecessary and useless measure. Their quotas of men for this war were, however, raised and equipped for service in due time.

Passing over minor matters, we come to the outbreak of the Rebellion. A bounty of $125 and $200 to volunteer soldiers was paid by the town throughout the war. Topsfield furnished 113 soldiers — a surplus of five over all demands. Five of these were commissioned officers. The soldiers of Topsfield took a prominent part in the War of the Rebellion. Five of them perished in Andersonville Prison, — how, we know too well. Others were imprisoned there, as well as in the Libby Prison, on Belle Island. Several gave up their lives for their country on the battle-field of Fredericksburg, at Pamunkey River, in the last battle of the Wilderness, and other conflicts with the South. Many others moistened with their blood the soil of Winchester, Va., the banks of the Antietam, Donaldsonville, Port Hudson, and the battlefield of the second battle of Bull Run. Battles of Roanoke Island, South-west Creek, Kingston, Whitehall, Goldsborough, Ball's Bluff, Edenburg, Mt. Jackson, Strausburg, Cedar Mountain, Rappahannock, Sulphur Springs, Chantilly, South Mountain, and both battles of Port Hudson, and others, were also familiar to the Topsfield "Boys in Blue." At least half a score died in the South of Southern diseases. Several arrived home, only to breathe their last breath among their relatives and friends. The following is a list of those who gallantly and patriotically gave up their lives for their country in the hospital, on the battle-field, and in the rebel prison: John H. Bradstreet, James Brown, Moses Deland, Royal Augustus Deland, Swinerton Dunlap, Emerson P. Gould, William H. Hadley, George Prescott Hobson, Francis A. Hood, Daniel Hoyt (at Andersonville Prison), A. A. Kneeland, Henry Porter Kneeland (at Andersonville Prison), John Warren Lake, Lewis H. Perkins, Nathan Hanson Roberts (at Andersonville Prison), Daniel H. Smith (at Andersonville Prison), John P. Smith (at Andersonville Prison), John Stevens, Eugene H. Todd, and William Welch, Jr. Topsfield's quota for the navy was eleven. Of these eleven, William H. H. Foster and John Hoyt died in the service. The memory of those soldiers who fell during the struggle is preserved by having their names engraved on marble tablets and placed in a prominent position in the town hall.

The whole amount of money expended for the war, exclusive of State aid, was $14,746.35. State aid paid to the soldiers' families in 1861, $307.46; 1862, $1,628.58; 1863, $2,259; 1864, $2,020; 1865, $1,419.06; amounting in the whole to $7,634.10.

The ladies of Topsfield worked heartily in the cause of the soldiers during the war, and forwarded to the army, money, clothing, and hospital stores, to the value of five hundred dollars.

Education. — The first entry bearing upon the subject of education, is dated March 6, 1693–94. It is as follows: "The Town have agreed that Goodman Lovewell Schoolmaster shall live in y^e^ Parsonage house this yeare ensewing to kepe schole and swepe y^e^ meeting house."—(*Town Records*, Vol. 1, p. 83.) The town, for a long period, had but a single schoolmaster. He was chosen at the annual town-meeting, and was usually a citizen of the place. A room in some private dwelling was hired for this purpose, even as late as 1750. The first school-houses of which the records speak were built between the

years 1790 and 1794. In 1790, the town was divided into three school districts, — the South, Middle, and North districts, — and a school-house erected in each district. These were supplanted by new houses in 1844, '45, '46, and '47, and another district had been previously added, now making, in the whole, four. One hundred and fifty scholars now attend the district schools.

An academy was incorporated here in 1828, and for several years well sustained. Among its teachers were Francis Vose, Benjamin Greenleaf, Edmund F. Slafter, and others of equal merit. The building, having been purchased by the town about ten years since, was and is used as a "centre" school-house. The lower room is used for a primary, and the upper room for a school of a higher grade.

Distinguished Natives. — Topsfield has been the birthplace of many distinguished business, literary, scientific, and public men. The following is a partial list of the noted natives of Topsfield, viz.: The Rev. Ivory Hovey, M. D. (1714–1803), graduated Cambridge, 1735, pastor and physician of second parish in Rochester, Mass., for twenty-five years; also, installed at Monument Ponds, in Plymouth. Nathaniel Peabody (1741–1823), a statesman, physician, and soldier. The Rev. Daniel Gould (1753–1842), son of Daniel and Lucy (Tarbox) Gould, graduated Harvard College, 1782, settled in Bethel, and in Rumford, Me. Jacob Kimball, graduated Harvard College, 1788, a musical composer, and author of "The Rural Harmony," 1793. David Cummings, Esq., graduated Dartmouth College, 1806, a successful lawyer in Salem, and judge in the circuit court of common pleas. Daniel Breck, LL. D. (1788–1852), an able jurist, and member of Congress. Dr. Royal A. Merriam, graduated Dartmouth College, 1808, physician in Topsfield. Israel Baleh, M. D., graduated Dartmouth College, 1811, physician in Salisbury. The Rev. Ebenezer Perkins, graduated Dartmouth College, 1814, a clergyman in Royalston. Dr. Josiah Lamson, graduated Harvard College, 1814, physician in Essex. Elisha Huntington, M.D. (1796–1865), graduated Dartmouth College, 1815, for eight years mayor of Lowell, and lieutenant-governor of the State. Asahel Huntington, graduated Yale College, 1819, a successful advocate in Salem, and, for many years, county attorney. John Cleaveland, graduated Bowdoin, 1826, counsellor-at-law in New York City. The Rev. Jonas Merriam, graduated Bowdoin, 1826, clergyman in Barnard, Me. Prof. David Peabody, graduated Dartmouth College, 1828, professor at Dartmouth College. The Rev. Elisha Lord Cleaveland (1806-66), graduated Bowdoin, 1829, an able divine of New Haven, Conn. Josiah Peabody, graduated Dartmouth College, an Armenian missionary. Cyrus Cummings, graduated Dartmouth College, counsellor-at-law, Boston. The Rev. George Hood, a minister in Southport, N. Y.

Through the instrumentality of its distinguished sons, Topsfield has obtained a good reputation abroad.

Business. — A large number of the inhabitants are employed in shoe manufacturing. The factories of Messrs. John Bailey and Charles Herrick, and one or two smaller business concerns, form this branch of industry. Some 1,500 pairs of shoes are turned out every working-day. Most of them are the kinds known as women's, misses', &c., — very few, if any, of the heavier make are manufactured. Sewing-machines have been introduced, and some of their manufacture is now sewed work, especially in the factory of Mr. Herrick. Messrs. Herrick and Bailey have together about $30,000 invested; and about $215,000 worth of goods are annually manufactured. About $20,000 are invested in the blacksmithing, butchering, and other small business concerns in the town. The outskirts of the town are, of course, devoted to the interests of agriculture and its attendant ramifications.

Almshouse. — Previous to the year 1822, the paupers in the town were boarded out, as was the custom of early days. In the year above-mentioned, they purchased the "Ebenezer Dodge" farm, of Cyrus Cummings, Esq., for $3,500, and fitted it up to meet the exigence of the town. Under the care of the present master, Mr. William J. Savage, the farm thrives.

Town Hall. — March 4, 1873, the town voted to build a town hall, on "some suitable spot," at a less sum than $13,000, and a committee, consisting of the following gentlemen, was chosen to carry out the vote: Charles Herrick, John Bailey, John H. Potter, William E. Kimball, Dudley Bradstreet, Joseph W. Batchelder, and Ezra Towne.

Public Library. — A room was also prepared in the town hall for the use of the public library, which was founded in 1875. The following gentlemen were the committee for founding the same, viz.: — Sidney A. Merriam, Esq., the Rev. Anson McLoud, Humphrey Balch, Esq., the Rev. James H. Fitts, and Dr. J. Allen. For founding the library, contributions were made by Messrs. Blake, Merriam, and others. The present number of volumes is 1,500, and the annual circulation of the same, 10,000. Sidney A. Merriam, Esq., at his decease, bequeathed to the library a bond of $1,000 to be placed at interest, and the committee to use its income, semi-annually, for the purchase of books. A *social* library was organized here in 1794, — the largest number of volumes in its possession, at any one time, being about 200. This library managed to live until the new public library was founded, when they were incorporated as one. The Rev. Anson McLoud is the librarian.

The turnpike from Boston to Newburyport runs through the town. Until the Danvers and Newburyport branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad was built, several stages ran over the turnpike daily. This was the popular and only public mode of conveyance then in being, to Boston, Newburyport, and other places. A large hotel was built near the village, which was one of the stages' principal stopping-places along the route. The turnpike has had its day, being superseded by the steam-cars in 1854.

Topsfield has one post-office, located in the village. J. Bailey Poor, postmaster.

The population of Topsfield in 1875, according to the last census, was 1,221, — 616 males, and 605 females. From the same census we gather the following facts: 394 ratable polls, of whom 356 are legal voters; 336 native, and twenty naturalized, 284 families, and 220 dwelling-houses, nine unoccupied. 239 males and 239 females married. 377 males and 366 females unmarried. Of the inhabitants, 652 were born in Topsfield; 336 in other towns in Massachusetts; 144 in other States in the Union; sixty-three foreign born; and twenty-six unknown. Of the foreign born, five were born in England; thirty-five in Ireland; three in Scotland; and nineteen in the Canadian Dominion. Of the inhabitants, seventeen hold government or professional positions; 356 personal and domestic; forty-four are engaged in trade and transportation; and 165 in agriculture. Of the selected occupations: of males, there are three clergymen, eight butchers, seven clerks, ten merchants or traders, 162 farmers, fourteen carpenters, 138 shoemakers, thirty-four laborers; of the females, nine teachers, 307 housewives, thirty-four domestic servants, twelve dressmakers, and eighteen that work upon shoes.

The valuation of the town is about $800,000. Town debt about $25,000. The majority of the voters are Republicans in politics.

The present (1878) town officers are: Town clerk (*pro tem.*), Ezra Towne; selectmen, Dudley Bradstreet, Salmon D. Hood, and Ariel H. Gould; assessors, M. B. Perkins, D. Bradstreet, and S. D. Hood; overseers of the poor, D. Bradstreet, J. H. Potter, and I. M. Woodbury.

Topsfield covers an area of about 8,000 acres, well divided into tillage, meadow, pasture, and woodland. Pritchard's Pond, of ninety-three acres, which has been stocked with bass fish by the town, lies partly in Topsfield. There is no other natural sheet of water worth mentioning. Around the level plain on which the village is situated, there are several prominent eminences, which are known as Bear, Lake's, Pingree's, Town, and Great Hill. The Ipswich River flows between Lake's, Pingree's, and Town Hill, and, meandering through the lowlands, passes onward to the ocean. The view from Pingree's (sometimes called "River") Hill is one of the most picturesque and beautiful that can be found in New England.

WENHAM.

Six miles north of Salem, on the county road to Ipswich, lies the charming little farming hamlet of Wenham, nestling in its lovely dell on the farther shore of the great pond, which is now dignified by the title of lake, and bears the name of the town within which its major portion lies. "In Enon, near to Salem, because there was much water there," was the quaintly appropriate text of pious Hugh Peters's first sermon in this then blooming wilderness, the first preached within the limits of the town; and by this name, Enon, the place was called, until, on "ye 10th day of ye third month, Anno 1643," the General Court of Elections, held at Boston, ordered "that Enon shall be called Wenham. Wenham is granted to be a town, and hath liberty to send a deputy. A true copy, as appears of record examined. Isaac Addington, Secretary."

This was the date of incorporation of the town. The name was undoubtedly derived from a town in Suffolk, in the mother country, near Ipswich, consisting of two parishes, known as Great and Little Wenham respectively. The early settlers were, many of them, natives of these parishes. Although the town was not incorporated until 1643, there had been settlers within its borders as early as 1639, and possibly prior to that date. It was the first township to secede from its ancient mother, Salem, and to declare its independence. The territory embraced within its limits belonged to the Agawam tribe of Indians, then settled upon the Ipswich River, and was purchased of them for the nominal sum of £4 16*s*.

The first mention made of the place is in connection with a tragedy enacted on the borders of its placid lake. John Hoddy, apparently a quiet and inoffensive countryman, while travelling on the king's highway, near the Beverly bounds, was attacked and foully murdered by a highwayman, one John Williams, who expected to secure a large sum of money which his victim was supposed to have in his possession, but was disappointed in finding actually nothing. The murderer is said to have been seized by Hoddy's faithful dog, and held until he was apprehended by the neighboring farmers. He was sentenced and executed in Boston. This murder was the first committed among the European population of the Bay Colony.

Nov. 5, 1639, the Legislature passed an Act, that "whereas the inhabitants of Salem have agreed to plant a village near the ryver, which runneth to Ipswich, it is ordered, that all the land near their bounds, between Salem and said ryver, not belonging to any other town or person, by any former grant, shall belong to said village."

The present town lies between Hamilton on the north and Beverly on the south, with Manchester on its eastern and Danvers and Topsfield on its western borders. Its territory is six and one-half miles in length, and varies in breadth from one-half a mile to two and one-fourth miles, containing an area of 5,400 acres. Its general topography is charming in the extreme. The surface, for the greater part, is level; in many places low and swampy. Lord's Hill, in "Egypt," is the most commanding elevation, affording a superb vista of the bay and ocean, and the surrounding country for miles in extent. Moulton's Hill, a smaller eminence at the head of Cedar Pond, gives a charming view of quiet landscape, diversified by hill and dale, pond and streamlet. The quiet waters of the great pond placidly ripple at the feet of the observer, while far to the northward stretches the vast swamp, shrouded in its dense and sombre foliage.

The sturdy range of hills on the eastern and northern borders guard the little hamlet from the wild fury of the winds sweeping across from Salem Harbor and the Bay. Fifteen hundred acres of the town's territory is low and swampy. The Great Swamp on the north, which extends beyond the boundaries into Topsfield and Hamilton, contains in itself upwards of 2,000 acres of unbroken wilderness. The waters of this swamp are drained by the Ipswich River, which flows through its northern portion. The ponds, of which there are five within the limits of the town, cover, in the aggregate, some 400 acres. Of these the far-famed Wenham Lake, or great pond, contains in itself an area of 320 acres, 100 of which lie within the town of Beverly. Its shores slope gracefully down to the water's edge, and its margin is composed of clean gravel and sand. In shape it is irregular, being at one point almost divided into two equal parts, by the inward projection of its shores. Its average depth is fifty feet, and its outlet is thirty-four feet above the flow of the tide in the Ipswich River. Its source of supply is believed to be hidden springs, as no streams flow into it, although it has an abundant water-shed from its high shores. Its waters are chiefly remarkable for their great purity. Wenham Lake ice has won for itself an enviable fame, even in the uttermost parts of the earth: in far-away Calcutta, on the hot plains of Africa, and in the tropical countries of our own continent. Blocks two feet in thickness have been cut from this lake, so transparent that a newspaper has been clearly read through their entire thickness. On the northern side of this pond was formerly "Peters's Pulpit," a little conical hill, from whose crest Hugh Peters preached that first sermon, more than 240 years ago. The town at one time offered this hill to the First Church in Salem, as a spot on which to erect a suitable memorial to the memory of their former pastor; but the offer was not accepted, and the hill was transferred to the ice company, who removed it to erect their ice-houses on its site. It is now entirely obliterated. On the west of Wenham Lake, and connected with it, is Cedar Pond, containing about twenty acres. It is almost enveloped in dense woods. The project was formed many years ago, by some Salem gentlemen, of digging a canal from this pond to its larger neighbor, and erecting upon it a large factory. The canal was dug, but the hoped-for power was not forthcoming, and the design had to be abandoned. Muddy Pond, also containing about twenty acres, lies on the southerly side of the Great Swamp. Pleasant Pond, a lovely sheet of water covering thirty acres, is so hemmed in by surrounding hills and woods as to be entirely concealed, until one comes out suddenly upon its banks. A little knoll on its eastern shore affords one of the prettiest views in the town, taking in, as it does, the lake and swamp, the fertile hills and dales of Topsfield and Middleton, and to the southward the spires of Beverly and Salem. On the south-east lies the town; beyond it the farms of Hamilton; while the Ipswich hills terminate the vista on the north. Joseph P. Cook was drowned in this pond, Dec. 10, 1856, while skating. Coy's Pond, a long, narrow sheet of water, containing about the same area as Pleasant, lies in the easterly part of the town, and is connected with a series of lakes, in Chebacco Parish, which have their outlet to the sea in Essex.

Miles River, the principal stream in the town, rises in a swamp in the northern part of Beverly. It flows first through the eastern part of Wenham, thence turning to the west through the Neck, till it again strikes the Beverly line. It receives a branch here from the east, and afterwards the stream which forms the outlet of Wenham Lake. Turning again to the north, it flows through the town a little to the east of the village, and pursues its course through Hamilton to the Ipswich River. Its current is sluggish, and falls but a few feet in its course of four or five miles through the town. Although offering no great advantages of water power, yet in the ancient days, at two places, where there is a slight fall, there was a saw and a grist mill, which have long since passed away. Thus Feb. 22, 1686-87, mention is made in the ancient records of Lieut. Dodge's saw-mill, and of a grant to Ensign Fairfield to erect a corn-mill below the site of Dodge's mill, which the former did not improve, and which was re-granted to John Dodge for the same purpose. Thomas Fiske was granted permission to increase the water power of the present Coy's Pond, anciently called Pleasant, for the benefit of this mill. Wenham, although not possessing any remarkable natural facilities for wealth, has a fine, fertile soil, and an exceedingly healthful situation. It is remarkable for its quiet rural beauty.

The early records, prior to 1642, are not well preserved; the earliest now extant is a grant of twenty acres of land to the town, one-half by Mr. Smith on one side of the meeting-house, and one-half by Mr. John Fisk on the other side of it. This grant was made March 2, 1642, and appears to have been divided into two-acre lots, which were given to settlers on condition of their building dwellings upon them. In case any should desire to remove from the village, they

were required to offer their places for sale first to the "Plantation." This scheme was entered into for the purpose of encouraging settlers, and to form a village about the centre of the town. By this vote, it appears that there was a meeting-house prior to the one erected and completed in 1663. It is supposed to have stood upon the eminence near the house of Henry Tarr.

November, 1643, the town voted, that no inhabitant should introduce anyone into the town, without the consent of the selectmen, under a penalty of five shillings per week for every week such person remained. This remained in force for many years, and from time to time persons not regularly approved "were warned to remove to the place from whence they came."

There appears to have been a large tract of land held in common by the town, and the records for many years are filled with grants from this land to new settlers. When any property was sold, the town was always to have the first offer of it.

The original corporators alone appear to have had the right to hold office or to vote. Subsequently new-comers were made townsmen by a vote of the town, who reserved the right of conferring citizenship upon such persons as they saw fit. Every person who wished to become a freeman was obliged to be a member of some Congregational Church. None but freemen could become citizens. This regulation continued in force until 1664, when it was modified by a royal order to allow all persons to become freemen who could obtain clergymen's certificates of their being sound in doctrine and correct in conduct. They were obliged to bind themselves by what was known as the freeman's oath. May 14, 1634, the form as described was as follows: "I, A. B., being by God's providence an inhabitant and freeman within the jurisdiction of this Commonwealth, do freely acknowledge myself to be subject to the government thereof; and, therefore, do swear, by the great and dreadful name of the everlasting God, that I will be true and faithful to the same, and will accordingly yield assistance and support thereunto, with my person and estate, as in equity I am bound; and I will also endeavor to maintain and preserve all the liberties and privileges thereof, submitting myself to the wholesome laws and orders made and established by the same. And farther, that I will not plot nor practise any evil against it, nor consent to any that shall so do, but will truly discover and reveal the same to lawful authority, now here established, for the speedy preventing thereof. Moreover, I do solemnly bind myself in sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice touching any such matter of this State, wherein freemen are to deal, I will give my vote and suffrage, as I shall judge in my own conscience may best conduce to the public weal of the body, without respect of persons or favor of any man; so help me God in the Lord Jesus Christ."

Now church members were obliged to take the residents' oath, which resembled the above, but omitted the final clause.

Dec. 4, 1644, William Fiske was chosen "Clarke of ye writts," an office probably similar to the present town clerk. Phinehas Fiske was the first constable, Ezdras Reade, the first grand juryman, and Charles Gott and John Fisk appear on the records as the first "collectmen."

Among the earliest settlers of the town were Phineas Fisk, William Fisk, John Fisk, Richard Dodge, Charles Gott, Austin Kilham, Richard Goldsmith, Thomas White, John Abby, Robert Harris, Joseph Batchelder, Ezdras Reade, James Moulton, John Fairfield, Richard Hutton, Robert Gowing, Richard Kimball, Edward Waldron, and Christopher Young. The lineal descendants of these families are still living in Wenham.

In 1643 William Fisk was granted leave to keep an ordinary, or inn, and in 1646 he was licensed "to sell wine and strong water," which privileges were subsequently transferred to Phineas Fisk. As early as 1644, a highway was laid out by the State through Wenham to Ipswich. In the same year, the town voted, "that those, who have any lott in ye Neck, have libertie from the town to inclose in a common field with a straight fence from ye right hand of ye bridge unto ye river by Richard Dodge's, . . . provided a common highway be left out." That portion of the town had thus early been settled, and acquired its present name. The country appears to have been a wilderness at this time, and the early settlers were obliged to guard themselves from its manifold dangers. Nov. 28, 1644, a bounty of twenty shillings is offered for every wolf killed; and in 1650, Robert Gowing is fined £10 for selling a gun to an Indian. One-half of this fine was remitted by the General Court upon the humble petition of the offender. In 1656, the Rev. Mr. Fisk, pastor of the little community, with a majority of the church, removed to Chelmsford. The town was much weakened by this exodus. Those who were left, however, acted with spirit and energy. In 1663, Josselyn, in the account of his second voyage to New England, says: "Wenham is an inland town, very well watered, lying between Salem and Ipswich; consisteth most of men of judgment in re rustica, and well stored with cattle."

The records of the town contain little of importance during these years. "Sab., May 18, 1673, Richard Goldsmith was killed by lightning at the house of the Rev. Mr. Newman (lately deceased), while the Rev. Mr. Higginson, of Salem, was present. Mr. H. had but just returned from meeting, where he had supplied the pulpit. While he was sitting engaged in conversation, the lightning passed through the room, killing Mr. Goldsmith and a dog lying under his chair."

In 1675 came the bloody King Philip's War. Five of the men of Wenham were in the expedition against the Pequots and Narragansetts. Mark Batchelder, one of the five, was killed in the fearful assault on the fort. John Fisk, a sore wounded soldier of Wenham in this war, was granted leave to keep a public house in return for his services, with freedom from county rates, and to sell drink free of "imports or excises." This struggle appears to have borne heavily upon the town, for in this same year it was excused from paying its share of the rate for the support of Harvard College. During this period, the "Mason claim" to all the lands lying between Salem and the Merrimac River, under a patent of several years previous to Sir Ferdinand Gorges and Capt. Mason, was pressed, to the great annoyance of the towns-people. Several attempts were made by the heirs of Mason to plant colonies in this territory. The claim involved every man's title to his estate, and caused great excitement. A convention was held at Ipswich, to which Wenham sent a delegation. A petition to the king was drawn up, setting forth that the inhabitants had purchased their lands of the Massachusetts Bay Company, and of the Indians, and that they had been in uninterrupted and undisputed possession for more than fifty years, and praying His Majesty's favor, that the claim might be fairly tried in a legal way. Thomas Fisk, Walter Fairfield, and Thomas Patch, of Wenham, signed this petition in behalf of their towns-people. The controversy continued for more than one hundred years, but was subsequently settled, and the original colonists were left in undisturbed possession. Subsequent to 1675, there were frequent disputes about boundaries, particularly that between Salem and Beverly. This was subsequently settled in favor of Wenham, and the two other towns were obliged to pay £5 and costs each for their infringements on her territory.

In the Andros revolution of 1688, the people of Wenham appear to have taken an active interest; and, on the happy termination of that struggle, a public town-meeting of thanksgiving was held May 6, 1689. With the advent of the old French War, the town felt called upon to provide better means of protection; and, Oct. 30, 1691, it was voted to construct a fort for the shelter of the women and children in times of danger. Several years prior to this, a company of train-band soldiery had been formed, and in 1683, by order of the General Court, Thomas Fisk was made captain; Charles Gott, lieutenant; and William Fisk, ensign, of the first company in Wenham. In 1692, Walter Fairfield was elected representative, and was allowed two shillings per day while attending the Colonial Assembly.

In 1700, although the original soil appears to have been purchased from the Indians, and one family still holds its farm by a deed from its aboriginal owner, signed with an arrow as his mark, certain Indians, named Samuel English, Joseph English, and John Umpee, "heirs of Moschanomett, late sagamore, lay claim and challenge to the soil of our township." The matter was referred to a committee and was amicably settled by the payment of £4 16s. raised by a tax. March 6, 1704–05, it was voted to divide the common lands held by the town, in equitable proportions among the proprietors. The swamp and other lands were thus divided. The former being divided into nine different lots, and again subdivided among the companies of persons who drew them.

Wenham contributed her share of men and money for the early wars of the eighteenth century. In the French war of 1756 to 1763, quite a large number of Wenham men enlisted in Col. Ichabod Plaisted's regiment, of which the Rev. Mr. Swain, of Wenham church, was chaplain. After the reduction of Acadia, several of the inhabitants of that ill-fated elysium found their way to Wenham, and there are frequent mentions of them as "neutral French" or the "French family" in the records. They are supposed to have occupied the place now known as Herrick's Corner. The "French neutrals" were finally disposed of, Dec. 20, 1762, to Dr. Putnam, of Danvers. Wenham, in common with its sister towns, opposed the plan of a general union of the Colonies, broached July 4, 1754. In 1768, Benjamin Fair-

field was appointed a delegate to the Provincial Convention at Faneuil Hall. The town took a patriotic stand with its neighbors early in the struggle for independence. A committee was appointed May 19, 1773, to take into consideration the pamphlet of the Boston Committee of Correspondence. They reported in favor of manifesting the readiness of the town to join with the town of Boston and others, in all constitutional methods to preserve their civil and religious liberties inviolate. The report was unanimously accepted. In September, 1774, Benjamin Fairfield was chosen to attend the General Court at Salem, with instructions to "join in forming a provincial Congress if need be." It was also voted to raise fifteen minute-men. Besides these, the town furnished for service throughout the war 115 men, making 130 in all. Large sums of money were also raised for the support of the army in the field.

In 1781 Mr. Stephen Dodge was chosen a representative to the convention at Concord to assist in framing a constitution for the State. May 19, 1780, in common with other towns, Wenham was visited by the dark day. The phenomenon appears to have been the same here as elsewhere. In 1786 Wenham petitioned the General Court for liberty to erect a bridge over Beverly Ferry, and appears to have taken the initiative in that enterprise, and in 1787 the town chose two agents, Capt. John Gardiner and Capt. Richard Dodge, to represent it in the matter before the General Court. The petition was granted, and, in 1788, the bridge was opened for travel. In the War of 1812, although opposing the policy which inaugurated it, Wenham did what it could to sustain the honor of the country in the field, both with men and money.

In 1820 Wenham favored the revision of the State Constitution. In 1825 it was voted that it was inexpedient that any licenses should be granted for the sale of ardent liquors in the town. In 1842 it again took strong ground against the sale of liquor within its limits.

In 1854 the present town hall was built; prior to this date meetings had been held in the meeting-house and vestry. The cost of the new building was $5,000.

At the call to arms in 1861, to save the nation, the sons of Wenham nobly responded and did brave service in the field: 130 men from this town served in the war in the different arms of the service, 27 of whom gave their lives in the struggle. Within the past year the town has voted to erect a suitable memorial to the memory of the fallen. The memorial is of granite, quarried in Mason, N. H., and is of very tasteful design. It is twenty-four feet in height, and is surmounted by the figure of a soldier. The whole cost, exclusive of the foundation, is $1,500.

The First Congregational Church in Wenham was organized through the efforts of Mr. John Fiske, the former assistant of Mr. Peters in his ministerial labors at Salem, and the teacher of the first grammar school in that town. He became the first pastor and remained in its ministry for twelve years. He was also a physician, and was warmly beloved by his people. "18th of ye 8th month 1644" is the date of the first church meeting in Wenham. Mr. Fiske must have preached there for several years prior to this, and probably resided there; for his son Moses is recorded as born at Wenham in 1642. After his removal to Chelmsford, in 1656, he remained in the pastorate for twenty years, until his death, in 1676, at the age of seventy-five.

The Rev. Antipas Newman succeeded Mr. Fiske. During his pastorate, the second meeting-house was built, in 1663, in accordance with a vote of the town in 1660. The size of the new house was twenty-four feet square and twelve feet stud. The old house was sold to partly defray the cost of the new, and in addition £80 3*s*. 8*d*. was raised by rate. Mr. Gerrish, the third pastor, settled in Wenham May 31, 1673; he was ordained pastor Jan. 13, 1674, and remained in the ministry until his death, Jan. 6, 1720. Seats were assigned in the meeting-house by a special committee chosen for the purpose. Special deference was paid to members of the train band, officers, &c., in the seating. The people of Ipswich worshipped for a time with this church, and were assigned seats in the west gallery and the body of the house, on their paying their proportionate share of the expense. In 1714, fourteen church members and seventeen families were dismissed to form a new church at Ipswich Hamlet, now Hamilton. Nine hundred and eighty-seven persons were baptized, two hundred and thirty-six owned the covenant, and two hundred and thirteen were admitted to full communion during Mr. Gerrish's pastorate. The present meeting-house was dedicated Dec. 20, 1843, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Daniel Mansfield, then pastor. It is the fourth house of worship occupied by the society. Its predecessor was built about the year 1748. It was fifty-two feet long, forty-two wide, and twenty-four feet stud. It originally had a steeple and bell, but in 1759 it was voted to pull down the steeple to save the house. In 1771, however, another steeple was built. It was blown down in the great gale of 1815, and its place was supplied by a square tower. This house was used for more than ninety-five years, when it gave way to the new one in October, 1843. The present house stands in the rear of the site of the ancient edifice. The church is now in a flourishing and prosperous condition. The present pastor is the Rev. John M. Hart, ordained Dec. 11, 1878.

The Baptist church at the Neck was erected in 1826, and the society was constituted Oct. 12th of that year, by twenty-five brothers and sisters, who had been dismissed from the church at Beverly for the purpose. The first pastor was the Rev. Charles Miller, of Scotland, who was settled April 4, 1833. The present pastor is the Rev. A. D. Gorham.

Wenham appears to have had no public school until the close of the seventeenth century. In 1700, a complaint was made against the town on this account, and, Sept. 9th of that year, the selectmen voted that Capt. Thomas Fisk should keep a school for the year ensuing. In 1713 William Rogers was school-master, and "55 shillings were voted him for his allowance." There was but one school in town till 1719, when a second was established. In 1739, £30 was appropriated for the support of the public schools. In 1772, the first school committee was chosen. There were three schools in the town in 1770, when a grammar school was established. The present number of schools is five, consisting of a grammar, primary, and three mixed schools. The largest number of scholars attending the past year was 165.

Wenham is essentially a farming town, and contains no prominent manufacturing industries. Its population in 1875 was 911, and is estimated at present (1878) at 950. The number of polls is 247. The valuation of personal estate is $125,950; of real estate $410,950; the number of dwellings is 181.

WEST NEWBURY.

CHAPTER I.

ITS ORGANIZATION — TOPOGRAPHY — GENERAL CHARACTER.

The town has little distinctive history. In connection with Newbury, the mother town, and Newburyport, with which its early relations were very close, it is historic, since its old families date back to the Parker settlement in 1635, and some of them very early came within the present corporate limits, which were formerly the West, or Second, Parish of Newbury, organized near the close of the seventeenth century. The Browns, Plumers, Littles, Smiths, Shorts, Cokers, Ordways, Woodmans, Bartletts, Poores, Emerys, Moultons, Jaqueses, Cheneys, and others, being of the original settlers of Newbury, or coming soon after. They helped to make the old town one of the most famous in the State, and of themselves they have made the "New Town" — West Newbury — one of the most pleasant and prosperous in Essex County. But the whole life of the town is covered by the memory of many of its inhabitants still living, and not very old.

With roads all built, with carriages and other modes of easy and quick travelling, and with all danger from aboriginal savages removed, we can have very little conception of what distance was to our ancestors, where they limited the building of houses to one-half mile from the meeting-house, and went not up to the worship of the Sabbath-day without shot-guns in their hands. From the original settlement on the river Parker — Quascacunquen, as they called it — before Rowley was settled, the wilderness was unbroken to Ipswich, and when travelled on foot, many must have been the misgivings, the fears, of danger from wild beasts and savage men; and for long years to the founding of Andover and Haverhill, which remained frontier settlements for two generations, there were few people at the north and west of what is now Newburyport. So it happened that in the first division of lands, little account was made of the western section of the town. In 1642, it was ordered that all commons and *waste* land, above the farms of Richard Dummer, in what is New Byfield, and of Edward Rawson, who lived near the Belleville Church, should lie *perpetually common*, the meadows only excepted. This, of course, comprised much land now in Newbury and Newburyport, and the whole of West Newbury. They called it a "perpetual common" "waste ground," "the upper woods," and the "upper common." Here were, in fact, the best farming lands in their thirty-thousand-acre grant, on the beautiful rolling hills and in the sweet vales; but so far away did they seem, that they voted them solitudes and waste places, which one might only attempt to redeem from the wilderness at his own personal risk and peril. And so for a time they remained, save where the hardy settler built his cabin upon the highlands, or gave the rich pastures by the running waters to his flocks and herds.

When a further division of lands took place in 1686, it was voted, forty-three to thirty-eight, — that was a vote of freemen; that is, those qualified by their oath to vote, and of freeholders, those already owners of real estate, and therefore not large, — that each freeholder should have twenty acres of land laid out in the "upper commons" on the Merrimac River, and on the south-west side of the "upper commons." It appears from other votes, also, that then, in the second half-century from the settlement, that most of the lands above the Artichoke River were unfenced and common. Occasionally timber was granted to individuals for building uses, and some complaints were made of timber stealing. That same year, Constable Moses Pillsbury seized and delivered to Joseph Pike forty-one oak-trees, found cut near Long Hill. This Joseph Pike — "Sergeant" was his title — was the man who built a bridge over Indian River, near where he had a saw-mill, the foundations of the structure or the dam remaining to this day.

In October of the same year, 1686, the town voted that one-half the six thousand acres of the upper commons, in quantity and quality, should be divided among the freeholders, in equal parts; and the other half should be divided among all the inhabitants of the town, including the freeholders, according as their rates had been in the minister's tax. This was pretty broad land-grabbing, leaving the unbelieving or unminister-paying poor man a very slim chance of having land to live on, or be buried in. As might have been expected, this led to "great confusions, contentions, inconveniencies, and injuries"; but the land was divided, and lots cast for the divisions, and many of the "squatter sovereigns" undoubtedly had taken from them what they seemed to have, with the improvements they had made. The range of the lots began near the Artichoke and ran by the Merrimac River, to what is now the Groveland line; or from Sergeant John Emery's farm unto John Gerrish's farm. This John Emery was the second John, son of the miller, who built the second mill in Newbury, run by water, on the Artichoke, and his original lands are in the hands of his descendants unto this day, as we find many of the lands in West Newbury have been so retained.

If we take it for granted that no people were living upon these lands, "the upper commons," and the "waste grounds," we shall deceive ourselves; for not only do we find these lots running from one farm to another, but we have abundant evidence of quite a population. Indeed, the First Parsh is rich with historical recollections of the Moodys, Baileys, Bartletts, Browns, Ordways, Sawyers, and others,—names prominent in the history of the town from before that early date.

Look back two centuries! There is Pipe-stave Hill, not as to-day with its verdant, closely-shaven lawns, but covered with heavy oaks, already falling before the woodman's axe, the timber to be used in ship-building, or rifted for staves, with which vessels loaded at the point where now is the landing, and sailed direct for the West Indies. From this we have the name "Pipe-stave," because there were the staves for pipes manufactured. Indian River is on the upper side, a larger stream than now, bridged for the travelled way, and dammed at its mouth for a water-power to run a grist and saw mill. On the other side below is the Artichoke, no inconsiderable stream, also used in the same manner for a mill privilege. Daniel Jaques lives on the hill, — Daniel, a young man, son of Henry, the carpenter, and who married Mary Williams. At the foot of the hill, where Moses Ridgeway's house stands, lived Caleb Moody, who was a large landholder, wealthy, keeping a stock of sixty head of cattle, with flocks of sheep and goats. He was one of the chief men of the town, and a representative to the General Court. Him we find involved in the revolution against Edmund Andros, Governor, for which he was cast into prison, with Joseph Bayley. This was in 1688.

The next year Andros was deposed by the people in Boston, and, to aid in that good work, Samuel Bartlet, the basket-maker, fiddler, and farmer, who was of the Bartlet Springs family, rode to Boston so fast, says tradition, that his long, rusty sword, dragging on the ground, left a stream of fire on the rough roads, all the way. He was the grandfather of Josiah Bartlet, the signer of the Declaration of Independence, from New Hampshire.

The very next year after Andros was deposed, or in 1690, we find at this point a plot for an Indian invasion; at the bottom of which was Isaac Morrill, from New Jersey, who endeavored to entice the negroes and Indians, slaves, to leave their masters, seize a vessel, and go to Canada, to join the French and Indians, who were to come down upon the towns, and attack Newbury on the rear, cutting off the English, and setting the negroes free. With him was implicated George Major, another Jersey man, and an Indian slave belonging to Caleb Moody, and a negro slave belonging to Richard Dole. Five years later, in 1695, an attack was actually made by five Indians, who followed up the Artichoke, and raided upon the house of John Brown, on Turkey Hill, capturing nine women and children, one of whom, an infant, was killed. Others were so injured that they died of their wounds. One person escaped from the house; and, the alarm being given, they were pursued by Capt. Stephen Greenleaf, with armed men, who rescued the captives, but not till Capt. Greenleaf had been

badly wounded, a musket-ball going through his wrist and into his side. This was the only instance in which an inhabitant of Newbury was attacked, captured, or killed, by the Indians.

Another fact, as showing the population at that date, is this, that they built a meeting-house on Pipe-stave Hill, close to where the Boynton house now is, in 1689. In 1690, the people petitioned the town to have two ministers, so that one might preach at the "west meeting-house"; or that the town would consent for them to have a minister at their own charge, and "lovingly" agree upon a dividing line for the two parishes. The town did not see fit to grant their prayer, and we may believe that party-spirit ran high on this question, and that their pious souls were deeply moved, for we find Joseph Bayley indicted for calling the men appointed by the town to answer their petition "devils incarnate," and, in 1694, Joseph Bayley and five others were admonished for opposing their regularly ordained minister.

In 1693, in a petition to the General Court, they represented that they had three hundred persons, who had built a meeting-house at their own cost, and for five years had endeavored to establish public worship. As other parts of the town were not without inhabitants, this indicates that the "upper woods" were rapidly being peopled. As ever, "westward the star of empire" held its course.

It is noteworthy that population first gathered upon the hill-tops. For this there were various reasons. The most beautiful parts of the towns are the hills which characterize its topography; not rough, barren, broken, and hard, but rising gently two and three hundred feet above the level of the sea. They furnish fine views inland and seaward. There is not a prettier view in the county than from Pipe-stave Hill, before which and on either side unrolls the grand panorama of the Merrimac, — "child of the white-crested mountain," as Whittier terms it, "whose springs gush forth in the shade of the cliff-eagle's wing," — which seeks the sea, meandering through rich meadows and between frowning hills more than two and a half hundred miles of its silvery tide. Here we overlook it from Haverhill till its waters mingle with the ocean beyond the sand-hills of Salisbury and Plum Island, over which the eye reaches to Cape Ann on the one hand, and the Isles of Shoals on the other. So from the other hill-tops, — Indian, Archelaus, Long, Crane-neck, and others, — from which full one-third of the towns in the county come to view, with the mountain-peaks of the interior of this State, of New Hampshire and of western Maine. These hills are singularly well watered. There is not one of them where the water is not within thirty feet of the top, and some have their springs bursting up to the near surface. They are like the old wells of the Eastern deserts, causing fertility all about them. Hence, at first they were forest-hills, crowned with the old oaks and other trees furnishing heavy timber; and to-day the richest pastures and the finest fields for grain and corn crown the highest lands.

It was very natural, therefore, that Pipe-stave Hill should have attracted the attention of Caleb Moody, a clear-sighted and vigorous man; and that, as early as 1711, fifty families lived within a half mile or so of the meeting-house, which graced its eastern declivity, while there were ninety-six families, indicating a population of five hundred, above the Artichoke River. That is about one-quarter of the population of the town to-day, and possibly the territory from the Deer Island bridge to Pipe-stave Hill was then as densely peopled as now. In 1716, the number of ratable polls in West Newbury, or the west parish, was 196; while there were only 437 in the first parish, and fifty-two about Dummer's Falls, or in Byfield; and from a map of the town made in 1729, there appears to have been 184 houses and 183 families in the west parish at that date. Some of these families were rich; for we find by the will of Daniel Emery, who died that very year, that he gave sixty pounds for the use of the ministry, — of which ten pounds were for communion plate; twenty pounds for the first church that should be gathered in Chester, N. H.; twenty pounds for Nottingham; twenty-five pounds to the parish where he lived; twenty-five pounds to Mr. Tufts, his pastor; fifty pounds to his kinsman in Harvard College; and one thousand pounds to his brothers and sisters, besides providing liberally for his widow. This was a large estate, when pasture-lands were only worth six shillings an acre, field-lands twelve shillings, and the whole valuation of the town of Newbury was about ten thousand pounds. Daniel Emery, therefore, dying at the early age of thirty-six, must have been among the richest men of this vicinity; and more or less of the Emery family from the first have so ranked.

But if Caleb Moody and his neighbors saw the beauty, and appreciated the wealth, of Pipe-stave Hill and its surroundings, no less have their descendants, the Moodys, Boyntons, Cokers, Downers, Newells, and Ridgeways, — all justly priding themselves of the Caleb Moody blood in their veins, and holding to their ancestral acres with strong hands.

Occasionally others, attracted by the advantages of the locality, have come in to possess and enjoy. The most noted of these was Tristram Dalton, the first senator in Congress from Massachusetts, and one of the most distinguished, cultivated, and patriotic citizens of New England. He had his residence on what is now the Moody farm, and his brother-in-law, Stephen Hooper, a rich merchant, owned the Coker farm adjoining, and lived in the present residence of E. M. Boynton. Pipe-stave Hill was their country-seat, while their summer residences were at Newburyport; and down on the Merrimac, near the mouth of the Artichoke, they had a "retreat" for their hunting and fishing parties: for these men lived in princely style, copying the fashions of the aristocracy of Great Britain. Tristram Dalton, in going to the seat of government for his congressional duties, travelled in his private carriage, with driver and footman in livery, and his body servant, African Cæsar, his slave, in constant attendance. He and Mr. Hooper had large estates in West Newbury, and spared no expense in keeping them under the highest cultivation, suited to their own style of life, their high rank in the community, and the social, political, and literary caste of the guests they there entertained; who were such men as Washington and John Adams, our first two presidents, Talleyrand, Lafayette, Louis Philippe, Brissot de Warville, and their like, — royal, titled, learned, and influential, whose names belong to the history of the world. The foot-prints of Dalton and Hooper are not yet effaced from that locality. They spent much money in grading the hill, and proposed the erection of two large houses, which were to be connected by a covered way (for their relations were most intimate): but after Mr. Dalton went to Congress, and the seat of government was removed to Washington, he largely invested in real estate there, and suffered losses by depreciation of property and the mismanagement of his agent; so that at the close of his senatorial term he was in reduced circumstances, and Washington, who was his intimate personal as well as political friend, appointed him surveyor of the port of Boston. Then in a great measure he was lost to Essex County, though he never ceased to regard this as his home, and, when he died, was buried in St. Paul's Churchyard, at Newburyport, where his father, who was a rich merchant, and others of the family, rest in their last sleep.

We may not follow the changes which have since come to the estates on Pipe-stave Hill; but it is among the singular circumstances, that, when Tristram Dalton was living on the hill in such princely style, there was a boy, born in the Gardner house, at the foot of the same hill, Moses Brown, whose destiny was to increase as Dalton decreased. He became a wheelwright, and removed to Newburyport to pursue his calling. The first work given him was the repairing of a carriage for Tristram Dalton, which he took from Mr. Dalton's estate on State Street, and drew by hand to his shop. Afterwards, when Mr. Dalton was poor, Moses Brown had become wealthy, and purchased and lived in the very Dalton house from which he had drawn that carriage. He became a merchant whose ships were on all the seas; a citizen of whom Newburyport was proud, and to-day points to the many buildings he erected and the improvements he made. He was a man of much ability, and a Christian gentleman, interested in and aiding what would tend to the advancement of his race. Ten thousand dollars gave he to the founding of Andover Seminary, being one of the largest of its first patrons; the Brown High School, of Newburyport, to found which he donated $15,000, bears his name; and that same name often appeared with large sums of money against it for religious and charitable purposes. His large estate, now held by his granddaughter, Mrs. S. J. Hale, in Newburyport, has been used in its incomes for the same beneficent purposes.

Something similar might be said of the present successor to the Hooper estate, E. M. Boynton; but he still lives, a young man, who, though he may trace his ancestry back through nine centuries, has been dependent upon his own hands and brains for his high position as a man of business and thought, of action and mind — for his fame. At New York, where his business is located, the Chamber of Commerce, though he was one of its youngest members, elected him to represent them in the convention of the Boards of Trade in London in 1876, where he acquitted himself with much honor; and the present year he was supported for a seat in Congress, with much enthusiasm, leading all the names on his ticket. But not here may we linger.

We have said that the first settlers sought the beautiful hill-tops; and since of all the old Newbury families the Littles had the "earth-hunger" strongest, we may not be surprised to find them on

Turkey and Crane-neck hills, where they have held to this date. The part of Turkey Hill in West Newbury, however, was settled by the Browns, sprung from Thomas Brown, weaver, whose daughter Mary was the first white child born in Newbury, in 1635. He was probably the first settler in West Newbury; since he lived there himself, and died there, by a fall, when eighty years old, in 1687, which was thirty-two years after his wife Mary, mother of that first-born child. He was grandfather of John Brown, whose house was raided on and robbed, in 1695, by the Indians, and ancestor of the Browns, who now own the same farm. The hill has its name from the wild turkeys which abounded there.

Bartlett Hill takes its name from the Bartletts, who there resided for generations; the first, Capt. Richard, dying there in 1749 or '50, in his seventy-fourth year, and probably his ancestors were there before him. They were shoemakers, and a long-lived race,—few dying at less than threescore and ten, and some approaching near to fivescore, by reason of their great strength. Josiah Bartlett, son of Richard, died in 1802, in his eightieth year, and his son Josiah, in 1826, at seventy-four; and his sons at more than eighty. Five of the surname Bartlett came to Newbury in 1635, the first year of the town. They are from Adam de Barttlot, who went to England with William the Conqueror in 1066. He was of small stature, called the little baron, and that is what the name means.

Another of the earliest settlements was at Ilsley's Hill, where, in accordance with the custom of selecting high ground, perhaps as affording a look-out for the Indians, Solomon Holman took possession of the land and built a log-house, about 1695. He afterwards purchased the property, the considerations being a fat heifer. When a young man he deserted from a British man-of-war, at Bermuda, where he married the daughter of a farmer upon whom he had foraged for support during his concealment; and, coming to Newbury in a vessel of his own construction, he led a seafaring life for a short time, when he retired to his West Parish farm, where he died, 1753, in his eighty-third year. The Ilsleys succeeded him, and have held since.

Indian Hill, which is one of the finest estates in the county, has its name from the Indians, who made it a grand resort, and retained possession to the last of their proprietorship in West Newbury. In 1650, Great Tom, Indian, who, Mr. Coffin thinks, was Masconomo, the Saganore of Agawam, deeded Indian Hill to the town of Newbury for three pounds. The deed included his planting lands, fenced in, and his rights to all woods, commons, and other lands. Soon after, the same property was granted to Samuel Poore, who began the first settlement in that part of the town. That farm has remained with the Poores to the present time, and is now owned by Maj. Ben: Perley Poore.

This is one of the most distinguished families in the town, Maj. Poore's father being one of the first merchants in New York, who lost his life by shipwreck on the coast of China, when he was seeking to open commerce between that empire and California; and his grandfather, Dr. Daniel Noyes Poore, a distinguished physician. Maj. Poore has himself a wide reputation and an honored name. He was born in 1820, representing the seventh generation on Indian Hill. He was educated at Dummer Academy, but early went South, where his father had large estates; and at eighteen became editor of the "Southern Whig," at Athens, Ga., which position he held till 1841, when he was appointed attaché of the American Legation at Brussels. While abroad, he was appointed Historical Agent for Massachusetts in France, the result of his four years' labor being ten solid volumes of illustrated MS., covering the period from the discovery of America to 1780. While travelling in Europe and the East, he was foreign correspondent of the Boston "Atlas;" and on his return, in 1850, became editor of the Boston "Bee," and editor and proprietor of the "American Sentinel." Since 1854 he has resided in Washington during the sessions of Congress, where first he was clerk of the Senate Committee on Foreign Affairs when Charles Sumner was its head, and formed the acquaintance of all the representatives of foreign powers at Washington, and is now clerk of the Committee on Printing, secretary of United States Agricultural Society, and editor of its journal. He is the oldest Washington newspaper correspondent, having been connected with the "Boston Journal" since 1854. He is the author of the "Rise and Fall of Louis Philippe," "Life of Gen. Taylor," "Early life of Napoleon," "History of Essex County Agricultural Society," "Conspiracy Trial," "Political Record and Congressional Directory," with many novels and miscellaneous and political works. He is among the most prolific writers of our day.

The next settler on Indian Hill, if not the earliest there, was Hannaniah Ordway, the son of James, a Welshman, the first of the name in America, whose wife was Ann Emery, who lived to his ninety-third year. His house was a garrison house, and he was the only man who ever killed an Indian in the town. He saw, one evening, an Indian creeping by the gates that led to his house, and fired at the spot. He found no Indian there; but a gun, and powder-horn filled with rum, which had been shot from a belt fastened around his body. A few days later, the dead body of an Indian was found in the woods, who, from the wounds, was evidently the one Mr. Ordway fired at. Ever since, the farm has been known as the Garrison place, and the gun and the powder-horn are still in the possession of the Ordways. The farm is now owned — the part where the garrison-house stood — by George J. L. Colby. The age of Mr. Ordway is noticeable, but several persons in that immediate neighborhood have lived to be very old. Samuel Poore — one of the Maj. Poore's ancestors — died at eighty-six. Several in the Sawyer family, who live on the east side of Indian Hill, have lived beyond ninety; and it is doubtful if better health and longer life are enjoyed on this continent than on the hills of West Newbury.

Still further to the West rises Crane-neck, where lived, as early as anybody, Ensign Enoch Little, who married Elizabeth Worth, and whose descendants hold his lands now. He died in 1766, in his eighty-first year. About the same time came James Smith, who died in 1757, at sixty-two. He was the great-great grandfather of the present James Smith, who lives in the original Smith mansion, built in 1707, at more than fourscore years, and his sister, Mrs. Maj. David Emery, is living at Newburyport, in her ninety-third year. Those two, Little and Smith, owned most of Crane-neck, now divided to many farms. About the same time, Dr. Matthew Adams, the first physician of West Newbury, who was of the same family with the presidents, John and John Quincy Adams, lived on the estate now belonging to Judge Bradley, of the Supreme Court of Rhode Island, who is one of his descendants. These were the settlers of Crane-neck proper. Among the families residing here in the last century were two in the same house, named respectively Yell and Louder; and the house was known as the Yell-Louder house.

The above were the important points of settlement, and the names of some of the early families.

In 1794, the question of dividing the town of Newbury having been discussed, it was voted to set off the three westerly parishes into a separate town; but that was reconsidered, and the question passed for final action to 1819, when what is now West Newbury was set off and named Parsons, in honor of the chief justice whose fame filled all the courts, where he was known as the "giant of the law." From some cause the name was changed, and from the old West Parish we have West Newbury, with a population in 1820 of 1,279. In 1850 that had increased to 1,746; and, in 1860, the highest point was reached, — 2,201. To 1870 there was a decline to 2,006: native Americans, 1,690; foreign born, 316: eleven were colored. Probably the population has not increased since.

The town is bounded north and north-westerly by the Merrimac River, which separates it from Amesbury, Merrimac, and Haverhill; east and south-east, by Newburyport and Newbury; south-west by Groveland. It is connected with Haverhill by the Rocks Bridge, which spans the Merrimac, being nearly a thousand feet long, sustained by four piers. It has three streams: Indian River and the Artichoke, which flow into the Merrimac; and Beaver Brook, which flows south into the Parker.

CHAPTER II.

ITS INDUSTRIES — FARMING — MANUFACTURES.

West Newbury is essentially a farming town, and has ever been. It has no great water-power, and has no railroads connecting it with centres of trade and commerce; but almost every acre of its land is capable of cultivation. Nason's "Gazetteer" says it has 128 farms; and the census of 1840 returned only 190 acres of land unimproved, and only 279 acres of woodland. There are some 4,000 acres of pasturage; 1,100 acres of fresh meadows; and 2,500 acres to English grass and tillage. There is no place where more enterprise and intelligence direct agriculture. The town has taken the lead in the prize exhibitions at the county fairs, and in addition to ordinary farming the people devote themselves to specialties suited to the demands of the times. A quarter of a century since it was noted for the production of apples; now it excels in strawberry culture. Its production

of milk, eggs, and poultry, is large. For a half century it has had well-established nurseries, that of T. C. Thurlow being known all over New England. It supplies the markets with early vegetables; and one farm, where the Gardners for five generations have cultivated, is largely devoted to plants and flowers, for which the Massachusetts Horticultural Society has awarded many premiums. It has the oldest Farmer's Club in the county, which holds weekly meetings through the winter, and gives annual exhibitions that compare favorably with those of the county. The leading member, and for eight years the president, of this club, Hon. Haydn Brown, is one of the chief citizens, and active in all the improvements demanded.

Not entirely, however, is the town agricultural. It was the first place in the country in the manufacture of combs; and has, since 1759, been one of the leading centres of that industry. Then we find Enoch Noyes, a self-taught mechanic, without instruction, and in the rudest way, making buttons and coarse combs of horn. He straightened the horns by steaming them over his kitchen fire and pressing them in a cleft log, opening it with wedges and allowing it to spring together. All the labor was done by hand. This continued to 1778, when he was assisted by William Cloud, a Hessian deserter from Burgoyne's army, who had been a comb-maker in Germany, and was a skilful mechanic. Enoch Noyes was himself of an inventive genius, and together they made tools which greatly facilitated the business. The workers increased till, by 1835, there were more than thirty comb shops in the town; some using horse-power, and others, foot lathes. Before that date persons had gone to Leominster, and the business had been extended to Lancaster and other towns; but it originated in West Newbury, and the machinery has been largely invented there. The foremost man in improving machinery was David E. Noyes, the grandson of Enoch, the original comb-maker; who was not only a superior mechanic, but had the advantages of some years working in Philadelphia, and at Monte Video, S. A., and of travelling in England and on the continent of Europe. He invented a machine for twining, or cutting the teeth, which was very valuable; and for years he was the most important man in comb-making in America. In 1844, the firm of S. C. Noyes & Co. took the lead, and have kept it to this day. They set up the first steam-engine used in the town, made many improvements in machinery, and have now the most perfect factory in New England. Only one other factory, that of H. G. & T. M. Chase, is in operation; but those two, with eighty hands and their new machines, produce more goods in two months than could all the small shops of forty years ago in the whole year. They have invested capital $175,000, and their annual production, at the taking of the last census, was $110,000 per annum.

The manufacturing of shoes for sale in Boston, Philadelphia, and further south, was early established here. The settlers on Crane-neck, from whom sprang the Littles, — Joseph and Benjamin, — founders of Georgetown, and the Bartletts, of Bartlett Hill, were largely in the business, and with the latter served Thomas Peabody, father of the London banker, whose mother was granddaughter of the Rev. William Johnson, and daughter of Joseph and Mary Little.

The chief manufacturers to-day are T. S. Ruddock and James Durgin & Son. The total capital employed in the business is $70,000; number of hands, 250, of whom fifty-nine are females; value of goods produced, $250,000.

The carriage business also began here very early, the first "chase" in the Commonwealth being made in this town, in 1779. The business was introduced by James Burgess; and the chief manufacturers here and at Bellville in the last century were the Greenleafs, Joseph Ridgeway, Robert Dodge, and Samuel Rogers. Some of the young men, not finding the encouragement they desired, crossed the Merrimac, and commenced the trade in Amesbury, where it has now grown to such proportions in Salisbury, Amesbury, and Merrimac, that the yearly sales exceed $2,000,000.

In all, West Newbury has twenty-five different manufacturing establishments, using six steam-engines, requiring a capital of $152,000; employing 397 persons, of whom 324 are men; and giving a yearly production of goods valued at $425,000.

CHAPTER III.

MILITARY.

Old Newbury has ever been patriotic, and made a good record in the various wars of the Colonies and the Republic, in which West Newbury, as a component part, previous to its separation, sustained her full share. It is not necessary to repeat.

Soon after the incorporation, a company of infantry was raised, of which the command was successively held by Capts. Bailey, Otis Little, Joseph Goodrich, and Hanson Ordway. It belonged to the regiment of which Col. Samuel Tenney, of this town, was commander, who was succeeded by Col. Daniel Moulton, of West Newbury. About the same time a company of cavalry was organized under Capt. Uriah Bailey, attached to a regiment of which Col. Moses Newell was commander. The company was subsequently commanded by Thomas Chase, John Pearson, Joseph Little; and Capt. Bailey was promoted to be colonel of the regiment.

The First Battalion of Rifles, raised and commanded by Maj. Benj. Perley Poore, in which Amos Poor and M. P. Stanwood were captains, was organized in 1852. Maj. Poore was the first in the country to tender his services to the president on the breaking out of the Rebellion. He was subsequently chosen major of the 8th Regiment, and served under the first call for troops. Many of the members of that Rifle Battalion were also promoted during the war. Gen. Frankle, Lieut. Col. Stanwood, and Maj. Isaac Boyd, of the 19th Regiment, — a brave and noble soldier, who, after fighting through the whole Rebellion, was killed by almost the last gun fired before Richmond. We may mention also Capt. Dow, of the Mozarts; Capt. M. B. Merrill, and Surgeon Ambrose, who first donned their uniforms in the Rifles.

During the Rebellion, West Newbury acted with much patriotism, and failed not in any duty. At the first meeting to act upon matters relating to the war, held April 29, 1861, the town voted $10,000 as a war emergency fund; also to pay each member of the Rifle company belonging to West Newbury, ten dollars a month when in active service, and ten dollars a month to each of their families; and $150 were then appropriated for uniforms.

In July, 1862, it was voted to pay three years' volunteers $150 each. August 15th, the same bounty was voted to nine months' men; and August 30th that bounty was doubled; and so it proceeded to the end, when the whole number of men furnished was 267, or thirty-four over all demands; and twelve were commissioned officers. The total war expenditures, exclusive of State aid, was $36,240; and there was expended for the families of volunteers $21,058, which was reimbursed by the State. This was done by a population of only 2,088, and on a valuation of less than a million. The town did much for the union and freedom of the country: it had the ability to do more, if called upon; it had the will to do all.

CHAPTER IV.

CHURCHES.

First Parish. — May 31, 1693, the selectmen of Newbury sent a petition to the General Court stating that a long difference had existed between the people of Newbury and the west end of the town about calling a minister; that the West End people had called Mr. Edward Tomson to preach to them without acquainting the minister, church, or town with their proceedings, and that the town had declared by vote that they were against his coming, or any other, until the church and town were agreed; yet he presumed to preach, notwithstanding they had called him to account, to the great disturbance of the peace, &c. To this petition the West End people replied, asking the governor and council to pity and help them, to ease them of a heavy burden of travel on God's day, under which some had groaned for thirty years. They were three hundred in number; few had horses; some were old, and some were sickly, and if they could get down to the old meeting-house it was impossible it should receive them, so that many would lie out of doors, "the house is so little." They further say that under the liberty granted by James the Second, they had erected one house at their own cost and charge, and the governor had granted them protection from paying to the old meeting-house,

but had since countermanded it. They close with expressing the opinion that "our neighbors would be glad to see us quite tired out," and begging the court to establish peace among them. In 1695 the town voted to allow the West End folks to choose a minister for themselves, "only Mr. Tomson excepted," they being determined to the last that the West End people should not have the minister of their choice.

In 1698 a church was gathered at Pipe-stave Hill, in a meeting-house built two years previous, and Samuel Belcher was ordained the minister. He was born in Ipswich, 1638, and graduated at Harvard, 1659. He had previously preached at the Isles of Shoals, but was dismissed on account of his age, he being past sixty at the time of his settlement in West Newbury. He died in 1715.

A year previous to Mr. Belcher's death, John Tufts was ordained. He was born in Medford, graduated at Harvard in 1708. He preached twenty-four years, when he was dismissed by a council called on complaint of some disaffected women of the parish. Mr. Tufts was the author of the first singing-book used in the colony, previous to the publication of which many churches had but two or three tunes, and less than a dozen in all, York, Windsor, and Martyrs, being the best known. It was in criticising this book that a divine wrote, "Truly, I have a great jealousy that if we once begin to sing by rule, the next thing will be to pray by rule, and preach by rule, and then cometh Popery."

The next minister was Thomas Barnard. He was born in Boston, 1716, graduated at Harvard, 1732, ordained, 1739, and dismissed at his own request, 1751, as his relations with his people had become unpleasant on account of his alleged heresy. He subsequently became a lawyer, and represented Newbury in the General Court, in 1755. The same year he returned to his former profession, and was settled over a church in Salem. He died in 1776.

True Kimball was the next pastor. He was born in Plaistow, N. H., 1757, graduated at Harvard, 1778, was ordained 1782, and dismissed 1797. He afterwards became a Universalist, and was expelled from the church. He died 1816.

Samuel Lamb was next ordained. He was born in Salem, N. Y., and died there in 1832. His settlement was of ten years' duration.

Ebenezer Hubbard, of Marblehead, was ordained 1809, and dismissed 1811.

Gilbert T. Williams, of New Jersey, graduate of Dartmouth, was installed 1814; dismissed 1821.

Henry C. Wright, of Sharon, Conn., was settled 1826, and dismissed 1833. He became an abolitionist, a peace advocate, and published some works on those topics.

Mr. Ober, of Beverly, graduate of Amherst, was settled 1834; dismissed 1835.

Henry A. Woodman was settled 1842, immediately after the dedication of the new church. He was dismissed on account of ill-health, 1844.

Horatio Merrill, born in Maine, graduated at Dartmouth, was settled 1845; dismissed 1847.

Charles Dickenson, graduated at Harvard, installed Mar. 5, 1857; dismissed April 17, 1857.

During the succeeding twenty years, over twenty ministers have supplied the pulpit; but the parish has been without the will to sustain the church, though wealthy, and it has been assisted by the Essex North Association.

In 1729 the upper part of the West Parish agreed to build a church, and petitioned the General Court to divide the parish into two precincts, the inhabitants of the entire parish embracing one hundred and eighty-three families. The church was organized in 1731, as the Fourth Church, Newbury, with forty-six members. The first minister was William Johnson, born in Newburyport in 1706, graduated at Harvard in 1727, ordained in 1731, and died in 1772. During his ministry, two hundred and seventy-four members were added to the church. He was an able and efficient pastor.

The second minister was David Toppan, D. D. He was born in Manchester in 1752, graduated at Harvard in 1771, and ordained in 1774. He was an able preacher, and published more sermons, it is said, than all the other ministers in the county. In 1792 he was elected to the Hollis Professorship at Harvard, and was the last orthodox minister to fill that chair.

The third pastor was Leonard Woods, D. D., who was born in Princeton, Mass., in 1774, the year that his predecessor was settled. He graduated at Harvard in 1796, with the highest honors; his Bachelor's and Master's orations being published, and highly applauded by the reviewers. He was settled in 1798, his salary being $400 and eight cords of wood, with the privilege of paying his parents a visit twice a year. In 1808 he was appointed Professor of Theology at Andover, on the opening of the seminary. He was made doctor of divinity by Dartmouth and the College of New Jersey, in 1810. He was a man of versatile talents and attainments, and in his professorship won a wide and enviable reputation.

In 1816 a new meeting-house was built, and John Kirby, of Middletown, Conn., a graduate of Union College, settled. Two years later he went South for his health, and was lost by shipwreck off the coast of North Carolina.

Elijah Demond, a native of Rutland, Mass., and graduate of Dartmouth and Andover, was ordained in 1821. There was a strong opposition to his settlement, and he was dismissed in 1826. He was subsequently settled over several other churches.

Paul Couch, a graduate of Dartmouth, 1823, was ordained, 1827; dismissed, 1828. He was an earnest advocate of temperance, and an eloquent sermon on that subject caused a marked change in the social habits of the people. Like his immediate predecessor, he had several subsequent settlements.

J. Q. A. Edgell, of Westminster, Vt., graduate of Vermont University and Andover Theological Seminary, was ordained in 1832, and preached with good acceptance for twenty-one years, when he was dismissed, and was appointed secretary of the Society for Promoting Collegiate and Theological Education at the West. He was one of the sharpest and most logical preachers the parish ever had.

Davis Foster, of Hanover, N. H., graduate of Dartmouth and Andover, was ordained in 1855, and resigned in 1867.

Seneca Keller, of Madison, N. Y., was installed in 1872, and dismissed in 1878, and the Rev. M. A. Doherty immediately succeeded, and is preaching to much acceptance.

In 1857, the meeting-house was moved to the Main Road, and remodelled, at a cost of sixteen thousand dollars.

The Quakers have had a meeting-house near Turkey Hill for some fifty years. Previously they met in a house on High Street, Newburyport; and their grave-yard, located on Washington Street, is now known by a single stone, with an inscription denoting its former use. As Turkey Hill was more convenient, they built a neat house there; and not far distant is their place of burial. The congregation is composed of about thirty-five persons. There are two families in Newburyport, one or two in Newbury, and the others are in the first parish.

The Baptists have a small church, of recent date, with a pretty little meeting-house on the Main Road, in the second parish; but they are without rapid growth, and depend now upon a ministry long settled.

The Roman Catholics have purchased a site, and are about building a church in the upper parish, close to the Congregational meeting-house. They have rapidly increased in the past few years, and now constitute about one-quarter of the people.

There are Episcopalians, Unitarians, Universalists, and others, in the town, who worship in Newburyport or Haverhill; and many more—including a large number who are of the Materialistic school—without any church connections.

CHAPTER V.

SCHOOLS — EDUCATION.

Professional teachers would call the schools poor, — good of the class, — as common schools with some attempts to teach the higher branches; but the education of the people has been good always, far better than in the average of towns even of higher pretensions. The people sprang chiefly from our old Puritan stock, and, inheriting the customs of the fathers, have regarded it a personal duty to oversee the instruction of the children, and when they have needed teaching, beyond the common schools, most have been able to send their sons and daughters to the academies; and the town has also been well represented in the colleges, showing not only a large number of graduates, but those, too, who have been known in after life.

Additional to its schools, it has the instruction of lyceum lectures, debates in the Farmer's Club, reading of a well-selected public library, and of the public library of Newburyport, whenever it will. It would be difficult to find a community where the men are more intelligent, or women more cultivated.

This also appears: West Newbury has given to the world educationists of the highest class; and it happened, at one time, that from this small town were Felton, president of Harvard; Woods, president of Andover Seminary; and Woods, president of Bowdoin. These were the leading men of three of our most learned New England institutions, men worthy of individual notice, as are others like Prof. Toppan and Mr. Bailey, of whom we give brief sketches.

Leonard Woods, D. D., was one of the most celebrated Orthodox theologians of his day. He was pastor of the Upper Parish, and his papers in the "Panoplist," on Calvinism, gave him a wide reputation as a controversialist. When Andover Seminary was founded, he was appointed professor of theology, which office he held from 1808 to 1846. He was one of the originators of the American Board of Foreign Missions, and of the American Tract Society, and the first Temperance Society. His published works include "Letters to Unitarians," "Lectures on Inspiration," "Reply to Dr. Ware," "Lectures on Infant Baptism," "Memoirs of American Missionaries," "Doctrine of Perfection," "Reply to Mahan," "Lectures on Church Government," "History of Andover Seminary," and other writings, a portion of which are published in five volumes.

Leonard Woods, Jr., was son of Dr. Woods, graduated at Union College in 1827; was, for some quarter of a century, president of Bowdoin College, and author of many theological writings, which he contributed to the "Literary and Theological Review," of which he was editor, and the "Biblical Repository." He is the translator of "Knapp's Theology," and compiler of the "Documentary History of Maine." As a sound scholar, he is much esteemed.

Cornelius Conway Felton, LL.D., eminent as a scholar and author, was born in 1807, in a house below Pipe-stave Hill, still standing in a dilapidated condition. He graduated at Harvard, in 1827, and then and there became Latin tutor for two years, and subsequently Greek tutor. He was appointed professor of Greek, in 1832, and was elected president of the university, in 1860. He was the most celebrated Greek scholar the country has ever produced, and his works in the direction of his favorite study have been numerous and of standard value. They embrace The Greek Reader, Homer, with English notes, Aristophanes' Clouds, The Panegyricus of Isocrates, Agamemnon of Æschylus, Greek Historians, Modern Greek Writers, Greek and Roman Metres, and Lowell Lectures on Greece. But his literary efforts were not confined to his professor's chair. He translated Menzel's German Literature, was one of the editors of Ancient Literature and Art, and co-editor with Longfellow of the Poets and Poetry of Europe. He was author of the Life of Gen. Eaton, and contributor to the "New American Cyclopedia," the "North American Review," "Christian Examiner," "Boston Courier," and other periodicals. He was a member of the Massachusetts board of education, regent of the Smithsonian Institute, and member of the Academy of Arts and Sciences. He died in 1862.

David Toppan, D.D., the last Orthodox Hollis professor at Harvard, had preceded Felton from West Newbury. He was a distinguished scholar and divine, and held the professorship from 1792 to his death, in 1803. He published several volumes of sermons, and was author of a work on Jewish antiquities.

Still another noted teacher from West Newbury was Ebenezer Bailey, well known as the author of Bailey's Algebra, the first text-book that popularized that science and adapted it to the comprehension of pupils of the common schools. He took the first step in the direction of an advanced education for girls, and was the founder of the first female high school. He was the principal of the Young Ladies' High School, Boston, the author of the Young Ladies' Class Book and other educational works. He was also a poet of considerable note.

ALBERT J. WRIGHT, PRINTER, 79 MILK STREET (CORNER OF FEDERAL), BOSTON.